



3 1761 11701524 8

CA1 YC 2

-69 P58

Government
Publication

Canada . Parliament . Senate .
Special Committee on Poverty .
Proceedings . 1969/70 . nos 56-70 .

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2023 with funding from
University of Toronto



5912
Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament

1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

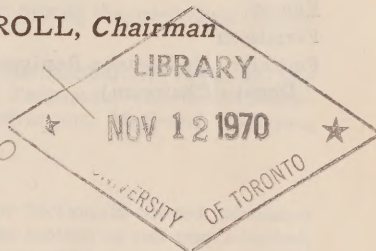
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE

ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 56-70



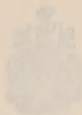
MONDAY JULY 20 1970

WITNESSES:

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for the names of the witnesses who were heard by the Committee.)

APPENDIX:

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for a list of the Briefs printed as appendices.)



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament

1909-10

THE SENATE OF CANADA

MEMBERS OF THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

MONDAY JULY 20 1910

WITNESSES:

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for the names of the witnesses who were sworn for the Committee.)

APPENDIX:

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for a list of the bills referred to the Committee.)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bé-lisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Mada-waska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—

Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

MONDAY, July 20, 1970.
(56-"B")

Pursuant to adjournment and notice Sub-committee "B" of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m. in the Western Canada High School Amphitheatre, Calgary, Alberta.

Present: The Honourable Senators Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Vice-Chairman of the Committee, Chairman of the Sub-committee, Fergusson, Hastings and Inman.

In attendance: Mr. Alan Holman, Community Liaison Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

City of Calgary: Reverend R. S. H. Greene, Alderman; Mr. E. Musgreave, Alderman; Mr. S. E. Blakely, Superintendent, Social Service Department, Community Services Policy Committee; Mr. Rod Sykes, Mayor.

Calgary Public School Board: Mr. G. M. Burden, Chairman; Mrs. Mary Ellen Johnson, Vice-Chairman; Mrs. Eva Shaw, Principal, R. B. Bennett Elementary School; Mr. O. S. Geiger, Supervisor, Elementary Schools.

Home and School Association of Alberta: Mr. Gordon A. Reid, Chairman, Poverty Subcommittee Calgary Area Council; Mrs. C. E. Ferguson, Past President, Calgary Area Council.

Private citizens: Mrs. Lorna Haddow; Mrs. J. M. Martin; Mrs. Mildred Huff; Miss Ellen Rea; Mr. Emil Roessingh.

At 12.25 p.m. the Subcommittee adjourned to 2.00 p.m.

At 2.10 p.m. the Subcommittee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Vice-Chairman of the Committee, Chairman of the Sub-committee, Fergusson, Hastings and Inman.

In attendance: Mr. Alan Holman, Community Liaison Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

(A group of persons, representing The Calgary Welfare Rights Group, presented a short socio-drama; the text of the play appears in that organization's brief.)

Welfare Rights Organization: Mrs. Alice Payne, Member, National Organization; Mrs. Daphne Davidson, Chairman.

Mr. Ian Walker, Executive Director Calgary Social Planning Council (presentation on his own behalf.)

Calgary Inter-Faith Community Action Committee: Pastor J. R. Jacobson, President; Father Pat O'Byrne, Director; Father Ted Johnson, Member; Mr. Marvin Fox, Native Development Society, Cardston.

Day Care Interest Groups: Mr. R. Burgess, Bowness-Montgomery Day Care Association; Mrs. Patricia Black, Pre-School Parent-Child Co-operative; Mrs. Gillian Harrison, University Day Care Center Committee; Mrs. Nancy Hall, Bowness-Montgomery Day Care Association; Mrs. Laetitia van Hees, Churchill Park Day Care Society; Mrs. Laura Baecker, Treasurer, Pre-School Parent-Child Co-operative.

Private Citizens: Mrs. L. Goodwin; Miss Ellen Rea; Mrs. Kathryn Cornah; Mrs. C. Warren; Mrs. J. M. Martin.

At 5.15 p.m. the Subcommittee adjourned to 7.30 p.m.

At 7.30 p.m. the Subcommittee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Vice-Chairman of the Committee, Chairman of the Sub-committee, Fergusson, Hastings and Inman.

In attendance: Mr. Alan Holman, Community Liaison Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

The Low Income Working Committee: Mr. George Campbell; Mrs. Peggy Bouchard; Mrs. Jeannette Foster.

Inglewood-Ramsay Redevelopment Committee: Mr. Stan Feader, President; Canon van der Leest, Member; Reverend David Gilchrist, Member; Mrs. Caroline Curtis, Member; Mr. Joe Melhuish.

Mr. Jack Johnson, Calgary Barrister (appeared on his own behalf).

The following briefs were ordered to be printed as appendices to these proceedings:

<i>Name of Organization or Person</i>	<i>Appendix</i>
City of Calgary	A
Calgary School Board	B
Calgary Area Council, Home & School Assoc. of Alta.	C
Calgary Welfare Rights Group	D
Mr. Ian Walker	E
Calgary Inter-Faith Community Action Committee	F
Bowness-Montgomery Day Care Association	G
Pre-School Parent-Child Co-operative	H
A. T. Hogan	I
Low Income Working Committee	J
Inglewood-Ramsay Redevelopment Committee	K

The Calgary Labour Council and Dr. Gerald Holman, University of Alberta, submitted briefs but were not represented and did not appear before the Subcommittee. On Motion from the Honourable Senator Fergusson it was Resolved that the two briefs also be printed as appendices to these proceedings. They appear as appendices "L" and "M".

At 9.00 p.m. the Subcommittee adjourned.

ATTEST:

Denis Bouffard,
Clerk of the Subcommittee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

Calgary, Alberta, July 20, 1970.

Senator Edgar Fournier (Deputy Chairman) in the chair.

The Deputy Chairman: This brief is presented by the Community Services Policy Committee, the City of Calgary. Submitting the brief is Alderman E. Musgreave, Alderman Rev. R. Greene and Mr. S. E. Blakely, Superintendent, Social Service Department.

Ladies and gentlemen, and members of the Senate, I would like to call the meeting to order. Before doing so I would like to introduce the members of the committee. To my immediate left is Senator Hastings, who is well known here. To my right is Senator Inman from Prince Edward Island, and Senator Fergusson from New Brunswick. My name is Edgar Fournier, and I am also from the Province of New Brunswick.

Our committee is divided into two groups this morning. The other group is in Edmonton and we are going to rejoin them tomorrow morning. We were planning on joining them this evening but due to the number of briefs that were presented to us at the very last moment, including yesterday afternoon and this morning, we will be holding presentations this evening. According to our schedule we were to hear five briefs from Calgary, but now we find that we have 15 to consider. We doubt whether we will be able to interview everyone involved, but we give you the assurance that the briefs will be taken into the record and will be given full consideration.

We hope to deal with three briefs before noon. We would ask those who are making presentations to give us a short summary of their briefs. The members of the committee have read the briefs so we will not take time to re-read them. Some are quite long.

One other point I would like to mention is that if someone in the audience would like to ask questions in French, please do so.

Now, I would ask Alderman Musgreave to give us a brief summary of his presentation.

Alderman E. Musgreave, Community Services Policy Committee, City of Calgary: Mr. Chairman and ladies and gentlemen, Alderman Rev. Greene was going to act as chairman of our group; therefore, if you like, Alderman Rev. Greene could start.

The Deputy Chairman: By all means.

Alderman Rev. R. Greene, Community Services Policy Committee, City of Calgary: Thank you very kindly. We decided Mr. Chairman to present our brief in three sections, sir. We have Mr. Blakely who has presented the major part of the city brief and Mr. Musgreave who has a section and myself so I would like to make a few brief comments under my own observations here which fall into three categories. First of all I believe that massive government help is needed if we are going to do anything about the housing situation and I think this is already been shown in part in the work that is being done through Mr. Andras with this two hundred million dollar seed money but when we start talking about vast amounts of money you know that is available—Alderman Musgreave and myself were in Halifax a couple of weeks ago and we saw the Bonaventure and we saw the Hydro Foils and I don't think there is any money around. The question here is priorities and so that is one thing and we in Calgary are very happy senators to say that we are the first city in Canada to have taken advantage of the experimental housing project—the first one in Canada is under way here in Calgary and we are most appreciative of your government support in this area.

That is number one. The second issue that I would raise and I am sure Senator Inman is well aware of this because I spent oh, six hours with Alex Burke recently finding out about the Prince Edward Island scene and I really believe that here in Calgary, and other parts of the country, that we are only going to get justice for tenants if we have a tenants union which has got muscle.

Let me describe some of the situations that I have been involved in recently. Here is a case of a woman who lived in a building

which by checking through the land titles office here in Calgary was built between 1907 and 1913. That is a very old building in Canada and I know in other parts of Canada but sixty years old here. This woman lives in a room 21 feet by 9 feet. She had in the past 18 months three rent increases amounting to 33 per cent. Her latest one brought her up to \$60.00 per month for a room 21 by 9—189 square feet. This is a building in which there were more cockroaches than people. Now, in this particular building, which I say is quite old, this woman lived with her husband in this tiny room where the rent being charged was considerably higher than in O'Neil Towers which is one of our luxury towers in town and then she had another raise on top of that.

I found out that this particular apartment was being managed by a very well established financial institution of this country and I was amazed to find out that this company would have anything to do with an operation like this. I went to the mayor and I said "how do we deal with this" and he immediately got the property manager on the phone and arranged for an interview with me.

I went over there and the man said "well, you know, we are having a difficult time looking after that because of the people connected with the estate but two of the sons of the woman involved are coming to town tomorrow". I said that I would like to talk to them if I could or I would like to hear how you make out with them. I said this and I also said that I would like protection for this woman whose name I didn't mention but the description of her apartment sort of gave her away so they promised that she would be given protection and that I would hear what was happening with the people who were coming in connection with the estate.

Certainly, they guaranteed me that she would have no harassment and also on the third point they admitted that the rents were already too high and so finally I waited until the next week and didn't hear a thing until finally I heard via the grapevine that the woman, that afternoon, had received notification that she was to move. This happened the day that I had been in so I went into the mayor the next week and I said "I think, Your Worship, we are getting rough treatment here" and he immediately called the president of this company in town, the manager, and said, "I think we are getting a snow job," and the man said, "Well, I really

haven't the time." But the mayor said, "Well, you know, I think you should have the time because it will be to your advantage; the kind of publicity you will get over this will not be to your advantage." And so within fifteen minutes I was sitting in the man's office. I took along with me Father Carter who is the dean of our cathedral and we laid out our cards.

I might say that just in brief that that afternoon the woman received a cancellation of her notice to move, a cancellation of her rent increase and she was allowed to stay. This woman—incidentally I should have mentioned that she shared her bathroom with fifteen other suites and I don't think we are going to get justice for this kind of thing and also for people who are living in say low limited dividend places where the rents are very low but there are pretty rough techniques employed by management because the rents are so low that the people don't dare to speak up. I think we are going to have a tenants union.

That is just one particular situation regarding the tenants and Senator Inman, your fellow Prince Edward Islander certainly needs to be commended because he has done a fabulous job and I think that anything the senate can do to foster this tenants union proposed for Ottawa in October is all to the good and will help people especially in the low income groups and the other poverty groups of Canada.

One final and third point—building inspections. Here I have in my hand a piece of concrete three inches thick but as I mentioned in the report in case you think you had too much stampede or too much grape, there is not three inches in there, there is an inch and a half. The woman who lives in this house from whose basement this was taken from paid for three inches—she got one inch and a half. She lives in my ward and I went to see her oh, last November with a builder. I went into her basement and we broke this piece of cement out. We called C.M.H.C. and C.M.H.C. told us to write the builder sending a copy to them and as of this date, so far as I know, nothing has been done for this woman and although C.M.H.C. has protected this building in other ways they have done nothing at all in what I think is one of the major items, namely faulty construction. This woman paid for three inches and she got an inch and a half and the reply from the principle C.M.H.C. people, from the top man in town is

"Caveat Emptor". Now, this is gross negligence for my money because "Caveat Emptor" means let the buyer beware. Can a woman be expected or a man be expected to go around inspecting the level or thickness of the cement in their basements? That is actually what is going on. The C.M.H.C. regulations are really tough—try and put something through them. I think they should be tough but if they are going to be tough say as far as fire and safety is concerned, I think they also need to be given some protection in this area.

This is not a cheap house. This house is worth about \$20,000.00 and we hear sometimes that in the public housing in this country that we are going to have ghettos and I would suggest that in some of the luxury accommodation in this country that there is going to be ghettos. In one of the most expensive high rises in this town it is already coming apart. On the twenty-sixth floor you can put your finger into a crack in the wall running from the window down to the floor so don't let anybody tell you that public housing is liable to produce ghettos because we are going to have ghettos all the way through because of the shoddy construction being employed by many contractors. All of this is—and incidentally not only the small contractors but the big contractors—not just the little fellows. Now, those are just three comments I have in passing and I musn't use all the time because I know my two conferees would like to speak as well. You may have some questions and I would be only too happy to answer them.

The Deputy Chairman: Do you have provincial inspectors here?

Alderman Rev. Greene: We have the municipal inspectors, we have C.M.H.C. inspectors and I think we have provincial inspectors, don't we, Eric?

Alderman Musgreave: We have some.

Alderman Rev. Greene: But they don't inspect in this area here.

Senator Inman: Have you many absentee landlords. Do you have many absentee landlords that don't look after the estates themselves?

Alderman Rev. Greene: Yes, this is one problem. The provincial government has attempted to do something in this particular area by taxing the places according to land use rather than the type of accommodation. For instance, if a house is R-1 in an R-4 area

we are going to tax R-4 if the people don't live there. This is one attempt by the provincial government to try and bring a more equal system here so that the absentee landlord just can't accumulate this property and wait until the price is right. We have quite a bit but I would say in Western Canada here from my D.B.S. understanding, we have more home ownership than probably any other place in Canada. The frontier is still here.

Senator Fergusson: What would you suggest that C.M.H.C. should do? Do you think they should have regulations covering inspectors who inspect these buildings as they are being built and see that they come up to specifications?

Alderman Rev. Greene: I think Madam Senator that this has to be done. Under the present situation they just inspect as far as fire and safety is concerned and I think where there is gross dishonesty in this situation and that C.M.H.C. have an obligation to do something here.

Senator Fergusson: Has this been suggested to C.M.H.C.?

Alderman Rev. Greene: Oh, it has been on national television. I have been to Mr. Hagan, I have been to Mr. O'Reilly and I have been to everybody right across the country on this one and the poor woman in this city here in my ward with this broken up floor. A president of the Calgary House Builders Association had a meeting with.

Senator Fergusson: And they still reply "Caveat Emptor"?

Alderman Rev. Greene: Well, that is C.M.H.C.'s term, "Caveat Emptor". The house builders are a bit embarrassed by it.

Senator Inman: Has there been any repercussions from the builders themselves?

Alderman Rev. Greene: Well, I took Mr. Ralph Scurfield out there and he was a bit embarrassed about this. Ralph has been very cooperative and I find him a very fine person to work with but his company is not the company that built that house. I would think that if the house builders association had the teeth that say the medical association or the bar society have they would crack the whip and say "You boys get with it or you won't be operating."

The Deputy Chairman: Fine. Could we hear from someone else now. We will have more questions for you later on.

Alderman Rev. Greene: Fine. I hope I haven't taken too much of your time?

The Deputy Chairman: No, not all.

Alderman Musgreave: Mr. Chairman and Madam Senators. I would just like to go through my brief and add a few points to it. Primarily I would like to point out that we here in Calgary live on the top end of the Palliser triangle and Captain Palliser said that this was a desert area and couldn't support people.

Now, because of being able to develop a rust-free strain of wheat and being able to develop international markets because of the kind of people that we were able to attract to the west, we have proven him wrong but I think I would like to suggest through the commission that if you could take some of the spirit that built the west and in the early days built the Maritimes, this kind of pioneering spirit and give to these people—if you give to these people in the Maritimes and in the rest of Canada encouragement to show them—there is a spirit in the west that we like to share with Canadians as well as our money and we didn't always have the money.

There is comment that we have no public housing in Alberta and I agree that we didn't have but I would like to point out to the senators that twenty years ago the population of this city was roughly 100,000 and today it is close to 400,000. We built homes in that twenty years period for 300,000 people and I think it is much better to be able to produce homes that people can live in and own rather than have to be put in public housing. I don't deny the need for public housing because I was instrumental in starting the first project in this city. However, I think we here in the west here and in particular in Calgary—I can give you an example if you wish. Atco Trailer Company was started by two men—a father and son. The father was a fireman and the son was a medical student from the university and they started a little trailer business in their own back yard and today it is the world's largest trailer company. They send trailers all over the world including the Arctic and out to the far and middle east. Now, this is the kind of pioneering spirit that I think we should be putting across to the rest of Canada. When the Hellyer Commission was here on housing, we suggested to Mr. Hellyer that we would be prepared in this city to experiment in housing. We would give a section of land; we would be prepared to put up money and we would be prepared to run

studies of this to determine what kind of housing we should provide in the community. Now, whether or not this was the germ of the idea that brought forth the \$200,000,000 we don't know but never the less the fact is there and is excellent as far as we are concerned.

I think if you look at the statistics for housing built in Canada and in Calgary as compared to the nation including quality and price I think you will find that we concur quite favourably. I would like to touch just briefly on the money we spent in the community last year. The money we spent in the community last year amounted to about \$300,000 for those in need. This year we will probably run around eight million and a half. And this is not that much money in relation to the total budget of the city which is close to one hundred million dollars. However, it can get well out of hand. I appreciate that this burden comes back primarily on the tax payer and again its on those people who are on fixed incomes, living in their own homes and it is particularly difficult for them.

Touching on the Indian problem, for those of you who are here for the Stampede will know what an important part the Indians play in the Stampede. Once again in my opinion it minimizes the spirit of the west. It is not unique to the west but perhaps it is more obvious here but we have just completed what we consider the greatest outdoor show on earth. We have had several hundred thousand people who paid admission to go in and we did not get five cents from the federal treasury. We wish we had some of Mr. Drapeau's talents for getting money to build buildings because we are in a tough state. We need more money for capital but the thing that bothers me as a long term Calgarian, I have lived here most of my life, and I said to my wife as I came in here this morning I hadn't been in this building since 1939 when I left for the services and believe me you can hardly recognize the place. However, getting back to the Indian situation the problem that bothers me is that when I came back to the west, I felt that we were using the Indians as display objects in our Stampede.

Senator Hastings: For which?

Alderman Musgreave: A display. As a display or special attraction and I know Senator Hastings that this would probably concern some Calgarians and I would suggest that the methods of using the Indians in our Stampede should be changed. I think you would agree

with me particularly when you look around the grounds and see the young people, they are getting away from this now and I think this is good and I hope that as we develop between here and the Banff National Park that we would see and insure that the Indians participate in this because they own the most important thing and that is the land and the minerals.

I would now like to touch on Page 5 where I mentioned what I think we should be doing in the west and particularly in Canada. I lived in Newfoundland for a couple of years and I lived in Nova Scotia and I read the Toronto Globe and Mail I believe it was last week where the Province of Newfoundland I believe is paying forty-four million dollars for welfare out of an operating budget of two hundred and ninety-five million and this same article maintained that a third of the people in the province where on welfare.

I would like to suggest to you that you consider the idea of accelerating the closing of the out-ports and the development of fisheries on a grand scale to compete say with the Russians and the Japanese and at the same time if you can give consideration to making a generous allowance to Newfoundlanders entire families to encourage them to move to Western Canada or to settle here.

I know this probably makes Maritimers pretty annoyed but I think in Canada we have so much money and we have so many people and I suggest to you that we should put the people where they can do the best for all of us. If we can bring people from Southern Italy over here who can't speak our language—and they do bring entire families and they struggle to make their way, surely we can do the same for our own Canadians.

On the last page I have a little item about what it cost Albertans and I did mention that briefly earlier but I would like to touch on our political scene here. We are very unique here in the west and again I think it reflects more on the land we come from than a particular government but we have had the same government for 35 years and during that time this government has been out of step with the rest of Canada in that it was not a national party in the true sense of the word. If you go back to the early days of the twenties, you will recall—I forget the name of it now—

Senator Hastings: Native farmers?

Alderman Musgreave: No, I was thinking of Manitoba when Mr. King convinced these people to join his group but they were a radical group. I think you will agree that the early Social Creditors were a radicals group in the true sense of the word and I think that many of us in the west are at heart radicals.

You look at our long range of prospects for the sale of our gas and oil and our coal to Japan and the by-products of these industries, I think you will find we have a potential of tremendous wealth in the west and I think that by encouraging those people in the rural areas of Canada to come here and get training and be prepared to give them good financial support, but this is the way that I would like to see us in Canada attack the poverty problem.

We in the oil industry I think drilled something like one hundred and twenty-three wells that were all dry and spent about twenty-seven million dollars before we found oil and in the Arctic this year you will recall that Imperial Oil drilled a well and found oil and since then they have drilled four more and found nothing. These costs millions of dollars and I think that we in the west—I am speaking now principally of those of us who lived in the west for a long time, want to convey to you that we have a will to live in a tough area and we would like to encourage the other people of Canada to come here and share this with us and I think if nothing else if this message gets back to Ottawa we would have achieved our purpose.

Senator Inman: I don't know whether or not you are aware of the fact that we are drilling for oil on Prince Edward Island.

Alderman Musgreave: I am well aware of that, Madam Senator, yes.

Senator Inman: I am interested in you saying about Maritime people moving.

Now, we just came from the Maritimes and you know those people would rather live down there on a very low income than move away. That is their home and they love the place. We Prince Edward Islanders love the place. Prince Edward Islanders leave home but they come back at the first opportunity. They retire there if possible. That is the feeling that most Maritimers have and it is pretty hard to change these people.

Alderman Musgreave: I agree but in this same article I think it said that the people of

Newfoundland were leaving the province at the rate of about six thousand a month.

Now, perhaps that is not an abnormal rate.

Senator Inman: Well, I think they come back because we just visited a lot of the out-ports and a lot of them are moving back. A lot of the people who moved on are now moving back.

Alderman Musgreave: I think that is possible Senator and as I said I haven't been there for a long time but perhaps it is because of the difficulty of being able to cope with urban life. You know, the lack of education and the feeling of repore in the community and this may be a contributing factor.

Senator Hastings: I think you are quite right, Alderman Musgreave, because you can't take a man out of the out-ports of Labrador and put him in the City of Toronto. It is just impossible to take a man over forty or forty-five—I noticed you mentioned retraining—to take a manyout of his life environment and bring him into the city and say "That is where you are going to live." In one out-port they are trying to bring the people just forty to fifty miles to a centre of growth and I said to this man "Are you going to move?" and he said "No" and I said "Well, why not?" and he said "Well, I will have nothing if I go to Charlottetown". This is Charlottetown, Labrador and I said "You have nothing here" and he said "Yes, but I am more comfortable with nothing here than I would be in Charlottetown." This mobility—you cannot just take people out of their environment and bring them to Calgary and say make a living here without training or without much more consideration than has been given. This is just a general shuttle service that is existing between Toronto and the Maritimes, coming and going.

The Deputy Chairman: We did find in this group situation in Newfoundland, that many people do not believe in welfare. We were very surprized at that. We found that they just want to work; they are prepared to work. We also found out that only \$200.00 would improve the working conditions for a group of people. However, our legislation is not patterned for this now, which is a mistake which we hope to correct.

It seems to me that we do not think in terms of this in Ottawa. We talk about millions or billions and unless we talk about this nobody seems to be interested. We find there

is a great weakness in our legislation when it does not provide for \$200.00 to improve the working conditions of ten or fifteen families who want to remain where they are without welfare, and there is no way we can help them as it stands today.

Alderman Rev. Greene: I would agree with Alderman Musgreave on many points here but I think it needs to be questioned that Alberta is a utopia to live in. I am very happy to live here but I think it should be pointed out, for instance, that I think of all Canadian provinces Alberta has the highest illegitimacy rate and the City of Calgary has the highest of any urban city or urban municipality in Alberta. More than one in eight persons in Calgary last year were illegitimate and as a parish priest I spend a tremendous amount of time dealing with marriage breakdown and while we have affluence here we have lots of other problems. The suicide rate is high here. I think this has to be compared with Newfoundland and other places. I think there is a quality of life in Newfoundland which we don't possess here and I think this needs to be said. I enjoy the Maritimes very much. I have been there quite a number of times and I think they have something we haven't got.

Alderman Musgreave: Perhaps if our divorce laws were relaxed we wouldn't have the high rate of illegitimacy. I just would like to touch on something that Senator Fournier said and I agreed.

I recall when I was stationed at Reserve Airport I think we were near some co-op housing—I think it was called Thompkinsville which was after one of the priests that was involved in the co-op movement.

I would be the first to agree with such schemes because I think they are tremendous and I think that this exactly emphasizes the point I am trying to make. When I was at this convention in Halifax I had to live in Dartmouth because I couldn't get my reservations in quick enough but I drove with a taxi driver who was making wallets and billfolds and belts and what have you. He was hanging them around his taxi cab and selling them to passengers and he said that he hoped he could develop this enough so that he could open up a little shop.

This is the kind of spirit that as Canadians I think we should try and encourage. This is the theme that keeps coming through with these welfare cases that is that they haven't got the spirit that we have to build this

nation. What I am saying is that those people in the tough areas I would want the opportunity to go—and I am not suggesting—for example, when I completed my service not only did the government pay my way through college but they gave me \$90.00 a month to keep my wife and myself. We have to adopt more positive attitudes like that. We say to our young people today that we shouldn't be giving them free education and universities but I say that if they are going to stay in this country and pay our taxes why not.

Alderman Rev. Greene: Here, here.

Alderman Musgreave: Likewise I would much rather them pay the money to a wife of a university student to allow her to stay home and raise her children than not be able to get married. These are the kind of suggestions that I am making but what I urge or the message I want to get through to you people is that I disagree whole-heartedly with putting in huge sums of money, hundreds of millions of dollars into projects that are uneconomical for a business and they are not going to be made that much more economic for governments. We just have to compete with world markets.

Senator Fergusson: How about the ones that have not proved to be economic. You have to try things out. You can't be sure when you start any pilot project whether it is going to be viable or not? I don't think we should criticize some of the ones that have gone bad so severely because we have to experiment, don't we?

Alderman Musgreave: Yes, I agree, Senator Fergusson, this is why I don't get too uptight about the Bonaventure. It sure was a waste of a lot of money but it can be attributed to a lot of jobs as well, let's not kid ourselves.

Senator Fergusson: Yes, and they don't have the Bonaventure anymore.

Alderman Musgreave: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Alderman Musgreave, on page 2 you mentioned the fact that Alberta enjoys a considerable affluence as compared to other parts of Canada but with its high alcoholism rate. Do you have high alcoholism rates here as compared with other parts of Canada?

Alderman Musgreave: I think we have about the second highest in Canada. I think B.C. is ahead of us. The suicide rate is very difficult to determine but as a member of the

hospital board in the city I know it is much higher than it should be.

Senator Hastings: Affluence hasn't brought happiness.

Alderman Musgreave: That is the point I would like to make. We live here in the dirty thirties and a quarter of us was on relief and we had more money in our family but we didn't necessarily have more happiness. The thing that existed with those people in the west and who were on relief was that they didn't think it was going to be permanent. This is the sad part today and I get the feeling with talking to people particularly with deserted mothers that this is going to be permanent. This is the tragedy today.

Senator Hastings: With all this affluence in Alberta, why have we done so little about poverty?

Alderman Musgreave: Because as politicians we probably haven't been as sensitive as we should have for one thing.

Alderman Rev. Greene: I think we are, Mr. Senator, sort of the people who have got it made economically and as I mentioned in my brief, there is more public housing in Prince Edward Island from 1950 to 1965 than there was in all of Alberta precisely because there was nothing done here and the responsible minister in Edmonton up until two years ago said that everybody in Alberta should own their own home.

This is a lot of nonsense. I think that previous city administrations have gone along with that. I think it is only comparatively recently that we have done anything about public housing because we have felt that this was something that was beneath our dignity and despite the fact that sub-divisions in Toronto like Regent Park south have had their problems—although reports by newspapers like the Calgary Herald that seek to shoot down the Regent's Park project failed to point out in their rather long-winded articles that when Regent's Park South was built the truancy rate dropped down, the children got better marks in school, that they were better clothed, the fire protection rate went down and the police protection rate went down and the garbage costs went down on all of these things despite the fact that there many sour aspects to it so I would go along with Senator Fergusson here and say that we have got to try these things I think that private industry can't cope with this. For instance, when we

have people in Calgary that had to strike a little over a year ago for a \$1.75 an hour then we can see that private industry is completely incapable of providing housing for people in this category and I talk of housing not as a privilege but as a right and I also go along with Alderman Musgreave here. I was going to say that I was one of the same people that came along through the same chord that he did.

You know, I was working for a bank before the war at \$500.00 a year. I would be still locked into a thing like that if it hadn't been for the war I am quite sure.

Senator Inman: You were speaking about free training and training people.

Now, what is the use of this if we haven't got jobs to give them? It just come from visiting one of the—well, one of the poorest out-ports in Newfoundland. The people were very progressive but they had nothing—they were impoverished and I was very interested to hear a man and his wife both come to me and say that they should take away all welfare. We don't need welfare, give us jobs. We don't want welfare. I was wondering about this retraining. What is the use of this retraining or training people and bringing these people here and giving them training and having nothing for them to do?

Alderman Musgreave: Well, Senator, one way we could do this is to take the present jobs and split them in half. That means you need double work force. That may not sound as far out as it does because it has been done before but to use an example right here in our own area. This winter when I was skiing I met a chap who had come from Aspin, Colorado and I think they were running something like four thousand people through the ski tows in one day in his area. You don't have to line up for the buses. You didn't have to line up for the tows. You didn't have to line up for the food and you didn't have to line up for the bathroom and why? Because they had a better organization and they were using far more people.

We can use a lot of people with a minimum of skills in these kinds of developments. All you need to do is go to Banff right now and see. I was up at one of the lakes yesterday on a hike and I was sitting there looking at a garbage bin at two o'clock in the afternoon that was jammed full of garbage. Now obviously they need more help in that place and this is one of the prime tourist resorts in the

world. Not in Canada, but in the world. You go to people in Europe—they haven't heard of Calgary but they have heard of Banff. If you take the Maritimes and your fishing and places like the.

I am quite sure that you could make acceptable to more people and use more of your own people in this type of situation but it is going to take money.

Senator Inman: Well, I am all for education but do you go along with the thought that perhaps we are demanding too much education for unskilled labour? For instance, for a man to empty a garbage can he doesn't need a university education.

Alderman Musgreave: I would agree wholeheartedly but he does need to know that in that kind of a business that the customer is right and you have to be pleasant and you have to get on with the job. I have a son who was not mentally capable of going past grade six but he is working in one of the largest hotels in Banff and has been there for four years and he is very happy in his work and it doesn't require a university education. It doesn't even require public school education but this is just another barrier that people will try to throw up. I know large companies in this city who are asking for Grade 12 education to drive one of their trucks and I say that is nonsense.

Senator Fergusson: Well, Mr. Chairman, I was particularly interested in some of the things that Alderman Musgreave said on page 4 regards to the Indian situation and he mentioned schemes such as gravel removal or forest restoration or tree nurseries this could be a means of improving the lot of the people on the reservations. Are the physical attributes of the reservations such that this would be practical to do?

Alderman Musgreave: Well, our reservation to the west here is practically built on a huge gravel bed.

Senator Fergusson: On a huge gravel pit?

Alderman Musgreave: Yes. It is the remainder of a glacier. When the glacier age went through it deposited all this gravel at the base of the glacier so stretching from here practically to the boundaries of the park gate it is just one huge mass of gravel. In some areas it has quite a bit of over-burden and in other areas not so much.

We have already had applications before our city council here recently to process this gravel and to crush it down and use it in the construction industry and so this is a good possibility. Those of you who come from the Maritimes and those of you who come from Ontario and Quebec would appreciate the lack of trees in this community and yet we grow a lot of evergreen all year round. Again, this is something that the Indians could certainly develop in their areas and sell them to the city. We have Indians coming in here now for example who will sell you a tree for a dollar.

This is nonsense because if you buy one from the home nurseries you will be paying from ten to forty dollars. They put a little bit more work into it and merchandise it in a better way but the potential is still there.

Senator Fergusson: Well, if it is all over gravel how can they build trees on it?

Alderman Musgreave: Well, senator, if you go into the mountains you will see that trees grow in the strangest of places but there is enough over burden in some areas that is quite sufficient. It is a sandy light soil and they do grow.

Senator Fergusson: Well, our reservations are not like those in New Brunswick, for instance, I just wanted to know. I was also very interested in the next paragraph in your brief which you say that they should tap the reservoirs of skilled business and professional people in Calgary who are more than willing or prepared to give guidance and council for nothing. Have you an organized group that will do this?

Alderman Musgreave: No. I have a friend who happens to be on city council who was a professional engineer—he still is a professional engineer but he was a municipal engineer for over twenty years who is working with the band right now. He said there are other people prepared in the community. This is one of the successes of our Stampede. We get thousands and thousands of hours of work done down there voluntarily and this is one of the difficulties that Mr. Drapeau has and this is one of the reasons why he has to go to get money elsewhere. We get all of this work done for nothing and I am quite sure that there are enough people in the community that would be prepared to sit say as a Board of Directors or something like this to assist in this kind of developing. I know I work for an oil company in my own sector. They were

quite involved in developing one of the first Indian friendship centres in this community and I know that the chairman of the board was a vice-president of one of the local oil companies so this reservoir of talent is here to be used but it is difficult to tap. When I say it is difficult to tap I am not saying that they are not prepared to work. Some of the business community are also shy about coming to work.

Senator Fergusson: Well, I come from New Brunswick and I have only been there a few days lately they have actually organized a group called C.E.S., but they have businessmen who have are actually going and helping the Indians because a friend of mine has joined this getting no pay but just being paid expenses for traveling but I was just wondering if you had something organized like this?

Alderman Musgreave: Well, no, I haven't personally but there may be something.

Alderman Rev. Greene: Sir, I think we have used up over two-thirds of our time. Mr. Blakely hasn't had a chance to get his own words in yet.

Mr. S. E. Blakely, Superintendent, Social Service Department: Mr. Chairman, senators, ladies and gentlemen. The first part of the brief that was presented today was prepared really as a composite of what staff with the social service department—a composite of their ideas. The main point that we would like you to take from the brief is to examine at your own leisure those interviews with people who are suffering from the condition of poverty itself. We feel that those interviews are more illuminating than any comment or commentary that we could add to them. There are some highlights however that I think we would like to bring out.

One is, and Senator Inman made this point earlier this morning, full employment. We believe that the economic policy of Canada should be designed toward full employment, not anti-employment as what may appear. To this end then we stressed job training, job re-training and of course job creation where necessary. We know full well, those of us who are in the administration of social agencies that people prefer and want to work. We get a lot of abuse, people criticizing those who are in receipt of assistance. Given any individual on assistance, they will tell you that they prefer to work. We feel that you should examine the plight of the fixed income groups—the old age pensioners, war pension-

ers and others. These pensions have not been kept up with the cost of goods.

We feel that government departments, government hiring policies and the policies of private companies should concentrate more on hiring those men who are over forty-five years of age. It is extremely difficult for them to get employment particularly when they are not capable of working a full day. A physical ailment may require that they can only work four or five hours a day. For those people the opportunity should be there for them to work those four or five hours a day and not become fully dependant because they can only work a limited day.

We feel that in the case of immigrants coming to this country that somehow or other they are being misled as to the availability of jobs here and particularly the restrictions that are placed on those trades or professions in which those immigrants may be trained. We find that many of them are misled as to the opportunity of joining various trade unions and getting into various professions. Some in the professional groups are in fact required to train all over again. We also recommend that there be established an immediate increase in the minimum wage. The minimum wage as it stands right now is not a living wage at all. I think before we conduct the interviews for this particular brief that most of the professional staff in our department were fully in favour of a guaranteed annual income. I think as a result of what those interviews told us, that we are a little more cautious now. We think that the full implication of a guaranteed annual income should be studied. I think we are more inclined to recommend programmes full employment. People who are working for good decent wages is what our goal should be but that perhaps a guaranteed annual income is necessary but we say and we are confident that you will discuss and look at what the full implications are of the guaranteed annual income.

I would like to draw your attention to this analysis that was done of those new applicants for social assistance in May 1969 compared with May 1970. You will notice that 40 per cent of those applying for assistance had Grade 9 or less so when you are talking about education, you realize that it is pretty significant and is a significant factor. Regarding trade skill, 56 per cent had no trade what ever. Of course, the major factor as always in applications for assistance is unemployment. I am not sure of what significance the marital

status is so I will skip over that. The marital status has a different significance to all of us I hope.

Finally I think that we would encourage you to continue publicizing your efforts. I think that although there are a number of people who are sincere and earnestly concerned about the poverty situation in this country, I don't think it is by any means a majority and I think that the attendance here this morning indicates that there are a lot of people in Calgary who are really not concerned. Perhaps we are too satisfied. Finally we recommend that the members of the senate Poverty Committee closely consider the suggestions that elimination of poverty can be accomplished only if a majority of Canadian citizens in co-operation with all levels of government designate this as the major national goal. Thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you.

Mr. Blakely: Perhaps Mr. Chairman I would like to recognize those people who worked very hard in a short time to prepare this brief. Al Hagan, Evelyn Goodhall, and those other interviewers on our staff. Thank you.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much. I see that the time is going against us a little bit. I must say that everything you have told us we have heard before from other groups. However, you are quite right. There is one point I would like to spend the last few minutes talking about. What are the working conditions of the poor? We are trying to classify the poor, and I must say very honestly that we have found that generally people on welfare are not doing too bad. They do not have enough and we realize that, but the people who are hit the hardest are the working poor. These people cannot receive any welfare because they are working. Our system is organized in a way that in many situations the welfare people say, "Well, we can't help you because you are working. If you were out of a job, however, the door would be open to you for welfare."

Now, we do not say that this is right, but we would like to know what are the conditions of what we call the working poor? Are they such that the wife has to work to bring more income to the family, or can the husband carry on?

Mr. Blakely: Well, that is a very good point and you will notice in our brief that we men-

tion that we feel that the provision of social assistance and social allowance in this province from what I can gather is probably the best that there is in Canada. Being employed does not mean to say that you cannot receive a supplementary allowance. We have many, many people who are receiving supplementary allowance to that wage. Now, it isn't something that we advertise because we feel that there are probably many hundreds more who are entitled to this wage supplement and we have been doing for many years. I think the credit for that goes to Duncan Rogers, the Deputy minister for having a progressive policy. There are hundreds more in this city who are forced to moonlight. Now, by forced to moonlight I mean in order to provide for their family and hundreds more where the wife works in order to supplement the family income so although we appear to be an affluent city I think that the conditions for the working poor are extremely difficult. However, I do want to make that clear that those who are below a certain income are entitled to a wage supplement.

Senator Inman: I wanted to ask you about the drop-outs in school among the working poor. Do you find that some of those children have to drop out to help the family?

Mr. Blakely: I would hope, Senator Inman, that this is not the case. I think those causes of school drop-outs would be for other reasons than to support or supplement the family income because of the employment situation for the very useful is even worse than it is for those say over twenty-one years of age and perhaps you could ask the school board people about that.

Alderman Rev. Greene: I might add incidentally that a report was done in this very school here and it showed that the drop-out rate for students attending here from places like Forest Lawn was considerably higher than the students living in places like Mount Royal which is much more affluent I think and it coincides with a point that you raised.

Mr. Blakely: That is true but I doubt very much that the reason they drop-out is in order to supplement the family income.

Alderman Rev. Greene: I think this could be one of the factors. I think there are a lot of others but I think this may be one.

Senator Fergusson: There are so many things that I would like to ask but time won't permit it. You refer to giving more publica-

tion to employing older people and I notice that you say special consideration should be given to employing men over forty or forty-five years of age. I presume this includes women?

Mr. Blakely: Yes senator we wouldn't be so foolish as to deny women.

Senator Fergusson: Well, that really isn't my question because I am just throwing that in. For years, I have been working on the matter of aging. I have been on the senate committee for ageing and many other committees and I know that the Department of Labour has worked very hard to encourage employers to employ older people and not to discriminate against them. They have gotten out pamphlets and films but what more can we do? We are working on this all the time and yet it doesn't seem to be going over.

Mr. Blakely: Well, perhaps where general persuasion won't work there should be a little more muscle. Perhaps a company should be required to employ so many people who are over forty-five.

Senator Fergusson: But can you make recommendations like that?

Mr. Blakely: I believe you can, certainly.

Senator Fergusson: You also say that we have to get the majority of Canadian citizens to realize that this is a major national goal to do away with poverty. How are you going to do that? I was just at a large conference and I mentioned that I was coming out here for hearings of the poverty committee, some of my friends simply sneered and said there is no poverty in Canada, what are you bothering about that for? After all that has been done, after all the publicity there has been there is still a large proportion of people that don't believe that. Now, what can you do to make them understand this situation?

Mr. Blakely: Senator, those of us who are engaged in the field of social work have been struggling with this for more years than enough and believe me it is encouraging to us to know that committees of this type were established who hopefully will influence an even greater number of people but I think that if one wants to examine the progress that has been made since the end of the war in the field of social legislation one would gain hope from that and I hope that this committee will be very influential.

Senator Fergusson: Perhaps I just want an instant reaction which we can't expect.

Mr. Blakely: We are frustrated but patient, I believe.

Senator Inman: Well, do you really think that there is the depth of hard-core poverty that there used to be? That people generally haven't got to go around from house to house asking for a loaf of bread for instance as they did in the thirties?

Mr. Blakely: No, we don't have that quite but it still concerns us the negative attitude of people towards the people who are living on assistance. At one time it was a real disgrace to get the old age pension and no such disgrace like that exists today.

Senator Fergusson: But that is because there is no means test anymore.

Mr. Blakely: Well, perhaps that will come out when you study the implications of the guaranteed annual income.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Blakely, may I ask you with respect to your statistics it seems that we have found demand in Calgary at least between twenty and twenty-nine have Grade 9 or less and no trade. Now, I was interested in the one figure of over 41 per cent there. We are spending millions, billions I suppose on vocational programs, manpower programs and re-training. What have we been doing wrong?

Mr. Blakely: Well, here again I think it all goes back to the matter of full employment. My understanding is at the present time we have about 260 carpenters in this city unemployed. We have about the same number of plumbers. I am not sure of the number of electricians but it is a high number. When one goes into a vocational school they have to, in order to provide this constant motivation, they have to have some assurance that they are going to be hired when they get trained. They can't afford to get discouraged at age fifteen or sixteen without a job market. We are feeling the effects of this through the number of youths who are travelling through this city which is now about five times above what we estimated and we thought we estimated very reasonably. People are very, very discouraged. The youth are very, very discouraged which is quite evident.

Senator Hastings: Well, why is that figure 10 per cent so small over 40?

Mr. Blakely: Well, these are men who have probably been unemployed at least seasonally for a long, long time.

Senator Hastings: I was interested in your comment when you said you started to prepare this survey for this brief you were quite acceptable towards the idea of a guaranteed annual income but since you went out and talked to these people you have changed your mind.

Mr. Blakely: Well, I didn't really mean to say that we have changed our minds but perhaps we are less enthusiastic than we were at the beginning.

Senator Hastings: Why?

Mr. Blakely: Because we find that people are not so sure they want a guaranteed annual income. They want work. If that is what those people want, that is what we want for them. We want work for them so we can see them established in good secure jobs like the rest of us—well, I am not so sure—but like the rest of us should have.

Senator Hastings: All of the witnesses this morning, Mr. Chairman, have indicated the need—particularly Alderman Musgreave, the will for dedication on the part of Canadians to solve this problem. Alderman Musgreave said it is going to take money. I would like to ask each witness in your experience this question. Do you believe that we have the will to solve the problem of poverty in Canada?

Alderman Rev. Greene: I hope that by the time you people get back to Ottawa that you will have convinced yourselves that we as Canadians have the will. I don't think the money is that critical. This was quite obvious with some of the comments that were made in the Maritimes and likewise when Senator Inman said they don't want a guaranteed annual income, they want to go their own way. When I say it is not that critical I mean it has to be assessed at a certain priority but I think if we go to the people of Canada and say as a nation and want to have the will to do something about this I think we will. There is just no way that we won't.

Senator Hastings: But we haven't had it in Alberta. With all our affluence have an equal amount or the national average of poverty in this province.

Alderman Musgreave: Well, Senator Hastings, I would like to suggest to people like yourself and myself in the oil industry that is changing.

Senator Hastings: I am glad to hear it. I hope it is.

Alderman Rev. Greene: I take exception to that. I don't think it is changing. I think that those of us who have it couldn't care less. I think it is quite true as a general group. I think the Canadian people are going to have to be convinced that this is a real problem and is hurting all of us and not just the people who are involved.

Alderman Musgreave: Well, I disagree Mr. Chairman because I wouldn't be here if I didn't care. I am not on the poverty roles.

Mr. Blakely: I think we are gaining the will. I think there are more people who are becoming more concerned all the time and as that numbers grows we are bound to come up with the answers. Those of us who are professionals have to believe that or we would be school teachers or something.

Senator Hastings: But you mentioned the stigma. Does stigma still exist with respect to welfare that to give is human and to accept is a crime? Doesn't that still exist?

Mr. Blakely: It certainly does senator.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, ladies and gentlemen, time has caught up with us. I see that we have in the gallery His Worship the Mayor of the City of Calgary, Mayor Sykes, and I would ask him to come down and say a few words.

Mayor Rod Sykes, City of Calgary: Thank you very much, Senator Fournier, for the opportunity to speak. I have not prepared a brief but I have some rough notes and some remarks I would like to make to this honourable committee. Thank you for giving me this opportunity.

I am not in any sense a professional and I can't claim to be in this field at any rate and I can't claim any particular knowledge of or understanding of the problems of poverty as they are seen by people engaged in the social services. Like many people, I find myself very much in disagreement at times with some of the aspects of our social services and yet I recognize, again like many people, we must help those who need help. However, I think we must help them to help themselves.

Now, as a person recently involved perhaps in this aspect of government, there are a number of things that have struck me and it is those things that I would like to discuss

very briefly. I have more problems, Senator Fournier, than I have answers like all the rest of us, but before I address myself to the problems I would like to comment on some of the remarks that have been made since I came in. A statement that there is more awareness and more will to cure poverty here than there has ever been—well, I have to support Rev. Greene. I don't believe that is the case. I don't believe that that is the case at all. I think that perhaps there is a growing in tolerance particularly in this area of the problems of poverty. I think that perhaps there is a growing tolerance particularly in this area of the problem of poverty. I think people are becoming sick of hearing about them. We have to remember that in the west more recently than anywhere else in Canada, this country was built by people who were not living on social services. Most of the people here are working men, family men, I don't care about these social classes. They are working to support their families and provide for their futures. This is particularly true in Alberta but true generally in the west. They have many obligations and many worries not the least of which is worries about the government that appears but not solved inflation but expoused inflation as a policy for many, many years but now is attempting to correct the damage at the expense of the people of the country. Actually this is not a political statement. It is a statement of fact I think. Inflation is damaging and the battle against inflation is damaging to the family man and the working man. It gets it coming and going.

These people who make up the majority of the people in our province recognize that we are bending and somebody has stated billions of dollars nationally, provincially, at every level on social services but we haven't been getting the results. Certainly we are spending the money but the results we don't seem to be getting. Instead we get a rising level of complaints from a noisy and aggressive minority. It seems to us a noisy and aggressive minority but nothing to put forward but some extremely disruptive attitudes and the results of which is to create I think the beginnings of a back-lash against social services and against measures to deal with poverty.

I am sorry to see this but I do see it. There is a limit that we have to recognize. There is a limit to the burdens a working man can bear. There is a limit to the number of people he can carry on his back apart from the members of his family. Now our people are beginning to realize that they are approach-

ing that limit and they are wondering how much more they are going to be asked to do for people who, as far as they can see, demand but don't try.

They know we are spending money. They know we aren't getting results. I am concerned to see at every level of government of which I have been faced, huge bureaucratic apparatuses—if that's the word. I don't know what the plural of that is—of social workers federally, provincially, municipally and then on top of those the private agencies. I find that between these four worlds, let us say, there is little communication. More now than there used to be but little communication. A good deal of competition and a good deal of antagonism. Federal social service people feel they have certain rights, people feel they have certain areas marked out for their own and the municipal ones shouldn't interfere with those or if they do they do at their peril. Our municipal social workers feel that we have certain problems that are particularly ours and we mustn't have interference from anyone else.

Everybody is concerned about the other level, about his limits of responsibility, about his terms of reference and there seems to be too little working together and certainly there seems to be no attempt whatever to eliminate the duplication of social services which seems to me to be a major waste of money. These are strong words perhaps but sometimes I have wondered whether it will have enough poor to go around, to satisfy all of the social workers at every level of government and the private agencies. If we could only rationalize this whole system and have all levels working together on the same thing, I believe we will find that we are spending enough money and we have enough money already been spent to do more.

I heard also a remark about compulsion to hire on the part of private enterprise. Compulsion to hire men that are forty or forty-five.

Well, some companies do this but not too many. Not enough perhaps but I know it is done and I know it is done voluntarily and the only way I think it can be done if you are going to have an efficient business and efficient business is absolutely essential because they are the ones who pay taxes and the taxes support the rest of us. I don't believe you can have compulsion in that sense. On the other hand, it does appear to me that you can encourage people to hire older people and

one of the largest fields of employment is in the field of the social services. It seems to me that in social services, the extraordinary diversity of demands for people offer great opportunities for older people whose experience, whose understanding, whose compassion is such that they can deal with and communicate with all unfortunate people. Talk to them more easily than young university graduates in sociology. It seems to me that the university degrees as I see them on the hoof in Calgary at any rate serve to widen the gulf between the people who need help and the people who are there to help. When we get involved more and more in the jargon of delivery services and so forth, we talk about the people who need help as if they were mere statistics or forms—well, we do have some older people who are working in our social services and whenever I have talked to them I have thought well, they don't look on people they are helping as forms or statistics or units or whatever. They do seem to have a good understanding and so with great respect to Mr. Blakely, who I should say has done a very fine job for us, I would say that if compulsion to employ older people were appropriate anywhere, I think it is appropriate in social service departments and in departments such as his own.

That being said I would like to comment on these points. You must excuse me, please, if some of these are truisms but they perhaps need to be said anyway. Programs must be tailored to fit and it seems to me and not for the poor generally. We talk about the poor as if they were all the same, a homo-genious group and they aren't. There are some large groups of poor having specific characteristics and then there are some unclassifiable ones as far as I can see but I am not very well aware of any real serious effort to tailor programs to fit particular groups of the poor. We seem to take the shot gun approach rather than any other. For example, one group represents abandoned mothers of children—people who are deserted in times of need. Another represents elderly persons and I don't mean people on old age pensions or people with supplementary incomes. I mean a person who is not working any longer whose income is not tied to our current economic system where his income is derived from savings from the past. These people suffer a great deal and there is nothing much for them to try and help them in small ways. There is another group. People in the working age group who are capable of work and of course retraining is possibly one of the answers and there has been a great

deal of talk about it, more in fact than performance but this is characteristic of this whole field as far as I can see.

Another group of course, people in the working age group who are not capable of work for one reason or another, the reason usually being that they have left school too early and they haven't got the education and they haven't got the minimum ability but do technical jobs for which education is required but to make the decisions education helps them to make for their own future, where to go and what to do. They are the people who seem to be beat before they even get started. Again, this is not re-training but it is training that is needed. There are a variety of these groups but I just mentioned these to indicate that everyone of them is different and have different aspects of poverty perhaps.

Programs to develop jobs need to be undertaken. Fiscal restraints, and I am sorry to have to refer to this again but fiscal restraints, however justified they may be in the fight against inflation—and I happen to believe they are justified—they do reduce job formations. I am not talking about developing jobs, make work jobs because those things are wasteful, destructful, and degrading I think for people on both sides. I am not talking about the kind of job where you are forced to hire somebody whether he suits you or not and then he is miserable because he is misfit. That sort of thing doesn't work because it creates more damage than it cures. I am talking about a measure to obtain a fair distribution of available jobs but I don't think we are doing anything about that. Not that I know at any rate. There is a surprisingly large amount of moonlighting in this city and I suppose everywhere else in Canada. People who are employed in full time jobs and holding a part time job or another full time job on top of that. People who have more than one income.

There isn't anything wrong of course in a man working harder to get ahead, to save, but perhaps in a time when many men haven't got jobs it isn't desirable for one man to have one and a half jobs or two jobs. Again, if you look at employed families, husbands and wives both working, again very, very common across the country, you find a family with two incomes and there are a great many of them; families with two incomes and there are also a great many families with no income. Again I wonder if somehow in a time of emergency, if you

believe it is a time of emergency, whether these jobs could not be spread out a little more fairly. It is a difficult question I know and politically it represents a kind of a hot potato. Every politician I have mentioned this to, well, his face has gone sort of blank and he has just drifted away because nobody wants to talk about moonlighters or two pay-rolls or two pay cheques in one family. Now a days when we have families with no pay cheques, perhaps we have to face these things.

One obvious place to face them is in government because there are a great many moonlighters in government or perhaps in various levels of government across this country. A good many moonlighters undoubtedly are in various agencies, not exactly governmental but like school boards for example. These are the areas where goodwill and determination on the part of government on all levels can achieve some results. Just ask yourselves should one family have two incomes when another has one.

Again I wonder if the labour unions that drive for higher and higher wages with fewer and fewer people actually create employment. I suspect that excessive labour demands force employers to various forms of efficiency. Efficiency that works up or ends up at a reduced work force where fewer men are being paid better and of course more men are out of work. I wonder whether the unions wouldn't rather see more men earning a decent wage than a few men earning a high one. I think I have the answer because that is a rhetorical question.

I wonder if we need incentives. Incentives are important. Incentives are what built this country and I wonder if we need incentives make our social services work better. Not only incentives to the poor to work, to stand on their own two feet but also to the social workers themselves. This perhaps sounds ridiculous to a social worker but some time ago when the Royal Navy needed sailors in times of war they had press gangs going around and the people who ran the press gangs got a bonus for every head and I just wonder if whether a social worker ought not to get a bonus for every man he rehabilitates, for every man he puts back into the work force. What other practical reward for achievement in success could there be. Perhaps social workers do need to work on a commission basis and it sounds laughable, doesn't it? But what do you think they would

do if instead of being mere reports, to fill out the daily routine, the people they were working with became possible sources of additional income and if only they could be helped enough to get off the social service payroll and back on their own feet.

Well, it is just an idea. Rehabilitation as I see it. The idea of social services to get people back into the main stream, to get them back standing on their own feet and I believe it deserves some reward and the reward ought to be related to performance to the individual social worker.

Housing has been talked about a good deal and I would like to make it very clear, my views that housing is not a welfare program nor is it any part of it. Public housing experimental housing any subsidized housing. As I see these programs they are designed for the population in general to obtain particularly families for a better living environment. This is done to help people to help themselves and in many cases to supplement their earnings so that they can have better accommodation that they can afford on their own. Now, one of the problems that we have with public housing, experimental housing, is the act of resentment on the part of people who paid their own way as they see it. I would like to remind people that anybody who has a C.M.H.C. guaranteed mortgage, an N.H.A. guaranteed mortgage has in fact benefited from subsidy or at least we look at it that way. In any case there is a very active resentment in many residential areas against public housing. Public housing has the stigma, completely unearned, of welfare housing. People are afraid that there will be welfare families in those houses and they don't want them in their neighbourhood. This is practically universal in this city at any rate. Now, this is one unpleasant aspect of intolerance but the fact is that if we never get our public housing program which is a rental assistance program, or experimental program which is a home ownership program—if we ever get those involved in welfare then welfare people will not benefit and the people who need housing will suffer very greatly because we will end up producing far, far less housing at greater costs and particularly greater costs to neighbourhood dissatisfaction and revolt.

There is nothing wrong with seeing welfare people in public housing, subsidized housing. There is everything wrong with seeing welfare people concentrated socially in any one neighbourhood, in any one project in such a

way that they are identifiable—they are labelled. That in effect is building the ghettos which we want to destroy. Our welfare people as a matter of policy in this city—we try to locate them every where we can throughout the neighbourhood, the whole community—scattered and integrated and part of the community and that isn't what we must do. There should be no greater concentration of welfare families in public housing than in the community as a whole and any talk of percentages of course is nonsense.

We need understanding, we need tolerance and we need to make it clear that it is socially undesirable to segregate, to concentrate and to label welfare people and to try to attack housing program as some misguided people have done lately in this city is in fact damaging not only to the poor but to the whole community.

I have a couple of things that bother me now and perhaps some of the members of the committee may help me. Any working mothers or abandoned mothers with children are leading an extremely difficult life. It seems to me extraordinarily so that there should be so little attention given life insurance. In many, many cases where husbands have died—as you know I am not speaking about sudden desertions but of husbands who have died suddenly, it turns out that they have lived well for a number of years and they had cars and all kinds of the better things of life and all of a sudden it comes to an end. The pay cheque is gone and there isn't any insurance. Insurance premiums are very small relatively speaking. Anybody who can afford cars can afford life insurance. Any family man. I have noticed that more and more we are insisting that people who want to own a car buy insurance. This public liability insurance is to protect the public against the effects of a disaster in connection with this car and so isn't it reasonable to expect young married people to take out life insurance? Some basic kind of life insurance when they marry, when they start a family to protect the community in one sense I suppose against having to bear the cost of misfortune which may come upon them or in another sense to provide benefits for their own future. As I say the cost of an insurance premium is far less than normally most people spend on liquor or tobacco or cars but it is a first thing. You may ask me what can government do and I will say this: you talk about education, you talk about retraining and re-education but don't you

think you could do something about an information program to encourage the basic understanding of the responsibilities and these opportunities? The opportunity to provide for your family at least to a degree at a minimum cost through life insurance.

I am not talking about life insurance and savings plans but I am talking about plain term life insurance, the kind of thing that is equivalent to fire insurance where if your house burns down you get paid. People starting out in married life often lack foresight and perhaps they need to be helped. Just as people who often buy cars often lack foresight and the government has accepted the principles that they will help them like it or not.

Pension plans worry me too. Many private pension plans may be actuarially sound but I think they are socially destructive in some of their aspects. If a pension plan were truly portable—there has been a great deal said about portability but there has not in fact been the fact of portability in private pension plans in Canada or if there has it has only been to a limited degree. If they were truly portable; if you took your pension with you whenever you left your job for whatever reason you left and if the employer's contributions were vested in the employee immediately and they are truly his earnings—and yet when he leaves his employment in many cases the employer's contribution which matched his own which he earned normally go back into the pension fund to pay for other people's pension and he loses them.

He may leave his job after a short period of time and a short period of time may be a number of years but when he leaves half his pension savings are generally lost and they are confiscated and confiscated quite legally but he has worked a great many years by that time and in many cases to provide for his future and the company has matched his pension contributions and it is taken away from him when he leaves. This is done because many pension plans are designed to try to tie people to the company; to create a penalty, a forfeiture if you leave and that forfeiture is a cruel and unjust one in my opinion and it is time people's pension earnings, their contributions plus the employer's contributions be vested in them immediately so that they will be able to better provide for their futures. This would require a radical revision of many private pension plans but many private pension plans need a radical

revision particularly if they are socially destructive.

I believe also that with private pension plans, and not only private pension plans in this case but measures that cut the pension for a surviving widow are destructive too. The theory seems to be and I will put it very crudely, that one can live for half the cost of two so you get an elderly couple who have lived for many years on a pension that becomes increasingly inadequate. Inflation takes it toll, rising costs, and they have a hard time and all of a sudden the husband dies and the wife's pension is cut back immediately. It is cut back to the point where she probably ends up on welfare. The theory is of course that she doesn't need as much money to live but the rent costs the same and the difference in food costs is minimal and all the other things cost about as much. I don't believe there is any practical justification these days particularly in the days of rising prices for pension plans that cut survivors benefits; that short change the widow once she is unprotected. Of course it is a rather practical approach. You don't short change the family when the head of it is there to speak for himself but you wait until his widow is defenseless and this is one of the aspects of the private pension plan that I think could take a great deal of examination.

I have said what I thought about inflation but I am going to say something more. Generally speaking inflation is created by governments. You may argue with that and say not creating, but that is arguable, I will admit. It certainly can exist without complicity of governments and inflation is robbery, plain and simple. The erosion of savings or confiscation of savings; when this goes too far, governments administer the cure to their victims and we are going through that now.

The cure is pretty drastic and lies most heavily on those least able to defend themselves. Retired people, people on fixed incomes. But what happens if a government decided to exempt, and this could be done, retired people from the results of fiscal measures against which they could no longer protect themselves? In other words, what if the government accepted the basic responsibility for fiscal management—they have the responsibility to exercise this except when things go wrong or when it appears they are standing just a little bit back.

Suppose they said we will compensate people on fixed incomes for losses in purchasing power. It would be only just because losses of purchasing power are normally the result of a fiscal measure taken by those governments and the people on fixed incomes are unable to protect themselves any longer. They haven't got any wage salary expectations for the future so all they have for the future is a decreasing standard of living. This seems to me to be the basic guarantee that a democratic government could give people who have retired from the labour force; that is the right to live out their last years with no reduction in their standard of living.

That can be done.

What a useful discipline for governments that would be of course. We might all benefit incidentally.

Well, to wrap up I would just say that some welfare families live better than some working families. We know that and we don't think it's right. Many people work, struggle and save and deny themselves to improve their circumstances and to provide for their families and they resent bitterly the idea that they must carry others on their backs. We are developing I think noticeably now with the development of professional agitators in the welfare field, people who are demanding a better way of life than their working neighbours have at the expense of their neighbours, we are developing the beginnings of a back-lash which could be most destructive for those people who need help, those people for whom we have an obligation to help themselves.

The only thing that I can say to the people who are demanding more agitating or whatever their reasoning is, please if you are sincere consider the results because the majority of people in this country I suspect, in this province I believe and in this city I know are coming to the end of their patience. They don't want to carry too many people on their backs too long and they certainly don't want to carry people who are living better than they are and many people are having a hard time. I am in favour of helping people who need help. Beyond that I think none of us are prepared to do it. Thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Mr. Mayor, for your excellent presentation. I would ask the committee to permit

the presentation of His Worship the Mayor before made a matter of record.

The Deputy Chairman: Our next presentation is from the Calgary Public School Board represented by Mr. Burden and Mrs. Johnson. We have read the full brief. You have a lot of documentation which we appreciate very much. I must say that the committee has received a great number of briefs from school boards across the country. Yours is not any different but we would like to hear from your board just as we have heard from others. I would ask the witnesses not to read the brief but just comment on it. Then we will be asking questions.

Mr. G. M. Burden, Chairman, Calgary Public School Board: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman. I was just going to suggest, sir, that I think while we have an hour and a half we would be prepared to cut our time to facilitate your operation.

The Deputy Chairman: It would be appreciated, sir.

Mr. Burden: First of all, sir, on behalf of the Calgary Public School Board, I would like to thank you for the opportunity of presenting this brief to you and hopefully answering your questions. I also this morning, on behalf of the citizens of Calgary, welcome you to our Stampede City. The Monday after Stampede we are all mindful of the famous line of the poem "The Shouting Dies". However, I hope after your deliberations while they may not be too tumultuous something of a very permanent and uplifting nature will evolve.

I would like to clarify one thing. The record does indicate that the brief is in its entirety, sir, is that correct?

The Deputy Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Burden: Thank you. I would also like to make one or two preliminary comments. The lady on my right, Mrs. Johnson, is the vice-chairman of the board and it was really at her instigation that we are here before you, sir. She put the motions before the Board to have the Board prepare a brief that was unanimously endorsed and passed by the Board.

Secondly, there are many of our administrators, principals in the audience. I am glad to see them here and it might be, sir, that some of the questions that you will direct to myself—would I have your permission to

redirect them if it were of a very specific nature?

The Deputy Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Burden: And the answer will be given by anyone who will be named of course for the record.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you.

Mr. Burden: Now, Mr. Chairman, as you say I won't read the brief but I am wondering if I could just take you through it. It is divided first into a foreword which sets out the theory and philosophy behind this Board and a little bit of a size. We are one of the largest public boards in Canada. We are the largest urban board in Alberta and primarily we are charged with the education of people ranging in age from five to eighteen years' of age.

However, this Board does not restrict itself to that age group. We look upon education, sir, as something that takes place from the beginning of human life right up to the end, that is the basic philosophy which underlies this brief in its entirety.

I would like to direct you to page 2, paragraph 6:

Our school system subscribes to a multifaceted concept of education which has as its aim, the fullest possible development of the individual pupil. With almost 76,000 individual pupils in 159 schools, our major task is to ensure that all pupils in all schools have equal opportunity for such development.

Now, it is because of that equal opportunity, sir, that we are really before you today. Looking at page 3, in the last half of paragraph 7:

The development of the individual pupil is not a simple function of classroom instruction. Home and community environment play a large fold in the development of a child than do the 1,000 hours of formal education which he receives each year. It is with the consideration of the social, cultural, emotional, and material environment of inner-city pupils that urban school systems reach and impasse in attempting to provide a quality of educational opportunities. It is with this consideration that the Calgary School Board has come face to face with the poverty problem.

Now, on page 4 is the summary of recommendations. I won't read these in total. You have

them and they are all on one page but the one I would like to emphasize right now however because it underlies the philosophy of this brief very, very substantially is number 92.

Social development programs should have maximum community involvement and self-development by the residents concerned as a pre-requisite for financial assistance.

Mr. Chairman, we are not here before you asking for money just for the sake of having some money to spend as we as a Board might think it best. We feel that people today must help themselves, must involve themselves because that is the only way we believe you are going to have maximum utilization of any financial system. We don't subscribe to the view that hand-outs for hand-outs sake, is going to solve any problems. We feel that people must get involved and help themselves. It is that particular recommendation, sir, that really gives rise to much that follows from page 5 on. I would like to refer you to the definition of poverty as defined by the Economic Council of Canada on page 5 and we would say that we would agree with that.

We would certainly agree with such a definition, but the context in which we view the poverty problem gives greater emphasis to the individual. Our concept of the poverty problems, sir, is those of circumstances in which individuals maximum development is hindered by some inadequacies in his environment. Since poverty is relative, our concept can be properly specified as those circumstances in which inadequacies in economic position, housing conditions, family relationships, community services and facilities, or educational background can support (or any combination of these) place the individual in an inferior position relative to a decent minimum standard of living.

It is this problem that we are facing in what we call our inner-city core or inner-city schools.

Now, Mr. Chairman, page 6, paragraph 13 is upper-cased and with your permission I would like to read this and maybe digress for a moment or two.

The Deputy Chairman: By all means.

Mr. Burden: It reads:

It is perhaps at this point that we differ from the poverty analysis of the Economic Council in its annual reviews. We

cannot in all fairness to the individual emphasize economic production and man as a producer to the extent that this is done by this Economic Council of Canada, we would increase the council's emphasis on people as people, and direct the council's pleas for human investment toward the enrichment of individual lives. Employment and production are important but we cannot forget the changes in social relationships, increased knowledge, value structures and technological progress which will combine to make life in 1985 much more complex than life in 1970. A child today in a poverty situation cannot, according to our definition of poverty, develop fully. Therefore, he cannot make an optimal adjustment to our present society. If he cannot adapt now, what will he do in 1985?

Mr. Chairman and senators, this paragraph to me is the heart of our brief. There is no doubt that all of us cannot help but be overawed and over-whelmed at what technological advances have taken place in the past even fifteen to twenty years. Very recently we saw where a failure in a technological experiment almost resulted in having three human beings stranded hundreds of thousands of miles away from this planet but at the same time we saw where other technological break-throughs brought the men back and you know, I didn't hear him say it, but I understand His Worship, the Mayor of Montreal when he was in Calgary last week made a rather interesting statement—and if he said it and I have every reason to believe he did, it summarizes I think my views and the feelings of the Calgary Board and its administration. He said that when he was in Europe or he was in Europe I should say trying to sell summer games to Montreal at a time when this problem was going on in outer space and he said that when he had gone before he has often heard the expression "Yankee Go Home" and he said that all he heard this time was "Yankee Come Back".

In other words, the humanness was overriding any other feature and Mr. Chairman this is what we are saying here. Technology has had as one of its laden or ancillary factors the dehumanization of people. We have taken humanity out of people. We have put economics first but we must bring the human beings back, sir, and this is what we are saying. Give a man his dignity, you can strip him of a lot of other things and this brief and this system lays emphasize on reinvesting a

person with humanness as opposed to strictly production.

At one time not too long ago and it has been alluded to it this morning, the work ethic was the basis for education—get an education in order to make a living. We are suggesting, sir, that this must be put in its perspective today. True you have to survive but one way of surviving today in this world and in the world of 1985 is not just making a living but how to and this means living with your neighbours on an international as opposed to a very provincial scale. We are not just citizens of Alberta or Calgary today or of Canada. We are citizens of this world and any educational system must gear its primary objective to that end otherwise we are in effect dealing with obsolescence.

The work ethic is important but it is just one of two main ethics and the other one is learning how to live and we feel very strongly about that, Mr. Chairman, and we feel that there has been over-emphasis on the making of living as opposed to living and I think we have seen some rebellion if I may use that word against this over-emphasis and I think we have all got to recognize it and take cognizance of it.

Now, sirs, as I say, I don't want to belabour this because I know you will have questions. However, I would like to turn to page 9—at the top of the page, recommendations. Just to go back for a moment we asked questions at the end of page 8 and we say:

What new inputs are required; what remains to be done to enable children in relatively deprived urban circumstances to enjoy the same opportunities for individual development as do their counterparts in more affluent circumstances?

Page 9 we pose four recommendations, sir.

Number 1—Action research with sophisticated feed-back and evaluation components.

Number 2—Maximum community involvement and self-development.

Number 3—Effective co-ordination of public and non-public social service agencies.

Number 4—Flexible approaches to government funding and financial assistance.

In considering these four areas of action, we would recommend that emphasize in all cases be directed toward the pre-school and elementary school levels of

childhood without sacrificing the need for action as regards older children, parents and other adults. While more funds are necessary from the federal and provincial levels of government, we feel that actual implementation of services can be more effectively done at the local level by bodies such as the Calgary School Board.

Now, going through those, sir,—I won't read those as I believe they are self-explanatory. The one that of course always poses a problem is item 4 on page 10—paragraph 23.

The federal government should play a more effective role in the area of social developments. There are many existing channels through which financial assistance could be provided to local service institutions and agencies without contravening the constitutional division of responsibilities between federal and provincial governments. The Office of the Secretary of State, the Department of Health and Welfare, the Department of Manpower and Immigration and the Department of Industry could all extend and modify their present assistance procedures to achieve greater effect than at present.

Now, Mr. Chairman and senators, we are all aware of the constitution of Canada and its division of powers and the fact that it is a fairly rigidly written constitution. However, I think we also are aware that the constitution is 103 years old and while it still works I firmly believe that it is being interpreted more in the light of what is happening today rather than the way it was being interpreted 50 or 60 years ago. I think the cases and some of the decision bear that out. To me the constitution cannot be a monorail concept where you just go down a straight road with no deviation or wandering whatsoever. It must be more of a fence concept where you can wander a little bit as you proceed and not be on a straight target. You have to have a little flexibility and I think we are getting that, sir, and I think the Office of the Secretary of State, the Department of Health and Welfare, the Department of Manpower and the Department of Industry can all be involved. Now, the word education is a federal and provincial responsibility. We are not dealing with the word education as being restricted to the school house and what goes on within a primary function of a system such as ours. We are dealing with education and we must I

submit, sir, deal with education in its broadest, fullest sense and that means people being developed to their ultimate potential no matter what age they really are.

Now then, sir, on page 11 we give in paragraph 24, sir, the specific areas requiring federal funds and they are listed as follows:

Number 1—Pre-school classes.

Number 2—travel and cultural enrichment opportunities.

Number 3—guidance and supportive counselling services at all age levels.

Number 4—community library development.

Number 5—community recreation and non-formal education (summer camps, community recreation programs, etc.)

Number 6—parks and recreation facilities.

Number 7—various parent and other adult education programs.

Number 8—vocational and academic programs for school drop-outs.

Number 9—education programs for those in marginal occupations.

Number 10—education programs for community volunteers at all age levels.

Our conclusions which are stated again Mr. Chairman on page 12 says:

The Calgary School Board appreciates the time and consideration which the Special Senate Committee on Poverty has devoted to this and the many other submissions which have been made regarding the problem of poverty in Canada while this Board recognizes that the problems referred to in the preceding pages are but small reflections of a national problem, we trust that the information provided at the viewpoints expressed herein will be of some value in the deliberations of the Committee.

We have as appendixes, sir, certain statistics dealing with our system, the size, etc. we also have statistics aimed primarily at our adult education department which has twenty thousand students, if I may use that term, registered in it and appendix B deals with some recommendations brought to this Board by committees established earlier this year involving the inner-city schools and the areas incorporated thereby. If you have read them, sir, some of the recommendations you will note are being implemented and others cannot be implemented at this time.

Senator Hastings: You are implementing them?

Mr. Burden: Those are going to be implemented Senator Hastings, yes. They are going to be implemented starting this September and with that then Mr. Chairman, again personally I thank you and now we will try to answer any questions that you may have.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much.

Senator Inman: This is a very interesting brief and complete brief and I read it very carefully. To start with, how many school districts does this area comprise of?

Mr. Burden: How many schools, Senator Inman?

Senator Inman: Yes?

Mr. Burden: 159 is the figure we have and thank you very much for your initial comments.

Senator Inman: Now I notice on page 11 some of the things that you are stating there in certain areas are aligned to provincial territory, aren't they?

Mr. Burden: Well, I suppose Senator Inman, this is the problem. If you interpret the constitution as saying that education is a provincial responsibility in the sense that is used in section 92, then quite likely a very strong argument could be raised and some of these are the problems of the province but I think we all recognize that the federal government pour a lot of money into the educational field primarily in the post-secondary institutions and in the vocational field. Mind you some of that has been withdrawn, that is the support has been taken away but nevertheless I for one, would hate to believe that the constitution is so rigid, a country that is so dynamic and growing today in a world that is changing as rapidly as this would be still interpreted in that rigid sense. I can see your point but I really like to concede it.

Senator Inman: Well, I know some of the problems are very delicate here regarding provincial rights.

Mr. Burden: That is very true and again I think that is an important thing because what has happened—and I will have to digress a little bit but I think if you look at the provinces as provinces they are diminishing in their importance as far as the people within them and the cities are increasing. You see,

we have this fantastic urbanization we are going to get to what I have often called and others have called, a city state complex. We have city states in Canada that are larger than half of the provinces. You don't have to think very hard about that but the provinces are going to have to in my opinion, open up some direct relationships with the federal government because the provinces can't possibly function as a big brother to the city's the way the cities are growing and the provinces are actually diminishing as you know.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Burden, you say there is 76,000 pupils in 159 schools. How many schools are there in what you term this inner-city area?

Mr. Burden: I don't know if I have the number exactly, sir, but we could add them up. Mrs. Johnson has given me a good estimate—20 to 30.

Senator Hastings: 20 to 30?

Mr. Burden: 25 to 30.

Senator Hastings: And how many pupils?

Mr. Burden: Well, if we took that roughly I would say twelve to fifteen thousand.

Senator Hastings: Now, in our travels we have constantly been given the information that the children in these schools receive the poorest teachers, they are in the poorest schools and have the poorest services instead of having the best teachers and best services and best schools. Now, do you have a per capita cost for the city of Calgary for each pupil?

Mr. Burden: On the average it works out to about a hundred dollars or in that area.

Senator Hastings: Well, you will have to give me your opinion...

Mr. Burden: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Are we spending more in those 25 schools than a hundred or less than a hundred?

Mr. Burden: No, sir. I was going to say when you made that comment that I don't think you will find that allegation in this brief but the poor teachers or poor facilities. We are trying our best to give these youngsters the full facilities where possible. Now, in some cases we can't because of the physical nature of the building—we just can't but as far as teachers go, sir, I would say that these youngsters have every good professional

teaching staff available to them as other schools. We try to do that.

Senator Hastings: You try to do that?

Mr. Burden: We are doing it.

Senator Hastings: Well, you say the average cost is eight hundred dollars. Could you tell me if you are spending more than eight hundred dollars per pupil in these schools or less or average?

Mr. Burden: I would say average.

Senator Hastings: You are not spending more?

Mr. Burden: It might be, as Mrs. Johnson pointed out, Senator Hastings, we might be spending a little more now to bring the schools up to standards like all the schools.

Senator Hastings: Well, when we speak of equal opportunity I think it is obvious that if the average is eight hundred we have to spend one thousand per pupil. We have to do this in order to create equalized opportunities. It doesn't have equal opportunity if we are just spending the same amount in Bowness-Montgomery as we are in Henry Wise Wood.

Mr. Burden: This is quite true and you have a point. This brief goes a little further than what you are doing. We are hopefully taking you out of the school room a little bit here. We want to equalize opportunities here by getting these youngsters to environments that are much more conducive to learning which they are being expelled at the present time. For example, outdoor camps and trips like this. This is what they are doing. We are not just looking at the actual building as being the end-all. As far as these buildings go I would say that we are spending as much because of staff and facilities and maybe a little more but we are also trying to do more outside of the buildings with these youngsters. This is where we are saying we equalize.

Senator Hastings: Well, would that reflect in costs?

Mr. Burden: Yes.

Senator Hastings: I agree with you that you are spending more.

Mr. Burden: Yes. However, I wouldn't want to say that we are spending "X" dollars more but I am sure, and in fact we are to equalize the opportunities.

Senator Hastings: Well, turning to the Bowness-Montgomery brief—first of all your teachers. You have seven psychologists. And you tell me are they spending more time in these twenty-five schools than they are in the other one hundred and fifty?

Mr. Burden: Yes, they would be spending more time there. I wonder on that point because your chairman gave me permission, I see some of our Bowness teachers here and if Mrs. Shaw is in the audience. Mrs. Shaw, could you answer Senator Hastings question specifically?

Mrs. Shaw, Principal, R. B. Bennett High School: Yes, I will try.

Senator Hastings: I was looking over the statistical information as to the staff of the public school board and I noticed you have seven psychologists and other specialized teachers as councillors. My question is are these teachers being utilized more at the twenty-five inner-city schools than they are elsewhere?

Mrs. Shaw: At the present time up to the end of June, their time in our schools has been the same as their time in any other schools. Their need is greater but their time is the same.

Senator Hastings: Thank you. Their need was greater and yet they weren't getting the services?

Mr. Burden: Well, as I say, Senator Hastings, we have got to distinguish, what has gone on and what is being proposed this is where I think, if you look on page XIII, in the appendix, you will start seeing what we hope and what we are going to do starting in September next.

Senator Hastings: Finally, one other question. In regards to the adult education division I notice you are cutting back on this?

Mr. Burden: Well, we have cut back on a few things financially this year, I'm afraid.

Senator Hastings: My school bus I know is included.

Mr. Burden: Yes, I know. Again, there had been cutbacks and some of them have been in this area.

Senator Hastings: Out of those twenty thousand students, how many of those would be located in these inner-city areas?

Mr. Burden: You mean from the adult education?

Senator Hastings: Yes.

Mr. Burden: Well, that is a very difficult one to answer but perhaps Mr. Geiger could answer that.

Mr. Geiger, Superintendent of Elementary Schools: I think the answer to that one would be that the adult education programs are voluntary and it may be that there are more for Bowness or less, depending on how many volunteer. I think our problem is to provide stimulation to the community of this sort so that these young people are willing to go on and I think it starts right back at pre-school. This kind of thing that would build up incentives toward self-improvement which adult education courses passes on.

Senator Hastings: Well the answer to my question is that the adult education courses are being utilized, not by the poor but by the ones that don't really need it.

Mr. Geiger: Not necessarily.

Senator Hastings: I asked you if they were being utilized more by the people in the twenty-five areas than the other areas of the city?

Mr. Geiger: Well, I am not able to answer that.

Senator Hastings: Well, could you hazard a guess.

Mr. Geiger: I don't think anyone here could.

Senator Hastings: Do you take issue with the observations.

Mr. Burden: Pardon me, Senator Hastings, but I would say no. I don't think they would be used any more by those people than by the other people.

Senator Hastings: Do you have any poor people or welfare people involved in the setting the curriculum in your programs?

Mr. Burden: You mean in the...

Senator Hastings: In the curriculum for adult education?

Mr. Burden: No, we don't.

Senator Hastings: And yet you speak of involvement.

Mr. Burden: Yes, we speak of involvement and I haven't really hammered that one nearly enough but the involvement we are speaking of—I go right back to the earlier part of the brief—that is we are saying to involve them more in the elementary and primary levels and we have two or three excellent examples in Calgary where this is being done, the Langevin and the Ramsey School. In the Bowness brief we say we want to involve them more and more. We want people involved in the program.

Senator Hastings: In the program?

Mr. Burden: In the program.

Senator Hastings: Well, do you involve them in setting the program?

Mr. Burden: Well, they are involved in setting the program I suppose by the fact that they are represented.

Senator Hastings: Well, is the program set by the experts or is it set by the people who are going to be taking advantage of them?

Mr. Burden: A combination of both.

Mr. Geiger: I might be able to answer that. The adult education programs are first decided on by submissions for the people, usually the kind of things they would like to be involved in and then when the class is set up a final curriculum is decided on the needs of the group that are there. The curriculum is not finalized until the whole group meets.

Senator Hastings: So the program is one that is done in co-operation with the people involved?

Mr. Geiger: With the people involved, yes.

Senator Hastings: Finally on page 11 of the Bowness group brief the high school drop-out age in 1967, 1968 and 1969—am I reading this correctly? The Bowness High School is 12.2 per cent and High School A and B are the same?

Mr. Burden: No.

Senator Hastings: In 1967-68?

Mr. Burden: Well, in 1967-68...

Senator Hastings: Bowness had 642 enrollment, a drop-out figure of 78 which was 12.2 per cent.

Mr. Burden: Right.

Senator Hastings: Now, is high school A the same area?

Mr. Burden: No, these are two other schools.

Senator Hastings: In the city?

Mr. Burden: Right.

Senator Hastings: So that the drop-out rate in Bowness is not higher?

Mr. Burden: In 1967 and 1968 it wasn't but if you look at it in '68 and '69 you will notice how it is coming up, sir, and then for 1969-70 for four months it is half as much again as high school B. Do you see that? 9.2.

Senator Hastings: Yes. I understood that the ratio is about ten to one, am I wrong in that thinking?

Mr. Burden: You mean in both ends?

Senator Hastings: Yes, both ends as compared to another high school?

Mr. Burden: Well, I would say that that is a rather exaggerated rate.

Senator Fergusson: I would just like to ask a few questions about the children and on page 1 you refer to the number of pupils that you have which is a very large number I would say for the school board of Calgary to handle. You mention the ages from five to eighteen years of age. Do children start going to school at five?

Mr. Burden: No. They start—the law says six, Senator Fergusson, but we do have some pre-school classes which do not receive government support.

Senator Fergusson: They don't get government support?

Mr. Burden: No, not here.

Senator Fergusson: They don't?

Mr. Burden: No.

Senator Fergusson: Well, that recommendation of ten pre-school classes—you are going to have that, are you, this year?

Mr. Burden: In certain areas.

Senator Fergusson: And the ten would only be...

Mr. Burden: In the inner-city area.

Senator Fergusson: About how many children would be in those classes?

Mr. Burden: Ten pre-school classes, I would say probably two hundred and fifty to three hundred.

Senator Fergusson: Well, you may have heard that New Brunswick is going in very strongly for equal opportunity in education and in other ways but did I understand you to say that the school board organizes summer camps as part of the education of the children?

Mr. Burden: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: This is something I don't think we do in New Brunswick but maybe it is a good idea.

Mr. Burden: We have an outdoor lab—we call it an outdoor lab school, Senator Fergusson, which starts May the tenth or so and runs towards the end of June. This is west of Calgary here about twenty miles or so towards the foothills and it is a camp which is actually owned by the Kiwanis of Calgary. They loan it to us before the actual summer holidays start.

Senator Fergusson: And by us you mean the school board?

Mr. Burden: The school board, right and we run this a week at a time from grade six from schools throughout the city and we take six schools a year and they spend a week there. They go out on Monday morning and come back Friday night. They are fed and they go on trips to the hills and down the rivers and they just get back and see what nature is all about. We have youngsters in this city who don't even see a gopher until they get out on trips like that and this is the sort of thing I mentioned earlier to Senator Hastings. We also not only have the week by week camp but we have day trips which catch many, many additional students. They might go out early, say eight o'clock in the morning they would get out there and maybe have their lunch at this camp but they do have bus trips that would take them out and bring them back. It is part of our science program which we feel just teaches youngsters a little more about their environment and what they are living with, the flora and fauna.

Senator Fergusson: I think it is a very good idea and I was very interested to hear about it. Was this the responsibility of the school board and paid for by the school board?

Mr. Burden: Yes. It is primarily the responsibility of the school board but we do

have some support as well from other enterprises.

Senator Fergusson: The children that take part in this don't have to pay their own way?

Mr. Burden: I don't believe they do, no. No I don't believe they pay a thing.

Senator Fergusson: Because if they did there might be some that might be eliminated.

Mr. Burden: There could be, yes. We try to make this available throughout the city and we do try to emphasize those areas where the youngsters probably wouldn't have a chance like this.

Senator Hastings: Did you say you are?

Mr. Burden: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Those twenty-five inner-city schools would get more of that?

Mr. Burden: Well, I think the answer was, Senator Hastings, and I have to keep repeating this that we do have the inter-group schools but we also a city situation. We try to keep a proper balance bearing in mind the objections of this program.

Senator Hastings: But to create equal opportunity the inner-city schools need greater attention.

Mr. Burden: That is correct and they are getting it. However, I am not saying to the exclusion of everybody else. That is why I am emphasizing this so when I say not to the exclusion of anyone else.

Senator Inman: Mr. Chairman, on page 9 it says:

More pilot projects of action research nature are required in all facets of urban poverty.

What projects would you suggest or do you have any in mind?

Mr. Burden: Well, some of the ones we are recommending here, senator, to start with. We feel that the whole complex problem of urban poverty is one that can be answered quickly. I think we mentioned that earlier in the brief but we are suggesting, and this brief is geared to this main facet. We are suggesting that in looking at a solution for urban poverty you just can't look at an economic solution you must look at the personal solution. In other words, get people involved in helping themselves but at the same time we

as an educational institution feel we are in an excellent position to make a very large contribution in this respect because of the facilities, the philosophy and expertise of our general staff who are all well aware of the philosophy of this board and its administration.

Senator Inman: Well, you speak about the educational problem of reading and arithmetic. What is the cause of this problem? The lack of good teachers?

Mr. Burden: The reading problem?

Senator Inman: Yes.

Mr. Burden: No. Perhaps it was one of the paragraphs I jumped over.

Senator Inman: I was interested in this because I do find that students cannot read out loud, not even the top grades. I have grandchildren and I know that.

Mr. Burden: Right. There are many reasons for this and the causal reasons for this type of difficulty—if I may refer you to page 6, Senator Inman, where it says:

In looking at such urban communities one soon finds that causal factors for their relative deformation cannot be considered in isolation one from another. That is to say, the child's lack of reading material in the home cannot be meaningfully separated from the family income, nor can the family income be separated from the parents educational background, nor can the child's frustrations in the classroom be separated from his out-of-school environment, and so on.

We say that maybe there isn't just one cause for a poor reader. There may be many causes some of which go right back into his home but in the schools, let me assure you, when we find youngsters in the Calgary system who have difficulty reading, we have specialists reading teachers that we try to put on them and help them because we recognize that if a youngster can't read he is not going to learn.

Senator Inman: Yes, I think that is quite true.

Senator Hastings: Do you bring the teacher to the child or the child to the teacher?

Mr. Burden: Well, we can do both, senator. The teacher is made available to the child. We have, in our central office, facilities for bringing the child right down to the teacher for special services for this problem.

Senator Hastings: Mrs. Johnson, we seem to have in the last twenty years spent, I think you could say, billions of dollars of federal money, provincial money and civic money for building schools and student loans or anything to get the child to stay in school and complete his education. But we have failed. Would you tell me why?

Mrs. Mary Ellen Johnson, Vice-Chairman, Calgary Public School Board: I think we have failed because society which the schools merely reflect, society has particularly not wished a great degree of success. When I speak of society I mean the general public, I mean our institutions and our politicians. We have the "myth of the melting pot" and the Americans and Canadians both have taken the "myth of the melting pot" to heart. The school system, the public school system will cure everything and this is the idealistic approach. It just isn't true. The public schools just reflect the community, and the ills we are now suffering we are told we cannot cure, or that we failed to cure the schools of the ills that society hasn't cured and suddenly they look around and the schools haven't cured them.

If society wants us to succeed, if they want us to do a better job then society will make the answers available and make the methods available and make the money available and the whole philosophy will change and the schools will be successful. The schools cannot operate in a vacuum, Senator Hastings and Mr. Chairman, and many of these things I fear do operate in a vacuum and this is one of the reasons why we have had to struggle with these things and have had to spend vast amounts of money and we have had a great amount of success to our credit in the realm of the students with particular disabilities and we have failed to prepare them to cope with the middle class guides of education right in front of us.

This is another one of our faults, sir, and Mr. Chairman if I might digress for a moment. You asked if we had a poor type of teacher in some of our schools—no we haven't. We have the same type of teacher by and large in all of our schools and that is our mistake. It is like giving somebody who is on a restricted diet meat and potatoes but they can't digest meat and potatoes. We expect everybody to digest the same diet regardless of their needs and we put the same type of teacher into all of our schools and accordingly here are many instances of lack of understanding between the teacher and student and

this is not the fault of the teacher necessarily. It is certainly a thing that is present and hopefully as we go along in the approaches that we have now we are hoping to see more scope in the Calgary system here, Senator Hastings, and we will overcome this because the personal approach is very important to us and we are going to emphasize this as we go on.

Senator Hastings: In other words are you telling me, I think this is what you are saying, that our whole educational system has been designed for the middle to upper income society?

Mrs. Johnson: Well, it has been designed to do two things and you have to go back in history for this. One thing it has been designed for is to keep the children of working parents in an almost extodial circumstance and in turn train them to be working people. When the society changed and more and more people became white collar or professional people, the schools had to meet the demand of their children as well and to train them towards the same goal or the goals of their parents which they felt were important.

Mr. Burden: If I could just add this. I agree with Mrs. Johnson, Senator Hastings, but I think it even goes further than that. I think you said we failed in the past year. I wouldn't use that word. We have not succeeded entirely but that doesn't mean to say that we have failed which rather has a final connotation to it. I think there has been a certain amount of success.

Senator Hastings: Well, I think we have failed miserably.

Mr. Burden: But the main reason has been that the philosophy of education has not been apace with what is happening in this world today. As I said earlier it has always been Johnny wants to get out and get a job—he must learn to get a job. Now, this is till important but it cannot be the epitome or the top facet of an educational philosophy. Acknowledging—we know today and I subscribe to the new but the way we are going, a very, very small percentage of the people in the world today will be able to produce the goods the world needs, the material goods. We are continually being told that man must be prepared for a lot of leisure. Well, we give lip service to that but leisure—leisure still must be utilized. A person must keep his

dignity and keep himself employed without meaning materially employed. He must be employed in some respect. He must use his time and I feel and this board feels that the educational philosophy must give prudence to the individual being an individual and not an economic unit necessarily. I think this is what this whole thing is about and while we have not succeeded entirely we hope that your committee, Mr. Chairman, can see from this that we believe that the federal government—we want some help but only from those people who are prepared to help themselves. To help themselves be fully developed individuals as people.

Senator Inman: Do you have any communications between the parents of these children and the teachers? Do the teachers visit the homes?

Mr. Burden: Oh, we hope we have as much communication as we can work in, Senator Inman. I don't say that the teachers will visit the homes as a matter of practice but I know some teachers visit homes but we have Parent Teacher Associations and the Home and School Association and I believe you are going to hear a brief from the Home and School next and we encourage parent teacher interviews. The schools issue reports on marks for times of year and we asked the parents to come in. Of course, there are a lot of parents that don't come, they are probably the ones that should be attending.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Burden and Mrs. Johnson, we thank you very much for your brief. I take it that paragraph 13, on page 6 pretty well sets forth the whole position of your brief. I sincerely believe that it does. Now, you mentioned that you are not looking for money but I am sure if you had it you could use it.

Mr. Burden: Well, we are looking for money, sir, but we are looking for the money to put to the use that is outlined in this brief.

The Deputy Chairman: It is amazing to find that the educational problems all across Canada are about the same. Although we spend a lot of money the needs of the people are the same. You will remember that your mayor this morning mentioned the tax and the ability to pay; that the people across the nation were a little bit disturbed. It is true too that in the last twenty years we have spent a great deal of money on education, billions of dollars. I would say that we have come a long way but we have not reached our

goal. There are many more miles to be travelled. It is people like you who have devoted their lives to education who will be able to achieve this goal. I am sure that government as a whole, provincial and federal, will give education a lot of attention. They will give as much attention as they have to the problem of pollution these days. We thank you very much for presenting your brief. I would like you to know, sir, that it will be part of our record and it will be certainly given careful consideration.

Mr. Burden: Thank you very much, sir, and I would just like to also say that there were a lot of people who were responsible in part for this brief and I will convey your thanks to them.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you.

Mr. Burden: And again, as a parting remark, I am glad to hear that you are finding these problems are the same across Canada or at least we are not that provincial!

Senator Hastings: We haven't seen the progress towards solving them as we have found here.

Mr. Burden: Thank you very much, senator.

The Deputy Chairman: We will have a five minute break.

—(SHORT RECESS)

Senator Earl Hastings in the Chair.

Senator Hastings: May I call the meeting to order, please. Our brief this session is from the Calgary Area Council Home and School Association of Alberta. We have with us Mr. Gordon A. Reid and Mrs. C. E. Ferguson of that organization.

First of all I will apologize for the absence of Senator Fournier, who has an appointment at twelve. Had we been on time he would not have missed this presentation. He had to fulfil an obligation.

Now, Mr. Reid, we will ask you to make a brief statement on your brief, if you will. We have read it and upon completion of your short opening address we will ask you questions pertaining to your brief.

Mr. Gordon A. Reid, Calgary Area Council Home and School Association of Alberta: Thank you very much, senator. Our brief

covers one point, the aspect of poverty. It is our contention that poverty, as we see it now, is something quite different than poverty in past decades. It is our contention that poverty is becoming ingrown and that we have a hard core of poor people in this nation and that it is becoming a self-perpetuating thing. We had welfare that used to tide families through emergencies but today we see people living on welfare over a period of a lifetime. This is going into generation after generation at this point. But this is no criticism of the welfare system and the government's desire to help people. Certainly welfare is going to continue and certainly welfare has many positive and good aspects about it.

However, it is our contention that in many, many cases one of the reasons for self-perpetuating welfare generation to generation lies with education and it is our contention that by educating the child early enough in his life when he is in that viable stage between the ages of three and six, that we can break the welfare cycle, the poverty cycle and bring far more children into useful and productive lives than we are doing today. A child between the ages of three and six is at a very viable learning age. He is absorbing knowledge just like a blotter and often as not he is in a poverty home, as we know poverty homes today where there isn't a great deal of dignity in many cases, this child has nothing surrounding him to learn the positive aspects of life that will be useful to him later on.

A child who lives in a home that has no books and no educational outlet is a deprived child when he reaches first grade; often as not these young people are starting Grade 1 on the wrong foot and they remain on the wrong foot all the way through school until they eventually drop out and are unable to make a living in our society for the most part. Mr. Chairman, that basically is our contention. The federal government is investing vast amounts of money in post-secondary education, universities, training schools, and this is excellent. There is nothing wrong with this program and it is a program that will probably continue to grow in the years ahead.

However, it is our contention that if the same amount of money was invested in poverty areas for pre-school education for children to the ages of three or four and six, that we would be developing these children as they are not being developed by their own parents to the point where they would adjust to school, they would accept the training and

they would become useful citizens in society. Thank you very much.

Senator Hastings: Thank you very much, Mr. Reid. Mrs. Ferguson, is there anything that you would wish to say at this time?

Mrs. Ferguson: No, senator, I believe Mr. Reid has covered it fairly well.

Senator Inman: I was very interested in this brief and I would like to know what success you are having in establishing your school for preschool education?

Mr. Reid: Well, I will let Mrs. Ferguson speak to this as well. This is a difficult area. We are not having that great a success. There has been some involvement by the Calgary Public School Board but not enough to solve the problems that need solving.

Senator Inman: How many children are taking advantage of this education? Can you give me some idea?

Mrs. Ferguson: I am sorry, Madam Senator, we don't have a figure on that. We do know that within our organization, and we profess to represent parents, we should probably qualify that. We represent parents, the greater majority of whom are from the middle class who want and are established and have ideas on education. We find it very difficult as does everyone else to get to the parents in the lower income class because they can't take the time nor do they have the money to be able to come out and find out the things that we would like them to know. It becomes a question of finance. When you have all the desire in the world to learn what your six year old is finding out in school but you can't get a baby sitter so therefore you can't come out, and we do not have nor do we feel that we want to definitely go in and impose ourselves on those people to teach them. We know the problem but we haven't the professional people now to help us solve it.

Senator Inman: Day care centres would be a help I suppose but again that would cost money.

Mr. Reid: The debate, senator, has raged on in this province for four or five years whether or not pre-school education should be a fact of life in Alberta and Calgary in particular. It has been turned down on a number of different occasions for a number of different reasons. The prime reason being the fact of finances and the attitude and feeling of the Calgary Public School Board and the Depart-

ment of Education in Edmonton but the priorities in education is not at the pre-school level but at the elementary level, junior high and post-secondary education.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, I would just like to refer to the statement that was made in the brief regarding the contention that if a given amount of capital was invested in pre-school education as it is invested in post-secondary education the economics to the nation twenty-five years from now would be immense. I am sure this is quite true when you recommend this be done.

Mr. Reid: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: But is it quite practical? I mean, the way that federal help is given to post-secondary education is to the universities, is it not?

Mr. Reid: It is indeed.

Senator Fergusson: Which are already established and all that is necessary is additional money to be given but when you are talking about pre-school, there is nothing set up. Do you think that the federal government should set this up?

Mr. Reid: Well, I feel this way, Senator Fergusson. I believe that we have a good post-secondary education in Canada today because of the promise of federal assistance. For instance, in the province of Alberta I don't think that we would build a University of Calgary or a University of Lethbridge if the provincial government had not been assured of federal aid to education in that area. They might not even have built the University of Alberta in Edmonton—probably they would have but certainly we wouldn't have had as rapid and very necessary expansion in this field of education had it not been for the promise of federal aid. This I think would apply in pre-school education as well.

I think what the federal government has done, senator, is prime the pump in terms of post-secondary education and our contention is if they prime the pump in the same manner with pre-school education, they would then be able to reap the benefits.

Senator Fergusson: I can see that, but it seems to me you are not starting with the same thing. There is nothing set up in Canada for pre-school education now.

Mr. Reid: No, this is quite true. If I am interpreting you correctly, you are saying that we don't have the addition?

Senator Fergusson: Yes.

Mr. Reid: This is quite true, senator. This is a very valid point and our contention is by one way or another we must establish the mechanics or the tradition of pre-school in Alberta.

Senator Fergusson: I am not against what you say.

Mr. Reid: I realize that.

Senator Fergusson: But I am just wondering how you make it practical and how you get other provinces throughout Canada to accept this—maybe not the provincial governments but the people.

Mr. Reid: Ideally I think such a system would be administered by the Calgary School Board and this specific instance would be administered by a regional school board so that the curriculum in the whole program could be tied into the elementary program. As soon as a child enters school so that there could be a successful program or transfer of records on the progress of any given child. Therefore it would have to, in my view, be initiated by the regional school board responsible for the school district.

Senator Fergusson: You would think that this is one of the things that you might hope this committee might recommend to the federal government?

Mr. Reid: Yes.

Senator Hastings: You are aware of the Constitution of Canada

Mr. Reid: Right.

Senator Fergusson: This is what puzzles me a little bit.

Mr. Reid: Well, we feel that federal involvement in education—and we are aware of the British North America Act and the defining of provincial responsibility and certainly in this brief as well as speaking to you we are also hopefully speaking to the provincial government as well. I realize this is not an actual fact within this committee but it is our feeling that the more attention that could be brought to this problem perhaps the faster we will come to a solution and aware as we are of the provincial government's responsibility we know for a fact that this province—and I don't say this because of any political motivation particularly but that the Department of Education in the Province of Albert

will not move in our view in this direction without some promise of federal aid to support it.

It is simply not going to happen in Alberta without some federal program to back it up as of course there are many federal programs to back up, provincial programs—federal aid to back up provincial programs.

Senator Fergusson: It still puzzles me how the federal government take steps in this area when there is nothing already in existence. I compare this with post-secondary education where there was something in existence and the government then said you will get more assistance. It puzzles me how the federal government can give that leadership in view of the Constitution.

Mr. Reid: I think this is going to be difficult and I think from a legal standpoint of the federal government, I think there are problems and we are aware of those problems but there is no initiative at all coming from the provincial government; certainly not in Alberta in this area.

Now, I can appreciate your concern that before federal aid is given that there must be a vehicle. There has to be a vehicle from your point of view.

Senator Fergusson: That is what I was thinking.

Mr. Reid: This is not our contention necessarily. A vehicle would be far more convenient if the vehicle were available this would be a very convenient area—to say that this particular vehicle now in existence needs your support.

Senator Fergusson: Yes.

Mr. Reid: On the other hand, as a senate committee crossing Canada trying to determine the causes of poverty, it is our contention that you should look to the under-educated child; the child that simply isn't being motivated in his formative years. And that as a cure to poverty right across Canada that some recommendation or some commitment be made by the Parliament of Canada to assist the Department of Education to set up programs, and in as much as this is not provincial and it is difficult for federal governments to become as involved as the provincial government in the areas of education, our contention is simply this: examining the problems of poverty and the causes of poverty, that education plays a big part in that prob-

lem that the country is having and this of course, and we are not suggesting that this is the complete cure-all, it is not, but it is part of the problem. If a child from an underprivileged home is going into school he is unable to cope when he gets into Grade 1. He is unable to cope all the way through elementary school, and when he gets into junior high school he drops out and from the standpoint of the nation, there is nothing he can do to make a living and he becomes poor. He comes surprisingly poor and maybe his father was before him and if we allow this to exist because he has no motivation, no motivation whatever and it was too late to motivate this child when he entered Grade 1, then it is becoming chronically poor and his children may become chronically poor after him because he is in no position to motivate any of his offspring.

Our contention is simply this: if we can get to this viable child in his formative years with some kind of program, preferably tied in to the educational system of the province and the local school board, but perhaps financed or partially financed by the federal government, then this would be financed. Our appeal to you today is simply that provincial governments are not acting. Provincial governments in my view fail to recognize the problem, and they are most unenlightened in my view in this regard.

Senator Fergusson: If they had the experience of listening to some of the witnesses we have had before this committee they might be sold on the idea that it is important that they realize this.

Mr. Reid: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: Because we have had a lot of people tell us this and I am sure we are all convinced that this would be a good thing.

Senator Inman: How long have you been at this work; how long have you been interested in it and how far do you feel you have gone with it?

Mr. Reid: Well, from my own standpoint, Senator Inman, I have been at this for a very brief period of time. I find it most interesting and I don't feel we have progressed very far.

Senator Inman: Well, how long has it been set up in Calgary?

Mr. Reid: I believe Mrs. Ferguson could answer that.

Mrs. Ferguson: The Home and School, if this is what you are referring to, and the interests of the parents in the education of their children, or are you referring to—

Senator Inman: I am referring to the pre-school situation.

Mrs. Ferguson: Oh, we must have been at it for years. I can't really go back that far. I have myself been with this organization or association some twenty-five years and travelling from Halifax to Victoria where my children have been educated I have run into this same kind of problem. We talk it over, we do what we can, we have study groups and information, but in Calgary, well, I can say ten years we have been working for this type of a program.

Senator Inman: But you can't get it off the ground?

Mrs. Ferguson: Right.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Reid, I am just going to digress for a moment. You were speaking that the child when he is six and he has entered school the rejection has set in?

Mr. Reid: Yes.

Senator Hastings: He has commenced his long journey. He is rejecting our system and as he proceeds through school he becomes naturally the drop-out because he continues to reject this and being the drop-out, he is next year's penitentiary inmate and five years from now he is our welfare recipient along with his wife and three or four children.

Mr. Reid: Yes.

Senator Hastings: What you are saying is that we break the cycle in the three to six year old before the rejection becomes prevalent.

Mr. Reid: That is right, Senator Hastings.

Senator Hastings: Now, what is the greatest cause of drop-outs in your opinion? Is it that rejection which commences in the ages between three and six years of age?

Mr. Reid: I think so. To a large extent I think this is part of the problem but the child who isn't motivated in his own home environment where his parents have no interest in him, educate him to read, to spell his name or identify colours and do the things that the middle class families, if I can use that expression, in our society do for their own children.

Now, any child in the three to six age bracket is learning. They are absorbing everything around them in that age bracket. The question is what are they learning? Are they learning that it is the thing to do to swipe hub caps or steal bikes or to steal milk bottles out of milk shoots or milk money? Sometimes kids find this a motivation. Other kids find it exciting and interesting to discover knowledge, to learn to read, to learn to identify colours and to learn to draw, to learn to play a musical instrument and their motivation in this is tremendous, the energy and learning ability that these children have at this age is channelled into a productive area rather than a non-productive area or a positive area rather than a completely negative area. I believe that the majority of young people, who at the age of fifteen, drop-out, become chronically unemployed and become a burden on the economy of the nation. These are children that weren't motivated in these early formative years. Everybody has a different learning ability but if a child is motivated early enough he then finds his channel quickly in life and creates a productive life with his own abilities.

Senator Hastings: Well, having lost that motivation—I am speaking about the fifteen to nineteen year olds that are in our high schools now, would a meaningful allowance—and I am not talking about ten dollars a month I am talking about a meaningful allowance of fifty to sixty or seventy dollars a month to the student which would give him the wherewithal to provide those things which he sees in the upper middle income brackets motivate him to remain in school or is it too late if his motivation isn't established by the time he is in junior high school?

Mr. Reid: If his motivation isn't established by the time he is in junior high school—every child is motivated—and we are speaking of an education productive motivation rather than a negative motivation—and if he isn't properly motivated by the time he is in junior high school, I am not convinced in my own mind—Mrs. Ferguson may have a different view than this—but I am not convinced in my own mind that a simple salary or a simple allowance would be the complete answer. Certainly for the child whose parents are having a difficult time and unable to provide him with the where with all to continue his education—if a well motivated child from a poor family were given this type of assistance I think it would be tremendous. I think it would be tremendous if he could remain in

school with a government allowance but unless he was motivated it could be extremely difficult and extremely disappointing. It could be a very disappointing program to the government.

Senator Hastings: Mrs. Ferguson, do you have anything to add?

Mrs. Ferguson: No, I think that is the crux of the matter because with so many of our families the money is provided. Government is providing assistance and low cost loans and outright grants.

Senator Hastings: This is post-secondary schools but we are talking about high schools.

Mrs. Ferguson: Well, even scholarships. If a child from a poor home cannot accept a scholarship because there are, shall we say, younger children coming along and he was brought up to the point that "I wasn't worth it at such and such a point, what are you sitting here wasting your time going to school for, why don't you go out and help out with the rest of the young people." This kind of motivation is hard to overcome and a simple allowance will not provide the necessary answer.

Senator Hastings: At these sessions we have always encouraged audience participation at the end of each session. If anyone has any questions they would like to ask, just give the reporter your name.

From The Audience (Mrs. Haddow): Mr. Chairman, I have a question. I was wondering this. The BNA Act didn't reject the federal government from giving assistance in the form of dominion provincial grants or technical vocational school grants so you feel that it should stand in the way of federal government possibly giving some assistance in this area that you are talking about right now?

Senator Hastings: The BNA Act as you say specifically reserves to the provinces the right of administering education but over the years we have entered into agreements with provinces but in reaching those agreements you have had to have a consensus of the provinces and when you start dealing with education that agreement has just not been obtainable up until now.

From The Floor (Mrs. Martin): My question is do you want the welfare roles in this province or city in Canada to continue to grow as they are growing or do you want to put a stop to it and my contention is that we have

got to start at the pre-school level or earlier. If the cycle has to be broken and if it is not broken it is going to become bigger and bigger and bigger and this country cannot handle it.

From The Floor (Mildred Huff): I would just like to ask the Home and School Association what is their idea of a tender loving parent who can go ahead and give these children motivation without the assistance from the government? Just somebody who is going to give these children understanding and a little bit of love. Do you think that would do more than any government could give these people?

Mr. Reid: Far more in my view than money. There is absolutely no replacement for that. This is what we expect is going on in society. This is what we—I think for years we have deluded ourselves, but this is actually going on in society and parents are naturally concerned about their children and parents are naturally loving towards their children and that this loving concern transmits itself into an educational process. The child absorbs—and I agree that this is a very positive and very powerful force in shaping the child's life.

We find however in poverty homes in particular—maybe both the parents are working, there is a tremendous amount of frustration and disappointment and this simply is not happening in many, many of our poverty homes. I don't like using that word "poverty homes" because it may sound as if we are lumping all poverty people together. Certainly, there are homes where people have no money but a loving concern of the parents is very powerful in moulding that child's life and the fact that they have no money doesn't influence the outcome of that child one iota because of the loving concern that you speak of. Or, for the large part unhappily defined in poverty areas people are frustrated for one reason or another and there are probably a hundred thousand different reasons why this child is coming into school at a tremendous disadvantage. This is a problem but I agree with you fully that if every parent was loving and if every parent was concerned, this is the ideal route.

From the Audience (Miss Evelyn Rea): I am concerned what you are saying about the pre-schooler. It seems to me that failure to reach the pre-schooler is a result of a failure to reach the parent.

You take a three to six year old today. Certainly his parents, even if they dropped out at the junior high level would have been under our educational system not too many years ago. Therefore if you say the parents of a three to six year old today is a failure, you are automatically failing out the educational system at a higher level.

Also it would appear to me that once again it is trying to treat the symptoms instead of the cause. If the under-privileged parent of a three to six year old finds themselves in a position where they have to accept aid from social development, could not part of that be a nursery school at such time as the parent as a qualification for their government assistance, be treated in night school or some other deal, get at the parents. In other words, the cause rather than the symptoms.

Has any work been done on that and have the Honourable Senators received any comments from other centres across Canada on this aspect?

Mr. Reid: Well, if I may answer that first before the senators speak. I would agree that the parent is most definitely the cause of the child's negative attitude.

Mrs. Rea: Well, what is being done?

Mr. Reid: Well, I think in the brief—this is why we are here today—and I think this brief immediately preceding this they spoke of the problems of adult education and the problems concerning adult education and I think it was certainly valid what they said.

Well, your contention is quite correct. We are not hitting at the source but it is so difficult to hit at the source and motivate the source because it seems that it is much easier to come back and hit at the cause which is the child and develop that child...

Senator Fergusson: That would be the symptom of cause, would it not?

Mr. Reid: Of course it is the symptom but it is the way to solve the problem easier than with the parent. The Calgary Public School Board spoke about adult education and certainly the work that they are attempting to do in adult education is good. It probably hasn't gone far enough as they themselves admitted today. And again they are asking for aid in this capacity as well. Certainly these things go hand in hand. The adult who wants to continue his education, I think should be given the opportunity to extend his

education and yet with all we have available to us today for the adults and there is quite a bit, many of these people in poverty areas won't accept or won't utilize what is made available to them.

Mrs. Rea: Are they made aware that they could be given the opportunity and a little later on I would like to ask, if there is sufficient time, a further question on adult education after we have chewed this over a bit.

Mr. Reid: I'm afraid I can't answer that. I have no idea what kind of information these people are provided with in terms of knowing what is available to them.

Mrs. Ferguson: Mr. Chairman, we would like to say that we quite agree and recognize the problem voiced by the last speaker but the public school board, Mr. Burden and Mrs. Johnson in their presentation did say what was being done. What we are concerned with is that the students, the children in these families will not grow to be the same kind of parent, denied some of the things that their parents were denied when they were at that age and that if we can educate the ones who will be the parents tomorrow replacing their parents of today, that the amount of money and the opportunities will not be as necessary as they are today.

Certainly we should work with adult parents and provide them but also we must motivate our young people to go beyond the need for this kind of assistance that is already being provided.

Mrs. Rea: Well, if you don't motivate the three to six year olds through the parents, how else do you plan on motivating them?

Mr. Reid: Well, I think there has to be certainly a rapport with the parents and an understanding by the parents of what is happening to his child and why this is available to his child and hopefully if a school as the school tries to do now to have a rapport with that parent—in many, many cases if this program were to come into effect, there would be no rapport with a lot of the parents.

Mrs. Rea: How do you gain rapport with parents of children who haven't even entered the school system?

Mr. Reid: After the child is entering the system then you are able to establish a rapport with that child. He comes into the system. I am sorry, I am not sure I understood your question.

Miss Rea: Well, you were speaking of rapport and I agree that that is a desirable quality but going back again to the three to six year old prior to the time he enters the public school system, how do you plan on obtaining that rapport with the parents of pre-schoolers?

Mr. Reid: Well, I think this requires and accelerating information program initially and I think this has to be launched before such a program is started that we suggest that this be done through the various vehicles we have available to us to try and establish an information rapport with the parent to create this desirable thing for their involvement.

Miss Rea: If attempts have been made for as many years as you were saying...

Mr. Reid: No, you misunderstand me.

Miss Rea: I am sorry.

Mr. Reid: The concern has been there for many, many years but it has fallen on deaf ears. There is no support from government for this concept. No support whatever. This is why it has not succeeded. It is not the fault of the parent, it is the fault of governments.

From the Audience (Mr. Roessingh): I am just attempting to get an understanding of the problems that the senators are facing.

Senator Hastings: So are we!

Mr. Roessingh: It seems to me that we are talking basically about social involvement and social betterment of people who are poor in one way or another and that whole concept is involved in society. That is why we all band together and that is why we have governments and in our bureaucratic world where we have all these little divisions and departments in the federal government and also in provincial and civic bureaus, it seems to me that you are facing an almost insurmountable task because everything you do on a departmental level is very piecemeal because at the departmental level everything is tied up with red tape and responsibilities and the division of responsibility. How are we going to be able to put it all back together so that we can have something fit for the poor people?

Senator Hastings: Well, what you are saying is the problem that we are faced with, the senate committee has been charged with. Our technological advances in the last thirty or forty years, there has been one-fifth of the

Canadians left behind. They just couldn't keep up and a great proportion I maintain through no fault of their own. We have to find ways and means to bring them back into society. They have been left behind because they just couldn't keep up.

Mr. Roessingh: I am wondering is that possible in a bureaucratic and red tape government which we have today without reshaping the whole society. Their viewpoints and their values are their morals in terms of poverty and the quality in a Canadian society.

Senator Hastings: I think you are quite right. We have to have a change in our thinking towards these people. They are part of a society and they have to be brought into the society or they will destroy the system as is happening in the United States. They have been rejected and pushed out of society and they have just said "To hell with it" and they have just thrown bricks. This is what we are trying to profit from, we are trying to find ways and means of changing the attitude of the upper middle class. That is the biggest task this committee has I think is to change the attitudes and thinking of the upper income class so that they do have a responsibility to these people to bring them into society with us or they will destroy us.

Mr. Roessingh: I have been listening to the school board.

Senator Hastings: Well, we were dealing with education essentially this morning and that is one facet of it.

Mr. Roessingh: Your comments seem to be fairly rhetorical if they don't take into account all of these people who are elected officials and if they follow programs that are unpopular even though they may be right and justifiable, they are not going to be reelected so the whole program is futile.

From the Floor (Mrs. Martin): Honourable Senators, there is a point I would like to clarify. One is that I am president of Area Council of the Home and School and I also have served on other committees as well. Either the city aldermen or the city mayor made the statement that there was no concentration of welfare in this city. I would like to draw your attention to the school board brief and the appendixes on Bowness-Montgomery which points out that out of a total population of three thousand families there are five hundred and thirty of those families on welfare and if that is not a hard-core concentration of welfare, I don't know what is. It is a

fact that between eighteen to twenty percent of the community do receive welfare assistance and of that two-thirds are divorced or deserted women.

I have just been phoning and found out that we have by the school board a total of ten classes and out of a total of twenty-five hundred that were contacted, we received one who was interested in lending a helping hand, and naturally, parent involvement is too late—by this time.

I am trying to answer the lady's question over here from my point of view. I have tried to get parent involvement, and parent involvement in an area such as this in any part of the country is almost an impossibility.

Mrs. Ferguson: Senator Hastings and senators, ladies and gentlemen. It is our contention that to eliminate and to benefit our society, we are not so much concerned with the adults of today as we are with the children of today. The young people in their formative years—and by this I mean before they get to school, when they are forming their first impressions—that they receive the training and the impetus that will eliminate, not today or tomorrow, but as we say benefit our society twenty-five years from now. To break the cycle that seems to be continuing because we have been trying. This is good and I don't suggest for a minute, none of us suggests for a minute that this be stopped, but that we reach the children and the young people at a much earlier age to break this cycle and in twenty years from now maybe that when the cycle is broken by the three to six year olds of today who are the parents of tomorrow, we will not have the same trouble and the same misunderstanding of getting this sort of thing off the ground.

It isn't an overnight thing and we are not looking for an immediate answer this year or even next year but on a long term basis. We must start when an individual is learning and is capable of learning the most. This is the contention that we have made and the recommendation that we are making and the one with which we would like some help.

Senator Hastings: Thank you very much Mrs. Ferguson. I would like to thank Mrs. Ferguson and Mr. Reid on behalf of the area council and Home and School Association for your brief. It will be incorporated in the proceedings and with that I will adjourn the

meetings until 2 p.m. this afternoon. Thank you very much.

(Noon adjournment)

—Upon resuming at 2 p.m.

Senator Edgar Fournier (Deputy Chairman) in the Chair.

The Deputy Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, I would like to call the afternoon session to order. The first brief we have this afternoon is from the Calgary Welfare Rights Organization who are going to present some sort of a play. We received their brief only a few minutes ago and really cannot comment on anything at this time. We must wait until the players' skit has been presented. We are prepared to accept it and we will give it our full attention.

Mrs. Alice Payne, Member, Calgary Welfare Rights Organization: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman. As you have just mentioned, we are the Calgary Welfare Rights Organization and we are not going to present a brief because we suspect you have heard from so many hundreds of them you are probably listening but you are not really hearing.

In this brief statement beforehand, I would like to mention that by this time, 1970, most thinking people will conclude that to allow poverty to exist in the third largest country in the world is a national, international and world-wide disgrace.

Canada must hang its head in shame for the world when it faces the cold hard facts that four or five million Canadians have continued to stay in poverty for generation after generation for 100 years.

Senator Croll has stated that for twenty years there has been no distribution of wealth in this country. To keep us in poverty costs millions of dollars. It has in fact become a gigantic fraud with thousands of employees employed by all levels of government and private institutions making large salaries to keep us where we are, in poverty so they will make economic gains.

Slum landlords, second-hand church stores, social planning councils, social development schemes and team upon team of researchers are kept rich by sucking the blood of the poor. We are sad to say that there is enough money to be made off the poor. We hold you responsible for the cruelty you have allowed

to be inflicted on our families, our children, our handicapped, our aged and our children.

Although studies have proven over and over that the welfare poor are in a trap from which there is no escape, but to allow its continuation—Is that what democracy is all about? If so, are you amazed that so many of the young and the poor and racial disenfranchised are fed up with your concepts of freedom.

As you are no doubt aware, for the poor there is no freedom. We are enslaved in an out-moded and rotten system which puts money before human needs. A system which pours hundreds of millions of dollars into foreign investment and wars which pollute our air, tear down our mountains and contaminate our water.

You sit idly by and watch thousands die in wars because your system promotes killing and death and these take precedence over peoples lives.

Lately the cry coming forth is that the welfare budgets are running dry. It surely will now that unemployment is the tool used to fight inflation. The jobs of course are taken from the poorest of the workers. This in turn forces them on to welfare and then causes more hardship on the other working poor and hatred between the welfare and working poor class.

Again the system calls upon the poor and the poor pays the piper. You should not equate child labour and slave labour from the years of 1750 to 1850. Child labour and slave labour have been used for generations up to the present time and in the beet fields of southern Alberta and will continue. Look into it sometime.

We are somehow not afraid of technological change. If we sent men to the moon and not returned, there would be an immediate change in a system which was obviously faulty. We must not be afraid when we see our poor people suffering to change an out-moded economic system.

There can be no excuse for the vast poverty inequality existing in Canada today. Surely we have the courage to change our priorities from mental, emotional and physical deprivation before the fast arriving days when our cities will be burning because you refused to change a cruel and corrupt system while there is still a split second of time.

Poor people are fed up and can no longer be fooled into thinking that we are to blame

for our sorry lot in life. We realize that the odds are stacked too high by the system for any of us whether working or welfare poor to beat our way out of the economic disparity course of life.

We know and understand that the system makes the poor. The poor do not make the system. The Calgary Welfare Rights Group comprised of concerned and indignant welfare citizens who insist and intend to be full-fledged first class citizens by presenting the following drama to you to prove the above named points.

We suggest you listen carefully because you are the jury.

(The Calgary Welfare Rights Organization present short play)

The Deputy Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, we certainly would like to thank those people who are responsible for this display. I would like to ask the actors not to go away for a moment. We would like you to have your picture taken in a group. I really feel that the morale of the play was really good. It was flavoured with good spirit. This is what we like. There was a lot of truth in what they said. We still have some time left and we would like to ask a few questions because these people went to a lot of work to prepare this presentation. Their representative is Mrs. Alice Payne and I am sure the members of the panel would like to ask a few questions on social welfare and the treatment that you receive.

Mrs. D. Davidson, Chairman, Welfare Rights Organization: Our group is leaving. We feel that the problems of poverty—you know them, you have studied them, before the last study you studied them before and you have been studying the problems of the poor for hundreds of years and we think you realize that and we think the time has come when you immediately start a great investigation into the wealth and into the rich and you might just get a clearer understanding why the poverty stricken five million Canadians are with us today and this is the chairman of the welfare rights group and she may have something else to say but we will not answer your questions. They have been answered too often before.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, at least we would like to thank you for what you have done this afternoon. It was a very useful demonstration, and as we mentioned a while

ago it had a good morale. You have said a lot of things of which we approve, and it was done with a flavour of good spirits. We appreciate it very much and you can be sure that your brief will receive full consideration with all the others. Thank you for what you have one.

Mrs. D. Davidson: The problem is now your problem because if you aren't part of the solution, you are part of the problem as well.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you. The next brief is from Mr. Ian Walker, Executive Director of the Calgary Social Planning Council. His subject is the "The need for change in the administration of public welfare financial assistance programs and a proposal."

Mr. Walker, as we have told all the others, we have read your brief a couple of times and we would like you to comment on it and then we would like to ask you some questions.

Mr. Ian Walker, Executive Director, Calgary Social Planning Council: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman and members of this committee. I should like to just clarify one point. I am here as an individual citizen of Calgary and I am not here representing the social planning council.

I would like to say how much I appreciate this opportunity to present my own views about what particular aspect of your investigation into the problems of poverty.

As an aside I would like to say that I have received the co-operation and courtesy from your staff. With regard to the brief itself, I have limited my comments mainly to the present situation with regard to social assistance programs.

I have questioned whether the present program is adequate partly because the assistance given is for all intents and purposes a tool to persuade people to rehabilitate themselves.

I believe that with appropriate conditions, financial assistance should be a right and that rehabilitation programs needed as they are, be administered by groups who are trained and qualified in the rehabilitation field. The purpose of the financial assistance program should be financial assistance and such a program should be administered by budget clerks, not welfare workers.

I believe the present program operates under the assumption that most people are unworthy and I cannot accept this assumption, if other organizations are to provide rehabilitation services, such organizations must then be held accountable for the quality of such services.

As an aside, Mr. Chairman, I recently obtained a copy of the new social development act for Alberta which came into effect or into force on July the first of this year. I have copies available in case they have not been made available to you today. I should like to add some brief observations based on the act.

(1) The purpose of this Act is "to ensure that no persons within Alberta will lack the goods and services essential to health and well-being."

(2) However, the Act delegates to the director the power to withhold such assistance "where on the basis of information received by him, the director is of the opinion that the social allowance provided should be discontinued."

What fantastic power to give to personnel who themselves are not legally accountable for their actions.

(3) It is clear therefore that financial assistance is not the purpose of the program but is only a means to an end. I believe that financial assistance programs, to repeat, should be for financial assistance only. I also believe that both the client and the department staff could be ultimately accountable to the courts for decisions made in this program.

I respectfully submit this brief to your committee.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Mr. Walker. Would you like to make any personal references or elaborate a little bit now?

Mr. Walker: Well, the situation is so broad but I would like to say...

The Deputy Chairman: May I have a copy of the Act, please?

Mr. Walker: Mr. Chairman, basically I am trying to suggest in this brief that we separate the administration and provision of financial assistance to citizens from the persuasion, the social needs, social demands, to force people to rehabilitate themselves in our modern society.

Senator Fergusson: There is one question I would like to ask you, Mr. Walker. You say that payments should be automatic and through a computer. I am sure this is very sensible but what would be necessary to establish for the ground work?

Mr. Walker: Well, madam senator, the eligibility requirements are written in various manuals within the Department of Social Development. The eligibility requirements are such things as residence, other assets, and these requirements at this point are not published. These requirements, my experience has been with welfare recipients it is almost impossible to get these facts as to eligibility and because they are written and because they are already there it seems to me that one form could be completed where the client, the citizen preferably answers the questions; if the questions show that the person is eligible there can be a routine processing of the "equivalent of a claim" as the unemployment insurance commission now does on an automatic basis.

You can have as many qualifications as you wish in terms of review of the situation and at one place in California where I worked, the citizen on welfare was given a form once a month which was mailed into the department in which they declared any material changes in that form and there was no requirement of the welfare worker to investigate each particular situation once a month or very two weeks to see in fact whether the client had been honest about his statements of his own particular situation.

Because of things like music lessons I can see some problems in the extra services required but the basics of food, clothing, shelter, transportation, school supplies, etc. and that probably should be on the basic list and I am saying that that could clearly be spelled out. I am suggesting that there should not be that much room for leeway and for each welfare worker to make the decisions about what the amount should be. If you program it it can eliminate what might amount to human error.

Senator Inman: Do you think that there is too much overlapping of service?

Mr. Walker: Yes, madam senator. I believe here is too much overlapping of services and if we could take as one example there has been some fantastic changes in the manpower department over the last few years; a fantastic expansion in the range of rehabilita-

tion programs, retraining programs, financial grants to enable people to take part and to take advantage of these services that are available.

At the same time, the Department of Social Development in this province has established its own manpower training program within its own department.

Now, two things it seems to me are causing some confusion here. One, if you have more than one or enumerable systems doing the same thing it is very difficult to hold people accountable for the effectiveness of their own program. They can always say that we only deal with a particular sample group of the total society.

The manpower department, in my opinion, should be held much more clearly accountable in terms of results and I don't see that much evidence available to show that the manpower programs, the vocational training programs, the educational programs and so on are ever evaluated effectively to see if they are doing the job for which they are designed.

Secondly, and I think more importantly, when you incorporate rehabilitation programs administered by the same people who administer and budget, a client, even if the worker has the best of intentions, the client, the recipient of services can never quite be sure and the statement by our mayor on Saturday in the newspaper to the effect that welfare is not a means of a livelihood but is a rehabilitation program justifies my point on this, that the financial assistance program in this province is administered as a means to an end of rehabilitation and the client does not know what his or her rights are.

They do not know that they have a right to not participate in a rehabilitation program and do not know whether it is their decision to participate or the worker's decision.

Now, because there is always room for human error in these kind of judgement situations, instead of talking about retraining workers and giving them a higher understanding of the relationships with people, I am saying separate the two approaches clearly and unequivocally so that everybody knows where they stand.

Senator Inman: Do you find ever any confusion that in voluntary organizations going along with government?

Mr. Walker: Yes. I think in terms of the citizen who wants the service or needs the service there is total confusion both within voluntary agencies, both voluntary services between various levels of the government departments in providing services as between the voluntary and private sectors.

There is no effective bringing together of the resources in society to meet the needs of people. This is one of the problems that I wanted to just focus on; these specifics of financial assistance and I think this is part of the overall problem. The people don't know what their rights are. We are treating welfare people different from "the people who are identified as the working poor". I think both classifications are inappropriate and I think it should be more like your manpower program which reflects that they are citizens of a big community who needs services, wants services, who up until now, have been paying for themselves.

The Deputy Chairman: Do you know if there are very many voluntary organizations in Calgary looking after the needs of the welfare people?

Mr. Walker: Well, there are probably 80 to 100 organizations, at least, voluntary organizations but there are almost none in Alberta providing financial assistance of any kind. This is almost solely now a provincial and municipal government responsibility.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Walker, as I envisage your suggestion, the client would make one application for assistance and it would be computerized and mailed every month to him?

Mr. Walker: That's right.

Senator Hastings: With automatic changes?

Mr. Walker: Automatic changes and we have that capacity in the present computer systems. Without going into complete details as to how to operate the system, there are many ways of how you could operate it because there is much experience from various places around the world, but the key is, I am making a plea for a change of attitude about the purpose of the system itself and to reinforce that it is an actual assistance program and not something just hiding behind that to achieve unstated goals.

Senator Hastings: One statement you made at the start and I don't know whether or not I caught you correctly, but it was something to

the effect that the rehabilitation programs should be operated by trained and qualified personnel? Is that what you stated?

Mr. Walker: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Do you not think the people affected by the program could be activated and involved in any rehabilitation?

Mr. Walker: Of course. What I was really trying to say was they have developed in our society various systems and institutions like education that if a person needs educational services that they should get them free and of their own choice through the educational system. Effectively, and I agree with the concept of participation of the people who need and use the service, not only in just giving advice but going much further into the administration of it.

Senator Hastings: If the administration of any rehabilitation programs?

Mr. Walker: Absolutely. Here of course I don't want to back into saying that only welfare people then should participate in that decision. There are thousands of citizens in Calgary given the opportunity would participate using their own experiences and knowledge. Professionals alone can't do this job and of that I am sure and your committee is much more aware of that than I am.

Senator Fergusson: There is one comment I would like to make here. I was very much interested on page 5 where Mr. Walker refers to people who fraudulently claim assistance and in the second paragraph he recommends an alternative to the first suggestion made or perhaps to be clear I should say the first suggestion was that twenty per cent of the applications be investigated.

Mr. Walker: Of course some percentage could be decided upon.

Senator Fergusson: Yes, a certain amount. An alternative is that you suggest that everyone who receives assistance—if it is suspected that there is a lack of co-operation—the matter be referred to the legal authority and then you propose to take action under the Criminal Code if a person is willfully failing to provide for their families. I think that is very ingenious and I have never heard this suggestion before. Is this an idea that you originated?

Mr. Walker: Well, I have had some experience in the juvenile and family court a few

years ago and looking at society and listening to people talk, both the people on welfare and the citizens who is paying the tax-dollar, I have a feeling at this point that politically and socially that society is not ready for a total unconditionally guaranteed income. I have a feeling about that but I think intellectually we might try this. We all have our own feeling about the responsibilities of those people as well as the rights of people in our society. I see this as a need for a short-term change—not a long-term proposal but a short-term change.

In other words, the decision that the welfare system now makes about this—I would like to challenge the legal system to make those judgments and my bet would be that in 99 cases out of a hundred the cases would be thrown out of court as unfounded and unprovable. Such as that man doesn't want to work—I think this would be very difficult to prove that a person doesn't wish to co-operate or does not wish to fulfil his responsibility in society.

I am saying let us have a program that is in fact a right but the exception to that is where you can prove legally that a person doesn't wish to participate in society. Now, this is my own personal view and in testing it on a few people I get all kinds of reactions but I would like to hold the legal system accountable in the sense of giving them the opportunity to judge legally where the client also has the right of appeal.

I think that an appeal board in the welfare department is a very poor second choice to the present legal system with built in procedural safeguards.

Senator Fergusson: I found that very interesting.

Mr. Walker: But the Criminal Code charge exists.

Senator Fergusson: I know.

Mr. Walker: But somehow we are afraid to use it and I don't know whether or not it is because we are afraid we won't get any convictions or what it is but it is there and I think it is the only way to assure the rights of all citizens. I think we may have to by the way, Mr. Chairman, investigate other kinds of legal legislation in regards to social conditions; again to give rise to both the broadest of society and the individuals that we have one so far.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Walker, we thank you very kindly for your brief.

Senator Hastings: Just one question, Mr. Chairman. Are you quoting from the Act when you said the directors decision was final?

Mr. Walker: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Well, I was going to ask you who would you vest the final decision with in regards to welfare?

Mr. Walker: If the regulations were printed, in other words if the regulations were legally defined in terms of eligibility as regards to payment and amount, it should be in here. I think it should be stated in the act, the provisions for amendments to be made and so on.

Number one—I don't think the director should have that power because he is not accountable and if you want to have somebody in the welfare department it should be the minister who is accountable for the system back to the people.

Secondly, I don't think it needs to be this way if you spell it out in legislation then a proper appeal to the court will in fact ensure that the level of payment or the judgment about eligibility or judgements about people should go to the courts but I do not think here should be a hearing.

Senator Hastings: By regulation?

Mr. Walker: Yes.

Senator Hastings: And the same amount would apply in Calgary as in Lac La Pêche Alberta?

Mr. Walker: Well, I am prepared to consider that we have knowledge at this point so that we can come up with reasonable rates and I think it is inevitable that we should do so. I think as long as you spell it out this could be justified based on the cost of living in various sectors of our communities and the social pressures that we have in some areas to provide more services in some areas but I think it should be spelled out so that everybody knows exactly what is going on.

Senator Hastings: In other words what you are saying, that there is too much discretionary powers vested with the welfare worker?

Mr. Walker: Yes, and maybe I am one of these bleeding-heart Liberals, I don't know but in terms of the original presentation and

in terms of the many you have had over the carryings on of this committee, listening to all kinds of groups, in my experience the hostility towards the welfare worker by the welfare client cannot be removed just by improving the quality of the welfare worker. I think we have to go much further into changing that system otherwise, well, I have seen it in the States where the social worker is held in about the same regard as the policeman and that is pretty low.

You can't make a program work with those circumstances. I am not blaming the individual welfare worker because it is the system and rather than just rambling on I am trying to propose an alternative to the present system rather than just saying the system doesn't work.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Mr. Walker, for your brief. The questions were most interesting. We wish you the best of luck and we hope you will carry on your work.

The Deputy Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, we are going to change our program a little bit here to accommodate Mrs. Goodwin, who would like to say a few words, mostly about welfare. Mrs. Goodwin if you will come right down here we will hear you for a few moments. After this short presentation, which will be about five or six minutes from now, we will have the day care group.

Mrs. Goodwin: Mr. Chairman and senators, I believe when the Welfare Rights Organization made their points that they omitted that difficult situation of the mature woman, namely somebody over forty. This point was brought out this morning in our session that there was no legislation force in Canada that employers hire a certain percentage of their staff of people over forty and in Calgary we seem to have a youth cult obsession which is not being encountered in other cities throughout the world where I have worked at any rate.

The Deputy Chairman: What did you call it?

Mrs. Goodwin: A youth cult obsession. A person over forty, when a mature woman approach a prospective employer with top notch skills, experience, good letters of reference, eager to work at a liberal salary and the first thing that they say is oh, we only take people under twenty-five or under thirty and

you just have to look in the employment want ad columns in newspapers both for female and males personnel and you will see some of these firms discriminating in their ads saying that this certain position is only for those under twenty-five and I know in Alberta I think it is 55 per cent of our population is under twenty-five and this is quite tremendous.

I still say there is still a great need for a person over forty not to be ignored. I know of a personal case—not a hypothetical situation—where this woman with four dependents took a test at Canada Manpower and asked if she was university material and she was told yes and was advised that her results—her I.Q. was quite alright. Well, the problems came up and the salary she could command for the four dependents would be only three hundred or three-fifty at the outside and since 1954 the salaries have not been increased. This person was earning three hundred in 1954 and that is all she has been offered to date.

Anyway, she went to university and because of provincial action in cutting the school board budgets down to 6 per cent, they of necessity had to eliminate a number of their projects and one of them was bursaries and this particular lady was number one on the list to receive a bursary to enable her to attend a second year at the University of Alberta—Edmonton.

There is a course offered at the University of Alberta in Edmonton for B.A. vocational subjects which would enable her to receive a good salary and good position with teaching, typing and shorthand and related office subjects.

According to a report that appeared recently by the Biennial Convention of the Federation of Business and Professional Women's Club, a woman who earned forty-eight hundred in 1961, would have to earn sixty-two because we have had a 131 per cent increase in the cost of living in the past ten years and yet men's salaries go up and women's go down. They are given more and more responsibility with smaller and smaller wages.

A person who is mature finds that she has three or four strikes against her because with no actual money coming in this person has a voucher for clothing and a voucher for rent that's about it and a six dollar family allowance cheque.

It is impossible for her to look smart naturally as the young girls in their twenties in mini skirts because of being on welfare and a mature person as well, people seem to expect that an older person can work for sort of next to nothing but a young girl who is just out of school, who doesn't pay board, who lives at home and no family responsibilities, receives a higher salary.

I think three hundred or three fifty is fine for young girls of this type but it isn't sufficient, not even adequate and I think three thousand dollars is considered the poverty line by the Economic Council of Canada for a couple without children.

There is a continual harassment when a person is on welfare. There are phone calls in the middle of the night. You are continually being pestered to get rid of your phone, sell your clothes, sell your furniture and your car which might be six or eight years old, things of this nature. You also have visitors in the middle of the night all of a sudden which you never had before, men who are available.

I know of a case where this woman was actually told that she should go into prostitution by her own social worker and a lot of these things are unknown by the general public and even other social workers and I feel that it is time that these things were brought to light.

Senator Hastings: You said phone calls in the night. From whom?

Mrs. Goodwin: They are anonymous and there is no way of tracing them. They are men or people who just phone up and hang up.

The Deputy Chairman: Maybe they are millionaires from Calgary!

Mrs. Goodwin: I doubt it.

Senator Inman: I think others besides those on welfare get phone calls.

Mrs. Goodwin: Well, if a person has never received them before then all of a sudden there is a great big batch of them and having visitors ringing door-bells from 2 a.m. to 4 a.m. you begin to wonder what is going on. You begin to wonder what is going on if you have never led that kind of life before. Never been on welfare before. My experiences, well from being on welfare from a mature woman's aspect is like being seabees in the army in solitary confinement because maybe your

family is away all day or maybe they are pre-school age but you have no one to talk to on an adult level and you are like a prisoner. You are virtually a prisoner in your own four walls and this argument about a telephone not being a necessity which the Welfare Rights Organization neglected to mention but maybe I think it could be stressed a little bit more.

In times of sickness you could run for blocks and blocks looking for somebody up who would answer the door just to have the use of the phone because you don't have any money to have one and you are cut-off if there is an over payment due for something like two months. The ATT is after you and you are going to get it cut-off anyway by welfare or the ATT.

I think one of the problems too that might be pointed out is the fact that particularly in the case of a lot of these young social workers who have graduated only a year or two before, they come out and try to tell a woman who is going on to fifty or forty how to run her life and how to spend her money and yet she may have gone to university and yet she is considered to be a complete imbecile.

That is a very degrading and humiliating experience as well. I don't think for a moment that any man would put up with all this degradation or humiliation or insults from employers about being too old. I mean, age is only a number but when it comes to the point of eating or not eating, the person is just forced to go on welfare whether he wants to or not.

Some people have a lot of pride and resent every day of their lives that they are on welfare. It is not totally a matter of re-education because although this was mentioned I believe by Mayor Sykes this morning, you can educate people only to a certain point presuming they are interested and able to take that education and according to the experts we are supposed to be ready to change our jobs at least five times in our lifetimes.

Now, when a woman reaches the age of forty-five to fifty they are not going to be able to adapt readily to the structure changes. You always have families interfering all the time, demands from the children and it becomes much harder to achieve even though we had about six hundred and thirty some odd adult students on the University of Calgary campus last September.

I think those are the main points that I wanted to put across, Mr. Chairman. Thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Mrs. Goodwin. I am sure that the points you have mentioned will be well taken. I must say that we have heard of the same complaints in other areas but we do appreciate your coming for us this afternoon.

Senator Hastings: Mrs. Goodwin, I was just wondering if I could ask you have you seen any change in attitudes in the last year?

Mrs. Goodwin: No.

Senator Hastings: With respect to harassment?

Mrs. Goodwin: No, definitely not.

Senator Hastings: Any worse?

Mrs. Goodwin: The same.

Senator Hastings: There has been no change?

Mrs. Goodwin: No.

The Deputy Chairman: The next brief we will hear will be from the Calgary Inter-Faith Community Action Group and we have with us Pastor R. J. Jacobson, Father Pat O'Byrne and Miss Doreen Brookes.

Pastor R. J. Jacobson, Calgary Inter-Faith Community Action Group: Honourable senators, friends and members of the press. I would like before entering into a brief point-by-point punctuation of our presentation today to introduce to you gentlemen sitting at the rear here.

One is the Rev. Ted Johnson who has worked with the Welfare Rights Group here in Calgary and Mr. Marvin Fox who is connected with the native development services. He is a Blackfoot Indian from Carson. Who we are you can see easily enough so I won't waste your time on that one. Our involvements are listed on page 2.4 at the present time.

We would like to begin by stating that we support in its entirety the brief presented by the Canadian Catholic Conference and the Canadian Council of Churches which you received some months ago in Ottawa. It expresses really our feelings on the subject and our understanding of the problem as well as anything does.

Also I would like to commend you chairman, the Honourable Senator Croll. We have been deeply impressed by his preliminary presented to the senate of which we have a copy here and we really feel that you must be making some fine progress if an interim report can be as good as that one. We give you our moral support in everything else with respect to it.

Down to our recommendations on page 2 at the bottom of the page. These are very specific in nature. We feel that you now know about as much about the basics of poverty in Canada as anybody does. We have certain feelings about very specific problems and very specific relationships that are in the province of government.

We would like to bring these to your attention. The first one pertains to the Alberta Human Resources Authority established by the government of Alberta. We are aware that the Canadian Social Council is in its formative stages now if we understand it correctly, and we would hope, as we will point out in a later point, that if that Council will be able to take advantage of its counterpart then the provinces could relate well to them and that there be a good understanding of the federal and provincial thing without getting them mixed up.

Second, we would like to state our appreciation of ARDA. Now, it has come under a lot of criticism but because of it some very good things have been done and it has been able to maintain the momentum despite some opposition and we think this is a very good commendation.

The third point is more specifically our ball. That pertains to the Canadian Coalition for Development which was organized in Calgary in two regions, north and south. This coalition for development which I am sure you are aware,—am I right? Is the Committee aware of this? It was in part of the brief of the two CCC's presented about a month ago.

The Coalition for Development; this is the development of the people as the goal both nationally and internationally. As poverty is the top priority problem of the world today with its widening gap the coalition comes to the point where churches and other people for whom poverty and development are the big concerns, labour unions and the whole works, welfare councils, history—everything in the private sector are pooling their concern

and their resources and attacking the very serious problem of poverty.

We feel that such coalition has a very important place and role to play in motivating the private sector and also in establishing channels between government and actual individuals caught in the poverty cycle.

Point number four with its subpoints pertains to the Indians and the Indian question. This comes out from personal involvement on this subject. We have some very specific and concrete feelings on this side. We feel that every effort should be made to break the dependency of native people on government bodies by subsidizing and encouraging intermediate bodies to share the responsibility for development programs in co-operation with the Indians and the other native peoples themselves.

Efforts that have been made along these lines to involve intermediate bodies—industry and—well we spelled it out here in point C where it says "These efforts should be fruitful to the extent that they have been able to go with the resources at their disposal thus far" but so far these resources have been so limited that really we are facing in the churches and in the private sector, frustrations and those that are working in this area feel mounting frustrations on the part of the Indian people because they are beginning to see the goal but the resources still aren't there.

The matching of funds by the province and point B are important. We do understand and feel very strongly though that the native peoples have a right to have their own cultural and political economy sage guarded. In the past they have hung on to the federal government because this is where they believed the legal thing laid as far as their economy goes but something has to be done to get around the way in which this can hang them up.

We noticed this morning when the Honourable Senators made the remark with respect to the Canadian Executive Service overseas that we are wondering why that cannot perhaps be applied to the Indians and others in the same boat right here in Canada.

Point number five then with respect to the development of the general Canadian poverty population apart from the Indians. Much of that has been stated already today. We are not quite so hesitant—at least I am not—to recommend that ultimately some form of

guaranteed annual income has got to come about and I feel that if this is properly done the very problems that some people envisaged by it will be solved by it.

This would include the incentives for work and that sort of thing. You would have sort of a rebate worked into it. We can discuss that at any length if there is any wish to do so.

The next point we feel is also important. We feel that we must back up the Honourable Minister Sharp in his recent statement that a society that is able to ignore poverty abroad will find it much easier to ignore it at home. It is a question of motivating sensitivity to poverty itself and as one of our churchmen has said it isn't really a question of the problems of the poor—it is the problems of the rich, of those with resources who simply are insensitive to the plight of the real poor and have all sorts of excuses and justifications for not getting involved, not seeing the facts.

Point seven I have already mentioned and I think that is an important one for people in the level of government to take seriously and the Canadian Social Council should not just be one council among many to duplicate and overlap but rather that it right from the very beginning sort of co-ordinate the functions of its provincial counterparts that are already in existence and I underline the fact that the human resources in Alberta really constitutes an Alberta counterpart to the Canadian Social Council. This should be recognized I feel right from the start.

We urge in point number eight that the Canadian Social Council be given a mandate and jurisdiction in the area of international development right from the start as well.

We suggest a way in which this could be done and feel it is important to prevent a false dichotomy from rising in the minds of Canadians regarding poverty at home and poverty abroad. If there is any truth at all it is in the Honourable Lester Pearson's report. We realize that the poverty abroad is just as eminent a crisis as poverty at home and it will be touching all of us very soon if we don't really become concerned.

Point nine is kind of raising the red flag here. Maybe something like the Canada Assistance Act—an enterprise like that is undertaken, you always have the risk that given broad terms of reference, empire building might result from it. We feel that in certain areas and times and places we have

seen evidence of this already, and that the original purpose of the Canada Assistance Act was to involve private agencies in the private sector in the whole process—it was written right into the Act and some areas and municipalities have been completely overlooked and private agencies far from being asked to participate in and co-ordinate with governments, their work have been given pretty short shrift despite the high quality of performance and motivation which they have very often demonstrated.

Finally I will just close with this remark. We do hope that you will come down strong on the question of the will. We have the means—I don't think there is any question about that really, but it is the question of the will and the will is tied with the question of a sensitivity for those to whom this is not a particular problem, to those for whom it is a problem and to come down hard on the question of the will to do something and perhaps getting at the nub of it.

Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman, and we will be glad to field any questions that you may wish.

The Deputy Chairman: Father O'Byrne, do you have any comments to make?

Father Pat O'Byrne (Director, Calgary-Inter-Faith Community Action Committee): No, but I would be pleased to comment if there are any questions.

Senator Hastings: Father Pat, in your brief you say that you are aware that a large number of our own churchmen are either apathetic or hostile towards involvement in this field. You aren't having much success so how are we going to have any more success?

Father O'Byrne: I think we feel that in coalition only can we have success because we have to back each other up. I think that when some people read this brief they said that we were praising the government too much because you say that the governments do a lot for charity and I say that the government would do a lot more to get support of the communities and I think we have to support each other in this.

Your Senate committee is going to need a lot of support. I think—I laughed and you laughed when the play was going on here but certainly the churches kept its hands clean in many instances and although this group that we are with are from the churches we are not in any way saying that the whole

membership of all of our churches are excited about what we are doing.

We say come on down and call for more and we will get out there and call for people's support. That is all.

Pastor Jacobson: If I may make a comment on that. I served in a downtown church in an area where urban ministry is a very critical thing. Twelve years ago the pastor nearly got run out speaking out on this problem and saying that it should be of some concern to the people.

Now, I have a very easy time with our people and many of them, especially the key members, are the same people. Twelve years has made a difference and if we keep hammering away at it and show compassion and yet at the same time encourage their adjustments I think we will get some where.

A woman approached me—I am not supposed to talk about it—an elderly woman—ninety years old approached me last week and she had ten thousand dollars that she wanted to give anonymously to Indian development and she said for goodness sake, don't call it a gift.

She said they got it coming and ten years ago she wouldn't have said that.

The Deputy Chairman: Father, you said something that kind of struck me about our attitude towards the poor. It has been my privilege since I have been in the Senate to visit many of the under-developed countries in Europe and part of Africa, India, Egypt, and Israel, which of course still has a lot of poverty. All I want to say is that we do not know in Canada what poverty really is unless we visit those places. Believe me. We do not know what poverty is.

Pastor Jacobson: Well, we feel that and in our inter-faith group we have had people also with both experiences and although the poor people in Calgary say to us, why are you worrying about that? Why don't you give all the money to the Miles for Millions? We know that we have to be concerned with both and we feel we must and even though your committee wasn't set up to study international poverty we just felt we should say it.

The Deputy Chairman: When you were talking a few minutes ago about the coalition I remember very well now when the group came to Ottawa. The native people presented us with the little yellow book and we made

the remark that we were very happy to see the Protestants and Catholics and Jewish people and labour unions come in in one group. I do not believe this would have been possible ten years ago. They came in very friendly and they gave us one of the best briefs and everyone was very sincere and I hope we can go on this way.

Senator Inman: In page 3, paragraph 2, you are speaking about the agricultural regional development act which is ARDA as we know it and the New Start program. Now, we do hear criticisms of ARDA now. Do you feel that is deserved or are you still pleased with the way it is going on?

Father O'Byrne: Well, I have certainly heard the criticisms but I am pleased to tell you that I was through the whole New Start program with the federal and provincial people from Human Resources and although I heard the criticisms I come out of there and agreed with them that this was such an exciting thing that we would have to ignore the criticisms because there are so many hundreds of years of difference, lack of opportunity that we are happy when any Canadians can come up with a new creative thought and try it and I am certainly all for trying it out. I am pleased to see that we are staying within the kind of a thing that is new because no matter what it costs to run those New Start schools, to think of the thousands of dollars for school education which they haven't had because they haven't had the background I think it is a very good idea.

Senator Inman: In paragraph 3 you speak of your coalition groups and you say:

Such coalitions should be able to identify and work effectively with all levels of government on the one hand, and on the other hand with voluntary self-help groups and private agencies. Here in Calgary we have some thirty-five groups in the Coalition committed to common action against poverty. These include many of the local groups whose national bodies are members of the Canadian Coalition For Development.

Are you finding good success with this?

Father O'Byrne: I think we are finding good success. Alberta was the first province that set up that Coalition in February and we are now happy that we are going along at a good speed as far as Ottawa sees it and I think we will be back in Ottawa looking for direction before long. I feel that the Coalition

idea has caught on and we will be in a much better position by fall.

Senator Inman: Would you comment on some of your developments that you are working on?

Father O'Byrne: Well, we are going into the Indian problem very seriously and the churches are already in it and I will turn over to Marvin Fox, who is behind me here, who is a Blood Indian with whom we work. The churches in this province are putting money in and we are very involved with corporations.

I was very interested when Senator Ferguson mentioned this morning about the fact whether or not there are organizations that are working with the Indians and I will ask Marvin to comment on this.

We are involved with them and we are involved with a couple of major Canadian corporations. I wish I could give you their names today but I can't. We are involved with people in agriculture and people in farm machinery here in Alberta and so we are very excited about the possibility of the church being part of the private sector and being involved with Indian development in the Province of Alberta and we think the same thing is possible as your Canadian Executive Services overseas. Those are retired people. We think we can get more than retired people. We think we can get a large corporation out of social justice to give a large number of people, engineers and accountants to do development studies but I think maybe I shouldn't be talking about it being developed. I think I should ask Marvin Fox because this is his area.

Mr. Marvin Fox: Regarding development?

Senator Inman: Yes. Development programs.

Mr. Fox: A few years ago we Indians living on reserves felt that everything that had to be done with regards to Indians had to be done by government. We felt it had to be done by the federal government. This mentality has changed over the years and we work with the churches here in Calgary and that is the group that I am more familiar with so I can comment on those.

A few years ago we had several co-operative projects going on in the various reserves here in Southern Alberta and we approached the federal government to help us get these

things moving because sometimes it was very hard to get them moving but with the encouragement of people like Father Pat and other leaders in the church, we were very glad that they managed to help us with a few finances here and there to get the thing moving.

With their help we were able to set up a federation of co-operatives here in Alberta something like your federated co-op in the provinces or in Canada and with their continued assistance and encouragement we felt this was something really great.

Not only the governments can take part in assisting native people here in Canada but private groups, organizations, the private sectors of Canada and private citizens could take part in the overall development of not only the native people here in Alberta and Canada, but all citizens.

Senator Fergusson: There is one thing that I did notice that Pastor Jacobson said that was that Canada Assistance Act as model legislation and under it private agencies should be made use of but that they have been given short shrift. Could you please give us examples of that?

Pastor Jacobson: That is a bit of a loaded question, isn't it?

Senator Fergusson: Well, perhaps I shouldn't ask it.

Pastor Jacobson: No, no, no. I am not afraid to answer it but perhaps not quite as specifically as you may wish. I think that in examination—let me just put it this way. Perhaps it is time for an assessment and an evaluation of how this thing has been working in the various municipalities. To what extent private involvement has really been encouraged. I have suspicions from the three groups of which I have been involved with here in Alberta that there are times when dialogue, communication is not at its best and this may not be simple. There are complicated reasons for this I presume but at the same time the idea is written very clearly into the act that private sectors should be involved in this and it seems to me—if you don't mind me confining it just to this remark—it is long overdue perhaps for a good evaluation to what extent this is actually happening because those who become the local directors, administrators of this are government employees themselves and they tend to relate more directly actually to other government employees and that leaves the private sector on the outside.

I have been involved in one community where the private sector was well represented and I can see by contrast perhaps what the difference is.

In Westlock the advisory board there for social services was made up of representatives from factories from the private sector and I liked what I saw there. They had very good communications but other places did not.

Father O'Byrne: Senator Fergusson, I would like to add also that I think we in Alberta went right after this Act and certainly in Calgary we have had some exciting examples of the municipal people encouraging private participation but however out in the rural part of the community, which we are also in touch with, there is a feeling oh, well, the Canada Assistance Act is government therefore the government is taking over. There is no interpretation as some one said earlier here today.

The government doesn't always interpret all parts of its legislation and there has been no real interpretation of this. Those who knew about it went in and put together some private packages in their communities and qualified as non-denominational and got going but in many other parts of the province it hasn't happened and it maybe because of the fact that twenty percent municipal is too much right now but also that there hasn't been any interpretation to small communities and we therefore are part of the private sector—the churches are—but the way the collections are going down we will be asking for subsidies before Christmas!

We feel that we must keep alive and we believe in this philosophy and we feel that the private sector must assume this responsibility and many of our people are saying that things are all over, the church is dead and welfare, well the government is already taking it over but even under the Canadian Assistance Act. If we look at it we can still belong in there. Maybe we shouldn't be saying this to you but we have been saying it to ourselves.

The Deputy Chairman: Am I right in my thinking that Calgary is a very wealthy city and you have two classes of people: the really wealthy ones and the poor?

Father O'Byrne: No, we have a tremendous middle class here in Calgary.

The Deputy Chairman: You have?

Father O'Byrne: Yes. I think that although some might mention that this is a very wealthy city therefore you don't have the problems of elsewhere—well, I think we have all the problems here and I think if you look at your statistics they are not that much different.

We have a lot of poor here and we have a lot of people who are not really able to have a quality in life if that is what poverty is, because of low income. Our problems regionally are that serious as you know because of the subsidization to this province from the oil industry but this hasn't effected all the people and certainly not the people in rural or northern Alberta.

The Deputy Chairman: Are there any children in Calgary who are not going to school on account of poverty?

Pastor Jacobson: I don't know of any. Father Ted Johnson works with the welfare groups and he might be able to comment on that.

Father Ted Johnson: Well, I think from the comments of the Welfare Right's Group—there are some that may not be going to school a year at a time but there are certain things that they mentioned specifically—vouchers and so on. They are so embarrassed and humiliated et cetera and their attendance is limited. They are certainly not encouraged like other children who don't have to go through these humiliations.

The Deputy Chairman: I agree.

Pastor Jacobson: I would like to throw one or two things in here just for the record if possible. The study report prepared by the Division of Social Services of the Lutheran Council in Canada which I will be happy to leave a copy for the honourable senators here is I think of real value because it discusses at some depth some of the questions about the guaranteed annual income that several speakers have raised so far today but nobody seems to have the answers.

There are about six different approaches to the guaranteed annual income spoken of in here and it is a well researched document which I think you might find of some value and I would like to simply insert it here for the sake of your record and your pursual.

The Deputy Chairman: Members of the Committee, do you agree that we put that in as part of the record?

Senator Inman: Yes.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you.

Senator Hastings: You mentioned the guaranteed annual income in your presentation and I am wondering if you would care to give any more observations on it. You said that it was finally decided that it would be needed in certain sectors.

Pastor Jacobson: One of the problems about the guaranteed annual income, Mr. Blakely pointed out this morning. It was a little vague to me exactly the point he was making and I don't think he intended to make it very clear.

He said that they had some doubt in their minds because they thought that work was an important factor and jobs therefore were needed rather than a guaranteed annual income which is perhaps closer to the answer but it seems to me the more intelligent approaches to the guaranteed annual income invisages that very thing.

A guaranteed annual income would do just exactly—and would solve the problem now that many have said or talked about mainly that we have on one hand a welfare recipient and on the other hand the low income poor, working poor. A guaranteed annual income under some of the proposed systems would at least eliminate the distinction between welfare recipients and the working poor while at the same time bring in the incentives for work.

I know a gentleman who is seventy-seven years old who came to me one afternoon to have his income tax filled out two years ago. He had done a little work on the side in gardening and he couldn't speak English very well so I helped him with his return. He made about three hundred dollars. He was honest in filling the return out and we sent it back in and a month or so later he got a demand from the Bureau or Department of Taxation or whatever for the monies that he had earned. I don't know if that would happen today or not but it happened three years ago so the point of the guaranteed annual income under the more intelligent proposals provided a guaranteed grant together with a fifty percent tax on earned income over and above the guaranteed grant and when you reach a certain level it is a break-even level. You could call that the break-even level. Say you have a guaranteed grant of three thousand dollars, and you had an earned income of six thousand dollars—you would be at the break-

even level. You would actually be able to keep what you earned although those are just figures for the sake of demonstration here to me the income tax approach to it would eliminate the problems that were mentioned in his approach this morning.

Senator Hastings: You commented on page 5 with respect to an over-haul of the unemployment insurance act. Do you care to comment on the White Paper with respect to the unemployment insurance act?

Pastor Jacobson: Yes, I think the CLC and the CCC—their brief said the same thing.

I would like to ask Father Ted Johnson to remark on that because it is kind of his baby. Have you any comments to make on Point B there?

Father Johnson: No, not really.

Father O'Byrne: I think in our general discussions on this we felt this is another way of maybe backing into a guaranteed annual income and that maybe it would be smart if everybody were to back up social change instead of coming in with some new legislation you could use the existing legislation. I think that may be presumptuous on the part of some of us but again, we have already been told not to shake the boat too much or we would be called a bunch of socialists and we say well, may be we already have in unemployment insurance in Canada something that has got a lot of the answers.

I don't know whether I am off beat on this...

Senator Hastings: We already are socialists!

Father O'Byrne: Well, I am just quoting what another senator said to you in an answer.

Senator Hastings: It doesn't bother me.

Father O'Byrne: Well, I don't think you are a socialists but I wouldn't mind being called one.

Pastor Jacobson: I think this study of the Unemployment Insurance Act as it is operating today discovered too wide a range of people who were supposedly covered by it are maintained in poverty rather than being lifted out of it and this doesn't have to be. The present legislation of itself can be upgraded, this is a way of backing into a guaranteed annual income.

Senator Hastings: Well then generally you are in favour of the White Paper on the improvement of it?

Pastor Jacobson: Definitely.

Father O'Byrne: Oh, yes. We haven't had time to consult the authorities in Ottawa but locally we are in favour of it.

The Deputy Chairman: Reverend, on page 5 you come out with the specific areas trying for immediate action. I just want to tell you that these will be given special attention. We would like to thank you for coming here today and congratulate you on your brief. Your brief has been most interesting and you can be assured it will be given full consideration. Thank you.

Pastor Jacobson: Thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, if I might have your attention, we have at this time the Day Care Groups who will be presenting a brief. To my immediate right, are Mr. R. Burgess, Mrs. Hall, Mrs. Harrison and Mrs. Black. Mr. Burgess, go right ahead sir.

Mr. R. Burgess: I am also representing Dr. Holman and Mr. L. Hagan. Their briefs have already been submitted to the Senate committee. They have asked me to summarize their briefs and their viewpoints along with our own.

We realize today that there has been much emphasis placed upon education and a need for opportunity in this area for early child development and we go along also with this philosophy. We define poverty as being the lack of ability to provide adequate necessities rather than the lack of fiscal and dollar value means to purchase but rather the lack of ability viewed directly from an adequate and irrelevant education.

We are concerned with the lack of opportunity for early childhood development centres and care in this area as pertaining to poverty.

Dr. Holman's brief points out that the environment from poverty has an adverse effect on the development and health of children. He states that poverty however defined will adversely effect the physical and mental health. Particularly of the developing child. The poor are faced with an environment which begets continued and cyclical impoverishment.

He also points out that the psychological impact of poverty upon developing children in the early stages creates the lack of opportunity for a smooth and progressive development, continuing the intergenerational. He points out that not only the physical aspects of poverty have to be considered but also the emotional, intellectual and mental growth aspect detrimental to the individual growth as related to poverty have to be considered. He recommends the following:

That the federal government working co-operatively with the provincial governments, establish early Childhood Development Centres across Canada to develop the environment and programs to stimulate children from social economically disadvantaged backgrounds.

Mr. Hagan in his brief points out that the environment and economics have a direct bearing on the emotional growth and attitudes of the individual that the effects of poverty in the environment adversely effects the growth.

He also points out that prevention is more economically sound than dealing with the causes.

In our brief, the Bowness-Montgomery Day Care Association, we point out that child care is one aspect of early childhood development and has to be considered and that it provide a unique opportunity to counteract the effects of an impoverished environment on the growth of the child.

We also point out that we hope that the federal government will recognize officially the problem at its root, the child and that federal action, one aspect of the problem, adequate facilities and standards of good child care can be instituted.

Day care is, essentially, a program of child development for children predominantly in pre-school age ranges, two to six years, although a comprehensive program ought to provide for care of infants under two years. There is a great lack in our area for opportunities and facilities for early childhood development and it is so much a part of counteracting the effects of poverty.

The Deputy Chairman: Are you pointing out specifical areas?

Mr. Burgess: In our own area, Mr. Chairman, Bowness-Montgomery.

The Deputy Chairman: Fine. Thank you.

Mr. Burgess: Also in other areas in our city and in Canada. There has been a lack of consideration in regards to the benefits of early childhood care and early childhood education as regards to poverty and counteracting the effects of poverty.

Our brief points out that good day care is one way of providing the type of facilities needed to counteract the effects of poverty on the individual group.

We also have another group, the preschool parent child co-op who Mrs. Patricia Black represents who have a statement of concern for the pre-school parent child co-ops in Calgary and their ideas of how this could benefit and help alleviate the effects of poverty in other areas that are not economically poor.

We have also made recommendations to the senate committee and hope that they will evaluate them and in their report to Ottawa incorporate some of these recommendations.

The ones that we know the federal government can do something about to set up standards for day care and early childhood education that are so lacking in our country. They can work in cooperation with the provinces at the provincial and civic levels and institute centres and that the federal government makes money available for social assistance programs and in many aspects do not set priorities as to how this money should be used. We do know that the federal government can set priorities for the monies they are giving and that early childhood development centres should be one of these priorities. Thank you.

The Deputy Chairman: Would anyone else like to make a few comments?

Mrs. P. Black: I represent the Parent Child Pre-School Co-operatives. I have heard a lot of talk about the working mother that is on welfare but you are forgetting like she is a working mother within her four walls and never gets out of it.

Well, we have organized a school in the city which has an equal ratio of middle income families as well as the lower income families and it enables the welfare mother to take their children to school. This way the children are getting the benefits of the school as well as the mother getting out of her four walls.

It is not a day care centre and it isn't a baby sitting bureau. The mother must come

to the school with her child and participate in a certain number of days each month. We have a number of welfare mothers now who are taking part in our schools and it gives them a chance to get out socially while their child is getting some education.

I am a welfare mother and I approached the day care centres in this regard and approached the kindergarten and every other organization that I could find in the City of Calgary and well, the day care centres in the City of Calgary said that they really couldn't help working mothers and the kindergartens said that they would like to lower their rates but that that was impossible. They just couldn't do it so I got together with a bunch of other ladies and we opened our own. We are quite successful now I believe. We haven't really been operating that long but I think it is a very worthwhile community project and as you know co-operatives have been in existence in Quebec since 1929 but as far as we know we are the only one in Western Canada operating at this time.

Down east they have been quite a success. We are hoping we can receive some government help and that we will be just as successful.

Senator Hastings: How much help would you need?

The Deputy Chairman: How many children are you talking about?

Mrs. Black: About twenty. We have twenty-five children in our school at the present time and we figure our budget to be somewhere around six thousand dollars a year.

Now, this is an initial budget. This is our major costs and everything.

The Deputy Chairman: How would you select the children to go there?

Mrs. Black: On an equal ratio. We try to keep it on an equal ratio. You have ghettos not only in poverty stricken areas but even amongst university students and we try to keep it on an equal ratio and this way each child gets the benefit of it.

The Deputy Chairman: Would you pick a certain area of the city?

Mrs. Black: No. Our school—anyone in Calgary can attend our school.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, if you have only twenty-five students you don't have to go very far.

Mrs. Black: Yes, that is quite true. We have a waiting list already but it is very hard to get a co-operative started. People haven't heard of them and they don't know. There are many in the United States and down east but in Western Canada they just don't know. People don't really understand how a co-operative works.

The Deputy Chairman: Do you have any one who comes in and helps you?

Mrs. Black: We have one director teacher who is very well qualified and we have a ratio. We have four mothers that come in every day as well as the director. We achieve a ratio of five children to one parent.

The Deputy Chairman: And you take the children at what age?

Mrs. Black: Two and a half up to six years of age.

The Deputy Chairman: Boys or girls?

Mrs. Black: Both.

Mrs. Gillian Harrison, University Day Care Centre Committee: I represent the proposed new day care committee for the university. We feel that students are not able to go to the commercial day care centres in the city and as far as I know there are only three day care centres run by the city and students cannot get into many day care centres because of the cost.

Not all students are poor as many people will point out but for a few years many of them have to live on rather little money, for the students have to study, and poverty is not always a lack of money.

It can be for students a lack of time and for most married students it can be a lack of opportunity and for the student's children, it is often poverty of the mind.

Students have so little time. It seems that they have to study every week-end and every evening and that they cannot afford to spare the time which the other parents do in doing things with their children and helping to develop them.

Some people say that students shouldn't have children until they finish being students but today students are getting older and older and many of the people have to re-educate themselves and they find it very difficult to do this when they have families.

We would like to see on the university campus a day centre where students could bring their children in the morning and they would be able to join in during the course of the day in their spare time in between lectures and co-operate in running a day care centre.

We would of course have a professional to co-ordinate the whole centre but we would see or we would hope that it would operate in a co-operative way. We are at the moment engaged with the university in trying to determine whether we should be able to have something like that.

The Deputy Chairman: Don't you think if you bring your day care centre to the university level it would be something very expensive?

Mrs. Harrison: I don't think that it would be any more expensive than any where else.

Mrs. Hall: One of the sentences in Dr. Holman's brief points out the hopelessness of the people who are in the poverty stricken areas, the possibility of rising out of their situation is one of the things they suggest is the promise of help for their children and this would seem to be the common plea that we have heard this afternoon and at all other times, special help for our children and we believe that in day care centres, we are truly being of benefits but if we want to help people to get out of this poverty cycle, we have to start before the age of two because by the time they reach the age of two, patterns are beginning and by the time they reach the age of four the scars are already there and it is going to cost many, many thousands of dollars to take away the scars that we could remove at the earlier level and if these would never have been there the children could have received the proper care at the earlier age.

We think that it is the inalienable right of every child growing up in Canada, or in fact in the world, to have good day care.

The Deputy Chairman: What would be the reaction of these children, a boy or a girl of three, spending a day in these day care centres and getting the best, and then being sent home at four or five o'clock? Would there be much of a reaction in the minds of these children?

Mrs. Hall: Well, we feel that the day care shouldn't only affect the children. We feel

that it affects the parents as well and we feel that if the children are being properly cared for, the parents can help themselves in that they can spend time in helping their own situation if they know that their children are being properly cared for and as far as the children go, we feel that this care should not stop when they reach school age.

In fact, many surveys have shown that when children have got some pre-school years, when they go into school the superior care is not given to them and they very often collapse and go back those three years.

We feel that in the deprived areas, the teachers should be of the highest quality; not necessarily with the most degrees but those people who are interested in continuing the education of the children in an all round fashion. Not just teaching them to read and write—but teaching them the other advantages that children from good middle class schools would have. We begin day care at the age of two and we give our children a formal all round program. We attempt to do something that is very vital in the imparting of knowledge; we see that they have good food, that their health standards are raised and that they can then forget their poverty and their minds can start to grow.

This is one of the things that we are quite particular about in our day care centres. That is that our children have a good sampling of food. One of the things that we feel the government can help us with is in pamphlets helping groups that want to start day care centres.

We feel that the federal government is in a position to produce pamphlets that would help groups starting up. Our own particular group took two and a half years to get off the ground, because they kept doing things and then having them thrown back at them and then they had to do them again and no where did they find a complete set of rules for this sort of thing.

The Deputy Chairman: Thrown back by whom?

Mrs. Black: By government departments. They had to have things to a certain standard before they could accept them and they spent two and a half years before the centre was actually able to be opened.

Another of the recommendations is that we could have those standards which were established throughout the whole of the country

and these standards are not only on the size of the building, the square feet per child, the number of windows and things like this, but we could have standards as to the ratio of staff for children because if you have twenty children to one staff member you are going to have children who are disciplined sure, but they are going to be disciplined not by themselves but by other people.

If you look after twenty children you have to teach them to walk two by two. If you have four people to twenty children, then those children could be taught to walk in a self-disciplined manner because there would be enough people to control them without forcing discipline down on them.

We need standards for the training of staff so that people from one side of the country could work at the other end of the country. At the moment there are no standards set up for professional staff. As a matter of fact, many people wonder why we need professionals. These are things that the federal government could give us some help with by stressing the need for trained staff, at least in the over-all planning of centres.

I think as I said earlier we need higher standards for teachers in any area. At the moment the highest salaries go to the people who live in the wealthy areas. If a teacher is hired, she gets a higher salary than if she worked in a place like Bowness-Montgomery. We need to have far more dedicated people in these deprived areas if we are ever going to inspire the school children to carry on with their education.

We need teachers who are going to inspire them to stay in school and not just pour knowledge into them.

Another thing we have to stress continually is that day care is not just for welfare recipients. Good day care should be for all children and there should be openings in all day care centres for all groups of children so that each group growing up knows the other side of the picture.

This would mean that a child who was born into a family who is a university oriented, automatically grows up, goes to university and a child who is brought up in a poverty structure tends to end up like his father with no possibility of going to university. Why should be if he has never seen anything different.

We should be able to mix children up so that they don't grow up in just one area.

We should educate the public so that the people who are in our government circles don't come, as one did to me the other day, and said "well, I have never had day care and I am pretty smart."

I think this is something that we have to show people that good day care is not a luxury. This is something that every child should have. It doesn't necessarily mean that you have it in a good day care centre; many children can get it at home and they can get it other ways. It is not just the right of the poor child to have good day care, it is the rich child as well.

Another area that hasn't been touched upon so far is the day care to handicapped children. We find in our centres that while we are only too anxious to help handicapped children, there are very few centres which are purely for handicapped children. This means that if a mother has a child that is severely handicapped she has to stay with that child, especially if she is a poor parent because she can not afford to get any one to look after the child and she cannot find a day care centre that will take it so that many mothers who are tied to children who are handicapped day after day after day. They cannot get out even for the odd day because they cannot find anybody to look after their child.

The normal day care centres cannot take more than their portion of them. We help as many as we can but even so we find if we have too many handicapped children we cannot give the time to the other children unless we have more staff so that we should have more centres for children who are handicapped.

This would be the case even if they are only centres where a mother can bring a child for a half a day a week or perhaps leave the child for a week while she goes on holidays and these are the sorts of centres that perhaps the federal government could help us with.

Senator Inman: Does Calgary have no school for handicapped children?

Mrs. Hall: We have a cerebral palsy clinic but I think they have a waiting list.

Senator Inman: Nothing for the retarded child?

Mrs. Hall: Well, we have the Christine Leacock, but this is for the unteachables. If a child is unteachable there is a problem and there is also a problem with the handicapped child.

Not necessarily a blind child—I am talking about pre-school years too when it is important for a mother to get away.

Mrs. Black: There was a case here in Calgary with a mother who had a handicapped child. She couldn't afford to pay what the baby sitting agencies were asking her to look after her child and it got to the point where she would go out and she would leave the child in a bag like a bag of bananas and leave the child there all afternoon. If anything ever happened, fire or anything like that, the child would be lost.

I would like to mention the only recommendation the pre-school co-operative has is that there should be somewhere a licensing bureau brought forth because our license was held up for a number of weeks due to the fact that they did not have pre-school co-operatives here. Everything is divided according to the age of the child.

Now, our ages are two and a half to six. Their rules and regulations had ages of children from two to three, three to four, four to five and five to six and we didn't fit in any of those so consequently we got our license for a nursery school.

We are not a nursery school but they just didn't have anything else. We feel that there should be an allowance made for the pre-school co-operatives.

Another thing is welfare mothers. They can't afford to go out and join the recreational, social and educational facilities and this would give them a chance to get out and enjoy themselves.

Senator Inman: How many hours a day do you care for the children?

Mrs. Black: We have started—I guess in September we hope to go on full days, five days a week but right now we are nine to twelve two days a week and our teachers volunteer their services.

Senator Hastings: I wonder if I could ask Mr. Burgess with respect to Bowness-Montgomery. Are we talking about two different things here. I notice on the bottom of this page you have figures for pre-school costs

operated in the schools. Are we talking about two different things here. Are we talking about day care centres and pre-school classes?

Mr. Burgess: Yes.

Mrs. Black: Day care centres are for working mothers and this is where the problem arises. When I phoned the day care centres I was told that well, we do have vacancies for mothers on welfare but if she is a working mother—well, our school is for non-working mothers because she would have to be able to participate a certain number of days a month.

Now, if you are working your employer just isn't going to let you go for this length of time and yet there are welfare mothers who just can't afford now to get out even to a movie once a month and this way if she participates so many numbers of days per month on her free days, this allows her to go out and enjoy herself.

Senator Hastings: Did you say you are a working mother?

Mrs. Black: Yes.

Senator Hastings: How many children?

Mrs. Black: I have three.

Senator Hastings: What ages?

Mrs. Black: One, two and three.

Senator Hastings: Then you wouldn't have any time to go to a show?

Mrs. Black: Well, I have time in the evening but you know it is just so expensive.

Senator Hastings: Well, you would then agree with what Mrs. Goodwin told us?

Mrs. Black: Yes, very much so and also the fact in regards to the four walls. They just start coming in on you when you are in day after day.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Burgess, looking at the scores on these beginners tests for the Bowness-Montgomery High School, I notice the students that attended pre-school, 42 per cent score over 120 compared to 28 who did not attend pre-school.

Mr. Burgess: Well, I don't have a copy of that.

Senator Hastings: Well, it is obvious that those children who are attending pre-school are able to adapt into the curriculum much more quicker than the other children.

Mr. Burgess: Well, this has been proven by many studies outside of the country as well as right here at home.

It has been shown that pre-school is beneficial to the children.

Senator Hastings: And day care would help that much more?

Mr. Burgess: It would help that much more, that's right.

Senator Hastings: Plus helping the mothers?

Mr. Burgess: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Mrs. Hall, there was a brief from the Home and School Association this morning and I am just wondering how you would envisage the government getting into it?

Mrs. Hall: Well, largely through publicity along with everything else. If there could be a standardization of standards this would help throughout the country. For instance, we operate a family day home project as part of our centre which takes care of children before school, and lunch time and after school and in this city we are able to pay the mothers \$1.75 a day for looking after a child for a day and in other places they are able to pay them \$3.00 a day.

We feel that a mother has to be really dedicated to take another person's child into her house maybe for up to ten hours at \$1.75.

We feel that these things should be standardized by the federal government. I think it is hitched onto the fact that you take a foster child into your house you are paid \$2.00 a day and we can't give the parents more than \$1.75 for less than twenty-four hours a day but these are things that could be standardized across the country.

Applications in particular and public education is one of the hardest fields which we have—we find it very difficult no matter how many media we use to get it across to the people the services we are offering. For instance, the day care centres operate not only on the basis of the working mothers but on the basis of need.

Some of our mothers are not in fact working mothers but there is a definite need for that child to be in a day care centre so that it doesn't have an effect on the mother.

The Deputy Chairman: Do you think you would have a problem trying to introduce standard rates across Canada? Would it cost more to take care of a boy or a girl in Calgary than it would a child living in the east?

Mr. Burgess: We are more concerned with the standard and the quality of day care.

The Deputy Chairman: Oh, excuse me. I thought you meant the rates.

Mrs. Hall: I mentioned that at one specific place where it could be standardized.

I think the welfare rates—they are the same across the country, aren't they?

The Deputy Chairman: No, they are not.

Senator Hastings: Everywhere we go they are different but I believe they should be standardized. It should be the same for every Canadian whether he is in New Brunswick or Alberta. I think it should be the same all across the nation but unfortunately the provinces without the same income as Alberta can't afford this type of system.

In this area there is a disparity between the have and have not provinces.

The Deputy Chairman: I am not making any suggestions openly but you might get results faster if you have a standard rate per province all the way down.

Mrs. Hall: But I think we should have a standard ratio of staff per child in these schools. This was just something that came in on the top but the standard of care should be that is our baby.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator Fergusson, that is our baby.

Senator Fergusson: Well, I am very interested in this but I don't really have any questions because you and Senator Hastings have done pretty well on this. I just wondered how you expect the federal government to participate but you have answered that really by publicity.

How do you get these pamphlets into the hands of the people you want to read them?

Mrs. Hall: Well, we have tried TV, we have tried radio, newspapers, local newspapers, notices in stores, we have tried the public health clinics, the doctors offices and we put them pretty well everywhere but as far as our association was concerned, they felt that if they could write to a central source and

have all of the information necessary for setting up day care centres it would save them a lot of time.

Senator Fergusson: Do you think if the federal government had some sort of a place where everyone could write it would be valuable?

Mrs. Hall: Yes, I think it would be a help.

Senator Fergusson: Well, this is a thing that is lacking in Canada in so many fields.

Mrs. Hall: I don't know whether or not the federal government could help this way too but we find ourselves in a problem in that we are able to receive funds for renovations of our buildings, we are able to receive funds to run our program but we are not able to get any funds at all for buying equipment. This has been our largest area of concern at the moment that while we have a beautiful building, we have staff, we have been unable to get the necessary equipment and I wonder whether this could be something on a national basis that there would be funds available for founding of centres.

The Deputy Chairman: May I ask who financed the building?

Mrs. Black: We were able to get a building from the school board at a small rent and we renovated this with donations from local groups.

The Deputy Chairman: But you are paying rent?

Mrs. Hall: Yes, \$1.00 a year.

Senator Hastings: And the building is where?

Mrs. Hall: Well, it is in the local area, Bowness.

Mr. Burgess: I was just going to point out that there are other fields which the federal government could help to encourage the development of day care centres especially community oriented to get groups—with the money from under the Canadian or Canada Assistance Act that they make available to the provinces for social assistance—they could set up priorities as to how this money is going to be used to provide incentives for these groups that realize the needs in their areas and are willing to do something about it but lack adequate funds to get started.

Senator Fergusson: Is the federal government going to do that?

Mr. Burgess: Well, if you go to the city and you ask them for money they tell you to go to the province. If you go to the province, they tell you that they haven't got enough in their budget, that they need more assistance from the Canada Assistance Act and we look into the Canada Assistance Act and we find that they do not set priorities on how that money is going to be used and I think they should.

Senator Fergusson: They leave that for the provinces to do?

Mr. Burgess: Yes. In our province or even in our area we find it quite disconcerting to see even private enterprise get grants for the facilities beneficial for the communities; but we have a hard time getting money.

Senator Fergusson: Someone said earlier that day care centres that were run by the city are not accessible to the students because they can't afford the costs. Is there a charge for the day centres run by the city?

Mrs. Harrison: I meant then that the students couldn't afford the public day care centres—the commercial day care centres as there are only three city run ones in the city and this is a very widely spaced city. For many of the students these are far too far away from their own homes.

Senator Fergusson: And perhaps the transportation would be too great and the time necessary to take them?

Mrs. Harrison: Yes. One point I forgot to mention earlier is that the university day care centre we would hope would enable some person to come to the university who at the moment cannot afford it. A mature family, whose husband wants to go back to university and who may not have the savings to go and if he is looking after his family to stop work for three or four years and if he has one or two or four children and a wife to look after then it becomes very difficult for him. In these cases, and also in the cases of a single parent family, either male or female, then they will often just carry on doing the same job that they have been doing because they cannot afford to send their children to commercially run day care centres so that they can't get their education.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator Inman, do you have anything else?

Senator Inman: No, I don't have anything else. It has been very interesting and I have enjoyed the brief very much. One thing I was

thinking about, however, is do you have any voluntary help at those day care centres?

Mr. Burgess: This is what we try to encourage. This is very difficult but in order to establish good standards for day care there is a great need to involve the community and the parent as well as having the trained personnel and that anything learned in the day care centres, that the child receives in the day care centres should be carried on in the community and at home.

Senator Inman: I know and I also think there are many women, for instance, whose children have perhaps grown up. I mean women say around forty who are very fond of children and I imagine they would do well in one of those centres.

Mr. Burgess: We include in our centre—we have these in our day home projects.

Wherever possible we have individual help from mothers whose children have grown up etc. and we encourage them to take part in our day home projects where they have the time and the ability.

Senator Inman: And in those cases it is less expensive?

Mr. Burgess: Yes.

Mrs. Black: I would like to mention that our pre-school co-op is run completely on a voluntary basis. If the mothers come in, the fathers come in and this is not just a mother and child project. It is a complete family project and fathers come in if the mothers can't make it.

Mr. Burgess: Another thing I would like to point out and we haven't touched upon it yet, and that is the need for standards whether they are provincial or federal or instituted by the provincial government or the federal government.

The need for them is quite apparent. When we started looking into the setting up of a day care centre in Bowness-Montgomery, we looked into the problem and there was no provincial standards whatsoever concerning day care and what day care should be and as a matter of fact, licensing of day care centres whether commercial or community or community oriented—the requirements for a license to run a barber shop are more strict than to receive a license for a day care centre.

Senator Inman: Do the churches of Calgary operate day care centres?

Mr. Burgess: They are just starting to get in this field. When we first approached our churches in our area to use their buildings we found a little bit of difficulty there because there were other programs that they had, they didn't think it was worthwhile to have a day care centre in their building.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator Hastings, do you have anything to add to that?

Senator Hastings: No.

The Deputy Chairman: Is there anyone in the audience who would like to say something?

From the Floor (Mrs. van Hees): Ladies and gentlemen of this committee. As a volunteer working for a day care centre in the downtown area of the city and as an early childhood education teacher, I would like to say that I believe that day care must be looked upon as an integral part of any poverty program.

This day care concept is a form of exposing children to creative stimuli from outside sources and can be looked upon as complementary to the education the children get at home. In early childhood poverty in the four following areas can be recognized.

First, cultural poverty; second, economic poverty; third, social poverty; and fourth, emotional poverty.

Day care, in my opinion, should be dependent first on the needs of the child whether the mother works or does not work outside the home—this comes secondary in the consideration. If the existence of this condition of poverty is to be justified, I emphasize the importance that day care must take in your deliberations and conclusions and in your file report. Thank you very much.

Senator Hastings: Could we have a copy of that to put in the records?

From the Floor: May I send it in afterwards?

(The letter mentioned above is quoted hereunder:)

"Ladies and Gentlemen of this committee,

As a volunteer working toward a day-care centre in the downtown area of this city, and as an early childhood education

teacher I would like to say that I believe that day-care must be looked upon as an integral part of any poverty program.

This day-care concept is a form of exposing children to creative stimuli from outside sources, and can be looked upon as complementary to the education the children get at home.

In early childhood poverty in the following areas can be recognized:

1. Cultural poverty
2. Economical poverty
3. Social poverty
4. Emotional poverty

According to me day-care should be depending first on the needs of the child; the working or non-working of the mother comes secondary.

If the existence of this committee on poverty is to be justified, I emphasize the importance of day-care and the place it must take in deliberations and conclusions of your final report.

Thank you.

Mrs. Laetitia van Hees

Member of the Churchill Park Day-care Society."

The Deputy Chairman: Yes. Well, members of the day-care group, we thank you very much for your presentation and we thank Mr. Burgess, Mrs. Hall and Mrs. Black and Mrs. Harrison. I think you have something that we're interested in here, these co-ops, and we will be watching your progress in the weeks and months to come. If you do make progress, we would like to hear about it. That is what we're interested in and we would like to hear from you.

There is very little that we can add to this at this moment except to congratulate you on our success. There are many good things that I presumably could say, but I will just ask you how long you have been in operation?

Mrs. Hall: The first of May this year.

The Deputy Chairman: So you are just a young organization?

Mrs. Hall: Yes.

From the Floor (Mrs. Ellen Rea): Ladies and gentlemen, I was wondering if some of you could enlighten me as to how we can encourage more parents to participate in this endeavour. It would seem to me—and you can

tell from my own name that I am an old maid—not married and love children but don't know all the intimate details that a mother would know but it would appear to me from my own circle of friends that people are working, both husbands and wives for extras or working for necessities and from what one of the ladies sitting around here this morning said that she only received co-operation from one parent out of a possible twenty-five—I believe that is what she said this morning, how can the parents be encouraged to participate in an endeavour such as this when most of them appear to be more anxious to be our earning a dollar for a necessity or an extra? Have you any ideas at all on that?

Mrs. Black: I don't think you can force the parent to go out unless they go out on their own.

From the Floor (Miss Ellen Rea): Well, is there such a dearth of help as there is in every volunteer organization—possibly about one-fifth of the total membership is active in participation in that organization.

What can be done to strengthen the desire to participate amongst the people that would be helpful to the children? Do you have an answer?

Mrs. Harrison: We make it mandatory and if you are not prepared to participate you cannot enter the group. The group can only operate if the parents agree to participate and therefore it is a mandatory rule.

Miss Ellen Rea: But do you find, any of you, that a parent is willing to participate, to give of themselves sufficiently or do you find a dearth of volunteer help?

Mrs. van Hees: May I say something?

The Deputy Chairman: Yes.

Mrs. van Hees: I have worked with the Calgary Co-op from the university here which is not really working the same way as the co-ops that you describe but these mothers are either taking courses in university or they are wives of professors or teaching themselves at university. I found—we had a list on the door—we needed the mothers to help in school and I found that if I put a list on the door and left it open every day somebody would volunteer—come in and give their names to help. Some of them didn't have time so we left it open more or less to the mothers themselves but they were very good

help and we got good help from the people there and we got maybe 50 per cent of the mothers to show up.

Miss Ellen Rea: Well, thank you very much and I will tell you the reason for the query on my part. I am strictly an office worker and administrative secretarial type, in case you are wondering.

I have had people tell me that there is a crying need for home-makers, which is slightly different than the work you are engaged in, but they suggested that I and other people of my ilk—in other words the over forty unemployed office types should go in as a home-maker.

I draw exception to this in as much as my experience lies along the line of office work. Sure, if it is making things in plastacine or reading stories or going to a library I could be of great help but not having the home-making tendency in my fear of life, I feel that to stress this home-maker deal to those of us who are not qualified through experience in being a home-maker is going off on a tangent by somebody's part.

These suggestions have been made to me by people who have been interested in some way in government. This puzzles me.

Mrs. Hall: I could reply to that perhaps. There is a tremendous need for people who have had a back-ground similar to yours to work on associations such as ours for instance.

There are many things that people can do who perhaps don't have the actual care of the children, can do to aid day care associations to help to free other people who look after the children.

Miss Ellen Rea: But I have to earn my living—would I be paid?

Mrs. Hall: No, this is the problem. These are volunteers.

Miss Ellen Rea: Well, if I want volunteer work I can get that by the carload.

Senator Inman: I wonder, Mr. Chairman, if I might make a comment here. When we were in Vancouver we met a group of women and these were women on welfare and one woman was fairly progressive. She had two underprivileged children—well, they weren't underprivileged other than the fact that they were blind so she had to be home with them and she conceived the idea of minding her

neighbours children and letting them go out for a night or two.

In any event, the thing progressed and they built into quite a group and they finally got I think—a teacher. They went back to school because some of them hadn't gone past the lower grades but she got them interested and that was quite a group and it was really heart-warming to find out how these women help themselves among themselves.

Mrs. Black: Well, our participation is a lot more than just in the school itself.

I myself have a younger child and on my day I have to work one of the other mothers look after the children for the other mothers that have to work. It covers a lot more than just the school itself.

The Deputy Chairman: We find that participation in any social services by people who are not sincere is very, very difficult. People who have no children say, "Well, why should I worry about those children? It is not my problem." We have found this to be the reaction of people. There are very few people who are willing to volunteer their services when they are not affected themselves by poverty. This is very true and it is not too surprising. We have it everywhere. This is an attitude which we have always had, and it is probably so right across the nation.

From The Floor (Mrs. Warren): I would like to make a comment at this time. I would like to ask what sort of encouragement do working women get from society? This I believe has a relevance to day care centres or the lack of enthusiasm for day care centres I say is a reflection of society's reluctance to make it easy for a woman to go back to work for what ever reason or the woman wishes to go back to work whether it is for economic reasons or whether it is for a desire to contribute the maximum amount that that woman can contribute to society.

There is more to poverty than economic poverty. There is poverty of the mind, there is poverty of wasted talent and it would seem to me that on this commission—I would like to see you take into account the poverty which is caused by the wasted talent, particularly of a large segment of the society today I would like to end by saying that Canada can no longer allow the wastage of these women's talents to be added to poverty—the poverty of this country.

The chairman has congratulated the day care centres for the good work and he has said that's fine ladies, we hope you go ahead with this but surely the government could do more in helping through publicity, through the CBC where there is going to be more extra time on Canadian issues on Canadian television. Surely this would be a place where we could explain to people what day care centres are. People are always very upset. They say well, I managed to raise my family without any assistance from anybody else, why can't the younger people do it. You know, I was a success, why can't you be a success and I am very, very anxious to see that other women do not have to go through what I had to go through in order to give to my child the kind of care that I felt he deserved. Well, there were no day care centres—well, I should end here but there is a great relationship between what Mrs. Goodwin—I believe it was Mrs. Goodwin who was talking about the issue of the mature woman going back to work, the issue of day care centres—these are all connected with society's reluctance to change their values and the changing times. Thank you very much.

Senator Hastings: Mrs. Warren, I think that's one of the basic or prime objectives of this committee, is to change the thinking. I mean, you just don't apply it to day care centres because they say I am a success what is wrong with you and it is the haves that have to be broken down and assume a responsibility for the have not's.

This is one of our prime objectives. As we have traveled across Canada we find this thing exists with the haves—I can make it, that's wrong with you Jack—it applies not just to day care centres but it applies all across the board through all of the social programs we have. There is a general condition of them and a rejection of them by the haves and as I said this morning, a gift is regarded as a virtue but to accept it is a crime and this is what we have to break or we will fail in our job.

Mrs. Warren: Yes, but it is a matter of educating people so that they accept other kinds of values other than their own. This is the great value of education you know, which just can't be over-emphasized.

The Deputy Chairman: I would like to say that it is very difficult to educate people who do not want to be educated. Let me give you an example. You are talking about television now. Let us assume that at four o'clock this

afternoon you have a program on television which explains all about the operations of day care, and at the same time you have two other channels, one showing a musical and the other a cowboy or war picture. How many people do you think are going to listen to the operations regarding day care centres. How many people do you think are going to close off their favorite picture and look at the program to which I referred if they are not interested?

Mrs. Warren: But one of the top rating programs in U.S. television is one which the main person is a single woman, a negro who raises a small child. I believe it is one of the top ranking American movies. Now, surely if we are going to have Canadian entertainment sort of thing, why not on a single parent raising children utilizing the day care centres and the problems that are involved in running a day care centre and the problems of the parents working together and co-operating.

These are the kind of things that I would like to see utilized on Canadian television, not just always—perhaps here is a day care centre—this is what it is all about.

I agree with you, however I don't think that would be very successful.

The Deputy Chairman: But we agree with you and we thank you very kindly.

From the Floor (Mrs. Martin): I am probably one of the haves that the senator was referring to.

I am keenly interested in the social issues of other people in the community and especially in the educational field and I am going to come back to the same point that I made this morning that in our community—and Mrs. Hall may take exception to this—we are finding it very, very hard to get parents participation.

Probably one of the key reasons for our problem is the fact that the school board is paying for kindergarten and the parents don't want any part of it. The moment they start to pay they don't want any part of it. If they are taking part in it they will take part and work towards it.

Mrs. Black: I would just like to make one comment before we close out. How far can a parent go. We have parent participation, we have the building, we have the children and now we don't have the equipment and as Mr.

Burgess says there is nothing you can do in regards to getting a grant for it.

We are getting kind of upset with the fact that we have everything going for us and yet we can't continue ourselves. Like I say we have the building, we have the children and we have all the parent participation we want and the teachers but we don't have the equipment.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, I just want to say before we close that I couldn't agree more with what Mrs. Goodwin and Mrs. Warren have said. I couldn't agree more with what they said about mature women to be permitted to make to the country the maximum contribution they are able and I believe that one of the reasons we lack a lot of things is that we don't make use of the contribution that such women could make and I think perhaps tradition has limited what people accept.

I hope the time will come that we will overcome this and that perhaps discussions like this will help to do it.

I just wanted to express my support for what Mrs. Warren and Mrs. Goodwin have said.

I would also like to point out that in speaking to several of the people here they have referred to this group as a commission. I wonder if you would point out that this is not a commission. It is a committee of the senate.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes. I do not want the members of the audience to confuse this with a royal commission. This is only a committee making a study, and we are travelling around the country instead of asking everybody to come down to Ottawa.

We thought it would be nice to reverse the process and come to the people. Although some of you might be critical of the expense involved, I can assure you it is much less expensive to do it this way than to call maybe a thousand people to Ottawa to present briefs. We all believe that we are going to find out the issues of poverty and the real situation by doing what we are doing now, meeting with the people and talking with them, reading their briefs and holding open discussions. Then, when we can afford the time, we take trips around the areas that were mentioned during the presentations of the briefs.

This is what we have been doing the last eight months, and I can assure you that the

situation here is not any worse than what we have found elsewhere. We have found places that are very sad compared to what we have found here in Calgary today and what we expect to find in the rest of Alberta.

Two weeks ago we were on the east coast of Labrador and Newfoundland. If you want to see real poverty that is where you will find it. They have a difficult situation in which to live. Here you are telling us that you need a few hundred dollars for your day care operation, and we do not disagree with you. You should have it.

We also found out in our travels to Newfoundland and some other places that if \$300 or \$400 was spent to improve the working conditions of eight, ten or fifteen families who have been working under real hardship on a small amount of money—we have found that a small amount of money would help them. They cannot afford to pay this out of their own pockets. They need money to build wharfs or mend their fishing nets or something like that, but the way our legislation is laid down there is no way that you could draw \$500 from this pool of money to help a number of families. This is one of the things that we are going to recommend to the federal Government—that some of this legislation has got to be changed.

We can spend billions of dollars without hesitation on some projects, and yet we have no means or way of finding \$300 or \$400 to help people such as we have here today. This is not our fault. Our purpose is to find out these things and bring it to the attention of the government. We will be able to say that we have been there and seen it. This is the first time that this is being done.

It is time to break off now, but we will be back here at 7:30 to hear a couple more briefs. I can assure everyone that the meeting today has been very fruitful and that the recommendations you have given us have been quite helpful. They will be taken into consideration and not just placed on shelves in Ottawa to be foundations for moths and spider webs.

Thank you very much. The meeting is adjourned.

Upon resuming at 7 p.m.

The Deputy Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen I call the meeting to order. We have two more briefs to be presented tonight. The first

is from the Low Income Working Committee with Mr. George Campbell, Mrs. Bouchard and Mrs. Foster. The second will be from the Inglewood-Ramsay Redevelopment Committee.

Mr. Campbell, I am not going to repeat myself but we have read your brief and like all the others we took note of its contents and your brief will be part of the record. We pass on the microphone to you for your comments and if there is anything you wish to add to the brief or any other comments you may wish to make, please feel free to do so.

Mr. George Campbell: Thank you, senator. There is not a great deal to be added by me to the brief except that several developments today at this committee could call for some comments; such as our Mayor expressing his belief that the low income working groups were becoming quite tired supporting and being pushed to a level themselves by this support, but this is of course covered in our brief where they are pushed to this level. But to say that they are tired of supporting these welfare types is true as Mayor Sykes said. The only point really that was missed there was the fact that it was the fact that the working poor income is so low that they are pushed down below everything else with the taxes and particularly of course the so called graduated income tax which is, as we know from the noises that have been raised for some months now, over the Benson paper, where the very well to do are going to be hit.

Obviously they are the ones that are going to be hit because they are the ones that can make the noise. However, the poor, as we have said in our brief, are not articulate because it costs money to be articulate and that fact alone accounts for a great deal for this alleged silent majority.

Now, if any senator would like to ask me something.

The Deputy Chairman: Would other members of your committee like to make any comments?

Mrs. Bouchard: My name is Mrs. Bouchard and I don't want to say too much on the brief because I don't know too much about it but on the low income I will just give you a few remarks.

A few of the low income women got together and we discussed what we had to do about doctors and medicine. For low income people

medicine is impossible to buy so usually we just look after our children with home-made remedies. When we get medicine that we have to buy, we usually throw the prescription in the garbage can because we can't pay for it anyway.

Dentistry, we just forget it because we fill the cavity with aspirin and hope for the best.

This is hard to believe but this is true. This is what the low income people do. Our housing, well our taxes went up on the property and instead of making the rich landlord pay for their taxes as usual the poor people are going to pay higher rent.

My rent was two hundred and his taxes went up a hundred dollars so he has decided to rent the house for two hundred and fifty so he is making quite a profit so the poor working guy is still going to pay the taxes for him.

The food, well God help us, if the price of macaroni goes up because we will have had it by then. Milk—homo milk, the children of low income families drink powdered milk because everybody says powdered milk is good but homo milk is better but we can't afford to pay for homo milk.

Medicare—people need it. We need it desperately so we usually neglect some of the bills—the butchers, the bakers, so we can pay for the medicare payments so when our men work ten to eleven hours a day and we find we need six hundred a month and he brings home four hundred a month then we have to sit back and do without.

I heard some people say once that low income people are good savers. That we are because we are the best left-over savers you ever did see.

Credit—finance companies, low income people do not have resources and they are turned down from a source of a loan because of some misunderstanding which can upset the whole deal.

That is ours from the low income women and our husbands. That is what we have to put up with and that's about all.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much.

Mrs. Foster: Well, I can't very well add too much more because my two bits were said in two small papers which we got together on. There is a little bit about milk I should say that we can't afford the one kind and we

have to rely on the other kind and they tried to get Safeway distributors to sell it a little bit cheaper but they decided to send it out three cents more. We are pretty well just stuck where we are and the same with the other things—we are just not getting anywhere because there is no where to go.

Houses—we can't get into houses if we have more than two children and most of us have more. We are just left out where we are and do to the best of our ability to find some place of our own whether it is a slum area or whether it is a slum house and we just have to take it and like it.

That is about all of it. There is just nothing to add to that.

Senator Inman: This house that you pay two hundred a month for, for what type of house is that? How many rooms do you get for that price?

Mrs. Bouchard: I have four bedrooms, living-room, kitchen, basement and there is a room—another room downstairs.

Senator Inman: Is it in good condition?

Mrs. Bouchard: No.

Senator Inman: No?

Mrs. Bouchard: No, and you would probably be paying—if it was you would probably be paying I would say about one hundred dollars a month more. I mean, when we took the house, the landlord painted the house nice and pretty but when we turned the heat on it all cracked up. You know, you can see where the paint is peeled off and cracked and you can see what the house is made of. I mean, that is only one house but there are hundreds of them.

Mrs. Foster: For example, I live in the same house or almost the same house and have the same kind of room and I pay one hundred dollars a month to my landlord and yet she is paying two hundred a month and they upped it another fifty.

Mrs. Bouchard: The people across the street are in the same conditions and I mean this is all over the city. This is not just mine or hers and you are women you know what it is like to raise a family. I mean how can a man go out and get that much more money and still give seven children proper food, proper dental care and schooling. I mean, it is impossible.

Senator Inman: And you have to heat this house yourself?

Mrs. Bouchard: We pay for heat and electricity.

Senator Inman: The difference in your rent is due to the location?

Mrs. Foster: Well, mine is in the lower downtown area and hers is in the area downtown.

Mrs. Bouchard: There is a lot of poor people in our district and they are all paying fantastic prices. Children are walking around with hardly any shoes on. This is simply because you can't pay both. You can't pay rent, buy food because you have to pay for one or the other. The roof you have to have over your head I mean, if the City of Calgary could have a rent tribunal or rent control on this people could live normally, people could buy food and clothe their children properly. This would make a lot of difference to a lot of people.

Senator Inman: And do your children go to school?

Mrs. Bouchard: My children go to school. We send our children to school and you know what it is like to send them to school clothed properly. You don't want to have to send them in rags and I have seven. It is not just me but there are lots of women who have five, four, three and even with three children you can't make it. A rent control in the city or a rent tribunal would be what the low income people need and they need it desperately.

Senator Inman: Have you made any concentrated effort to get any rent control?

Mrs. Bouchard: We have tried. We have been everywhere. We have put it in front of City Council.

The Deputy Chairman: This question was pretty well discussed this morning at previous meetings—the situation of the housing here in Calgary. We found similar situations right across Canada, which is most unfortunate. We do not agree with it but that is the way we find it and we can only report what we find.

Senator Fergusson: One of the things I would like to ask has to do with the brief and I presume Mr. Campbell could answer this. It has to do with page 10 and there is a reference to a study of ten thousand pregnant women in Montreal. This showed that each

averaged 778 calories per day. Who were the women that were studied and how did they choose them?

Mr. George Campbell: What page is that, senator?

Senator Fergusson: It is on page 10, at the last paragraph, at the bottom of the page. I was interested in that study.

Mr. George Campbell: And your question was?

Senator Fergusson: Who were the women who were studied and how were they chosen? They showed the average of 778 calories per day, that is pretty low.

Mr. George Campbell: That is what I thought too.

Senator Fergusson: Well, where did they find those women?

Mr. George Campbell: Presumably the Royal Hospital found them.

Senator Fergusson: Well, it doesn't say that, it just says ten thousand pregnant women in Montreal.

Mr. George Campbell: The Royal Victoria Hospital.

Mrs. Bouchard: And you take just the City of Calgary—how many low income women who get pregnant can afford the pill? I raise seven children and I never took one prescription my doctor gave me because I couldn't afford it.

Senator Fergusson: But did you get enough food? Were you eating more than 778 calories?

Mrs. Foster: We don't eat much more than that right now.

Mrs. Bouchard: Take the average working Joe's family—their meals consist of very starchy foods because very starchy foods are very cheap.

Senator Fergusson: But they have a lot of calories in them?

Mrs. Foster: Not that much.

Mrs. Bouchard: Not that many.

Mrs. Foster: It is the wrong kind of food.

Mrs. Bouchard: It is the wrong kind of food and you can ask any doctor.

Mrs. Foster: One can of tomato soup, and there's not too many calories in that.

Senator Fergusson: I just don't understand. I am not objecting to it but I just don't understand and I would like to know a little bit more about it.

Mrs. Bouchard: Yes, because it is an old fact even in our own city. The low income people are not getting the proper food and they can't even afford to fill doctor's prescriptions.

Senator Fergusson: Well, Mr. Campbell referred to the Royal Victoria Hospital which is on the next page but I didn't know that was the same study and on the next page you say:

At the Royal Victoria Hospital where studies were conducted, prenatal mortality was reduced to 13.2 deaths—a figure below that in Sweden of 14.2 deaths.

How was it reduced?

Mr. George Campbell: By feeding them.

Senator Fergusson: Well, you don't say so.

Mr. George Campbell: Well, senator, the implication following that is very clear. It says:

The price of one quart of milk per day achieved this, save the countless hundreds of thousands spent in the future on special schools say nothing about the insults and waste to humanity.

Another thing, senator, that I would like to point out that it is obvious of course, it is beyond your comprehension—this is the whole point.

When little children come around our house and we are living right in the middle of the slum districts but we have no children. This I say "very fortunately" and children come around and we get quite friendly with them because we don't have any children or grandchildren and my wife gets pretty friendly with them and we offer these children whatever they would care for, a bottle of pop or something like that, and do you know what they elect for? This I wouldn't have believed until I have seen it—a glass of milk. Oh, we never have a glass of milk in our house. I came from a C.P.R. working class family and at least we had milk and these kids say, oh, we never have milk in our house. Their idea of a real treat is a glass of milk. There is

something very wrong. Not pop and things they can rot their teeth with and all that stuff but a glass of milk. A glass of real honest to God milk.

Senator Fergusson: I object to your saying it is beyond my comprehension because I come from a poor province too. I come from New Brunswick and we are much poorer there than you in Alberta.

Mr. Campbell: Well, I come from Nova Scotia where they really are poor. We are talking about a wealthy province. This is a wealthy province and one of the really have provinces and look, this happens right in our neighbourhood right down sixteen blocks from this building.

Senator Fergusson: Well, why do you think this should happen in a wealthy province?

Mr. Campbell: Well, as Mrs. Payne said this afternoon, if some of the time that was spent on searching and researching on poverty—how about giving some money for a change. As Senator Croll said eight and a half billion dollars more or less is spent every year at all levels. How much of this gets down to where it could do some good by buying the odd bottle of milk? It is supporting these bureaucracies and costs that much.

Senator Inman: Do you think too much is spent in administration?

Mr. Campbell: Oh, did you ever hear a United fund man making a pitch or what ever you have in your country? For every dollar we take in, we return a seven and a half cents and our administration costs are very little but you never see those figures in the government. It is just loaded down and it is just like Major Sykes said today, he said, you know, I think it would be a good idea if they got the older folks involved in our welfare department and maybe they might know something about it instead of these young hot shots that they have coming around. Just get someone who might know something about poverty. You know even though they are over forty.

Senator Inman: People who lived it?

Mr. Campbell: Yes. I have lived a long, long time in awful adverse conditions and I got here so therefore we might know a little bit. Mayor Sykes did tell us that. However, when a child looks upon a glass of milk as a real treat, this I wouldn't have believed.

The Deputy Chairman: Would you agree with me on this, that in many schools across Canada we have milk and coke machines. I will refer to my own province and my own region. The parents will give a dime to the children to buy a coke but never to buy a glass of milk. What would be your reaction to that?

Mr. Campbell: What is the price of a glass of milk?

The Deputy Chairman: A dime.

Mr. Campbell: Well, as I say prior to the experience that I have just related, I wouldn't have believed this myself because as I say we were poor working class people but never were we at the level where we looked upon a glass of milk as a real treat. It is an actual fact, I have seen it. We go through more milk in our house than we ever do pop.

In fact, in the dirty thirties when things were a little rough around the west we gave milk away to the low income people on relief or relievers as they were called in those days but to ones that haven't got any money—this is the point—they get overlooked in all of this but when they do get down to the level where they can't buy a bottle of milk for their children then to my mind we have reached a pretty low state and I have recommended against an income tax rather than a guaranteed annual income.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Campbell and Mrs. Bouchard and Mrs. Foster, I don't know what else we can add to your brief. We have read it and we accept it. You have presented it to us very openly and we certainly are not critical of it because there are a lot of things in your brief we agree with. We are not here to sell anything. We are not here to sell any government or any policies but we are just here as a fact finding committee.

We are not here as a royal commission. There is a big difference between a committee and a royal commission. We appreciate the fact that everyone has presented a brief. We said this morning that we feel that it costs quite a bit less to have a dozen people travelling across the country than bringing one thousand people down to Ottawa to get the facts. And we do get the facts!

We receive the briefs and we talk to the people presenting the briefs. We interview and we ask questions. On many occasions we visit the areas if we do have the time. We

visit the homes and we visit the poor people and we talk with them, with the husbands and wives and children. We visit their schools. We visit welfare organizations and the unemployment insurance offices, and we table everything. We will have a report to make to the government...

Mr. George Campbell: When?

The Deputy Chairman: In the latter part of September.

Mr. Campbell: A realistic report? I mean not that we expect the government to act on it right away, but when can we expect a realistic report to be made?

The Deputy Chairman: It will be done before the end of this year. That is our plan. By December we will have the final report. We will be giving an interim report which will be studied and sent around the country. Then there will be a final report which we hope to have by the end of December to present to the government.

I might say that we will be making some recommendations. I can assure you that there are a lot of things we feel call for a change. That is all I can tell you at the moment. We appreciate the fact that you have written this rather long brief. It look a lot of work and we appreciate it.

Mr. Campbell: But not if it accomplishes something, senator. This is the point. If we are just putting in time, filling up files—this is the point, senator. We haven't changed the income tax since 1918, so do you think you will be instrumental in making some changes?

The Deputy Chairman: We are not the people who are going to change it but we will make some recommendations and tell the members of the government why we want to change them. Not we, but what the people want.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Campbell, I think the members of this committee appreciate the urgency of the problems we have found and as evidence of that is our presence here today. We are working all summer to get this finished because we know the urgency of the problems. We are spending our summer working on this in order to finish it and have a report before the government this fall.

Mr. Campbell: You speak of a sense of urgency?

Senator Hastings: Yes.

Mr. Campbell: But what is the urgency that is in the sense that this all should have been done years and years ago—why the urgency? Just for an example, the two largest cities in the province, the committee is divided. Half goes there and half comes here. Senator Fournier just said that we go, if you have the time, you visit the homes. Well, you didn't visit around Calgary and look at the conditions we represent. We would like to see you right down there but no, you are in a hurry. There is an urgency here just to get the thing done, get a report in, but we are trying to change things. We are trying to change things now and there is really no urgency in that sense.

You don't even give us the full committee! Not that I think that is going to make a great deal of difference. You made just a gesture but how about Calgary being entitled to at least the full committee. There seems to be an urgency to get a report in just for the sake of having a report made.

I read your briefs and they were far superior to mine as far as getting this thing done by 9 o'clock tonight or tomorrow night or the next night, there is no sense or urgency, no real sense or urgency at all. You just seem to want to rush off to Edmonton. Edmonton which is a total enemy of Calgary!

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Campbell, those are your views and opinions and we thank you very much.

Mr. Campbell: Well, maybe we will hear from you some time in the future.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, the next brief we will hear is from the Inglewood-Ramsay Redevelopment Committee of Calgary. I have here at my right, Mr. Stan Feader, the President of the Committee. I will ask Mr. Feader to introduce his associates.

Mr. Stan Feader, President, Inglewood-Ramsay Redevelopment Committee: To my immediate right is Reverend David Gilchrist, of Trinity United Church. Next to him is Canon Van der Leest, pastor of St. John's Anglican Church. Behind me is Mrs. Caroline Curtis, formerly a school teacher and now a home-maker, and beside her is Mr. Joe Melhuish, who is retired.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, sir. As we have told all the other witnesses, we have already read your brief and we would ask you now to make some comments and further remarks. Then we will take the opportunity to ask you a few questions.

Mr. Feader: My comments really were, in accordance with the instructions put out by the committee—that is a very brief summary of the brief since you would rather have some remarks I can only speak off the cuff.

This approach is a little different than most. What we are attempting to do in our area which has been described by one government agency as about as low as it can go is to redevelop and rehabilitate the district through our own efforts with the co-operations eventually of the three levels of government.

In the area there are many poor. We haven't given you a figure because our studies haven't gone this far yet. We have had one figure of 70 per cent on welfare which we do not think is correct. It is probably a little bit high. It is a very old district in Calgary and pretty run down but we think it should be preserved for several reasons which are in the brief.

There are many pensioners down there. Relief for pensioners, even with a supplementary income would probably be that they should not have to pay taxes for the purposes of supporting education. That has been coming to the fore more so in Saskatchewan, I think that in Alberta, then there are many states in the United States which don't have property taxes for education.

It would certainly be a big help to pensioners and we have several hundred of them in our area. I think I will leave it there since you have read the brief and you may have questions which I hope we can answer although our studies at this point and time have only carried forward for about five months and we are trying to make a living and it is a long drawn out process.

Thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Feader, possibly before we ask any questions we could hear from other members of your committee.

Canon Van Der Leest, St. John's Anglican Church: Yes, Mr. Chairman. I would like to make a few comments. First of all, the redevelopment committee of Inglewood-Ramsay

is trying to combat the attitude that has developed for the past twenty or thirty years by the committee as well as the landlords as looking down upon Inglewood as something that has to be phased out and because it is to be phased out it is good for putting any kind of people there and making it a kind of ghetto of low income earners instead of spreading it over throughout the city.

The committee itself has not worried about it so far and we don't cry because the governments are doing this, the municipal and other governments, but we are trying by this committee is to take positive action, study the whole problem and come up with suggestions and urge the government into action.

Much of the poverty and much of the problems I think that should be handled by the people themselves and of course the government can encourage and help through certain legislation to approve the situation in regards to the attitude developed by the city and the landlords.

The second point which was made here on page 7 of the brief where one of the causes of poverty is called ignorance and that because the people very often have less education and are not as quick in figuring out how to buy, etc., they are not able to economically and as we heard in the former presentation, that economic buying is of necessity; they have to because they have a very low income.

Now, economic buying is only possible when you have the knowledge but I would like to point out that uneconomic buying is not the privilege of the poor because the rich are well known for uneconomic buying as well as the brownie leader in our district discovered when she took her children out to camp. She provided a camp for the poor children at a reasonable price and she was able to take them out for less than four dollars for the week-end and when she compared it with brownie camps from other parts of the city where they have more money to spend, they spent far more and they discovered they could bring half of it back because it was uneconomic to spend more.

It is true however that ignorance is a difficulty in poverty.

For that reason the committee in Inglewood tries to get as many people who are knowledgeable and are able to lead the people in the community in order to have a voice and to present their problems as well as lead

them into action rather than wait and sit back and say why didn't the government do anything. Thank you very much.

Reverend David Gilchrist, Trinity United Church: Mr. Chairman, a great many things in this brief have come out and I am particularly concerned about the fact that the solution to poverty as the solution to many other things has often come down to more money, more money, more money.

My contention is and has been increasingly so for years now that more money is not the answer; it is only part of the answer. I know of one case from my own personal experience where a man earning one thousand dollars—and there were several in the same boat—but I am referring to this specific one case where a man was earning one thousand dollars a month and was broke for the next pay day every time. In other words, he lived in virtual poverty although he had in his hands one thousand dollars a month.

This was a little over twice what I was supporting a family of three children on. The solution then is not just giving more money because no matter how much money you give unless a person knows how to use it, it will go down the drain and I was rather impressed by the panel that went just before us where there was a discussion about having to make decisions repaying the medicare or groceries.

Well, I have decisions to make as well. I have decisions to make between smoking and giving my children music lessons and it seems to me that when a family can spend thirty to forty dollars a month on tobacco I really have to wonder about this business. Have we not got enough to give milk to our kids?

Mrs. Caroline Curtis, Home-maker: In regards to education, I think that the government could be very positive towards school boards across the country in the form of planning more decentralization.

In other words, perhaps some of the school programs just don't fit into some of the inner-city core areas, such as our own and here we need people to be involved in a more individualized form of education.

I think, as I recommended in the brief, that the government could exert pressure on school boards to become more individualized, more tailored to the needs of these people instead of hitting a little too high for their grasp.

Another way that would help is if the programs could be started with some seed money, just enough to get the community itself started and working toward its own educational programs. And I think it would be very exciting and interesting as well as most helpful to the individual citizen.

That is all I have to say.

Mr. Joe Melhuish, retired pensioner: Well, Mr. Chairman, I would just like to say a little bit on the pensions. Now, being one myself I know what they are going through. I am not at the poverty level yet but I can see the day approaching. The cost of living is going up day by day and I can tell you that my fixed income—my income in the last five years is decreasing in purchasing power or has decreased in purchasing power by about twenty-five to thirty percent.

The day is not far away when I will not have any purchasing power at all and money will not be able to buy anything at all and the only solution I can see to this is a guaranteed income.

Now, we have a lot of pensioners in our district and how some of them live on the supplementary income I can't tell you. It must be darn hard for them to do. I am getting by by myself anyway but as I say I have not too much to spare at the end of the time and I am speaking for the other pensioners who really need help and the only way I can see is if they have a guaranteed income they will be able to rest in bed at night comfortably.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much. Is there anything else that you would like to add to the brief?

Mr. Feader: No, Mr. Chairman.

Senator Inman: Mr. Chairman, I was rather interested in the gentleman who spoke about the man making one thousand dollars a month and couldn't make ends meet. Is it a matter of education and home-making? Is there any programs that could be instituted whereby people could learn how to buy and how to make ends meet. I believe that women do handle about eighty percent of the money.

Reverend Gilchrist: Yes, this is another suggestion in our brief that such things as learning how to budget and so on ought to be taught way back in the sixth grade of school.

In other words, we should be preparing people way back in the sixth grade by teach-

ing them how to live. This is one of the points we have made.

An interesting experiment was tried in our district under the mental health association and encouraged the people of St. Matthew's church in the city to provide leadership for poor women in home-making, budgeting, cooking, sewing, child care and so on. They found that the women were not able to travel as far as St. Matthew's so they asked Trinity if they could use our facilities and they would provide the leadership.

Unfortunately this particular experiment didn't work out too well because the women that they had hoped would come to take advantage of it were for some reason or other busy but I think this is a step in the right direction.

Certainly more money is needed but all I am saying is more money without what you are suggesting, education, is really money down the drain.

Senator Fergusson: I noticed this recommendation in your brief on page 8 that this should be taught in the schools in grades say five and six and I think it is a very good idea but there is not much we can do about this because this would be part of the educational curriculum for which we would have no control and also I noticed that you refer to knowledge of political systems is important and that this should be taught and the children should be taught about political systems and individual rights.

Isn't this already taught in the schools in the social study classes—that sort of thing?

Reverend Gilchrist: I don't think it is taught in the sense of people knowing the avenues through which they can go to get the action they need at a particular time and no, certainly social studies covers about politics but only the method of governing. I was thinking of politics in a far more parochial sense where a person in a given difficulty would know who to go to to help him in that particular need.

Senator Fergusson: Oh, I didn't understand that from what I read.

The Deputy Chairman: I would like someone to question. Do you find it difficult to get poor people to participate in your projects? Do they just say, "Well, I don't care. It is not for me"? What are your experiences?

Reverend Gilchrist: Are you speaking specifically of the project that I mentioned which St. Matthew's tried?

The Deputy Chairman: Or any other.

Reverend Gilchrist: This is the problem, yes. There is a lack of participation but why we haven't been able to discover yet.

The Deputy Chairman: You don't know why?

Reverend Gilchrist: No.

Senator Hastings: How many people are participating in the Inglewood-Ramsay Redevelopment Committee?

Mr. Feader: There must be around thirty altogether. I haven't been able to attend all the meetings because there are about six different committees but at the pollution meeting I attended last there were twelve people there much to my amazement because to get a committee of three you are lucky sometimes. This is really true.

Interest in the community is good I think. Where we expected to have forty people out we had well over three hundred.

Senator Hastings: What brought them there?

Mr. Feader: On that occasion it was a newsletter that went out to everyone from the association pointing out some of the problems plus the fact that a study had been done by one of the local colleges on the area. They were going to tell the community what they found out. This, much to my amazement, filled the hall.

The Deputy Chairman: Do you find that advertising on television has a bad effect on the consumers?

Reverend Gilchrist: I think that any advertising that makes luxury appear as a necessity has an adverse effect. I think basically we are a fairly gullible creature, man, and as soon as a person comes to think of something which is essentially luxury as being a necessity and he sees that everybody else has it, therefore he must have it and it becomes bad, yes.

The Deputy Chairman: Are we living too much on credit cards today?

Mr. Melhuish: Well, I would say yes to that question and I think myself they are making

credit a little too easy for people to get and some people don't know how to use the credit that is one of the dangers of the advertising system as it is. Going back to this question of are we having difficulties in our committees and this sort of thing, the answer is no, we are not.

We are getting wonderful results from this committee work we are doing even though we are small in committees we have plenty of backing behind these committees and we are getting support from professional help outside and also the city is working very closely with us so we are doing very well on this project we are on now and we hope we will get good results from it.

Canon Van Der Leest: I don't think for the lower income classed people that credit card buying is the real problem. Easy credit is of course always a problem but I think especially those who are dealing with finance companies and who have easy access to ready money is far worse because the finance companies don't guide the people. They just loan the money at any time. I heard it one time of a family that was in great difficulty and when I asked what the problem was they said well, we owe one finance company two thousand dollars and I said well, do you owe anything else and they said they owed another finance company another two thousand dollars and a third one thousand dollars.

That was five thousand dollars that was tied up and there was no ability of ever being able to pay it back and the finance company are not really worried because they could just simply come in and reclaim the furniture or whatever so the finance company doesn't suffer from it but the poor themselves do suffer from it.

Senator Fergusson: You say on page 10—this is where I would like a little explanation—you say:

It is not the desire nor intention of this committee on education to bring everyone to a common life style, but rather to give each individual a choice. In order to do this education must be individualized to meet special requirements of culture and learning abilities.

One way of achieving this would seem to be through the individual controlling his learning situation rather than the centralization policy of the Calgary School Board.

Would you mind explaining how an individual could be able to control his learning situation?

Mrs. Caroline Curtis: Well, in context to this, it seems that in our particular community, the school system was having difficulty to the point where they were going to phase out the schools and this was their solution and they were going to bus the children into another area.

Well, in this sense it seems to be very obvious that the system as they designed it wasn't hitting at the level that it should be say in our inner-city homes and the calibre of the students so there so possibly a program designed to meet this type of person and people is needed rather than—I hate to say it—but the average white suburban middle class education. That is what is meant there.

The Deputy Chairman: How many years ago was your committee organized?

Mr. Feader: In February of this year.

The Deputy Chairman: Now, if you had these problems before, why didn't you organize before?

Mr. Feader: I don't know. I haven't been in the community that long but there seems to be a feeling of apathy. No one was doing anything but if I could speak in terms of a sociologist the myth had been created by the planners that this was going to an area of light industry and a large exterior road was going to go through a densely populated area. Once this kind of myth was established, people seemed to fall away due to the fact that there was a lack of leaders. The leaders just weren't there so that ever since 1963 nothing had been done until suddenly they realized the conditions they were in and then they decided to form a committee to see what they could do about it.

The Deputy Chairman: Are you satisfied with the results up to now?

Mr. Feader: Yes we are. It has seemed to snowball really. There have been quite a number of things happen and we have had encouragement from Ottawa in that eventually this may have to be an urban renewal project because there is one thousand homes that you can describe as shacks.

No basements, porches are falling apart, unpainted, poor lumber and the whole thing. They are covered up with paint and corrugat-

ed steel yet there are some very good type homes intermixed with all of this.

One result was a presentation to the City Council and we have in writing their complete co-operation and the co-operation of every department of the city to help us in our studies.

Mr. Melhuish: I might just add to that. I have lived in this district for forty-four years and the apathy as you would call it is due to the fact that industry has moved into that district—we are surrounded by industry and it is gradually creeping in and in and in. The workers that used to work in and around that area have become a little more affluent, you might say, and they have moved out of the district and we have seen this here district deteriorate to the extent of what it is now.

It is now our intention to put it back to what it was again into what I might call a first class district. We want to get that district back to where it was before when I first started living there forty-four years ago.

I think that with this committee going as we are going now we have a great hope of being able to accomplish something by helping ourselves but we need a little encouragement on the way as well.

Mr. Feader: Senator Hastings would be familiar with the fact that this was originally Calgary before it moved across the river and there were a lot of great families there, leaders such as the Crosses, the Walkers, the Pierces, the Stuarts and they moved out and that is about what has happened over a period of thirty or forty years.

Canon Van Der Leest: When you asked about how the renewal committee started I think in all fairness we should mention that one of the architects that moved into the district and saw what was going on and he got the poor people more and more interested and I think that is what started it.

He realized that the district was on the downroad and also that the people were not aware of the things that were planned in city hall—that is to say the city engineers, etc. and through his activities here our eyes were opened and we realized that many things were decided for the district which were detrimental without the people actually having any knowledge of it and so he got us working and some of the aldermen then realized what was going on and started to support

us and encouraged us to take the bull by the horn and take action to give suggestions to the city rather than just sit back and let things go on the way they were.

The Deputy Chairman: Do you have an alderman in your region?

Mr. Feader: No alderman and no school trustee.

The Deputy Chairman: You are the orphan of the community!

Mr. Feader: One of them.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, members of the committee, we thank you very kindly and I am sure your brief will receive the greatest of attention, the same as all the others. We appreciate you coming before us this evening.

It has been a very interesting brief. We have seen similar situations in many cases right across Canada in the last two years. In many places people are becoming conscious of their problems. They are participating. We feel that this has been a weakness of people across the nation. We have seen the school boards and home and school associations and other organizations and we see that the people are starting to belong and participate in these organizations. They have sort of lost the feeling of "Well, why should we belong? What can they do for us?"

In the last two years there has been a change and it has only been in the last two years that the people of Canada, the Government of Canada, not only the federal but the provincial and municipal governments, have started to realize just how great a problem poverty is in Canada. We always assumed that there were many wealthy provinces in Canada and that they had most of everything. It is true enough that we have a lot of things but we were sad to see that there is so much poverty in existence in our society across the nation.

This problem will not be solved overnight. There is a lot of work to be done but at least this is a beginning. People realize that they need assistance and we will do everything possible to help them and eventually things will be much, much better.

It has been our observation that people are not unreasonable. They want jobs. They want to work and earn a decent living. It is sad that we do not seem to be able to provide these things. This is one of the problems that

we are trying to solve in our cross-Canada travels. We realized that mechanization and automation were working against labour, but we really did not fully appreciate it until we saw it for ourselves.

The members of this committee have seen this from one end of the country to the other. We will report to the Government and we will say that we were there, that we saw what people needed, that we talked with them and listened to their recommendations.

Once again we appreciate your appearance before us this evening. thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, we have one other witness to hear. He is Mr. Jack Johnson, former president of the Company of Young Canadians and he would like to say a few words. He was under the impression that he was too late to present a brief. Mr. Johnson would like to talk to us about legal aid, a subject which interests all of us.

Mr. Jack Johnson: Thank you very much, sir I started working on a brief way back and when I gained the impression that individuals would not be heard so I ceased, that is why I have no brief and I apologize for that.

If I could take the time there are several points I would like to make, one arising out of my legal experience and the other arising out of my Company of Young Canadians experience.

As far as the legal bit, there is little to be said because it is obvious but to a significant section of the population, the underprivileged groups the law and lawyers are not protectors. They are a menacing influence.

They only see the law and lawyers when somebody is taking something from them whether it is their liberty in criminal court or seizing their goods because they haven't paid a finance company or so on. They are always seeing the law from the wrong end and normally they do not have access to the lawyers without paying fees.

There are various arrangements set up by various law societies to cover this but lawyers are generally very careful not to advertise the availability of these and most people who don't have a lot of money in their pockets

would no more go into a lawyer's office than into a doctor's office.

Sitting inside may be a lawyer who is willing to help them and may be willing to do it for nothing but anybody with any pride will not go in unless they can pay so I think we need legal aid available to everybody almost on the same basis as medicare.

One of the most important elements is not so much a lawyer available for a big case but a lawyer available for a simple consultation. When a landlord serves you a notice on the first of June to get out on the thirtieth, is it legal or illegal? You don't need to get a lawyer to give you a great bloody opinion, all you need is ten minutes on the telephone with some lawyer to get an answer but this is not available. In so many cases that is all we need. That is all I have to say about that because to me it is obvious.

The Deputy Chairman: Are you aware, sir, that many provinces have legal aid now?

Mr. Johnson: Yes, but as I say the availability is not advertised and I would be interested to know how many people are aware of it in Alberta or Calgary that there is a civil legal aid plan that was started within the last month. We will just have to see how it works out.

Senator Hastings: Many of the various law students in Montreal and Vancouver and other centres, law students are getting out in the local communities for holding consultations say, just a matter of five minutes and they are able to help these people. Is that not done in Alberta?

Mr. Johnson: I have seen no sign of it here in Alberta. This started in some of the bigger cities in the east.

Senator Inman: Halifax as well.

Mr. Johnson: There is a question of money here. In some of the big New York law firms that you know do people going on making it a condition that that firm pay so that they can spend twenty percent of their time in low income districts working for nothing.

That is a condition of their employment. In effect then, those big wealthy firms are doing what they should do in my opinion anyway. They are returning some of this wealth in the form of services.

That hasn't hit Alberta, to my knowledge.

The Deputy Chairman: Are you saying that it has been organized now in Alberta?

Mr. Johnson: There is a civil legal aid plan starting in Calgary this month and we have yet to see how well it will work. I am sure it will be an improvement. My point is that the advertising has to be made available in almost a decentralized basis.

This should be done instead of some lawyer hiding down in the mobile tower or something like that.

The Deputy Chairman: Are they ready to advertize now or do you think they are just in the organization stage?

Mr. Johnson: If it is like in previous plans, there won't be any advertising.

The Deputy Chairman: Right.

Mr. Johnson: My only point really concerning my CYC experience interesting, tempestuous and short though it was, is this. To me, the crux of the whole problem—I hate cliches but I can sum it up in a cliché.

The problem is that we have a lonely crowd in a rip-off society and to me it is just that simple. By lonely crowd, I mean there are people with problems all over the place but they do not trust each other and do not communicate with each other.

We learned this morning apparently that the Mayor is indicating that low income working people are very tired of having welfare people on their backs. This is ridiculous. Those people should be making a common cause against what is keeping them down but they are hostile to each other. To me that is absolutely shocking, each sitting off in his own corner suffering instead of getting together.

The rip-off society I think is obvious to anybody because that is exactly what it is. That is the spirit of private enterprise; you take what you can get whether you are RCA Victor looking for a cost plus contract or the Canadian government all the way down the line.

Whether it is an industry dumping mercury in Howe Sound not giving a damn about other people whose livelihood or fishing livelihood depends on it.

This is a rip-off society. You take you know, nothing is given to you. You take in society. Okay, how do you take? You need

power. Now, the big people in society learned this long ago and they got together so you have the Canadian Bar Association, the Canadian Manufacturers Association the Chamber of Commerce and so on.

They learned years ago that there is a power in numbers and of course they have an added advantage. They have a power in money too. To come even close to countering all of this you need group power among low incomes, disadvantaged groups. Well, how do you get it? This is where our educators come in and apparently our Mayor was unhappy this morning. They are needed to try to break down the barriers of the lonely crowd and get people working together. When they are together they have a bit of power.

We finally got some housing action in this city when we finally did get the people together and we frightened a few politicians. That's power. That is the name of the game.

Now, at one time the Company of Young Canadians was a partial answer here in that it sent people out to various communities, their way was paid, and they started to talk to people trying to break down these barriers—getting them to work together. It was a great idea, terrific.

Unfortunately, the CYC is now suffering from a disease called bureaucratitis and whether it will survive is doubtful. It may at the very least be maimed if not totally ill.

We have to go a step further and get away from this inevitable Ottawa bureaucracy instead of giving money to CYC volunteers to go into these communities, perhaps we could give money directly to communities who in turn would hire their own volunteers, adjutors or whatever you want to call them.

This is what I call the seed money concept. You plant a little bit of money; you give a thousand dollars to a community. It is not very much, peanuts. We spent thirteen million dollars fitting up a ship which is in the junkyard right now, so you give a thousand here and two thousand there and let these people work it out themselves to some extent.

This has worked terrifically well with the Indians in the Province of Alberta. They got some seed money and that seed has flourished.

I call this the rip-off society and I think that's got to change and I think it's going to be a little slow in changing. It is going to

change because of the environmental program.

We are all going to start suffering very quickly if we don't get onto this problem and the solutions, if there are any at all, is no growth.

No growth population, no growth in business, no growth in industry. That is what we have to come to in North America because we can't go on breeding our environment, breeding more people, breeding more industry, taking more resources that are not renewable so it is obvious, any fool can see it.

We have to change the society so it is based on no growth. You know now GNP is everything. Well, the only good thing about gross national product is that it measured the grossness of things so this is going to make your job, Honourable Senators, even more important because if we have a no growth society that would mean no more jobs next year than this year so what are we going to do with the people that are unemployed or under-employed right now?

I am afraid I have no answer but I just know that some of the economists who are always working on yesterday's problems better start thinking of tomorrow's problem before we all die of affixiation or thirst or something like that.

I finish from a little statement from J. P.

Galbraith's—I don't really know why the committee was sent out here because it is all really written, it is all obvious you could find the research already as to what is wrong but Galbraith said:

Look, let's stop using sociology as a substitute for taxation. Money is not going to cure poverty for sure.

The Deputy Chairman: Who said that, please?

Mr. Johnson: Galbraith; but the lack of money is going to mean it is impossible to cure poverty so as a start try putting some more money down where it will help. The seed money concept but make it larger. Thank you very much, senators.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Mr. Johnson. What you have told us will be made part of the record.

I would like a motion from the committee to incorporate in the record a brief which we received today but which was not presented by anyone. There was no one here to present it. It is from the Calgary Labour Council.

Senator Fergusson: I so move, Mr. Chairman.

Hon. Senators: Agreed.

The Deputy Chairman: The meeting is adjourned.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

CITY OF CALGARY

BRIEF TO SENATE POVERTY COMMITTEE

Presented:

July 20, 1970

Calgary, Alberta

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Part I

Introduction

Discussion

Recommendations

Appendix A: Some Views on Poverty: Excerpts
From Interviews With Individuals
and Families in Calgary

Appendix B: Analysis of Social Assistance
Data: Comparison of New Appli-
cants for May 1969 and May 1970

Part II

1. Introduction

2. Submission by Alderman E. Musgreave

3. Submission by Alderman R. Greene

Introduction

What the City of Calgary has to present to your study is modest, but we think informative and, hopefully, helpful to your deliberations. What has been done is to present (1) some reflections of people engaged in actually working with the poor, (2) excerpts of interviews with persons suffering from the condition of poverty, and (3) a comparative profile for persons applying for financial aid and (4) some recommendations which you may consider in your search for the answer to eliminating poverty.

Also included are individual submissions of two Calgary Aldermen which provide a direct view of these elected City representatives. This brief includes the thoughts, attitudes and opinions of several individuals and thus may appear to be rambling and in places even contradictory. For this we ask your indulgence. The brief is presented to you in the hope that it, together with submissions from other individuals and groups across the country, will provide you with the information you need to find answers and solutions to the poverty situation that exists in Canada.

Discussion

It is difficult to write anything in this submission, gentlemen, that will be new, eye-catching or sensational. It appears to us that there is little new to be written about poverty, a fact with which you are surely familiar from the multitude of submissions already presented in your extensive study. Essentially we believe that we need

not more words, but ACTION. We hope that your study will result in carefully considered solutions and the impetus, compassion and power to see that these solutions are implemented.

You are aware of the statistics on unemployment and the numbers of working poor: those with inadequate incomes to support their families.¹ We wonder, however, if all people see behind these statistics the human misery, the isolation, alienation and often desperation of the human beings who are the "statistics". We hope you see and understand the permanent scarring and the enormous loss of dignity of the people who live in circumstances of poverty. This to us must be included in any definition of poverty. In the words of one of the persons interviewed, it also means a "lack of interest in living,"² and carries with it "social and psychological effects."

The causes of poverty are myriad, and would appear to include a lack of education and vocational skills, illness--physical and mental, the subtle inequalities of justice, discrimination in employment practices, and old age. It is a well known fact that poverty breeds itself, that depressed areas and depressed persons, like our native peoples, are more subject to poverty. A changing society that asks for more technological skills and less agrarian skills produces poverty for many. Crises, like death, or unemployment

-
1. One-quarter of our population earns below \$4,000 annually.
 2. This quote and all subsequent ones, unless otherwise indicated, are from the interviews in Appendix A.

due to seasonal weather conditions, result in poverty. There are few people in this country who have not felt some effects of inflation. Many have felt the effect of the fight against inflation through job loss. Family size can contribute to poverty as can rents that seem to increase monthly and swallow money that might go to other necessities. And we would be remiss not to suggest that the basic economic planning of this country should assign a higher priority to the solution of people problems.

It is apparent that much more needs to be done for immigrants who come to Canada. It seems that they are often misinformed, as in the case of Mr. A., certified as an electrician in his home country. He was unable to qualify for Canadian papers and no help was extended to him to upgrade his education to Canadian standards or to help him with his language difficulties so as to enable him to take the written test required by the apprenticeship board. He says "I came to Canada to make a new life. I knew I would have to start again and I don't mind, if Canada would provide me with a decent job."

It is apparent that poverty is more likely to occur when a man over 40 loses his job. Mr. B. says "It has got to the point where if you are over 40 they don't want you." "Anybody such as types like me in the older ages, companies will not hire you because you are over 40." Men in this age group are often blocked in the kind of work they can accept because sometimes they are not suitable for manual labor. They do often have, however, excellent experience and proven reliability.

It seems essential to allow people to work as they can and supplement their incomes, i.e. incapacitated persons who are able to work part days or two or three days a week. Mr. B. says "There is no reason why I couldn't work. I could be working four or five hours every day." Some of those interviewed showed, however, a dislike for the idea of a guaranteed annual income or "handout" as they often put it. "I have never liked the idea of getting anything for nothing. There is no reason why there couldn't be enough work for the population of Canada." And again, "Most of the people who have money, have earned it. I don't begrudge it to them." "Some people think that with this guaranteed income, some people are not going to work but I think that the average person would prefer to work than have a guaranteed income or be on social assistance; that people would rather work and be productive."

Many of the people that were interviewed see a need for retraining, both men and women: "I feel that an education for my husband and I would be necessary."

Problems of the aged are widely recognized. "I think this is the most pitiful thing in Canada. It is a disgrace to the country. When you were young, you had youth and you could get out, but the old folks can't." One old age pensioner when asked what he would do if he had more money said he would like to get around the country more, perhaps take a bus and go as far as Strathmore (which is located 25 miles east of our city).

A man on old age assistance says "I haven't got anything

left and it's the start of the month." He claims he drinks to pass the time of day and spends time walking the streets. He has nothing else to do but stay in his room and estimates that a lot of his friends are in the same circumstances. He says he would like to be in a nicer place but his room was the best he could afford on his meager pension.

The province of Alberta has some of the best legislation on this continent for the provision of social assistance and allowance. It is apparent, however, that poverty exists in Alberta. We would suggest that a social allowance system, no matter how well legislated and administered, is not a solution to poverty. It is necessary in some form, administered in a most human way, for some people, but must not be construed as a solution to the massive problem of poverty.

Recommendations

The following recommendations have been arrived at as a result of our personal interviews with citizens of Calgary and as a result of an examination of the statistical data on social assistance appended.

1. That primary importance be given to the whole area of job training, job retraining and job creation; that more emphasis be placed in all educational and training institutions on improving the career guidance programs so that the experiences of the

graduates of those institutions will more adequately equip them for the job market. This must be done on a massive scale and must include adequate wages during retraining. We see opportunity for job creation for present poverty victims in the areas of anti-pollution and development of increased resources for use of leisure time, i.e. recreational facilities--national and provincial parks, forestry areas, etc.

2. That as a test of the federal government's success in publicizing the problems of the poor in Canada and gaining acceptance of action by the Canadian public, at the end of the fiscal year 1970-71 each and every Canadian be requested, voluntarily, to contribute an additional \$1.00 in income tax. These monies would then be used to create employment for middle-aged "unemployed employable" men currently in receipt of public assistance. And, further, that these jobs be created in the field of air and water anti-pollution programs initiated by the federal government.
3. That the full amount raised by the \$1.00 additional income tax contributions be matched on a dollar for dollar basis by the federal government, and that this amount also be used in the suggested anti-pollution programs.
4. That immediate action be taken to more adequately provide for old age pensioners, war pensioners and

other persons on fixed incomes. This should include increased financial aid (to meet economic needs) and increased social resources, like drop-in centres where meals and social activities are available, to meet the social and psychological needs of these people.

5. That special consideration be given to employment of the man over 40 - 45 years of age. Increased consideration must be given to the experience and reliability of this age group and less to such discriminating factors as private or company pension schemes.
6. That more help be extended to immigrants to Canada in the form of language classes and other acculturation programs. Foreign trade and professional credentials must be evaluated and the immigrant helped to meet Canadian standards where he is deficient.
7. That where a person is only able to work part-time, he be encouraged to do so and not forced into greater dependency.
8. That the minimum wage be increased for the benefit of the "working poor."
9. That careful consideration must be given to the form, implementation and implications of a guaranteed annual income. We submit that most people do not want a "handout" but rather jobs and the dignity that accompanies a state of employment.

10. That the members of the Senate Poverty Committee closely consider the suggestion that elimination of poverty can be accomplished only if a majority of Canadian citizens in cooperation with all levels of government designate this as the major national goal.

Special Senate Committee

APPENDIX A

Some Views on Poverty: Excerpts From
Interviews With Individuals and Families in Calgary

NOTE: The following excerpts have been extracted from a number of interviews conducted in Calgary during the month of July, 1970 by City of Calgary Social Service Department staff. Those interviewed included several persons currently in receipt of public assistance or persons on the street, picked at random primarily in East Calgary. The interviewers encouraged spontaneous comments focussed on the following questions:

1. What is poverty? (Who are the poor?)
2. Do we have it in Calgary?
3. Why do we have it?
4. What can be done about it?

These interviews form the basis of many of the views presented in the main body of this brief and a vote of sincere thanks is expressed to both the interviewers and the respondents.

* * * * *

Mr. A.: Situation: European immigrant (five years ago); six non-dependent children; lives with dependent wife; age - 45 years; trained as electrician (nine years of classes and apprenticeship period); good physical health, but on "tranquilizers" for "bad nerves"; has been in receipt of full public assistance allowance for nine months of past year.

Respondent: At the moment I have just about lived one year on welfare except for three months I went out and worked. The money I receive is not enough to live on. I am just alone with my wife. The money I receive and the price nowadays you don't get a decent meal three times a day. If you count the other expenses you have you don't have money for it. You don't have money to buy any clothes even though the Social Service allows for clothing money because of the high prices of food; so what is left? Nothing! I remember reading somewhere in the paper that couples can live on \$400.00 a month, and I receive only \$200.00 a month. There are other things, and I am just about ready to have a nervous breakdown.

Interviewer: You feel now that you are just about to that point?

Respondent: Oh yes. I have to take tranquilizers three times a day to keep me going. I have applied for many jobs and have walked through every company in town. First of all I am 45 years old and the first thing they tell you is that you are too old. People like to hire employees who will work for less.

.....

I have a brother who is 60% invalid. He got a job for only four hours a day but doesn't make enough money, and if he doesn't get any work for a couple of days, then the office (welfare) should supply the rest of the money so he at least feels that he is doing some good in earning some of his living. Otherwise this guy says he makes \$20.00 a week and the welfare gives him \$30.00 a week so then it only cost the City \$10.00 a week. So this guy feels he earns most of his living, yet the City helps him a little bit.

Interviewer: You are talking about what we call our guaranteed income which we don't really have in Canada but what they talk about starting. They talk about moving towards this type of thing and do you think it would be good?

Respondent: Oh yes.

Interviewer: How would it work for someone in your circumstances?

Respondent: Say if I can work two days a week I feel much better, but all I can do now is just sit down, do some work around the house, and sit down and watch T.V. I am in good health and I want to work but can't find a job.

.....

Interviewer: Did you have a trade when you came to Canada?

Respondent: Yes, I was an electrician for 23 years and I got my trade by going to school for nine years; then I came over to Canada. I spoke no English so I took any job for labor. After three months I went to the Apprenticeship Board and they wouldn't recognize my papers. I wrote a test and failed because I don't know enough of the language, so they gave me temporary papers for three months and these papers all they wanted to pay me was \$2.00 an hour while the regular ones got \$4.00. They wanted me to go back to school at Tech for four years. I couldn't go to school because I was married and had two kids but still I would go to school at night. Many immigrants from the old country have the same problem.

.....

Special Senate Committee

Interviewer: If you go to Canada Manpower they apparently do job retraining and job training so will they help you as far as getting your Canadian Certificate?

Respondent: The doctor and my social worker both arranged for Canada Manpower to get in touch with me but they didn't so I phoned them about every week till I'm sure they are fed up with me. I keep phoning. I came to Canada to make a new life. I knew I would have to start again and don't mind it if Canada would provide me with a decent job. Some times we feel just like D.P.'s because lots of companies use discrimination which isn't only my feeling but of many immigrants.

.....

Respondent: Yes, even though we have had many ups and downs I feel that I am a Canadian. I would like to make a living in Canada. I want to stay in Canada and I don't want to go back. What I like is the decent life.

* * * * *

Mr. B.: Situation: 51 years; wife deceased (six years ago); one daughter, non-dependent (has University degree and works in another province); licensed mechanic (Canadian) but unable to get job due to insufficient skills with automatic transmissions of late model; lives alone in light housekeeping accommodation; has been on full public assistance for six years.

Interviewer: Is there poverty in Calgary?

Respondent: Definitely.

Interviewer: Where?

Respondent: Anybody such as types like me in the older ages where a lot of companies will not hire you because you are too old. It has got to the point that if you are over 40 they don't want you.

Interviewer: How old are you?

Respondent: Fifty-one--which is my biggest problem. I can't go into the manual labor anymore or I could probably with a pick and shovel which I can't do.

Interviewer: So you are blocked two ways as far as age is concerned--in the kind of work you can take and in the company which will hire you because of age. Why do they say they won't take you when you are 51?

Respondent: I have had a few places tell me no I was too old, that they wanted a young man to do the work but he had to have the same experience that I had which I can't see how they can get the experience.

Interviewer: What do you think we can do about poverty to help people who are living in poor circumstances?

Respondent: Myself I can't see this idea of guaranteeing their wage.

Interviewer: You have heard about this guaranteed annual income?

Respondent: I can't see how this can help because I have found myself you are only going to get paid what you are worth regardless. It is going to be up to the people to earn the money to work and to learn their particular trade and eventually produce more, making their labor more valuable to the company.

Interviewer: What things could or should be done for people in circumstances like yours?

Respondent: Try and find work of some kind if they can't do hard labor. There is no reason why I couldn't. I could be working for four or five hours every day for the City even if it is a case of paper work.

Interviewer: So you don't like the system as it exists right now?

Respondent: I have never liked the idea of getting anything for nothing, and then with me in the last depression right through the 30's I never got anything, and if I wanted two bits to go to town on Saturday night, I had to work for it before I could go. There is no reason why there couldn't be enough work for the population of Canada.

Interviewer: Can you define for me poverty or being poor and what it is to be poor?

Respondent: Not enough money to look after your every day needs such as food, housing and medical care. That is the money part of it--financial poverty. The poverty is not having anything. A lot of people have different beliefs, different things they enjoy doing and are not able to do that. When they haven't the money to look after themselves then they can't enjoy themselves. It's not only just the lack of money, it's the lack of being interested in living. Just the case of acting the same as a cat or dog as long as you get your meal every day, that is all you want.

Special Senate Committee

Interviewer: Something to do with the way you feel, not just what you earn?

Respondent: The feeling you have when you can't do anything, you can't get further ahead than you are in the education and though the government goes actually as far as they can. I wish it would be compulsory that you have to get your grade 12 or senior matric.

* * * * *

Mr. C.: Situation: 42 years; married with two dependent children; grade 12 education; worked for 15 years in grocery business; health problem initially caused unemployment; has been on assistance for six weeks.

Interviewer: We were just wondering what you think poverty is.

Respondent: As I said a minute ago, it's not just being on welfare: there are people who are working who are poor, who don't earn enough to support themselves the way they would like to. I think this might be my definition--when you think of the word poverty you think of people living in slums with no food or nothing.

Interviewer: In other words not enough money.

Respondent: Yes, not enough money to support your family the way they should or could be supported and I don't mean fancy clothes and fancy cars. I mean never enough food or clothes. I have been on social assistance for six weeks now and have never considered myself in the situation of poverty although between unemployment insurance and social assistance we're sure not living the high on the hog. I guess that is my definition of poverty: not being able to support yourself.

Interviewer: It's sort of what you see around you.

Respondent: Yes, that's right. Of course, everything is relative and I consider myself poor right now because my total allowances are something like \$350.00 a month and I have three children. I consider myself poor and yet I can think of a lot poorer people.

Interviewer: When you were working were you in better circumstances?

Respondent: For the last few years I have never had a job which paid less than \$400.00 or \$450.00 so we are subsisting on about a hundred dollars or so a month less than we used to when I was working and then I would have considered a high wage earning around \$450.00.

Interviewer: What do you think causes poverty or what are some of the reasons of people being poor?

Respondent: Some people are poor that I have seen because they have no ambition that if they could come here or collect unemployment insurance all their life they would be quite happy. One of the causes is that people don't care and then there are others who do. Lack of ambition would be one. Some people think it is God's will that they are going to be poor and never be rich. I used to be a salesman and have read lots of sales books and this is true that people do think this way. You can call it destiny if you like or God's will that the fact is that you are always going to be poor and not rich, but this is not so.

Interviewer: What about the people you referred to earlier, the ones who aren't on assistance?

Respondent: Probably a lack of education to do with a job that pays better as this day and age you almost have to have a grade 12 to do anything to work with the City even. What used to be called ordinary jobs which anyone could get no matter what education they had now require better education. Even though they are capable to do the job they can't because they lack the education.

.....
Interviewer: What do you think could be done about it? Especially if we have these conditions in great numbers of people in these circumstances?

Respondent: I really don't know. It is pretty easy to blame the government.

Interviewer: How is the government to blame? What should the government be doing or what is it doing now to cause poverty?

Respondent: This inflation drive is causing unemployment.

Interviewer: Is this what you got caught in--this inflation?

Respondent: Right. Then, of course, in my particular case it goes back to the education thing. My health problem is now cured and now I walk into people who might hire me, but I'm not allowed to because I'm 42 years old and the pension plan says 35 is the limit.

* * * * *

Mr. and Mrs. D.:

Situation: Mr. D. 45 years; married; five dependent children; grade 6 education; husband has history of steady employment as truck driver, but wage has never adequately supported family; presently in receipt of

supplemental public assistance because wages are not high enough to support his family. Husband's present attitude towards this situation is summed up by his statement: "I want to supplement my own income and not have someone else do it."

Interviewer: What would you say poverty is? Who would you say the poor people are?

Husband: Right here! (Thumped table)

Interviewer: Okay, if you don't have enough food to eat, you're poor. Is this what you are saying?

Wife: Well, making ends meet, you know.

Husband: If a person like a pensioner has sufficient money, he is able to buy his food but his pension isn't that good so he can buy and with the way rents are he has to live in say a slum district which you can see down in southeast Calgary or you used to be able to and I don't think it has changed that much.

Interviewer: So that you say that just because you can afford to buy enough food to eat doesn't mean that you're not poor.

Husband: No, no, I mean you got to have the necessities besides.

Interviewer: What are the necessities?

Husband: Well, you got to have a sufficient amount of money for medical, for education for your children and a lot of people can't even get that in this country, on too good a standard.

Interviewer: So, in Canada what makes somebody poor? Who would the poor be in Canada?

Husband: Well, a person that's not making a livable wage.

Interviewer: A livable wage, and a livable wage guarantees what? Or should guarantee what?

Husband: Should guarantee, well not in my case because I owe money. But if I was making this wage that I am, it should guarantee me rent, food, clothing, all the necessities to exist on and have some left over. That is what everybody should have, and I feel that you read about it in the paper. In India, the Eskimos, and other people, they don't have that either.

Husband: I don't think that old age pensioners have sufficient to live on. Look at those old women here that the Mayor went to bat for not too long ago. They were in an apartment. They were going to be kicked out or their rent was going to be raised double, or something like this. They couldn't afford it on the pension they were making, they weren't living in that good a house to start with.

.....

Husband: Like I'm making right now \$312.00. As of yesterday, I'm making another 5% more. The wages are good but after deductions it's not so much as you plan on. You know, as soon as you're in another wage bracket, of course your taxes go up that much higher. There are farmers in this province that are pretty hard up, that are poor. Maybe not through their own efforts but their condition.

Interviewer: What kind of condition?

Husband: Lack of sales--they can't sell their product. They're financially poor but they're not materially poor.

.....

Interviewer: You were talking about what a livable wage should guarantee. What should it guarantee?

Husband: We said it should guarantee the necessities of life.

Interviewer: Should it guarantee anything else but the necessities of life?

Husband: Yes.

Interviewer: What?

Husband: A few luxuries I should imagine.

Interviewer: What kind of luxuries is everybody entitled to have?

Wife: To be able to go out once in a while.

Husband: Maybe to have a holiday, and that includes everybody.

Interviewer: You don't really know what?

Husband: I don't really know what to say.

Interviewer: About what poverty is?

Husband: I know I'm financially up against it, but I don't know what other people's positions are.

Interviewer: Okay, you know that you're financially up against it. Does this mean you're poor?

Husband: It means a hardship for me.

Interviewer: It means a hardship, but you wouldn't class yourself in the poverty level?

Husband: Maybe I'm a little proud but I don't think I would.

Interviewer: Okay. Who is?

Husband: Like I said, I think old age pensioners, war pensioners, and Indians, and some types of farmers.

Interviewer: The ones raising wheat or others as well?

Husband: Others as well if there's no market for their product.

Interviewer: Okay, why are old age pensioners poor?

Husband: I don't think they get sufficient pension.

Interviewer: From the government? What should be done about it? Do you think they should get more?

Husband: Yes. Don't you?

Interviewer: Mm-hmm, I suppose.

Husband: Why shouldn't they?

Interviewer: Well, if they can't make a living, what kind of a living should they be guaranteed?

Husband: A good one. They shouldn't have to live in slum areas, and they should have adequate financial support for the rest of the things they require.

Interviewer: And war pensioners?

Husband: The same thing. (Well, they kind of earned this??)

Interviewer: Who else would you say was poor? You said something about age being a barrier in getting further education, which often limited the type of job you have. What can be done about that or what do you think should be done about that?

Husband: Well, the way they put it, it sounds very reasonable, that at my age I have to have three year's apprenticeship at a low rate so I would have sufficient money to support the family.

Interviewer: This sounds reasonable?

Wife: I don't know what to say.

Interviewer: It's a hard problem to figure out which is why I guess they have senators roaming all over the countryside asking everybody.

* * * * *

Mr. E.: Situation: 65 years; pensioner; single; lives alone in a small apartment in downtown Calgary.

Interviewer: Can you describe for me your room?

Respondent: My room, I got a two-room suite. One part is the kitchen part, the other part is where I sleep, kind of a bedroom.

Interviewer: What does it cost you a month?

Respondent: It costs me \$40.00.

Interviewer: I see. You're a pensioner, aren't you?

Respondent: Yes, I'm a pensioner.

Interviewer: How much do you get a month?

Respondent: \$111.41.

Interviewer: And how do you find you can live on that?

Respondent: It's very hard. I can just barely get by on that.

Interviewer: What do you spend your money on?

Respondent: Well, food besides the room rent, a few clothes, the odds here and there as to recreation. Once in a while I go to the bar and have a couple of beers and probably go someplace on a Sunday, maybe the Zoo.

Interviewer: How do you spend your day? What do you do on a normal day?

Respondent: I don't play pool, I do a lot of reading.

Interviewer: Can you describe for me a normal day--what you would do, let's say what have you got planned today?

Respondent: Today, I'll have to go to the welfare.

Interviewer: Why do you have to go to the welfare?

Respondent: Well, they're gonna have to pay my room for the month.

Interviewer: Is your cheque late?

Respondent: My cheque was stolen out of my room.

Interviewer: I see. How do you like the people down here? The people you live with?

Respondent: Well, I like them all fine. I don't see anything wrong with them. A little drinking and going on is pretty usual in pretty near every apartment.

Interviewer: Oh?

Respondent: I do some myself.

Interviewer: Why do you drink?

Respondent: Just to pass the time I imagine.

Interviewer: Do you find it hard to fill your time?

Respondent: Yes I do. I have an awful time and I'm kind of a restless fellow. Get tired of walking the streets.

Interviewer: Do you find that most of your days are spent walking the streets?

Respondent: Yes. Nothing else to do but stay in your room like you caught me now.

Interviewer: Do you find that a lot of your friends down here do the same thing you do in a day?

Respondent: Yes. I do.

Interviewer: Why is that--do you think?

Respondent: Nothing to do.

.....
Interviewer: How long have you been on pension?

Respondent: Well, I'm going on 66. Since March, I was 65 on March 27.
.....

Interviewer: How much money would you have left over after you paid your rent and bought your food to have for yourself for maybe clothes or for some entertainment, going to the bar, maybe?

Respondent: Well, I haven't got anything left. I haven't got anything left as far as that goes, I'm broke now.

Interviewer: And it's the start of the month.

Respondent: And it's the start of the month.

Interviewer: Do you find that happens often?

Respondent: Well, it happens every month on the pension that you're getting.
.....

Interviewer: If you had your choice, would you like to live down here or maybe would you like to live in a nicer place?

Respondent: I would like a nicer place, sure, if I could afford it, but this is the best I could afford at the present.

Interviewer: Do you find that it's the same case with most of your friends? Because they have to?

Respondent: Absolutely. Because they have to. They can't live in some of them over-expensive apartments.

Interviewer: Would you say you are poor?

Respondent: I'm poor. Yes. Poor as can be.

Interviewer: What could be done to make your life a little better for you?

Respondent: Well, for one thing, you could raise the pension about \$25.00 a month.

Interviewer: And then you would have more money to...like what things would you like to do?

Respondent: Well, I would like to get around the country more. Maybe take a bus once in a while, go as far as at least Strathmore.

Interviewer: Right. Do you have any relatives outside of Calgary?

Respondent: No. They are all in another province.

Interviewer: Do you think there are a lot of guys like you that are poor?

Respondent: Well, they're all poor that stay here in these apartments. They haven't got, well, it makes it hard to make two ends meet.

* * * * *

Mrs. F.: Situation: Married; mid-fifties; lives with husband who takes home \$50.00 a month; has never been in receipt of public assistance; Mr. and Mrs. F. live together in a two-room flat in a low-cost tenement complex.

Interviewer: You say you lived in another province and have travelled. Do you think that Calgary has more poverty than other places.

Respondent: Well, there are a lot of people on welfare here but they claim that the welfare in another province is better. They obtain more money, so I have heard. I think the big mistake is that they should encourage people on welfare to work and not cut them back until they become established on their feet. I have heard that those who have had a few days work have been cut off, and it is easy to run far behind in clothing and the essentials.

Interviewer: Do you think that there are more poor people in Calgary now than there have been in the past?

Respondent: When I came here I heard how rich this province is, but I couldn't see it because I have seen so many poor people. The whole town looked run down to me, it was supposed to have such rich oil fields, wheat fields and beef country but you would never know it by looking around Calgary about 16 years ago, and I still think there are a lot of poor people. You go uptown and look around and there are people dressed shabby and poorly.

.....

Interviewer: What about old age pensioners?

Respondent: I think that that is the most pitiful thing of Canada. I think that is a disgrace to the country. I think that this giving them a dollar and a half because something went up a few cents in price, I think that is really terrible. The old age pensioners are something that really should be looked into. When you were young you had youth and you could get out but the old folks can't.

* * * * *

Mrs. G.: Situation: Married; 45 years; living with one dependent child and husband (50 years); Mrs. G. has grade 12 plus one year of university. The family has been in receipt of public assistance for the last two months and on a previous occasion for one year continuously.

Respondent: Poverty means to me a lack of money for the basic needs of a family. In my particular case it is lack of employment for my husband that we are on social assistance and lack of the basic needs such as rent, medical needs and food. I don't think it needs to apply to color T.V. or something like that. The reason we are in the position that we are is lack of employment for my husband and the reasons for his unemployment is that he had a serious drinking problem and had rehabilitation for it and since he came out of the rehabilitation centre eight months ago, he has yet to find employment and yet he has, I would say, a fairly good education, first year university, and 16 years as an army officer and still this doesn't warrant him finding employment at this time.

.....

Interviewer: Do you know many other families on assistance?

Respondent: Yes. I believe that two of my friends who are also on social assistance have the same ideas that I do on it as we have discussed it about the basic needs of a family and I'm not sure that a basic income by the government is the answer or where cases like my husband could be trained and support themselves. I feel that even for wives that are divorced and the children are grown that going back to school and getting retraining is a good idea. In my particular case I would like to be retrained as a secretary and this would help our family situation, too, if Manpower would retrain me.

Respondent: I think that there are many people caught in the economic squeeze of basic wage where there is a large family. It can be classified as the near poor which is the same situation that I am in. I feel that families in that situation should be subsidized in some form by the government. I think that Canada as a country is the best place to live and that families shouldn't have to be at the poverty level because this effects them economically, socially and definitely psychologically and if you don't have a healthy mind and body you certainly can't be a productive worker.

Interviewer: So you feel that poverty not only exists in families on assistance but also for many other people?

Respondent: I believe that a lot of Canadians are at the minimum wage rate and there are families that don't have advantages and families that have more and still the father or mother in the family might be working. I feel that the minimum wage is far too low for the economy of the country.

Interviewer: What would you say is the annual wage which puts one at poverty level?

Respondent: Less than \$5,000 take home a year.

Interviewer: Have you any ideas as to what things could be done to better the economy and also what changes could be made for someone in the position that you are in to help the situation.

Respondent: I feel that labor and government are somehow going to have to get together and have better communication on what they want the country to be and what they want for the people of Canada. Just how they are going to go about it I am not too sure. In relationship to our particular situation I feel that education for my husband and I would be an asset for us and maybe this applies to many people.

Respondent: I certainly feel that people on old age pension, the majority of them went through depression and at that time didn't have time to build up anything for their old age and certainly they require more money to live at a level that would be satisfactory in the economy of the country right now.

.....

Interviewer: Have you any thoughts on guaranteed income?

Respondent: I haven't really come to any decision on guaranteed income but maybe this is the answer. How are they going to decide? Is it going to again be on a means test of people who are going to be on a guaranteed income? I think there should be an income level for everyone but not sure about how to go about this. Some people think that with this some people are not going to work but I think that the average person would prefer to work than have a guaranteed income or be on social assistance that they would rather work and be a productive person.

Interviewer: What about our present tax system?

Respondent: I think there should be a fixed income that they can gage their income by. People on the minimum wage I don't feel should pay income tax.

.....

Interviewer: What are the most urgent changes that need to be made in regard to poverty?

Respondent: In my particular case I would say re-education and training. This is where the fixed income would come in for people, say the blind or disabled veterans or people who periodically are unable to work at any employment. Their assistance could be raised to the level where they have a decent living. I feel that people on assistance do receive good counselling to help people retain their human dignity. I feel that counselling is a very important field for people who are poor.

.....

APPENDIX B

Analysis of Social Assistance Data:Comparison of New Applicants for May 1969 and May 1970

This brief survey was conducted to provide some current factual information of persons who may be classified as so-called "poor", and to determine, by comparison, if any significant differences are evident between "new social assistance applicants" for the time periods May 1969 and May 1970.

The population sample consisted of all those persons who for the first time requested and received social assistance from our Social Service Department during May of 1969 and May of 1970. There were 62 applicants during May of 1969, as compared to 212 applicants for May of 1970. Of significance is the fact that this represents an increase of over 300%.

A statistical breakdown of these new applicants, noting their age, marital status, educational level, trade skills and reasons for assistance are summarized in TABLE I. Due to the relatively small population sampled, and as no specific statistical tests were used to determine significant differences, the information contained in TABLE I must be viewed with certain reservations.

The data on the age factor reveals that 38 (18%) out of 212 applicants were 19 years or under, an increase of about 12% over the 1969 period. Difficulty in finding jobs may perhaps account for this increase.

In reference to the educational level, an arbitrary line was chosen between those people leaving school after grade nine and those leaving before. Grade ten is generally recognized as a minimum qualification for entrance into vocational training and apprenticeship trades. One half of the population sampled had some formal high school education, while approximately 40% had a grade nine education or less.

The data on occupational status reveals that approximately 50% of the persons were unskilled, as compared to 25% who stated they had certain occupational skills.

The unemployment factor was given as the main reason for requesting social assistance; 50% and 66% for 1969 and 1970 respectively. Mothers with dependent children were the second largest category receiving assistance. A slight increase (6%) will be noted for those employed but receiving an insufficient income to meet basic needs.

Special Senate Committee

TABLE I: General Characteristics of New Applicants
For May 1969 and May 1970

	1969		1970	
	No. = 62	%	No. = 212	%
<u>AGE: (M and F)</u>				
19 and under	4	6.4	38	17.9
20 - 29	26	41.9	91	42.8
30 - 39	16	25.8	47	22.1
40 - 49	11	17.7	22	10.3
<u>MARITAL STATUS:</u>				
Married	23	37.0	84	39.6
Never Married	12	19.3	66	31.1
Deserted	12	19.3	21	9.9
Mutual Separation	7	11.1	17	8.4
<u>EDUCATIONAL LEVEL:</u>				
Grade 9 or less	24	38.7	84	39.6
High School	33	53.2	107	50.4
University	1	1.6	13	6.1
<u>TRADE SKILL:</u>				
No Trade	26	41.9	119	56.1
Commercial	1	1.6	16	7.5
Other Skill	15	24.1	53	25.0
<u>REASON FOR ASSISTANCE:</u>				
Unemployed	31	50.0	140	66.0
Mother with dependent children	12	19.3	26	12.2
Physical Ill Health	10	16.0	19	8.9
Employed, Insufficient Income	1	1.6	15	7.1

Part II

1. Introduction
2. Submission by Alderman E. Musgreave
3. Submission by Alderman R. Greene

1. Introduction

The following are two personal submissions on specific aspects of poverty submitted by two Calgary aldermen.

2. Brief Analysis of Poverty in Western Canada with Particular Reference to Calgary. (by Alderman Eric Musgreave)

Presuming poverty means in the broadest terms the lack of resources for reasonably comfortable living as defined by Webster one can easily demonstrate that in Western Canada all people do not have the resources for "reasonably comfortable living" whether they are rich or poor.

Assuming that by poverty you do not mean destitution which implies such severe poverty that food, clothing and shelter are inadequate one can then attack poverty in its broadest sense. However, I would first like to deal with those in Western Canada who may be destitute. In norther Alberta and some southern parts of the province Indians and Metis are living under deplorable conditions in rural areas. Life in the cities for some is better physically but also extreme examples of social difficulties resulting in robbery, prostitution or crimes relating to liquor are obvious to anyone who walks our city streets. Analysis by race of the population of our jails bears out the sad facts of life for too many of our native peoples.

There are no destitute people in Calgary who are starving to death, who have no place to sleep or who freeze in the winter because of a lack of clothing. But there were 18,614 persons on welfare in our city as of May 1969.¹

1. Peitchinis, Stephen G., "Why Should Anyone in Calgary Need Aid?", Canadian Welfare, May - June 1969. Volume 45.

A guaranteed annual income, or more government support for such things as day care centres or subsidies for retraining or rehabilitation are all possible as ways of alleviating specific individual cases of hardship. Public housing is greatly needed for the young just starting in life, the old or the parents of one parent families who should not be asked to bear the struggle of property management in addition to their other family burdens, (see attached Table I on public housing or rental subsidy 1967-69). Many of the problems of people on welfare whose outward manifestations receive great play in the press but achieve little else in improving living standards for Canadians could be alleviated by greater emphasis on family planning, financial education and pre-marital education. In my opinion marriage should be made more difficult but divorce easier. While some of these suggestions may be simplistic in nature it is my view that more action programs are needed. With the new breed of social workers being developed less emphasis on expensive academic studies seems to be the norm. To this I say thank heavens.

To return to the broader term of poverty. First I would like to deal with the very rich businessmen or the highly paid professional. Albert enjoys considerable affluence compared to other parts of Canada but with it we have high alcoholism rates, high suicide rates as well as severe mental problems for many. When parents have to turn to drink for solace, because of the demands of their children for cars and educational expenses, or because they are living in homes they cannot afford, or are engaging in social activities that they neither desire or can afford one can see that they do not have "reasonably comfortable living".

The next area of poverty that is not unique to Calgary but is of great concern to all retired people plus those of us who are looking down the pike towards retirement is inflation. People who have retired for the most part have completed their earning phase of their lives. But the cost of living curve and the income curve of pensioners are becoming more divergent every day. Band aid treatments of our senior governments are not good enough. In fact when you reduce my dollar's worth by 5¢ and increase my pension by 1¢ you insult both my intelligence and my dignity as a human being.

At the local level of government we have tried to do something about this. We provide passes for a cost of three dollars to those on government assistance or receiving supplementary pensions. Besides free rides on buses the pass gives you free entry to many civic institutions. Some private companies such as the Husky Tower owners have contributed by granting entry to their facilities by the use of this pass. This system costs the taxpayer of Calgary \$211,680.00 a year. In addition we give a bus pass to everyone over 65 who has lived here a year which entitles them to ride for half fare. This costs the taxpayer \$90,000.00 a year.

Both of these schemes are a concrete example of how a community can help those on fixed incomes. But there are two serious weaknesses in this program. The cost is borne by those same taxpayers through property tax who are on fixed income and if they do not use the services what good is it to them. The other is the danger of using utilities such as a bus system to compensate for deficiencies of community responsibility. The political implications can be horrendous. We try to tidy up

our bookkeeping by charging the social service department and crediting our transit system.

Another area of poverty that is more obvious here than other parts of Canada is the difficulty of helping the Indian bands living west of Calgary. With expanding population of Canada, world wide jet service, they could develop vast tourist facilities. Living between a growing city they find themselves sandwiched between the playgrounds of Canada and rich Calgary, but unable to put their resources to work for the benefit of their people. All Calgarians as we go to the mountains to ski, or swim or hike must have a sense of shame and puzzlement that in the midst of plenty there should be so much poverty. The Indians have been pressured by all kinds of developers for various projects involving their lands and minerals. Too often they are too shy or feel themselves unable to face up to the task of developing their lands' rich reserve for their good. Schemes such as gravel removal or forest recreation, or of tree nurseries to name three that could be the means of improving the physical lot of the Indian bands. But they should keep majority interest in all companies and they should tap the reservoir of skilled business and professional people in Calgary who are more than prepared to give guidance and council for nothing. The alternative is miserable living both on and off what could be a prosperous Indian reservation.

One other area that in my opinion would help to alleviate the problems of poverty in Canada is to provide regional development funds for Alberta. Not for the purpose of building industries in areas where

private enterprise would not develop but for the purpose of bringing more people to our province. I believe it was the Pearson government who suggested bringing maritimers to Central Canada by means of settlement grants and transportation aid. This to me is the most sensible idea to come out of Ottawa and it is regrettable that it seems to be abandoned because of the attacks of the Conservatives. The idea of spending of hundreds of millions on Prince Edward Island when very few want to stay there is nonsense. Far better to turn it into a national shrine or park open six months of the year as a tourist attraction.

In Alberta through support of the Federal and Provincial governments we turn out technicians by the thousands. But they have to go elsewhere for jobs. They leave the prairies and end up either in Ontario, or on the West Coast or down in California. With development of Alberta and British Columbia particular of our natural resources by our own people serving markets of Asia makes far more sense than pouring money into areas that lost their punch with the decline of the sailing ships. But those early Canadians did what I suggest we do. The product was grown by them, they cut the lumber, built the ships and sailed them. All we seem to do is mine the raw product and let other people take all the advantages from this point on.

Members of this inquiry are probably impressed with the outward signs of affluence in our province and our city. But last year the welfare bill in Alberta was 68 million. Because of our buoyant economy we have attracted people from elsewhere. Those who come are sometimes untrained

or poorly skilled, usually the last hired, the first fired. Our province has adopted a preventive welfare program whereby we can help people through projects such as day care centres, family counselling, meals on wheels, etc. with Alberta paying 80% and the City of Calgary 20%. This I believe is the only or the first province to provide such a service. Last year this cost the taxpayer of Calgary \$70,859.00. This is a good example of a government trying to get at the root of our poverty problems. This same government introducing senior citizen homes which provides single garden type apartments that are self-contained or lodge accommodation with meals provided. This has been slowed down somewhat because of our decline in oil revenues but the need is still great because as young people move here from other parts of Canada the parents soon follow.

To sum up the problems of poverty in a nation as diverse as Canada is going to be solved when the politicians accept their responsibility of maintaining the strong parts of Canada of using our human resources where they can be the most effective for the individual or the nation and when we come up with good programs to defend them. When we have more politicians prepared to defend their programs as expressed recently by our Prime Minister then Canada will be doing something about poverty in the midst of plenty.

A P P E N D I X A

TABLE I: Number of Public Housing Units Developed and Proposed
in Calgary

	<u>Number of Units</u>		<u>Proposed</u>
F.P.I. (Churchill Park)	231	Single Family Units	20
Shaganappi Village	245	Semi-Detached Units	<u>222</u>
Pembroke Meadows	27	Sub-Total:	242
Marlborough	26		
Bowness	30		
Glenbrook	30		
Oak Ridge	<u>30</u>		
Sub-Total:	619		

Total: 861

Total Cost Approximately: \$13,000,000.00

3. Report on Housing Before the Senate Commission on Poverty (by Father R.S.H. Greene, Alderman of the City of Calgary)

Honourable Senators, it is indeed a privilege for me to have been asked to present a brief regarding housing on behalf of the City of Calgary before such a distinguished commission as yours.

My experience in dealing with housing problems in Calgary goes back some four years, during the most of which I was Chairman of the Calgary Inter-Faith Community Action Committee's Sub-Committee on housing. My frustration in dealing with landlords and the City of Calgary caused me to run for alderman in last October's civic election, at which time I was successful and now find myself representing Ward 5 in this city.

The fact that there was more public housing built in Prince Edward Island from 1950-65 than there was in all of Alberta is due to the fact that in this 1950-65 period there was not a single unit constructed in this province. Today we possess more enlightened people in office at both the provincial and municipal level and something is now being done. However, because of those long years of neglect, if not downright dereliction of duty, we in Alberta now have a tremendous backlog in the paucity of public housing.

The \$200,000,000 announced by Mr. Andras for experimental housing this past spring has been a step in the right direction and your government has to be commended. We in Calgary are justly proud that the first experimental housing project in Canada financed under this scheme is now under construction here in our

city. Our total applications under this plan call for something like 1,300 units and we are hopeful of obtaining close to 1,000. Public housing is also going ahead. However, despite these improvements in the housing situation, I feel as a parish priest and as an alderman that the dilemma faced by many of our citizens is pretty desperate. For instance, it is estimated that there are between five and six thousand families on welfare here in Calgary. Thus, many people because of the tight money situation, unemployment and other economic factors, are placed in a position where they cannot compete for housing on the private market.

The time has come for us to look upon housing for everyone not as a privilege but as a right and if this is to be implemented then vast amounts of capital will be needed, capital such as Mr. Andras has put into the Experimental Scheme. If we are appalled by the staggering amounts which are needed, then we need to draw some comparisons and see what kind of money we are spending on defence; the Bonaventure and the Hydrofoil being two salient examples which come to mind. I am convinced that if we want to do this, we can; the money is available, it is a question of priorities. Private industry through the private market has shown pretty convincingly that it is quite unable to provide the housing we require if all Canadians are to be decently housed. It is just over a year ago that orderlies in one of our local hospitals were forced to go on strike in order to get \$1.75 per hour. If we can pay wages like this in our civic institutions, than I feel we have

an obligation to see that something is done about the housing of such people. Massive government aid is needed.

Despite the updating of the Alberta Landlord and Tenant Act in April of this year by our Provincial Legislature, there are still major inequities. Gouging landlords continue to graze on the fields of powerless tenants. While I realize that this is a matter which we must deal with mainly on a provincial level, I also feel that the Dominion Government, through C.M.H.C. and other bodies, is in a position to help those who most need it. The help which you have given to Mr. Alex Burke, President of the Prince Edward Island Tenants Union is notable. It is my earnest hope that your government will give the same kind of support to the proposed national conference of tenants planned to be held in the city of Ottawa next October. I am convinced that the unscrupulous landlord is going to have to be dealt with by muscle, the kind of muscle which a tenants' union can muster. This is not to say that there are not abuses on the part of tenants. There are many and on occasion I have represented landlords and have given them advice (without fee I might add) on how to deal with recalcitrant and difficult tenants. But the abuses on the part of landlords far outnumber those on the part of tenants and the tenant in many cases is quite unable to help himself.

Another area where I feel your government can do something for the tenant is in the case of building inspection. Some people in our city when they look at public housing say "It will be a

run down ghetto in no time." If they are referring to the construction aspect I would have to say that this might be, but it is also true right across the board. Some of the houses being constructed under C.M.H.C. financing are downright shocking. I have in my hand a piece of concrete three inches thick. In case you may have had too much stampede and think that your eyes are deceiving you, the family whose home this was taken from paid for three inches but this was what they got--an inch and a half. In the past eight months I have taken this piece of concrete all over the country. It has been on national television. I have displayed it provincially and locally. The reply I get from C.M.H.C. is 'Caveat Emptor'. If C.M.H.C. were not so punctilious in observing other regulations, they might be able to get away with such a remark. But in view of the stringency of regarding the rules in other areas, I don't think they should be allowed to get off this hook so easily. When the day comes that we expect every householder to be present at the pouring of his or her basement just in order to see that they get value for their money, I think it will be a pretty sorry situation. In short, I think that C.M.H.C. can do a better job of protecting home owners from unscrupulous builders. As a Crown Corporation it is answerable to the government. What do you propose to do?

In closing I should like to thank you for your time and consideration in listening to these remarks about housing which

I feel have such a direct and vital hearing on the poverty situation facing so many Canadians.

APPENDIX "B"

A BRIEF TO THE SPECIAL

SENATE COMMITTEE ON

POVERTY

Submitted by the

Calgary School Board

July 20, 1970

Calgary School Board
Calgary School District 19
Education Centre Building
515 Macleod Trail S.E.
Calgary 21
Alberta Canada

TRUSTEES OF THE CALGARY SCHOOL BOARD

	<u>Mailing Address</u>	<u>Office</u>	<u>Residence</u>
MR. G. M. BURDEN, CHAIRMAN - Lawyer, Imperial Oil Limited	2103 - 12th Avenue N.W. Calgary 42, Alberta	267-1110	289-2036
MRS. MARY ELLEN JOHNSON, VICE-CHAIRMAN - Lawyer	320 - 39th Avenue S.W. Calgary 6, Alberta	--	243-6849
MR. R. T. DIXON - Instructor, Southern Alberta Institute of Technology	3475 Chippendale Drive Calgary 44, Alberta	284-8343	282-2224
MR. H. L. GUNDERSON - Manager, Gunderson Public Relations	312 - Lancaster Building 304 - 8th Ave. S.W. Calgary 2, Alberta	264-3087	252-2094
MRS. I. C. MARTINI - Housewife	6304 - 34th Avenue N.W. Calgary 45, Alberta	--	288-6639
MR. D. M. SALLENBACK - Lawyer	6701 Lepine Court, S.W. Calgary, Alberta	263-1846	242-6775
MR. S. D. SAVILLE - Lawyer	942 Sifton Blvd. Calgary 6, Alberta	269-4351	287-2361

Special Senate Committee

TABLE OF CONTENTS

FOREWORD

SUMMARY OF RECOMMENDATIONS

THE BRIEF

- A. The Poverty Problem
- B. Calgary School Board Action Designed to
Alleviate the Problem
- C. Recommendations
 - 1. Action Research with Sophisticated
Feedback and Evaluation Components
 - 2. Maximum Community Involvement and
Self-Development
 - 3. Effective Co-ordination of Public
and Non-Public Social Service Agencies
 - 4. Flexible Approaches to Government
Funding and Financial Assistance
 - 5. Specific Areas Requiring Federal Funds

CONCLUSION

APPENDIX A - Calgary School Board Statistical Summary
(Part I) for the Month of May, 1970

APPENDIX A - Adult Education Division, Annual Report
(Part II) 1969

APPENDIX B -

- 1. The Bowness-Montgomery Area
- 2. Educational Projects Recommended by Bowness-
Montgomery Educational Needs Committee and
by Other Inner-City Schools

FOREWORD

1. In submitting this brief to the Honourable Senators of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty, the Trustees of the Calgary School Board hope to encourage greater involvement and support by the Federal Government of Canada in programs of education for human renewal. The purpose of the brief is not to provide a definitive solution to any one of the complex problems of urban poverty. Indeed, a basic premise of the Board in making this submission is that no such solution can ever be realized without a significant increase in action research in all facets of Canadian poverty.
2. Rather than offering solutions, an attempt is made herein to sketch the general outlines of an educational poverty problem, to indicate some steps that are being taken to alleviate that problem, and to suggest Federal Government action which might further alleviate the problem. In accordance with the wishes of the Committee, a summary of recommendations precedes the brief proper. The latter consists of a description of the problem and of the steps taken to alleviate the problem, the full recommendations to the Committee, and a concluding statement. The appendices consist of supportive data which are referred to in the course of this brief.
3. The seven-member Board of Trustees of Calgary School District 19 is the policy-making body for one of the largest urban public school systems in Canada. As such, the Board is responsible for the education of almost 76,000 pupils who largely range from five to eighteen years of age. These pupils partake of a variety of educational programs in accordance with their needs in 159 schools. The majority are enrolled in a "regular" grade one through grade twelve school program ("regular" because the variety of programs geared to particular pupil needs really belies the use of a single category). However, pupils cared for by special programs such as those in our academic-vocational secondary schools and special classes for the disabled and disturbed are included in the total enrolment figure. In addition, to the aforementioned pupil enrolments, the Calgary Public School System has an enrolment of over 20,000 pupils in a great variety of Adult Education classes. (Appendix A gives the enrolment detail for the entire system.)

4. Calgary is one of the largest urban centres in western Canada, with a population of more than 0.3 millions living in an area of over 150 square miles. The city's history is short in comparison with many urban centres in eastern Canada, but that history extends back more than one quarter of a century before Alberta became a province - Calgary will soon see her centennial year. Perhaps the Calgary School Board can point with some pride to the new school facilities which have been constructed in recent years to serve the needs of growing suburban subdivisions. Yet, on the other hand, Trustees and their Administration have viewed with increasing concern some districts of Calgary which have seemingly been "left behind" in the city's recent growth.
5. The latter districts which, for the sake of convenience, we may term "inner-city areas" are those which reflect more of the many-sided consequences of urban poverty than the rest of Calgary. They cannot logically be likened to the urban ghettos of some of the larger cities in the U.S.A. However, the Board and the administrators and teachers of this system in viewing poverty with a preventive bias feel that the "inner city district" of Calgary and the urban ghetto of a city like Chicago should be viewed in the same light. In short, the concern is directed towards rehabilitation, the curing of present ills, and the prevention of further deterioration. Our concern need not be elaborated at this point because its details are evident in the brief proper and in the supporting Appendix B.
6. Our school system subscribes to a multifaceted concept of education which has as its aim, the fullest possible development of the individual pupil. With almost 76,000 individuals pupils in 159 schools, our major task is to ensure that all pupils in all schools have equal opportunity for such development. Individuals differ. One educational program with one set of instructional materials and one set of experiences will not serve each pupil in the same classroom equally well. Program, materials and experiences must be modified in order to facilitate maximum development for each pupil. Such a view of education in the classroom is so thoroughly accepted by those concerned with education that its statement here is redundant. Yet it is this same view which those responsible for an urban education system must apply to the several schools in that system.

7. Certainly our school administrators and their professional staffs are cognizant of the need to modify school programs in accordance with the particular needs of their pupils and their individual school communities. Indeed, we are fortunate in that our schools are staffed with extremely capable professionals. Nevertheless, the needs of inner-city school pupils cannot properly be met with standard per pupil and per school expenditures if we are to subscribe to the concept of education mentioned earlier. The development of the individual pupil is not a simple function of classroom instruction. Home and community environment play a larger role in the development of a child than do the 1,000 hours of formal education which he receives each year. It is with the consideration of the social, cultural, emotional, and material environment of inner-city pupils that urban school systems reach an impasse in attempting to provide equality of educational opportunity. It is with this consideration that the Calgary School Board has come face to face with the poverty problem.

SUMMARY OF RECOMMENDATIONS

8. The Calgary School Board respectfully recommends that the Special Senate Committee on Poverty consider the allocation of greater Federal Government financial resources to social development programs designed to eliminate the poverty problem in Canada.
9. It is further recommended that such financial resources be distributed to this School Board and to similar local bodies in accordance with the following guidelines:
 1. Funded projects should include a considerable amount of action research with sophisticated feedback and evaluation components.
 2. Social development programs should have maximum community involvement and self-development by the residents concerned as a prerequisite for financial assistance.
 3. Procedures for the federal funding of social development projects and programs should be such that the effective co-ordination of public and non-public social service agencies is a requirement.
 4. The Federal Government should consider a variety of funding and financial procedures which are both more flexible and more effective than those presently in operation.
 5. Areas which might be considered within the framework of social development and which could be supported by federal funds are:
 - a) Pre-School Classes.
 - b) Travel and cultural enrichment opportunities.
 - c) Guidance and supportive counselling services at all age levels.
 - d) Community library development.
 - e) Community recreation and non-formal education (summer camps, community recreation programs, etc.).
 - f) Parks and recreation facilities.
 - g) Various parent and other adult education programs.
 - h) Vocational and academic programs for school drop-outs.
 - i) Education programs for those in marginal occupations.
 - j) Education programs for community volunteers at all age levels.

THE BRIEF10. A. The Poverty Problem

The Economic Council of Canada in its Fifth Annual Review defines the poverty problem as follows:

"The problem of poverty in developed industrial societies is increasingly viewed not as a sheer lack of essentials to sustain life, but as an insufficient access to certain goods, services, and conditions of life which are available to everyone else and have come to be accepted as basic to a decent minimum standard of living." (1)

We would certainly agree with such a definition, but the context in which we view the poverty problem gives greater emphasis to the individual. Simply stated, our concept of the poverty problem is those circumstances in which an individual's maximum development is hindered by some inadequacies in his environment. Since poverty is relative, our concept can be properly specified as those circumstances in which inadequacies in economic position, housing conditions, family relationships, community services and facilities, or educational background and support (or any combination of these) place the individual in an inferior position relative to "a decent minimum standard of living".

11. We have been able to focus on certain school communities which stand out relative to our other school areas in terms of educational problems. These problems in general reflect a lack of interest in education, weak educational backgrounds and communication difficulties in the families and communities involved. We have classed the applicable schools as "inner-city schools" because, for the most part, they are serving the older inner core of a city which is rapidly expanding around them. Our determination of inner-city schools or school districts (as per Appendix B) largely coincides with the findings of the only major socio-economic analysis of Calgary carried out in recent years: Dr. R. J. Ossenberg's Calgary Study - Community Opportunity Assessment, published by the Executive Council of the Human Resources Research and Development Authority, the Government of Alberta in March, 1967.

(1)

"The Challenge of Growth and Change", Fifth Annual Review of the Economic Council of Canada, pp. 104-105, September 1968 - Queen's Printer, Ottawa.

12. In looking at such urban communities one soon finds that causal factors for their relative deprivation cannot be considered in isolation one from another. That is to say, the child's lack of reading material in the home cannot be meaningfully separated from the family income; nor can the family income be separated from the parents' educational background; nor can the child's frustration in the classroom be separated from his out-of-school environment, and so on. Many children and their families in these districts are caught up in a hopeless treadmill from which there seems to be little hope of escape. If the parents are not too disenchanted and frustrated with education to care, then they are often unable to provide their children with the various facets of informal education, the background to formal education which those children require. There are not the books, magazines, and newspapers in many of these homes that a "middle-class" child takes for granted. Nor are there the many other goods and services and attitudes which should support the child in his development as a mature, responsible and productive citizen. (2)

13. IT IS PERHAPS AT THIS POINT THAT WE DIFFER FROM THE POVERTY ANALYSES OF THE ECONOMIC COUNCIL IN ITS ANNUAL REVIEWS. WE CANNOT IN ALL FAIRNESS TO THE INDIVIDUAL EMPHASIZE ECONOMIC PRODUCTION AND MAN AS A PRODUCER TO THE EXTENT THAT THIS IS DONE BY THE ECONOMIC COUNCIL OF CANADA. RATHER, WE WOULD INCREASE THE COUNCIL'S EMPHASIS ON PEOPLE AS PEOPLE, AND DIRECT THE COUNCIL'S PLEA FOR HUMAN INVESTMENT TOWARD THE ENRICHMENT OF INDIVIDUAL LIVES. EMPLOYMENT AND PRODUCTION ARE IMPORTANT BUT WE CANNOT FORGET THE CHANGES IN SOCIAL RELATIONSHIPS, INCREASED KNOWLEDGE, VALUE STRUCTURES AND TECHNOLOGICAL PROGRESS WHICH WILL COMBINE TO MAKE LIFE IN 1985 MUCH MORE COMPLEX THAN LIFE IN 1970. A CHILD TODAY IN A POVERTY SITUATION CANNOT, ACCORDING TO OUR DEFINITION OF POVERTY, DEVELOP FULLY. THEREFORE, HE CANNOT MAKE AN OPTIMAL ADJUSTMENT TO OUR PRESENT SOCIETY. IF HE CANNOT ADAPT NOW, WHAT WILL HE DO IN 1985?

14. Society makes many demands on the individual. The latter is expected to keep pace with the knowledge explosion by gaining more and more education. He is expected to understand and to assume responsibility for his fellow man and the environment which they share. He is expected to contribute to a system

(2)

See D.B.S. data quoted in pp. 115-116, "Perspective 1975", Sixth Annual Review of the Economic Council of Canada, September 1969 - Queen's Printer, Ottawa.

of self-government which grows ever more complex. To the extent that he does not or cannot do these things, the individual weakens society.

15. However, the reverse is also true. To the extent that society does not facilitate the individual's development as a purposeful member of society, then society weakens the individual. Numerous analyses and critical essays have pointed out that "free" education, unemployment insurance, and various forms of welfare or social assistance payments do not break the poverty cycle. The very existence of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty testifies to the fact that up to the present time our society through its public institutions has not been fully successful in its attempts to facilitate the development of those individuals who make up the poverty problem.

B. Calgary School Board Action Designed to Alleviate the Problem

16. Certainly we, as Trustees of an urban school board, do not feel that we have been fully successful in this regard. We know that our inner-city schools may be characterized by a high incidence of reading problems, poor achievement and high-school drop-outs. Pre-school classes, remedial, corrective and clinical assistance, special vocational and other secondary school programs, and expanded counselling services have been implemented and are contributing to a solution of the problems. Adult Education classes serve a variety of academic, occupational and recreational needs of both adult and child members of communities concerned. Our Adult Education Division serves as a good example of the efforts of the City Council and the School Board to work together in better meeting the needs of all areas of the city. There is extremely close co-operation and co-ordination in the provision of City Recreational Programs and Adult Education Programs. Recently this Board approved several pilot projects designed to meet the needs of inner-city school districts (see Appendix B). There is much that has been and is being done to further the development of the disadvantaged child and the disadvantaged adult in this school system.

17. However, our concern here is not with our accomplishments, but rather with what remains to be done. The pilot projects submitted to and approved by this Board in the past two months will, it is hoped, prove valuable in terms of the information and experience gained for further development. Yet these are "pilot" projects not only in the sense that they are experimental to some degree, but also in the sense that they represent only a small first step. As may be seen in Appendix B of this brief, these projects largely consist of a

greater concentration of personnel and services in the school communities concerned. It is reasonable to assume that additional inputs of proven quality will yield additional outputs, but it is the feeling of this Board that in order to effect a major improvement in output (i.e. enhanced individual development of the pupils concerned), we must seriously consider what is needed in the way of new, substantially different inputs.

18. We offer this question for your consideration. What new inputs are required; what remains to be done to enable children in relatively deprived urban circumstances to enjoy the same opportunities for individual development as do their counterparts in more affluent circumstances?

C. Recommendations

19. The suggested answer of the Calgary School Board to the question posed in the last paragraph includes action in four areas: action research with sophisticated feedback and evaluation components, maximum community involvement and self-development, effective co-ordination of public and non-public social service agencies, and flexible approaches to government funding and financial assistance. In considering these four areas of action, we would recommend that emphasis in all cases be directed toward the pre-school and elementary school levels of childhood without sacrificing the need for action as regards older children, parents and other adults. While more funds are necessary from the federal and provincial levels of government, we feel that actual implementation of services can be more effectively done at the local level by bodies such as the Calgary School Board.

20. 1. Action Research with Sophisticated Feedback and Evaluation Components

a) More pilot projects of an action research nature are required in all facets of urban poverty. Only by means of action research, with sophisticated evaluation techniques offering major feedback from participants as well as observers, will we gain the information needed to combat the poverty problem.

b) A variety of action research projects operating simultaneously is required at the local level. By means of such projects, using comparable measurement techniques, knowledge may be gained as to what approaches are most effective where specific anti-poverty measures are concerned.

c) Similar pilot projects should operate locally in districts which differ according to socio-economic indices, ethnic composition, etc. Such projects would clarify the specific needs of various communities and provide guidelines for further development.

d) Various techniques of applied action research should be substituted for the techniques of pure research that are common in some cities at the present time. People do not want more academic surveys. To let people know that they are socially deprived on the basis of extensive survey analysis and then to return to one's ivory tower is neither productive nor humane.

21. 2. Maximum Community Involvement and Self-Development

a) Statistics on rehabilitative measures for our native peoples, and statistics on welfare cases in urban and rural Canada, as covered in past Annual Reviews of the Economic Council and in many sociological journals, testify to the folly of applying dollars or other forms of assistance to any group without involving that group in contributory activity. We have known

for decades of studies such as those carried out by Kurt Lewin and associates demonstrating superior results due to group involvement. Yet there seems to be a hesitancy to utilize any form of meaningful group involvement where public social services are involved.

b) Government grants should carry with them a requirement of maximum community commitment and participation. This could be done by means of a Request for Proposal approach as indicated below.

c) Additional community public services should not be initiated without full consideration of the expressed wants and needs of that community. Requests from a small pressure group within a community should not be taken as an indication of real needs, without further investigation and evaluation of the expressed needs of the majority of residents.

d) Further to c) above, care must be taken to define the "community" in need. In some cases what appears to be a vocal minority may in fact be the "community" in greatest need of services.

22. 3. Effective Co-ordination of Public and Non-Public Social Service Agencies

a) Effective co-ordination and co-operation is necessary in the distribution of federal, provincial and local public social services. (Education is included here as a social service.) Without such co-ordination there is not only costly duplication, but those who are supposed to benefit become hopelessly confused as to who does what for whom.

Furthermore, personnel providing services cannot do so effectively without knowing what services are available elsewhere, and what other guidance and advice are being offered the client from other sources.

b) Effective co-ordination and co-operation is necessary in the operation of public and non-public social service agencies. The need is similar to that expressed above in a).

23. 4. Flexible Approaches to Government Funding and Financial Assistance

a) The Federal Government should play a more effective role in the area of social development. There are many existing channels through which financial assistance could be provided to local service institutions and agencies without contravening the constitutional division of responsibilities between federal and provincial governments. The Office of the Secretary of State, the Department of Health and Welfare, the Department of Manpower and Immigration and the Department of Industry could all extend and modify their present assistance procedures to achieve greater effect than at present.

b) Federal funds should not be granted automatically on a per capita basis for various areas of social development. Instead, a Request for Proposal procedure should be implemented. (3) The Request for Proposal approach should allow for a two-way flow of requests. On the one hand, a community should be able to present a request for government funding and expect consideration and implementation dependent upon government evaluation of the request. On the other hand, the government should be able to contract out particular services to whatever organization(s) can best meet community or national requirements.

24.

5. Specific Areas Requiring Federal Funds

We respectfully request consideration of the following areas of need for "inner-city" communities, in light of the foregoing recommendations.

1. Pre-School Classes.
2. Travel and cultural enrichment opportunities.
3. Guidance and supportive counselling services at all age levels.
4. Community library development.
5. Community recreation and non-formal education (summer camps, community recreation programs, etc.)
6. Parks and recreation facilities.
7. Various parent and other adult education programs.
8. Vocational and academic programs for school drop-outs.
9. Education programs for those in marginal occupations.
10. Education programs for community volunteers at all age levels.

(3)

see Manning, E.C., and P. Manning. Requests for Proposals and Social Contracts, A Strategy for Organizing Resources to Achieve Social Goals, M. & M. Systems Research Ltd., Edmonton, Alberta, January, 1970.

Special Senate Committee

CONCLUSION

25. The Calgary School Board appreciates the time and consideration which the Special Senate Committee on Poverty has devoted to this and the many other submissions which have been made regarding the problem of poverty in Canada. While this Board recognizes that the problems referred to in the preceding pages are but small reflections of a national problem, we trust that the information provided and the viewpoints expressed herein will be of some value in the deliberations of the Committee.

CALGARY SCHOOL BOARD

APPENDIX A

STATISTICAL SUMMARY FOR THE MONTH OF MAY, 1970

(Part I)

Number of Pupils Enrolled:

	<u>May 1970</u>	<u>Apr. 1970</u>	<u>May 1969</u>
Senior High Schools	14429	14566	13403
Junior High Schools	18187	18220	17387
Elementary Schools	41430	41414	39955
All Special Classes	843	830	852
Schools for Retarded Children	224	226	209
	<u>75113</u>	<u>75256</u>	<u>71806</u>
Pre-School Classes	458	468	463
Pre-School Hearing Handicapped	25	25	25
	<u>75596</u>	<u>75749</u>	<u>72294</u>

Average Daily Attendance:

Senior High Schools	13274.04	13528.37	12373.44
Junior High Schools	17226.99	17213.86	16458.90
Elementary Schools	39889.90	39842.03	38538.17
All Special Classes	773.52	765.95	792.29
Schools for Retarded Children	200.65	197.26	188.75
	<u>71365.10</u>	<u>71547.47</u>	<u>68351.55</u>
Pre-School Classes (½ days only)	440.70	449.00	428.80
Pre-School Hearing Handicapped (½ days only)	24.30	23.70	23.48
	<u>71830.10</u>	<u>72020.17</u>	<u>68803.83</u>

Distribution of Pupils by Grades:

	<u>I</u>	<u>II</u>	<u>III</u>	<u>IV</u>	<u>V</u>	<u>VI</u>	<u>VII</u>	<u>VIII</u>	<u>IX</u>	<u>X</u>	<u>XI</u>	<u>XII</u>
1970	7163	6761	7097	7040	6909	6460	6323	6121	5743	5339	4590	4500
1969	6526	6921	7145	6923	6331	6109	6095	5741	5551	4938	4349	4116
1968	6812	7076	6372	6671	6010	5968	5736	5532	5200	4647	3898	3715
1967	6686	6823	6127	6337	5819	5581	5449	5149	5005	4165	3331	3830
1966	6414	6340	5814	5688	5818	5300	5225	4869	4576	3539	3357	3739

Number of Teachers:

	<u>1970</u>	<u>1969</u>
Senior High Schools -		
Teachers i/c Home Rooms	300	224
Others	<u>492</u>	<u>792</u>
Junior High Schools -		
Teachers i/c Home Rooms	637	604
Others	<u>301,5/10</u>	<u>938,5/10</u>
Elementary Schools -		
Teachers i/c Home Rooms	1566	1480
Others	<u>183,7/10</u>	<u>1749,7/10</u>
		<u>202,8/10</u>
Slow Learner Class Teachers	65	60
Sight Saving Class Teachers	2	2
Speech & Hearing Class Teachers	6	6
Psychometrists	1	3,4/10
Psychologists	7,5/10	3,5/10
Speech Pathologists	5	3
Reading Clinicians	13	10
Autistic Class (Portable at Alberta Children's Hospital)	2	2
Cerebral Palsy Clinic	4	4
English for New Canadians	2	2
Detention Home	1	1
Home Confined	2	2
Rehabilitation Centre	1	1
Schools for Retarded Children	34	33
William Roper Hull Home	7	7
Wood's Christian Home	-	3
Supervisors & Consultants	76,5/10	83,5/10
Visiting Teachers	20	15,1/10
Central Administrative Staff	<u>18</u>	<u>16,5/10</u>
	<u>374,2/10</u>	<u>356,4/10</u>
Pre-School Teachers	11	11
Pre-School Hearing Handicapped	2	2
	<u>3760,2/10</u>	<u>3574,4/10</u>

Special Senate Committee

Other Professional Staff (non-certificated):

Psychologists	2	1,5/10
Speech Pathologists	9/10	2
Director, Adult Educ. + Assts.	3	3
	<u>3766,1/10</u>	<u>3580,9/10</u>

Special Class Enrolments:

Slow Learner	650	Cerebral Palsy Clinic	33
Speech & Hearing	36	Detention Home	20
Sight Saving	14	Home Confined	17
Autistic Class (Portable at Alberta Children's Hospital)	11	Rehabilitation Centre	9
		William Roper Hull Home	53

Schools for Retarded Children:

Christine Meikle	146
Emily Follensbee	78

Pre-School Enrolments:

Pre-School Classes	458
Pre-School Hearing Handicapped	25

Senior High Enrolments:

	X	XI	XII	TOTAL
Alberta Children's Hospital	2	1		3
Bowness	274	216	243	733
Central Memorial	453	343	274	1070
Crescent Heights	514	426	448	1388
Ernest Manning	495	406	493	1394
Forest Lawn Sr.	298	181	183	662
Henry Wise Wood	549	541	519	1609
James Fowler	527	512	454	1493
Lord Beaverbrook	595	456	404	1455
Queen Elizabeth Sr.	259	217	209	685
Sir Winston Churchill	237	198		435
Viscount Bennett	348	317	374	1039
Western Canada	436	458	476	1370
William Aberhart	352	318	423	1093

Adult Education:

	1970				1969			
	*Units of Enrol.	Teachers	No. of Classes	% of Attn.	*Units of Enrol.	Teachers	No. of Classes	% of Attn.
Academic	879	63	56	81.52	1270	72	72	79.15
Business Tr.	146	13	12	85.44	220	12	11	78.80
Gen. Interest	110	9	15	95.00	214	15	64	90.80
English for New Canadians	58	8	8	86.60	68	7	7	
Manpower English day classes	30	2	2		-	-	-	
Special Educ.	-	-	-		54	3	34	91.60
Tutoring	78	11	20		46	26	44	
In-Service Training	81	6	5	99.00	129	8	6	98.00
Adult Testing	2 tests given				13			
Recreation	302	12	28	90.84	569	20	42	78.00
Counselling	80	4			91	4		
Functional Illiterates	4	1	1		4	1		
Unwed Mothers	68	11	6					
Special Functions	700				325			
	<u>2538</u>	<u>140</u>	<u>153</u>		<u>3003</u>	<u>168</u>	<u>280</u>	<u>91.92</u>

*A Unit is one student taking one course. Some students take more than one course and are counted for each course.

APPENDIX A
(Part II)

Monthly enrolment for Adult Education cannot be regarded in the same light as regular monthly student enrolment. However, the 1969 Annual Report of the Adult Education Division as reproduced below should provide the Committee with useful material in terms of the range of services provided as well as providing figures for the past seven years on "units of enrolment".

Calgary School Board
ADULT EDUCATION DIVISION
ANNUAL REPORT 1969

The overall growth rate of the Division was less in 1969 than previous years. This was primarily due to the financial restrictions on the Division and as stated in the 1968 Report, "the Division does not expect to implement any significant new or expanded programs during the next year."

Although the Division expected increased Provincial grants in 1969, they did not materialize. In addition, the budget of the Division decreased by approximately 22% from the School Board; and in the 1969-70 Collective Agreement it was agreed to increase the instructional rates approximately 17% for Academic and Tutoring programs, and for Supervisory services. These situations will make it difficult for the Division to continue to provide the broad range of services and programs which it has established.

Two significant pilot projects implemented in 1969 were the Unwed Mothers day program and assistance to the Ramsay School project. In addition, an English for new Canadian program for housewives was implemented in co-operation with the Junior League. The Division was also responsible for implementing an after school Art Enrichment program for Elementary Students. This program was arranged with the Art Department of the Public and Separate School Boards, and the Recreation Division of the City of Calgary.

The co-operative program in Adult Recreation between the Division and the City of Calgary Recreation Division completed a two year pilot program in June 1969. The evaluation of this program indicated the desirability for continuing the co-operative program. The enrollments in recreational programs are an indication of the success of this joint venture.

The Recreation staff was extended this part year by the addition of two full-time personnel who are employees of the City of Calgary, Recreation Division.

The English for New Canadian Program continued to grow in 1969, including a number of day classes in co-operation with Alberta Vocational Training and Manpower.

Special projects which consist of conferences and one session activities rather than the regular course types of programs are growing each year and are reported for the first time.

The Division continues to provide more programs in co-operation with many different community groups and organizations.

Although the Academic program showed a decline this part year the counselling cases increased. In addition, the Academic staff members devoted considerable time and effort in the establishment and operation of the program for Unwed Mothers.

A major change was implemented in the lower levels of English programs by the implementation of a Junior Communications course.

The demands on the staff of the Division continues to be more than a normal workload. All the staff, in addition to their regular day office hours, devoted many nights to their duties and responsibilities during the year.

Special Senate Committee

Enrollments for 1969 with a comparison of enrollments for 1963 - 1969

- . A unit of enrollment refers to one person registered in one class.
 . The figures below do not indicate courses extending over from one year to the next.

	<u>Number of Classes</u>							<u>Units of Enrolment</u>						
	1963	1964	1965	1966	1967	1968	1969	1963	1964	1965	1966	1967	1968	1969
Academic	38	39	96	129	157	187	146	1350	1400	2516	2603	2771	3554	3175
Business & Vocational	8	9	26	33	40	37	34	235	250	383	456	593	532	636
General Interest	5	42	55	115	202	327	301	88	672	815	1536	3306	3441	3667
Eng. for New Cdns.	5	7	10	18	34	56	63	156	239	272	474	651	834	884
Parent Ed.	-	3	5	8	7	29	15	-	98	104	264	456	474	366
Home Study	-	9	13	-	-	-	-	-	80	109	-	-	-	-
Driver Tr.	-	-	1	2	-	-	-	-	-	32	54	-	-	-
Corresp. Courses	-	-	-	37	61	24	-	-	-	-	134	290	233	-
Special Courses	-	-	-	11	23	39	18	-	-	-	241	665	604	353
Tutoring	-	-	20	48	79	108	79	-	-	297	642	661	645	727
Adult Testing	N/A	N/A	N/A	N/A	N/A	N/A	N/A	-	91	40	90	78	154	121
Recreation	-	-	-	-	124	313	389	-	-	-	-	2746	6026	6843
Counselling Cases	N/A	N/A	N/A	N/A	N/A	N/A	N/A	(no records kept)			-	546	1823	2171
Unwed Mothers Day Program	-	-	-	-	-	-	N/A	-	-	-	-	-	-	73
School Aide Training	-	-	-	-	-	-	1	-	-	-	-	-	-	24
Manpower Eng. for New Cdns.	-	-	-	-	-	-	8	-	-	-	-	-	-	120
Totals	56	109	226	401	727	1119	1054	1829	2830	4568	6494	12765	18322	19165
In-Service	-	21	29	36	50	47	59	485	651	700	800	1250	1184	1207
Totals	56	130	255	437	777	1166	1113	2314	3481	5268	7294	14015	19506	20372
Special Functions (Conferences, one session programs, etc)	-	-	-	-	-	-	63	-	-	-	-	-	-	3792

APPENDIX BACTION TAKEN BY THE CALGARY SCHOOL BOARDMAY-JUNE, 1970 IN REGARDS TOINNER-CITY SCHOOL PROBLEMS1. The Bowness-Montgomery Area

At the Board meeting of December 16, 1969, a Committee of nine school administrators and nine parents from the Bowness-Montgomery area of Calgary was established. This Bowness-Montgomery Educational Needs Committee was charged with a comprehensive study of the total educational needs in the Bowness-Montgomery area. The Committee reported back to the Board in Feb., 1970, with a statistical summary reflecting the Committee's view of the major educational problem in their communities. This summary is as follows.

Bowness-Montgomery Educational Needs Study

February 1970

Mr. C. J. Dibble, Principal, Terrace Road Elementary School
 Mrs. Van Tienhoven -- Terrace Road Parent Representative
 Mr. E. M. Gillespie -- Principal, Thomas E. Riley Junior High
 Mrs. Hoare -- T. B. Riley Parent Representative
 Mr. M. D. Gutiw -- Principal, Belvedere-Parkway Elementary
 Mrs. Pilkington -- Belvedere-Parkway Parent Representative
 Mr. K. Hodgert -- Assistant Principal, Bowness High School
 Mrs. M. Martin -- Bowness Junior Parent Representative
 Mr. H. Leavitt -- Principal, Bowcroft Elementary
 Mrs. Karry -- Bowcroft Parent Representative
 Mr. A. N. Longair -- Principal, Montgomery Junior High
 Mr. J. James -- Montgomery Parent Representative
 Mr. L. W. Ross -- Principal, Bowness High School
 Rev. R. Lemke -- Bowness High School Parent Representative
 Mrs. E. Shaw -- Principal, R. B. Bennett Elementary
 Mrs. Schmidt -- R. B. Bennett Parent Representative
 Mr. S. L. Theriault -- Principal, McKay Road Elementary
 Mrs. Bushman -- McKay Road Parent Representative

Bowness-Montgomery Educational Needs Study

Less than two months ago this committee was asked to embark on a comprehensive study of the Total Educational Needs in the Bowness-Montgomery Area. Every effort has been made to provide this Board with concrete evidence and reliable information on this matter. In addition to five formal weekly meetings, the committee members have toured schools, both within and beyond the community, and have participated in several discussions and meetings directly related to this assignment.

Special Senate Committee

From the outset, the committee realized that it would have to develop a clearer understanding of the underlying causes for educational concern within the community. Consequently, all members were asked to identify and delineate areas of major concern, and to gather as much supportive data as was available.

The following outline was proposed as a guide to the problems and their origins.

A. Poor Achievement

- Causes: (1) Inability to communicate effectively.
 (2) Lack of cultural exposure.
 (3) Lack of readiness for the elementary program.
 (4) Personal health problems--both physical and psychological.

- Origins: (1) Family ethnic backgrounds.
 (2) Limited availability of cultural resources.
 (3) Absence of concern for readiness in many homes.
 (4) Economic depression and unstable home conditions.

B. Retention of Students In School

- Causes: (1) Attitudes of parents towards education.
 (2) Communities' expectations for success.
 (3) Students' aspirations in the community.
 (4) Disenchantment with school programs.

- Origins: (1) Limited availability of student and community services.
 (a) Guidance and counselling.
 (b) Recreational opportunities.
 (c) Remedial and developmental programs.
 (d) Clinicians and therapists.
 (e) Family counselling and guidance.
 (f) Health services.

The need for the coordination and articulation of (1) curriculum, (2) student services, (3) staffing, (4) building development, and (5) utilization of facilities were identified as possible contributing factors to the two major problem areas.

Considerable evidence is available to support the committee's concerns about the low achievement levels demonstrated by large numbers of students and the consequent difficulty in retaining the students in the schools' programs.

The following summaries are included to create a clear picture of what we believe to be is the major educational problem in this community.

Grade One

DETROIT BEGINNERS TESTAchievement

A direct comparison between the students of five elementary schools in this community and five randomly-selected typical "middle-class" schools in the system, of Readiness Scores from the Detroit Beginners' Tests given to Grade One students in 1967, 1968 and 1969 produced the following results:

School	Total Tested	Under 100	%	100- 120	%	Over 120	%
<u>1967 - Other Schools</u>							
A	40	2	5	10	25	28	70
B	34	5	15	10	29	19	56
C	109	3	3	53	49	53	49
D	56	7	13	22	39	27	48
E	90	13	14	49	54	28	31
<u>Bowness-Montgomery Schools</u>							
F	74	15	21	35	47	24	32
G*	55	20	36	24	44	11	20
H*	45	11	24	22	49	12	26
I	65	16	25	28	43	21	32
J	99	21	21	56	56	22	22
<u>1968 - Other Schools</u>							
A	53	1	2	10	19	42	79
B	35	3	9	15	43	17	48
C	103	8	7	38	37	57	56
D	42	1	2	20	48	21	50
E	67	3	5	35	52	29	43
<u>Bowness-Montgomery Schools</u>							
F	57	10	17	19	34	28	49
G*	56	14	23	38	66	4	11
H*	29	7	24	22	76	0	0
I	39	10	25	24	61	5	14
J	129	25	19	73	57	31	24
<u>1969 - Other Schools</u>							
A	38	3	8	20	53	15	39
B	27	3	11	13	48	11	41
C	105	6	5	46	44	53	51
D	103	8	7	38	37	57	56
E	51	5	10	34	67	12	23
<u>Bowness-Montgomery Schools</u>							
F	111	26	23	62	56	23	21
G*	58	11	19	19	34	28	47
H*	43	7	16	21	47	15	37
I	63	16	26	30	45	17	29
J	115	25	22	56	40	34	29

*Pre-school classes operate in these schools.

Special Senate Committee

A Summary of Grade Six Failures, Junior Academic-Vocational Placements, Special Junior High JAV Placements, and Grade VII Failures from the five Bowness-Montgomery Elementary Schools and the five randomly selected "middle class" schools used previously.

BOWNESS-MONTGOMERY SCHOOLS						OTHER SCHOOLS					
	1.	2.	3.	4.	5.		6.	7.	8.	9.	10.
<u>1966</u>											
Grade 6 Pop.	71	105	48	70	44		62	71	89	60	--
Retained No.	5	2	1	3	0		0	0	0	0	0
(In Gr.6) %	7	2	2	4	0		0	0	0	0	0
To JAV No.	11	8	3	2	4		0	3	1	1	0
%	15	8	6	3	9		0	4	1	2	0
Sp.Place(7) No.					7	*	0	2	9	12	5
(To Cr.8) %					7		0	1	3	5	2
Grade 7 Fail No.					10		0	2	11	2	1
%					10		0	1	4	1	1/2
<u>1967</u>											
Grade 6 Pop.	67	115	53	81	41		96	58	104	--	95
Retained No.	4	2	1	0	1		0	0	0	--	1
(In Gr.6) %	6	2	2	0	2		0	0	0	--	1
To JAV No.	6	8	2	2	3		0	0	1	--	3
%	9	7	4	2	7		0	0	1	--	3
Sp.Place(7) No.					15	*	6	2	11	7	8
(To Cr.8) %					16		3	1	3	3	3
Grade 7 Fail No.					20		2	2	13	3	3
%					20		1	1	4	1	1
<u>1968</u>											
Grade 6 Pop.	61	140	49	96	38		50	65	109	67	77
Retained No.	3	1	0	0	3		0	0	0	0	1
(In Cr.6) %	5	1	0	0	8		0	0	0	0	1
To JAV No.	6	13	4	1	5		2	1	1	4	0
%	10	9	8	1	13		4	2	1	6	0
Sp.Place(7) No.					3	*	2	2	12	16	6
(To Cr.8) %					3		1	1	4	6	3
Grade 7 Fail No.					8		0	2	9	6	0
%					8		0	1	3	2	0

* % based upon entire Junior High Population

City Averages--1968

5.7% referred, 5.1% assigned

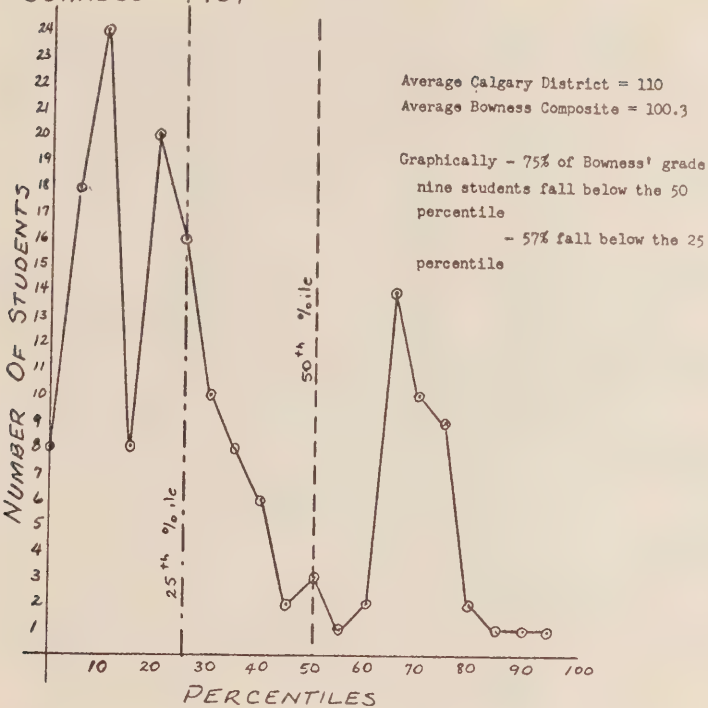
City Averages--1967

5.7% referred, 4.8% assigned

GRADE NINE - HONOURS, PASSES AND FAILURES

	<u>1966</u>			<u>1967</u>			<u>1968</u>			<u>1969</u>		
	Cty	Bw	Mt	Cty	Bw	Mt	Cty	Bw	Mt	Cty	Bw	Mt
% Honours	6	2	3	6	2	0	6	2	0	7	3	0
% Passes	85	84	92	87	80	82	88	88	90	89	92	94
% Failures	7	14	5	7	18	18	5	10	10	4	8	6

GRADE NINE
Dominion Test Results
BOWNESS - 1967



This test was only administered in 1967 to Junior High School students of the Calgary Public System. It has since been replaced with the Otis I.Q. tests which are now given at the Grade 7 & 10 levels. The Dominion test contained some psychometric weaknesses, however it does provide comparative values that are based on statistical numbers of scores of Calgary Students.

Special Senate Committee

Grade Nine Departmental Examination Results
for 1966, 67, 68 and 69.
Bowness and Montgomery Junior High Schools

	Yr.	H			A			B			C			D		
		Cty	Bw	Mt	Cty	Bw	Mt	Cty	Bw	Mt	Cty	Bw	Mt	Cty	Bw	Mt
Reading	66	11	6	7	32	24	33	26	25	23	26	35	30	5	10	8
	67	11	6	5	30	20	20	27	23	31	26	38	35	6	13	9
	68	14	4	4	27	18	15	28	29	32	25	37	41	6	12	3
	69	17	10	2	31	23	24	25	20	34	23	34	32	4	8	3
Literature	66	10	5	10	23	13	30	25	22	26	29	36	26	8	19	8
	67	11	6	0	23	17	19	23	20	21	26	38	35	7	20	22
	68	13	1	4	30	24	13	25	27	30	25	37	41	5	12	7
	69	14	9	2	28	17	27	27	25	23	23	34	32	6	11	9
Language	66	10	4	9	25	12	22	26	22	13	30	35	43	9	27	3
	67	10	2	1	27	17	7	26	21	34	30	40	41	7	20	17
	68	11	3	0	27	23	22	26	29	33	23	35	36	8	14	10
	69	12	9	3	26	18	23	27	27	36	28	35	34	7	11	4
Social Studies	66	12	12	12	29	21	33	26	21	26	26	36	25	7	10	5
	67	12	10	4	30	20	15	24	13	22	23	35	44	6	17	15
	68	13	1	3	27	23	5	24	25	22	29	41	55	7	10	15
	69	14	5	0	29	15	22	26	30	23	25	38	42	6	12	13
Mathematics	66	10	4	1	26	16	34	25	21	23	31	40	34	8	19	3
	67	10	5	2	25	19	13	26	19	27	30	37	41	9	20	17
	68	11	3	1	26	14	5	26	27	30	29	31	40	8	25	23
	69	12	8	0	25	17	3	26	26	23	30	42	55	7	7	14
Science	66	12	4	10	28	17	30	24	21	20	23	43	31	8	14	9
	67	11	4	7	27	13	21	26	26	22	23	33	35	8	24	15
	68	11	3	0	27	11	13	23	23	20	25	42	41	9	21	21
	69	12	6	3	27	16	10	26	23	22	28	41	53	7	14	12
Schol Ability	66	11	3	5	29	23	32	26	23	22	27	36	30	6.6	11	10
	67	11	7	6	26	20	19	26	22	19	29	33	40	7.6	13	16

Grade 12 Examination Results 1968 and 1969

	Yr.	H		A		B		C		D	
		City	Bow	City	Bow	City	Bow	City	Bow	City	Bow
English 30	68	3	4.6	31	13.8	40	49.2	16	23	4	9.2
	69	11	7.0	29	26	41	46	16	20	3	1
Social 30	68	3	4	27	30.6	43	43.9	17	12.2	5	4
	69	10	5	29	24	42	43	15	19	4	9
Math 30	68	12	0	40	20.8	39	70.3	3	4.1	1	4.1
	69	13	7	34	23	41	52	11	11	1	2
Math 31	69	17	0	40	13	35	58	7	18	1	6
Biology 30	68	3	5.7	37	40	40	37.1	12	11.4	3	5.7
	69	9	3	33	29	44	42	12	20	2	6
Chemistry 30	68	9	0	33	18.5	46	55.5	10	25.9	2	0
Chemistry 30X	69	9	4	36	33	39	39	14	18	2	1
Physics 30	68	3	6.3	30	6.3	47	37.9	12	37.9	3	10.3
* Physics 30X	69	14	9	35	24	37	58	12	9	2	0
French 30	68	12	9	38	13.1	37	54.5	10	9	2	9
	69	12	5	32	49	39	41	14	5	3	0

* 20 of 65 starting students dropped course before writing the Departmental final

High School Drop-Cuts

1967-1968-1969

Year	School	Enrolment	L-0	%
1967-68	Bowness High School	642	78	12.2
	High School A	1566	192	12.3
	High School B	1531	192	12.5
1968-69	Bowness High School	740	113	15.3
	High School A	1658	212	12.8
	High School B	1664	171	10.3
1969-70 (4 months)	Bowness High School	827	76	9.2
	High School A	1649	143	8.7
	High School B	1702	102	6.0

Recent Welfare Statistics

(As of January 16th, 1970)

Population of Bowness-Montgomery, approximately 15,000
(3,000 families)

Temporary City Relief-- 75 families

Permanent Provincial Welfare 455 families

530 families

Estimated that between eighteen and twenty percent of the communities residents receive welfare assistance.

An official of Preventative Services estimated that approximately 2/3 of the receiving families were maintained by divorced or deserted women, many of them with pre-school children.

Special Senate Committee

This compilation represents data indicating that within the community there exists a large number of young people who do not have the ability to achieve as expected in the existing school curriculum. This is not to suggest that these people lack natural ability, rather it would be our suggestion that too many of them experience an environment that is not congruent with the one customarily expected by this school system. Consequently, we believe that our facilities, curriculum, and services are not adequately meeting the needs of these children.

At this time, the committee would suggest that the Board members consider the evidence before them, and that they make at least tentative decisions for further action on this matter.

Our suggestion would be that this committee be maintained as an advisory committee to the Board, and that it be requested to meet with several senior administrators of this system to develop feasible recommendations appropriate to the need that has been identified.

2. Educational Projects Recommended by Bowness-Montgomery Educational Needs Committee and by Other Inner-City Schools

By further motion of the Board, the Bowness-Montgomery Educational Needs Committee was asked to present recommendations regarding projects which would overcome the educational problems in this district. In addition, principals of other schools which could be classed as Inner-City Schools were asked to meet with their staffs and communities and to make similar recommendations to the Board regarding projects which could overcome the major educational problems in their communities. All of these recommendations were presented to the Board in May of 1970.

Using budget monies which have been set aside for this purpose and utilizing special provincial grants where applicable, the Calgary School Board will be able to implement some of the recommendations to be effective as of September 1, 1970. In the pages which follow the recommendations of the Bowness-Montgomery Educational Needs Committee and those of the various Inner-City schools have been reduced to a point-form summary for the convenience of the members of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty.

(a) Bowness-Montgomery Proposals

* Recommendation 1 - 10 pre-school classes

Recommendation 2 - Reduction of class size in all elementary and junior high schools

Recommendation 3 - The appointment of 2 qualified Learning Assistance workers to assist classroom teachers in the area. These personnel would be specialists in corrective instruction in fields of reading and arithmetic and would have completed two years of training and teaching in the Learning Assistance Centre of the Special Educational Services Division of the Calgary School Board.

* Recommendation 4 - Seven specialist teachers to be appointed in this area to meet the remedial needs of elementary students.

* Recommendation 5 - Implementation of selective staffing procedures to ensure that administrators, teachers, and substitutes in this area would be particularly qualified in terms of interest and training to deal with the educational problems common to pupils of this area. Selective staffing to also emphasize male teachers at the elementary level.

* Recommendations which will be implemented in some form as of September 1, 1970, with regular School Board budget monies. Some recommendations by Inner-City Schools will be met through a special provincial building fund for the renovation of older structures. These have not been included here.

Special Senate Committee

* Recommendation 6 - Specialist central office personnel to work with all school staffs in the area in developing a suitable program to meet student needs; schools to be given priority in existing educational programs such as the Outdoor Lab. School and various educational tours; funds for curriculum projects such as the above would be maintained under the control of the recommended area program co-ordinator.

Recommendation 7 - Additional optional equipment and supplies for experimental programs as these are developed.

* Recommendation 8 - One additional full-time trained counsellor for each of the two junior high schools and for the senior high school.

* Recommendation 9 - An annual orientation seminar and workshop for the area's teaching force in the beginning of the school year, to be developed by the Department of Development and Research.

* Recommendation 10 - The appointment of a Program Co-ordinator for the area, charged with the development and facilitation of the educational program.

Recommendation 11 - Expansion and extension of library facilities in the area to ensure that all school libraries meet the full requirements of School Board standards.

* Recommendation 12 - Facilitation of the evening operation of the three secondary school libraries to be open to the public four nights a week.

Recommendation 13 - Considerable renovation of existing facilities and construction of new facilities to facilitate the expanded educational program envisaged elsewhere in these recommendations.

* Recommendation 14 - Training seminars for parent volunteers who wish to work with teachers in the educational program: facilitation of maximum committee involvement and community use re the operation of schools and school buildings.

Concluding Recommendation

"It is the recommendation of your Committee that you accept our recommendations as a Pilot Project. We would further recommend that you evaluate their success with a view of developing similar programs in other areas of the city."

(b) Forest Lawn Area Proposals1. Albert Park Elementary School - Miss E. M. Mehrer, Principal

Educational Need - accommodation for 50 Valleyfield pupils during lunch hour; accommodation for Art and Science programs, and for educational testing.

Pilot Project - a building addition of one extra room with washroom facilities, to serve as lunch and games room as well as Science, Art and Testing Room.

* Supernumerary teacher for corrective program and instructional materials

* 2. David D. Oughton Elementary School - R.A. Stearne, Principal

Educational Problem - serious retardation in reading: 15% of the school population is one-to-two years or more retarded in reading.

Pilot Project - a remedial reading program supplemented by a library facility; would involve a Librarian and a Remedial Reading Teacher (September, 1970 to June, 1971)

* 3. Mountain View Elementary - R.R. Rutz, Principal and Valley View Elementary - S. Kretz, Principal

Educational Problem - serious retardation in reading; problem similar to that of David D. Oughton Elementary.

Pilot Project - sharing a remedial reading teacher - half-time at each school (September, 1970 to June, 1971).

* 4. Patrick Airlie Elementary - B. V. Fisher, Principal

Educational Problem - cultural deprivation of pupils and parents; a bookstock which is not adequately used.

Pilot Project - a full-time librarian to effectively operate a school library service, with parents assisting in the daytime and supervising the library when it is open to the public in the evenings (September, 1970 to June, 1971).

* 5. Forest Lawn Elementary School - A. M. Cornett, Principal

Educational Problem - reading problems resulting from poor Language Art development.

Pilot Project - continuation of present program which would not otherwise be possible due to staff cut back next year: individualized approach for a group of pupils with serious problems in language development, using a 3/10 time supernumerary teacher.

Special Senate Committee

(c) Schools in City Centre Area Proposals* 1. Bridgeland Elementary - J. V. Schmidt, Principal

Educational Problem - pupils seriously retarded in reading and generally handicapped in the Language Arts.

Pilot Project - a ½-time remedial reading teacher handling individual pupils and small groups established by diagnostic testing and evaluation (September, 1970 to June, 1971).

* 2. Langevin Elementary and Junior High - D. Campbell, Principal

Educational Problem - pupils seriously retarded in reading and generally handicapped in the Language Arts.

Pilot Project - full-time remedial reading teacher to aid students from level 3 to grade 9 but with emphasis on elementary; assistance from community volunteers (September, 1970 - June, 1971).

- evaluation to be part of first year community school evaluation.

3. Connaught Elementary - J. Faminoff, Principal

Educational Need - proper upgraded library facilities (staff and community concern over lack thereof).

Pilot Project - conversion of 2 rooms on third floor into a library centre (the old gym area - temporary walls can be easily removed) - desire renovation for September, 1970; upgraded bookstock and equipment.

* Personnel and supplies for expanded and corrective program.

* 4. McDougall Elementary - C. P. Rose, Principal

Educational Problem - lack of first-hand background experiences prerequisite for the learning of English and other curricular content; community-identified need of recreational-cultural centre as top community priority.

Pilot Project - Phase II of a 3-phase program: the establishment of an "Adventure Playground" as part of a combined community-school recreation program: involving 2 recreational instructors and gym and playground equipment, a Board of Directors, etc.

* 5. Victoria Elementary and Junior High - R.A. Roberts, Principal

Education Problem - severe retardation in basic subject areas of Reading and Arithmetic (supporting statistics in typed submission from the staff); large numbers of pupils spend 7-8 years to complete elementary schooling.

Pilot Project - full-time elementary remedial teacher for Reading and Arithmetic problems, geared to individual and small group situations (September, 1970 to June, 1971).

(d) East Calgary Schools Proposals

- * 1. Colonel Walker Elementary and Junior High - K. L. Evans, Principal
Educational Problem - cultural deprivation causing various learning problems and disabilities; large classes and lack of time prevent staff-community solution under present circumstances.
Pilot Project - full-time visiting teacher and full-time remedial tutor, the visiting teacher to spend half her time assisting parents with children's needs, and half-time with teachers and pupils (September, 1970 to June, 1971)

- * 2. Ramsay Elementary - D.A. Bruce, Principal
Educational Need - cultural deprivation and attendant pupil frustrations in the educational program, as a result of the lower socio-economic character of the community.
Pilot Project - continuation and extension of special Wednesday afternoon program initiated this year, involving community volunteers, a creative playground and additional bus tours (September, 1970 to June, 1971 - hope for a self-sustaining project to continue indefinitely).

(e) The Cluster Schools - Small Elementary Schools

- * 1. The Cluster - Cliff Bungalow, Erlton, Manchester, and Parkhill Elementary Schools (submitted by principals Miss M. C. Woodhouse, Mrs. L. M. Chidlow, A.F. Long, and Mrs. E. J. Allan, respectively)
Educational Need - inadequate Science facilities and services within these four schools.
Pilot Project - establishment and co-ordination of a Science program within the 4 schools by a Science Co-ordinator (September, 1970 to June, 1971).
- * Cliff Bungalow Elementary - Miss M. C. Woodhouse, Principal
Educational Problem - extensive reading disabilities which seriously hamper pupils' educational progress.
Pilot Project - assessment of reading difficulties and application of different techniques to overcome difficulties by a reading specialist.

(f) The Hillhurst-Sunnyside Area Proposals* 1. Hillhurst Elementary - L. W. Graves, Principal

Educational Need - remedial work in and out of school in subject areas, co-ordinated with a Family Life and other social projects within the community.

Pilot Project - remedial assistance provided by part-time personnel, either hired via the school system or as volunteers from the community (no final community decision as yet in this regard)

- Family Life and Community-oriented social projects developed by Sociology students, ministers, and community leaders (September, 1970 to June, 1971)

* 2. Sunnyside Elementary - Mrs. D. E. Fraser, Principal

Educational Problem - cultural deprivation resulting in serious problems of retardation in Reading and Arithmetic.

Pilot Project - full-time remedial classroom teacher (by seconding present Assistant Principal and replacing her with a teacher) operating in a remedial classroom in close proximity to the library: - an expansion of the remedial assistance provided in the 1968-69 school year (September, 1970 to June, 1971)

(g) Junior Academic-Vocational Schools - Proposals1. Shaughnessy Secondary Vocational - E. B. Duncan, Principal

Educational Problem - serious retardation in the communicative arts, verging on illiteracy.

2. Van Horne Secondary Vocational - G. P. Jepson, Principal

Educational Problem - reading problems - reading levels 1 to 5 years below grade placement for total pupil population.

Pilot Project - multi-media developmental reading laboratory structured around multi-level communications skills program (an extension and expansion of program presently being developed) - (September, 1970 to June, 1971 but, would like to continue on a year-to-year basis).

(h) Supervisor of Elementary Science - J. R. Houghton

Educational Need - cultural and curricular enrichment for pupils within all the designated "inner city schools".

Pilot Project - provision of two or more School Board buses (capacity 40-50 pupils) for expanded programs such as the swimming program, Planetarium visit program, the educational tours program, and the outdoor education program.

Special Senate Committee

APPENDIX "C"

ALBERTA FEDERATION OF HOME AND SCHOOL ASSOCIATIONS
Area No. 9 (Calgary)

BRIEF
TO THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON
POVERTY

ALBERTA FEDERATION OF HOME AND SCHOOL ASSOCIATIONS
Area No. 9 (Calgary)

The Calgary Area Council of Home and Schools is honored and pleased to be able to present this submission to the distinguished Senate members sitting on the Senate Commission on Poverty.

The Calgary Area Council of Home and Schools, represents the parents of school-age children, and other citizens interested in education in the city of Calgary.

The fact of poverty is assuming serious proportions in the decade of the nineteen-seventies that will seriously tarnish the social and economic fabric of the country unless solved in the days ahead.

In our view, the poverty conditions of the nineteen-seventies are unlike those in past decades in this century. In past decades the economically deprived fought their condition, and to a large measure overcame their condition by utilizing to full advantage the educational opportunities at their disposal.

There is an element from which children, that for one reason or another could not take advantage of the educational system, and these and their offspring and their offsprings' offspring have become the "hard core" poor. Perpetual poverty has become a condition of life that is accepted in many quarters but must not be allowed to continue.

Welfare has provided a way and means by which people could

survive in our society. The original concept of welfare was healthy in that it bridged an economic gap for many families. If this gap is to be measured now in full lifetimes, or span from generation to generation the health of the nation is now in peril.

We recognize that welfare must continue, and must be a permanent factor in Canadian life. However, steps must be taken to reduce the great dependence on welfare, providing avenues of opportunity for self-betterment among the poor. Canadian society as a whole must recognize its responsibility in opening these avenues of opportunity -- and we suggest that the most successful avenue is in pre-school education.

As a society we contribute vast sums of money to post-secondary education, creating skilled professionals to serve the nation. As a society we have concentrated on those students who have already established their course in life, and in as much as this is excellent, it isn't adequate in the years ahead.

It is our contention that if the same amount of capital was invested in pre-school education in the nation's poverty areas, as is invested in post-secondary training, the economic benefit to the nation twenty years from now would be immense.

A pre-school child is in his formative years, establishing the ideas and concepts that will remain with him for a lifetime.

Any child is a product of the environment in which he or she is raised. If that environment has a positive attitude toward the learning process, then the child will develop a thirst for knowledge, that will eventually channel he or she into a productive life based on natural talents or interests. Often the poverty home denies the child an environment that is conducive to the learning process in a manner that is acceptable to society. Every child in the age bracket of three to six is learning and absorbing. In the poverty home the chances of this child learning and absorbing negative rather than positive aspects of living are considerably higher.

Each individual in society seeks some form of accomplishment in his life, be he rich or poor.

If that accomplishment is a benefit to society or not depends on the training the individual was exposed to in his formative years.

Pre-school training provides the opportunity to develop interests and life patterns beneficial to society among children never exposed to new ideas and the learning process.

The child from the economically deprived home enters grade one with many of his social patterns already established. If he starts school on the wrong foot he continues out of step, until he drops out.

Special Senate Committee

If he starts on the right foot the challenge of school is usually met and he develops a self-reliance and confidence necessary for a full and productive life.

We commend the Senate Committee for this searching inquiry into the causes of poverty in Canada. We urge that one of the priorities in your recommendation be the establishment of Federal Aid to pre-school education.

B I B L I O G R A P H Y

1. Canadian Home and School and Parent Teacher Federation Brief to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty, February 19, 1970
2. Before Six -- Dr. Walter H. Worth
3. Your Child from 1 to 6 -- United States Department of Health, Education & Welfare (Children's Bureau)
4. Helping the Low Income Parents Through Parent Education Groups -- Catherine S. Chilman and Ivor Kraft, published in Children, July-August, 1963
5. Poverty and Under Education: What School and Community Can Do. Paper presented by Wm. C. Kvaraceus to the Governor's Conference on Poverty, Boston, June 1964
6. Education and the Lower Class Child -- Howard S. Becker. Modern Sociology, 1963.
7. Bowness-Montgomery Educational Needs Study, February, 1970

APPENDIX "D"

A STATEMENT TO THE SPECIAL SENATE
COMMISSION ON POVERTY

Presented by: The Calgary Welfare Rights Group

We are not here today to present you with another brief. Your committee has heard hundreds of them... you may have heard so many by now that you listen but do not hear.

By this time, 1970, most thinking people will conclude that:

1. To allow poverty to exist in the third wealthiest country in the world is a national, international and worldwide disgrace.

2. Canada must hang its head in shame before the world when it faces the cold hard fact that four to give million poverty stricken Canadians have continued to stay in poverty for generation after generation for a hundred years. Senator Croll has stated "for twenty years there has been no redistribution of wealth in this country". (Senate Debates—June 25/70 2nd Session—28th Parliament/Volume 118—No. 77).

3. To keep us in poverty costs millions of dollars, and has in fact become a gigantic fraud, with thousands of employees employed at all levels of Government and private institutions, making large salaries to keep us where we are, in poverty, so they will make economic gains. Slum landlords, second hand church stores, social planning councils, Social Development schemes, and team upon team of researchers are kept rich by sucking the blood of the poor, because sad to say there is much money to be made off the poor. We hold you responsible for the cruelty you have allowed to be inflicted on our families, our children, our handicapped, our aged, and our minority groups. Although studies have proven over and over that the welfare poor are in a trap from which there is no escape, you allow its continuation. Is that what democracy is all about? If so, are you amazed that so many of the young and the poor and the racial minorities are disenchanting and fed up with your concepts of freedom?

As you are no doubt aware, for the poor there is no freedom. We are slaves in an outmoded and rotten system which puts money before human need—a system which

pours hundreds of millions of dollars into foreign investments and wars which pollute our air, tear down our mountains, contaminate our water. You sit idly by and watch thousands die in wars, because your system promotes killing and death and these take precedence over peace and life.

Lately the cry coming forth is that the welfare budgets are running dry. Yet surely we all know that unemployment was the tool used to fight inflation. The jobs of course were taken from the poorest of the workers. Again the system called the tune and the poor paid the piper. You should not equate child labor and slave labor with the years of 1750-1850. Child labor and slave labor have been used for generations up to the present time in the beet fields of southern Alberta and will continue. Look into it sometime. We somehow are not afraid of technological change. If we sent men to the moon and not one returned there would be an immediate change in a system which was obviously faulty. We must not be afraid, when we see our poor people suffering, to change an outmoded economic system. There can be no excuse for the vast poverty and inequality existing in Canada today. Surely we have the courage to change our priorities from mental, emotional and physical death and repression, before the fast arriving day when our cities will be burning because you refused to change a cruel and corrupt system while there was still a split second of time. Poor people are fed up and can no longer be fooled into thinking that we are to blame for our sorry lot in life. We realize now that the odds are stacked too high by the system for any of us, whether working or welfare poor to beat our way out of the economic disparity forced upon us. We know and understand that the system makes the poor—the poor do not make the system.

The Calgary Welfare Rights Group, comprised of concerned and indignant welfare citizens who insist and intend to be fulfilled, first class citizens are presenting this following drama to you, to prove the above points. We strongly suggest that you listen carefully, as you are the jury in this trial.

A Socio-Drama in which the system is charged with the murder of the poor Presented to the Special Senate Commission on Poverty—July 20th, 1970

Judge: This is a case of first degree murder. Will the prosecutor please call his first witness involving the murder of the poor in which the System has been charged.

Prosecutor: Thank you you honour, I do indeed plan to poove to each and every person of the jury, that the system is undoubtedly guilty.

EDUCATION

May I call Dr. Moron, superintendent of schools to the stand?

Officer: (calling Dr. Moron to stand) do you swear to tell the truth the whold truth, and nothing but the truth?

Dr. Moron: I do.

Pros.: Are you aware that you are being charged with being an accessory to the murder of the poor, which the system has been so charged.

Dr. M.: I am well aware of the fact.

Pros.: Now Doctor Moron, where were you on the afternoon of February 16, 1970 at about four o'clock?

Dr. M.: Well, I was talking to a bunch of young demonstrators and welfare mothers who had forced their way into my education centre.

Pros.: FORCED THEIR WAY INTO THE BUILDING? Is the school board not a place for the public, including students and welfare mothers?

Dr.: Well, yes.

Pros.: Now what was this issue about?

Dr. M.: Well, it was nothing of importance— a child was suspended from school over a dress regulation is all.

Pros.: A dress regulation... what was this natter about?

Dr. M.: Well, a child in one of our high schools came to school in blue jeans.

Pros.: Jeans? and for this the girl was icked out of school?

Dr. M.: Yes, you see she was warned but ore them anyway.

Pros.: Were you aware of the facts... the ACT THAT SHE COULDN'T AFFORD A DRESS because her family was unavoidably

on welfare and their budget did not allow for a dress?

Dr. M.: Yes, but she was breaking one of our rules.

Pros.: Breaking one of the rules—tell me Moron, why are your rules made?

Dr. W.: To benefit the child, and help them get an education...

Pros.: And yet it was because of one of these RULES, that this girl and hundreds like her, who, being on welfare and unable to dress as the other students, was forced to leave school, thereby denying her an education, and a life better than that of her family. Also Dr. Moron, is it true that on that day when you were confronted with a school voucher which EVERY CHILD ON WELFARE IN ALBERTA IS FORCED TO USE TO GET NEEDED SUPPLIES you, as superintendent of schools, admitted you had never even seen before?

Dr. M.: That is correct, I was not aware of this practice.

Pros.: But did it ever occur to you that 9,000 students are unable to afford runners, books, locker fees, material for shop and home etc. and other needed things? They are forced to use these large degrading vouchers and will usually quit school rather than be humiliated and sneered at by teachers and store clerks who process these shameful vouchers? That they are being denied and deprived of an education because of the alienation forced upon them by this needless demeaning practice?

Dr. M.: I do not feel this concerns me.

Pros.: POVERTY CONCERNS EVERYONE! IT CONCERNS ME, YOUR NEIGHBOUR, YOUR GROCER, AND EVEN YOU, MR. MORON. ARE YOU AWARE THAT BECAUSE OF RED TAPE AND EMBARRASSMENT ONLY 1 OUT OF 8 welfare children make it through high school? AND EMBARRASSMENT ONLY 1 OUT OF 8 welfare children make it through high school?

Dr. M. Well it isn't my fault, I can't change the system. It's the System's fault, not mine.

Pros. Pardon me?

Dr. M. It's the system's fault!

Pros. No further questions. I would now like to call to the stand the Calgary welfare workers.

Officer: Do your swear to tell the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth?

W.W.: Of course.

Pros: Now, could you tell me what exactly your job is?

W.W.: Well I have to take these cases, and show those type of people how to live decently and respectably on a subsistence allowance.

Pros: Exactly what do you mean by that "type" of people?

W.W.: Surely you know the type—the burdens of our society. Many I am sure are too lazy to work—of course I do my bit to try to force them to take any job—in fact I am so diligent that just the other day, I forced a woman with four small children to get a job at the minimum wage, to get her off the taxpayers back—of course she has an inadequate babysitter, but you know, with that TYPE...

Pros: Are you aware of the fact that according to Doctor Peichinas, School of Economics, U. of Cal., in a study done for the Social Planning Council, it was found that only 1 per cent of people of welfare abuse it? The Welfare Rights Group has evidence that on other occasions you have cut a person from welfare assistance on the heresay of a neighbour—that you have verbally told a disabled woman that she should be a prostitute—that people with diabetes often cannot get their insulin or drugs from Edmonton. Is this your idea of showing people how to live decently and respectably? What is the food allotment per day for a child on welfare in 1970?

W.W.: It varies from 50 cents per day to about 75 cents.

Pros.: You know of course that welfare families rarely have a car. Yet what are they allowed for the entire family per month for recreation? This includes all sports, recreational fees, busfare, allowances and so on.

W.W.: It is \$10.00 per family unit per month.

Pros.: If there is eight in the family this works out to 31 cents per week—year in and year out. That would pay busfare downtown

for a child and six cents left over is that correct?

W.W.: Yes, we try to run a very tight ship.

Pros.: Is there an allotment for Christmas presents or gifts or misc.

W.W.: Oh, definitely not!

Pros.: How about a phone in the family which has no car and usually only one adult.

W.W.: Oh, a phone is classified as a luxury for welfare people in Alberta.

Pros.: Do you think this could be fair or just?

W.W.: Well no it isn't—but it surely isn't my fault. It's hard to work in this system—most welfare workers quit because they can't stand to see how we destroy people. I think I should be commended for working in this system. I didn't make the system you know, it is to blame.

Pros.: Surely you cannot condone that this type of poverty is allowed in this wealthy country. Which brings us to the fact that WELFARE IS A CONTINUING CYCLE it goes from one generation to the next.

W.W.: Well its not my fault. It's the system.

Pros: Would you please read no. 4 on the back of the application form?

W.W.: (reads it)

Pros: Do you in fact tell the people of their right to appeal any decision?

W.W.: Don't be foolish. We all know in Alberta there is no workable appeals procedure, how could I inform the person involved.

Pros: Please read No. 2.

W.W.: (reads it)

Pros: This is an invasion of privacy in the first degree. No citizen would sign over their entire life to the scrutiny of anyone the department deemed fit to look into their most private affairs.

W.W.: Well you can't get welfare unless you do.

Pros: Read No. 5.

W.W.: reads it

Pros: This is ridiculous. First you tell me there is no appeals procedure, then you force

a recipient to sign an oath under the Canada Evidence act that the above points are true.

W.W.: It's not my fault.

Pros: Whose fault is it?

W.W.: The system. I can't change the system.

Pros: If you are not part of the solution, my dear you are obviously part of the problem. No further questions. Remember, if you didn't have the poor, you wouldn't have a job, and you would be on their kind of welfare. And also remember, we all get our money out of the same pot. Who is wrong?

Pros: I would now like to call the retail and grocery stores to the stand.

Officer: Calling the Dept. Stores and Grocery stores to the stand. Do you swear to tell the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth?

Store: I do

Pros: You are aware of the charge? That you have been accused of being an accessory to the murder of the poor, in which the system has been charged.

Store: I am aware, but look you got the wrong man, I'm honest and I run a business.

Pros: You do, eh...well let me ask you—before you sell a customer something, do you pick it out for him? Or tell him what you think he should have.

Store: Good grief no!

Pros: What is this? (a voucher)

Stores: Oh that's one of those bums on welfare's vouchers.

Pros: Do you take these at your store?

Store: Oh yes sir.

Pros: Has your store ever discriminated against those on Welfare, by making rude remarks and picking out what YOU feel they should have.

Store: Well sometimes I guess my clerks do.

Pros: And why do your clerks play god with those on Welfare by selecting what they think is suitable for them, and making their bags WELFARE for everyone to see...Now it is a fact that a group from W.R.G. came to you asking that these embarrassing procedures

stop immediately, and you agreed yet you did nothing at all to enforce this...don't you think that human dignity is important, to ALL people whether rich, or poor, black, white, red or yellow?

Store: Why do they have vouchers? I don't make the rules, I only run stores—those darn vouchers, do you realize because of those things we have to practically set up a whole new bookkeeping system...

Pros. Well whose fault is all this?

Store: Well its the system that pushes these vouchers on us.

Pros. No further questions. I would now like to call Mr. Carl Schmickle well known Calgary Oil Millionaire to the stand.

Officer: Calling Carl O. Schmickle, do you swear to tell the truth the whole truth and nothing but the truth.

C.S. I do.

Pros. Now I know you are aware of what you have been charged with.

C.S. Yes, but as a prominent citizen I object.

Pros. Just a moment. Please read your comments recorded in the Calgary Herald Monday, September 22nd 1969, page 12.

C.S. reading 'Social welfare shouldn't grow to the point where it becomes a burden on the backs of Albertans who are working for their living, the Southern Alberta Institute of Technology graduating class was told Sunday (by) Carl O. Schmickle, publisher of the Daily Oil Bulletin "the mass of people who are workers must not be dragged down by people on social security (welfare) who live off the people who are working" he said.'

Pros. Now could you tell me what was meant by this remark, as you no doubt are aware that only one per cent of people abuse welfare.

C.S. Well I feel they are burdens of our great affluent society—well in my day you would pull yourself up by the bootstraps.

Judge. Please demonstrate (produces pair of boots)

C.S. (demonstrates) my goodness I have landed flat on my ass.

Pros. Have you ever been on Welfare?

C.S. Good lord No!

Pros. Then how could you possibly know how these people feel, when they are given vouchers, when they must buy at charity stores, when they must take what their neighbours have left over in their freezers, do you know what it's like to be labeled by you, and so many others as a second class citizen, as a parasite off society, through no fault of their own?

C.S. I do NOT wish to involve myself.

Pros. If you are not part of the solution you are part of the problem. No further questions. I would now like to call Mrs. and Mr. Fedup Taxpayer to the stand.

Officer: Calling Mrs. and Mr. Fedup Taxpayer. Do you swear to tell the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth?

Mr. and Mrs. F.U.T.P. Certainly, I will cooperate in any way...

Pros. Are you aware that you have been charged with being an accessory to the crime of murder of the poor, in which the system has been charged.

M. and M. Yes, but this is ridiculous...

Pros. We shall see. Now, do you have Welfare people living near you.

M. and M. In some instances yes.

Pros. How do you like these people.

M. and M. Well, you know they are a problem. and then they have these little brats of...

Pros. You mean children?

M. and M. Yes, well as I was saying, those little brats proceed to break our windows and do other things too. I say they STEAL.

Pros. Have you called the police?

M. and M. Oh my YES! We always call the welfare too. But darn it we never have been able to do anything because there is no proof.

Pros. In your tight little world are there other children living, such as your own?

M. and M. Oh yes. But we know its those welfare brats, you KNOW how THEY are.

Pros. No how are they?

M. & M.: Well what can you expect from those kind, whose fathers desert them, and

their mother's a nervous wreck usually, and there I am supporting them...and they aren't grateful enough, you know. Why I know one place, they let their lawn grow a way high, and there WERE WEEDS!

Pros. Well, I can see that you are not aware that people on welfare do not get money for ordinary things like a garden sprinkler, or a telephone, or a lawn mower—these things you take for granted, are deemed a luxury by the government you support. Nor did you ever offer to lend a hand to them, because you have a lawnmower, and a car, and an unbroken family, and a vacation once in a while...you wonder why the grass is uncut or the mother nervous and afraid because she has nothing for herself or her children and cannot live normally.

M. & M. Oh I tell them every chance I get, that I'm supporting them and they better be damn grateful, and I teach my kids to let them know too, just whose taxes are making their life easy. Lazy bums.

Pros. Have you ever felt that perhaps it was you, that makes them unhappy and afraid and angry, maybe it's you who has made their son disturbed because you always blamed and hated him when he was a child isn't that possible?

M. & M. Definitely not. It's their problem. I have a job, and a good upbringing—I am not concerned with their problems or how they solve them, they just better watch it and stay away from around my place.

Pros: I would now like to call "The Church" to the stand.

Officer: Calling the Church to the stand. Do you swear to tell the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth?

Church: So help me god!

Pros. Are you aware that you have been charged with being an accessory to the murder of the poor with which the system has been charged

Church: This is downright unchristian! Why, our whole operation is geared toward the poor. We do have some troubles though, as it is so hard to get that type into our beautiful temples of worship.

Pros: Who do you mean by "that type"?

Church: Oh the poor in our midst who have been with us since the time of the first leper,

who we tried to help by throwing him our crusts.

Pros: You gave crusts two thousand years ago, however the poor are still with us unfortunately. What are you giving them now, to change their misery into concrete help.

Church: Well, as well as praying for these miserable wretches, we supply them with the old clothes, and furniture, and other things that our wealthy parishioners donate,

Pros. Supply? By this do you mean you give them your used and discarded old clothes?

Church: Oh no, we have to sell them to make a profit in this fine free enterprise system, Brother.

Pros. Do you give poor people your discarded furniture?

Church: Oh no, you must realize that we run charity STORES and we must charge for everything.

Pros. Well how can you do this? In other words you give nothing but your prayers to the poor. Why?

Church: Well, you must realize, Brother, that this is the way the system works. It not our fault alone, it's the system.

Pros.: No further questions. Would the Landlords please come to the stand.

Officer: Calling the Landlords to the stand. Do you swear to tell the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth so help you God?

Landlord: I do.

Pro.: Do you, as a landlord, rent to welfare recipients?

Landlord: Oh heavens no. We run a tight ship and we don't want any of those kind of people in our project.

Pros.: What kind of project do you run?

Landlord: We run low rental housing here in Calgary.

Pros.: Do you mean to tell me that you have low rental projects and you do NOT rent to the lowest income group in Canada?

Landlord: Well, like I say, we like to run a tight ship and we don't want any problems. Besides we want nothing to do with those lazy vouchers that the government uses

some times and takes two or three months to cash. We have to think of our investors and their profits.

Pros.: Doesn't your conscience bother you when you discriminate against a class of people. Poor families whose children desperately need decent, clean, economical housing, with good recreational and educational facilities close at hand?

L.L.: We only feel conscience stricken when we cannot pay CMHC their money at the first of the month. It's not my fault, it's the system.

Pros.: No further questions. I would now like to call to the Private Charities to the stand.

Officer: Calling the Private Charities to the stand please. Do you swear to tell the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth.

P.C. I do.

Pros.: Are you aware of the fact that you have been charged with being an accessory to the murder of the poor in which the System has been charged.

P.C. Yes, but the charge is unfair because we run a wonderful homemaker service in Calgary.

Pros.: Oh very good. What and how does your Homemaking service work?

P.C. Well you see, we send a homemaker into welfarehomes after the mother has had a mental or physical breakdown to keep the family together. Poverty stricken mothers have far more mental and physical problems you know, due to low food budgets, and the constant pressure inflicted on the mother trying to bring her children up alone and with no money for recreation or any break from years of monotonous, dull, dreary, routine. It costs a lot of money for our homemakers though.

Pros.: Now if a mother has a breakdown, and goes to hospital for 30 days at \$36.00 per day and it costs \$15.00 a day to come into the home, that is \$1530. Wouldn't all this have been prevented by giving the impoverished mother some recreational allowance and your services before she had a breakdown. It would have been a saving of \$1305 in the case just mentioned.

P.C. Oh we cannot have these welfare types having fun. This is the taxpayers chari-

ty money, and he will not go for this nonsense even though it would have prevented the problem in the first place, we realize that of course. Don't you realize that the Private Charities fulfil a great function in society? If we really got rid of poverty, how would the taxpayers salve their consciences? The conscience of society must be at ease at all times you know.

Pros.: Poverty to ease the conscience of society? Shocking!

P.C. Well it isn't my fault—I'm only doing this as part of the system. The whole system would have to be changed to stop private charities from operating. Besides, we have all kinds of staff and directors and everything,

and what job could they get if it wasn't for poverty in the system?

Pros.: No further questions your honor. I now hope I have shown the jury that each and every person who was charged with being an accessory to the murder of the poor guilty as charged. Individually, they are only a small part of the system, but together, they are the SYSTEM ITSELF! If individually, they are guilty to being an accessory to murder, then together, they are guilty of murder. The murder of which I speak is not done by knives, or dagger, gun or club, nor is it done quickly. This murder has been committed by words, thoughts, and actions. It is done slowly, but thoroughly and constantly. Now it is up to you...GUILTY OR NOT GUILTY?

APPENDIX "E"

A brief presented to
The Special Senate Committee on Poverty

by

Ian Walkei

Calgary, Alberta

July 20th, 1970

Subject: The Need for change in the administration of Public Welfare Financial Assistance Programs and a proposal.

PUBLIC WELFARE ASSISTANCE

1. At the present time the Department of Social Development of the Province of Alberta provides financial assistance and a variety of rehabilitation services to clients eligible for financial assistance. Welfare financial assistance programs have rarely been greeted with warmth by citizens, as taxpayers, partly because many of us have the feeling that persons requiring financial assistance are somehow taking advantage of the taxpayer and are refusing to accept their responsibility to be productive in our Society. Over the years we have acknowledged, however, that certain categories of persons should be assisted in a humanitarian way. Generally we talk about the aged, the sick and the handicapped and of course dependent children.

2. There is much debate in Canada and the United States about the need for establishing some kind of minimum income for all citizens. This debate is probably going to continue for a number of years to come. Because it is a social question (as well as economic), social attitudes will decide the outcome. There does not seem to be political and social support for a guaranteed income at this time, although this Special Senate Committee on Poverty will be, or are, in an excellent position to determine the views of citizens on this very significant issue. However a vast array of programs exist for citizens, related in some way to economic survival of individuals and families. The White Paper on Taxation and more recently on unemployment due to accident or sickness are examples of the rapid changes that can take place. I am in no position to judge the merits of the total package

of services, particularly when new proposals are being put forward so regularly and I would, therefore, like to focus on a more limited aspect of the problem and that is the problems of the present welfare assistance programs. I believe that some changes could be made rapidly that would improve the programs for both the taxpayer and the recipient.

3. All of North America operates on the so called work ethic, which is to say that there is a general belief that to be a worthwhile citizen a person should be able to earn his own living and stand on his own feet. Of course through income tax laws, etc, there are many ways in which certain individuals and groups benefit at the expense of the taxpayer and some of the suggested changes in the White Paper on Taxation suggest that there should be changes in the tax system. However these will take many years to put into effect. In the meantime we are faced with a state financial assistance program that is looked upon with dissatisfaction by the taxpayers and received with some degree of hostility or dismay by many recipients.

4. The first question to decide regarding financial assistance programs is whether they are a right or a privilege. If they are a privilege then the present system is justified in the way it operates. The present system has broad guidelines for what is deemed to be suitable financial assistance to people in need but the clear goal of financial assistance programs in this province is to hasten the possibility of getting the person off the welfare rolls (although not necessarily into employment). Welfare recipients are, therefore, persuaded to accept counselling services and a variety of rehabilitation programs to get back into the work force. Many clients believe that they must cooperate with these rehabilitative

efforts in order to continue to receive financial assistance. In order to achieve the rehabilitation goal the Department of Social Development is staffed mainly by a large number of welfare workers who are usually university graduates who see their primary role as encouraging people to get off welfare but who spend most of their time administering the financial assistance program.

5. It seems to me that the day has come when the financial assistance program should be looked upon as a right and not a privilege. I suggest this partly because it has become apparent over the past few years that operating a privilege-based system appears to have failed to put people back into the work force and our welfare expenditures are increasing rapidly each year. There are of course many factors for this increase in dependency including the reduction in the number of unskilled occupations, increased specialization in the work force and the increasing demands for a higher education as a prerequisite to employment. However, I would suggest that one of the biggest difficulties to surmount is the administration of a financial assistance program where financial assistance is used as a manipulative tool. I would like to suggest, therefore, that financial assistance programs should be deemed as a right not a privilege, although there should be some legal precautions built into such a program. This is not the same, however, as proposing a Guaranteed Income, at least in terms of the present debate on that issue. I believe that, along with the right to financial assistance, goes an equal responsibility to make as great a contribution to Society as possible. However, I am prepared to encourage this fulfillment of responsibility by the citizen through education at the broad community level and by making available a broad range of rehabilitation services through various departments and agencies where the recipient has free choice of application and participation.

6. The first result of any decision to establish a financial assistance program as a right would be to eliminate the broad range of rehabilitation services run by the welfare Department. This would also eliminate the vast array of welfare workers in financial assistance programs. Our Society has created a range of services e.g. medical, educational and vocational training services, etc, through various level of Government and through selected voluntary agencies dealing with a great variety of human needs. The financial assistance program would be computerized

with written and published scales for the amount of aid available for a given family situation to meet basic needs, as is common with insurance programs. This concept would result in drastic savings in administrative costs for a very expensive welfare program which has little, if any, public support. The recipients of financial assistance, having accepted the assistance as a right, would be freed to use their own initiative to sort out the services they require in order to re-enter the market as independent persons. The need would exist for persons skilled in processing requests for aid based on clearly-written and published statements as to eligibility requirements. Payment would be automatic through a computer so long as eligibility was maintained. A whole range of welfare workers would not be required in such a purely financial assistance program.

7. Obviously for the aged and handicapped, assistance may be required for many years. Society does not object to these situations. The real social and political problem is with family units, where the head of the household will not or cannot work (but is not accepted as sick or disabled). It is my belief that the vast majority of recipients of financial assistance will willingly use rehabilitation services available on a basis of freedom of choice, whereas resentment, hostility and even dependency is created where financial assistance is used as a manipulative tool to force or coerce persons into taking specific rehabilitation programs. In effect, I believe the vast majority of recipients will accept responsibility along with the right to financial assistance.

8. I should like to explain briefly what I mean by saying that welfare assistance is used as a manipulative tool. Welfare workers are faced with a dilemma in the administration of assistance to recipients. On the one hand the eligibility requirements are fairly clearly defined (although not necessarily available to other people) and much of the welfare worker's time is spent processing required forms to obtain financial payments. On the other hand, welfare workers are told that the goal of the program for certain groups of recipients is to get them off assistance as soon as possible. Individual workers, therefore, make choices as to the priority focus in any given situation. Others would remain in the middle and allow the client to decide. This kind of situation leads to manipulation of the client even where the worker has the best of intentions, either

because the worker declares the expectations on a basis of personal opinion or he leaves the client to guess at the intent of the program and act accordingly. Either way the client is confused and does not know his rights (how can he when the Department does not really know?). I therefore do not use the word 'manipulation' as necessarily being the intent of the worker or Department but, because the client may and often does feel manipulated, this is often enough justification to destroy any hope of giving or receiving rehabilitation services.

9. Of course abuse must be prevented if at all possible. Here again I depart from what I believe is the intent of the advocates of a Guaranteed Income. Abuse may be prevented in the following ways:

1. If the person fraudulently claims assistance a normal investigative process can be followed on a sample basis. Anywhere up to 20 per cent of applications can be followed up for accuracy and dealt with legally, as is now done by the Federal Unemployment Insurance Commission (if we are willing to finance this investigative procedure).

2. The second level of abuse can emerge if a person chooses to receive assistance but is not willing to make efforts to get back into a work situation. The present situation is that the worker feels responsible to persuade such a person to take rehabilitation programs with the implication that financial assistance may not be continued if the person doesn't do so. It is recommended that the alternative to this approach is to have financial assistance as a right but where it is suspected there is a "lack of co-operation" that the matter be referred to the appropriate legal authorities for action. In this case the decision to take legal action is based on the Criminal Code requirement that persons who wilfully fail to provide for their families can be charged under the Criminal Code. Steps should be taken, therefore, to prevent this second level of abuse through the legal system and not through the financial assistance system and the recipient would retain his legal right for appeal through the courts. It should be recognized that from all available statistics the number of persons who would be affected by this clause is at the most 5 per cent of eligible recipients of family financial assistance. Other legisla-

tion covering social situations may be required but should be developed on a basis of due legal process.

SUMMARY

10. In summary this brief proposes:

1. That financial assistance programs should be clearly separated from the provision of rehabilitation services and that such rehabilitation services should be provided through the existing education, health and vocational training services and other departments of Government and voluntary agencies.

2. That welfare workers involved in financial assistance programs in the Department of Welfare be replaced by accounting personnel resulting in greater economy of operation.

3. That financial assistance should be seen as a right, not a privilege.

4. That legal protection against abuse should be incorporated through proper legal processes.

12. I believe that the changes as proposed above would result in (a) better services to welfare clients; (b) greater economy of operation; (c) improved public attitudes about welfare and welfare recipients; and (d) greater accountability for rehabilitation services. These benefits would accrue because the focus would then change from criticism of the welfare system and welfare clients to positive action regarding the need for improved rehabilitation services for the citizens of Canada, whether they are welfare recipients or not. Surely we in Canada today can start treating people according to their needs, not their economic level per se.

13. The Canadian Government and the Provinces have developed in recent years a vast array of services designed to ensure that our citizens can have freedom from want. Education, vocational training, placement, health and many other services have been provided. This is a compliment to our Governments and to the taxpayers. However, we have shown ourselves to be unwilling to ensure that the monies spent achieve the goal of enabling our citizens to avoid the negative aspects of dependency. There is little if any evidence of willingness to evaluate the effectiveness of our programs; nor do we develop systems to identify evidence for needed change. This to me is where the need for

major change arises in Canada—a willingness and commitment on the part of those who provide services to ensure that the services meet the needs of people, not the needs of administrative structures; a goal cannot be achieved when there is no system that rationally evaluates the effectiveness of services.

14. I hesitate to develop this theme because it would require a book-length document. However, I would assume from my reading of the proceedings of your Committee that you will be attempting to develop a conceptual framework within which poverty can be tackled on a total basis. I have been impressed with the quality of submissions and I am somewhat humbled and hesitate to develop a thesis when other people so obviously have much more knowledge than I about the problems of poverty. I would merely state in brief form that:—

1. The goals of "Welfare" programs should be more clearly debated and then defined;

2. The programs that exist need to be evaluated on a continuing basis as to their effectiveness;

3. Such evaluation may have to be carried outside the social agency and government department structure;

4. Long-range planning and research is required and necessitates a structure along the lines of the Economic Council of Canada, although it must have provincial structures also.

5. Some people have suggested the establishment of a Social Development Council. This is an excellent idea although I wonder why the Economic Council of Canada cannot be expanded because economic and social goals need to be integrated.

15. May I express my appreciation for this opportunity to make what I hope is a small contribution to your deliberations.

Ian Walker,
Calgary, Alberta

APPENDIX "F"

BRIEF

STATEMENT OF THE CALGARY
INTER-FAITH COMMUNITY ACTION
COMMITTEEfor presentation to
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON
POVERTY

WHO WE ARE

1. The Calgary Inter-Faith Community Action Committee subscribes in its entirety to the brief of the joint Canadian Council of Churches and Canadian Catholic Conference brief presented to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty in Ottawa in June, 1970.

2. Our Calgary Inter-Faith Committee has 96 members representing a broad spectrum of churches, church agencies, and other church related groups.

3. Our organization is composed of individual clergymen and laymen relating in their own right, plus officially designated liaison persons from several faith groups and other agencies. Our chief purpose is two-pronged:

(a) To give concrete expression to our own social awareness in confronting the social needs of the community

(b) To muster concern amongst our fellow clergymen and church members for the poor and dis-advantaged.

A Reading from the Second Letter of Paul to the Corinthians (8: 7, 9, 13-15)
Brethren,

You always have the most of everything—of faith, of eloquence, of understanding, of keenness for any cause, and the biggest share of our affection—so we expect you to put the most into this work of mercy too. Remember how generous the Lord Jesus was: he was rich, but he became poor for your sake, to make you rich out of his poverty. This does not mean that to give relief to others you ought to make things difficult for yourselves: it is a question of *balancing* what happens to the surplus now against their present need, and one day they may have something to

spare that will supply your own need. That is how we strike a balance: as scripture says: The man who gathered much had none too much, the man who gathered little did not go short.

4. In Calgary we are represented on most community and municipal studies and projects in which the poor, youth, and native peoples are the concern, and we have initiated a number of them. Specifically, these include:

- (a) an Inter-Faith Limited Dividend Housing Development
- (b) A Housing Problem Committee
- (c) A Drug Information Centre
- (d) the Provincial Mental Health Council
- (e) Welfare Rights Group
- (f) Native Development
- (g) Miles for Millions
- (h) Calgary Welcome and Recreation Centre
- (i) Calgary Youth Aid Centre
- (j) Television programming to create awareness and discussion of specific local issues
- (k) and a variety of responses to community concerns as they arise

5. The purpose of the brief is to comment on the National presentation and to supplement it with several recommendations based on our own experiences in development and our own local concern for the poor.

Recommendations

1. The Government of Alberta has established a Human Resources Authority. We relate closely to its Advisory Council. We feel that the Alberta Human Resources Authority is a suitable body to carry out provincially the function envisioned for a Canadian Social

Council. We hope to see its Advisory Council strengthened so that it can be truly effective in this area.

2. We appreciate and urge continuance of the support which the Agricultural Regional Development Act has given to New Start and to Native development, as well as to the poor areas of rural Alberta.

3. We would like to see massive support from the private sector within the Canadian Coalition for Development, both nationally and regionally. We strongly believe that such coalitions have an indispensable role to play in the voluntary process between Government and the people in the poverty programmes. Such coalitions should be able to identify and work effectively with all levels of Government on the one hand, and on the other hand with voluntary self-help groups and private agencies. Here in Calgary we have some 35 groups in the Coalition committed to common action against poverty. These include many of the local groups whose national bodies are members of the Canadian Coalition for Development. Although we have been involved in many development projects, we are aware that a large number of our own church members are either apathetic or hostile toward church involvement in the social field.

We hope that your final recommendations will tell the truth about our lukewarm Canadian concern for our fellow Canadians caught in the poverty cycle.

4. We recommend that the new Canadian Social Council establish top level programmes for private involvement in Indian development.

(a) We contend that no matter when or whether the Provinces take over primary responsibility for native development from the Federal Department of Indian Affairs every effort be made to break the historically ineffective and unjust dependence of native peoples on government bodies by encouraging and subsidizing intermediate bodies to share responsibility for researching and planning native development programmes with the native people themselves. In Alberta, we have seen many results from the efforts of community development offices to help native people gain awareness of the possibilities open to them. However, this programme should be phased out in favour of superior and sound economic

programmes. Otherwise we will soon be facing new frustrations as the native awareness increases.

(b) It is important at this time in Alberta that Federal capital funds be matched by Provincial capital funds for the economic development of natives, and that this be done in such a way as to safeguard for the native peoples those rights to a degree of cultural and political autonomy which they currently understand as the responsibility of the Federal Government to protect.

(c) It is important that the private sector, particularly corporations, corporate executives, labour unions, and the church be encouraged to provide experienced personnel, as well as some capital, for native development. Many groups in the private sector would contribute generously in a spirit of local justice if provincial channels were in existence to co-ordinate and deliver what they have to offer. Loaned personnel could be made available for native development just as they are currently for service abroad through the Canadian Executive Service Overseas.

5. Concurrent with programmes designed to assist the native Indians in meeting their problems, the Canadian Social Council should begin immediately a comprehensive programme of assistance to the socially and economically deprived members of the rest of the Canadian society. The Council's goal should be to make Canadians aware that the well-being of every citizen is the nation's number one priority. (Present welfare legislation in our Canadian provinces, for example, tend to give recipients the impression that government and the world of business is dedicated to the perpetuation of the poverty cycle). A few specific areas crying for immediate action are:

(a) Amendment of the Old Age Security Act so that increases in payment are tied to the rise in the cost of living.

(b) Overhaul of the Unemployment Insurance Act to provide fewer exemptions from coverage and increased benefits to participants.

(c) Upgrading of adult education and retraining so that every poor person is vigorously encouraged to take advantage of educational opportunities.

should be made available universally to develop his full potential within our society.

(d) Encouragement of and assistance to self-help organizations, such as Tenant's Associations and Welfare Rights Groups, so that they can responsibly meet their own needs.

(e) Harmonization of social policy and tax policy, leading ultimately to some form of guaranteed annual income for all.

6. We welcome recent initiatives of the Federal Government in the area of development both in Canada and on the International front. We firmly believe in and strongly endorse the principle of our responsibility for fostering development Nationally and Internationally at the same time. The suffering of the under-developed countries is much more acute than our own, but we cannot expect Canadians to know what International development means unless they have been motivated to work and sacrifice for the development of the poor in Canada. The basic challenge which it is absolutely critical for us to meet in our day is to stimulate in our citizenry a far sharper sensitivity to the pains of our fellowmen in our shrinking global community, wherever they may be. We as Churchmen pledge ourselves to meet this challenge as vigorously as possible, and we implore all levels of Government to eschew the temptation to act on the basis of short-term political expediency and instead, to provide the imaginative leadership we so urgently need in this hour. In Calgary many poor people seem to resent funds going to the International field. We have always insisted that there is no contradiction between helping the National and International poor, hence we are really pleased with the Honourable Mitchell Sharp's "Foreign Policy for Canadians" in the series on International Development which reads, "A society able to ignore poverty abroad will find it much easier to ignore it at home." A society concerned about poverty and development abroad will be concerned about poverty and development at

home. Thus our foreign policy in this field becomes a continuation of our domestic policy."

7. We recommend that care should be taken, if a Canadian Social Council is established, to assure that proper lines of communication and relationship with its provincial counterparts be designed right into its original structure, with a view to minimizing Provincial-Federal tensions regarding social responsibility and social awareness.

8. We urge that this Canadian Social Council have responsibility in the area of International poverty and development as well, serving as a channel between the Canadian Inter-Development Agency and Canadian citizens. This would aid in preventing a false dichotomy from emerging by placing our responsibility for Canadian development in the setting of our proper simultaneous responsibility for International development.

9. We recognize that the Canada Assistance Act is model legislation. However, we earnestly hope that municipalities will be discouraged from using it for empire building and encouraged to involve private agencies and the private sector in accordance with the original design of the Act. As indicated above, we believe that the philosophy of this Act could and ought to be fruitfully applied to Indian affairs very soon, and we wonder whether the time is not at hand to apply it to International development in a more vigorous fashion as well.

This is our comment on the National presentation and our recommendations. We also desire that everyone should realize with the 1968 statement of the Economic Council of Canada that even in this wealthy city we have many deprived citizens who are "unwilling outsiders" and who are segregated into a "virtual non-participation in our society." We congratulate your committee on its first releases, and take confidence that your existence and impact will make our purpose more fruitful.

THE CALGARY INTER-FAITH
COMMUNITY
ACTION COMMITTEE

APPENDIX "G"

BRIEF

to

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON POVERTY

submitted by

BOWNESS-MONTGOMERY DAY CARE
ASSOCIATION

Calgary, Alberta.

PART I

INTRODUCTION

Poverty is a lack of competent subsistence (Funk and Wagnall); to many this is the lack of dollar-value means. To us it is the lack of ability to provide dollar-value means, which stems directly from inadequate education.

The purpose of our Brief is to point out the need for:

(a) Federal recognition of the problem at its root—the child,

(b) Federal action on one aspect of the problem; adequate facilities and standards for good child care to supplement the working parent(s) and assist other parents in providing the necessary requirements for a child to grow and mature into a responsible citizen.

The vital importance of early childhood experience in the development of personality and intelligence is becoming increasingly evident with advances in our understanding of child development. Understanding of the family as the major socializing influence on the child indicates the necessity of growth and change within the family unit as well.

Day care facilities offer a unique opportunity to counteract in early childhood a number of deficiencies related to poverty. It can provide not only physical care and nutrition but also intellectual growth, healthy personality, attitudes and opportunity for parent involvement and growth.

PART II

DEFINING GOOD DAY CARE

Day care is, essentially, a program of child development for children predominantly in pre-school age range, 2 to 6 years, although a comprehensive program ought to provide for care of infants under 2 years and school age children who do not receive supervision in the morning, at noon or after school when their working parents are not at home.

Day Care is a program which seeks to promote the social, emotional, physical and intellectual needs of children. It is not babysitting and it is not a kindergarten, although there are certainly elements of both in these inherent in good day care. The children, by interacting with peers and *trained* adults who can recognize their needs and assist in meeting them, learn to develop healthy, positive attitudes towards social relationships in particular and towards life in general. The children grow in an atmosphere which promotes the individuality of expression and action so necessary to a healthy adult life.

At present costs, good day care as conceived in this brief is expensive—\$6.00 per diem, or even more is obviously required to operate a good quality day care centre which will achieve the kinds of goals envisaged by our group.

The key to good day care is qualified staff. Sufficient highly trained staff is vital for the encouragement of intellectual achievement and for the development of the sense of per-

sonal worth and power so necessary to the future achievement pattern of the child.

excellent day care is essential to the growth of a strong country.

There are those (primarily those people of the opinion that day care is little more than "glorified babysitting") who would strongly oppose this concept. But we feel that if day care is to really do anything for children that a *minimum* of 2 trained staff for every group of 10 to 15 children is essential. Without this staff/child ratio the program runs the risk of providing custodial care only, and monies spent to develop day care centres that provide anything less than this minimum staffing ratio may be money wasted. The goals of this program will not be achieved.

Although we feel the necessity for a strong emphasis on trained staff, no day care facility can operate effectively without the involvement of volunteers who are willing to commit themselves on a consistent basis to working in the centres under the direction of the trained staff. These volunteers may serve on Boards, fundraising, maintenance of buildings and equipment, etc. This is another way of saying that the day care program will have a better chance of success if it has a broad base of community support, so that each centre can truly be seen as part of the community. This requires much to be done in the area of public education; without which the costs and the goals of the program will gain little sympathy.

We would urge that this committee lend its support to the concept that day care, because of its advantages to the child and his family should be available to all families wishing this service at costs according to ability to pay. Provision of good day care should not be restricted to any one level of society. Day care should be given the status (and the money) appropriate to its importance as outlined in this brief.

PART III

RECOMMENDATIONS

1. The Federal Government should immediately formulate and accept a philosophy that

2. That national standards for day care facilities be established. Following this that each province be encouraged to enact day care legislation encompassing these standards. As a precedent for this we cite the National Building Code.

3. That a program of public education be undertaken to inform the population of the value of good day care. All media facilities should be used, spot TV announcements, hand bills delivered to homes, films, etc.

4. That increased funds be made available in conjunction with the provincial and municipal governments to ensure:

(a) adequate capital cost funding of proposed day care centres be available to communities where there is an evident need and desire to set up such facilities,

(b) adequate subsidizing of approved day care centres.

5. That standards be set for the staff of day care centres and that immediate programs be established to upgrade the quality of existing day care operators.

6. That Universities and Colleges be encouraged to set up training programs to ensure a smoother flow of teachers trained in pre-school education. As an example we would cite the British system of training Nursery Nurses.

In conclusion we wish to stress that we do *not* envision or expect compulsory, state-controlled day care centres. Rather we expect a flexibility in programs within set standards to allow very important parent and community involvement. We feel very strongly that good day care facilities must be available for those who need or desire this service.

July 3, 1970.

APPENDIX "H"

A STATEMENT CONCERNING
THE
PRE-SCHOOL PARENT-CHILD
COOPERATIVE
IN CALGARY
"POVERTY AND EARLY CHILDHOOD
EDUCATION"
GOVERNMENT OF CANADA
MONDAY, JULY 20, 1970

THE PRE-SCHOOL PARENT-CHILD
COOPERATIVE

BACKGROUND:

In January 1970 a group of Calgary residents, after a series of informal meetings, came to realize that they and their children were becoming increasingly isolated from other families in the community. Families from low income groups for obvious reasons, found that they were unable to participate in the educational, recreational, and social activities of more affluent families. Residential segregation in North American cities generates ghettos, not only the obvious centres of poverty but also university ghettos, executive ghettos and so on to the detriment of children confined therein who must eventually adjust to a wider society.

The group decided to establish a Pre-School Parent-Child Cooperative in order to promote the ideals of a more integrated community on a small scale. The experience of operating and maintaining a pre-school group would be a vehicle through which the co-operative spirit of the undertaking could be expressed. By providing a rich experience for preschool children from both advantaged and disadvantaged backgrounds they believed that the children would successfully integrate into the larger society to the mutual benefit of all concerned.

The Unitarian Church of Calgary, who support the project, generously made available their premises at 204-16th Ave. N.W. at a nominal rent. The Co-op began operating on April 30, 1970 having secured the services of a highly qualified director-teacher.

PURPOSE:

A Parent-Child Cooperative is essentially one owned and operated by the parents of the children in the school. It has a dual purpose:

1. to provide a rich group experience for pre-school children.
2. to provide greater insight and understanding by parents in matters related to development in early childhood.

As a cooperative, it is understood that maximum feasible participation from the parent is essential. Mothers from greatly differing social and economic backgrounds establish close working and personal relationships to their mutual benefit. The continuing daily care provided by the P.S.P.C.C. centre will enable mothers to pursue economically, socially, or educationally valuable goals which would be unobtainable should daily child care confine them to their homes. This project does not deny or gloss over the economic needs of low-income families but neither does it wish to over-emphasize this phenomenon to the detriment of other factors. This is not a scheme to provide cheap nursery school education nor is it intended as a mere babysitting service.

As a cooperative they require equal participation by all their members and believe that equally valuable social and educational contributions can be made by all the families involved.

OPERATION:

The P.S.P.C.C. presently has an enrollment of 22 children (16 parents) and operates

mornings per week. A waiting list already exists. The desired program for the fall will consist of 25 children attending 5 mornings per week from 9:15 to 11:45 a.m.

Some special features are:

1. Teaching and supervision is done by parents under the guidance of a professional preschool teacher who because of her experience and skills is ideally suited to the position. In addition to her undergraduate degree, she holds a post graduate Certificate in Nursery Education from the Institute of Child Development at the University of Toronto.

2. Teaching and supervision is undertaken on a ratio of one adult to five children.

3. Parents are required to attend a series of workshops and meetings which they themselves formulate concerned with matters of development in early childhood.

4. Parents must participate in at least one of the standing committees responsible for all aspects of the school's functioning, for example transportation, secretarial work, field trips, supplies, the building of equipment, and new mother initiation.

The operations of the P.S.P.C.C. are in accordance with the standards already accepted by the Social Service Committee of the City of Calgary, and the Department of Social Development, Province of Alberta. Admission is open equally to any resident of the City of Calgary in order of application save that we maintain an even ratio of low-income and middle-income families.

A Board of Directors is elected in the usual manner. With the exception of the director-teacher, the operation of the P.S.P.C.C. is in the hands of the parents.

ECONOMICS:

Private donations and efforts of the members made possible the purchase of minimal capital equipment and renovation of the present facilities. The contributions of members together with donations from service clubs and industry will carry the operation of the project until the end of August 1970.

Realistic membership fees were established by the families involved and the co-op is currently functioning with reduced days and standards to remain economically viable. The director-teacher is currently donating her services without payment. The latter must be regarded as a temporary measure.

The monthly fee schedule is: \$5.00 for 1 child, \$7.50 for 2 children, and \$10.00 for 3 children. The members believe that it is essential to the principle of equal involvement and responsibility of all participating parents that no fee differential according to a means test be imposed. Such a procedure would destroy any potential that the venture has of improving the social integration of the participating families.

CONCLUSION:

We believe that this is a valuable community project. The high standards of educational experience and the desired degree of social integration will not be possible without financial assistance from all levels of government.

Respectfully yours,

Mrs. Pat Black,
President.

APPENDIX "I"

A BRIEF TO THE SENATE COMMITTEE
ON POVERTY
CALGARY, ALBERTA

A Personal Brief Presented by: Mr. A. T.
Hagan, July 20, 1970

TABLE OF CONTENTS

I. Introduction

II. A Case For Prevention

III. Conclusion

IV. Recommendations

APPENDICES

APPENDIX A:

An Annual Cost Comparison: Public
Assistance and Day Care

APPENDIX B: Per Diem Rates of some
Calgary Institutions

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I INTRODUCTION:

I. 1 This brief does not follow the formal guidelines established by the Senate Committee on Poverty. It is an appeal for further governmental and public support for the concept of subsidized day care services, with some limited attempt at outlining the comparative costs of other programs necessitated because of family breakdown.

I. 2 The inclusion of excerpts from the tragic life of one individual and his family represents an attempt on my part to dramatize the effects of family breakdown occasioned in my view by the effects of poverty. It is hoped that reference to this tragic example will in no way offend those thousands of Canadian families, be they single or two parent families, that are making use of day care services for their children and are realizing for themselves and their children the benefits of good quality day care. The example is intended to focus on what can happen if family breakdown is further exasperated by the lack of what is seen to be essential community service for many Canadian families.

II. BOYS WILL BE MEN: A CASE FOR PREVENTION:

II. 1 The importance of environment, economics, and attitudes on the level of emotional growth and maturity in later life has long been emphasized by some of our most knowledgeable researchers in the field of social science. The lack of emotional security causes problems in personality in later life as is evidenced in the following profile of disaster:

II. 2 "His father died before he was born. Although his older brothers were in an orphanage, he lived with his mother during his early years, perhaps because he was too young for the orphanage. Just before his third birthday, his mother went to work and he was left with his aunt. She had five children of her own and so had little time to give him. For a short while, he stayed with another temporary guardian who described him as a bad, unmanageable child who threw his toy gun at her.

II. 3 Not long after his third birthday, he was sent to join his brothers in the orphanage. By his thirteenth birthday, he had lived in at least thirteen homes (not including the orphanage) in four cities and had attended six schools. He became increasingly rebellious against authority. In an argument with his sister-in-law, he drew a knife. He had no respect for his mother and at least once struck her. He hated school and became a chronic truant. He cursed the attendance officer who investigated.

II. 4 He was sent to a home for delinquents. A psychiatrist found him anxiety ridden and shy, hobbled by feelings of awkwardness and insecurity. He daydreamed of being omnipotent and powerful. He admitted that he sometime pictured himself in situations where he hurt and killed people.¹

¹Excerpts from the November 1964 Newsletter, "Wednesday's Children", distributed by the Children's Home of Winnipeg for Disturbed Boys and Girls.

II. 5 The following résumé represents a brief but totally tragic excerpt from the life of a single human being whose life eventually ended in misery.

II. 6 A cursory perusal of this man's miserable life could, and probably would, evoke a variety of comments: "Too bad, but so what!"; "He was nuts, that's all!"; "Well, that's what happens with these welfare families!"; "It was the mother's fault for marrying a bum"; "That kid should have had more discipline—that would have fixed him up!"; "There are always some rotten apples in the barrel—you've got to take the good with the bad" and so on.

II. 7 However, one more perceptively inclined might on reading this excerpt raise some questions in his mind about this case situation: "How did the father die? Couldn't he support his family?"; "Why did the mother work? Did she have to? Was the community in which she lived sympathetic to her family's needs?"; "What did this young boy get from his aunt with whom he was forced to reside that he might have got elsewhere?", etc.

II. 8 Questions are raised, but many remain unanswerable. But do they? Or is it a fact that we too often use the excuse of the "complexity of human relations" as a scapegoat to rid ourselves of the anxiety associated with a tedious effort to find elusive answers to nagging questions.

II. 9 At the risk of succumbing to the proposition that hindsight in human affairs is the mother of egotism, let us briefly pursue trying to find out—*why* this miserable personality?

II. 10 Our personality in question was disadvantaged at birth—his father was already dead. His brother were already in an orphanage, perhaps because of neglect occasioned by a mother unable to cope, *alone*, with the task of child-rearing. His mother worked—at what and for what monetary reward, remains unspecified, but perhaps she felt that was the only choice open for her; perhaps because work seemed an "escape" from the constant pressures of mothering several children. Perhaps the community in which she resided had a "work for welfare" philosophy which indiscriminately applied to all recipients of public assistance. Perhaps the mother had personality difficulties of her own,

or maybe she felt that she just wanted to get rid of her kids and pass on responsibility for their welfare to relatives, or orphanage, or foster home.

II. 11 Perhaps, perhaps . . . ! The list of alternative explanations is endless. What we can say with certainty is that this was a broken family and that almost certainly this factor had a causal relationship to the fate of the boy in question.

II. 12 What we can also say about this situation is that if this family had been given support, if the mother had been given sound supplementary help in raising her children, even though she might have continued to work to support them financially, the children might have been given a better break in life . . . Perhaps?

II. 13 Day care (full day-time supervision and programming for the physical, social, intellectual, and emotional needs of pre-school children) might have conceivably improved the situation to the point where family breakdown and later personality break down could have been ameliorated or been completely prevented.

II. 14 And why it is *not* presumptuous to suggest that day care would have produced a different end result?—Because day care, with its emphasis on total family needs creates an atmosphere wherein trained staff can guide the child into healthy social interaction with peers and adults. He can learn to be master of his own fate within a child's world—so that the fantasies of childhood do not become the warped delusions of adulthood. He can learn to compete, to win, to lose, to tie, without the threat of his later life being marred by paranoid parody. He can learn to appreciate the roles of the adult in a complex world, and he can begin to incorporate healthy attitudes into his own personality in spite of some of the ugliness of the world in which he lives.

II. 15 And if mother is working, she is not devoting as much time to her children as she would be, but maybe she is doing a better job with them during the time she does spend with them . . . and when she is at work she will at least have the peace of mind that comes from knowing that her children are being looked after. And undoubtedly, mother does gain satisfaction from her preserved roles of mother, provider, comforter, listen-

er—listening to a child who is now interested in life, who has become a little more vibrant and alive because of his experiences in the day care centre, and less pre-occupied with the fear that today or tomorrow holds the fate of being shipped off to an orphanage, foster home, or to an aunt who doesn't really have time for him.

II. 16 And perhaps our boy in question graduates from day care, or Head Start, or pre-school, or day nursery, into elementary school, high school, and university. So maybe he only *hears* the mention of *attendance officer* in passing, and never meets one personally let alone curse one. And maybe, just maybe, our boy becomes a lawyer, doctor, priest, executive,—prime minister, president?

III. CONCLUSIONS:

III. 1 Day care is not a panacea. It is an attempt at prevention—something more than just the straight “hand-out” that so often, sometimes justifiably, is criticized by the public at large. It is an attempt that is promised on the philosophy that the family that is helped to stay together—sometimes does, and society as a whole benefits!

III. 2 Day care costs an average of \$6.00 daily. The anxiety-ridden and insecure boy in our case example grew up and became a man, albeit a miserable one, and cost himself and society much more. On November 22, 1963, at age 24, Lee Harvey Oswald assassinated John Fitzgerald Kennedy, President of the United States.

IV. RECOMMENDATIONS:

IV. 1 In the light of the foregoing discussion, it is urged that this Special Committee bring its influence to bear on the following:

IV. 2 (a) That the federal government make available directly or through the provinces under the terms of the Canada Assistance Plan or other appropriate resources, funds that will be specifically designated to develop and support a comprehensive day care program across Canada.

IV. 3 (b) With reference to recommendation “a”, that the federal government also make available financial incentives to such industries and organizations (e.g. hospitals, universities, colleges) so that the latter will be encouraged to develop day care facilities in accordance with the demand for such service.

IV. 4 (c) That the Central Mortgage and Housing Corporation be urged to review its present restriction whereby community groups and other organizations wishing to construct day care centres cannot receive mortgage money for capital construction or renovation costs. Grants, or at least long-term, low interest mortgages should be made available in those communities where there is a proven need and a desire to develop such centres.

IV. 5 (d) That the “White Paper on Taxation” recommendations concerning income tax deductions for child care expenses be implemented only with further consideration by the appropriate authorities of which families and under which specific circumstances such deductions should be permitted.

(e) That the federal government take the initiative in implementing a program of public education that will aim at fully acquainting the Canadian public with the benefits of good quality day care.

Respectfully submitted,
A. T. Hagan

APPENDIX A

“An ounce of Prevention...”

An Annual Cost Comparison:
Public Assistance and day Care

The following example estimates are outlined to demonstrate the cost of maintaining a family unit on Public Assistance as compared with the cost of providing that same family unit with services in a group day care centre for 75 children, including the capital construction and equipment costs of the latter.

For purposes of this comparison the family unit will be considered as a solo-support mother and her three year old female child.

The comparison is based on a one year period.

1. Public Assistance

Payments to Mother and Child:	
\$200.00 monthly (average)	
× 12 months:	\$2,400.00
Average Administrative Cost:	
\$22.00 annually (based on 1968 stats.)	22.00
Total Annual Cost of Public Assistance:	\$2,422.00

2. Day Care:		
Per Capita Cost of Building Construction:		
\$200,000.00 amortized at 5% over 20 years:	\$ 133.33	
Per Capita Cost of Capital Equipment:		
\$20,000.00 amortized at 20% over 5 years:	53.33	
Per Capita Cost of Operating Expenses:		
\$80,000.00 ÷ 75 children	1,066.67	
	<hr/>	
Less Parental Fee Contributions:	\$1,253.33	
\$10.00 monthly	120.00	
	<hr/>	
Total Annual Average Cost to Taxpayer	\$1,133.33	
	<hr/>	
Estimated Annual Savings of Day Care over Public Assistance:	\$2,422.00	
	1,133.00	
	<hr/>	
	\$1,288.67	
	<hr/>	
Comparison of Per Diem Costs:		
Public Assistance:	\$2,422.00 = \$6.64	
	<hr/>	
Day Care:	365 days	
	\$1,133.33 = \$4.53	
	<hr/>	
	250 days	
Net Savings on Day Care:	\$2.11	
	<hr/>	

This basically economic comparison does not recognize the value of the program of the day care centre which emphasizes social, intellectual and emotional maturity. Some of the benefits of the program are as follows:

(1) By providing for the needs of the child at the centre and assisting parents in their child-rearing responsibilities, family breakdown can be prevented and, in the case of the sole-support mother, her economic roles of the breadwinner, taxpayer, and consumer of services are maintained and enhanced.

(2) By providing experiences for the child which are based on a program of healthy social interaction with peers and adults, the chances of breaking the "inheritance of poverty cycle" are increased. (It has been repeatedly pointed out by the social scientists that there can be an identified number of "inherited" attitudes that contribute to a later pattern of socio-economic dependence.) In other words, by

providing the parents with a "break" in terms of subsidized day care, there is an opportunity to assist parents in enabling their children to mature into healthy members of society.

(3) Day Care in many instances can prevent the ulceration of a minor family abrasion into a major problem. A classic example here is child neglect which may result from, or be occasioned by, a lack of support when the parent requires it. The introduction of statutory services can mean on the economic level alone a tremendous public expense. Many treatment institutions for emotionally disturbed children range upwards from \$25.00 daily, or about five times the cost of day care.

In the truest sense of the adage, both in terms of straight economies and the not so immediately observable financial benefits of the factors outlined above, "An ounce of prevention is worth... more than a pound of relief."

APPENDIX B

Some Average Daily Costs of Institutional Care June 1970, Calgary

Some Average Daily Costs of Institutional Care	
<i>Dominic Savo Residence</i>	\$13.85
(residential treatment centre for 9 boys)	
<i>Don Bosco Home</i>	12.50
(group home for 12 boys between 10 and 18 years)	
<i>Providence Creche</i>	6.45
(residential program for 20 unwed mothers)	
<i>William Roper Hull Homes</i>	36.00
(residential treatment for emotionally disturbed children, age 8 to 16 years)	
<i>William Roper Hull Homes</i>	8.00
(proposed day treatment centre for 30 emotionally disturbed girls and boys)	(estimated)
<i>City of Calgary Receiving Home and Shelter</i> ...	16.00
(residential care on a temporary basis for 95 (approximately) neglected children)	
<i>Salvation Army Children's Village</i>	9.50
(5 cottages for care of children aged 6 to 18 years, including problem children and those attending special classes)	
<i>Hill Haven (Girl's Home)</i>	5.50
(46 Maternity patients)	
<i>Jail</i>	10.00—15.00
	(estimated)
<i>In Patient Psychiatric Care</i>	40.00
(all city hospitals)	

Special Senate Committee

<i>Woods Christian Home</i>	60.00
(proposed; 10 children; 10 to 16 years, initially)	
<i>Alberta Hospital, Ponoka</i>	13.50
<i>Marydale, Edmonton</i>	20.00
(Residential treatment)	

about the costs for various programs named
in this brief.

Brother Christopher,	Don Bosco House
Mrs. R. Randall,	Providence Creche
Mr. B. Sharpe,	William Roper Hull House
Mr. S. E. Blakely,	City of Calgary Social Serv- ice Dept.
Brig. Wm. Shaver,	Public Relations Officer, Sal- vation Army
Mr. R. LaJeunesse,	Canadian Mental Health As- sociation

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

The author is indebted to all those persons
who co-operated in supplying information

A. T. Hagan

APPENDIX "J"

BRIEF

to the

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON
POVERTY

submitted by:

THE LOW INCOME WORKING
COMMITTEE

Calgary, Alberta

ATTENTION: Chairman Senator Croll,
Deputy Chairman Senator Fournier

On April 22, 1969 when this Committee was convened Senator Croll gave approximate percentages of those living in poverty: 25 per cent were the disadvantaged, the disabled in all ways and the elderly. 50 per cent were working in some manner that did not enable them to adequately meet the needs of their families. It is with this category that this Brief is concerned.

In a society where the name of the game is earning power this sector has insufficient capacity. Poverty is the lack of money and people are poor because they have no money. Poverty does not require studies in depth; no offset rates; no "needs level, benefit level" and other sociological jargon; no formulas; no discussion of "cultural deprivation" etc; just a coming to grips, in principle and with substance, with the problem.

The group represented here is not a tiny fringe collection, but a sizeable segment of the population and it is growing. This low-income working committee is representative of four lower-income Calgary communities, and of course, we are representative of the poor within these communities. Department of National Revenue reports in 1968 on 6,966,-914 taxable returns that 1,630,504 showed a total income of \$3,000 or less. In 1967 1,565,-920 were in the same category.

There are 1.66 million Old Age Pensioners in Canada; 1,525,142 people as reported by the Department of Health and Welfare on August 1969. Of these 785,037 are in receipt of at least some Federal Supplement according to the Dominion Bureau of Statistics. This is 51.5 per cent of all living people born on or before 1904. Despite the phenomenal growth and development of Canada during the first 70 years of this century with unsurpassed

booms, two great wars and the Depression the odds were less than 1 in 2 that any one person would accumulate sufficient funds to enjoy a comfortable old age.

Either you subscribe to the theory that over one half of the population were useless, handicapped, or undeserving in some way although they contributed their lifetime to the country, survived the depression, and in many cases offered life itself. Or you have to admit that the majority of people were bucking a loaded wheel probably from birth, and they of course lost.

Palliatives have been tried from time to time: a most minimum minimum wage Act—The Federal Government has just raised this to \$1.65 per hour—first increase in 5 years, up by 45 cents. For a 44 hour, 52 week year, this is \$3,775.20—far below any welfare payments to a family unit of two adults and three children and \$1,024.00 below the latest poverty line drawn by the Economic Council of Canada or, a good \$2,000.00 below other norms e.g. Senators own research staff. Family Allowances were hailed as the answer. Since 1946 when this programme was fully operational the cost of living has increased 111 per cent, the allowances by 15 per cent. Unemployment Insurance is another instance where the Low Income Working Groups were only slightly assisted due to the underlying philosophy that if benefits were too high no one would work. Yet, it is the distinct experience of low-income workers that benefits—their own insurance—contributed benefits—from unemployment insurance schemes has been, clearly too low.

A popular form of relief is to establish non-viable industries in depressed areas e.g. Clairtone, and Canada's pride, the only non-

producing nuclear plant in the world at Glace Bay. These revert to the Government and are paid for by taxation, of course. The Winter Works subsidy which eventually had those eligible delaying summer projects to winter at twice the cost to the taxpayer. At least it spread the unemployment statistics over the full year.

A theory religiously held by the well-to-do is based on the Gross National Product. If this is a valid measurement of anything besides possibly how much garbage and pollution we produce; this includes ever-rising funeral costs of the prematurely dead, medical and dental bills which could be reduced by more immediate attention to these needs. It cannot be said that the benefits are spread evenly or even that it has filtered down very well during this century. (Mr. William E. Thompson, President of the Investment Dealer Association of Canada strongly supported this last month at Jasper, Alberta. He also said that 750,000 Canadians invest. Central Mortgage and Housing believe this to the extent that they altered the Gross Debt Service from 25 per cent of the income of the head of the house to 27 per cent including all of the wife's investment income and 20 per cent of her earned income. Needless to say this did not result in a rush to buy houses at a time when the housing shortage is reaching truly a crises condition.

Low Income Working people are inclined to be thrifty as shown by a submission by the Canada Life Insurance Association to the Commons Sub-Committee 1967-70 "The Canadians earning between \$3,600 and \$9,000 annually account for 45 per cent of all personal savings". There were 1,922,669 (28 per cent) taxpayers declaring taxable incomes between \$5,000.00 and \$7,000.00 in 1968. The savings mentioned above are literally small sums between \$30.00 and \$90.00 kept in the bank as an immediate reserve against the loss of a few hours work next week or next month. The Low Income Working groups do not buy Canada Savings Bonds. Not that they are sufficiently clever to see the insanity and massive swindle involved in this but solely because they have no margin at all for any type of investments which in any way could increase their future income.

The Dominion Bureau of Statistics surveyed 2,096 families comprising 3.8 persons per household in 1967. They state the following figures were average but did not mention the range of income and to reach an average

figure there has to be a great many below the given figure. The following expenditures are not average for the low income group as they simply did not reach this income level.

Food	\$1,822
Shelter	1,368
Clothing	749
Transportation	1,028
Medical Care	299
Recreation	314
Tobacco and Alcohol	354
Household Operations	349
Furnishings and Appliances	385
Personal Care	207
Reading	59
Education	79
Security	453
Gifts	212
	<hr/>
	\$7,678

It is to be noted that this does not include 12 per cent Federal Sales Tax, Property Tax or Excise Duties. This rose from \$7,031 in 1964. Personal Taxes rose from 9.2 per cent to 12.9 per cent during that period and since 1967 the cost of living has risen 15 per cent. As a contrast an ORC study of 150,000 Financial Post subscribers in December 1969 reveals that the average income is \$15,000 with the average reader owning a home valued at \$37,000. This section of the community spends \$1,053 a year on alcohol and \$944 on a three week vacation.

The sheer lack of purchasing power by the Lower Income Working groups should be frightening even to the disciples of the Gross National Product. Ten thousand families owning or paying for their own modest home generates vastly more commerce in every field from lawnmowers to shingle stain than one fourth the number of residences in the \$37,000 and up category.

This is dramatically shown by a recent drive by the Calgary Co-op. This is one of the largest in Canada with some 45,000 active participating members. If each member would increase his weekly purchases by only \$2.00 yearly sales would improve in the amount of \$2,300,000.

This lack of earning power is actually a continuous drain on all parts of life in Canada and is degrading the value base from which all judgments are more or less formed. For example, The Victoria Park Community here in Calgary have been struggling for years to preserve their area against the Starn

pede Board and the community's Redevelopment Committee has adopted a slogan, "Stampede for cattle; Victoria Park for people". This is in protest to a society which definitely places a higher value on a bull or a race horse than on a person. This was probably a predictable result of the circumstances now existing when generally speaking a person's earning power is no longer the result of skill, ability, merit or endeavor as is still taught by rote to defenceless tiny tots. Now income is directly related to how powerful is the Union to which you belong. "Unions" includes not only trades but all peer groups such as Medical Associations, Law Societies, etc. which maintain the level of wages or fees for their own members. The recent bill in parliament to increase M.P.'s pensions was rushed through so easily. But, on May 4, 1970 by a vote of 105 to 66 a motion to increase Old Age Pensions and those of veterans was defeated. Obviously the M.P.'s have a strong union—the Old Age Pensioners and veterans none at all. An interesting point is that none of the M.P.'s is sitting except by their own choice; in fact every few years the populace is assaulted over the airways by the press with their begging please to be elected under whatever pay arrangements are existent at the time while not one of the Old Age Pensioners or veterans is in his present position by choice. This was an indecent display of not only unionism but of raw, naked Power at its worst. Power without responsibility.

Franklin D. Roosevelt once said "The test of our progress and of our society is not whether we add more to the abundance of those who have much; it is whether we provide enough for those who have too little".

On the 1st of June 1970 the Honourable John Munro when speaking to the Canadian Conference on Social Welfare in favor of the Guaranteed Annual Income said, "If payments were to reach meaningful levels—say \$3,600 for a family of four." His total ignorance or regard for figures compiled and available in his own Department indicates a detachment verging on the psychotic.

Endless Government bureaucracies have been built and are building to minister to the needs of the underprivileged but not the needs of the Low Income groups. They have no resource to which they can turn to obtain that pair of spectacles for a child, no floor through which they cannot drop. By swallowing the last remnants of pride they can go to Lions or a Rotary Club and their specific

need would quite probably be paid for but there is an intolerable gap between individual charity and a policy in such matters.

The Low Income Working groups suffer from your complete incapacity to imagine their condition. They are not you. They are not rich! Who are they? You might presume to say that they are yourselves living under the Poverty Line except that you cannot conceive that condition any more than a person with normal vision can understand the world as it appears to some afflicted with color blindness. Imagine yourselves not purchasing a book you want; not subscribing to any magazines; not taking a vacation. The great questions of our time do not interest you. The Pearson Project of 1 per cent of Gross National Product for foreign aid; where the Canadian dollar stands in relation to the German Mark. Despite the extensive and excessive press reporting of the Benson White Paper a poll taken on June 15, 1970 showed that barely one half of the people had ever even heard of it.

Taking the Dominion Bureau of Statistics figures mentioned previously on reading expenditures when a mail subscription for the Calgary Herald costs \$40 a year leaving \$19 for all other books it is apparent that a major source of information for Low Income Groups is the newspaper. The editorial position of this can be biased and usually is against the Low Income people and according to a Brief presented to the Senate Committee on Mass Media the reportorial staff leave a great deal to be desired.*

Our society and an allegedly responsible Government is simply not geared to those with low incomes. It is a crime or at least a suspicious deviation to be living around the Poverty Line; how large this deviant sector is to become before it reaches the norm shown by OAP statistics is an interesting speculation.

The total absence of any regard or consideration of the marginal earner and the endless struggle with little energy to pursue it can be aptly illustrated. After many, many years the abuses and uselessness of the Needy Litigants Committee was recognized by the Government of Alberta. A grant of \$800,000 was allotted to establish a new organization.

*Sherbrooke Record claims journalists are ignorant, lazy and opinionated as well as intellectually dishonest.

The Law Society proceeded to arrange this in quiet solitude; they were prepared to blithely take advantage of this \$800,000 of taxpayers money without any consultation with those who would be using the services or the taxpayers. Fortunately the Calgary Community Institute became aware of this situation and on behalf of the people, interceded with some promise of success. But why should all this be necessary in this country? Why?

The Canadian Conference on Housing (1968) made a minute to the effect that all Canadians have the right to be adequately housed whether they can afford it or not. With this background the Experimental Housing Grant of \$200,000,000 was announced in February 1970. This sum does not seem to be filtering down very fast but it did create another instant para-bureaucracy.

Senator Croll in his interim report on this Committee (June 25, 1970, page 1361) stated that the total cost for social service to every level of Government was between \$7½ billion and \$8 billion. There is no reason to doubt this staggering amount as being the total shown in various budgets of governing bodies, but the vital figure and one that is impossible to obtain is how much of this was "serviceable money"; how much reached the hands of the recipients for whom it is intended. Any private charity such as United Fund, etc. proclaim the low administration cost in relation to the totals involved but this is horribly and conspicuously lacking in Government reports. The total inability to reduce a burgeoning bureaucracy would seem to imply that those who run the country are *not* the Government. As of April 13, 1970 there were 219,885 Federal Civil Servants. When the so-called economy drive was instituted the Prime Minister said that there would be 25,000 reduction in staff. By June 24, 1970 this figure had dwindled to 301 who were actually discharged. It would seem that this Committee might profitably spend some time obtaining facts pertaining to the foregoing remarks. If the Boards of the companies on which you sit discharged workers in this ratio when cutting back you would not long remain on the Boards as there would be no companies. The sheer cost of Government itself including pure waste, e.g. "Bonaventure" contributes in no small part to the inflationary trend, but apparently by common consent, there is very little factual information on this subject.

It is to this end then that your duty lies to protect the taxpayers from yet another mass

bureaucracy springing up to administer any of your recommendations which may be adopted. A Guaranteed Annual Income is just begging for this but a Negative Income tax can easily be adapted to the existing machinery operated by the Department of National Revenue. It is interesting to note that the collecting arms of the Government are operated almost on a businesslike basis in contrast with the chaos in the hand-out divisions.

With a Negative Income Tax principle established a fundamental change in the Income Tax structure is necessary that basic personal exemption. This was established at \$2,000 in 1917 then reduced to \$1,000 in 1918 and has remained unchanged since. What would one thousand 1918 dollars be truly worth today? It is not necessary for a Benson paper to see that this is a penalty for being poor. Every party has tinkered with varying rates of taxes but why has no one taken a look at this basic exemption in 52 years? Could it be that those to whom it was important had a weak union? It couldn't be considered radical to revert to a position established in 1917.

What almost must be considered a conspiracy against the Low Income Working group is the lack of opportunity to do anything about their position or condition. Manpower has schemes for the unemployed to receive training; Welfare Departments can be stirred to provide facilities for recipients to upgrade their education; members of middle management are given educational sabbaticals and top management have conventions. But the Low Income Workers are stuck in their slots until they sink out of sight. Death. But they leave behind children born and raised in the poverty trap—spiritually poor for their lifetime despite whatever level they may attain bucking the loaded wheel because it is the only game in town. The positive loss is tragic a person has only one life and in during it, he has no great environment, no community, he has been irreparably robbed of a human right.

A study of 10,000 pregnant women in Montreal showed each averaged 778 calories/day this resulted in arrested physical and mental development, premature birth, and prenatal death. When born weight was low, i.e. below 7 lbs., 7 oz. Research by 14 medical centres have associated low birth weight with physical abnormality, and mental retardation, poor intellectual achievement later in life.

Disregarding the personal suffering, consider the endless unpredictable expense for decades into the future looking after these people. At the Royal Victoria Hospital where studies were conducted, prenatal mortality was reduced to 13.2 deaths—a figure below that of Sweden at 14.2 deaths/1,000. The price of one quart of milk per day achieved this, save the countless hundreds of thousands spent in the future on special schools to say nothing about the insult and waste to humanity.

Man is not only what he was, but what he does. And what he does, alters what he is—people can only learn from past mistakes because these mistakes continue to affect and alter future behavior.

As we say and have come to know, there are endless government bureaucracies built and building to attend to welfare recipients, powerful labour unions, to answer demands of organized people—but who speaks for the Low Income Working groups in a twilight land of want and insecurity?

This reminds us of John M. Keynes dictum—"Never mind the long pull—you will not be here"—this has proven only too true in 300 years. Some of the services that have been set up involving the hiring of middle-class persons to provide services to the poor. Why are not some of the working poor on this committee! Such a common sense proposal sounds almost...subversive. So many people are in what Martin Mayer calls the "grievance business".

The single most powerful determinant of behavior and well-being in our society is the level and security of an individual's income. It is as simple as that and much as certain folk tradition may resist the truth of the statement, it is without question the single most powerful finding that social science or common sense has ever come up with. Anyone lying about this, lies about other things as well.

It is fascinating to read government briefs to this committee, particularly No. 43 by the Ontario Department of Social and Family Services. The circumlocutory arguments in defence of irrational irrelevancies—the time taken to "process" a claim. When a fire occurs whether in a slum or a pent-house, the fire department arrives and gives it the full treatment until risk to further damages are removed—how do they manage it without "processing". How are these people, and there

are nothing but people involved, to survive in the meantime?

Just because the welfare department has supposedly computed the number of calories per day, required to feed a person... so forth... why has this level kicked around as the poverty line? Is there to be no quality to life? Of the bottom third? A family wants a dog—it needs a license, plus food. Is this to be denied them? Because they are unable to earn a sufficient sum to feed the dog?

Senator Fergusson congratulated the Ontario Department on an excellent brief which gives a tremendous amount of information. This is true; it does. (With dozens of full-time salaried civil servants working on it at the expense of the low-income working groups themselves and certainly all those who pay taxes.) Can you conceive of a brief by the low-income working groups where the price of every bus ticket has to be considered three times?

Senator Fournier (43:28)—"I have always believed that too easy access to handouts has produced many evils in this country. ...So, we have the working poor, and the poor who refuse to work. This is the problem that faces this committee and it is a most serious problem." Further remarks of the Senator will be acceded to quite readily, "But here are many people who have a too easy access to welfare and they become an evil to society. They cost the public a lot of money, and it is going from bad to worse."

Mr. Fournier, your task is to reassess your remarks in view of our peoples' experiences. Yes, Senator, there is a lot of agreement concerning this, such as your take of \$18,000 a year... plus expenses on a commission, or, didn't you think YOU were receiving a handout, or were on welfare? M.P.'s, M.L.A.'s, and countless numbers of civil servants, anyone sufficiently well-to-do to buy a home on the CMHC is getting a handout. Why should taxpayers guarantee banks loaning under CMHC the return of the capital—an essential of being a money-lender has always been the balancing of the interest rate against the risk. Now the banks collect interest but have no risk.

C.P.R. granted \$1 million to keep Canada running. They have worked themselves into a position where they can't lose. (e.g. Gordon Taylor's remarks on subsidizing branch lines because it would cost more to build roads.) What C.P.R. needs or demands C.P.R. gets.

Negative Income Tax is not the SOLUTION to poverty; this is obviously the result of the inequitable distribution of wealth and the priority of profits over people. No more did the so-called graduated income tax accomplish the distribution of wealth, as despite what appears in the operating manuals of the Department of National Revenue, "all" taxes are rigged to bear more heavily on the low-income working groups. Are you really on the same planet with some one around the poverty line when, if your income is \$90,000 a year and you pay income taxes of \$45,070 you still have \$44,930 left? Do you actually think that the Low Income Groups believe you can feel for them?

But it is an emergency measure that can be implemented within the existing bureaucratic structure without the imposition of MORE taxes. The emergency housing grants of \$200 million are not the answer to the housing crisis but they will obviously put a few more people under shelter.

The poverty problem is an emergency. It requires emergency measures—all income taxes, excise taxes... etc. were imposed for emergency measures (usually war) so that no precedents were being set by utilizing this method to alleviate immediate suffering.

The problems of the poor have never been heard, because to be heard money is required to present the case. This ironical circle accounts for the collective inarticulateness of the low-income groups. To present this brief before a hearing supposedly concerning poverty requires at least twelve copies. As Toynbee demonstrated, a challenge can be so great that the subjects or victims cannot respond at all. Did no one on this committee consider grants possibly as low as \$50 to any needy group to present their case? Did no one consider that possibly the experts on poverty and survival under these conditions might be the poor?

Summary to the Senate Committee on Poverty

Gentlemen and Ladies, we all know that no set of words, however neatly and sophistically put, can basically change what cries out for change. We know this; life confirms this reality daily. Nonetheless, acknowledging this committee to be engaged in the frustrating and trying task of putting into words the definitions, elucidations, and remedial reforms for the absolute and consistent elimination of poverty, we reassert the following to be relevant to our experiences:

- (a) The Negative Income Tax providing a floor, adequate to prevent anyone from sinking below a *humane level*;
- (2) raising the basic tax exemption (from the 1918 levels...) and indeed, tying the Poverty Committee's report into and with the other Committee's studies on the tax structure, and needed reforms.
- (3) in this Committee's educational task to Parliament and to the Canadian public, the specific use of the method of contrasting present realities and oppressive, unequal conditions, with the old formulae of conceiving and attempting to meet basic human needs and hopes—e.g. again, how long it has been since the basic tax exemption has been existing despite the most obvious need, long ago, for a major overhaul; or how unfair it has been for those on any kind of fixed income not to have had their allowance tied direct ongoing dynamics like inflation;
- (4) the admission that the poor have unequal power and resources and therefore, the provision of equivalent resources to the working people that upper income groups and people now have and enjoy undue favor in our economic and political resources—as a start, on the most minimal level, we urge the practical pragmatic equivalency before the law. That is, the freedom to choose the best lawyer for a given problem!

APPENDIX "K"

BRIEF TO THE SPECIAL SENATE
COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

Presented By

THE INGLEWOOD-RAMSAY
REDEVELOPMENT
COMMITTEE-CALGARY

The Inglewood-Ramsay Redevelopment Committee is a group of people appointed by the Inglewood Community Association and the Ramsay Community Association established to redevelop this area to make it a better place in which to live and bring up our children.

The Inglewood-Ramsay area is east of the Elbow River directly east of the downtown city centre, about 5 to 15 minutes from the Husky Tower. It is part of the "Inner City".

This area—one of the oldest in the city, has deteriorated badly during the past 15 years. Many people have not maintained their homes and landlords refuse to make meaningful improvements.

A basic cause of this attitude has been the expressed desire of the City of Calgary, because the residents have not been able to organize themselves in the past, to change this area gradually from residential to light industry. A planning map prepared in 1963 indicates the area to be wholly industrial. But even more devastating is a plan to place a wide arterial road through the middle of the residential district. With the prospect of having a home bulldozed out of existence, the incentive to keep it in good shape vanishes. Some houses are 60 years old. The Inglewood District is where Calgary started.

There are 6,000 people living in this district—the population of a small town. Many are blue collar workers and unskilled labourers as well as pensioners and clerks. There are old families who have inherited property; a great number of hourly rated workers particularly from the railroads and industrial plants such as Burns Foods Limited located in the District; quite a number of pensioners who own their own homes and have always lived here but find it difficult to

pay taxes and still maintain their homes; the working poor who are attracted or remain here because the homes are old and cheap; and people on welfare who are attracted because of older houses and hence cheaper rents.

The proposal to put the Bow Trail through the most densely populated part of the District would divide the area causing the segments to wither as residential and become light industry. The school would be phased out because of lack of population.

Why should this residential area not be phased out? There is first of all the uprooting of thousands of people who are now in a position to get by in their present accommodation but who could not do so in new suburban housing or expensive partments, nor is there any desire to move to such accommodation. The District is really Calgary's "Inner City" recreation area containing the Zoo and Conservatory, Calgary's only open air market, Calgary Brewery Gardens and Fish Ponds, Aquarium, and Horsemen's Hall of Fame (a museum), the Inglewood Bird Sanctuary, the Inglewood Golf Course, the Inglewood Swimming Pool. Also the proximity to downtown with its wide range of services and the proximity to the Calgary Stampede, with its year-round entertainment. The District is surrounded on three sides by the Bow and Elbow Rivers whose banks have tremendous potential as recreational areas. There is the Pearce Estate of some 80 acres or more, which is to become a natural park and will have a 4½ million dollar fish hatchery which will become a tourist attraction. As a residential area it provides proximity to recreation, jobs, the downtown core of the City, and highways. There has to be some area in the City where older cheaper homes are available for the low income groups to

buy. Many of the houses might best be described as "shack" houses. That is no basements, porches sagging, poor doors, wood partly rotten, poor plumbing and other bad features. People are not in a position to finance a new structure and in many cases even to handle renovation loans, nor is there any incentive to do so. What has to be done is done, but expenditure is not often over \$200.00. Mortgages are generally not available in this area.

The solution seems to be an alternative route for the Bow Trail, a City policy of disturbing a minimum number of homes, and placing the whole area under urban renewal, so that the area can be redeveloped, rehabilitated, and revitalized with due regard to human values involved.

The basic problem seems to be that areas with many rich people can make their needs be recognized and respected, but districts with many poor people have no strong voice and their needs are ignored in favor of the advantages of wealthy interests.

The Inglewood and Ramsay Communities have taken the attitude that the people in the District are important and must be prepared to work for their own best interests, but this can only be brought to a successful conclusion with the co-operation of Municipal, Provincial and Federal Governments.

The Inglewood-Ramsay Redevelopment Committee has established Committees, which in effect are study groups, to evaluate the present conditions and make recommendations for improvements. There are Committees studying recreation and parks, traffic and roads, education, pollution, housing, and overall the social and human values of the Community and the people concerned.

OBJECTIVES:

A. Immediate—To be a protagonist voice.

A community with many men of wealth, authority or prestige has no trouble making its needs and desires recognized and respected. Such a community is also likely to be rich in people of imagination and experience and knowledge (and sometimes influence); so that dreams become visions that find fulfillment.

A community with many poor families is apt to have very little knowledge of political processes, individual rights, or methods of applying corporate pressure; and therefore its

needs and desires—often unrecognized—are ignored, in favor of "development" which proceeds entirely to the advantage of wealthier interests. The dreams of such a community frequently degenerate into frustration, and finally despair.

We, the Redevelopment Committee of Inglewood-Ramsay, composed mostly of the common folk of these two Communities, are attempting to acquire the necessary knowledge, to recruit the necessary experience, and to exert the necessary influence for the protection of the homes of ourselves and our neighbours.

As outlined earlier in this brief, there are very good reasons why these Communities although they are not wealthy, ought to be maintained as residential areas. The poor also need a place to live, and have as much right to the preservation of their own homes, as have the rich.

Our immediate objective, then, is to be a voice on behalf of the residents here, to prevent the destruction of hundreds of their homes by the construction of the proposed Bow Trail Extension and Blackfoot Trail By-pass.

B. Long Range

Although, in our immediate objective, we accept the fact of the existence of many poor families in this district, and are attempting to act on their behalf, that does not mean that we are content to simply quote "The poor will always have always with us".

We are deeply concerned to reduce the degrading, depressing, destructive effects of poverty—and hopefully to eliminate the cause. It may be that there will always be some who choose to live in poverty, and thus avoid the responsibilities of wealth. However, the choice ought to be every man's; and today there are many who have no choice in the matter at all. We have first of all, to define what we mean by poverty, and then to try and discover the underlying causes of it.

Definition: (a) In its basic sense poverty is a physical thing, and means the lack of Basic Necessities—food, clothing and shelter, to preserve life. This is not common to Canada. (b) In its modern sense poverty is as much mental as physical. It refers to a person's standard of living compared to the normal standard of his community. So homes that would be palatial in some parts of the world

are considered shacks in Canada; and diet we consider inadequate would be sumptuous feasts in many countries. Comparing our poverty, then, to that of the most underdeveloped societies tends to make us rather complacent, while comparing our poor with our well-to-do, and even with our "average" Canadian family, is a very disturbing exercise.

Causes:

There are two distinct types of poverty, which must be approached in very different ways.

(1) There is the poverty of people who simply do not receive sufficient goods or money to provide for the necessities of life.

(2) There are those who receive sufficient resources, but cannot use them to proper advantage for one reason or another.

The first group, without sufficient resources for healthy living, includes some pensioners and some low-wage workers, as well as some unemployed who do not know how to apply for support, nor to ask for help. People whose meagre income does not increase as the cost of living rises, become poorer and poorer, and some of them exist below subsistence level. This problem is being recognized and dealt with in many places, and suggestions which others have already made will not be duplicated here. Solutions are relatively straightforward, and the government's present Committee on Poverty will undoubtedly come up with some good answers.

However, the second group will be very much more difficult to deal with. The psychologically poor cannot be helped by simply providing more and more money. One man cannot support himself properly on \$1,000.00 a month wage, whereas a neighbor raises a family of a wife and three children on half that amount. It would be extremely difficult to list the causes of this kind of poverty in the order of their importance, and no attempt is made here to evaluate the degree to which each is a factor. They are presented, then, in random order as they come to mind.

Cultural Background: There is frequently impatience with the Canadian Indian tendency to spend everything at once, making no provision for the future. Their custom of caring anything they have at the moment in the faith that someone else will share with them tomorrow is another cause of much temptation. We fail to realize that these are practices of many of the white poor also.

These are culturally instilled attitudes, and are not altogether bad. Many a white whose pioneer ancestors found hospitality in the Indian's tents is angered today when the descendants of those same Indians come knocking at his door for a sandwich. But those who live precariously—white or Indian—do develop a philosophy of "Sink or swim together", and do not know how to function in an "Everyman for himself" society. This is a problem of acculturation. Because of our mass media which portrays the exotic fruits of diligent work and careful planning without presenting the more humdrum aspects of the discipline and responsibility of life, the poor have aroused expectations and desires without knowing how to fulfill them. This frequently leads them to take what they want, which is accounted a crime by our standards, and the resulting jail sentences further decrease their chances of being integrated into our normal society. Learned patterns of behaviour, then, are one of the major causes of poverty in our area.

2. Ignorance: The poor are usually found among the less educated folk of our society. There are many reasons for this, but one illustration of the importance of education is seen in the purchasing practices of the poor. Since they do not know healthy food from luxury items, they usually waste money unwisely. Generally they are not able to divide price by ounces to determine which size or brand will give them the most for their money, and therefore have higher food bills than necessary, or have poor diets and heavy medical expenses.

3. Gullibility: Creating a necessity out of a luxury has now become a fine art of advertising. Add to this the tremendous pressure and temptation to credit-buying, and a vast number of people end up signing agreements to pay for goods which depreciate and disintegrate long before they are paid for. This often leads to fresh borrowing at exorbitant interest in order for a family to maintain its current operation while trying to pay off old debts.

4. Obsessions: People tend to be habituating creatures, and often become addicted to, or obsessed with, certain habits—such as the use of alcohol and other drugs, driving expensive cars, making long distant telephone calls. They see others enjoy these things, experience them personally and then are unable to do without them. Once they have come to think of them as natural aspects of life, they

cling to them tenaciously as we cling to our right to eat and breath—regardless of—and sometimes oblivious of the expense.

5. *Others:* There are, of course, many other causes; but this is not an exhaustive report, and cannot hope to cover them all.

Suggestions: Many of the suggestions which we make may sound pretty naive and impractical, but perhaps from them there may come the seeds of eventual solutions.

The acculturation problem can be handled only partly in the schools, but something is being done by teachers who take their classes to visit various enterprises where children see men and women at work, and learn something of the organization necessary for modern living.

So far as home life is concerned, the visting of children from "poor" families in "successful" homes might help. But movies, TV programs, stories, etc., that portray more of real life of people rather than just dramatic or comic incidents from the recreational aspects of peoples' lives would help. Of course, this kind of story wouldn't sell for public entertainment consumption, so it would have to be introduced through specifically education-oriented programs.

Some ignorance is due to either lack of opportunity or lack of motivation to learn. Perhaps opportunity to learn about economic buying methods, about the pit falls of credit buying, about budgeting, about "Shop" and "Home Ec" should be provided in the curriculum of the first 5 or 6 grades—before the drop-outs have dropped.

The more difficult type of ignorance is that which is due to the lack of intelligence—the inability to learn. One step that might be taken is to develop some less-technical kinds of work at which these people could be employed. Another is the providing of a chart or table to assist them in buying the most economical of several items. (Many of us would appreciate such a thing!). Perhaps these ought to be posted in all stores.

So far as people's gullibility is concerned, there's a bit of the "sucker" in each of us; and there will always be shysters ready to take advantage of this weakness. There are certain types of salesmen often associated with magazines, encyclopedias, cemeteries, kitchenware, etc., with an uncanny power of persuasion. Now, it may be that there is no way for people to learn to avoid wasps except

by being strong. But you can always destroy the wasp's nest. Some kind of control over this type of selling—especially among the poor—would be salutary.

Finally, we are faced with the problems of obsession, or addiction. Some very real progress is being made with the expanding A.A. program; this deals with only one aspect of the problem. We need vastly increased counselling services that will be an automatic part of all welfare assistance. The main emphasis in all assistance—home welfare—foreign aid—ought to be to help people help themselves: (a) to help discover the reasons for their need; (b) to help them see what they can do about it; (c) to give them the necessary tools, direction and encouragement. Only as a man is permitted to do everything possible for himself is his dignity truly protected—and not by treating him as a dependent child for whom everything is done.

EDUCATION:

In December of last year the Calgary School Board informed this Community that they intended to phase out part of its school facilities. As a reaction to this the Committee on Education was formed.

Initially its purpose was to carry to the School Board the needs and concerns of the Community. One example of this developed when the Committee together with the staff of the school in the Community requested a visiting teacher. This request has been granted by the Calgary School Board.

It was evident the existing structure could not adjust to accommodate the needs of the "Inner City" students. These particular students are culturally deprived in that they lack the experiences which would enable them to understand the systems that control and direct their lives.

The poor do not have any lack of imagination, experience or desires. Their main deficiency is knowledge. Knowledge of political systems, of individual rights, of what resources are available to them or how to take them, of the "bureaucratic system" and how it operates. It must be the objectives of "Inner City" education to provide the experiences that are necessary in gaining this knowledge.

Poverty in its most real sense, forces family or a community to so become involved in their day to day existence, they become unable to participate in living in any broad sense.

It is not the desire nor intention of this Committee on Education to bring everyone to a common life style, but rather to give each individual a choice (Poverty does not afford this option.) In order to do this education must be individualized to meet special requirements of culture and learning abilities. One way of achieving this would seem to be through the individual controlling his learning situation rather than the centralization policy of the Calgary School Board.

The industries within our Community have indicated a willingness to contribute time, money and physical facilities to the educational programs of the Community. This places at the disposal of students a wealth of opportunity to study first hand the functioning of his environment:

1. The new Fish Hatchery—biology, ecology, chemistry, economics.
2. Maple Leaf Mills—agriculture, biology, horticulture.
3. The Zoo—animal husbandry, ties to world geography

There seems to be at least two ways the Federal Government can help foster this type of education.

(a) Provision of seed money for initiation of this type of program. e.g. as is being done by the Alberta Department of Education Pre-school Program.

(b) Through the exertion of political pressure on local school boards to de-centralize—giving the individual more control of his future.

CONCLUSION

We, the Inglewood-Ramsay Redevelopment Committee, appreciate the invitation of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty, to present this report. Because we are still a new committee, this is inevitably incomplete; but we trust that there will be further opportunities for us to present our findings, as we learn more about our situation. You can be assured of our fullest co-operation, and our continuing support of the important work in which you are engaged.

APPENDIX "L"

BRIEF SUBMITTED BY
THE CALGARY LABOUR COUNCIL
TO
THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON POVERTY

July 3, 1970

Mr. Chairman, ladies and gentlemen of the Senate Committee:

The Calgary Labour Council would like to thank you for giving our Labour Council the opportunity of submitting this brief on Poverty in Canada to you, in the earnest hope that something can be done to eradicate this social stigma from our Society.

Our Labour Council is representative of 78 Labour Union Organizations in Calgary, with a combined membership of 17,000 men and women.

We intend to treat this subject of Poverty in two parts. Part one, will be a general review of poverty, with emphasis placed on the Fifth Annual Review of the Economic Council of Canada. The second part will deal with a Guaranteed Annual Income.

A GENERAL REVIEW OF POVERTY

Poverty in Canada numbers in the millions, according to the Economic Council of Canada. There is more of it than our Society can tolerate, more than the economy can afford, and far more than existing measurers and efforts can cope with. It's persistence at a time when the bulk of Canadians enjoy one of the highest standards of living in the world is a disgrace, the Economic Council of Canada stated in its Fifth Annual Review, published on September 5, 1968.

Poverty in Canada tends to be partly invisible. It is too easy in Canada to file poverty away under the heading of certain other long-standing national problems and to lose sight of it as a major problem in its own right. The poor themselves must be involved in programs designed to help them, the ECC said.

The following statistics are only tentative and illustrative, the report warned. Better measures of poverty are required.

(a) If low income families and individuals are defined as those using 70 per cent or more of their income on food, clothing

and shelter, this would include single persons with incomes below \$1500.00, families of two with less than \$2,500.00 and families of three, four and five or more with incomes of less than \$3000.00, \$3500.00 and \$4000.00 respectively.

(b) In 1961 some 27 per cent of the Canadian nonfarm population was living below such income levels. This includes 916,000 nonfarm families and 416,000 individuals outside families (about 4,200,000 people including 1,700,000 children under 16). Addition of an estimated 150,000 farm families (550,000 people) would raise the low income percentage to 29 per cent of the total population.

(c) The low income percentage would rise to 41 per cent of the population under a second estimate that assumes that expenditures of 6 per cent or more, (instead of 70 per cent or more) of income on food, clothing and shelter by an individual or family indicates straitened circumstances.

This brings the cutoffs up to \$2,000.00 for a single person, \$3,500.00 for a family of two, \$4,000.00 for families of three and four, and \$5,000.00 for families of five or more.

On the basis of the first estimate the incidence of poverty is highest when one or more of the following characteristics are present. The family head had no formal education beyond elementary school; the family live in a rural area; the family lives in the Atlantic provinces; the family head is not in the labour force; no member of the family worked during the year; the head of the family is 65 or over; the head of the family is a woman.

Yet of all the low-income nonfarm families in Canada in 1961, 62 per cent were in the urban areas; 83 per cent were outside the Atlantic Provinces; 53 per cent were in Ontario and the Western Provinces; 68 per cent has heads who were in the labour force for at least part of the year; 76 per cent had one or more earners in the family; 77 per cent of the family heads were under 65; and

87 per cent of the families were headed by men.

Thus a set of anti-poverty policies directed towards major groups or geographical areas with high incidence of low incomes would almost certainly fail to deal adequately with poverty. Such policies could neglect unduly those whose poverty is due not to an absence of earnings, but an *insufficiency of earnings*.

It would tend to miss the many pockets of poverty in relatively high income regions. Most low-income families headed by a woman under 65 are families where there are two or more children under 16. For such families the incidence of low income is close to 50 per cent.

Improved day care facilities for young children could make a major contribution. Such facilities would also improve the situation of low-income families headed by men whose wives would be glad to seek paid work if given the opportunity.

The recommendations of the Economic Council of Canada on "The Problem of Poverty", include—

(a) Anti-poverty policies should be oriented towards people. This may seem obvious, but some programs for rural adjustment have been excessively oriented towards physical resources.

(b) Provision of adequate education must form a highly important part of policy against poverty, but there must also be adult retraining and manpower mobility programs to help families and individuals escape from the poverty trap.

(c) The need for direct income maintenance will never disappear completely. Some people for various reasons will be unable to work. They should be given assistance with no stigma attached.

(d) As a joint project by the three levels of government, a thorough appraisal of the whole range of Canadian social policies is required.

This would include analysis of the impact on low-income people of regional and other economic development programs, price increases and price levels and taxes, including sales and property taxes. It should also include a careful evaluation of such proposals as the negative income tax.

(e) As a first step in an effective attack on poverty, all levels of government

should immediately review, clarify and up-date the objectives of their existing social policies. Lack of co-ordination not only between, but within, levels of government is often apparent.

Consideration should be given to setting up organizations for achieving better co-ordination of social policies with and between governments, and between governments and the many voluntary agencies active in the social welfare field.

Close attention should be given to the hazard of different anti-poverty programs working at cross purposes.

A GUARANTEED ANNUAL INCOME

A typical comment on fear of a guaranteed annual income, is that to some people this will create a welfare society, in which people will be looking for handouts.

Typical of the negative critics of the concept of guaranteed income is Henry Hazlitt, a columnist for *Newsweek* for twenty years and writer of a syndicated column on economics and world affairs in American newspapers. He attacks guaranteed income because it would kill incentive and place an additional and crushing burden on the shoulders of the hard working majority.

In a recent statement, Hazlitt said, "The people who tell us that everybody should receive a guaranteed income as a matter of right never tell us who is going to be forced to PAY "everybody" this income."

And he added, "The government has nothing to give anybody that it doesn't take from someone else".

Hazlitt—and he's by no means alone in the anti-guaranteed income camp—sees this proposal as but the latest illustration of how the welfare state mania grows by feeding on itself. In the labour movement we see things differently.

We see the social welfare system proliferating not by feeding on itself, but by an uphill struggle to catch up to the demands of the society. We look first at the individual.

What are his rights?

What are the shortcomings of the social system?

We believe, as those who framed the 1948 United Nations Universal Declaration of

Human Rights, that everyone has the right to social security within the means of the state, and we believe, as the declaration said, that everyone has the right to a standard of living adequate for his health and well-being and that of his family.

The essential difference between our position and the position of those who feel Canada has gone far enough in social welfare is that we find political and civil rights have little or no value to the individual whose social rights are downgraded, trampled on, or non-existent.

We believe that the individual cannot preserve his dignity and cannot pursue the free development of his personality unless his social rights enjoy an equal status with his political and civil rights.

The difficulty with our position is that political and civil rights are regarded by the community as being absolute and universal, whereas social rights are relative and their acceptance by the community varies according to time and place. Our difficulty is compounded by the fact that those who have it made—and who by implication determine the community's values and priorities—are concerned primarily with the cost, or the alleged cost, of implementing social programs. Those who must need to exert their social rights on the other hand, are generally least capable of exploiting them.

It is in this context that the labour movement is pressing the need for guaranteed incomes.

We are concerned with the needs, and the rights, of those Canadians who are unable to maintain by their own efforts a minimum standard of human dignity.

We are concerned with the social rights of those Canadians who are deprived of income as a result of unemployment, underemployment, sickness, disability, widowhood, old age or other circumstances beyond their control.

What we're talking about is the equitable distribution of wealth of the society.

There is no absolute measure of an adequate income, and there probably never will be.

Many cut-off points for social policy between having enough money, and not having enough money have been suggested, but all have been subject to criticism as being

either niggardly or too costly. But this does not mean that we can never reach a consensus on what constitutes a minimum requirement for the maintenance of human dignity in Canada. As we mentioned earlier in this brief, the Economic Council of Canada attempted to determine the poverty level for Canadians.

It proposed a minimum level of \$1,500 for the individual, \$3,000 for a family of three, or \$3,500 for a family of four. These figures have been severely criticized on a number of grounds, such as individual and family differences; the difference between urban and rural conditions, and regional variations in living costs.

The important point is that the Economic Council of Canada has given official recognition to the fact that below a certain point you are poor, and above that point you are at least getting by.

The labour movement focused on guaranteed income as the theme of Citizenship month this year and as the priority demand for social policy in the 1970's.

We do not lay claim to inventing the concept. The idea has been circulating for more than 80 years. During the latter half of the 19th century it became clear that productivity increases would make an abundance of goods and services a certainty in the foreseeable future.

One of the first social critics to recognize the emerging abundance which could become the basis of social justice was Edward Bellamy in his novel, "Looking Backward", published in 1888. The theme of this book is the need for income to maintain what he called "abundant maintenance". This was nothing more or less than a guaranteed income operating in a society functioning on the concept of abundance rather than on the economic theory of society. The notion of a world blessed with abundance dropped out of sight for nearly sixty years and was not resurrected until after World War 2.

Abundance at least in the developed countries, has now passed the point of being potential and in many sectors of the economy of these countries has become a reality.

Over the last ten years discussions of guaranteed income has ranged from one end of the economic and the political spectrum to the other, and in the last federal election it was

used as political bait. The New Democratic Party has guaranteed income under study. A form of guaranteed income is incorporated in the official policy of the Progressive Conservative Party. The Liberal party, however, has taken no position at present.

Definitions of guaranteed income are almost as numerous as Detroit versions of the automobile, but as with the motor industry guaranteed income models can be grouped into two or three categories.

Robert Theobald, British socio-economist who has been studying the effects of abundance on the American society and economy since the mid 1950's proposed that each citizen has the right to an income sufficient to take him out of poverty.

Under the Theobald plan and with the poverty level as established by the Economic Council of Canada, the state would give the individual or the family the amount of money it needed to bring him up to the \$1,500 mark, the \$3,000 mark, and so on, but this was regarded as being too open to abuse and one that would entirely destroy incentive. Why work if you can get all that "free stuff"?

A second plan designed to overcome the shortcomings of the Theobald proposal is the negative income approach which is associated with Professor Milton Friedman, a Chicago economist. According to the Friedman formula, a family with an income below the official poverty line would receive an income supplement based on a percentage of the difference between its income and the poverty line.

For example, if the poverty line is set at \$3,000 for a family of three, if the family earns only \$2,000 and if the income supplement is based on a 50 per cent formula, then the family income would be raised by \$500 to \$2,500. The negative income principle would preserve the incentive to work, but it would fail to bring low-income individuals and families up to a minimum standard.

If there is a case for guaranteed income it must overcome the objections to both the direct payment and the negative income schemes.

Some people fear that massive unemployment will come with increasing technological change and with automation and cybernation, and that the only way to relieve the resulting burden on the individual and society will be to embark on radically new forms of income distribution.

At the other extreme are those who feel that guaranteed income would simplify public welfare programs and enable the state to absolve itself of responsibility by punching the appropriate buttons on the computer. At any rate, regardless of their motivation there is a large amount of agreement among radicals, liberals and conservatives that guaranteed income is not so much a social goal as it is a potentially useful tool in the social welfare complex.

But there is by no means universal agreement even on the principle. The sternest critics of guaranteed income include those who believe that what is required is a honing and refining of present welfare measures aimed at getting more of the able-bodied to work and making welfare programs more efficient.

The majority of the recipients of guaranteed income would be those who work, or work when they can. In other words the Working Poor would be the principal beneficiaries of a guaranteed income plan.

The Economic Council of Canada explains why. Poverty the Council said in its Sixth Annual Review, is widespread and ubiquitous in Canada, and not always readily visible. It exists in the big cities, in many small towns, in pockets throughout the rural areas and in the regions inhabited by Indians and Metis.

Specifically the Economic Council pointed out that 76 per cent of poor families at the time of the 1961 census had one or more earners in the family, and that 66 per cent of poor families obtained most of their income from wages, salaries and self employment.

This analysis places an entirely different complexion on the question of poverty than the widely-held stereotype. Many people apparently regard the poor as a bunch of loafers and leadswingers who would rather be on welfare than get out and earn a honest living. The truth is that most persons on welfare have no alternative, and that the majority of the poor are already working at low-paying jobs, or working when they can get a job.

First, the labour movement has enjoyed a long history of pursuing social goals aimed at promoting the good society for all Canadians, and to the greatest extent possible, for all the peoples of the world.

Exemplifying our determination is our support of the objectives of the Economic Council of Canada as expressed in its First Annual

Review, namely the goals of full employment, a high rate of economic growth, reasonable stability of prices, a viable balance of payments, and an equitable distribution of rising incomes.

Our record in each of these areas of national endeavour speaks for itself, but it is in reference to the goal of income distribution that the labour movement now is concentrating its efforts.

This is not to suggest that we are content with present levels of unemployment; on the contrary, we accept nothing short of the goal of full employment.

Part of the difficulty in this regard we attribute to current anti-inflation policies and part to the uncertainty over the future of economic growth.

Secondly the labour movement is firmly committed to the democratic process as an instrument which can, and should, create the conditions which will enable each citizen to achieve the free development of his personality. Like democracy itself, or like liberty and truth, the optimum development of the personality is an ideal, but it is an ideal to which we are firmly dedicated.

These two criteria—an equitable distribution of the wealth of this country, and the development of the individual personality—are the basis of the social welfare policies of the labour movement.

They also explain our concern for guaranteed income. Is guaranteed income a panacea, as some would suggest, making obsolete our entire complex of social welfare measures?

Or is it a pipe dream, a diabolical plot to bankrupt the country and support the lazy and inept at the expense of the hard-working and conscientious?

We see some form of guaranteed income as plugging a glaring hole in the social welfare structure. In this country we already have a number of public measures, which in themselves guarantee income, pay debts, or otherwise ward off the hardships of lack of money or enough money.

We have income maintenance for those who are temporarily out of work, and for those who are injured at work and in war. We have income maintenance for those who are too old to work and for widows and orphans.

We have programs to find work for the unemployed to train and retrain the unemployed, to move individuals and families from places where there is no work to new homes and jobs. We subsidize rents. We pay allowances to families. We pool our resources to pay doctor's bills.

IS GUARANTEED INCOME SUCH A BIG STEP?

Guaranteed income would not replace many existing welfare programs.

It would not replace unemployment insurance.

It would not replace a decent minimum wage.

It would be an income supplement, a stop-gap for those who now are living in poverty without it.

The things that must be done all fall under the general category of equalizing opportunity. In Canada we must do more, much more, to make sure that every child has the best possible education, mostly for himself, but also for ourselves.

We must do more to help remove the terrible burden of regional disparity, which now cripples the life opportunities of tens of thousands of Canadians.

We can do much more to free women from economic exploitation and enrich not only their lives but add to the wealth of the country.

It is in this light that the labour movement conceives the concept of a guaranteed income. It won't solve all our problems, nor will it destroy our social and moral fiber. It will be just another of the useful tools in moving us closer to our goal of equal opportunity and the development of each person toward his own life goal.

We earnestly hope and trust that this Special Senate Committee on Poverty that we are addressing now, can in a big way help to lift the scourge of poverty from our country.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

CALGARY LABOUR COUNCIL

Clarence J. Sloan—President

W. Y. Paterson, Executive Secretary

APPENDIX "M"

A Brief To The
SENATE POVERTY COMMITTEE

on

THE EFFECTS OF POVERTY

on the

DEVELOPMENT AND HEALTH OF
CHILDREN

By

Dr. Gerald H. Holman, Professor and Head
Division of Paediatrics, The University of
Calgary
Director, Department of Paediatrics
Foothills Provincial General Hospital
Past Medical Coordinator for Project Head
Start
Region no 3, Southeastern United States
(Mississippi, Tennessee, Alabama, Georgia,
Florida, South Carolina)

July, 1970

The Effects of Poverty on the Development
and Health of Children

that approximately one-fifth to one-quarter of
our nation's children are living in poverty.

The following facts have now been shown
to be associated with poverty:

Eighteen years in the practice of paediatrics has brought me into direct contact with many aspects of poverty. More recently and more significantly, the three years I spent as Medical Coordinator for Project Head Start in the Southeastern United States has brought me into direct association with manifest poverty in both rural and urban ghetto areas.

This experience and the experience of others has clearly indicated that poverty, however defined, will adversely affect the physical and mental health particularly of the developing child. The poor are faced with an environment which begets continued and cyclical impoverishment. Inadequate education, impoverished environment, chronic unemployment, the tremendous impact of psychological poverty, inadequate incomes, poor mental and physical health, large families, broken families and life styles, crowding, and noise are all a direct product of impoverishment and lead to a repeated cycle of intergenerational poverty.

Although precise data for Canada's children is unavailable to me, it has been estimated

1. A close correlation between the frequency of premature birth and low socio-economic status. A close correlation between low socio-economic status and high rates of infant mortality and particularly such serious continuing handicaps as brain damage, mental retardation, blindness, and other disabilities. It has been documented that the poor receive less adequate obstetrical care than the non-poor.

2. Of all children recognized as mentally retarded, 75 per cent show no obvious brain damage and have very few physical handicaps. Typically, these non-organic cases come from census tracts where the mean income is below \$3,000 per year.

3. The health of children in the first year of life is less adequate from poor socio-economic areas with consequent effects on the child's learning and motivational attitudes.

4. Analysis of programs for the poor show that at least 10 per cent of children were crippled in their emotional development by the age of 4 years. In large cities with potential ghetto areas, this figure is estimated to be at least 20-25 per cent of all children coming from an impoverished environment.

5. Disadvantaged children show high rates of accumulative educational retardation and a significant rate of late school dropout. There has been a consistent correlation between poverty and this rate of school dropouts.

6. Nutritional deprivation is more prevalent among the poor and it is associated with premature delivery rate, low birth weight infants, poor intellectual development and learning capabilities.

7. Data indicate that the poor from disadvantaged communities tend to lack opportunities for a smooth and progressive development and that these communities produce children with attitudes of mistrust, a sense of powerlessness, indecisiveness, a chronic sense of failure, and an inadequate self-image.

8. Recognizing the difficulty in working with disorganized communities, data, nevertheless, indicates that such groups can be motivated to respond to programs on the basis of at least two commonly felt needs; one of which is health care, and the other is *the promise of help for their children*. Furthermore, there is increasing evidence that programs of this type can minimize the amount and degree of handicap and produce compensatory growth in cognitive social and educational areas of functioning.

9. The Westinghouse Report on the Efficacy of Project Head Start has clearly indicated that although advances can be achieved with even short programs but that these achievements are not maintained if the child progresses into the usual school system. This analysis together with other data clearly indicates that intervention in the area of early childhood development is essential prior to the age of 4, that such intervention and program development must continue into the school years, and that school systems which stress a rigid, non-creative classroom setting are non-conductive to the

achievement of such children's full potential.

Based upon this information, IT IS THEREFORE RECOMMENDED:

1. THAT the Federal Government, working cooperatively with Provincial Governments, establish Early Childhood Development Centres across Canada to develop the environment and programs to stimulate children from socio-economically disadvantaged backgrounds. This program must start with the very young child (preferably before two years of age), must be adequately staffed, and must provide day-long programs. Interaction between such centres and the home environment is essential. The provision of adequate health care, psychological care, nutritional care, social services to such children is essential.

2. Such child development programs must continue up to the first grade and beyond in order to assist such children in the achievement of their complete intellectual functional development.

3. That Provincial Departments of Education develop special early-grade programs for children from disadvantaged backgrounds to capitalize on the early gains achieved through the above child development centres by the creation of elementary grade programs which stress early childhood development principles and creative learning in open space classrooms.

4. That the Federal Government working with Provincial Medical Associations, local Medical Societies, University Medical Schools, and Public Health Departments, establish "store-front" community health centres in urban and rural areas identified as being areas of poverty.

The fact that the neonatal and infant mortality in Canada ranks amongst the highest of western nations clearly indicates that this country has not committed its resources to the optimal health and development of our young. Such facts make any proclamations on behalf of the young, meaningless. And as a tragic consequence, we have thousands of youngsters who have failed to achieve optimal human development. It is long past time that this country commit a significant portion of its natural resources to the provision for

quality reproduction, high quality newborn care, and active intervention and development of early childhood principles programs, especially for those children from a disadvantaged background. Only by such a national commitment to our young can this country achieve the greatness in its next generation which at present eludes our grasp because of our failure to commit ourselves to our children—his country's most cherished resource.



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament

1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE

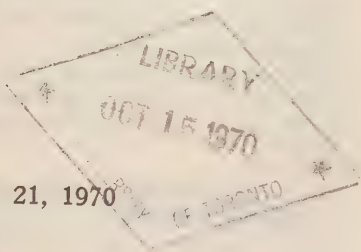
ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 57

TUESDAY, JULY 21, 1970



WITNESSES:

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for the names of the witnesses who were heard by the committee.)

APPENDICES:

- "A"—Brief submitted by The Edmonton Day Centre.
- "B"—Brief submitted by the Gardenside Society.
- "C"—Brief submitted by the Human Resources Development Authority of the Province of Alberta.
- "D"—Brief submitted by the Humans on Welfare Society.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Belisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

“With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.”

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

Edmonton, TUESDAY, July 21, 1970.

Public Library Theatre.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll, (*Chairman*); Carter, Eudes, McGrand, Pearson and Quart. (6)

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

Edmonton Day Centre: Mr. R. C. Cummings, Director.

City Centre Co-Operative Club: Mr. John Merser, President; Mr. J. Guinan, Executive.

Health Clinic for Transients (Gardenside Society): Dr. J. D. Craig; Mrs. Barbara Weekly, Volunteer Nurse.

At 11.45 a.m. the Committee adjourned until 2.00 p.m.

At 2.00 p.m. the Committee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*); Carter, Eudes, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand, Pearson and Quart. (10)

In attendance: Mr. Charles Aswith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

Government of Alberta: The Hon. Ray Speaker, Minister, Department of Social Development; Mr. Erick Schmidt, Special Consultant to the Executive Council.

Humans on Welfare Society: Mr. John McNamara, Vice-President; Mrs. Agnes Bouchard, Director; Mrs. Georgina Slough, Acting President; Mrs. Doris Manners, Treasurer; Mrs. Ellen Thompson, Director; Mrs. Edna McNamara, Founding Member; Mrs. Alice Smith, Director; Mrs. Paulette Atterbury, Secretary; Mrs. Rosemary Oslund, Director.

From the Floor: Mr. David Leadbeater.

The briefs listed hereunder were ordered to be printed as appendices to these Minutes:

"A"—Brief submitted by The Edmonton Day Centre;

"B"—Brief submitted by the Gardenside Society;

"C"—Brief submitted by the Human Resources Development Authority of the Province of Alberta;

"D"—Brief submitted by the Humans on Welfare Society.

At 5.00 p.m. the Committee adjourned until 2.00 p.m. Wednesday, July 22, 1970, at the Elk's Hall in the city of Whitehorse, Yukon Territory.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

Edmonton, Alberta, July 21, 1970

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9 a.m.

Senator David A. Croll (*Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Chairman: We will call the meeting to order. I think this is an appropriate time to thank Miss Starling, who provided a great deal of assistance with programming and arranging for Edmonton.

Miss Starling has been on the staff of the Family Service Association, and her director generously agreed to give her some time off to assist us. Normally she is a student at the University of Alberta in graduate studies. On behalf of the committee I want to thank her for a very fine contribution.

Our first witness today is Mr. R. C. Cumming, Executive Director, The Edmonton Day Centre.

Mr. R. C. Cumming, Executive Director, The Edmonton Day Centre: Is there any point in mentioning something of the nature of the organization?

The Chairman: Say whatever you like. Yes.

Mr. Cumming: I am described here as the Director of The Edmonton Day Centre. The name does not mean a thing.

Senator Pearson: I was just wondering that when I read it.

Mr. Cumming: I am sure you would. Essentially the purpose, the function of the organization is to provide shelter during the day for men who have no other shelter during the day. These are normally described as single homeless transient men. They are normally accommodated overnight in what is called the Provincial Hostel.

During the day, however, they are required to leave the premises, and during the winter this can be a physical hardship so our agency

was established to take them back in off the street.

Some time ago within the last year we extended this activity to take some of the same men in off the street during the night. Some of them, unhappily, have a certain propensity to drink. If they show up at the Provincial Hostel in the evening and they have been drinking, they are not allowed to enter.

Again, specially during the winter, but again at any time, this can represent a hardship. So we provide shelter then during the night for this particular group, and it can range as high as 100 or so a night.

Now, that sounds simple enough. However, there is more involved in it than that. The basic philosophy behind it all is that these people should be taken care of, and that involves an attitude of general acceptance of these people as people. The alcoholic particularly we accept as a man, as an illness. This, as opposed to the general attitude of rejection, which is part and parcel of this whole poverty problem. I think, our attitude, philosophy then is as important as anything we actually do on a day-to-day basis.

This brief, which we deliberately kept brief, emphasizes our suggestion that one approach at least towards this problem of poverty is what we describe as an adult education program. We are talking about effecting changes in attitude, changes in behaviour on the part of the people themselves, and on our own parts. This is why we have suggested in the first paragraph of the Preface the necessity to come up with new institutions, something essentially different to what we have at the present time.

All of this involves communication. How do we communicate this kind of thinking to the people we are talking about? How do they communicate their feelings and aspirations to us? Within this brief we have listed certain characteristics that we think are common to poverty people, on page 2 of our brief specifically in the middle of page 4 we refer to a

lack of verbal facility which impedes communication.

Poverty people in general are non-verbal people. They don't communicate with us and we cannot communicate with them in the normal process of question and answer. Perhaps this is as apparent with our native Indian people as anywhere else. Communication or the lack of it seems to be part of the basic problem.

How then do we get our ideas across? This thinking runs through this brief, and perhaps when we put it together we may have thought it went without saying that some structured process of communication will be essential.

On the other hand it may have been better had we added an item, and I will do it now verbally: that is the structure that we would suggest for communication would be what you can call neighbourhood information centres. The means of getting information across. The information as to what services are available. What services is the poverty group entitled to. What are their responsibilities. What are the expectations of the dominant society, and it means also of gathering information through the neighbourhood information centres and passing it on to the authorities who in turn, hopefully, would act upon it.

This kind of device is common in Britain. They are called Citizens Advice Bureaus, CABS for short. They were established during the last war and are now an integral part of the welfare system in Britain.

They are becoming more common in the United States, they are known as Neighbourhood Information Centres, but last year, the latter part of last year, the Canadian Welfare Council did a study for the City of Calgary and recommended that Neighbourhood Information Centres be established in that City. The same thing, of course, would apply here in Edmonton.

I might add, apropos of that, that we think the customary research approach to examining the poverty problem is apt to run into difficulty if only because of this problem of communication.

Standard procedure in research study is the administering of questionnaires. We have tried them and we find that with our particular group over the course of time these people learn a number of pat answers, and without any malice but simply because they feel they

are playing a game, they will feed back to us the answers that they believed we wanted in the first place, and this is what you get on the questionnaire.

A one-to-one approach, yes, but it has to be with a pretty clear understanding of the thinking, the attitude of the approach of the people concerned.

I might say just a word about one of the immediate steps we referred to, to improve service delivery, and that involves closer collaboration between the Federal and Provincial government in carrying out what appears to be the intent of the Canada Assistance Plan Act.

We got legal advice on this, and it would appear that we run into a basic difficulty. Welfare is within the jurisdiction, of course, of the provinces. The Canada Assistance Plan Act sets out the over-all approach that all people in need should receive the basic necessities. By the time you get to the province, the provincial legislation and provincial regulations, you can alter this original intent to the point where there are substantial restrictions.

At one time in Alberta there was a restriction with respect to residence. We point out as of the first of this Month, July 1, there is now a new provincial Act which makes no mention of residence as a requirement. However, sometimes it takes a little while between the change in an Act on paper and change in thinking and putting it into effect.

Perhaps that would suffice for the moment, Mr. Chairman.

The Chairman: The Canada Assistance Act has no limitation on residence.

Mr. Cumming: This is true, but the province did until now.

The Chairman: If the province does not live up to the Act, it can not draw. That is the legal aspect of it. If it makes any limitation the province cannot draw. That would be the legal opinion you would get.

Mr. Cumming: Yes. This was the legal opinion we got, sir. We don't know how it winds up being put into effect. What is the remedy?

The Chairman: The remedy, of course, is an obvious one. I would hasten to point out what is obvious: we have had no problem on that account at all in all the other provinces.

You used to have to come in and hide for a year and then you suddenly emerged and said "Here I am. I have been here a year." Well, that has gone.

The matter of information is, of course, very vital, and I was informed by the Minister that the research study made on Information Canada had recommended information centres. I then went to the book and looked it up and found they had recommended it, and the Minister assured me they had intended to open up information centres in the larger municipalities to begin with.

Senator Carter: How is your hostel financed, or your Day Care Centre? Where do the funds come from?

The Chairman: We misuse the term. I used the term "Day Care Centre" quite improperly. It is a different Centre. Use the word Hostel.

Mr. Cumming: That is much better.

The Chairman: It is not a day care centre.

Mr. Cumming: No. We get a substantial number of calls during the day asking us to care for the children. And it is not an appropriate setting. Finances come from three sources: Provincial Government, City Government and the United Community fund.

Senator Carter: What is that?

Mr. Cumming: United Community fund.

Senator Carter: Is that a church?

Mr. McGrand: No, Red Feather.

Mr. Cumming: Red Feather, yes, whatever term you are familiar with.

Senator Carter: How many different people would you have contact with during a year, sir?

Mr. Cumming: Well, let me see. If we had a couple of hundred a day—this is very difficult because they are not new people all the time.

Senator Carter: The same person comes back?

Mr. Cumming: Yes. The term "transient" as it relates to our operation is in this manner. Over a period of years all of us in this business get to know these men so well that you can make a thumbnail sketch of their best characteristics quite readily.

Let us pick a figure out of the air and say five or six thousand people, but I couldn't tell

you how close to accurate that is because of this constant coming and going.

Senator Carter: Have you any idea what the average stay would be? Would most of them stay only one night or two nights?

Mr. Cumming: We don't say—we don't accommodate them in the sense that they come and they have a bed to stay in for a period of time. That is the Provincial government responsibility.

Senator Carter: What do you do with them? You take them in.

Mr. Cumming: They play cards, they are entertained. They kill the time during the course of the day from 9:00 to 5:00.

Senator Carter: And then they go?

Mr. Cumming: Then they go back to the Provincial Hostel for supper. In the evening there are other places they go to. And then the drinking man that we are talking about shows up around 11:30 at night and he sleeps it off in the place until 7:00 in the morning and then he goes, and he goes again if he feels like it to the Provincial Hostel for breakfast.

Senator Carter: So you are taking the sort of overflow from the Provincial Hostel?

Mr. Cumming: Yes. This is one of the unfortunate aspects of the whole process, that there is this constant moving around. There is a circuit that they follow. I am always amazed to find a group of men waiting to enter at 9:00 o'clock in the morning as though they were coming to work.

Senator Carter: Do you do anything with these people except play cards?

Mr. Cumming: There is not a great deal. From time to time we have had a workshop available, but by and large these men are not skilled men. There isn't too much that they can do.

We had some furniture refinished, for example. Again you can get half-way through something and the man disappears. This is the difficulty.

Senator Carter: You were talking about communication and the difficulty of communicating with these people. Are there films available?

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator Carter: And you use these films?

Mr. Cumming: Yes. The National Film Board has quite a good library which we draw on regularly. I might say, too, for some time now we have had graduate students from the University of Alberta; students in counselling come down to the agency and undertake a field placement there and offer such counselling as they can to these men whether it be vocational counselling or counselling with respect to an emotional problem. This sort of thing.

Senator Carter: Are you familiar with this group that we had last night the Special Project?

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator Carter: They had a client committee.

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator Carter: People who had been through the mill and had come up and are now taking responsibility for counselling others. Have you been able to make use of these people?

Mr. Cumming: No, we haven't seen them, and I think it has to be borne in mind that that particular project concerned itself with families. Married men. We are concerned with the single man.

Senator Carter: Not all. Not explicitly. Some are married and some were not.

Mr. Cumming: Right.

Senator Carter: But it seems to me these would be very valuable people who could communicate. They have learned to communicate.

Mr. Cumming: This is true.

Senator Carter: And if you had this communication gap, these would be the people I think that could help solve your problem.

Mr. Cumming: I would agree with you. The problem now is one of logistics. The people that would use the service or to whom that service would be made available first and foremost are families. Our group, the single men, generally come last when it comes to this sort of thing.

Senator Carter: When you say they come last, they are the least amenable?

Mr. Cumming: The last to be able to make use of a service. Let us say we are talking

about employment opportunities. The Provincial government has an employment opportunity program, but they have confined it, of necessity, so far to families, to married men, simply because of the shortage of manpower. This is what I mean.

Senator Carter: That might be partly true, but these people, as they told us their story last night, they were people who were absolutely without hope. You know, they had reached rock bottom.

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator Carter: But they had become restored. They had restored hope and they had been rehabilitated to a point. You can't get much lower no matter how bad your fellows are, worse than these were.

Mr. Cumming: This is true.

Senator Carter: The picture I got here is of a lot of agencies and you are all doing your own little bit.

Mr. Cumming: That is right.

Senator Carter: In your own corner but not very much knowing what the other is doing. You are not mobilizing your efforts here.

Mr. Cumming: This is absolutely right.

Senator Carter: Can't you do something about that?

Mr. Cumming: The government has started—that brings us to this Appendix "B" that we refer to, which was referred to generally as RFB. The government has said to us, to the private sector, we want you to put forth proposals to maintain services to the single unemployed men. All services. A package deal.

Senator Carter: Who do you want to do this?

Mr. Cumming: The government is suggesting that someone in the private sector do it. It could be our agency; it could be the Salvation Army.

Senator Carter: When the government suggests someone are they waiting for someone to volunteer to do this, or are they putting the finger on somebody?

Mr. Cumming: They publish the request for proposals. They set up all the requirements they want. They set a deadline which is now September 10, and it is up to us now to respond. They had an orientation meeting and

discussed all of this with us. I suspect when you speak to the Minister this afternoon this will come up. However, we are in the process of preparing a proposal to meet the requirements of the government request of how we would provide all the essential services for the single unemployed man.

This then would be our opportunity to suggest to government all of the needs: basic accommodation, counselling, clothing, employment contracts, whatever.

Senator Pearson: Food and shelter?

Mr. Cumming: Yes. This is what I mean by basic accommodation. All be managed at least by one organization, to bring together these various services that are spread out now, to overcome this fragmentation that you put your finger on.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Mr. Cumming: This is being undertaken.

Senator Carter: Have you any idea what the response would be to this?

Mr. Cumming: Well, our response—

Senator Carter: You know what your own response would be. You said something about a meeting.

Mr. Cumming: Yes. There was some 30 or 40 people there at the meeting, all of whom were interested in various degrees. It has shaken down now to the point where maybe half a dozen agencies are interested.

We had a meeting of the United Community fund or Red Feather agencies last week, and there were four or five of us there, and three or four will definitely be interested and probably put in a response to this.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Mr. Cumming: We will for certain. The Salvation Army is giving it serious consideration. Their instructions generally come from Toronto, and therefore they could not be all that specific here in Edmonton.

Senator Carter: Yesterday we had two groups, two very fine groups. We had the Special Project Group that I just mentioned, and we had a women's group, The Monica Society. But in each of these groups they were the top spectrum, the top part of the spectrum. There was a large part of the iceberg way down below that they themselves were not reaching, and this is true of this

group, of the Special Group. They were in some respects selected.

Mr. Cumming: That is right.

Senator Carter: And not everybody were there. They were not a cross-section.

Mr. Cumming: No.

Senator Carter: If you have this proposal that you talk about here, what are you plans for getting down to the iceberg part that is under the water?

Mr. Cumming: You get the whole iceberg as far as that is concerned because we are concerned with the single unemployed man, and every single unemployed man who comes into Edmonton goes now to the Provincial Hostel for accommodation. That is the central agency as far as he is concerned for food and shelter. It must be expanded then to provide these services for him, but he is the whole iceberg.

What we would suggest and I would like your expression, is this: Once that kind of approach can be established for the single unemployed man, so-called transient man, the same kind of approach, hopefully, could be used with poverty people in general; not just a selected group. This little group called the single unemployed man is in our view the tip of the iceberg as far as men are concerned because you see them wandering about the street. The people that are not obvious are what Harrington refers to as the hidden poor. The family people generally. The people on marginal income; people marginally employed who for one reason or another may never get to a welfare agency because they are marginal.

Senator Carter: This business of selecting single people, is there any merit in that, or is it just because they happen to be wandering singly and it is more convenient to deal with them that way? But to look at it from the rehabilitation point of view, is there any special merit in segregating them in these two categories?

Mr. Cumming: I would suggest they have not been segregated. By their nature they segregate themselves. They do move around.

Senator Carter: This is part of their illness?

Mr. Cumming: That is right.

Senator Carter: You don't correct it by keeping them together? You just herd them

together—the facility is for single people only?

Mr. Cumming: Yes. You can gain some advantage if you could acquire some degree of control. One of the basic problems we have now with this particular group is our propensity to keep them moving. Get them going. Get lost. Get out of town.

Senator Carter: That is the aim of the whole operation.

Mr. Cumming: Yes. Get him back to B.C. where he came from because we can't afford to look after him.

Senator Carter: You have to reorient your thinking if this package proposal is going to mean anything. You have to change your philosophy.

Mr. Cumming: It is a start, and we would start with it here, but I think the basis of the problem you are suggesting is this: these people by their nature move about. They are not here within Edmonton as a family man generally is. He is confined because of the fact that he is a family man and he is looked after here as a resident.

Senator Carter: Yes, but the fact that he is a family man and he is treated as a single man, it seems to me that the two groups require a different type of therapy. And when you lump them together in this type of grouping, it seems to me you are defeating your own end to some extent.

Mr. Cumming: You only lump them together because he arrives requiring food and shelter. So I would think you might have two choices if you will provide this man who arrives here in Edmonton today with food and shelter: One, you have a place to put him and that is called a hostel, and the other is let him find or find for him some individual accommodation.

Senator Carter: Yes, but if you are only just keeping him alive so you can get rid of him...

Mr. Cumming: That is what we try to avoid.

Senator Carter: To my mind that is the flaw in the whole works.

Mr. Cumming: Yes, it is indeed, and this we are trying to avoid.

Senator McGrand: Are these people, whether you call them transients or drifters, or whatever you want to call them, a lot of them must need actual hospital care.

Mr. Cumming: This is very true.

Senator McGrand: In the old days we referred to them here as paupers. Whatever city they happened to be, and they were sick, they went to hospital and they got pauper's care which was pretty good. Today that would be quite a problem to get that sort of person into a hospital because he has not got papers with him that give him hospital care. How do you make out with that?

Mr. Cumming: At the moment the man who reaches the single man's hostel, the care he receives generally is emergency care. If he required emergency care it is provided at the out-patient department of the General—of the City-owned hospital. Medicare which is intended to provide medical care for all people,...

Senator McGrand: That is what I mean.

Mr. Cumming: ...could be made available to this man if he simply signs an application form and if there is something other than emergency care, surgery or whatever required, we can see to it that he will get medical attention from the doctor by having him sign this application for Medicare.

Senator McGrand: Who pays for that?

Mr. Cumming: The government pays for it.

Senator McGrand: Provincial government?

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator McGrand: You mentioned that they have the pat answers when you were speaking about that questionnaire?

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator McGrand: You have spent a lot of time and you have made a very ample analysis of these people. Do you think that these so-called transients—some of them are permanent transients and so on—would be inclined to stay at some permanent residence if they had a permanent income?

Mr. Cumming: I would say that they would be more permanent than they are now. I would not expect these people to suddenly become year-round residents of some given place. I would expect that they would exercise some choice in where they would like to

stay or the length of time that they would stay. All this as opposed to constantly being hustled from one town to another.

Senator McGrand: Now we run across a great many deserted women, and most of them don't know where their husbands are. Some of them do and a lot of them do not know where they are. I wonder if the people that you treat, these transients, I wonder if a lot of them aren't the husbands of these deserted women.

Mr. Cumming: That is a good question. I don't know how you would get the answer because even those who are escaping from this situation are not going to admit it if you ask them.

Senator Carter: You will have to tattoo them.

Senator McGrand: I just don't mean to be humorous or facetious. You mentioned that you would send them back to B.C. where they belong. Now when we were in British Columbia last fall, in Vancouver, I was asking questions where do these transients come from, because I was always trying to trace down Maritimers that had left the Maritimes, and was told most of our problem comes from the Prairies.

You haven't got a comment on that? But I was going to ask you this: There must be some re-structuring of this welfare. We have had Old Age Pensions, we have had Mothers' Allowance, Families Allowance and we have had Widows' Assistance and we have had different things, and we thought that they were going to look after the needy. Now we have the working poor and we have all these different things, and I have a feeling that this Family Allowance and Old Age Pension and so on are only looking after the tip of the iceberg. And that poverty, proverty is the unseen part of the iceberg. Would you agree with me on that?

Mr. Cumming: Probably, yes.

Senator McGrand: Poverty is a bigger bulk than the recipients of welfare at the present time.

Mr. Cumming: Yes, it is. I think when you examine the DBS figures, and it is some little time since I saw them last, there was something like Half the population of Canada is earning less than \$5,000 a year. If they are earning less than \$5,000 a year they are in

trouble. The postal employees are perhaps in that category. You don't consider them in poverty, but if a man has four or five children and is earning \$3,600 a year, he is in trouble. This is the part of the iceberg you are referring to.

Senator Pearson: I was wondering where most of these people came from that you get in your hostel. You have more or less a stable group that keep coming in to the City here who haven't got money from the outside areas.

Mr. Cumming: We have tried to track the origins down, and I have to speak in pretty loose figures because it is difficult to be precise.

A substantial number of the people that we see have spent some years in Alberta. Some were born and raised here, but they fall into this category of being called a transient, which is never defined. A transient is a non-resident, and they fall into this category because they cannot satisfy the requirement that used to exist of having spent the last 12 consecutive months in the province.

They might have spent the last 12 years or parts of it or great parts of it in the province. By reason of this process of moving around this revolving door concept that is there, they don't spend 12 consecutive months anywhere, so we lump them all together as something called transients.

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Mr. Cumming: I would say that the bulk of the people that we know could be called residents of Alberta by any reasonable description. Certainly we get people whose origin is any part of Canada. The fact they were born in the Maritimes or B.C. or anywhere else is almost irrelevant.

They have moved around quite a bit. But the people who come here to Alberta and incidentally, spend the winter here in Edmonton, either have to be pretty accustomed to the place or out of their mind.

Senator Pearson: You spoke about the lack of verbal communication with these people. Is it not possible that a number of these people you call transients who come in there are people who work in the bush or in the mine, etcetera, and they are trying to get free lodging from you so that they can move on to the coast, and this is where they will spend a week or maybe a month with you?

Mr. Cumming: Right.

Senator Pearson: And they are saving their money.

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator Pearson: They get free board and lodging out of you people for just staying there.

Mr. Cumming: This is true. Yes, a lot of people, a lot of single men, are migratory. They do work in the bush and farms and mines, etcetera. I wouldn't quite say they save their money.

Senator Pearson: I mean they have a special use for it themselves.

Mr. Cumming: Yes. They squander it on riotous living as the saying goes.

The Chairman: How riotous can the living be on that?

Mr. Cumming: For a week or two it can be pretty high. However, yes, this is true. They work a while and loaf a while.

Senator Pearson: Yes. What effect would a guaranteed income have on this sort of people? Have you ever thought of that one at all?

Mr. Cumming: I think this could be something of a problem. With many of them they have got it now.

Senator Pearson: Quite so.

Mr. Cumming: I am not sure it would accomplish a great deal with that concept with this particular group.

Now you have got down to individuals; to the fellow that just can't make it at all. He needs some kind of basic support, and by "can't make it" I mean he has no skill, no salable skill, very little education, and perhaps his health is not much good.

Constantly moving him about from place to place gets us nowhere. A guaranteed income would be an advantage, but it would depend on the nature of the guaranteed income. If the guaranteed income meant provision of shelter or the necessities of life on some controlled basis, fine, but give him three thousand a year and you also have to give him an education of how to handle it.

Senator Pearson: Quite. This is a special project.

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator Pearson: Teach these people how to spend their money and how to save it; how to manage their affairs.

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator Pearson: They felt this was one of the best things that ever happened to him.

Mr. Cumming: If I may say so, then over half of the guaranteed income could go down the drain.

Senator Pearson: Could go down the drain on a week of riotous living, and this is it.

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator Quart: To begin with, you mentioned single men. How do you know they are single?

Mr. Cumming: They say so.

Senator Quart: But with that type of individual there I am not sure I would accept their word for it. Do you have any registration whereby they sign as single and put a cross? Nothing?

Mr. Cumming: Oh, a card, yes. We have what you could call in technical terms an intake form, and the man will say he is single, and sometimes he will say he is married or separated or divorced, but when we see him, he is single.

Senator Quart: He doesn't have to put that little cross somewhere for "single"? I am perfectly sure you are taken in to a great extent by somebody who is qualified enough to keep his money and again there is not any way you can tack him down to that.

Mr. Cumming: May I respond to that?

Senator Quart: Yes.

Mr. Cumming: I was going to say even if there was, I think the cost would make it ill-advised.

I think you can make a comparison between the situation you are describing and the credit situation in normal merchandise. It may be cheaper in the long run to write off a bad credit risk than going to all the expense of making absolutely sure the fellow was telling the truth.

Senator Quart: I was not thinking of investigation. Just putting an X. Later on you can trace it. Or you might want him to put that X

mark, "Needy" and perhaps he wouldn't even be using his own names. His own name.

Mr. Cumming: This is very common.

Senator Quart: Of course you did mention that alcohol is another disease. Then you mentioned when these men come to your Day Centre, which evidently is stretched out into the night now, but if they had been drinking you turn them away?

Mr. Cumming: No. The Provincial Hostel would turn them away.

Senator Quart: The Provincial Hostel does?

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

Senator Quart: Where would they expect them to go, specially on a very cold night?

Mr. Cumming: Up until the time that we opened our place, a snow bank, a doorway, an abandoned car.

Senator Quart: Because whether they may be a great nuisance to them, on the other hand I think that type of person at least for that night anyway should be given consideration.

Mr. Cumming: We do now.

Senator Quart: Yes, but the Provincial Hostel.

Senator McGrand: Does the City have no lock-up?

The Chairman: Every city has a lock-up.

Mr. Cumming: City jail has a lock-up. The drunk tank, but accommodation is limited.

Senator Quart: The Salvation Army would have a place, would they not?

Mr. Cumming: With all respect to the Army, no.

Senator Quart: Because after all you would not want the man to be arrested in a sense, and I was just wondering. If you take them in, more power to you. I am delighted because I think that is a time when somebody has to protect the man against himself.

Mr. Cumming: Yes. It may be of some help if I outline the procedure which is a little unusual.

As I said in answer to the Senator's question, we are supported by Provincial government, City government and the United Community fund. That means then that the Provincial Hostel which normally looks after

the men and which excludes the man who has been drinking, pays us to take that man in during the night. We perform the function, but not entirely as a branch office, if you like, of the Provincial Hostel. The City police, in fact, bring these men to us. They pick them up on the street, and because of the limitation of the drunk tank in jail, they being their men to us and we take them in.

Senator Quart: Do they give you any compensation for the trouble?

Mr. Cumming: Yes. We get support from the government to undertake this.

Senator Quart: Municipally as well?

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

The Chairman: They are there for that special purpose because the provincial hostel tries to let the people sleep there.

Senator Pearson: How much staff do you have during the day and during the night time?

Mr. Cumming: One supervisor during the day and two during the night. That is, who are primarily concerned with the single man.

The Chairman: Mr. Cumming, this problem is not entirely a Canadian problem. The Americans have a problem similar to this. Have you been in contact with them to ascertain what they do?

Mr. Cumming: Yes.

The Chairman: What do they do?

Mr. Cumming: I don't know that they do anything that is essentially different. I would say this: in the larger centres, the very much larger centres, a place like New York, I think they are pretty rough on this type of person. I think, and I may be on thin ice here, but I think they deal with the problem by ignoring it, and that is all there is to that.

Seattle, for example, has accommodation for this type of man, again provided by the voluntary sector and not nearly so much by government.

Senator Quart: Do you have very much trouble with the so-called drunk, or not so-called?

Mr. Cumming: The real drunks. No, quite frankly we do not, and I think this is the heart of the whole matter that we are putting across. These people within reason can be

cared for without too much difficulty if you adopt a fairly sympathetic attitude. Instead of hassling you can jolly a man along and he won't give you too much trouble.

The Chairman: Are the problems in Montreal and Toronto any different from your problems?

Mr. Cumming: Size I think is the difference, and that of course causes a lot of trouble.

The Chairman: When you talk about size, did you ever see the line-up in Toronto in the morning?

Mr. Cumming: No.

The Chairman: I do when I go to my office. You would think they were lining up to see the Edmonton Eskimos.

I want to say to you, Mr. Cumming, that I was very much impressed by your understanding of the problem and your approach to it as a human problem. It is a vital problem although it involves a small segment of society, but nevertheless human beings. We appreciate the time you have taken to prepare a brief and to come before us.

On behalf of the committee, thank you.

The Chairman: The next presentation will be made by the City Centre Co-operative Club of Edmonton.

Mr. James Guinan, Member, City Centre Co-operative Club, Edmonton, Alberta: Mr. Chairman, I would like to introduce Mr. Johnny Mercer, Chairman of the Club; Mr. Earl Brown, Vice-Chairman, and Leo Pinault, one of our very fine regular members.

The Chairman: Do you have a brief?

Mr. Guinan: I think the Committee has read over a paper, "Co-operation of the Down and Outers" that I sent out a month or two ago, as a result of which I was invited to appear here.

I will speak briefly about the paper and then about the Club it describes. The paper was written in 1965, about 9 months after the Club was started. The Club has just recently finished its 5th anniversary so there is more about the Club to be said than is in the paper there.

I am a staff worker of Marian Centre, and I am also a member of the City Centre Co-operative Club.

For those who haven't the paper at their disposal, the City Centre Co-operative Club was started at the Marian Centre in 1965 as a result of a series of discussions in which co-operation was talked about among the men. We had a number of nightly meetings, talking about general ideas of co-operation and the types of things that men could do working together that they could not accomplish on their own.

After about six or seven weeks of this there were a small number of men, 16 or 18, who decided they would rather do something in addition to talking than just continue talking about the problem.

Normally in order to start a Co-operative group there is a six month education program, and I had attended an institute on co-operation and adult education at Antigonish, Nova Scotia, and I was not really prepared that the group would want to do anything before six months or so. But, as it turned out, it was rather providential the men who would come to Marian Centre a lively transient, and so if the education went on too long, at the end of six months we would be talking to an entirely different group of people than the ones we started with.

Anyway, after six or seven weeks there were about 16 or 18 men who decided on action, and we formed a little co-operative club unofficially. We were not part of a co-operative movement at the time, and one of the men suggested the name City Centre Co-operative Club, and this was adopted.

We had a very brief description of our Constitution. The club was formed for the purpose of spreading the spirit of co-operation among men, and for engaging in any activities which would be of mutual benefit to the members.

A charter meeting was held towards the end of February. We had 18 members I believe and only 9 were able to pay the membership fee that we had adopted: it is essentially a success story. In my estimation a very significant success story because starting from the 16 or 18 members in February, 1965, at the end of 1965 we had 221 paid members and we had already initiated our first line of activity, co-operative employment service and had obtained something like 970 jobs through employment service. Now the Club has continued on a comparatively successful fashion since it started in 1965, since its first year of success in 1965.

The Co-operative Employment Service gets about 1000 jobs a year for the men, and we average from 300 to 350 men in the Club in the course of a year.

After 1965, because of the low dollar membership fee and the necessity for greater finances, all the finances are relatively small, but more than we had from a dollar membership fee. The Club decided to raise the fee to \$4 a year and to allow this to be paid on a quarter-yearly basis so a man could still join for a quarter.

Presently most of the men join up for a quarter at the time. So the first quarter of the year, or, rather, for last quarter we had 115 men signed up. July 1st began the second quarter and we have at the present 78 men signed up, but in the course of the year 200 to 350 men will join the Club.

The activity of the Club—that wasn't mentioned in the brief. We mentioned in the brief different ideas of co-operation that we had talked about in addition to employment service. We had talked about forming co-operation in the saving of money or spending of money or the loaning of money. We talk about possible co-operative enterprises among men who had the same types of trades. We did get started on the loan fund and this started this way: One of the members got a job in Jasper and he had to hitch-hike out, and when he came back to town six months later he had a good deal of money and he put up \$40 down on the desk of the City Centre Co-Operative Club and said "Let's start the loan fund so when a man gets a job he won't have to hitch-hike out. He can borrow some money and pay it back on his first cheque", and from that original \$40 we have loaned out something like \$1,400, and the basic fund has grown from \$40 to something like \$260, \$270 through donations of members. The Club has decided that the loan must only be paid back in its original form without interest. A man borrows \$5. He comes back six months later and he only has to pay the \$5. But a number of men have donated an extra buck or two, and as a result the original \$40 has now grown to \$270, and this has turned over many times. So we have loaned out something like \$1,400. This is small money, this is small activity in a way, but I think it is very significant, and when we started in 1965 I was personally persuaded that the idea of co-operation was one that could be of real signifi-

cance among men who are in the general category of down and out men. This is the typical way to refer to a man who was economically down.

The years have only impressed upon me that this is true. In the brief I have mentioned as far as I was concerned two conditions were required to start something like the City Centre Co-Operative Club, to start something like co-operative activities among groups of men who are economically down, and the two I mentioned was a place where the men normally congregate, men who are economically down and who are travelling singly, secondly, somebody who has some kind of conception of co-operation and some kind of basic training and the ability to stay with the men until enough of the men themselves have been integrated and have co-operative ideas and have co-operative know-how and can carry on the Club themselves. In 1969 two other clubs were started as a result of the Edmonton Club. The second club was started at Marian Centre in Regina. Marian Centre in Regina is affiliated with the Marian Centre of Edmonton since they are both part of an international group called the Madonna House, and this was easier to start there when we had an affiliated group, a group affiliated with the one where the other club was originally housed.

At any rate, in 1969 the Club was started in Regina, and late in 1969 we succeeded in getting a club started in Calgary, the Calgary Welcome and Recreation Centre. This was preceded by a number of trips down there to Calgary by myself and members of the Club, including Mr. Mercer and Mr. Brown. I don't believe Leo was down on those. But we had meetings, and the Calgary Welcome Recreation Centre were persuaded of the possibility of forming a Club down there, and after a series of meetings on a number of Sundays, the Club was finally started.

I think both these Clubs are moderately successful. I think it takes time. I think if there were additional workers in the co-operative movement who could assist with these newly formed clubs, I think it would be helpful. If there were a detached government worker who had co-operative ideas who could assist in the initial project in getting co-operatives started in other cities, I think it would be helpful.

I think, however, as far as the Poverty Committee is concerned, this idea of co-operative groups among down-and-out single unemployed men—largely unemployed or beginning to get unemployed—is a significant one, and it should be looked into in a way that is the best method for such organizations to start in other cities.

We are already in contact with Saskatoon, the Friendship in there, and will probably meet with the Director of Friendship sometime in the fall to talk about the possibility of starting a City Centre Co-Operative Club there.

The three clubs in Calgary, Regina and Edmonton are affiliated so that a member from here, if he does down to Calgary he has membership privileges there, or in Regina, vice versa all around.

The Club here in Edmonton is not limited to programs that have been helpful to the members. We have an interest. I think it has been a significant thing in Edmonton. No one knows how significant and no one knows the reasons why things happen. But the interest of the City Centre Co-Operative Club and the condition of the men generally, of the transient unemployed men generally, they are interested in what Mr. Cumming here mentioned as adult education program, so the whole group of men in the City are not referred to as bums and down and out, lazy and good for nothing and things like that. Down and out is of course only a descriptive term and not too objectionable.

We use it, but I think even this term is one that has a discriminatory effect because it normally goes along with other terms like bums and drifters. These terms are extremely objectionable, and for people who are in contact with men on a personal friendship basis like myself and a number of other people who have the opportunity, they are seen as most inaccurate and most unchristian, if you are a Christian, and most offensive to the dignity of men if you don't happen to be a Christian. I happen to be a Christian.

I think for the Poverty Committee it seems to me that you won't get far in assisting the man who is economically down, who is single, throughout the country unless there is a change in attitude in the public and a change in your attitude perhaps and all of our attitudes towards this man.

I think unless you begin to know the men individually, you almost inevitably are unfair to the group. I was working for years in the United States with the Negro problem of inter-racial justice. I worked in Harlem. I worked in Washington. Four years in Harlem, and six and a half in southwest Washington, and we figured that in order to rid yourselves of prejudice there was one thing that was especially important, and that was forming a friendship, true friendship among the group that you are prejudiced against, and until that happened, a volunteer who would come down to help out with the work—it seems to me we didn't go too far than elimination of the prejudices. But once personal friendships grew up, the injustice of the name-calling became so apparent that it was no longer a problem with the people.

And I think that the single unemployed man is discriminated against; is prejudiced against across the country in this same kind of fashion. I think most of us who have not been down and out have stereotypes about men like this, so they are all as the man with a deep alcoholic problem or this problem or that problem. It is certainly true among the down and out men generally there is going to be a greater percentage of men with certain types of problems, but it is also true that in the group generally there is all sorts of men with no special problems, and one of the main things that groups like ours have been insisting upon for some time is the need of a classification centre, a need of a place where a man can be talked to, can be dealt with as an individual person with his dignity, not as a member of a prejudiced group, and this is the only realistic way to deal with what is generally referred to as a single unemployed transient man, a large number of whom are not transient.

I came here to talk about the City Centre Co-Operative Club and I would be most happy to answer questions on it. I think Mr. Mercer, Mr. Brown and Mr. Pinault might be able to help me out with these questions too.

I would also be open to any questions on the single transient man generally, if you wish to ask them since I have been engaged in the work for a number of years here in Edmonton.

Senator McGrand: I understood you to say in a comparatively short period of time you found a thousand jobs. Now that would

included a number of temporary jobs as well as a number of permanent jobs?

Mr. Guinan: Yes. We average in the Club about a thousand jobs a year. Incidentally, as far as employment service is concerned, it operates out of an office in Marian Centre. The Club pays for it completely itself except the office is given rent free.

The Club provides its own office manager and this is always a dedicated job because the man never gets paid a salary. At its weekly meetings the Club allots the manager what it can afford, but this has never been over \$20. \$10 would be normal and \$5 frequently. Nothing occasionally.

Senator McGrand: You started out with 14. How many do you have today?

Mr. Guinan: We have in this quarter year that began July 1st, 78. At the end of last quarter we had 115 members, and another dollar is required for the next quarter and a number of men have gone out.

In the course of a year about 250 to 300 men will have joined for at least one quarter. In answer to your first question, most of these would be casual jobs. One, two, or three days. There would be a fairly good percentage of a semi-permanent nature, and there are men who have worked for a year at the job that they get at the Club.

Senator McGrand: Are you most of your people, they were unemployed residents of Edmonton, or were there outsiders?

Mr. Guinan: Most of the men that we first started with, and it is true today, most of the men that joined are transients, but there is a growing number of men in the Club it seems to me who seem to be around most of the year.

The three gentlemen with me today are very much residents of the city. I am a resident of the City and we have I think growing numbers in the Club who are around the year round. Especially a growing number of very responsible people so that now we are able to elect officers on a yearly basis. Initially we were only able to elect officers on a monthly basis because at the end of the month maybe your vice-president and treasurer had taken a job up north.

Senator Pearson: With these jobs, the permanent ones or even the temporary ones, do they retain membership with the Club?

Mr. Guinan: Sure. You have a number of men that are working fairly permanently and come in and pay dues. There are a number of men who are working and move out from the area and are no longer too interested.

Sometimes a man gets a job through the Club and he is off, this is the last we see of him. But there is a growing co-operative spirit in the Club and a remarkable amount of dedication amongst some of the members.

We do have men who have been working and who are not using the employment service at all, and who continue to pay up their membership. Of course there are also men who have joined the Club not for the employment service but for the sociability and for the idea of general friendship.

Senator Pearson: What sociability do you have?

Mr. Guinan: We put on an occasional party. The Club sponsored a party for the men generally. Right now we are building a float for the Klondike Day Parade. This kind of social activity or work activity.

We engage in maybe not just social but things that are of importance to society, for the good of man generally. When the Hostel slapped on a 7-day limit for the time men could stay at the Hostel, the Club called a general meeting and drew up a petition to the Minister of Public Welfare and strongly asked for revision of this and indicated we felt it would be a hardship.

We presented our brief to the Welfare Associate Planning Council, and I believe the Minister of Welfare on housing conditions at a time when there was a great deal of violence, and this brief was presented to the Committee that was held looking into the existence of violence, and also the general picture.

We presented a brief to the Parks and Recreation Department and also two other Departments asking for more park facilities especially for the aged men and also for the single unemployed men around town.

A number of things like that, so that in the course of a month or two there is usually one or two things coming up that a man with a social interest could have an interest in.

Senator Pearson: Do you provide sleeping accommodation or anything like that?

Mr. Guinan: No. The Club operates just through the Marian Centre. It is an independent group and operates through the Marian Centre. The Marian Centre itself does not provide sleeping accommodation.

Our basic activity at the Marian Centre is the provision of a noon-day meal which, in the present set-up, constitutes a third meal for a large number of men who are taken care of by the Province. The Province provides a breakfast and supper and pretty much relies on the Marian Centre being open for the third meal to take care of the need of the men, and there are a number who are pensioners who come in and supplement their basic diet there.

There is clothing assistance at the Marian Centre and a recreation room, handicrafts room and things like that.

Senator Pearson: You receive clothing and such like from people all around the City?

Mr. Guinan: Yes. As far as the Marian Centre is concerned the entire operation is carried on by friends of the Marian Centre as well as the community. It is a Catholic organization but it is completely on a non-sectarian basis so the volunteer work is on a very ecumenical basis. Men from various groups come in to assist us, and pick-up men come to assist us. All kinds of people drop in because they recognize the services are on a non-discriminatory basis. This is true of the food as well as the clothing.

Senator Carter: Your Club, your Co-Operative Club, is an activity of the Marian Centre?

Mr. Guinan: No. I think it is important for the health of the co-operative organization to be completely independent, and the Marian Centre feels that way too. We are very happy, and I speak as a staff worker now around the Marian Centre—Marian Centre is very happy to be able to provide the housing facility for the Club. They are also very aware that the Club is an independent group and they much prefer to be that way.

Senator Carter: But before your Club started, and the Club started in?

Mr. Guinan: In 1965.

Senator Carter: And the Marian Centre started in 1955, ten years earlier?

Mr. Guinan: Right.

Senator Carter: So prior to the Co-op the Marian Centre was dealing with transients?

Mr. Guinan: Yes.

Senator Carter: Very much the same way as the Edmonton Day Centre. The same type of people.

Mr. Guinan: Yes.

Senator Carter: How did they get to the Centre? How did they get out?

Mr. Guinan: Well now as I mentioned, a large segment of the men, the majority of the men now would be men who are getting help through the Provincial government through the Hostel. They come to the Hostel when they come in town as a place where they can get assistance.

They are either housed at the Hostel or a number of them are placed through the Hostel. The Provincial government provides two meals at the Hostel or perhaps at the Salvation Army, and then they are informed that the third meal is available at the Marian Centre.

At one time we served two meals and now we are serving one which is a noon-day meal for a group of men who are cared for by the Provincial government to provide a third meal, and for pensioners where it provides a supplement to their diet.

Senator Carter: Do these people turn up first at the social centre?

The Chairman: At the Hostel.

Mr. Guinan: Well, a man would come into the Marian Centre first. They might have heard about the Marian Centre from somewhere else, and for the sleeping accommodation we would suggest they go to the Hostel and if they are drinking and under the weather we would suggest they go to The Edmonton Day Centre for overnight shelter.

Senator Carter: When you started out your Club you had certain goals you said. You mentioned this in your brief. You did not spell them out. What were these goals you had in mind? Were they different from what you have actually achieved?

Mr. Guinan: No, I don't think so. We talked about ideas of a co-operative for about six or seven weeks, and it was just generally

a simple thing all around; things men could do that they can't accomplish on their own.

Senator Carter: Were these people in on these discussions then?

Mr. Guinan: Yes. And then at the end of six or seven weeks we had 16 or 18 men that wanted to do something, and we drew up this charter. The Club was formed with the idea of spreading the spirit of co-operation and for engaging in activities that we wanted to do. During the course of the six or seven weeks the main activity we talked about most that we could start in with some kind of co-operative and some assistance to one another.

Senator Carter: Yes, but I have a little problem because I understand these fellows are transients, and the philosophy is you feed them and you pass them on as often as you can. Not much sense talking about co-operatives if they are only going to be with you for a night or two or three days. Apparently you have a different type of transient, a fellow who stays longer than the fellow who stays at The Edmonton Day Centre.

Mr. Guinan: No, they are among the same group of men. I think perhaps possibly because of the Club there are a number of men that are very interested in clubs who are around the City on a permanent basis. The three gentlemen with me are all permanent residents, but there are not too many. George Lee our office manager is pretty much a permanent resident now.

Senator Carter: I am thinking about at the beginning, the raw material.

Mr. Guinan: It would be basically the same group of men, and there has been a great turnover.

Senator Carter: There was an expectation that they would stay longer than one or two nights?

Mr. Guinan: Oh, yes. When Mr. Cumming speaks of transients, he doesn't mean that it's just one or two nights. Maybe a particular man will be there one night and maybe sober in between now, but right now we have a bad employment picture.

Senator Carter: I'm not talking about now. I am talking about at the beginning. How long would they be staying with you at that time?

Mr. Guinan: I would say there would be a large number that would be there a month or more. And then there would be a large number that would expect to be around for about three months.

Senator Carter: Would this be at any particular time of the year?

Mr. Guinan: No, it used to be at Marian Centre that there was a very distinct drop at certain times of the year. Our high period was the period of greatest unemployment.

We have found this to be at the end of the winter and just beginning of the spring when all the winter jobs were over, winter camps had been closed down for a bit and some jobs had not opened up.

Then our low period of numbers was in the harvest season around September. It would vary a bit different years, but September 1st to April period.

Senator Carter: Would these people be hanging around for a month getting shelter at the Hostel and a meal there and a meal somewhere else for a period of a month?

Mr. Guinan: People have been doing this for years, you know. During the periods of high unemployment the length of the man's stay is longer, and there are men around this winter, quite a number of men whose permit has never been this long for them before they have had a job. But even in the fairly good year, a two-month period here or a two-month period there for a man that does get out to work is fairly normal. There is a large number of men who come in and stay at the Hostel for two or three days and pass right on. This was not the men you would be talking to because they would be passing along. But there is a very large number of men you can expect to be around for a month or two, and a number of men that are around almost on a yearly basis.

Senator Carter: You started out with your Club and have been very successful, and you eventually started you said a loan club. You started it with \$40 and got it up to \$250, and then you have loaned, you said, \$1,400. You have made \$1,400 worth of loans. Apparently you haven't had many bad debts?

Mr. Guinan: Well, we have written off no money, but we have most of that money out now. Most of the basic money is out now. I would say there is probably a good hundred

dollars that could be written off, but when you consider that this operated for a couple of years I think that is a very good percentage.

Senator Carter: I think that is a very good point.

Senator Pearson: Are these loans interest-free?

Mr. Guinan: Interest-free because the Club decided it that way. We operate on donations of members, plus membership fees, and I would say that the loan fund would not have grown larger through interest than it did through donations of members.

Senator Pearson: Loans are small?

Mr. Guinan: Yes. \$5, \$2 sometimes for cigarette money. Maybe an unusual \$15-loan.

Senator Carter: Now you mentioned another venture that you tried to initiate, and that was an enterprise where a group of plumbers, say, or electricians could start a little co-operative. How did you get on with that?

Mr. Guinan: This is an idea that has always been in the Club. Sometimes certain things would be talked about, and maybe if there are people around that can initiate the idea and can get started—two members have got together in partnership and have got together for one summer in a cement construction deal where they put in pavements for sidewalks. They started with practically no capital, and they got through the summer paying off their debts and living on it, but in the winter time both of them I think ran into wage-earning jobs and didn't start it up again. But it was a successful experiment for the time they did it, and it is one of the things we think may crop up and we like to keep talking about it.

Senator Carter: You haven't tried it apart from that?

Mr. Guinan: But apart from that, you see it wouldn't be the Club that would start it. The Club would sort of foster it.

Senator Carter: Yes, I know.

Mr. Guinan: Members of the Club would get together and form their own co-operative.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Mr. Guinan: So far the only thing that has been formed is a partnership. That partner-

ship did hire some of the Club members, and it was a nice thing to have going.

Senator Carter: You mentioned in your brief when you started your Club that you hoped to develop some new ideas and new forms of cooperation. Have you any more apart from this co-operative enterprise? Do you have anything else in mind?

Mr. Guinan: I think additional rather than new. I am not sure. I may have used the word "new". I wanted to mention that even after nine months, although the only form of co-operation the Club had at that time was the co-operative employment service, I want to make it clear that the Club was open to any kind of co-operative activities that would be helpful to the members. The stimulation of other co-operatives. The other one would be co-operative housing. It seems to me on a couple of occasions that almost got started. We talked about a possible number of men who have steady income leasing a building on their own, and a co-operative arrangement on the eating facilities.

Senator Carter: Are you affiliated now with the other co-operative unions or with credit unions? Can you get a loan to start?

Mr. Guinan: We are now an official co-operative in the Province of Alberta. Registered. And we are also affiliated with the City Centre Co-operative Club in Regina and the one in Calgary.

Senator Carter: You have access to their financial resources?

The Chairman: They have access to his financial resources. It is the other way around.

Mr. Guinan: Not too much of that, to have access to.

The Chairman: The others are new.

Mr. Guinan: We were helpful in getting them started mainly on an education basis. Not really on a financial basis.

Senator Pearson: Have you ever started to get a co-operative going, tearing down old buildings and houses that somebody went and moved out there with a group working on that?

Mr. Guinan: No.

Senator Pearson: You could salvage a certain amount of stuff there.

Mr. Guinan: This would be an idea that might well be brought up in the Club sometime.

Senator Quart: There were a few questions, but very briefly, you mentioned clothing to begin with. First of all I may say I think this loan fund is fantastic because we have one group coming before us where there was a job available but the man couldn't put up his registration or something of this kind.

The Chairman: That was in Montreal.

Senator Quart: Well, he couldn't get the job, but I do think that is marvellous.

You mentioned clothing. Do you sell this to some people who can afford it, to some men who can afford to pay a little for it?

Mr. Guinan: I guess it is clear in your mind the clothing operation is an operation of Marian Centre.

Senator Quart: Not the Club?

Mr. Guinan: No. The Marian Centre is one of the agencies working in the area. It has a feeding operation and clothing operation.

The Chairman: It is the same as the group you are with, the Catholic Women's League, under a different name.

Senator Quart: Have you a women's auxiliary attached to your group to help out?

Mr. Guinan: Not the Club, no.

Senator Quart: You haven't talked about women.

Mr. Guinan: The Club was formed among the men who come to Marian Centre there and it is just men that come there for the services.

Senator Quart: Senator Pearson said women have their own. Do you know of anything here they have of this type?

Mr. Guinan: There is less for the women now. There is less for the women but there is more than there was before. The problem has been housing facilities, and during the course of last year a woman who has really got no place to stay and has no shelter, there is overnight shelter available with much less numbers. Maybe two or three women.

Senator Quart: Women would seem to be more self-sufficient.

Senator Carter: Not many transient women.

Mr. Guinan: I guess there are a great number of sociological reasons, but it seems to me the problem of single poor is largely men. I think even in the breadlines in the days of the depression the breadlines were largely men.

The Chairman: How would you know about jobs that Manpower wouldn't know about?

Mr. Guinan: Well, the Club has been going for about five years, and initially especially and all during the five years we have got a certain amount of publicity so people call us directly on a number of things.

We have also gotten a little radio and TV publicity. Manpower pretty much realize that people calling them for jobs—and we certainly are for Canadian Manpower—and the men in the Club are normally advised if they are asking for jobs, for employment, to go down to Canadian Manpower to see what they can get there, and if they haven't got something go down to the Club.

The Chairman: But that is not the point. The point I was making is that large groups of Edmonton people might call you if they wanted someone for a casual job. How would they know to call you, even with the amount of publicity you have had? Where would my information be? Why would I call you?

Mr. Guinan: Now you would call us.

The Chairman: Now, yes, but yesterday.

Mr. Guinan: That is the way this happened. It is largely through individual people who have learned through publicity, and also I think our main means has been the men who were hired, doing a good job and the person would call back. This would be especially true of the man around the house. If a lady gets a good man she will tell her neighbour. We rely a good deal on this, and quite often we bring it up in the Club that if you have a job don't forget it is more than you; the Club is at stake.

Senator Pearson: Do they refer people to you?

Mr. Guinan: If any jobs came in to the Marian Centre, then the Marian Centre would mention that the men who come here have their own co-operative employment service. Would you call this number.

Senator Carter: If a person was, say, an electrician and he had been trained in some other province and he finally ends up here at

your Club, would his certificate be all right? He could go out and do a job as an electrician here?

Mr. Guinan: I am not personally familiar with the regulations as far as the provinces are concerned. Our office manager, George Lee, would probably have a better idea, or there would be a better chance of his having known whether this certificate would be good in other provinces. I think it depends on the trade.

Senator Carter: Not on unions?

Mr. Guinan: And unions, too, perhaps.

Senator Carter: You have no problem with unions?

Mr. Guinan: No. Most of our men are non-union men; not active union men. Maybe they were active at one time and weren't able to keep up with their dues. But a number of our men work through hiring agencies that do mainly union work, and often they get a union job.

Senator Pearson: You have to be licensed by the province to get a job as an electrician.

Mr. Guinan: I really don't know.

Senator Quart: You don't do any co-operative buying at all?

Mr. Guinan: No.

The Chairman: They are lonely people and I suppose what these people are looking for is comradeship.

Mr. Guinan: I think these men look for comradeship, and I think that is good for each of us have opportunities for it. The Club provides this opportunity for a number of men. I know I am close friends with a number of men now I never would have been if there had not been the Co-Operative Club.

The Chairman: One of the people who came to us from Montreal—I think the name was McCarthy was unusually bright. A couple of them had very responsible jobs.

Mr. Guinan: I think this is not from my point of view unexpected information. I know in the Club we have had people with all sorts of educational background. A man can be economically down for a variety of reasons, and one of the men, the last I heard of him, he was writing a book on his experiences in

the war. He was a member of the Canadian Intelligence Service in the war.

Prior to coming to us he was circulation manager of some magazine, but there is a great deal of variation in education, and it is not something that is made much of in the Club. But you do know if you are a member in the Club for a year or so that there are a large number of men with talents.

The Chairman: May I on behalf of the committee thank you.

What stands out here is the need for leadership that someone has to bring into the fold. You have done it in this case. It inspires men in themselves, and it gives them the idea that they are not useless, that they are not without merit. They attempt to recognize themselves, and they get new hope. To that extent it is very useful and very helpful. On behalf of the committee I thank you for taking that interest.

The Chairman: Dr. J. D. Craig, the Director of the Gardenside Development Society is our next witness. He will tell you just exactly what is involved here. He is accompanied by Mrs. Barbara Weekly, a volunteer nurse who has been intimately concerned with the problems over the past eight months.

Dr. J. D. Craig, Director, Gardenside Development Society: This is a brief drawn up by a society called the Gardenside Development Society, and many of its members have been down probing, looking at, and making suggestions as to how the health of the general area which in this City is called 97th Street and Wall Street area can be improved. And as a result of many of their investigations and their impressions, this brief has been drawn together, and I have been asked to present it by them. We welcome this opportunity to appear before you.

Very briefly, we will go through some of the points we would like to make. First of all, it is our impression about 10 per cent of the transients coming through Edmonton at the moment are French speaking, and there does not appear to be any efforts made for a French-speaking social worker in the Hostel. We would like to see that urgently.

Secondly, the next point we would like to make is at the present moment there are lots of problems with regard to giving a man on

welfare or social assistance through the Hostel who is drinking, food and clothing. This is because clothing in particular is a method or can be used as currency and can be sold and we have made some suggestions as to how this could be dealt with. Namely, by a lot of this property, which is given to the man now, remains the property of the government agency concerned, and therefore cannot be sold to other individuals without some record of the transaction being carried out. This would mean every pair of boots, for example, would be stamped with a serial number. We feel this could be done.

We will turn to another alternative way of paying for clothing later on in the brief.

Another problem we have, every time it rains, none of these men have raincoats. We feel providing plastic bags, this type, could be used. This would cost roughly about 2-cents. They come in rolls and they could have holes cut in them. These are tremendous from the point of view of saving people from getting wet. Every time we have a rain storm we see many people with bronchitis mainly because there is no provision made for providing something as simple as this.

Another point, all the government and other agency hostels should have psychiatric nurses attached to the hostel. We cite the case of a man who behaved in a very unsocial manner in numerous places in the City, and this was missed by the Hostel, and it was interpreted by them as just being a reaction or a dislike against the Hostel itself, whereas in fact this man was mentally demented and should have really been in a mental hospital.

Another thing we would like to see is better policing of quarters of transient men.

First of all, if you do have any possessions they tend to be stolen, or else if you are asleep in the hostel at night, and we feel there should be the same type of regular methods as used at museums and they should be incorporated into the hostels. For example, closed circuit television, frequent patrols, a system of lockers with keys registered and kept by the hostel staff, etcetera.

We are also advocating there must be some treatment facilities available for the alcoholics, and that in any of the facilities now provided, that the use of alcohol in the actual hostel itself should be prohibited. This is very difficult to enforce, and there are numerous ways in which alcohol can be smuggled into

the hostel. This maybe means that the number of supervisory personnel should be increased.

In the same way we think the hostel staff should take an interest in anybody who is particularly causing a lot of bother because many of these people are in fact psychiatrically disturbed.

On the subject of rehabilitation, we wish to draw your attention to the present practice of Manpower who are asking people who would have to report every day to Manpower for jobs to go out and to get the businessman they are sent to to give reasons why they have been refused the job.

Our experience with the small businessman is he is overwhelmed with bureaucratic controls at the present moment, and resents having anything to do with someone who gives his address as the hostel.

Another thing we would like to draw to your attention, the Federal government should make it mandatory that a certain percentage of the work force employed by government and municipalities should be composed of persons mentally and physically handicapped. At the present moment these people do not stand the chance the way we have our work force organized.

Then we wish to complain at the present moment of the fact this year in particular there has been great difficulty in many of the people living in government hostels to get jobs, and we want to cite this instance of a 17 year old boy who is working for the City on a temporary basis for the summer making \$3.10 an hour.

We feel a lot of this money which is being paid for high school kids—as much as they need it—is probably even more needed by the people on Skid Row and that in fact the \$3.00 could be divided up amongst the people. Most of these high school and university students are in fact doing nothing better than cutting lawns and doing gardening jobs; basically jobs that could be done by people with relatively poor educational backgrounds.

I think we should emphasize, too, that a job for people living in this area is more than just a means of making money. It is a form of occupational therapy. It has been demonstrated by people coming before us that once we are able to get them into a job we are able to cut down medication and often get them off

completely, and we are able to keep them off alcohol for long periods.

Another problem we want to bring to your attention is the fact we feel there is a great number of transients injured falling off trains, and some attempt should be made to find out the number of these. Through the Clinic we have seen five or six, and we are continually treating people with minor injuries caused by falling off trains.

I know at the present moment most people think everybody gets around in trucks, but this is just not true. The majority of people, particularly the older generation, still use the trains. And we wonder whether some alternative form of very cheap transportation, and we mention freight cars or old railway trains, couldn't be attached to some of the trans-continental trains. It must be realized that people move around from one place to another; not only to give them something to do, but also this has been the way they have been brought up, to go look for work, and this is where they derived the name "transient" in the first place.

I want to bring up the peculiar problem of the ex-heroin addicts. At the present moment some of these people are treated with the blessing of the National Parole Board and usually without the blessing of the police with large quantities of Methadone. At the present moment there is a tendency to make these people stay in the city and go on daily doses of treatment from a treatment centre.

This is fine if there is work in the city. If there is no work in the city these people, and I have one in particular who may be in the audience, I don't know, who has been in continuous trouble with the persons from the city Social Service and the provincial Social Service because they are not prepared to put him on Welfare but can't find a job in the city by virtue of the fact he had a long jail sentence and has been on heroin before and is now on methadone.

As a result of that, we have to go against the current on medical thinking and ship him out again on the oil rigs with large doses of methadone which are worth a considerable amount of money on the black market, and I feel myself, and the other people at Gardenside, that some co-ordinating agency through the Federal Food and Drug Act personnel, treatment personnel, social development personnel, R.C.M.P., is needed and this should be emphasized very strongly.

Then we want to get on the subject of income tax. Many of our people that we see going through the Clinic have been working for varying proportions of the year. This meant every time they are working they are paying Federal government income tax. At the end of the year they get their T-4 slip.

There is a practice at present with certain non-government agencies wishing to buy T-4 slips for a fraction of the real amount, and we feel if a man has money owing to him by the Federal government through the Taxation Department at Ottawa, then the Provincial government should be allowed to garnishee this in return for issuing boots, clothing, etcetera, through the hostel. Because we find most of these refunds on a T-4 slip, when it comes back into the area is in fact abused and tends to be used again for purchasing alcohol. We think it would be much better used for clothing and such other items as they need, and we feel there should be a direct relationship between the Provincial government hostels and the Federal government, and there should be some co-operation. But these people are not going for free hand-outs. In fact they are paying for it through the refund of the T-4 slip.

On the subject of police we feel that there should be far more attempt made to give the police an insight into the way in which people in this area think and act, and we have several complaints or alleged complaints particularly against the younger police who do not seem to be aware of the peculiar problems, and they think that everybody living in the "skid-row" area is a bum and is drinking because he is a no good bum, and we feel there should be a massive program of education made to try and dispel this impression that everybody has. Because what we are finding, if we get some of these chronic alcoholics off alcohol, we find out many of them are extremely gifted, many of them are extremely well educated, and where we should put these people, they should be put back into the community at large and turn them back in to tax-paying citizens. If this is not done and if there is not better co-operation from the police, we see no alternative but eventually there will be the formation of some sort of form of vigilante group in the area, which we don't approve of.

The reason for this, at present there are so many things that need to be done. For example, there is inadequate lighting in the street

and under the railroad underpasses. Within about four blocks of the library every day we see one or two muggings. We see people being trailed through the city by other alcoholics or people who are sober and who see somebody coming up in the city from up north with perhaps one or two thousand dollars in his pocket and they get trailed, and they go for a drink in a bar and they buy drinks, and in a dark alleyway they get mugged, and that is it. We feel there should be a closed circuit television in the underpasses and have someone monitoring the whole area. This has been done in some cities.

Another thing we think should be done is if the police find that certain Indians, Metis, and other people lacking the required higher education, these people be given special constable status and accompany the constables around on their beats. This is probably the best way of getting some sort of liaison with the police force.

In discussions we have with the police on a private basis, most of them in fact advocate putting some of the older police officers back in this sort of capacity because at the present moment the tendency is to put two young policemen in a police car and have them drive around the place, they don't get to know the place and they are looked on as being nothing more than a sort of military force there to keep law and order. And I think they are far more than this. I think they have a very important part to play in the community in this area.

Then we wish to draw your attention to the fact that the hospitals at the present moment are handling a great number of these people. The average waiting time in many of the city hospitals is anything from three to five hours. But because there are so many people using the outpatient emergency facilities of the hospitals, the less educated, and certainly the more alcoholic and the more intoxicated the individual is the less likely he is to get good medical attention.

If it is remembered that many people are difficult anyway, drunk or sober, that probably these people should be treated much more cautiously, and if they had their own persons in the hospital that they could go and discuss their problems with, they would get over a lot of the problems that I mention there in the report.

Also we find patients who are admitted to hospital are discharged far too soon, and this

is due to pressure for beds. Also, this is because most of the nurses and doctors there are middle-class and they are used to have middle-class patients, and they forget when they discharge somebody who had pneumonia, say, they assume he is going out to some accommodation which is warm, dry and comfortable, whereas in fact often he is going back to sleep on the river bank. Many of these people have to be kept in the hospital for a lot longer time. The solution to this, of course, is to provide a lot more half-way houses.

Then I wish to draw to your attention the problem of medical costs under the Medicare plan for transients. In discussions with health care insurance they had mentioned there is Federal government provision made for transients. The only trouble is no one will define what a transient is. And no one knows who exactly a transient is. And the other thing, they won't put this into effect until such time as all of Canada has Medicare.

So at the present moment the Federal government is sitting on a large pool of money doing nothing with it, which they are holding back for providing medical care for the transients. And since Medicare was set up primarily originally for the poor, it seems rather ridiculous that the transients do not get this coverage, and they are being treated as rather second-class citizens.

The Chairman: Dr. Craig, this morning we were told by Mr. Cumming that he had no difficulty at all getting all the medical attention that was required for any transient who come to his place. We did not ask Mr. Guinan, but Mr. Cumming had no difficulty at all. All he had to do, I suppose, was sign a form indicating that he was a resident. But you can come back to that.

Dr. Craig: Another problem we find is that there seems to be a discrepancy between Provincial and City agencies with regard to patients who come off Social Assistance because they get a job.

Often these people, if they had psychiatric troubles, are denied the issue of free drugs which they may need for the first one or two months until they get re-established in a job, and we feel medication of this type should be continuous for this period.

The Chairman: Now you are on the ball.

Dr. Craig: Another thing we want to draw to your attention is what we consider an

iniquitous practice of the Federal Income Tax Department.

On page 16 we cite an instance of a man who under the very good legislation provided by the Alberta Government, was able to consolidate his debts and go before the Debtor's Assistance Board, and because of this he was able to go and get a job.

Now, the minute he got a job his employer was served with a \$90 garnishee by the Federal Income Tax Department, and when he phoned up the Provincial Government to say "How come?", they said "I am afraid there is nothing we can do about it. We don't like it but the Federal Government and the Queen have prior access to all monies that are made," and because of this he lost his job, and we consider this is an absolute disgrace. If there is a body set up to deal with this situation, then the Federal Government should at least show the courtesy of going through the Provincial organization for this purpose.

The other thing we wish to draw your attention to is with regard to courts. We have the impression if you can get anybody it doesn't have to be a lawyer to go and speak on behalf of the individual, he gets a more compassionate hearing from the Magistrate.

The courts are grossly overloaded, and very little time or effort is allowed just because of pressure of the courts. I don't think it is anybody's fault, but I think this is something that has got to be looked into because we see many people that are going to jail who are really harmless. We have managed to get some of these people out of jail by getting them suspended sentences or getting them sent to some of the rehabilitation villages which the Alberta Government run such as GUN.

We also feel many of the people down in the 97th Street area take the rap for more experienced criminals by virtue of the fact that they are weaker individuals and get more easily manipulated, and this is probably not taken into consideration by the court.

We also wish to draw to your attention the fact during the winter it is often more preferable to be in jail than in a government hostel for at least in jail you are in the warmth and not out on the street for 24 hours. We feel that jails such as the Fort Saskatchewan are not the answer. There should be some work camps of the type the provincial government

has at the present moment because the men who have been there come out of there physically well and feeling a lot better. The unfortunate thing is they promptly come back in this area at a time when they are under a great deal of stress. At this time we have a great deal of difficulty tranquilizing them sufficiently for the first month they are out in order to get them back into a normal job.

A lot of the trouble is caused by the fact that the money earned by them is given straight to them with the idea they can go and find a place to stay. In fact we feel something like this should be held in trust by the Public Trustee's Department, and that the money be allocated directly to the people who are providing the accommodation for them—and this applies particularly to alcoholics—and we are not very happy about this sudden loose cash, and this just starts them back up again and after three weeks or a month they are back in trouble again.

One of the things which may sound rather odd, but we see so much of this we feel it is a point to be made, and that is that the government hostel should as a matter of fact of policy supply such elements of nutrition as we see in orange juice and vitamin tablets. We see people who are extremely low in blood-sugars; we see people who are suffering from A vitaminosis.

We feel this could be done. This is something which could be done very easily in the hostel; that it should be made sort of compulsory and that everybody there would get a vitamin pill with his meal because of undernourishment.

The other thing we would like to suggest is that into the non-commercial alcohol products or non-potable alcoholic products, so-called, which everybody drinks in the 97th Street area, such as bayrum, vanilla extract, that these be spiked with vitamins and possibly albumen because these are drunk in such quantities that at the present moment I am sure the Food and Drug people could come up with a preparation which would meet the criteria for rubbing alcohol but would also have vitamins so when drunk these people would in fact get vitamins without which they get chronically ill in the future. We do not think this is above our technological resources to do something about.

The Chairman: You have taken all the fun out of life!

Dr. Craig: The next thing we would like to do, we think the bootleggers should be put out of business by having a liquor store open on 97th Street open 24 hours around the clock. I have seen three people who have gone out at 2:00 o'clock in the morning and got wine to give somebody who is ill. This is to get alcohol to treat an alcoholic who is in withdrawal.

I think it is wrong in the first place that they have to go to a bootlegger to do this. And I think there is something wrong that they can't be taken to a hospital to be treated sympathetically. But if these people who have a tremendous rapport within each other, and they are genuinely trying to help, and I think they should be able to go out at any time in the day or night and get a bottle without having to go through a bootlegger.

We feel, too, a lot of the problems that arise—we have a lady in the audience at the present moment who is complaining about this very point: At the present moment there is no place in the city for a man to go legally and drink except in a bar. In other words, if he goes and buys a bottle at the liquor store there is no way that he can go and drink that bottle because the minute he opens it he can be picked up on a charge of illegal possession because every place in the city is public and there is no private garden or the riverbank I suppose is the nearest place to us, but even it is patrolled by police and police dogs.

There is no place where he can go and drink it legally, in the hostel, in the Salvation Army, or where can he go? Obviously he is going to go and drink it in the nearest garden that he can get access to, and this makes it absolute hell for people living in close proximity because they are really the kids, and an atmosphere where the kids see alcoholics hanging around the place.

We feel there should be part of the city set aside that in the summer a garden and in the winter perhaps an arena where these people can go and sit down and drink the same as the rest of us go on a picnic, and at the moment we are tackling this whole situation the wrong way around. You know, drink it here. We are not proposing at the present moment that we abolish it, but I feel it is wrong for us who are able to go to a home and drink it at home to deny people who have really nowhere to go and drink, their elementary rights of having a bottle.

The Liquor Control Board hasn't the slightest hesitation in selling the damn stuff to these people, and I think this has put these men in a very difficult position, and I feel if there was such a place this could be monitored by police or a nurse or social worker to pick out the worst offenders, like in New York where I understand these people congregate at one of the ferry terminals, and the City of New York has put a social worker down in the ferry terminal to see who has not shown up in the morning, and if somebody is not there, they can go and find out why because they may go and find them collapsed at home dead.

We need to put these people in a place where we can monitor them, where we can watch them.

Another point we would like to make is that service organizations which do a regular job of collecting clothing and that sort of thing unfortunately, by virtue of the fact that they have to make money to support themselves, tend to sell the best of the stuff they collect to their thrift stores, and therefore the attitude, sending people down to the Marian Centre, the Salvation Army and so on, to get a decent pair of boots is absolute nonsense because they just aren't there. They have already gone to the thrift stores and to somebody who could afford to buy them.

Again, this is calculated to make a transient who is an alcoholic and poor to just feel worse and worse and worse.

Finally, we have seen and are well aware of the fact that there are at the present moment numerous instances of aggressive actions both by the police and by the men themselves. This is really nobody's fault, but where the fault in fact lies is that nobody has got together with the police and with the men concerned and with the personnel concerned, the hostel staff, and in fact gone into this in a scientific method to find out if these people can't be controlled in some safer way so there is no damage to personnel. As a matter of fact, in New York, in one of the mental hospitals, they use mace. I am not suggesting mace be used, but I am saying technology has now reached the limit where it is quite possible there is some way of treating these people so if you get an aggressive alcoholic you can in fact subdue him without getting into physical violence to the detriment of the police and the hostel staff. Really it is nobody's fault but a product of the system.

These items are all I wish to draw to your attention.

Senator Carter: Well, Dr. Craig, you have listed a lot of good suggestions, and there is one I have never come across before, and that is this T-4 slip business. That is something I have never heard of. Is that very prevalent here? Is this confined only to Edmonton?

Dr. Craig: This is so prevalent that there are two if not three agencies who operate from about January through to April buying the T-4 slips.

Senator Carter: You say non-government agencies?

Dr. Craig: In private enterprise.

Senator Carter: Let's have names.

The Chairman: The government send the money back to John Smith. They won't send it to me and they won't send it out to you. The name on the T-4 slip is John Smith.

Dr. Craig: This is theoretically how it works, but it doesn't work this way.

The Chairman: It must. The government will not send a cheque to me or to you. Now, I can forge John Smith's name, or John Smith could bring it in and sell it to me once he signed it, but they wouldn't send it to anyone except John Smith.

Dr. Craig: They send it back to the agency. Now, whether or not in fact the assignation is made—I am sure there is someone in the audience who could answer this.

From the Floor: There are three agencies present here.

The Chairman: Did you want to speak about this? When a man makes application under the T-4 slip, do you know of any case where the money is sent to other than the man who paid in the money?

From The Floor: Yes.

The Chairman: Then will you tell us about it?

From the Floor: You can go in to a certain office here in town. He poses as income tax—makes out income tax and he will offer you as low as a third. If you are lucky you will get half of what you have coming back. Now it has always been on my mind whether this is legal or not.

Senator Carter: How does he get it? That is what we want to know?

From The Floor: You sign your power of attorney over.

The Chairman: He says "I authorize you to make payment to So-and-So". I did not think the government would recognize it, but you say it happened. I would not think so, but you said you know of it.

From the Floor: This one man, I know him personally. His income over this is over \$20,000 a year.

Dr. Craig: This has been written up in the *Edmonton Journal*, and the Attorney General says it is legal.

The Chairman: If it is legal in this province it is legal in any province. What you are saying is that the man sells the income on the T-4 slip for less because he wants the money immediately. He sells it for less than he would get if he had to wait for six weeks to get the balance back, and you say someone in this City is doing it as a business?

From the Floor: There are three different offices in competition for your T-4's.

The Chairman: And you say, doctor, the authorities know about this and say they can do nothing?

Dr. Craig: This is what I read in the *Edmonton Journal*.

The Chairman: Did the *Edmonton Journal* mention names of the people?

Dr. Craig: Yes. They mentioned Mike's Income Tax.

From The Floor: The name was in the paper.

The Chairman: Mike's Income Tax?

From the Floor: He also has an office in Calgary.

The Chairman: We will have a look at it.

Senator Carter: Surely that is something that can be taken care of.

You mention Medicare at page 14, and referred to it again in your remarks this morning, you spoke about these regulation about the transient centre that was quite different from the story we got from Mr. Cumming.

Dr. Craig: I was asked to bring this up by a member of the Alberta Health Care Insurance Board with you.

At the present moment you have to have legally three months' residence in the province to come and have provincial government Medicare Plan. If you come from the United States or from a province which has not got Medicare, you are at the present moment allowed to go in immediately.

Now, Mr. Cumming is right. Where he is not right is, if you come from Saskatchewan and you are legally supposed to be on the Saskatchewan scheme and you come here and you want to register, you can't register unless you propose to take up permanent residence here.

What constitutes permanent residence? In other words, you may have been in Saskatchewan for a month or so. You may have been in the Northwest Territories, and you might have come to Edmonton, and these people don't really have a permanent home. But to all intents and purposes there is no reason why this chap can't sign up and join the Alberta Health Care Insurance. This doesn't mean the Alberta Health Care Insurance will accept him. This is where the big conflict is arising at the present moment. There is no definition of who constitutes a transient. Who, for example, is eligible for this Federal fund which the Alberta Health Care Insurance say the Federal government and Medicare people have set up, and if they propose to make it operational it means that every part of the country is covered by Medicare and it has not come in yet.

What we want is some definition of the word transient. Everybody uses the word transient. We don't know what a transient is.

Senator Carter: Well, my own idea is that the whole Medicare Plan works through agreement with the provinces very much like the Canada Assistance Plan, and just as in the Canada Assistance Plan, the word "need" is left to the province to define. I presume that the same is true.

The Chairman: It is reciprocal as far as I know, and as far as we have heard across the country. This is something new. Dr. Craig, Mr. Cumming doesn't agree with you at all, because if you handle someone from another province they automatically charge you back and you charge them back.

Dr. Craig: But it doesn't work that way. Theoretically that is exactly how it is supposed to work but it just doesn't work that way. I spent an hour and a half with the Alberta Health Insurance People and they asked me to bring this up.

The Chairman: We will take a look at it.

Dr. Craig: Because what we are trying to do, if these people can't pay they tend to get second-class patient status.

The Chairman: We have seen transients in British Columbia; we have seen transients in Ontario; we have seen transients in Quebec. Quebec has not got Medicare. We have seen transients in Prince Edward Island, but in all these other provinces there was no difficulty at all about transients receiving medical attention on application. It seems entirely new to me and does not seem to fit in with Medicare as we understand it.

Dr. Craig: This is right, but this problem I can assure you has arisen.

Senator Carter: I like your suggestion about overcoming the problem of getting a person new clothing and stopping them from going out and selling it, but I have a question mark about your plastic bags although I can see it is a practical solution to a problem, but they appear once they get dressed up in these bags almost like a uniform.

The Chairman: At night.

Senator Carter: You are talking about, you know, part of therapy restoring your self-respect and so forth like that, and here they mark themselves off with these bags.

Senator Quart: They will start a new fashion.

Dr. Craig: You would be amazed at the number of people who wear these garbage bags. I wore one the last time it rained. It poured rain and I cut holes in it and walked to the car. In fact they are available everywhere now.

Senator Carter: It would not be a mark of discrimination?

Dr. Craig: I don't really see that it looks any different. Let's face it, nobody in the rain is going to care who is dressed in what.

Senator Carter: But this poor lad would have to stick with it. He would have to carry it around with him.

Dr. Craig: They come in a pack.

Senator Carter: This federal garnishee business disturbs me, and it seemed to me that is an easy thing to be remedied. In fact the federal government could easily make that an offense.

The Chairman: That has been there since time immemorial—that the prior claim is with the Crown. It has always been there.

Senator Carter: But it isn't like the laws of the Medes and Persians. If there were an agency that could make contact—I mean the Federal government can waive that. They don't have to follow it. The law permits them to do it but it doesn't compel them.

In an exceptional case surely if there was an agency that could make representation, any province or municipality, surely if it were brought to the attention of the Federal authority they don't have to insist on it.

The Chairman: They don't have to do garnisheeing. They can do something much more sensible.

Senator Carter: I have known cases myself where overpayments have been made or something like that, and they have watered down, even down to \$5 a month.

The Chairman: That is what they usually do. This is an extreme case. Some local man takes it on himself, and it does cause hardship.

Dr. Craig: But I feel, you know, that if there is a body set up by the provincial government they should at least have the courtesy to go through that provincial body.

The Chairman: The body that is set up is by virtue of the Canada Bankruptcy Act, and the Province of Alberta, along with other provinces, has a portion of it. It allows a man to do exactly that.

The Canada Bankruptcy Act is an Act all on its own, and nothing that the province says or anyone else does in any way affects it.

In order to preserve the debt owing to the Crown in very large sums of money in very large bankruptcies where someone has fraudulently attempted to get away, the Crown is protected. That makes sense. But at the local level such as you indicate, where a man has a small debt and he is working, our experience is—and we have had some experience—that they usually say, "Well now, how

can you pay this debt? Can you pay \$5 from each pay?" And the man replies, "Sure. I will give you \$5 or \$10." That is the way it is handled. That has been my experience.

Dr. Craig: Anyway, we mention that.

Senator Quart: I think a very, very interesting thing you mentioned was the fact where they have these different services for clothing for the poor.

I can tell you a specific case and I know this. I visited there. This women's group operating Neighbourhood Services in Ottawa, an excellent group, and they collected all kinds of furniture, clothing and everything they could possibly collect for the poor. Now with that, they are employing the handicapped people. They have to meet salaries.

I spoke to the president sometime ago, and what happens is that most of the collections are made by volunteers, husbands, and so on, picking up things. They do have some trucking people doing it on Saturdays.

Now, come Monday morning—and I have been there and I have seen this—the second-hand dealers move in and they buy every available thing which they want which they can re-sell, and the thing happened that some particular piece of furniture anyway was followed, and the dealers are in there and they buy it up from the Neighbourhood Services, and they have to meet their weekly salary for the handicapped who repair the furniture and paint it and all that sort of thing. Well, this piece of furniture was sold for 50-cents more. We then went to the Salvation Army in Ottawa again and there they discourage second-hand dealers.

It is just an idea that occurred to me, if the second-hand dealers have to show a card or something or other or vice versa, and that the second-hand dealers would have to pay more at least for the article. Something should be written out somewhere.

You also mentioned about Legal Aid. I think the Chairman and members of the Committee will remember that there was a Legal Aid Committee set up in Ontario of young lawyers to give free time voluntarily on a rotating basis.

The Chairman: Legal Aid in the province would extend to about \$1 million. It is not as adequate as one would imagine, but they are well on the way.

Dr. Craig: Most of our people are theft under fifty dollars, which means there is no legal aid available. They don't really need a lawyer. What they need is somebody to go in there to speak on their behalf.

Senator McGrand: Before I ask a question, I got some information from Senator Quart. She brought this question up about the furniture and the second-hand dealer buying furniture.

Dr. Craig: And clothing and lamps.

Senator McGrand: They do that with clothing too?

Dr. Craig: Yes. Whole racks of clothing.

Senator McGrand: I was wondering because I can understand there was a chance to make a profit in furniture.

Senator Quart: I have seen this myself. With three or four women we went out, a very wonderful group of women who operate this Neighbourhood Service, but this is the regret, that they have to meet weekly salaries for the handicapped people, for their employees. The whole rack of clothing and quite big. You should visit it.

Senator McGrand: I have been there.

Senator Quart: And the whole rack of clothing the second-hand dealers were going through it and picking them out and away they went.

Senator McGrand: You have given us quite a run-down on alcoholism and drug addiction and you are doing something in the rehabilitation of these people. What sort of percentage of recovery do you get in dealing with alcoholics and addicts? What percentage have you been able to rehabilitate, or I will use the word "recovery".

Dr. Craig: The big problem of recovery is the definition. We prefer to call it control. What we call control is if we can get somebody back to work. This is our immediate goal, to get somebody who is drifting around useless back to work.

Senator McGrand: What percentage would you have?

Dr. Craig: If you consider it success getting someone back at work for maybe two or three months, sir, you probably get about between 50 and 75 per cent, but if you say "Cure"...

Senator McGrand: The difference between rehabilitation and control—control is your word. That is good.

Going back to transients coming in here and working. Are there many jobs available in the oil and gas fields to the casual labourer, or is this oil and gas—I know nothing about it—is this work in oil and gas exploration and rigs and all that goes in the work, is that done mostly by a sort of special man who has had training and he is a craftsman in his own field who can do this type of work, or is there an opportunity for the casual labourer to go in?

Dr. Craig: I think if you call them casual labourers, this would fit some of them, what they do. Some of the people are extremely skilled and they do jobs on rigs.

You know, I am not expert on this. I can't really give you a breakdown, but most of the people get jobs through people they know. They don't come through Manpower. They have a grapevine. In fact the majority of jobs...

Senator McGrand: He is a skilled man.

Dr. Craig: The majority of jobs up north are through the grapevine.

Senator McGrand: Pretty hard for the transient without the proper line of communication to make it?

Dr. Craig: That is right.

Senator McGrand: Now one question you mentioned that there appears to be no effort by the Edmonton hostels to provide French-speaking social workers. What percentage of French-speaking transients would you have? What is the French population of Edmonton?

Dr. Craig: I think we are talking about two different things. The Albertan Frenchman speaks English. No problem. The ones we are talking about from perhaps northern New Brunswick and Quebec who come here looking for jobs, and these are the ones who have trouble.

The first thing is that they come here and the first thing in a hostel setting they group, and because they group they have a much louder voice. They have something in common, and therefore they tend to be branded as troublemakers.

Senator McGrand: These are people from the East who are up here trying to find the end of the rainbow?

Dr. Craig: That is right.

Senator Pearson: I would like to know where did you get the name for the Garden-side Development Society, and why did you organize this?

Dr. Craig: We organized about two and a half or three years ago. It was really to try and find an everlasting solution, you know, as to who treats the alcoholic. This is basically why it was set up. AA say we treat them, the medical profession say we treat them, the government agencies say we treat them, so some of us got together, you know, and said let's form a little group of people who are not politically biased one way or another, and the original half-way house that we run was run by a former AA. Unfortunately, we had to close it down because he died. We ran it by a lot of help from various people financially.

You can only raise about half of what it costs to run them. We ran it to see if we could treat people much more cheaply than hospitals did, and we demonstrated we could, and then we said if we can do it in this context, let's see if we can do it on the street level, and we have had some success and we have had failures.

Senator McGrand: You have it down to what you call ghetto area?

Dr. Craig: Yes. We move from a middle-class area to a ghetto area.

Senator McGrand: You have a great many proposals and complaints, etcetera, etcetera. That is, suggestions. One of the things is you seem to favour the voucher system rather than cheques to these people.

Dr. Craig: I don't really want to get involved in this question, but I do feel in the case of a known alcoholic on treatment, I think giving him money is probably relatively foolish. I think it is asking too much. It seems to be that a lot of work we do in this Clinic seems to be collecting people who work up north for three or four months. They come to the city with \$1,500 or \$2,000 and in three weeks they have spent it all and then have nothing left. It is ridiculous at that stage to give him more money. At that stage he needs boots; he needs clothing, and he has to have them in such form that it will expedite his going back up north because there is this job available.

Senator McGrand: You are not in touch with that man while he has got the money.

Dr. Craig: That is right.

Senator McGrand: Yes.

Dr. Craig: This is why we don't like this income tax rebate coming back to him; we don't like him given money even when he comes out of jail. A lot of these people are good up north. They work very well. You know there is a saying in Edmonton the men call Edmonton sort of the prostitute of the north, and the Liquor Control Board a pimp. They can go and spend all this money, say \$1,500 and they have already paid income tax on it, and then comes in here and the government collects 50 per cent of it, and there are all sorts of indirect taxes and at the end of that time, there is nothing, and people say these guys are bums and they have contributed nothing. In fact they have contributed this sum of money. The fact is they have brought it into the economy one way or another.

Senator McGrand: You talk about police and police brutality, etcetera. Are these based on individual cases or a number of cases?

Dr. Craig: We get them the whole time and it has always been the young ones who are involved who don't seem to understand.

From the floor: I have never had the experience myself, but I have seen it happen to a couple of fellows. There were two policemen came over. As Dr. Craig pointed out they had no place to go but to the riverbank to drink the bottle. They don't like to throw them into jail because the jails are full.

They took the bottle and poured it out on the ground. I have actually seen them pour it over the man. This is not raising the man's dignity, that is for sure.

Senator McGrand: If the jail is full why do they want to pour that on them just to get him into the jail.

Dr. Craig: They don't take him in the jail.

The Chairman: They leave him alone there.

Senator McGrand: But throw away his goods.

From the floor: Which he purchased legally.

Senator Quart: I got your first name. It is Barbara. You are a volunteer?

Mrs. Weekly: Yes.

Senator Quart: Do many of your groups work as volunteers?

Mrs. Weekly: Well, when Dr. Craig first started the Clinic, his system of dealing with the men in the Clinic, medications and so on, required help and dispensing drugs and talking to the men and trying to find out what problems were going on outside in the waiting area while he talked to the patient. However, he has the operation down to a science now. He has one full time nurse. However, other nurses who are volunteers on a day-to-day basis are still involved with Gardenside projects such as this. We would like to feel we are encouraging other members of our profession more just as well as the public to bring this out what they can do.

Senator Pearson: Are you a registered nurse?

Mrs. Weekly: Yes.

Senator Carter: Dr. Craig, have you any statistics on the number of cases your Society would handle?

Dr. Craig: I think from the beginning of November to the end of April I think 800 new patients have gone through.

Senator Carter: How many of them would be repeaters?

Dr. Craig: Of the 800, those 800 separate bodies, but we are seeing in the region of between 20 and 40 people a day, and over Christmas—we open on Christmas Day and New Year's Day—and I have a maximum of 85 on Christmas because things were really terrible.

Senator Carter: Do you have French personnel on your staff?

Dr. Craig: No we do not. I speak some French.

Senator Carter: You spoke about work camps. How many of these are available?

Dr. Craig: I know of two that the Attorney General's Department run.

Senator Carter: Are they government-run?

Dr. Craig: They are government, but I feel these people can be employed in the forestry under the Attorney General's Department they could also be employed in some other department as well without having the stigma of going to jail.

The Chairman: You must understand—at least I think I know what he is talking

about—that when he speaks of camp it is open detention.

Dr. Craig: This is right.

Senator Carter: It is part of your jail system?

Dr. Craig: It is run by the Attorney General, but they are doing maintenance on roads and logging.

Senator Carter: Oh, yes. That is common.

Senator McGrand: They get paid?

Dr. Craig: They get paid. We feel this is a sort of temporary thing. What these people want is work. It is not work for work's sake. They are bored, chronically bored, miserable; nothing to do. They get told to go to bed at 10:00 or 11:00 o'clock at night. You know, lots of them can't sleep. This is the commonest complaint we get. There is no recreational program put on all during the night. You might say this is cockeyed, but because of this we don't have to give people lots of sleeping pills, some of which they mix with alcohol and get high on.

The whole thing is we are probably tackling it from the wrong way. We should probably be tackling it from the bottom up and that is why we started, to see if we could tackle it from the bottom up.

Senator Carter: You envisage then work camps apart from the penal system?

Dr. Craig: I think if there were work camps in nice sorts of places. The equivalent to this is a place called Gun, Youngstown. The people at Gun are bored stiff because there is not enough work. The people in Youngstown which is on the Saskatchewan-Alberta border are much happier because they are saying although work this year is terrible and they don't stand much of a chance of getting it, they quite often pick up two or three hours a week. Two or three hours of work a week means an extra package of cigarettes, and this means the difference between being somebody and not being somebody.

The Chairman: Doctor, this has been an interesting approach and a very interesting brief. You have intriguing new ideas. You brought many new matters to our attention. On behalf of the committee I thank you.

—Upon resuming at 2:00 p.m.

The Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, I will call the meeting to order. On my right is the Honourable R. A. Speaker, Chairman of the Human Resources Development Authority for the Province of Alberta. He is the minister of the Department of Social Development.

Mr. Minister, I would like to introduce the members of the Senate Committee: Senator Quart from Quebec, Senator Pearson from Saskatchewan, Senator Hastings from your own province, Senator Inman from Prince Edward Island, Senator Ferguson and Senator McGrand from New Brunswick, Senator Carter from Newfoundland and Senator Fournier from New Brunswick.

The Minister is going to make a short statement on what is contained in the brief and then there will be a question period.

The Honourable R. A. Speaker, Chairman Human Resources Development Authority, Province of Alberta: The person appearing with me this afternoon is Mr. E. Schmidt, a special consultant to the Executive Council in social programs and our social divisions of the government.

This afternoon some of the technical things which I would like to talk about and some general attitudes, Mr. Schmidt could certainly add to some of the more technical aspects.

Senator Croll and members of the committee, I would like to say first of all that we appreciate the opportunity to make a presentation to you. I believe that the interest and concern that you have sure personally and the concern that the Federal Government has had in this area in order to request an examination of a program like this, I think it should be commended.

I appreciate very much personally to be able to discuss this matter with you because I am certain it will enable us in the province to have a more closer working relationship with the Federal Government and there is no question about the fact that the whole problem of poverty and its various related aspects must be tackled with a coordinated effort.

In the brief which you have before you, I would like to cover very quickly the highlights of that brief and just make a few comments.

On the first page of the brief we refer to an announcement that was made in the Speech from the Throne in 1965 by the Federal Gov-

ernment. At that time they indicated that it was their intention to develop a program for the full utilization of our human resources and the elimination of poverty among our people. In one sense it is very alarming to see your committee is now again asking that question some five years later.

However, I think your presence being here is significant in the fact that the problem of poverty is a most complex one and not one that can be answered very easily so I think that could possibly be the reason for this.

At the bottom of the page I would like to read you a paragraph and then I will summarize it.

The persistence of poverty in Canada raises fundamental questions about the nature of our socioeconomic system. While it is necessary to understand the origins, dimensions and remedial aspects of poverty within the context of that system, it is also necessary to ask more profound questions that were expressed at an earlier time in the life of our nation by a number of populist political movements. It is a tragedy that a country, ranking as one of the wealthiest in terms of natural resources, and having a limited population, finds it difficult to develop structures through which everyone can freely engage in social and economic enterprises. Many wise persons, uninitiated in the theories of political and social science, and I speak of people on the streets, cannot comprehend what is defensible about an economic system that leads to need in the midst of abundance. While it is commendable to pursue innovations within the existing system in order to expand opportunities and economic benefits to more and more citizens, it is evident that the price for maintaining the existing socioeconomic system is continuation of deprivation for many individuals; to talk realistically about the elimination of poverty amongst our people will require more profound political and monetary reforms than is presently being experienced in Canadian Society.

We have, as a Social Credit Government here in Alberta, I think recognized many of the problems of poverty. As I indicated in the paper, our origins started in the 1930's when poverty was one of the greatest concerns. We have worked towards eliminating that pove-

ty and I believe our highlights to this program as a matter of interest to you occurred in the year 1966 when we had comprehensive studies carried out to look at the problems of poverty.

We called them a community opportunity assessment program. There was nine volumes of information that was accumulated at that time that represented five different communities of Indian, Metis, mining, marginal farming and the Prairie community along with two major urban centres.

Since those studies have been done, we have been attempting to look at recommendations and follow through to try and deal with the problem.

Following that we felt that there must be a delineation of where we stood on this whole question of human resource development and we presented to the Legislature in 1967 a White Paper on human resource development which certainly can be made available to you here on this Committee.

We felt that this would give us a basis upon which to deal with many problems. Within that White Paper there are three or four different structures mentioned which we felt would facilitate our action or work in human resources development.

The number one point was Human Resources Development Authority over which I am Chairman.

The responsibility of that authority is to come to grips with coordinating and better planning in government to try and eliminate any gaps in the program or to eliminate overlap that do occur.

The Authority consists of four other cabinet ministers besides myself and we make recommendations to the cabinet to deal with this problem. We also have an Act outlining the Authority and in this Act we have special powers which can oversee departmental administrations.

The other body was the Human Resources Research Council which was designed to coordinate and support scientific inquiries. In other words we felt that much of our research that was being done was not being applied to the field level or to the community level and that there needed to be a specific body to look at that.

My own department of Social Development needed to be changed to meet some of the needs. We changed the concept from one

which we felt had a maintenance and sort of custodial approach to one with a greater rehabilitation aspect and also the idea of preventing casualties before they actually occurred. A more active type program which we developed.

There are also other programs—the Alberta Service Corps which recruited young people and volunteers to work in various community and mental hospitals. We also had extensive studies in the area of penology and mental health to try and work with people who are in need.

At present we are in the process of implementing those studies. We looked at the area of Civil Rights and placed an emphasis on a legal aid program, native court workers and debtors assistance. We also worked the area of an ombudsman.

Native Peoples Development programs we feel are essential and we have placed in the hands of the Indian Association, and the Metis Association and the Alberta Native Communications Society a number of dollars so they can work and attempt to come to grips with the problems which they have.

This program—the funds that are provided to them are provided on the basis that they take and carry out responsibilities which they have designed for themselves.

In the latter part of the Paper we zero in on some of the problems which we feel are evident in the structures of our communities and the structures of government. We haven't delineated the problems of poverty or the number of various poverty groups in this Paper because certainly that information is available to you.

I don't think you wanted us to repeat that. However, we are attempting here to come to grips with some of the things that needed to be recognized and looked at at this time.

On page 6 I talk about what we call inadequate concepts. Very shortly what this means is that often poverty is looked at in an inadequate way.

For example, I mention here that sometimes poverty is not simply a function of severely restricted income, of failing health or limited motivation or other factors but a composite of all of these things.

Often we think of poverty in terms of one but not as a whole. I can give you an example. Often in industrial development we look at placing industry—and I talk about different

levels of government and maybe the community as a whole—placing industries in areas where it really doesn't often meet all of the needs of the people or in areas where we, through the Department of Social Development are spending many dollars under the Canada Assistance Program and in turn we do not spend dollars on industrial development like we should and this is one of the things that we have looked at.

Other examples I use here in looking at poverty problems, for example, often the economists and I am sure we have all heard this—the economists look at unemployment and say well, if employment is around three per cent that this is all right but if we examine it very closely we all know that within that 3 per cent are many, many human individuals that have certain needs which we must meet.

That is sort of the aggregate approach. We talk about the individualistic approach to certain problems or areas where often we try to deal with one individual and not the whole problem as such.

For example, we may deal with the father of a family but isolate him from the rest of his family and not recognizing that there are other needs.

Let us take an example, possibly a father that is in a prison at the present time. We put the rest of the children on social allowance but we really don't look at all of the needs of that particular family related to the father and in a sense are not able to rehabilitate him or come to grips with the problems that they have.

In the other area we talk about simplistic solutions. What we are talking about here is that there is not just one type or a simple solution to the many problems that we have in poverty. There are different types of approaches that people feel we should use.

For example, the poor person often we feel has a motivational problem and we feel very often that the poor person is a victim of maybe a political system.

The poor person maybe could be dealt with by income security programs or that they may be dealt with through other primitive programs or reverting back to old cultural ways.

For example, recently we talked to some cultural groups trying to solve the problems by themselves and are referred here partly to

the Indian and Eskimo people. Really we have to have a more individualistic approach.

One of the areas I would like to discuss under this simplistic solution category is the topic of the guaranteed annual income. What I feel is very significant in this area is that the guaranteed annual income has some merit but when we look at the guaranteed annual income we do not look at the whole situation nor do we often recognize that the solution is more complex than that.

In other words, it is just not an income program or the problem is just not income. We must have a number of other related programs and supporting things to work with people.

There are a number of other areas in the social psychological dimensions but in another area we talk about an increase in knowledge. What we are saying here is that we have in Canada and in particular North America, accumulated much information about people, a terrific amount, but it has been very difficult and the techniques that we have today do not translate this type of information to say, the political community or to the people that are enacting the programs and the policies.

What I suggest in here is first of all that in Canada we need—number one to look at this problem in Canada a system by which we can integrate and accumulate this information and bring it together so we have a greater amount of data and knowledge about the social and economic and political matters in one volume or in one group to be utilized for better programming.

As I mentioned earlier, one of the things we have done in Alberta to come to grips with the problem is establish the Human Resources Research Council. I may just say that it has come to grips with some of the problems and we still have more to look at and I believe the other points that I have mentioned in here is that we must give greater attention to translating these findings or these research items that we have from one group to another. In other words from the scientific community to the political community.

I raise the other topic of what we call ambivalent public attitudes as one of the problems and I am sure that as policy makers, this is one of our problems.

I am sure that we are all aware of the fact that often—well, let us just put it this way.

There is an incompatibility between some of the emotional and economic concerns that people have. For example, many citizens as I mentioned here are certainly aware of the poverty conditions that exist in many of our communities. Governments at the same time would like to react to those conditions but the people on the other side say—there are other people saying that it is too costly, the taxation is something that we can't stand.

In other words it is ambivalent in attitudes and this is a key point which we made but in making that point I would like to also add to that this particular aspect isn't always held in our media industry for example.

Often we have programs that are raised become feature articles or documentaries and say that the papers say that these are the certain needs that should be met—one of the interesting things that I find in this ambivalent attitude is that the thing the papers don't say that we should have an increase in taxation to meet those needs.

I think that is the point that I wanted to make there.

The characteristics of the contemporary political system—this relates partly to the last item that I raised. We have found and it is my experience that we as a government and I think through a fact of life are responsible for carrying out what the majority of the electorate ought to implement.

One of the items is that we as a government, propose programs that we feel are going to be good and will be a success but if they are not, often we are criticized highly by opposition, criticized by the media and at the same time we have to get people involved in these programs to participate and to help in their success.

One of the problems with this is that in the political world when you start selling a program, a certain expectation is raised within the groups that are needed.

When we sell these programs and there is a lot of publicity as I mentioned, there is this inflated or raised expectation, but in the political system it is often difficult to meet these or to fulfill social objectives as quickly as we so desire.

I think the problem that we have here in Canada and particularly in Alberta is that we have to attempt to set long-term objectives but our political system where we have

elections every four years or at a shorter time or five years, that long-term objectives are very difficult.

However, in light of that we must look at short-term objectives and attempt to reach the needs of the people but it isn't very easy because it is a very slow process.

We suggest here that in publicity what we should stress is not what the in-point is always going to be in the program but what the process of the program would be and some of the immediate things which may happen and then secondly what we suggest here is to get involved in programs so that we may have a better understanding of the public that are involved in our political system.

That minority groups that are in need should have access to the public decision making and to the decision makers.

We are attempting to promote that objective in Alberta and at this time we are establishing advisory appeal committees along with supporting any group that wants to organize a program.

In the next section we talk about cumbersome administrative structures and I will deal with that very quickly.

One of the things that we have recognized that we must come to grips with is that the relationship between the Federal, Provincial and Municipal Governments are to be facilitated or have some structures so that each one can deal with the other very effectively.

Secondly, if administrative structures of government, often within departments, we have a lack of coordination and also between departments of government there is this lack of coordination. When this occurs, we find that when we try to coordinate many of these various levels of government inside the government or between government and private agencies, that very often there is a resistance to this because various groups have their vested interests and I believe this is one of the problems that we have to deal with and look at the structures that can deal with it.

I have listed in here some examples which I feel could be looked at and make a suggestion. I suggest in here that the Federal Government or the Government of Canada should look at developing a single agency that can legally be empowered to coordinate planning and negotiating efforts of all the Federal Government departments and their agencies.

We have attempted to this in Alberta through our Human Resources Development Authority.

On page 21 we talk about the eclipse of the non-governmental sector. This is one of the areas that we are very concerned about in the Government of Alberta in that many private agencies and volunteer agencies or various groups who wish to carry out the social responsibility or take a social responsibility are losing out because they haven't the access to funds that the government has and this situation not only exists in Alberta but exists in other provinces of Canada and as I found out recently, it exists in the Scandinavian countries.

The attitude often in our social programs is that the governments can finance, governments can promote and take over these various social programs.

This has promoted an attitude amongst our people at this point somewhat—let government look after it and take social responsibility alone and it is happening at present and is a process that is growing.

If we really believe in the basic system which we promote here in Canada and particularly here in Alberta, I believe we must be aware of this particular eclipse that is happening.

We in Alberta feel that we must look at new innovations and partnerships in cooperation between the public and private sectors. We must examine each one's role and indicate that we as a government are willing to support and promote these other agencies. Along with agencies I talked about volunteer aspects of programs and we as a government tried to say that we have all the answers to social programs and attempt to infringe into the area—if we do this, we are going to lose our volunteer efforts that we have in Canada today and there is no question about that.

I must again refer to my experience in the Scandinavian countries. This is one of the questions that we asked very actively over there—do you have a volunteer segment of your senior social programs and particularly in the country of Denmark. The answer is no, we haven't. The government takes this responsibility.

This could be the way we will go if we do not change the attitudes at this point.

We are trying different things in Alberta to come to grips with that particular question.

We have a program which we call Request for Proposals in which we analyse certain social needs and our idea is to put a price tag on that social need or whatever it is and that the public can do the job for us and we will contract with them.

I can answer more questions on that if you wish. We are also having this fall a series of conferences with the private agencies, with the church sector so that they can become involved and help us answer the questions as to what they should do and how we can contract with them and how we can let them have the responsibility.

My attitude as Minister of Social Development in the area of Human Resources Development is that there are a number of people who can do the work for us and we as a government are only to promote and support and assist in doing that and then we can stay out and not interfere.

I would like to thank you once again for the opportunity of making our presentation and say that we are open to any questions.

Senator Carter: Thank you, Mr. Chairman. I think I should begin by telling Mr. Speaker as Minister of the Department of Social Development that we have been very much impressed, at least I have and I am sure I am speaking for the rest of the Committee by briefs we have had presented to us here in Edmonton and particularly by the pioneering spirit that is striking out in new directions and seeking new approaches. That has been shown again today in the brief you have submitted and in your opening remarks to us.

I think one of the things that impressed us most in this new way of attacking the problem, was the special project for motivation of employment structures.

Are you satisfied with the results of your program?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes. It has been some time since we have examined it but we felt that there was a lot of merit in the program, that it did have some success.

I believe that if we were to transfer what we have learned from that program into let's say the total community of Alberta, it was a big cost factor. I think that was a decision that had to be made at that point.

We could have continued let's say the pilot project as it was but the relationship between the number of people and the worker was

fairly low as I recall now which indicates a large cost factor.

Senator Carter: When you say large cost factor, I was talking with Mr. Cooper, the research man, and I enquired about the per capita cost and while he didn't give me any specific figures, he indicated that it was rather low.

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: What I was saying, I guess, is this. In relation to what we are doing, let's say in the City of Edmonton, there are a number of social workers per client—provincial worker per client but the ratio is much lower than what we have now.

Now, if you were to transfer what we learned there to the provincial scene, that would have meant that we would have to increase our staff quite extensively. I think that is what I meant. In dollars and cents we didn't have the budget.

Senator Carter: Are the personnel available if you had the money?

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: That is a difficult question to answer—I doubt it. I am afraid I can't answer that question.

Senator Carter: Are you convinced that this is the direction in which we have got to go if we are going to tackle this?

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: Yes.

Senator Carter: I am thinking that poverty is something like an iceberg. You know there is part of it we see and usually the part we see is the best part and down below the surface is the hidden part of the iceberg that you don't see and these people and certainly what impressed me about them was that these were people that came from the bottom part of the iceberg. They were down and out, hopeless and everything else, and yet they had been restored in hope and faith and rehabilitated.

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: Yes.

Senator Carter: The by-product of this has been. I was not convinced that it would need to be extended to prove any point but the thought occurred to me that if we were going to tackle this hidden part of the problem, that you have got to have the Human Resources that emerge from this experiment, the client committee. These people have gone through the mill and they know what it is and it seems to me that these are the kind of instruments that we must have and must develop

before we can even think of tackling the rest of the iceberg.

I was wondering if you agree with that?

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: Yes, I agree with you on this type of program and the pilot project. In other words training and assisting people in their daily life and also in obtaining employment if necessary. I agree with these objectives.

Senator Carter: Yes.

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: Also them becoming involved in trying to help each other.

Senator Carter: What I am trying to say and perhaps I am not expressing myself very well but if we are going to do a good job on this hidden part of the iceberg, we have got to find and we have got to develop the people that have emerged out of this program to do the job for us so that whether you produce them by continuing this project or some other way, we can't do much until we produce them one way or the other.

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: You were saying that persons that were restricted should work in the role of helping others?

Senator Carter: Yes. Particularly the type of person that has emerged from this program because they were more or less selected because I think they weren't the run of the mill people because they had abilities and certain possibilities. They were down and out and hopeless, there is no doubt about that. Now there are perhaps excellent social workers. They can speak from experience and you spoke about your problem of communications.

There is a real problem there but who are you going to get to solve this problem of communications if you don't solve it through this type of person?

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: Yes, I know what you mean.

Senator Carter: We have to find some way of producing the Manpower to deal with this problem and to produce that manpower we must have this type of worker whether you continue this one or whether you start another one, I think it is more or less immaterial.

What I am trying to say is I don't think we can make any impression on this problem until we have these human resources to do it.

I am wondering what your reaction would be to that?

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: What you are talking about is this special type of individual that has gone through poverty and drugs, maybe alcoholism or whatever it is and has come back and straightened out?

Senator Carter: Yes.

The Hon. Mr. Speaker: Following this very concept we have used this in a house in Edmonton—MacDougall House—where a number of people there were acting as counsellors and worked with other people. They were girls, transient girls who had various problems including alcohol problems and drug problems. From all the information that I have heard it has been very successful so I am sure that this type of concept could be transferred and used in other areas.

I can't see any real pitfalls with it. Experience is a very important factor and I think that is what you are saying?

Senator Carter: Yes. My thought was that that is part of our problem and if we are going to tackle it we have to produce and develop the type of person who can tackle it and this is what this project has done.

Not only that but we have to keep on doing it and whether you do it by continuing this project or do it by starting another project—perhaps this would be the sensible way of doing it because these people have gone through the mill.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes, I agree with you, Senator, that this would solve a lot of our problems but it would also cost a lot of money.

You have to put a lot of investment in to develop human resources and whether you invest money in training people like that for counsellors who would work with other people or whatever it may be, it is going to cost a lot of money and I think this is what I was trying to say that that was very right but we also had the other side of the picture where people say sorry, we don't accept the taxation. There is always that double-standard attitude so it is a very difficult thing to eliminate.

We only have a limited budget with which we can work and that is one of the problems with the project you referred to.

Senator Carter: Yes, that is another question.

The Chairman: I understood you to ask the Minister if the Demonstration Project in his view was a success?

Senator Carter: Yes.

The Chairman: And I understood you to say that it was?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes.

The Chairman: Well, from the evidence that we have had before us yesterday from the professional groups and later in the evening from the people who were the guinea pigs, we found that definition on page 6 of your brief fit them exactly.

You said that poverty is not simply a function of a severely restricted income. It was there.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes.

The Chairman: The limited motivation was there, the deficient education, it was there and the home environment was there. You have all the ingredients and yet they have a 70 per cent or more success out of that group of 109.

Now, we have these demonstration projects, Mr. Minister, and we and you particularly agree that they are successful. Where do we go from there?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Well, are you talking on a larger basis?

The Chairman: We will come back to this group in a minute but here you are talking about a demonstration project which was finally initiated on your part and we paid you credit for it. It was experimental and forward looking and you found out something from it. You found out something that was vital and valuable and an improvement. You know that?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes.

The Chairman: Where do we go from there? What do we do with it? We have found something that works on a limited basis at the present time but where do we go from there?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Well, I think we have to be very realistic. A, we have to do a total analysis at large because we can't answer the question relative to a dollar value unless we have available this analysis. This is

one of the determining factors and we have started in our department an employment opportunity program which we have run on a one-year basis which is somewhat similar to this project and my thinking is that we are prepared to look at our employment opportunity program relative to that one in the City of Edmonton. They can carry it on because they have some jurisdictional rights to that and to make changes.

Mr. Schmidt: In response to your question I think one of the things that this brief stated is that there are many kinds of poverty and that the demonstration projects for these types of people has proved successful but it doesn't mean that it will be good in other regions where basically you don't have an expanding economy and so to promote job employment is really a futile kind of undertaking.

This program is good for a certain kind and type of poverty.

Now, the point the Senator made about what can we learn from this kind of research—I think one thing we learned is that any poverty program is very sensitive to the needs of people in the little things. Where a woman can afford to get her hair done, whether she has money for transportation—all these little things are important to this type of person, you know someone comes to visit them and reassures them on the job and over time you can have successes that you can't have by very impersonal economic type of programs which just sends out a cheque in the mail at a guaranteed level—which is necessary but assumes that that is now going to solve someone's problem.

I think it raises questions about some of these programs that are advocated as a solution to poverty. They are oversimplifications and they won't solve the kind of problems I think we are talking about.

The Chairman: This definition that you have here in your own language is certainly not simple. You have got money, health, motivation, education and environment. You have covered the waterfront, and you say that these are all involved in poverty.

Now, I am saying this: the people who came before us yesterday, without us ever having seen them, responded to all these various requirements. They had them all and they had some additional ones as well, but they did have all of these things. They

responded favourably. Now, where to go from there? What do we do with that knowledge we have gained? I think that experiment cost about \$100,000. I am just guessing and I could be wrong; it is approximate. It involved all levels of government. The province, Edmonton and the federal Government. This program turned out to be very worthwhile. I am asking you what do we do with it? How do we transfer the information that we have to the point where it helps people not only in the Province of Alberta but in the other provinces as well? Are we going to say—and I don't want to put these words in your mouth—that we are not going to solve this problem because we are not prepared to face the costs?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Okay. Number one—well, undoubtedly related to the situation is the fact that there is a limited number of funds, that is what every government is facing. That is what we are facing in Canada and every government across Canada. Instead of saying expand the budget they are saying reduce the budget or hold the line and this approach is one of the approaches used in our inflationary times but that is one of the things that has to be considered and is of concern to all of us.

I touched on this a little bit right in the first paragraph that when we approach the inflationary problem, we are looking at dollars and cents and maybe keeping our dollars at the right value but at the same time there are people who are suffering. People that can be productive and who could play a part and do the things that you are mentioning.

I also think it is a matter of priority of emphasis as well. It is the priority not only on social programs in the budget...

The Chairman: Well, I must admit that I was not thinking of Alberta only.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: No.

The Chairman: I was speaking of a national commitment.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: I was trying to say that.

The Chairman: The national commitment. Here we have these people who have money, although not a great deal, and they have the best social services. You really reached out and gave them the services, and in addition there was good delivery and good relationships.

Now, if we can do that on a small scale, and there are others in other parts of the world who are doing it on a large scale, if we had a national commitment towards doing it, do you think it is possible for us to solve the problem?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Well, what we have found is this. We have changed the emphasis of our department of social development to a development type concept. We have changed to one of providing money for trading, providing money to place people in employment and to give them support.

Maybe they need certain things today to enable them to work and we found very much success in that program which is similar to this one.

My attitude at the present time that this is where the emphasis should be placed, on the employment of the people and helping these people to be retrained and helping them to get employment.

Up to the present time let's say the whole area of social welfare in Canada we have talked more about the financial programs and financial assistance to the individual, financial assistance becoming a right for those who are in need and I don't argue with that because that might be all right but the thing is all of the people that we work with in Alberta, without exception in our group—we had an experimental employment opportunity program in Edmonton along with this other one and without exception every person wanted employment and wanted to go to work and I think that is a basic assumption of people that we have that kind of a national attitude to work towards that, it would help.

Let us say along with industry as I mentioned here. If we have industrial programs then the industrial programs would relate to some of these people. We can look at a multi-number of phases.

The Chairman: Mr. Minister, at the greatest height of our national prosperity our poor remain about the same in number, so that full employment and national prosperity has not affected poverty.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes, but I think we have just been speaking in terms of economics and what we have forgotten is some of the other things you have mentioned, all the individuals that needed some support services or assistance or training to work.

The Chairman: What I am saying is that there was not employment there. The jobs were not there. There was a great deal of prosperity for you and me, but they did not reap the benefit of that prosperity because they did not have the jobs. If we are going to be realistic about this we must remember that something beyond employment is going to be needed to solve this. What it is we are not all too sure.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: That's right and that is a very good point. But what I am saying—I was talking about let me say nine or ten months ago in the Province of Alberta where we did have a number of opportunities for employment and I believe to place people in employment at this period of time is very, very difficult, but what you are saying is very, very true.

Mr. Schmidt: You asked why they could be done nationally. We have Canada Manpower, and they have a national mandate to deal with this problem to a degree and if you do you know a detailed analysis of how they operate in areas where we have a great deal of poverty in this province, they aren't really—I shouldn't say they are not interested but at least they don't see it is their mandate to look at an individual in his total context and I suppose there is an argument that Canada Manpower would be a very good place to start expanding concerns for other kinds of needs a person has besides just filling an industrial roster of jobs.

Senator Carter: I would just like to make one point here. I haven't got over the point I was trying to make earlier. The point I am trying to make is this.

If you had a billion dollars tomorrow—and you say money is your problem—but if you had a billion dollars tomorrow and even if you had a billion jobs tomorrow, you couldn't place one of these people that we saw last night till somebody had done something with them.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes.

Senator Carter: And so before you can spend any money wisely before you can place them in any jobs, that job has got to be done in here in this project, you are developing the resources that can be utilized to tackle the major jobs. That was my main point.

The Chairman: Senator Pearson?

Senator Pearson: Yes, Mr. Chairman, I would just like to follow along that line. You suggest that you would have to have a total analysis in the province before you could really get started on the problems of disbursing your various funds et cetera. Would you do that analysis subject to the different bodies that are volunteer bodies that are working now or would you make that a particularly government job?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: You are speaking now of the Human Resources Council?

Senator Pearson: Yes.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: We provide funds to this Council and they are responsible for coordination of research and the research can be contracted out to private groups, private individuals and consultants.

Senator Pearson: You yourself have just delegated it to the Research Council?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: No. On the Research Council...

The Chairman: I think you have made it clear. You are in the habit of buying services?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes.

The Chairman: That is somewhat different than any other of the provinces. Instead of establishing your own machinery you buy it.

Senator Pearson: What relation then does this volunteer body have to this Research Council? Are they just go there and say "Here is our problem?"

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: The administration of the Council is looked after by what, three Ministers?

Mr. Schmidt: There is a Council of 10.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: And this Council determines what the priorities are on research. Different groups can make submissions to it.

Mr. Schmidt: It is a public agency and I suppose the best example like it is the National Research Council which any individual or group can make an approach to and they are welcome to. They may not I suppose meet the priorities but I think that when you ask what happens to this analysis,

in the research that was undertaken prior to the establishment of this Research Council, a semi-economist has found out that research carried on within the department of government or government agencies is not very good research. Because if someone—let us say you are my boss and you want me to do an analysis on the program and I find something there which I know you don't like, how am I to give an honest report? It is better to have your analysis done by outside independent people who will be honest and have no axes to grind and that is one of the basic problems facing research within public institutions.

Senator Pearson: Thank you.

Senator McGrand: I understood you to say that you did not regard the guaranteed annual income as the solution to poverty. Now, I agree with you. Earned income is what we all prefer; isn't that right?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes.

Senator McGrand: What is the alternative to a guaranteed annual income when you have unsolved problems of poverty on your hands? I look at it two ways.

One is the employment of the development of our undeveloped resources into goods that are needed in the economy, that are actually needed and the other is some system of giving the unemployed a greater share of the national income.

Now, how do you do that? By what method of taxation and distribution?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: I don't think I can give you an answer. When you are asking for a technique, you are asking for a big answer.

What you are saying is how do we best distribute income to the unemployed. That is the question you want answered?

Senator McGrand: Yes.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: The government's position is this. We feel that, you know, that income supplement to a person—you know, we support that type of a concept. We haven't totally analysed what the best approach to this type of program is. But what we are saying and what I said in here is that along with that income supplement there are other types of supportive programs.

Senator McGrand: Now, that would be done by some kind of tax and distributed?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes and I haven't a position on that or at least I can't give a government position on that particular question. I can only give you my own opinion at this point.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Minister, I just have one short question and it has to do with respect to the voucher system used in the Province of Alberta.

We have had some pretty bitter opinions of the use of vouchers and the voucher system and I am sure there must be an explanation. I wondered if you could give us an explanation of the government's policy?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: As I understand our use of the voucher system, it is one of the most extensive of any province of Canada. We have made a policy decision at this point in time to reduce the use of vouchers to a minimum and we are in the process of working out the details of doing that now.

The number one item that we are certainly going to work on is the voucher system that is used for school books. So that is just one of the areas that we will be looking at and...

From The Audience: When?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: And also some of the other areas along the line. However, I must say also we have in our policy decision said that we will retain some use of the voucher system, particularly in the areas where we feel there is some feeling of misuse.

Senator Hastings: Thank you very much.

Senator Inman: I have one question, Mr. Chairman. You mention on page 17 that at present there are serious deficiencies in the relationships between government and private organizations, between various levels of government and so on. My question is this: do you find it slows down the progress you might make in the experiments you are making in regards to poverty—the conflict between public and volunteer agencies?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: What exactly are you referring to, Senator?

Senator Inman: Any conflict between your government programs and the private and volunteer agencies?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes. Let's say that there are some that work together very well but there are also others where

often most feel that they are running a very good program although there is a conflict, not always a very good working relationship.

One of the responsibilities we have discovered is try to facilitate that relationship and because of my concern in this area between the private and public and concern for certain misunderstandings—not understanding each others objectives and having one group trying to do better than the public and that one of the reasons that I wanted to get right down to this point through the committees working on this very problem.

We will culminate the work of these committees in November at four regional conferences across the province to discuss this question and try and bring a better working relationship between the private and public sectors.

I feel that there is an underlying misunderstanding, whether it is a conflict or a misunderstanding.

Senator Fergusson: Thank you, Mr. Chairman. I would like to ask the Minister if he could tell us a little more about the Alberta Service Corps which is mentioned on page 4 of the brief which you state began in 1967.

The idea behind such a program to provide opportunities for young people is certainly tremendous. I have seen it working in a small way in some other countries that I have visited where the young people provided quite a lot of assistance. But in Canada, at least in one instance, in one somewhat similar program it has been a little disappointing and I wondered if the Alberta Service Corps has had more success and if so if you would tell us about how it works

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: My impressions through my relationship, I would have to say that the answer is yes, our program is quite successful and I feel even more successful than the other ones. That is number one.

Number two—because we felt our program was very successful we have been trying to contract with the CYC to operate youth programs here in Alberta.

However, at this point, we haven't been able to do that because we felt the young Alberta people and the other people working on this program would be involved in local situations. The program has been successful in many of our small northern communities where these young people can bring head-start programs to them, sort of kinder-

garten programs that have helped the community discuss various projects such as coops and just anything else.

And also as I mentioned here the mental and correctional institutions.

One example in regards to the mental hospital is that a fellow who has not spoken a word for quite a number of years—and these young girls were spending a lot of time with him in sort of a personal way and after a few weeks this person started a conversation and is starting to come out of his problem. She had no professional experience or anything but this man is now starting to rid himself of this problem.

Senator Fergusson: These young people can reach where perhaps someone else couldn't?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: That is right and I don't know whether you want any more details of the program but either myself or Mr. Schmidt can give you the details. It was a very successful program and we thought since it was successful we would like to contract.

Mr. Schmidt: The concept that came to Alberta came to Alberta from the Connecticut State which now for about seven years has had a very large service corps program in their hospitals and I think they have three or 400 volunteers but their difference is—it is a summer program. It is not a two-year program like the CYC. It has a different selection of process and I think—one thing about the program is that there is no promise to the community that they are going to come in and solve their problems.

It is designed as much to give experience to interested youths about the other ways of life and other problems that people face than it is you know for them to be a service. They do good things such as help with children in head-start programs.

In the hospitals they carry out different jobs. There are gaps but the gaps are there because we are short of service personnel but I think you have to be very careful to make comparisons between the CYC and the Alberta Service Corps and it would require quite extensive detail.

We have a brief and we could send it to you, which discusses our analysis of the CYC.

Senator Fergusson: I am not being critical of the CYC because I think there are wonderful things that the young people can do but I wanted to know if you had more success and I was wondering also if your young people

had met any hostility in the small places they may have gone to.

Mr. Schmidt: Not really. We have had a very close relationship with the CYC but one of the examples I think which really illustrates the difference in perspectives is that an incident happened at Loon Lake in which CYC people came to Alberta. I think when they first came there was a sort of the challenge and if they wanted to help poor people in Alberta were they willing to stay long enough until the problem was solved.

We didn't want them to come in for publicity and then just leave, but they went into a small community and looked around. It was a very superficial assessment and made some very damaging statements about the condition of housing and other things in that community.

Now, to an outsider and to an objective analyst it was very poor housing but they didn't realize and they weren't sensitive to in one case with a man who was very poor, struggled for years and years and built a shack for himself and his family. It was warm and it was clean but it didn't look very good and to have someone come in and say you know you have lousy housing is about the most devastating kind of thing you can have.

The CYC were literally—I think the director was literally taken out of a bar in the Slave Lake area when they heard he was there because of this hostility created by that.

The Chairman: He probably wasn't buying drinks!

Mr. Schmidt: The incentive through the complexity of the problem appeals to people—that is where we have our real problems.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Chairman, I would like to ask a question of the Minister. In a brief we had yesterday in Calgary, it told us that the Province of Alberta and the government had spent \$68 million dollars on welfare. Can you tell us how much of this money actually reaches the pockets of the poor? Can you tell us how much of this money actually reaches the poor and how much is taken for administration?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: The administration costs are somewhere in the vicinity of around seven to eight per cent.

Senator Fournier: I thought you said 70 to 80!

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: No.

The Chairman: Mr. Minister, would that be higher or lower than comparable spending on agriculture or some other service?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Well, I would say that this would be a lower figure like in agriculture since we are a service department more than we are a program department and most likely it is lower.

The Chairman: I only picked that as an example. Do you have any others?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Not really.

Senator Quart: Many of my questions have already been answered but listening to the brief here in Edmonton and talking with the various social workers and volunteer agencies that have come before us I think there is a wonderful rapport here between your social workers and your volunteers which you don't find in some other places and I was very intrigued with the idea of this purchasing services of volunteer agencies and that must keep your costs down tremendously.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: We feel that there is a lot of purchasing of services and a lot of services available and we are always trying to take advantage of this.

Senator Quart: The welfare agencies seem to be doing a marvelous job here in Alberta as far as we have been hearing.

The Chairman: The purchasing, Senator Quart, is a new concept, and Ontario now is undertaking that as well. Ontario is now doing some purchasing in the same way. I don't know whether other governments are; at least, I am not aware of it. But much has been said about the ability to reach out for experts and not keep them on the payroll for ever and a day.

Senator McGrand: The \$68 million that you referred to, is that paid out by the provincial government or is it the total of all welfare payments?

The Chairman: It is the total of all welfare paid.

Senator MrGrand: In Alberta?

The Chairman: In Alberta.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: That includes child welfare.

The Chairman: This is all social welfare.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: It is actual payments.

Senator McGrand: Most child welfare would come under that category?

The Chairman: Yes.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: All of it.

Senator Fournier: Would you repeat that, please?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: It is around 45 per cent. In other words the public assistance is around 45 per cent of that \$68 million and this is paid to individuals in the Province of Alberta.

Mr. Schmidt: This morning we just checked as of the end of March 1970 what our breakdown was for actual income security payments and the largest group was the old age pensioner—about 34 per cent. I was just trying to recall the figures and then the single parent families were about 25 per cent and the disabled was around 20 per cent. Then there was a category the unemployed employables which is the one which is always castigated as being the lazy bums and shiftless group and this group constituted about 10 per cent and then there was another small group around 3 per cent which was for people who were disabled but work full-time and can't earn enough or people who are underemployed and have large families and rather than live totally on welfare their income is supplemented.

Senator Fournier: Had those figures increased over the same period last year?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes, particularly in the lower families—the area of unemployed employables.

The Chairman: The Province of Alberta is doing more to supplement the welfare poor than any other province in Canada, and more than any other three provinces in Canada. That is what they are talking about now. I do not know how costly it is but the concept is excellent.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: What we feel is that we will support an income supplement program where a person is able to earn a certain amount on their own but needs more because of large families or unusual circumstances. We can supplement their income up to a certain level; a level that is determined by home economists who travel all across the

province and come up with a particular figure and we use that figure. If a family is not earning enough to meet their needs, we can supplement their income according to that figure.

Senator Hastings: That is a guaranteed annual income then?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes. I suppose this is part of the answer to Dr. McGrand's question.

The Chairman: To answer Dr. McGrand's question, the pitfalls were commended and I wondered how soon you would duck, and you ducked just in time. He asked you in effect how do we redistribute the wealth so that the poor can get a piece of it. If you know the answer to that, we are prepared to wait!

You know of course there has been no redistribution of wealth in this country for 20 years—that is as far as the poor are concerned. We are in the same state as we were 20 years ago.

Senator Carter: Since you reorganized your department in 1967 and it became the Department of Social Development, have you increased the staff to any great degree since then?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes, there has been an increase in staff.

Senator Carter: Professional workers?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Professional people and also we have a relationship between professional people and the secretarial staff.

Senator Carter: Have you relieved your social workers of the clerical work so that they could use their time professionally?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes. What we have done since that period of time—as I mentioned earlier there are these five groups—the physically or mentally handicapped, the mothers with dependent children, and the aged. We deal with these people because their problem usually is an economic one.

However, with the other two groups there are certain social problems we must deal with and we have reshuffled things so that our social workers can spend more time with these people and we hope eventually to be able to isolate these two groups so that we can

have some type of a method by which we can provide the financial assistance here if the people require certain counselling or social help of some kind. We can give them access to our department but to concentrate more on this area to work towards the employment of people and rehabilitation of persons and every method we can think of.

Now, that is what is happening since we made that change so we are concentrating on the concept of development.

Senator Carter: Now, you spoke about inefficient knowledge and you are the only province that has a national social research council.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Human Resources Council.

Senator Carter: Human Resources Council. What have you found out and what has your Council done?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: The number one thing we have done let's say in our Department of Social Development is an experimental pilot project unemployment opportunities. We ask them to audit it very closely and do the research on what was happening.

They did this and were able to indicate to us that the Department what really happened and what things were available. Have you heard about the project at all?

Senator Carter: No.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: We felt that there were a number of people that could be put into employment from this group of unemployed employables—and that was about 10 or 12 per cent of the people who were on social assistance at that time.

We selected out of this group just at random 100 persons to go in and receive special training and special assistance in working with employment officers. We also selected another group, a controlled group of 200 recipients and we compared the two and the human resources council is auditing this process all the time and helping establish the problems.

We used one other factor, though: the community. We brought in as an advisory committee—I think it was around 10 or 15 different employers' representatives, oil companies, industries, some small businesses and some hospitals. They acted in an advisory capacity to see how we could better our program and

supervise employment opportunities. For example, one week after we started we said we would like to have some employment opportunities and we had in excess of 200 jobs. This was immediately so there was a very good response from the private employers.

Now, what happened was the research council audited this and they came out with some recommendations and they indicated our results about 50 per cent employment and about 12 per cent went into the retraining.

This kind of results indicated to us that the best results we had were from mothers with dependent children. They were the group that we could find employment easier.

Mr. Schmidt: May I just make another brief comment about the Human Resources Research Council?

The Chairman: By all means.

Mr. Schmidt: Through our information the only place where this has been long established is in Denmark. They have a national social science council and that council provides a very sophisticated inter-disciplinary research department and that is something we still don't have in Canada and it is rather interesting that considering our social programs, counting health and welfare and education is taking up 65 per cent of our budget but when you look at the amount of money we are spending on research it is really very embarrassing compared to physical and technological development have been made.

One of the problems is that we have no mechanism to tie together the amount of research that has been done and no way you know to promote new coordinated and innovated ways of finding out more about this problem so that we do have a computerized list with over 20,000 index studies about poverty now.

Of that in North America how much of it ever filters down to a point where you know a Minister or a politician is making a decision about a poverty program is very interested in this kind of question and until you develop some sort of institution that can help you in this task, there is no way that you people as political leaders can absorb all this information.

I was going through your brief and I don't know how you are even going to integrate all the facts that you have picked up on your visits across this country, unless you have

some sort of research or frame work so that this can be all tied together.

Senator Carter: There was one portion in your brief which interested me very much. That is you intend to do something about public attitudes.

Can you give us a thumbnail sketch of how you are going to go about this?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Well, the number one thing is we find that where people understand part of the problem we get support and where they don't understand the problem then they hesitate to participate.

One of the things that we are going to do is establish across the province committees of citizens, appeal advisory committees involving various citizens from various levels.

It would serve a sort of two-fold purpose. One is to understand the recipient and to have one at the community level who will send out the different programs and to define this to the persons in need and secondly then to discuss the appeal of that person or discuss the problems with the recipient at the community level. And so this is one of the things that we wanted to do and we are doing it right now and it is being implemented in Alberta.

The second thing that we are looking at is moving more of the responsibility, more of the responsibility for the rehabilitative cases or preventive cases—more of that responsibility down to the local level of government.

Part of this responsibility now lies with the municipality for these attitudes and we would like to move more of that responsibility to them. We would like to move it just for that purpose of moving local people in the province so that we can help understand the problems.

Senator Carter: You made an interesting remark earlier this afternoon when you were talking about the supplementary system under the Canada Assistance Plan. You said it was based on need and the need was set by a home economist and I take it that this home economist was in the inter-provincial office?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: No.

Senator Carter: Where is this home economist located?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Not on our staff. They are with the Department of Agriculture.

Senator Carter: Somebody outside of your department?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: No, it doesn't.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: That's right and there are a number of them across the province which do independent examinations.

Senator Quart: Am I to understand that the provincial hostel comes within the jurisdiction of your department?

Senator Carter: And you get the staff of other departments to make this assessment for you?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes, at present it is under the jurisdiction of my department. Yes. We have two requests or proposals from the public of Alberta and to other citizens of Canada to come with a technique or method by which they can operate the hostels for us, we can contract with them and I have a consulting group of persons operating what we call "Request Groups" and we wrote down at the department what we feel would be the objectives of the hostels and the amount of money that we can put into the hostel programs and we said here is what we want done and here is the amount of money that we can spend.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Yes.

Senator Carter: Well, as I listened to you this afternoon, Mr. Minister, I thought about what we were told last night from this clients group.

These people formed a little committee of their own, a budget committee and they kind of figured that they would make a more accurate assessment than a home economist even if he was with the Department of Agriculture.

I was just wondering if you were planning to involve—when you were saying that you were planning to involve people on committees—if you can't involve them to that extent are you planning to work towards that kind of involvement?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: I have made no decisions to that effect. We are supportive of those various groups that are operating in the province and we have established in our Department of Social Development a director of citizens groups or citizen appeal committees and that person—part of his responsibility is to discuss and have a liaison with these various groups that are operating because we want to know what they have to say and what they are doing. We want to know their policy and have them give us ideas which they have formulated and we are just really trying to open the door of communication.

We are not going to be able to get all the answers immediately but we do want to open the doors of communication.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Speaker, you say in your brief:

Even though the Government of Alberta has long-term objectives, certain types of poverty that has taken a generation or more to develop will not be quickly overcome by commitments that cannot extend beyond the four to five-year tenure of an elected administration.

Are you sure that that doesn't mean your administration?

We have also appointed one citizen at large and one person from my department. They are requesting submissions from the public and from private individuals and citizens of Alberta and Canada up to the end of August or September. They will accept these submissions and assess them in order of priorities and then after a decision is made we will contract them or with that group.

Mr. Schmidt: This is the first time that we have tried this. It has never been tried anywhere else that we know of and we are kind of excited about this program.

Senator Quart: Now, a man who is intoxicated or a person who is intoxicated—and I assume it is only the men who get intoxicated—but let us say a man who comes to a provincial hostel and is intoxicated—you just don't throw him out?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: No, we don't.

Senator Quart: Well, what would you do with him if a day care centre didn't take him in?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: In the presentation that was made to me from the Justice Report, that was one of the recommendations that was made.

The point is if you allow people to go into the hostels who are really intoxicated, they cause chaos but we do feel that there should be other ways to sort this problem out.

Senator Quart: Do you charge them for the provincial hostels?

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: What we do—we started this about a year ago and we record the people that come in and if they are given a clothing allotment or some other type of incidentals including money for things they may need, we will register them and then if they go onto employment, then they repay us.

Now, the accommodation for the person is something like \$1.50 a day or something like that.

The Chairman: Mr. Minister, you have been very patient and you have answered our questions very well. We will have to take a little more time to read your very interesting brief. I am sure it took a considerable amount of work to put it together.

We do appreciate that you not only have listed your findings regarding the experimental concepts in your department but you have also been very forthright in your answers. They are very helpful. I must say that you seem to have the leadership here in the Province of Alberta.

There is one thing that bothers the committee and I think I should mention it. We neglected to say anything about the appeal boards for these people who are on the experimental team who may suddenly in September find themselves let down, the shock of that will be greater than all the benefits that have accrued over the period of two years. Something has to be done about that. I do not think we should just drop it no matter what the costs are.

Mr. Minister, on behalf of the committee we thank you very much.

The Honourable Mr. Speaker: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman.

The Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, the next brief we have is from the Humans on Welfare Society. On my right is Mr. John McNamara, the vice-president. He will introduce the group of ladies that he has with him today.

Mr. John McNamara, Vice-President, Humans on Welfare Society: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman.

On my right is one of our directors, Mrs. Rosemary Osbend, and our secretary, Mrs. Paulette Atterburg. Mrs. Alice Smith is another director, and next to her is my wife, Edna McNamara. Mrs. Ellen Thompson is a

director, Mrs. Doris Manners our secretary-treasurer, Mrs. Agnes Bouchard a director, and Mrs. Georgina Slaugh, our acting president.

We accepted your invitation to submit a brief not because we felt we were experts in the field of social development but because we firmly believe that meaningful social changes will not be enough unless we have meaningful participation by the poor themselves.

We hope that it is not the first opportunity you have had to see, to hear and to react to human beings on welfare. Too often they are not considered as either human or on welfare.

Our society represents over 50,000 such people in the Province of Alberta and we have in the introduction to our brief given you an analysis of our society.

Welfare has and is still presently existing in the minds of most—a system of giving out money to simply lazy people—and in our submissions we have attempted to illustrate that they are not the majority of such people. There are some who abuse the welfare system granted but there is also a lot of people who abuse other systems such as cheating on the income tax.

We pointed out that the voucher system in Alberta is totally inhuman and indefensible and we hope that you will make our recommendation known to the Government of Canada immediately that no province be permitted under the Canada Assistance Act to administer a voucher system and that any province such as Alberta that does not abolish this practice immediately, be refused provincial welfare grants.

We feel that the harshness adopted at the national scale such as the Provincial Department of Social Development under the leadership of the Minister, the Honourable Ray Speaker who was just here previously has clearly demonstrated its refusal to adhere to the wishes of the majority of the voting public which asks of the above the abolition of vouchers.

Our submission also hopefully expresses our concern with guaranteed income and guaranteed employment, legal care, public housing and for the enforcement of the child maintenance act, the problems of the aged, human and welfare rights and emphatically urges you to give careful consideration to our recommendations in these matters.

The brief omitted however one other important factor and that is that here in

Alberta a welfare recipient is only allowed to make \$25 per month. We feel that this is a deceptive to go to work and get off welfare rather than an incentive and we therefore ask that this be increased to \$100 and let the increase be forced about by the Federal Government as a basic welfare program to the Canada Assistance Plan.

There is another item that we omitted in the brief by error which deals with the hostel situation here in Edmonton and in Alberta. We are concerned with this situation because these unemployed, penniless men are also humans on welfare, even though sometimes they may not use it to the best advantage.

In our recommendations in that appendix, we, along with other groups protest the use of a requested proposal that will contract out the services of the hostels to a private organization or private citizen.

We feel that by contracting these services out, will only perpetuate the problem of maintenance and not do anything in a rehabilitating sense. What is needed at the hostel is a program of realignment and we hope that the Committee will again bring this concern of ours to the attention of the government.

Although it is a provincial matter, we feel that there is a lot of these provincial matters being pushed off the responsibility of the federal government and being that they are the ultimate authority they should at least take the initiative to incorporate them as a basic welfare program under the Canada Assistance Act.

I may say that angry we are, we are frustrated, but we are also determined to change the policy affecting it regardless of the personal cost to us.

The welfare system can and must be maintained. The poor people are resolved to take action and not merely by dialogue. Not necessarily violent action as we are often accused of inspiring but the right to non-violent protest which is a democratic protest we shall exercise whenever necessary. The violence we must abhor but the violence with us this day is the violence suffered by the poor.

When a mother is worried out of her mind because she doesn't know how to clothe or feed her children or how to send her kids to boy scouts or how to even get them a hair cut because a voucher won't give her that kind of cash, that to us is violence.

When a man is subjected to the degradation, to the whole system of a single men's hostel, that to us is violence. They are human, who will speak for them? Who will speak for us? Have we the right to get organized? Should we stand silently in line, standing for handouts, personal abuses and injustices? Should we be made to understand that huge complexes which are discussed at privy council should be built for the wealthy rather than homes for the children living in slums with their abandoned mothers who are welfare recipients or low income workers who cannot afford to eat beef while the government subsidizes millionaires to breed horses?

The challenges are great but the resources are greater. We hope that they will be made available to us. We hope that the church who talks of Christian unity and union will think of joining hands in a spirit of coalition for human development rather than development of more efficient and proper superstructures.

Christianity is not a marketable product. It is a living humanity that cannot be bought or sold but only shared through concern and participation.

It lies in people like you, like myself and like everyone here who make people like me, people on welfare, grateful to be alive despite all.

Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman.

The Chairman: Senator Hastings?

Senator Hastings: Thank you very much, Mr. McNamara, for your opening statement. I think that every member of the committee will concur and agree with what you have said. There seems to be what I would call a subtle warning running through your brief.

On page 1 you say:

Or not unlike other great nations who ignored the poor too long, Canada too will face self-destruction!

In part 6 you also say:

This problem should no longer be ignored unless society is prepared to pay the price.

In your conclusions you say:

The no longer helpless poor.

When you were speaking you said you were angry and frustrated and rightly so but you are not content to continue the dialogue. Am I right to say that there is a warning in your brief?

Mr. McNamara: Well, shall we say we are certainly not content to merely maintain things on a dialogues basis. We decided long ago that we needed to take action and when we speak in the way that we have, we are not threatening and we are not saying that we are going to initiate a revolution.

We ourselves as a society, feel meaningful changes can only happen through participation but in order to get this participation, we may have to take action.

Now, when we speak of other countries, we speak of countries that have had revolutions such as Cuba has. They have turned to the communist bloc and destroyed democracy because the poor—somebody has captured their imagination and ran wild with it and this changed the government. This is what we are getting at. Why should we wait until we have this kind of destruction when it is not the answer. The answer is not to destroy the system, the democratic system, but to work within it to better human beings, to try to change some of the policies and poverty somehow will be eliminated.

Senator Hastings: Through your dialogue you have made changes and I wonder if you would care to comment on the statement of the Minister when he was here?

Mr. McNamara: Well, I would say this: the Minister's comment that they were working on school book vouchers was not very impressive. It was not very impressive for the simple fact that he made the statement publicly last spring that they would abolish them—as far as the school book vouchers were concerned.

Three weeks ago letters came out from the Department to the welfare recipients who had children attending Grades 10, 11 and 12 and this said that again this year they would have a voucher system for them.

Our society immediately sent a letter to the Minister reminding him of his statement and also suggested that he immediately call a meeting of the Education Board, of the school trustees, of his department and with us to discuss the alternatives to the voucher system. This is either a rental system or cash system. He has not answered. He has not even given us the courtesy of answering this letter and he hasn't made it public so therefore when they say they are working on it, it must be done in a very quiet, sheltered, non-existing way because nobody else knows about it.

It is the kind of thing that we are not going to tolerate because when school day opens, the membership will be demonstrating. What will happen is we will take all of the vouchers and they will go to the school book store—not to the store they tell us to go to but the school book store and they will be swamped with these vouchers, their own vouchers.

From there on, we will have no control of the demonstrations because when it takes in kids that are in Grades 10, 11 and 12 it takes in a lot of people and it is pretty hard to control this type of thing. We don't want this, and this is why we are disappointed that the Minister doesn't act now.

Senator Fournier: I would like to ask Mr. McNamara how long his society has been in operation? How long has your organization been operating?

Mr. McNamara: We were chartered on January the 26th of this year. It is in the introduction of our brief.

Senator Fournier: How many members?

Mr. McNamara: We have 480 some members at the moment.

Senator Fournier: All from Edmonton?

Mr. McNamara: All from Edmonton and surrounding suburbs.

Senator Fournier: Are there any other organizations like this elsewhere?

Mr. McNamara: There is a Calgary welfare group but although we share the same concerns and we often support each other in some of the issues, we are not part of the same group.

Senator Fournier: Thank you, sir.

Senator McGrand: On page 3 you say:

Over 10 per cent of persons on Alberta Welfare Rolls are unemployed employables. Some 5,000 persons, of which the greatest majority are females.

Is the percentage of unemployed females in Edmonton or Alberta higher than the average in Canada, do you think? Do you mention this for some particular reason; that it is unusual because of so many unemployed women?

Mr. McNamara: I don't know if it is characteristic of other provinces to this extent, but we pointed it out because to the public imag-

here in Alberta they often think that the unemployed employables are males who are too lazy to work. This is the specific reason why we brought it out.

Senator McGrand: That is all. Thank you.

Senator Pearson: In Part III, regarding the guaranteed income I judge by that first paragraph there that you believe that the guaranteed annual income should be of considerable advantage to the people who are unable to earn a living or enough of a living, but in your second paragraph, the second sentence you say:

In the second instance, it's just that there would be an increase in the number of work drop-outs.

You are making this suggestion. It also suggests:

That the ability to manage and use money effectively is closely related to the ability to make money by working. Is it not amazing that the poor should be kept poor in order to force them to work?

One would also think that the ability to manage money was related to education, training, patterns of expenditures in the community and among peer groups, the arts of advertising and marketing, and other factors.

Now, yesterday we had a special project committee before us and one of their great findings or feeling about the people who sat right behind them was they were given consumer instruction, how to budget their money that they had in hand.

Don't you think this would be a good idea for your people? I think this guaranteed income would be one of the requisites that you would be able to budget your money and spend it. I think most people can but it is you know, quite a lesson to consumers to be able to budget their money.

Mr. McNamara: You are right, senator. It is true that there is a need for this kind of education. We do have to educate our members or welfare recipients and people in poverty how to better manage their budget.

However, it doesn't stop there. Just because somebody cannot control their budget or misuses his funds, doesn't mean that you can legislate any type of program that will force it and therefore you can't legislate this type of program any more than you can legislate morality. In other words, why should the

majority of people, who are at least willing to try and manage their money, be stigmatized and be forced to continue to stay in poverty?

Senator Pearson: This isn't being suggested in the guaranteed annual income, that you are going to be put into that position of having to spend your money a certain way. They haven't suggested this. Why do you come up with that statement?

Mr. McNamara: I am just answering the criticism. If you read further on in the brief you will see that I am just answering the criticism.

Senator Pearson: And who makes the criticism, you?

Mr. McNamara: No, we don't make the criticisms. They have been made to us.

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Mr. McNamara: And we answer these kinds of criticisms by saying that they are not valid and we say that the guaranteed annual income doesn't answer all of the problems of the poor.

Senator Pearson: No, of course not.

Mr. McNamara: But certainly to us welfare recipients, the removal of the most important fact is the stigma of welfare because then, both you and I, are on the same level and we would both receive a guaranteed annual income or whatever you would like to call it.

My neighbour wouldn't know that I am on welfare, my landlord wouldn't know I am on welfare and this is the way it should really work.

Senator Pearson: Thank you.

Senator Inman: Mr. Chairman, in paragraph five there is mention of legal aid and I take it that there is no special system of legal aid, is that correct?

Mr. McNamara: There is at present.

Senator Inman: No special system of legal aid?

The Chairman: There is legal aid in this province for the welfare recipients.

Senator Inman: Yes, I realize that, but I wanted to comment on what they say in the last two lines of part five on that page and on top of the next. I am asking, why do you

think this would not be satisfactory? You wouldn't be satisfied with a lawyer that was appointed or would you wish to appoint one yourself?

Mr. McNamara: I think what I was referring to here is the new committee. When Mr. Speaker mentioned this to you this afternoon he was referring to the new citizens committee to hear appeals. The process at the moment is that we have to make our grievance in writing and most welfare recipients are not trained or equipped to do this kind of thing. Therefore, it is very improper justice to expect them to file a grievance against the welfare system in writing without legal counsel and they have now this accessibility to legal counsel under the provisions of legal aid.

Senator Inman: Well then any lawyer would be accessible to you, would it?

Mr. McNamara: We want the right to be able to choose our own lawyer by choice.

The Chairman: Tell me, do you think any one could do any better than you could?

Mr. McNamara: Myself?

The Chairman: It is only an observation. I am really referring to this business. They usually start out like you people by saying that you must have three copies of each piece of correspondence and that is in the first week. The second week they say, "You appear before the appeal board and make your statement in the ordinary way." They get bogged down as well, because under those circumstances all you have to do is file thirty appeals and the machinery stops working.

Senator Inman: Well, I just thought that any lawyer would be acceptable and expected to be impartial and do what is fair.

Mr. McNamara: Right.

Senator Inman: In your next paragraph you speak of public housing and in there somewhere you mentioned something about an elderly couple. Do you have senior citizens homes here?

Mr. McNamara: Yes, we have. I would like to ask a member of our executive here to answer you on the problems of the aged. Mrs. Doris Manners whose husband is eighty-two years old, an old age citizen and this is really her field.

Mrs. Doris Manners, Treasurer, Humans on Welfare Society, Edmonton, Alberta: There is an article in here, if you will notice in the brief that refers to us. My husband and myself are one of the ones that are used as an example and I am just one of many ordinary older people. Most of them don't want public housing. Most of them don't want to be put in housing condominiums—these high rises—these senior citizens high rises.

Let's face it, what man of any age, well, let us take an age over fifty—these people who go by on the street and want to stand there looking like this. In a senior citizens old home he is stuck in with a bunch of other old doddering senior citizens and they just vegetate.

Older people want to be with young people. They want to associate with younger people. They want to own their own homes. Why put them in senior citizens high rise? There are hundreds of small homes around this city so why not put the senior citizens in them and let them have their own homes?

The Chairman: Because one of the answers to that is the matter of maintenance. That is a difficult thing for senior citizens, and many of them cannot respond to that.

Mrs. Doris Manners: No, right there, no. The matter of maintenance is no hindrance at all. You put them in a high rise with a janitor and there is all the people that have to maintain that high rise for senior citizens. Put them in a small home and you can still have the same maintenance people going around taking care of the lawns, looking after their homes, repairing their homes, painting, shingling—I wish they would send somebody out to shingle my place because I have a shower in the living-room!

Senator Inman: I wasn't really thinking of high rise. I was thinking of my own province where we have a great number of them and they are all on one floor. Low, ranch-type homes and the rent is low.

Mrs. Manners: Most of them that I have talked said they go into these because they are the only facilities that are available but the greatest majority of them would rather have a little cottage somewhere with a little garden or a little bit of grass in front and a little bit of space around unless they are completely disabled and can't look after themselves and then they go into homes where they can receive medical care.

The Chairman: I think I should tell you that this subject is not new to the Committee or its members. Six of us were on Special Senate Committee on Aging and we went through this whole process. I must tell you that the four provisions were considered the best in Canada. The Western provisions were a real contribution.

Mrs. Agnes Bouchard, Director, Humans on Welfare Society, Edmonton, Alberta: I would like to ask the special Commission on Poverty one question that concerns all senior citizens. Any senior citizen receiving any supplementary income received a two percent increase on top of the cost of living in January?

The Chairman: Yes.

Mrs. Agnes Bouchard: Our government has seen fit to wipe that out.

The Chairman: The two percent?

Mrs. Bouchard: We don't get it. No senior citizen who is receiving welfare receives that two percent increase.

The Chairman: Wait a moment! You don't get it from the Social Credit government or provincial government, you get it from the federal government. What is the amount of your cheque?

Mrs. Bouchard: We receive one hundred and eleven dollars.

The Chairman: One hundred and eleven dollars?

Mrs. Bouchard: Yes, and we were also receiving thirty-nine dollars from the Department of Welfare. When we received the other two dollars from the federal government, they took it off—the Department of Welfare reduced it down to thirty-seven, so in effect it was wiped out.

The Chairman: Actually, as far as the federal government is concerned they could supplement that increase each year. They do it also in British Columbia, \$2 up.

Senator Carter: You received it from the federal government but you lost it from the other end.

Mr. McNamara: This is one of the points that we are making when we asked that the Canada Assistance Plan and the entire Welfare Program be well defined so that administrative costs and wherever the money will be spent, they spend the money through the

province and it should be clearly defined what they are doing for us and what they are doing with it and where it is going.

The Chairman: Well, we have enough troubles without you giving us more!

Mr. McNamara: Well, I am noted for that, senator!

Senator Carter: Mr. McNamara, you started off by saying that you had four hundred and eighty some odd members and you represent fifty thousand welfare recipients.

Mr. McNamara: Yes.

Senator Carter: I just can't seem to reconcile these two figures.

Mr. McNamara: Well, we reconcile them to the fact that there are fifty thousand welfare recipients in Alberta—there is more but these are heads of families.

The Chairman: Fifty thousand heads of families?

Mr. McNamara: Fifty thousand recipients in Alberta.

Senator McGrand: Fifty thousand heads of families?

Mr. McNamara: Yes, fifty thousand heads of families.

Senator McGrand: Well, on an average of four to a family, you would have two hundred thousand people.

Mr. McNamara: No.

The Chairman: Your figures are out somewhere.

Mr. McNamara: There are twenty-eight thousand heads of families.

Senator McGrand: Well, heads of families would include the father and the mother?

Mr. McNamara: Fourteen thousand families.

The Chairman: And the head of the family is the man?

Mr. McNamara: Right. We say this because there is no way that all of the members of our society or any other group can be actually informed or counted because of the problems of contacting these people. They also fear retaliation and so they send us letters

and they call us. They are afraid to become paid members because they are afraid of retaliation.

Senator Carter: Go on, tell us more.

Senator Hastings: From whom?

Mr. McNamara: This retaliation of course is just a baseless fear because the social development department...

Senator Carter: I was interested in where this retaliation occurs?

Senator Fergusson: He said it was a baseless fear.

Mr. McNamara: It is baseless.

Senator Carter: It is baseless?

The Chairman: Yes, it was just one of those things.

Mr. McNamara: There may be the odd individual welfare worker that doesn't write a member of our organization but this has not come to the point here he has cut them off of welfare or certainly we would be furious but this fear is baseless.

However, the fear is there and how do you remove this? You can only do it through education and information and you have to have money to do this and our group hasn't got the money.

Senator Carter: You have a couple of sets of objectives here and the first three objectives in number one are pretty basic objectives.

In number one you say you want to inform the people of Canada about the conditions and I suppose you are referring to here in Edmonton. What are you doing in this regard?

Mr. McNamara: Well, we are doing quite a bit actually. For instance, we had printed welfare rights pamphlets. In the social pressure movement, the social education movement we got through the media, through the public and tell them of our services and so on.

To our members, we educate them as to their rights and their faults and how they can help themselves. We get them involved and tell them that by getting involved they lose a lot of their fears.

We inform the government by protests, whenever necessary. For instance, at the

Klondike Exhibition, we have a booth there and we also hold other activities. In other words, we try to use every opportunity that is given to us to get to the public.

Senator Carter: What do you tell them?

Mr. McNamara: We tell them frankly what services we have.

Senator Carter: Just what do you mean by that? What do you actually tell the public?

Mr. McNamara: We emphasize the humanizing effect of welfare and we emphasize that welfare people are not necessarily lazy people. This is number one, and then we go on to show where some of the government policies now that affect us are not proper and in some cases are included and in other cases not included or deleted and we try to get support.

Once they know about it—for instance, I will give you a very brief case. On the voucher system we hand out at all the shopping centres in the city and show the people the vouchers, our brief and ask them to sign letters of support.

Senator Carter: Well, you have only started since January?

Mr. McNamara: Yes.

Senator Carter: And do you feel that you are making any head way?

Mr. McNamara: Well, for instance, on the voucher system we have got the support of numerous organizations and at the last demonstration we had nine hundred to a thousand along with the minister and the premier along with twenty-five heads of other organizations and we explained to them what our concern was.

They told us that they would study the problem and abolish a system of vouchers and this at least to us was more than anybody else has been able to do for years. The social workers themselves for a period of eight years tried to get this system abolished.

Senator Carter: Well, you have four hundred and eighty members or thereabouts and they are all in this area, the area around Edmonton.

Mr. McNamara: Yes.

Senator Carter: How often do you get together?

Mr. McNamara: We have a general meeting once a month and we have our executive board meetings several times a week. We have our general meetings at least once a month and sometimes twice or three times.

Senator Carter: Now, you spoke about this meeting where you had these twenty-five heads of the different organizations and you were enlightening them. Was that one of your general meetings or was this a special meeting?

Mr. McNamara: No. This was a special meeting that we forced ourselves into being invited to.

Senator Carter: You didn't call the meeting?

Mr. McNamara: No.

Senator Carter: You crashed it?

Mr. McNamara: We asked for a meeting and through the demonstration a meeting was accorded to us. At first it wasn't going to be so big but because of the participation and it turned out to be much more successful.

Senator Carter: Are you familiar with Action '70, which went ahead in Ottawa sometime last fall?

Mr. McNamara: No, I am afraid not.

Senator Carter: Well, I think you should have heard about that.

Mr. McNamara: Well, we were at a conference in Toronto held by the Canadian Council on Social Welfare sponsored by the City of Edmonton which was the first time that welfare groups as you know were able to participate at this conference.

The Chairman: The Lady from Edmonton raised hell, didn't she?

Mr. McNamara: They all raised hell. Now, we in Edmonton are going to convene a poor peoples workshop which will be two representatives of every citizens groups across Canada, this is provided that the federal government gives us the six thousand dollars for it.

Senator McGrand: Are these funds coming from the federal government?

Mr. McNamara: We have asked the federal government for six thousand dollars to have these poor workshops inaugurated.

Senator McGrand: And they have agreed?

Mr. McNamara: They have not.

The Chairman: Why did you ask the federal government?

Mr. McNamara: Because every time we ask any body else, we were told to go to the federal government because Mr. Monroe told us to organize, he told us there were welfare grants but I don't know where he is hiding them.

The Chairman: There are some.

Mr. McNamara: There are some but as I say I just don't know where they are. There was a demonstration project group, is that correct?

The Chairman: There are grants for organizational purposes in various cities.

Mr. McNamara: Right, under demonstration projects.

The Chairman: Under demonstration projects.

Mr. McNamara: And under a demonstration project you must have been in operation a certain length of time and you must fill other requirements and they have been so swamped with applications right now that they have told us that there will be no money until next year.

Senator Quart: When did you apply for these grants?

Mr. McNamara: In June.

Senator Fergusson: And you haven't received an answer at all?

Mr. McNamara: No answer at all.

Senator Carter: Under part 4 you make a statement and you say:

In fact, the vested interests of Canada Manpower lies not in the employee, but in the employer.

Can you substantiate that?

Mr. McNamara: I can substantiate it by watching everybody that goes to Manpower and who is on welfare and tries to get a job because our applications are just disregarded. The reason for this, and it is understandable, they have within their policy that they have to place so many people and they have only so many jobs available and we are the hard-

est to place people and we are not marketable.

In other words, we are not going to make them reach their quota. They are also afraid that the employers, if they sent them a welfare recipient, that the employer will say, "I don't want one of these loose, no good so-and-so's," and therefore the employer is not going to contact them again.

The Chairman: How does the employer know they are sending them a welfare recipient?

Mr. McNamara: Because of through the application.

The Chairman: He never sees it.

Mr. McNamara: Yes, he does.

The Chairman: The employer never sees the application.

Mr. McNamara: Yes, he does.

The Chairman: Now, now, the employer doesn't see it at all.

Mr. McNamara: If you are unemployed the first question they are going to ask you is when was your last employment and how have you been maintaining yourself since then.

The Chairman: The employer may ask you but the point I am making is that Manpower does not say they are sending a welfare recipient.

Mr. McNamara: Well, when they interview you they say, "These are the qualifications on file," and they ask you where was the last place you worked and these are the sort of questions they ask.

The Chairman: The employer may ask you this sort of question, but certainly Manpower does not mention it.

Mr. McNamara: Certainly they do because they have all the information on file.

Senator Carter: Well, you say in your introduction on page one, in part 1(b), is to engage in study and research and so forth. Have you done any research to just how many welfare recipients have applied to Manpower and how many have been successful?

Mr. McNamara: Yes, we have.

Senator Carter: Have you any figures on that?

Mr. McNamara: We have done this through the female division and we done our research and we found that so many number of recipients could not get jobs through Manpower for various reasons.

Some of them were to blame, some of them were simply ignored by Manpower and from this research we decided that we would form our own referral system and we therefore included "humans for hire" which was a community service division of welfare society and through this department we have all the systems to prove that within one month after we had it in operation we had over one hundred and fifty-two applications for jobs and we were able to fill over sixty of them.

Senator Carter: Well, does that contradict what you said earlier?

Mr. McNamara: No. I am saying this: that we were able to do it and why can't Manpower do it?

Senator Carter: You just said that the Manpower was asking all sorts of questions...

The Chairman: If you can do it better, why don't you?

Mr. McNamara: All right, but who is going to provide—the government is spending X number of dollars to go out and do the job, we could do it and save the government a hell of a lot of money.

Senator Hastings: Did you say there was a hundred and sixty-two jobs available?

Mr. McNamara: There was a hundred and sixty-two available and there was over sixty placed.

Senator Hastings: A hundred and sixty-two applied for jobs and you were able to place over sixty?

Mr. McNamara: That's right.

Senator Hastings: That is a very good record.

Senator Pearson: What kind of jobs would they be?

Mr. McNamara: It includes everything from secretarial, stenographic, office people to housekeeping, waitresses, short order cooks etc.

The Chairman: You have people that are able to do secretarial work?

Mr. McNamara: Yes.

The Chairman: Were you able to place many of them?

Mr. McNamara: Quite a few.

The Chairman: In Ottawa it is very, very difficult to get good secretarial help.

Senator Hastings: To what do you attribute that, Mr. McNamara?

Mr. McNamara: Well, I don't think we have in our city the job opportunities available for a lot of applicants.

Senator Hastings: The demand is not there?

Mr. McNamara: The demand is not there and they are reluctant to hire a welfare recipient.

Senator Hastings: What you are saying is that they are reluctant to hire a mother with children?

Mr. McNamara: Yes. I would like Rosemary Osbend to comment on this question.

Mrs. Rosemary Osbend, Director, Humans on Welfare Society, Edmonton, Alberta: This concerns the amount of money we are allowed to earn and still keep our welfare payments coming in.

The Chairman: Twenty-five dollars?

Mrs. Osbend: Yes. A very close friend of mine who is a very respectable mother of two children on welfare, in order to make ends meet had to lower herself to taking a job as a cocktail waitress, putting up with pinches, pats and other very degrading forms of affection to enable her to earn untraceable tips. In other words, she had to cheat because \$25.00 a month was not really worthwhile it costs her at least that much to go to work.

The Chairman: Are there any other questions?

Senator Fergusson: I have one question, Mr. Chairman, which is in relation to section seven regarding the desperate situation of many deserted women and their children. I realize that this exists of course, but the demonstration that you give—seems strange to me. Did you not have a deserted mother and children's act which a father who leaves his children would be forced to maintain his children at least?

Mr. McNamara: Well, I will have Mrs. Atterburg answer that.

Mrs. Paulette Atterburg, Secretary, Humans on Welfare Society, Edmonton, Alberta: I have wrote that section myself. I know a woman who has two children and a deserted husband who is now living in British Columbia and she asked for help in getting her husband to maintain her and her family instead of taking welfare assistance. This man is employed, she knows where he is and yet the law is so flexible she cannot do anything. He has been asked to appear in court twice and he did not appear either time. There is simply no teeth in the law in Alberta whatsoever and she, and myself included, have to sit back and take welfare and I have to be told by government officials and higher officers that they are keeping me. I resent that very much. My husband could be keeping me if the law was on my side, but it is not on my side and I am continually being abused.

In the United States and the Scandinavian countries this is not the case and I think we should look at this system and do something about it because these men will continue not paying. My family did not pay maintenance to me or my family even though he is employed.

Senator Fergusson: This woman has apparently tried to get it, but how has she tried? Has she tried through the courts?

Mrs. Atterburg: Yes, she has. She has tried through the family court. You have no idea what position this woman is in even though her husband is earning about twelve hundred dollars a month.

Senator Fergusson: Yes, I can imagine. It is surprising that some action cannot be taken to support these children at least.

Mrs. Atterburg: This doesn't mean anything. He is not in or he is on holidays for a week and there are a lot of men in Alberta who know that just going through the courts is a laughing matter.

Mrs. Ellen Thompson, Director, Humans on Welfare Society, Edmonton, Alberta: My husband has been brought to court in British Columbia and all he has to pay towards the support of five children is one dollar a piece per month. This went through in the court of law.

The Chairman: This is a bit unusual what you are telling us. Family courts are family courts the whole country over.

Mrs. Edna McNamara, Founding Member, Humans on Welfare Society, Edmonton, Alberta: The courts are always doing the same thing. They always say you are ordered to pay or—and the or never does arrive.

The Chairman: Mrs. McNamara there is a legal aid system in this province which is available to the people who are on welfare. We found in other provinces that when they took legal action the results came very quickly. You will have to insist upon the Welfare Department turning their attention to legal aid and you getting in touch with a legal aid man, because this sort of thing can't go on indefinitely.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, if a judge gives an order to pay one dollar a month for a child, that is not going to help the mother very much.

The Chairman: This happens in British Columbia and the man is not under the same jurisdiction. I am just not sure what the circumstances are.

Senator Fergusson: But the reciprocal act or the reciprocal enforcement act should work in British Columbia.

Mrs. Osband: In my own case, my husband makes or was ordered to pay eighty dollars a month for four children. That is a judgement handed down from the court in Alberta.

The Chairman: He doesn't pay it?

Mrs. Osband: He does not pay it.

The Chairman: Why not?

Mrs. Osband: Well, he has been brought before the court and he will tell a sad story and the judge will say okay you only pay a certain amount. They reduce it every time he comes to court. He came to court and they started at two hundred and eighty dollars a month and it is reduced every time.

Senator Fergusson: I know this is a real problem and I think it is something we should come into.

Senator Quart: Do you charge a fee?

Mr. McNamara: For membership?

Senator Quart: Yes.

Mr. McNamara: There is no fee for membership, that is a voting membership but we charge a two dollar fee to non-voting mem-

bers and then we have these colourful buttons...

The Chairman: No, no, no buttons.

Senator Quart: What is the requirement for membership? Do all of your members have to be on welfare?

Mr. McNamara: To be a voting member, yes.

Senator Quart: Well, supposing one of your members goes out and gets a job, can he still be a member?

Mr. McNamara: Yes.

The Chairman: Mr. McNamara, I have heard, along with the other members of the committee, what the ladies have said. Please have those cases completely documented and send them to me in Ottawa.

Mr. McNamara: Yes, senator, we will get affidavits...

The Chairman: No, you don't have to get affidavits but please have them documented. You send them to me and we will see what we can do. This sort of business can't go on.

Senator Fergusson: This sort of thing shouldn't happen.

The Chairman: Do that as soon as you can.

Mr. David Leadhester: Senator Croil, I was just wondering if I could ask a few questions of the Commission. I noticed that during this committee meeting here today there has been almost no participation called for from the floor which is a characteristic of other commissions which I have seen. I was going to ask first of all, why you have had no requests or anything from people who have come to observe and although, there hasn't been many, I think there have been a few people who have had something in their minds that they would like to say.

Secondly, I would like to ask the Commission when they are going to produce their report and do you have any kind of responsibility to cabinet ministers so it could possibly be watered down before the actual recommendation is published.

The Chairman: Well, we do not know when we will have our report. It will take some time because we have not concluded our hearings. I see more people in the audience today than I have seen at any of our meetings. No one has suggested that they wanted

to ask any questions, and they were free to do so at any time. We are now at the end of our hearing.

Senator Fergusson: We are not a commission, we are a committee and there is a difference.

The Chairman: I thought he said "committee."

Senator Fergusson: No, he said "commission," and we are not a commission at all.

The Chairman: Perhaps he misunderstood you.

Senator Fergusson: We are a committee of the Senate; we are not a commission.

The Chairman: Yes.

Senator Quart: Mr. Chairman, on several occasions you have been answering questions from the audience.

The Chairman: We have had questions and no one has ever been refused. We have had

no requests and no one has suggested that they wanted to ask questions.

From the floor: We were told, senator, when we came in that we would have a chance.

The Chairman: Well, we invited you up here and we gave you every opportunity to ask questions. You have a chance now.

From the floor: They told us that when we came in.

The Chairman: I don't know who told you. We have had questions at many meetings. We are now at the end of these proceedings. This is our last meeting here and we do have another commitment. On behalf of the committee I thank you for coming here and I hope you have all had an opportunity to say what you had to say. If not here is your chance to say it. Again, on behalf of the committee, we thank you.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

Brief

to the

Brief

to the

Special Senate Committee on Poverty

Senator David A. Croll (Ont.), Chairman

Presented by:

Mr. A. Campbell, Pres., Board of Directors

Dr. D. C. Fair, Past Pres., Board of Directors

Miss Mary McNamara, Treas., Board of

Directors

Mr. R. C. Cumming, Executive Director

Prepared by:

Mr. R. C. Cumming, Executive Director

The Edmonton Day Centre

10628-96 Street

Edmonton, Alberta

Special Senate Committee on Poverty

1. In attempting "to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures", we believe our position should stand on a clear statement of philosophy. This philosophy is expressed in Article 25 part (1) of the 1948 United Nations Universal Declaration of Human Rights.

Article 25: Everyone has the right to a standard of living adequate for the health and well-being of himself and of his family, including food, clothing, housing and medical care and necessary social services, and the right to security in the event of unemployment, sickness, disability, widowhood, old age, or other lack of livelihood in circumstances beyond his control.

PREFACE

1. Any plan for a remedy for disadvantage must be concerned with cultural change which involves an alteration in the over-all way of life. Piecemeal approaches directed toward the alleviation of individual distress will not solve the problem because they will not alter the basic culture environment. Clearly, if the disadvantaged are to be considered within an ecological framework rather than a cause and effect model, there is a need to deal with multiple levels of disadvantage in a co-ordinate way which requires social institutions unlike any of those we now possess. Thus, it may be more economical in the long run to establish new programs unrelated to present educational institutions than to attempt to reconstruct existing systems.

2. An immediate step in improving service delivery could be much closer collaboration between Federal and Provincial government in carrying out what appears to be the intent of the Canada Assistance Plan Act.

3. Another immediate step toward remedial action could involve a move away from the current institutional welfare system, to something relatively new, such as the Requests for Proposals (R.F.P.) concept.

2. Having established a philosophical basis for our approach we would support the following definition of poverty—

"Poverty" is regarded as a state of need or inadequacy which exists in fact for an individual or which is perceived by him to exist. The term "disadvantaged" is applied to those who are members of a poverty sub-culture and thus handicapped with respect to the mode of the dominant society. This definition includes those individuals variously identified as the "hard-core poor", the "lower socioeconomic citizenry", "low income people", the "culturally deprived", "the functionally illiterate", "the educationally deficient", "the hard-core unemployed" or other similar descriptive phrases.

3. We should state at this point that in using the above definition, and in outlining basic characteristics of the disadvantaged, we are drawing very heavily on a study prepared in 1969 at the request of the Special Planning Secretariat of the Privy Council by Darrell Anderson and John A. Niemi, under the direction of Dr. Coolie Verner, Professor of Adult Education, U.B.C. Some 3,000 studies and reports were reviewed, and over 300 of these were cited in this study, which we con-

sider outstanding as an incisive, perceptive, and thoroughly well-documented statement. It expresses very well our own first-hand experience.

4. The characteristics of the disadvantaged are described in socio-economic terms, and in social-psychological terms, and are summarized as follows:

The disadvantaged have the lowest income, the poorest education, the largest families, the highest incidence of ill health, the least chance of employment and little promise of a better future. In addition, the disadvantaged are hampered by certain psychological disabilities including a lack of self-confidence, low self-esteem and a high degree of dependency. Because of their limited perception of the value of education, the disadvantaged display neither aspiration nor motivation to achieve educational goals. Their lack of verbal facility impedes communication with other than their own kind. Consequently, they become outcasts, withdraw further into their own sub-cultural milieu. In time, the relationship between the disadvantaged and others becomes increasingly tenuous so that the possibilities of communication are lessened and the opportunity for community involvement becomes minimal.

In terms of Social Interaction, this summary is offered:

Largely because of discrimination, the poverty subculture is compelled to evolve its own operational way of life. The customary associational contacts of middle class society are not functional for the disadvantaged. Instead, they participate through casual, close, and often intimate primary group relationships which involve small personal kinship, locality or friendship groups. Programs for change or amelioration appear to be doomed to failure if they adhere to established patterns of contact that are unacceptable to and not used by the group for which they are designed.

5. Specifically with respect to the Guide for Submission of Briefs, Sec. B—Poverty Programs, paragraphs 11.5 and 11.7, we would suggest that a substantial step could be taken immediately, with existing legislation, to alleviate distress, if there could be closer collaboration between Ottawa and Provincial Departments of Welfare. We have outlined, and provided a legal opinion upon, the relevant statutes (see APPENDIX "A"). We must point out that the Public Welfare Act referred to has been repealed, and the Social

Development Act is now in force (July 1, 1970). The new Act makes no reference to "residence rules", except in Section 15, which defines the responsibility of a Municipality to a "resident" of that Municipality. Nor is any mention made of the category of "transient" in the new Act.

However, a basic problem appears to exist in the form of fear on the part of provincial Governments that the provision of anything more than minimum service to indigent people will result in an influx of these people to the "generous" Province.

6. Another immediate step in improving the service delivery system is now possible in Alberta.

The Social Development Department has issued a request to the private sector for proposals concerning operation of a service for single transient men in Edmonton. This concept has been developed by M and M Systems Research Ltd. (see APPENDIX "B" attached).

It appears to have good potential for a substantial re-structuring of the service delivery system, even to casting out the previous institutional approach, and introducing a much more personalized and liberal approach to the provision of service to this group. The contractor will be required to carry out a program of research in the first year, and this research could well be in trying to determine the role that adult education could play in attempting to bridge the gap between the poverty sub-culture and the dominant society.

7. Conclusion:

Again we rely on the Anderson-Niemi study previously referred to for a precise and insightful summation:—

"Any plan for a remedy for disadvantage must be concerned with cultural change which involves an alteration in the over-all way of life. Piecemeal approaches directed toward the alleviation of individual distress will not solve the problem because they will not alter the basic cultural environment. Clearly, if the disadvantaged are to be considered within an ecological framework rather than a cause and effect model, there is a need to deal with multiple levels of disadvantage in a co-ordinate way which requires social institutions unlike any of those we now possess. Thus, it may be more economical in the long run to establish new programs unrelated to present educational institutions than to attempt to reconstruct existing systems.

APPENDIX "B"

A brief
to
The Special Senate Committee
on Poverty
by
Gardenside Society
July 1970

Gardenside Development Society was set up two years ago to provide a forum for discussions of problems relating to addiction to alcohol and, to a lesser extent, hard drugs. During this period it has operated as a half-way house, provided assistance in setting up another, and placed volunteers in the 97th Street area of Edmonton to try and find out what should or could be done to prevent the formation of a ghetto.

Gentlemen:

We appreciate the opportunity of appearing before you today. May I say at the outset that we compliment you and the government for the interest being shown in such a vital subject where the need is, at the moment, paramount.

We have taken the liberty of making a number of suggestions. These are not necessarily prescriptive but are, at least, an attempt at positive thinking in the light of our experience.

Problems

Food and Shelter

A. There appears to be no effort made by the Edmonton hostels to provide French-speaking social workers. We see many transients and persons who speak only French, and these people feel disadvantaged by the lack of communication between themselves and the social worker. They, therefore, tend to gather in groups and often become labelled as trouble-makers.

B. A man who asks for clothing and/or footwear from the government hostels social worker is often refused on the grounds that he may have had them given to him previously, or that he is drinking excessively, or that he has no intention of going to work at

all, but will sell the articles. A remedy for this situation might be that the articles be stamped as the property of the Government of Alberta and on loan to the individual. This would mean that the goods could not be sold legally. Alternatively, a method of payment could be devised for some of these men. (see Page 11 Income Tax Return A)

C. One of the major problems for the transient men in the city is that few of them have raincoats. As a result, following heavy rains, particularly in the spring and fall, there is a dramatic increase in the number of cases of bronchitis, etc. A remedy for this might be as simple as the provision of a plastic bag. Holes cut in a bag would keep the rest of the clothing dry. Providing a two cent bag is much cheaper than providing antibiotics later.

D. All government agency hostels should have a psychiatric nurse in attendance who is trained specifically for this work. Recently, a man who deliberately urinated in the middle of his bed in full view of the hostel staff was thrown out. It was subsequently found that he was refused admission to three other hostels because of the same behavior. It turned out that the individual was suffering from senile dementia and really required investigation in a mental hospital.

E. There appears to be inadequate policing of the quarters for transient men. As a result there is frequent outright theft: boots, clothing, and other belongings are stolen while they are sleeping. The same stringent measures which are used at museums should be incorporated into hostels; e.g. closed circuit television, frequent patrol, etc.. A system of lockers, with keys registered and kept by the hostel staff is essential. Since all aspirants to beds in hostels are not in condition to be granted one by virtue of alcoholism, other facilities should be provided. These could consist essentially of mattresses on the floor, (to prevent a man falling off a cot or bench) and toilet facilities such as are now provided by the Day-care centre. However, men using these facilities should be supervised by medically trained personnel in order that some attempt be made to get repeaters back on treatment. Then, if they behave in a socially acceptable manner, they could be transferred to much better facilities such as the government hostel.

Rehabilitation

A. We wish to draw your attention to a present practice of Canada Manpower: they expect that the man, after applying for a job and being refused, get a note from the employer who refused him! This is iniquitous because most employers, particularly the small business man, just will not be bothered. This is yet another example of bureaucracy bitterly resented by the small business man, who already is overloaded with government paper work. If some affirmation of having approached an employer is necessary, a refusal slip which need only be signed or stamped by the employer might be the answer.

B. The Federal Government should make it mandatory that a certain percentage of the work force employed by government and municipalities be made of persons handicapped by mental or physical disability. Cutting grass and painting the road signs are examples of this kind of work. The minimum wage could be reduced, or a part of the wage held back, if this were necessary, to pay for the social workers or people who would have to organize the scheme.

C. Closely allied to the preceding point is the fact that this summer we are receiving continual complaints from indigent and transient men that there are no jobs by virtue of the fact that students are being used and given preferential treatment. This complaint is absolutely true. For example, a 17 year old high school youth working for the City of Edmonton as a labourer earns \$3.10 an hour. If he were sufficiently skilled to operate a lawn mower, his pay would be \$3.20 an hour since he is then a power equipment operator. This middle class boy wants to buy a car; on 97th Street this money is needed to survive, and could be split between three workers. The important point here is that a job is more than just a means of making a living for these men; it is, in fact, a form of occupational therapy. I have treated many who, after being chronically intoxicated, and becoming healthy enough to get a job, have done remarkably well at the job. They felt better; it was possible to cut their medication down dramatically since they slept better, ate better and generally felt part of the community.

D. We are aware that there are a considerable number of transients who are injured by

falling off trains as they cross the country. Perhaps a survey should be done to find out how prevalent this is. While remembering that travelling from place to place becomes a form of occupation and must be considered therapy for many of these individuals it, nevertheless, is done at a considerable price to the taxpayer since serious injuries requiring hospitalization frequently occur. Perhaps alternative methods of providing transportation would be considered e.g. freight cars at the rear of trans-continental expresses.

E. Sometimes the problems these poverty-stricken men run into are so simple they seem ludicrous. For example, if they are willing to go into the North, they may not be able to afford the expense of the medical examination required for a license to drive the various kinds of heavy duty equipment. Nor can they afford dental work or the dentures which are required for getting a job in a mine.

F. The problem of the ex-heroin addicts on treatment is peculiar in that several of the agencies in North America now believe that the way to handle these people is to give them large doses of Methadone on a daily basis. While on this treatment, they are not allowed to leave a particular locale even though the treatment might carry on over a period varying from several months to several years. Naturally, the benefit of the success of the treatment is counteracted by the inability to find work if none is available in the big cities. Now, it happens that some of these people in Edmonton have been allowed to leave the city with large quantities of Methadone in their possession and have worked on oil rigs in the North very successfully at great saving to the taxpayer. One man, suspected by the Federal Narcotic Control Division of abusing his medication privileges was ordered to stay in Edmonton by his doctor and not to leave for the North. Unable to find work and not getting any assistance from the Social Service Department, he was, after two months of treatment, allowed reluctantly by his doctor to return to the oil rigs with a large quantity of Methadone, worth \$500 dollars on the illegal market, in his possession. He has been working ever since. This indicates the necessity for a coordinated policy embracing the Federal Food and Drug Act personnel, the treatment personnel, and the social development personnel.

Income Tax

A. Every spring the Federal Government returns to transients monies that were overpayment of income tax during the previous year. When the T-4 Slips are sent to individuals, certain non-government agencies offer to buy these for a fraction of their value for cash, if the individuals will sign over the full amount to the agency. To get immediate cash, many citizens make the assignation and, of course, not only lose dollars but drink or give away the proceeds while intoxicated. It is our suggestion that where a man has income tax money owing to him, then the Provincial Government agency which has supplied boots, clothing etc. be allowed to garnishee the T-4 Slip before refund by the Federal Government.

Police

A. We feel that it is necessary to investigate the methods used by police when taking the "skid-row" type individual into custody. We receive continuous complaints about some policemen, particularly the new recruits, who do not really understand the problems of the "skid-row" alcoholic. Complaints made include: pouring wine on the head of the individual; pouring wine down the front of his trousers to make it appear as though he had urinated; and seizing bottles from transients as they emerge from the liquor store, opening the bottles, and then charging the transient with illegal possession. We also hear of many allegations of brutality by the police against intoxicated individuals both on the street and in the police stations. Whilst these alleged acts are as abhorrent to the majority of police as to ourselves, we feel there may be some substance to those allegations, since the incidents appear to always take place in the absence of witnesses. Our suggestions are:

(1) That the policeman on the beat be put back into this area and dispense justice with compassion by getting to know the neighborhood.

(2) That the police receive special training in the social sciences to enable them to deal with problems in this area, and not treat aggression with aggression.

If this is not done, we see the formation of a vigilante group composed of Indians, Metis, and white citizens. This group, now under consideration at the moment, would patrol the 97th Street area, demand better lighting from

the city for both streets and, more importantly, lanes, pay special attention to the underpasses, hotels and hostels in the neighborhood, and demand the installation of closed circuit T.V. on all notorious crime spots. For it is felt that if this is not done, the area will deteriorate into a typical North American city ghetto. Recruiting as special constables persons suitable by experience, but ineligible to join the police force because of lack of education or a minor criminal record would prevent the formation of a vigilante group.

Hospital

A. Investigation needs to be done into the handling of indigents at the large city hospitals. It is our impression that if we send one of these men to a specific doctor in the outpatient department, he will get much better treatment than if he goes there by himself without any official backing or support from a third party. The tendency is to push the indigent out of the hospital as rapidly as possible with little or no attempt being made to ascertain why he is there in the first place. Two examples follow:

(1) A patient with extensive second degree burns was allowed to discharge himself on the grounds that he did not like his doctors. Nothing had been done for the psychiatric condition. We were able to get him admitted to a different hospital on the following day. On making enquiry at the first hospital we found that no social worker or psychiatrist had been notified. Also we were told that he was a difficult patient and if he wanted to sign himself out, the hospital was only too happy to have him leave.

(2) An indigent was allowed to leave a city hospital with a Steinman pin protruding two inches from each side of the knee. Again the reason for the release was that the patient wished to sign himself out. On questioning the individual it turned out that he had been unable to get a social worker to investigate whether his T-4 Slip had arrived, and he had real concern that it would be stolen. We contend that this type of treatment, which is all too frequent, is unnecessary and is largely due to lack of local knowledge of the problems of these men by the hospital staff. Also, these men are too often discharged too soon from general hospitals. Allowing that beds are in short supply, it appears that doctors are s

used to handling standard middle-class patients that they assume that all discharges are returning to comfortable homes when, in fact, they are going to spend most of the following day, and some time nights out on the street. As a result secondary complications have an excellent chance of occurring, with added cost to the taxpayer through rehospitalization. More half-way houses with nursing care available are needed.

The Transient—Whose Responsibility?

A. We wish to draw your attention to the fact that there is provision made under the Canadian Medicare Plan to provide medical coverage for transients without them being directly registered in any one province. This program is not yet in effect but it should be implemented as soon as possible, to gether with a workable definition of who constitutes a transient. At the moment there seems to be a difference of opinion between employees of the Federal and Provincial Governments who are interpreting the regulations. It is noted that the federal government which has pressured the provinces into providing Medicare for the poor in particular, has not got this coverage for transients in operation yet.

Medication

A. We have received complaints from patients who have been under treatment for several weeks for psychiatric disability, who say that once they have started working they are then cut off from further free medication. This is most unfortunate for this is a critical time, and medication is vital to "hold" them until they stabilize in a particular job. The policy of the various agencies is, however, inconsistent. For example, the city social service tends to be more flexible than the province. The mental hospital out-patient department issues free drugs if the patient still requires medication. The Division of Alcoholism also issues free drugs if the patient goes to see them. However, both agencies are closed on Saturdays and Sundays, so most workers who are patients cannot get the benefit of free drugs at these places at these times.

Wages

A. It should be made an offence for an individual to be fired by a company or an

employer because his wages are being garnisheed. Often, where somebody has his wages garnisheed, he is laid off or fired. I have it on the authority of several collection agents that they use this fear of dismissal as a means of forcing the employee to pay his debts. Likewise the Federal Government garnishees monies owing the Crown. There was one man who systematically consolidated his debts through the Alberta Debtor's Assistance Board, but was then issued with a \$90 garnishee by the Federal Income Tax Department. Because of this he was fired, and his family went back on welfare. That Section of the Bankruptcy Act should be amended to make the federal agents act through the provincial Debtor's Assistance Board. Finally, it creates a severe hardship at times when an employer withholds a portion of a new employee's first paycheck or has the employee wait two to three weeks for the first payment. Often, to hold his job, the new employee must have the basic essentials such as food, clothing, and tools. Surely some way can be found for making an advance in cases of extreme need.

Legal Representation

A. We have the impression that, if a man appears in a provincial court for some minor crime such as theft of \$50, or for being intoxicated in a public place, he stands a much better chance of getting off or getting a reduced sentence if he has someone representing him. In fact, legal representation is not always needed—the word of a friend or a social worker will often suffice.

However, in the Edmonton court where most of the transient men are tried, the court is over-worked, under-staffed and little real attempt is made at true rehabilitation. There are few resources available for detailed investigation as to why an individual should be coming up on a recurrent intoxication charge. Little attempt is made to contact any of the helping agencies or professional persons who might be involved with the individual.

Due to the lack of resources for complete investigation at court level, many people are placed in jail for crimes for which they were not directly responsible. In many cases this situation comes about because nobody has told a magistrate that the individual was in treatment for alcoholism or a similar psychiatric disorder. We feel that many individuals are pressured into accepting the responsibility for the crimes by others who can less afford further conviction, and who can manipulate a

weaker individual. We have also been led to believe by numerous people that during the winter they are more comfortable and better fed in jail than they are in a hostel, where they are turned outside during the day.

There is often a dramatic improvement in persons who are sent to the work camps for a two or three month period instead of being locked up. More of these work camps should be established for they are, in our opinion, useful for rehabilitative purposes. However, money earned by these work camp prisoners might better be put in a trust account administered by an agency such as the Public Trustee. The temptation to drink away all the money on the day of their release could thus be avoided.

Finally, we welcome the new proposals of the federal government relating to the ticketing rather than the arresting of persons for minor crimes.

Nutrition

A. It would be helpful if agencies such as the Government Hostels could supply alcoholics with such elementary nutrition as sweet orange juice and vitamin tablets. Alcoholics already suffering from Avitaminosis get low blood sugar when they come out of a drinking bout. They are constantly complaining that there is not enough sugar in the meals provided at the hostel. It is expensive to send a man to a hospital for intravenous fluids when all that may be needed is highly sweetened orange juice in large quantities.

B. It is our opinion that consideration should be given to putting vitamins into rubbing alcohol, by rum, shaving lotion, vanilla extract, etc. so that indigents who drink these do not become ill with liver damage. It is quite possible that a protein such as albumin could be added as well. Federal Food & Drug personnel should be asked to investigate this.

Liquor Supply

A. We feel that consideration should be given to putting bootleggers out of business

by having a liquor store in the 97th Street area open on a 24 hour basis. Also, consideration should be given to assigning specially trained salesmen to such a store. Persons requiring care and attention could be spotted readily and help provided, instead of liquor again being sold to already intoxicated persons.

Again, in this city there should be set aside an area where the indigent can go and imbibe without being molested by the police. It must be realized that drinking is a way of life and a facility such as an outside park area could be provided. It would be patrolled by the police and drinking would not be illegal there. In winter a heated arena should be provided, with cheap coffee available. This would empty the streets and lanes of the alcoholics.

Service Organizations

A. It has been drawn to our attention many times that those agencies which collect clothing and boots from the general population for distribution to the poor tend to sell the best articles in their own thrift stores. It is therefore ridiculous for a government institution to send someone who is getting equipped to go to work, down to one of these agencies for a free issue of boots or clothes, when all that is left is that which is unsaleable. Men, who must wear shoes either too small or several sizes too large, are bound to get chronic foot disorders or infections.

Assault

We suggest a federally sponsored conference to explore the methods of controlling belligerent alcoholics and hostile individuals in a hostel or jail environment. Recent techniques of crowd control might well be used to prevent damage to both parties.

Respectfully submitted,

W. H. Stares,
President,
The Gardenside Society.

APPENDIX "C"

Brief to the

Special Senate Committee
on Poverty

Honourable R. A. Speaker, Chairman
Human Resources Development Authority
Province of Alberta

July 21, 1970

The Speech from the Throne on April 15, 1965, announced the Government of Canada's intention to develop "a program for the full utilization of our human resources and the elimination of poverty among our people". Over five years have passed since this commitment was made, and now the Special Senate Committee on Poverty is travelling across Canada to "define and elucidate the problem of poverty and to recommend appropriate action".

The history of these five years very adequately reflects the complexity of the issue we refer to as "poverty", the inadequacy and inflexibility of contemporary social, economic and political institutions to understand and cope with multi-factor problems, and the ambivalence of public opinions and attitudes.

The persistence of poverty in Canada raises fundamental questions about the nature of our socioeconomic system. While it is necessary to understand the origins, dimensions and remedial aspects of poverty within the context of that system, it is also necessary to ask more profound questions that were expressed at an earlier time in the life of our nation by a number of populist political movements. It is a tragedy that a country, ranking as one of the wealthiest in terms of natural resources, and having a limited population, finds it difficult to develop structures through which everyone can freely engage in social and economic enterprises. Many wise persons, uninitiated in the theories of political and social science, cannot comprehend what is defensible about an economic system that leads to need in the midst of abundance. While it is commendable to pursue innovations within the existing system in order to expand opportunities and economic benefits to more and more citizens, it is evident that the price for maintaining the existing socioeconomic system is a continuation of deprivation

for many individuals: to talk realistically about the elimination of poverty amongst our people will require more profound political and monetary reforms than is presently being experienced in Canadian society.

The Social Credit Government, which had its origins in the poverty of the Depression, was sympathetic with the Government of Canada's announced intention to combat poverty and committed itself to share in this task by reviewing its policies and programs. In 1966, as a prerequisite to new programming it undertook a research program to develop comprehensive knowledge of the incidence, distribution and dimensions of poverty in Alberta. Entitled COMMUNITY OPPORTUNITY ASSESSMENT, this nine-volume analysis focused on poverty sectors in five representative communities (Indian, Metis, mining, marginal farming and prairie) and in the two major urban centres, Edmonton and Calgary. In addition, an inventory of all formal programs in the province, encompassing federal, provincial, municipal and private agencies was compiled in six volumes. Concurrent with this information effort, the Government of Alberta developed a new policy and program framework for the integration and coordination of social and economic development under the broad theme of Human Resources Development, and presented this in the form of a White Paper to the Alberta Legislature in 1967. These new efforts resulted in the establishment of a number of programs designed to deal with social and economic deprivation in the context of total development in the Province of Alberta.

These included:

Human Resources Development Authority

This is not a department of government but a senior coordinating agency which designs comprehensive social and economic development plans through local consultation and involvement. The Human Resources Development Authority serves the following specific purposes:

- (a) Sponsors economic and social research necessary to determine the human and physical resources development problems and potentials in any specified area of the province.

(b) Fosters awareness among local people of their individual opportunities and their communities' problems and potentials, and assists and involves local people in the preparation of social and economic development goals.

(c) Assists in the implementation of projects designed to increase income and employment opportunities in underdeveloped urban and rural areas.

The departments of government are the implementing agencies which carry out the actual programs originating from the comprehensive plans.

Human Resources Research Council

This is a semi-autonomous research agency designed to coordinate and support scientific inquiries in social, economic and educational fields related to the development and conservation of human resources.

Department of Social Development

The old Department of Public Welfare was redefined and reorganized as a Department of Social Development. The concept of Social Development replaced the old concept of "welfare" which no longer reflected emerging policies and programs. The new approach was designed to stress development and rehabilitation as distinct from maintenance and custody, to reward initiative demonstrated by social welfare recipients, to emphasize preventative social services, to actively encourage participation of citizens and private industry, to strengthen income security, and to develop employment opportunities for welfare recipients.

A number of other specific programs that have a significant relationship to poverty were implemented:

The Alberta Service Corps

This began in 1967 as a summer program of the Alberta Department of youth. It is designed to provide opportunities for young people in post-secondary education to become involved in communities and institutions where their idealism, energies and talents can be used on positive self-help projects. Volunteer members have served in mental hospitals, correctional institutions, Indian and Metis communities, and special urban areas.

Reforms in Penology and Mental Health

In these two major fields of human care and rehabilitation, programs and facilities for the treatment and rehabilitation of the mentally ill, and for the custody and rehabilitation of criminals have been thoroughly studied and are presently being reorganized to achieve a much higher standard of services.

Civil Rights

Programs developed in this area include legal aid in criminal and civil cases, crime compensation, native court workers and debtors' assistance. An Ombudsman has been appointed by the Legislative Assembly.

Native Peoples Development

Extensive programs of support have been developed to allow the following three organizations a greater measure of autonomy and self-determination in their affairs: The Indian Association of Alberta, The Metis Association of Alberta and The Alberta Native Communications Society.

The above illustrate some of the developments during the last four years in Alberta that relate directly to the problem of poverty. It is impossible to encompass in a short brief the detailed analysis and assessment of the policies and programs that have emerged during these years. Over twenty volumes of material have been published dealing with various aspects of Human Resources Development: these give more adequate expression to our experience in Alberta. Perhaps the best contribution to the present discussion of poverty can be made by reflecting on the recent history of our undertakings and abstracting those elements that complicate the successful reduction of poverty.

Inadequate Concepts

The way in which we conceptualize a problem directly affects our actions. If our concepts do not adequately reflect the reality of a problem, our actions will probably have limited value.

Poverty is a multi-faceted phenomena, and therefore single-factor definitions of poverty are inadequate and misleading. Poverty is not simply a function of a severely restricted income, of failing health, of limited motivation, of deficient education and home environment. It is a complex of all these and many

other factors, and therefore defies simple definition. Consequently, there are no simple solutions.

Poverty must also be conceptualized as part of an interaction process. It cannot be isolated from other parts of the social and economic system, and even when ignored, it feeds back on other parts of the society. The kind of thinking that allows one sector of government to discourage the use of public funds for industrial development in a poverty area, completely ignoring the huge public investment presently being made in the same area in the form of welfare and other social services, typifies isolationist thought and leads to ineffective programming. Poverty has a pervasive effect that is costly to the entire socio-economic system. Until this is recognized, more realistic and integrative programs will have difficulty developing. Certain regional development programs in special areas that are just now emerging reflect this more comprehensive thinking.

One serious conceptual problem that persists is the tendency to think of poverty in either a strict aggregate sense or a strict individualistic sense. The aggregate view is a statistical perspective; for example, an economist may be satisfied if unemployment can be reduced to 3 per cent. What this conceptual outlook hides is the fact that the percentage really represents thousands of individuals who are living in poverty. The danger of the aggregate approach is that it becomes insensitive to the human tragedy of poverty.

The strict individualistic perspective discusses the poor person without reference to the social unit of the family or the community. Considered by himself, an individual may have very limited rehabilitative potential and be a questionable public investment, but considered in his role as father, for instance, decisions about him have consequences for many other individuals. To deal harshly with a father who may be poorly motivated is also to deal harshly with a possible dedicated mother and aspiring children. If very costly second and third generation poverty is to be terminated, we must avoid this narrow, individualistic thinking and deal with the needs of the entire family.

Simplistic solutions

Many of the strategies proposed represent an over-simplified understanding of poverty. It is not a monocausal, single factor phenom-

na. Poverty has many origins, and usually manifests itself in a mixture of economic, social and psychological characteristics. Simplistic solutions generally fall into one of the following categories:

(1) The poor person has a motivational problem and can be best rehabilitated by psychological-type counselling. This approach, which says that "if a person really wants to work, he can find a job", does not always face the fact that opportunities are created by the economic structure.

(2) The poor person is a victim of an oppressive political system and that through social action and more direct citizen involvement in the decision-making mechanism, the economic problems will be alleviated. Certain community development strategies utilized this approach of confrontation with the prevailing political forces.

(3) The plight of the poor can best be dealt with through income security programs. This is often the perspective of economists who advocate guaranteed incomes and other similar schemes as the best attack on poverty. This approach disregards the social-psychological dimensions of the problem.

(4) A more recent approach, particularly related to people of Indian and Eskimo ancestry, calls for the return to the more primitive and pure way of life that characterized their culture in earlier centuries. This idealistic position, even if one considers it commendable, is unworkable in an age when cultured groups can no longer live in isolation and are inescapably involved in modern civilization.

Each of these strategies indicates components that must be considered in an holistic approach to poverty, but alone any one of them is inadequate, and when over-emphasized, any one of them will interfere with the recognition of other factors that are important.

The discussion about a guaranteed annual income illustrates the danger of over-simplification. An economic definition of poverty says that anyone below a certain level of income cannot purchase the necessities of life. This aspect of poverty can be handled by a guaranteed annual income. However, if we use a demographic definition of poverty and define anyone located at the lower end of the income scale as poor, there will be poverty as long as there is variation in income. The only way to combat this type of poverty is to

reduce income disparity. This will not be done to any appreciable extent by a guaranteed annual income. Further if a social-psychological concept of relative deprivation is applied to poverty, then individuals will feel poor when they see people who they define as their peers "better off" than they. People receiving only the guaranteed annual income will still feel poor in relation to others earning a higher income.

The supply of money is not the only factor affecting poverty. Some people have a relatively low standard of living from a relatively high income. These people often lack the personal organizational ability or the money management skills that are necessary to derive the best level of living benefits from the income they receive. Others are able to buy well but are not able to use the products they purchase wisely. Appliances become inoperative because of lack of repair and other household effects become useless because of improper upkeep. These and other factors affect the use of income, and they are all aspects of poverty which will not be solved by a guaranteed annual income.

While the Government of Alberta is in favor of some form of guaranteed economic security, we would warn against viewing it as a panacea for poverty. It may be a part of the solution but obviously does not cope with the social-psychological dimensions of poverty.

Inefficient Knowledge

A persistent problem such as poverty always raises the question about the adequacy of our knowledge. It is often assumed that the development of further information will lead to more effective action. Concerning poverty at this particular time, it is safe to say that there is no deficiency of general knowledge. During the past five years, social scientists and other specialists in Europe, U.S.A. and Canada have published literally thousands of research studies and reports dealing with poverty and human resources development.

The problem is not the lack of knowledge, but the inefficient utilization and application of that knowledge in the decision-making process. This results both from the manner in which the information is presently organized, and from the translation problems between the scientific community and the political community.

A great amount of the knowledge is highly specialized, and because interdisciplinary

frameworks which can integrate this great variety of material are still being developed, the knowledge is of limited utility. There is a great need in Canada to develop a federated information system which integrates our emerging data and knowledge about social, economic, political and related matters. This venture could be aided by greater encouragement for interdisciplinary efforts in the social scientific community. The Government of Alberta has proceeded in this direction by the establishment of the Human Resources Research Council. As a country, however, we still lack a national effort that will integrate our merging social scientific endeavor and organize our knowledge into more efficient form. Consideration should be given to the establishment of a major scientific institution that would serve human development in a manner similar to the National Research Council's role in physical and technological development.

A related problem concerns the transfer of knowledge from the scientific community to the political community. A great deal of poverty research has appeared in the form of voluminous reports, utilizing specialized social scientific terminology, and employing tentative and conditional statements. This often has limited value to the political decision-making community which requires generalist knowledge, statements of some certainty, and popular language. Much greater attention must be given to methods of translating findings from one group to the other, while respecting the concerns of both. Under the present situation, a great deal of valuable knowledge about poverty sits on library shelves in a format that is of limited value to those who must make public decisions.

Ambivalent Public Attitudes

During the years of the Depression, poverty was a problem shared by the majority of people in certain parts of this country. Because their deprivation was so evidently related to a collapse in the economic system the individuals did not interpret their being poor as a matter of personal inadequacy. They did not lose their pride, and many did not feel stigmatized when they received help. Today, however, by most conventional definitions, poverty is a minority problem. Consequently public attitudes are often judgmental the rationale being that if the majority of people are economically self-sufficient, the

those who are poor must be personally responsible. It is much more difficult to understand that the economic system still has defects, although they are less evident except in periods of high unemployment due to deliberate economic policies of restraint. Because of these prevailing public attitudes, those who utilize welfare and income security services experience social disgrace and other feelings of stigma. To recover the individual's self-respect, some advocate that welfare services should be a matter of right, but even this measure will be of little value if public opinion remains unenlightened about the complex interaction of economic structures and personal opportunities.

The ambivalence of public attitudes also finds expression in the incompatibility of emotional and economic concerns. Many citizens are appalled when they are made aware of certain poverty conditions that exist in this country and emotionally respond by demanding that governments take action to remove the deprivation. On the other hand, many of these same people are very critical of government efforts, reflected in increased taxation, to expand services to people who are poor. This ambivalence applies particularly to the media industry. A favorite topic for feature articles and documentaries in newspapers, magazines and other forms of media has been the plight of the poor and the inadequacy of government programs. However, there has not been a corresponding interest in the media advocating increased taxation that would be necessary to greatly improve the present social services. There is an inherent dilemma in being emotionally positive and economically negative towards poverty.

Characteristics of the Contemporary Political System

In the parliamentary system of democracy, governments are accountable to the majority of the electorate for the programs they implement. The role played by the opposition and the media ensure that ineffective programs are exposed. For this reason, governments must be convinced that proposed new programs will be effective. Certain types of programs such as those designed to combat poverty require the motivation and participation of the people if they are to be a success. It is therefore necessary to "sell" programs in order to ensure their effectiveness. This "selling" of new programs to combat poverty generally creates wide publicity which leads to

inflated expectations about the programs. People who are the targets of programs (or in target regions) expect their way of life to change almost immediately. Since poverty is a multi-faceted problem and has developed over lengthy periods of time, it cannot be solved instantaneously. The public, often seeing no immediate visible result, becomes easily discouraged and disillusioned. This type of situation is vulnerable to opposition, and the government must often reconsider participation or continued program development.

Solutions to a minority problem which may require a rational, long-range approach often seem difficult with our parliamentary political system that ultimately reflects the majority will. Even though the Government of Alberta has long-term objectives, certain types of poverty that have taken a generation or more to develop will not be quickly overcome by commitments that cannot extend beyond the four-to-five-year tenure of an elected administration. This is a difficult problem and the best immediate solution seems to be the minimization of publicity which creates unrealistic expectations. Publicity should stress the process of programs and play down the emphasis on immediate results. A longer-term solution is to ensure that minority groups have access to public decision-makers. The Government of Alberta is presently establishing a number of advisory and appeal committees to the Minister of Social Development whose membership will include recipients of social assistance.

Cumbersome Administrative Structures

One of the most frustrating aspects of contemporary government is the cumbersome bureaucratic structure that continues to be utilized in the administration of complex socioeconomic programs. Based on the departmental system, which is narrow in perspective, hierarchical in authority, and very slow at processing information and decisions, the administration system often intimidates the most experienced and best efforts in anti-poverty programming.

Poverty is multi-faceted—it relates to both public and private sectors, and spills across many jurisdictional boundaries. An organizational structure that does not have the capacity to handle complex information and decisions in a comprehensive and integrated

manner cannot properly comprehend or deal with this problem.

At present, there are serious deficiencies in the relationships between government and private organizations, between various levels of government, and between departments within any single level of government. Everyone dealing extensively with poverty agrees that a much more effective system of coordination is necessary, but very few officials or bureaucrats are willing to share their jurisdictional powers, or consider legal changes, that would make integrated coordination a reality.

Unless a greater willingness is expressed by departmental and agency officials to unite in a common effort to tackle poverty, and to be less protective about their "jurisdictional backyards", slow progress will be made.

To be more effective in the future, poverty programming must begin by first analyzing the nature and dimension of the problem and then designing appropriate legal and administrative structures. If public officials persist in viewing complex problems through their traditional perspectives, the problem will persist.

Officials combatting poverty are continually confronted by a fragmented governmental structure. One of the best examples is the Department of Regional Economic Expansion. The Government of Alberta was led to believe, at least initially, that this new department would act as a coordinating agency within the federal government and that federal-provincial agreements negotiated with DREE would be comprehensive agreements. This would make it possible for the Government of Alberta to attack the multi-faceted problems of poverty with a multi-faceted approach. It soon became evident that this was no possible. The Department of Regional Economic Expansion, like all standard government departments (both federal and provincial) has accepted a relatively narrow mandate and considers its job done when it reaches its interpretation of its mandate. If comprehensive agreements are to be reached, the Government of Alberta must negotiate, not with the Government of Canada, but with each department and agency of the federal government. This is extremely cumbersome and complicated. The effectiveness of programs dealing with poverty would be greatly facilitated if the Government of Canada developed a single agency that was legally

empowered to coordinate planning and negotiating efforts of all federal government departments and agencies. In Alberta, the Human Resources Development Authority was established to serve that purpose.

Another deficiency of the present administrative structure is seen in the experience of individuals in need. To the poor person, the present bureaucratic labyrinth is overwhelming and sometimes frightening. Persons or families that face a number of interacting problems must frequently make their way from one department to another in at least two levels of government. Unless individuals are highly motivated to achieve some well defined goal, and unless they are thoroughly knowledgeable about the types and location of services offered, they will have limited chance of success. It is far easier to accept welfare payments and remain in the poverty situation. An integrated system for the delivery of services would alleviate this problem. It should be possible to develop centres where the majority of human development agencies, representing all levels of government and the private sector, could work in close cooperation. The feasibility of a pilot project embodying this concept is now being studied by a tri-governmental committee established in the City of Edmonton.

A further aspect concerns the need for greater flexibility. Programs aimed at poverty problems must be highly flexible in nature, leaving many operational decisions up to the regional officials who are to implement the program. As the local people who participate in the programs become more involved, they tend to interpret needs and solutions to problems differently than professional planners. Programs must be flexible enough to accommodate these differences in interpretation. This kind of flexibility is not available with present federal-provincial agreements negotiated with DREE. Federal negotiators have insisted that funds be attached to very specific projects and that deviations from these specific project must be referred to Ottawa. This makes implementation of agreements inflexible and reduces the effectiveness of the program. It would be much more satisfactory for agreements to be written only with broad program outlines and the specific projects under these programs to be subject only to the review of a federal-provincial liaison committee.

Eclipse of the Non-Governmental Sector

In recent years there has been increasing public pressure upon governments to expand their jurisdictions into areas that previously were served by charitable organizations, voluntary community agencies and private industry. This expansion of governmental departments and agencies into nearly every area of social and economic life has in many instances undermined local initiative and responsible participation. There appears to be an emerging apathy which responds to problems by saying "let government look after it".

This is a particularly critical development for certain forms of anti-poverty efforts that require a high degree of local initiative and citizen participation to be effective.

If this trend is to be counteracted, governments must give greater recognition to the role of the non-governmental sector. New innovations in partnership and cooperation between the public and private sectors must

be initiated, and the proper role of each in social and economic development must be explored.

In relation to the non-professional, governments must recognize the tremendous potential resources in the volunteer movement. Formal opportunities must be provided for volunteers to participate in human development programs, and assistance in the form of training programs and resource personnel must be provided.

In relation to private industry, governments must re-examine the virtual monopoly departments now have in the implementation of socioeconomic programs. There is good indication that many social services provided by governmental agencies could be successfully contracted to private industry through a mechanism referred to as "Request for Proposal". This new approach to involve the private sector in the achievement of public goals is presently in an experimental stage in the Government of Alberta.

APPENDIX "D"

Submission

to

"SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY"

from

HUMANS ON WELFARE SOCIETY

Edmonton, Alberta

July 21st, 1970

per:

John McNamara
Executive Director

TABLE OF CONTENT

Introduction

Poverty to the Poor

Welfare System To-day:

What Price Freedom?

Guaranteed Income:

A Priority Solution

Guaranteed Employment:

Futility of Man-Power Services

Legal-Care: Why Not?

Public Housing: So What Else is New?

Freed Husbands, Deserted Wives
and Doomed Children

Old Age: Cry Today...Die Tomorrow

Human Rights: A Welfare Fallacy

Municipal, Provincial, Federal

Welfare Programmes Who is the Ultimate
Authority?Summary of Recommendations
of Conclusion

INTRODUCTION

Humans On Welfare was incorporated on January 26th, 1970, under the Alberta Societies Act. Its membership numbering 488, and representing over 50,000 welfare recipients in Alberta, is comprised of persons receiving assistance (any form) as voting members; interested citizens as associate members; and business firms/organizations as Honorary Commercial members. It originated from con-

cerned welfare recipients and had no professional outside Social animation in its formation.

Humans On Welfare is both a self-help and a social action organization. Its objects are to:

1. (a) To inform the people of Canada about the conditions and status of all persons in this country who are not self-supporting and requiring public or private assistance.

(b) To engage in study and research in order to better the status and conditions of all persons in this country or any part thereof who may require financial or material assistance.

(c) To stimulate and encourage Governments at all levels, corporations, and individuals to review and improve the physical and psychological environments of all people requiring financial or material assistance.

2. To provide suitable opportunities and counsel to welfare recipients to help them help themselves out of the welfare trap.

3. To do all things which are incidental and conducive to achieving the above mentioned objects.

Poverty: To The Poor

It would be presumptuous for us to offer you a new definition of Poverty. Suffice to state, that to become poor... to be forced to seek welfare assistance... is to be damned to second-class citizenship; to be thought of, and treated, as something less than a human being. Raped of dignity, you experience constant panic, frustrations, deprivation and injustices. Worse still, is the shattering hopelessness of knowing you are trapped with very little chance of ever getting out of it... because the "system" is designed to keep you there... to maintain you in the welfare trap... and unless you possess extra-ordinary determination and good health... or blessed with good luck... you will remain trapped on welfare street to stink and die there.

We are the birds in a not-so-gilded cage. We are much talked about of late... viewed and reviewed with mixed curiosity, amusement and disdain. But are we much "thought" of. Is there a real concern? Or is it

still an attitude of pity, and "sick charity" towards us poor people? "Feed us crumbs to-day to keep us quiet for another month". We hope not. We too have a "Canadian Dream" and still a little belief that a nation as great as ours will awaken to the fact that it has four to five million second-class citizens... welfare recipients, the working poor, the aged and the disabled... and that it must if it is to realize success as a nation... change its system to render these people their rightful first-class citizenship. Or not unlike other great nations who ignored the poor too long, Canada will face self-destruction.

We, the professional poor, do not profess to know all the answers. The effects of having lived the problems may be just as damaging in decision making as the drawbacks of having merely read and learnt a little of them in textbooks. However, we sincerely hope that our views and suggestions expressed herein will assist your Committee in its challenging, admirable, if not useless, task. Your eventual report and recommendations to the Government of Canada may be meaningful, considered and enacted, provided sufficient public support is given. It is especially for this reason that we are here to-day to hopefully reach the public and urge their concern of our problems and their support of your aims.

The Welfare System To-Day What Price Freedom?

Freedom of the individual is the priceless and most fundamental principle of democracy. Sadly, present welfare programmes are anti-democratic; their present administrative processes deprives the poor of the freedom of choice... of the freedom to make even the most minute decision as a human being.

The most illustrative and shocking example of this is the antiquated voucher system still in effect in Alberta, a wealthy province that supposedly is the leading province in human development programmes. As well stated by Senator Croll, the voucher system is totally indefensible... and should not be tolerated by any responsible, informed elected officials. We have submitted a brief to the Alberta Government last February (see Appendix "A") without results. How many more demonstrations are required... and can anyone feel certain the frustrations and anger of the recipients will not violently erupt in further demonstrations? We emphatically recommend and urge your Committee to initiate immediate pressure on your Government to make it

a provision under the Canada Assistance Act that no province can administrate a welfare voucher system; and that financial grants to the provinces be withheld until this provision is met.

Guaranteed Income: A Priority Solution

The problems of poverty, we all know, are complex and not exclusively economic. However, money surely, is the most essential and basic tool required to reconstruct a society demolished by poverty. We believe that the concept of a Guaranteed Annual Income is a fundamental requisite in implementing new effective programmes. We will not attempt to argue its merits academically herein. Nor are we stating that guaranteed annual income is the magic formula that will end poverty... But surely, it will arrest it. One of the hidden, and yet most important advantages of the Guaranteed Annual Income to welfare recipients is the dignified and humane manner in which we shall receive assistance. By removing the stigma of welfare as presently known and experienced by us will put an end to victimization and exploitation of the poor by profiteering landlords and corporations that engage in high-cost contracts with the Governments to supply the poor with goods and services on an exclusive basis. Example of this are the present exuberant rents charged when landlords agree to rent to welfare recipients. (Appendix "B" — Case Histories); the subsidization of flop-houses as single men's hostels (Appendix "C"); and the practises of large retail food and clothing stores in supplying welfare recipients and drug prescriptions (Appendix "D"). Dissenters of Guaranteed Annual Income plan are using implausible, naive and affluent-orientated arguments such as:

(a) It would increase taxation and cause harm to our economy.

(b) It would destroy work incentive.

The basis for the first argument is an attempt to prove the concept as a "double taxation", etc.—but fails to point out that our Canadian Tax System favors the rich and hits hardest the low-income groups.

In the second instance, it suggests that there would be an increase in the number of work drop-outs, and also suggests that the ability to manage and use money effectively is closely related to the ability to make money by working. Is it not amazing that the poor should be kept poor in order to force them to work? One would also think that the

ability to manage money was related to education, training, patterns of expenditures in the community and among peer groups, the arts of advertising and marketing, and other factors. Strange isn't it, very few people are concerned about how the wealthy and middle classes spend or manage their money. I wonder at times, if they had to do with an income of \$2,000 to \$4,000 or even \$5,000 per year, if they would not require extraordinary ability to manage their lives.

There must of course be safeguards. Guaranteed Income will not eliminate the "need" for all social and welfare programmes.

Guaranteed Employment Futility of Man-Power Services

Over 10 per cent of persons on Alberta Welfare rolls are unemployed employables. Some of 5,000 persons, of which the greatest majority are females. Their chances of getting off—welfare are largely dependent on whether or not they can find a job at decent wages. With the scarcity of job opportunities presently at the critical stage, their chances are made even more minimal by the fact that present employment services provided by Manpower and other agencies are totally ineffective. In fact, the vested interest of Canada Manpower lie not in the employee but in the employer. It is a well known fact that the welfare recipient applying for work through Manpower is given the Cold shoulder. Because he is on welfare, he is identified to the mind of the Manpower representative as "hard-to-place"... a non-marketable item... In fairness to the Manpower personnel, they can hardly be blamed, as their own jobs are jeopardized unless they place their quota of applicants per month or year. This is the shameful "efficiency program" Canada Manpower imposes on its own placement personnel... and a further assertion of the fact that Manpower's entire policy is orientated to the employer instead of the employee.

Contrary to the beliefs of a few (and too many, at that) the unemployed, employable welfare recipient is not a lazy bum and you had already had various statistics to prove this true. Voluntary unemployment, voluntary welfare living is not a significant factor in our Society. Most welfare people want to work. But with the lack of job opportunities, the alarming rise of unemployment, the inaccessible training and upgrading programmes,

and the futility of ManPower services, what chances have we to work—and become humans again?

We have demonstrated through our "Human's For Hire"! division (Appendix "E") that by placing more emphasis on the employee instead of the employer, a better result is achieved—and we have done it without funds.

It is therefore essential that your committee recommend a quick major overhaul of the Canada Manpower services to enhance and not hinder the work incentives provided by the proposed Guaranteed Annual Income programme. Clearly, Manpower's role should be threefold:

1. A more personal in-depth analysis of the unemployed person looking for work.
2. A more efficient method of attracting potential employers; and constant research and recommendations in creating job openings.
3. Implementing training programmes and making them more accessible.

Legal Care: Why Not?

The Humans on Welfare Organization sees the need for greatly increased legal aid to the indigent. A broader spectrum of legal services should be made available to the poor; counsel should be provided to assist the poor in dealing with government boards; and the additional services as well as those already existent should be made more readily available to the impoverished. These are three much needed reforms in the legal aid system as it stands today. They could be effected immediately and would be, we feel, practical.

A discussion of conditions in Alberta's legal aid "scene" is necessary in order to appreciate our suggestions for reform. The Alberta Legal Aid Plan accepted some 3351 cases last year of which 2466 were criminal. Of the remaining 885 civil cases 795 or 88 per cent dealt with divorce (631 cases), wardship, separation, custody, and maintenance. A mere 91 civil cases dealt with defending the poor—surely there are many more instances where a poor man as an individual or the poor as a group have cause to seek legal advice.

Garnishment of wages by unscrupulous credit companies, even as goods purchased prove faulty; summary eviction, discrimination against Indians and Metis as well as the poor, summary dismissal and many other

grievances require adequate counsel to protect the rights of the poor. Often a simple telephone call made by the lawyer can prevent repossession of some piece of property.

The poor are often intimidated by bureaucratic procedure and generally he does not know when a lawyer is needed—and his very feelings of despair may prevent him from taking action. The poor man is too often mistrustful of the muddle or upper class lawyer.

In the matter of welfare rights, recipients have to date been without adequate appeal machinery to file grievances of errors, injustices, etc. The Alberta Government has publicized that it will soon set up a new Citizens Committee to hear Welfare appeals and to comply to the Canada Assistance Act. The proposed manner on which appeals will be heard necessitates the welfare recipient to file his appeal in writing, first to the regional director, then to the regional committee, and further on to the Central (provincial) Committee. An admirable system perhaps, if welfare recipients were lawyers. But the truth is that the majority of recipients are not sufficiently educated, trained or knowledgeable of their rights, to be expected to file properly in writing their grievances. They require legal counsel. But there are no provisions for legal aid in this respect under present systems or future plans. A much needed Citizens Appeal Committee will be turned into a shameful farce unless recipients filing appeals have ready accessibility to legal-aid.

The Citizens Appeal Committee itself Made up of 11 citizens) should also have accessibility to independent legal counsel before reaching decisions—and not by having a lawyer per se appointed as a member of its committee, as now proposed.

We, Humans On Welfare Society, recommend two solutions to alleviate the legal problems of the poor:

1. Establishment of Store-Front Legal Aid Clinics.
2. National or Provincial Legal-Care Plan

The neighbourhood or store-front law clinics can be established as an immediate solution without great expense, and as valuable pilot projects. These type of clinics would provide easy accessibility to legal aid for the poor...and would overcome the fear the poor have of lawyers. The lawyers part-time could easily build a rapport with the

poor of a community without lowering his professionalism or his standard of living.

The United States O.E.O.'s store-front legal-aid program, although relatively new and small-sealed is nevertheless handling hundreds of thousands of cases per year, and is indication of the advantages of such a programme.

Store-front law offices are not the total solution to the problems of providing legal assistance to the poor. A more comprehensive legal-care programme similar to medicare should be established to guarantee competent legal assistance to every citizen regardless of class—thus again removing the stigmatization of the poor as now happens when the poor dares ask for legal-aid.

We hope that your Committee will motivate the Governments and the Canadian Bar Association to enact these measures.

Public Housing: So What Else is New?

There is nothing more disheartening to the poor than to witness helplessly the present drives to build more public housing units. The architects, the civic, provincial and federal housing officials and other professionals are having great fun it seems playing their building games. The objects of the game appear merely to be build as many, as cheaply, as quickly, as you can, and who cares if they are the best type of houses for those lazy poor people to live-in. And what if we are creating more ghettos, Who Cares? We care... We care a damn... We advocate public housing only if they are single separate dwellings, ordinary homes purchased by the city and rented to the poor, without the further stigma of welfare that existing public housing projects carry. It may appear practical and economically favorable to park the poor together in the new handsome chicken coops called public housing units but experience has taught us, (and should have taught them) that they only create ghettos sooner or later, and are basically inhuman.

We also recommend that welfare recipients be given the opportunity to purchase homes through the government rather than subsidizing profiteering landlords.

Freed Husbands: Deserted Wives and Doomed Children

Humans On Welfare emphasizes to your Committee the need for more effective legal

enforcement of child maintenance. Reasons Why:

(1) To enable the mother and children to maintain self-respect and dignity, in that they are not totally dependent upon government charity.

(2) To instill a more responsible attitude in the divorced male parent and stimulate his awareness of his obligations to his children.

(3) To relieve the burden on the general tax-paying public.

(4) To discourage the divorced male from engendering new financial responsibilities when he is not meeting his primary obligations.

(5) To help alleviate the socio-economic problems caused by irresponsible male parents.

Example:

We have a young female member of Humans On Welfare, who has two children. She was married for five years when her husband abandoned his family. This family was middle income family, with a large home, new car, and expensive furniture and appliances. She was forced to move out of a too expensive home and now lives in a bachelor suite with her children, with a minimum of furniture.

Her Monthly Budget is now:

Rent	\$120.
Food	63.
Clothing	25.
Personal incidentals	10.
Household incidentals	5.
Utilities	5.
	<hr/>
	\$228.

Mrs. A. does not have marketable skills, therefore is unable to obtain work. The breakdown of her marriage has left her emotionally bereft, and even if she did have a vocation this would not ensure she was physically and emotionally able to maintain a home plus a steady job. A condition typical of the majority of women faced with this overwhelming burden. The two small children involved are already suffering the trauma of losing both father and a well adjusted mother. They now live in the grey drab non-world of always having to hear their mother refuse almost every request they approach her with, because she does not have the funds or facilities to accommodate them. The father of this is blatantly flaunting the law, because he is not supporting his family in any

fashion, either financially or psychologically. Mr. A. is a skilled tradesman earning well above the average income. He lives in an expensive high-rise apartment, drives a 1970 Corvette, and is engaged to a girl not yet in her twenties. Mrs. A. has continually petitioned the Courts of Alberta to enforce financial support, and has thus far had no success. This is not an isolated case, the writers of this petition are in very similar circumstances, and speak for approximately 10,000 women in Alberta alone. This is an intolerable situation. Our present laws and enforcement practices actually aid and abet this gross exploitation of both abandoned women and children and the general public. This problem can no longer be ignored unless society is prepared to pay the price.

Old Age: Cry To-day—Die Tomorrow!

The elderly citizen, if he happens to be poor, is probably the most damned of individuals. Does he deserve it? No one really thinks not. But then why are they at the bottom of the barrel of assistance programmes? When one realizes that 98 percent of Americans die penniless, the plight of the elderly should be given our priority concern. The haunting memory of visiting a father in an elderly-citizens home is still with me. I wanted to take him for a drive to the lake. "Leave me here" he said, going out, means readjustment when I get back. You brought me here to die and I await it with resignation. He was poor. I was poor. My tears were not silent as his. Could I have done more?

The truth is that old people generally do not want communal housing or segregation. Nor do they all have health problems. The building of old age homes, modern as they may appear, should not be the sole provision of accommodation for healthy elderly people. Why not ask the aged what they want before doing anything. Why not get them involved in the decision making and policies that effect them? In regards to financial assistance, their guaranteed income must be geared to meet their needs.

Example:

Man and Wife—Own their own home assessed at between \$4,000 to \$5,000. Pay taxes of \$196.00 per annum. Man—82 receives old age Pension plus supplement of \$111.00, plus \$37.20 from Social Development. Total of \$148.00. The Wife is 53 and unemployed. They pay all utilities, including telephone—Wife cannot receive a Buss pass because of age and can not use her husband's

as they are not transferable. House is over fifty years old, roof leaks and is badly in need of paint and repairs. The Federal Government gives 5 percent increase in January rent; cost of living and D.S.D... deduct it from monthly allowance.

Humans on Welfare Society urges your Committee to bring to light the real concerns of the aged poor and to persuade your Government to implement immediate reforms in their programmes for the aged.

Human Rights: A Welfare Fallacy

Privacy, as well as freedom, is surely a fundamental human and democratic right... a right you will take great pains to safeguard... unless you happen to be poor and on welfare. The welfare recipient enjoys as much human rights as a jailed convict. In some cases, even less. The invasion of privacy by Welfare Officers was well exemplified in the Canadian Civil Liberties Association brief presented to your Committee. (32:31) Here, in Alberta, we could cite affidavits of at least twenty cases of such flagrant violation of human rights. We therefore reiterate the C.C.L.A.'s General Council, Alan Borovoy's recommendation that the payment of a welfare allowance will not enable Welfare Officers without a proper warrant to compel access to the homes of welfare recipients.

We also advocate Mr. Borovoy's other recommendations for improvements (32:36, Part D); and hope your committee will take initiative in pressing for reforms in welfare programmes, where human rights are a fallacy!

Municipal, Provincial, Federal Welfare Programmes! Who is the Ultimate Authority?

The Right Honourable John Munro, Minister of National Health and Welfare not too long ago told the poor to get organized... and to fight for our rights. Then he went into hiding and left it to our own decision who we would approach to force changes in the system. When we go to the City, we are told the Province is responsible for welfare programmes. When we go to the Province, they say it's the Federal and the Federal simply at your back, turn you around and send you back to the Province or City. Citizens welfare groups are here to stay. The buck passing must stop. Information on existing welfare programmes must be made available to us in clear, concise terms along with our participation in plans for future programmes. The

Canada Assistance Act must be clearly defined. Administrative Costs of welfare programmes must also be clearly stated. Grants to the Province under the Canada Assistance Act should be publicized and checked to insure they are not used by the Provinces for Non-Welfare purposes. Right now, monies under that Act, are finding the building of bridges—structural steel ones, not the kind that closes the gap of communications.

Summary of Recommendations and Conclusion

The Humans On Welfare Society respectfully urges the Special Senate Committee On Poverty to recommend the following:

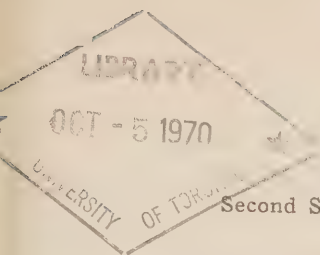
- (1) A Guaranteed Annual Income
- (2) Guaranteed Employment through a major overhaul of Canada ManPower Services.
- (3) Be it a provision of the Canada Assistance Act that no Government Federal or Provincial be allowed to administer a welfare voucher system.
- (4) A system of store-front law offices be set-up to provide easily accessible legal aid as soon as possible; that a study in the feasibility of a legal-care programme be undertaken.
- (5) A strengthening on the enforcement of child maintenance.
- (6) Public Housing must be contained to the purchase of single, separate dwellings—and that opportunities and assistance be given welfare recipients to purchase their own home.
- (7) That the elderly poor be consulted as to their needs and involved in decision-making.
- (8) That provisions be enacted under Canada Assistance Act to ensure equal justice and protect the Human Rights of welfare recipients.
- (9) That the Canada Assistance Act be clearly defined along with welfare administrative costs.

Within the context of our submission, we are not able to deal adequately with all the disparities of welfare and poverty or project all our concerns or suggested changes in a system we did not create but which created us, the no longer helpless poor.

Respectfully Submitted.

July 21st, 1970.

John McNamara, Executive Director, Humans On Welfare Society.



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament
1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA
PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON
POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 58

WEDNESDAY, JULY 22, 1970

WITNESSES:

Yukon Family Counselling Service. Child Care Centre Society. Mayo
Branch, Yukon Social Service Society.

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for the names of the witnesses
who were heard by the Committee.)

APPENDIX:

- "A"—Brief submitted by the Yukon Family Counselling Service.
"B"—Brief submitted by the Child Care Centre Society.
"C"—Brief submitted by the Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social
Service Society.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

“With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The questions being put on the motion, it was—

Resolved in the affirmative.”

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

Whitehorse, WEDNESDAY, July 22, 1970.
Elk's Hall.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met his day at 2.00 p.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (Chairman); Carter, Eudes, Fergusson, Fournier (Madawaska-Restigouche), Hastings, Inman, McGrand, Pearson and Quart. (10)

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrator Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

YUKON FAMILY COUNSELLING SERVICE:

Mr. James R. Whitford, Director;
Mrs. M. P. Phillips;
Mr. Garth Graham;
The Rev. Oscar Pauwels;
Miss R. Parker;
Mrs. G. Lundy.

CHILD CARE CENTRE SOCIETY:

Mr. P. M. Kehoe;
Mrs. P. M. Kehoe;
Mr. Norman S. Chamberlist, Member, Yukon Territory Council.

At 4.00 p.m. the Committee adjourned until 7.30 p.m.

At 7.30 p.m. the Committee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (Chairman); Carter, Eudes, Fergusson, Fournier (Madawaska-Restigouche), Hastings, Inman, McGrand, Pearson and Quart. (10)

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

MAYO BRANCH, YUKON SOCIAL SERVICE SOCIETY:

Dr. J. G. Clark;
Mr. D. R. Baker;
Mr. James R. Whitford;
Miss R. Parker.

FROM THE FLOOR:

Mr. I. A. Jones, Probation Officer.

The briefs listed hereunder were ordered to be printed as appendices to these Minutes.

"A"—Brief submitted by the Yukon Family Counselling Service;

"B"—Brief submitted by the Child Care Centre Society;

"C"—Brief submitted by the Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service Society.

At 9.05 p.m. the Committee adjourned until Thursday, July 23, 1970, at 8.45 a.m.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

Whitehorse, July 22, 1970.

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 2 p.m.

Senator David A. Croll (*Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Chairman: I will call to order the meeting of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty. I think I should make clear to all who are present that no one sent us here. We came here because we wanted to; not that we have been charged with the responsibility of finding solutions to the problem of poverty. We have been studying it for about a year and a half. We are interested and we are concerned with anything that affects Canadians in poverty, and you are Canadians and some of you are in poverty. At least, so we have heard, and from reading the briefs I gather that the rumour is right.

We are not concerned with any particular kind of poverty. We are, rather, searching to find out what kinds of poverty exist. We have come across economic poverty, and we have come across cultural environment inherited poverty. We recently have seen some poverty due to isolation and neglect and loneliness.

In any event, what I am saying to all of you on behalf of my colleagues and myself is that there is a community of poverty in Canada and you are a part of it. You are at the outposts for the present, guardians of our great wealth and heritage. This land has become rich. Persons did, but people did not, so we have a great problem and we are here to listen to you and to communicate with one another.

I am chairman of the committee, and on my left is Senator Fournier from New Brunswick, vice-chairman. And then Senator Inman from Prince Edward Island and Senator Fergusson from New Brunswick; Senator McGrand from New Brunswick and Senator Raymond Eudes from Quebec.

On my right is Senator Quart from Quebec, Senator Pearson from Saskatchewan, Senator Carter from Newfoundland and Senator Hast-ings from Alberta.

You may have noticed that there are three from New Brunswick on our committee. They are deeply concerned and are of very great help. They want to do something about poverty because they know as much about it as all the rest of us do.

We have had an opportunity to see the briefs. We just got in this morning, but I have read through them, as have some of my colleagues.

I have sitting on my right Mr. James Whitford, who is appearing on behalf of the Yukon Family Counselling Service. I have read his brief, and what is intriguing and interesting is that it appears in both English and French. Now, they did not do as well in Edmonton or Calgary where they had further opportunity, or anywhere else. I want to particularly compliment you, sir, on the courtesy that you paid us in having this brief in both languages. On our committee we have three or four who are expert in French, and the rest of us stumble along.

Mr. James R. Whitford (*Executive Director, Yukon Family Counselling Service*): I wish I could say I translated it myself.

The Chairman: I have indicated to you what the rules are, and you go ahead.

Mr. Whitford: Thank you, Mr. Chairman, honourable senators, ladies and gentlemen of the media and interested citizens; I suppose those of us who were busy preparing briefs and working on the arrangements which led up to today and tomorrow were hoping that the crowd would be too large for the hall. Perhaps that was hoping and wishing for too much. Perhaps what we have here is an example of poverty of perception.

Perhaps we as citizens have failed to perceive the opportunity which a visit of the Special Senate Committee has given to us to express our thoughts and our opinions about the role of government in Canada today, about the role of our institutions and our corporate structures and our role as citizens.

As I proceed in our exposition, you will see we are particularly concerned about the role of the citizen in the development of a viable, democratic process. First of all, I would like to highlight a few of the points of our brief which are, perhaps, important, the first of which has to do with the methodology which we use.

First of all, and I am sure many of you who are sitting here are quite aware of this because some of you helped us and some of you were among our volunteer interviewers and some of you were those who were interviewed, whose homes we visited and who helped to fill out questionnaires and supply the information. You know we had two questionnaires, one of which was for a broad general description (that is appendix A, by the way; I hope they are numbered A and B, but I am not sure). Questionnaire No. 1 at any rate was for broad distribution throughout the Territory.

We sent this questionnaire to eleven small communities, and we also utilized it here in Whitehorse itself. Questionnaire No. 2 was one which we utilized only in what I think we should describe as a relatively affluent suburb in the Whitehorse area. And we found out among other things, for example, that it really was relatively affluent in comparing on page 3 of our brief the incomes of the people who responded to Questionnaire No. 1 and Questionnaire No. 2, and we find that there was no one out of the Questionnaire No. 2—I shouldn't say there was no one—there was twenty-some per cent of those who responded to Questionnaire No. 2 who had less than \$10,000 for a year's income; 74 per cent had in excess of that amount. Whereas in Questionnaire No. 1, eight-some per cent had less than \$10,000 per year, so there were two quite distinct samples.

We hope to gain most of our information from Questionnaire No. 1, but we wanted Questionnaire No. 2 for two specific reasons: one was to provide a comparative base to those who responded to Questionnaire No. 1; and, secondly, we also hope to get from Questionnaire No. 2 (that is the relatively affluent group) some of their ideas and some of their concepts about poverty and people in poverty, and this we have done.

We did not start out with a definition of poverty. We thought that that might bias our findings. We decided we would define poverty after we gathered our information, and in doing so perhaps we will not have satisfied some of your committee, sir, or some of the

public because we did not come out with a hard statistic and say below X number of dollars constitutes living in poverty. It didn't seem to us to be a very real way of looking at poverty.

One of the things which struck us most forcibly about poverty was the relationship between those in poverty and our institutions, whether they be governmental or non-governmental institutions. In relating to governmental institutions, the poor, of course, relate because they want and expect and need help; i.e., services, health, education, welfare, and so on. And very, very often it seems from our surveys and from the conversations which went on in homes around the Territory, that there was a gap between the service delivery agency on the one hand and the people who needed the services on the other. It seemed to be difficult for those two to get together very often. And I think that is a major finding. I think that is an extremely significant thing that the people who need help cannot always find help.

Now this may occur for a couple of reasons. It may occur because of some fault, some lack within the people themselves, and let us not rule out the possibility that it also may reflect some fault or some lack in the service delivery agency.

Housing: it is a problem everywhere, and on page 4 of the brief housing is a problem everywhere in the country and it is a problem here. It is a problem here for every economic level. We have a dramatic shortage of housing at whatever qualitative level. For the economically poor the problem of housing of course is compounded. They do not have the same ease or the same opportunities for either moving out or moving into new housing units as they are completed. And in addition to the lack of housing, there is the problem of the services, the housing services, and we find, for example, that only 37 per cent of those who answered the Questionnaire No. 1 own their own homes, whereas among those who responded to Questionnaire No. 2 (that is the relatively affluent suburb) 50 per cent own their own homes.

Now, that 50 per cent of course may seem to be an abnormally low figure until you remember that in that suburb there are a large number of government people living, and they are provided with rental accommodation. So they do not have the same pressure to acquire housing. But the mere lack of housing really does not spell out clearly

enough, dramatically enough, the real problems of housing.

The problem of improper lighting, the problem of improper space, the problem of improper heating, the problem of lack of sewer and water, and even lack of finish on the house, and we wanted it underlined, and I am quoting from the brief here:

One thing which every home does in our materialistic society is to act as a status symbol and for many poor people their homes proclaim loudly their status: the lowest.

And it is this fact which I think is most the concern to us about the poverty syndrome in the Yukon, particularly as it relates to housing.

It was interesting when we asked people about the causes of poverty. Fifty-one per cent of those who responded to this question said that education was the primary cause of poverty, and perhaps we should not have used the word "education" because many people think of formal education. But we are thinking here in terms of that formal type of education plus training, school training, and the kinds of skill development which one gets and certainly I think that here we have an accurate identification of a major problem area.

Twenty per cent of the people believe that poverty is due to lack of initiative on the part of the individual, and in breaking down that 20 per cent there were many smaller categories.

People believe, for example, that people were lazy or shiftless or drank too much, et cetera, et cetera. We subsumed all of these under the initiative of the individual.

The rest believe that poverty is due to a variety of causes such as lack of employment opportunities, high cost of living—and I might just interpolate here for the moment that a brief which the Whitehorse Chamber of Commerce sent to the Royal Commission on Taxation pointed out that a man earning \$10,000 in Southern Canada would have to earn \$14,000 in the Yukon to maintain the same standard of living. The Yukon Family Counselling Service is not responsible for that statistic. We just quote it.

Only 7 per cent of those people we spoke to indicated that they perceive poverty in more complex circumstances which might require a global approach for its eradication, and I think that in itself is part of the problem of

poverty, that very often people will say poverty is lack of money; all you need to do is pour money into the top and it will trickle down and the whole standard of living will float on this fiscal input. Even the Economic Council of Canada in their fifth annual report indicated that this does not always work.

When people were asked on the questionnaires which governmental or non-governmental program actually contributed to the creation or continuance of poverty in the Yukon, 35 per cent stated that existing welfare policies and priorities were to blame.

When we asked for solutions to the problem, 50 per cent said that a broad economic development in the Yukon, resource development, would eradicate poverty. Thirty-five per cent reacted favourably to the concept of the guaranteed annual income, and we did not want to get into the hassle should it be negative income tax or what the modus operandi might be.

The Chairman: Or demi-grant.

Mr. Whitford: Or demi-grant; right.

Thirty-five per cent were in favour of the concept of guaranteed annual income of some sort; 44 per cent were opposed about it. The rest were "I don't know."

Our definition of poverty will tell you a good deal about our mental set on the problem at this time. We are on page 7 now where we say:

Poverty is a social sickness in the relationship between peoples and between people and institutions which results in lack of, or loss of, social and economic opportunities for a significant minority of our population.

It follows from the above definition that the solution to the so-called poverty problem does not rest with labelling one group as poor and doing unto them. Really, if our definition of poverty is correct, if it really is a relationship problem, then it would appear to us you must take the whole community and work with the whole community in the solution of this sick relationship.

I hope that during the question period we will get perhaps to the nature of that relationship a bit. What really we want to do in our brief is to impress upon everyone who will listen that we believe that poverty is not a single factor phenomenon, but it is a syndrome just like a mental illness, for example, usually is caused by many factors.

We believe that poverty is also caused by many factors, and cannot be solved by the simple application of money or any of the other social band-aids which are handed out so easily.

Money, of course, is part of it, and in all probability we are not going to solve the poverty problem unless there is a better income for people. But health, housing, education, socialization, services, and the question of this social relationship: all of these things are aspects of the poverty syndrome which must be attacked.

I might add at this point among our Indian and Metis people they have all of these same problems that other poor people have, but they are complicated by the fact of a cultural differentiation, sometimes a linguistic differentiation, and sometimes by overt racial discrimination.

The moral of our story here is that poverty is a global problem, and it is going to require a global approach before we can solve that problem.

Now, having that we do not want to say in the past we have not accomplished anything because that is obviously false, and it obviously denies the historical fact that, let us say, a hundred years ago poverty was a fact for the majority of our population, whereas today poverty is a fact for a minority. We have done much. The economic process has enabled us to accomplish much.

Medical discovery has done much to help us overcome some of these factors.

You know there are many things which have helped us to overcome poverty to a large degree in our society, but there are 20 per cent of our people in Canada and there are more than 20 per cent of our people in the Yukon who are poor by our definition in 1970, and for us this is not an acceptable fact of life for Canadians.

If I might talk just for a second in conclusion about the role of governments because we feel that by the very nature of the poverty problem and the poverty syndrome in Canada today, that the federal government must have a major initiating role.

Justice Brandeis of the United States Supreme Court some time in the thirties made the comment, and I am quoting here:

Government is the potent, the omnipresent teacher. For good or ill it teaches the whole people by its example.

Our governments in the past have done their share in teaching Indians, for example, to distrust the white man and his institutions. Our governments have done their share in teaching dependence. Our governments have done their share in teaching the poor where they fit in our social scale; i.e., at the bottom. But we feel that it is now time for governments to teach justice and freedom and the meaning of citizenship involvement in the democratic process.

One of the ways they can do this—I don't know how many of you have read Peter Townsend's new book, "Up The Organization," but he made the statement there that it is good management practice for as many decisions as possible to be made as low down on the management hierarchy as possible. This may also be true for governments.

Our governments today it would seem to me are so absorbed with national and regional planning and with co-ordination as a means of effecting better service, that they overlook or lose sight of the local needs in the seventies.

If you want to drive to 1984 it seems the best way to do it would be to drive in a Continental car with national licence plates on it, but if you want to drive to a democratic Canada then the place to start is by going to the people and asking them for directions.

Thank you, Mr. Chairman.

The Chairman: Thank you. There may be some questions from the floor but they will have to wait until after the senators have finished questioning.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Whitford, I want to thank you for un complet francais. We are very thankful for that. We would like to ask a couple of questions. The first is, how much area did you cover with your questionnaires?

Mr. Whitford: Geographically?

Senator Fournier: Yes.

Mr. Whitford: We covered Whitehorse and eleven small communities throughout the whole of the Yukon Territory.

Senator Fournier: Any between communities?

Mr. Whitford: We didn't get to any non-town rural assessments.

Senator Fournier: There is one thing in your brief that seems to strike me anyway:

a new question or a new approach, and this is on page 6, and I will read it right from your brief:

In answer to the question 'How much money is required to live comfortably in Yukon?' the average response was nearly nine thousand dollars per annum and the modal response was ten thousand dollars.

How do you arrive at these figures? Are you going to give us a break-down on that?

Mr. Whitford: Yes. In our two questionnaires we asked this question on both questionnaires, and the reason we asked this was to see what the two different groups—how the two different groups would respond to it. Now the response which we have here is the response from Questionnaire No. 2.

The Chairman: The affluent?

Mr. Whitford: The affluent community. In answer to the question on Questionnaire No. 1, which was the one with broad general distribution, we found that almost inevitably people would say that to be comfortable they just needed maybe another thousand dollars or maybe another few hundred dollars a month so that I think the extreme example we had was somebody was earning \$125 a month and they thought that if they were earning \$250 a month, that that would be very comfortable, whereas someone who was already earning eight or nine thousand thought that if they were only earning nine or ten thousand dollars they would be very comfortable.

Senator Fournier: I accept that, but that does not answer my question. I would like to have a break-down. What do you charge for food, for clothing and taxes and so on? You mentioned that it takes \$14,000 to live in Whitehorse compared to the...

Mr. Whitford: Compared to the \$10,000.

Senator Fournier: For the same type of living you do in another part of Canada for \$10,000. How do you arrive at that?

Mr. Whitford: We did not arrive at that. Whitehorse Chamber of Commerce arrived at that figure and we just quoted it.

Senator Fournier: But this is not fair to us. This is a figure we want to put in our records. You want to be able to explain that a little bit because it seems to be odd figures.

Mr. Whitford: I agree with you. Having lived here for a while I was not surprised at the figures, but I am sorry, I cannot give you a break-down.

Senator Fournier: Let us forget figures for the moment. Is the cost of living in Whitehorse higher than it would be in Edmonton or Calgary or Toronto or Fredericton, New Brunswick, or St. John's, Newfoundland? Is the cost of living higher in general?

Mr. Whitford: I think that the consumers' association are going to respond to that tomorrow. Aside from that I could only answer personally, and I personally feel it is more expensive to live here. Our money seems to be going faster here as a family.

Senator Carter: What would a house cost here, a three-bedroom house, and what would you pay for rent of a three-bedroom house?

Mr. Whitford: I cannot answer that, but I am sure there are people in the audience that can answer it.

The Chairman: Mrs. Burns has a brief. I don't know whether she is in the audience or not.

Mrs. Phillips: I am not Mrs. Burns, but I am one of the members who helped make up the brief to be presented by the Consumers' Association. As yet there has been no statistics given for Yukon by the Dominion Bureau of Statistics. They have not had a comprehensive survey of the cost of living in Yukon. They are in the process of doing a comparison of cost of living between Vancouver and Whitehorse.

The Chairman: That was not the question asked.

Senator Carter: What I asked was, could anybody tell us what a three-bedroom house, an ordinary three-bedroom house, would cost here if you had to buy it, or if you had to rent it what would you pay to rent it?

Mrs. Burns: A small three-bedroom house with an uncompleted basement would cost, oh, \$30,000 and upwards. Now, that is in Riverdale. If you get in another area I am not too sure.

Mr. Garth Graham: I looked at four in Riverdale last week and they ranged from \$26,000 to \$29,000 for a three-bedroom house with basement.

Senator Carter: And the rental for those houses?

Mr. Graham: I am sorry; I don't know what the rental would be.

Father Oscar Pauwels: With regard to a three-bedroom house, the rent is \$235, furnished.

Senator Fournier: I am still not quite satisfied with the answers, and I give you credit that the answer is not your figures, but this request of \$10,000 to have a comfortable living seems to be a little bit high.

The Chairman: How many in the family? What were you talking about?

Mr. Whitford: What we did, in getting these figures, was to go into each home, and for every respondent we would say how much money do you feel you would require to live comfortably in Yukon, and they would say what are you talking about? Are you talking about a family of one, a family of four or a family of ten? We have not taken the statistics out to say that at such-and-such a family level the response was such-and-such.

The Chairman: Would you do one thing for us? The brief of the Chamber of Commerce, will you get it for us?

Mr. Whitford: Yes.

Senator Carter: Mr. Chairman, I would like to introduce my questioning by making an observation because there is something in the brief that I have just read that struck me very forcefully.

Now, two weeks ago Senator McGrand, Senator Hastings and myself were travelling along the northeastern part of our nation, the northern part of Newfoundland, and 200 miles along the north coast of Labrador, and we visited about ten communities. We received about seven or eight briefs, and we interviewed people. And in all of these briefs and in all of these interviews, they stressed factors relating to poverty both as causes of poverty and factors contributing to the alleviation of poverty as education and health services.

They also stressed their complaints about lack of information, difficulty of getting information from official sources, and the attitudes of government agencies and government representatives, and here we are on the extreme, out in the northwest part of the

continent, and we get briefs stressing exactly the same identical things although they are a whole nation apart.

I am sure my two colleagues who were with me on that trip will be impressed with the similarity, as I was. The same points were made.

Now, you had difficulty in getting information about illegitimate children and about health facilities, but the thing that shocked me most in this brief (which is something we did not encounter; or I don't know if we have encountered it anywhere) is that foster parents who have a white child and an Indian child have got to take the white child to the medical clinic and have got to take the Indian child somewhere else.

How on earth can enlightened people, and the people operating these facilities must be educated and enlightened people, how on earth in this age can that sort of thing happen is beyond me. I wonder if someone could throw some light on it?

The Chairman: Don't look at the chairman.

Senator Carter: What is the reason for it?

Mr. Whitford: You are asking me?

Senator Carter: Why is this?

Mr. Whitford: God knows why this is. The rationale is that the medical records are in one place. That is, the medical records for Indians. Indians and Indian children are at one place. Therefore they are simply referred to that place.

Senator Carter: Why are they in that place? Why can't they have them all together?

Mr. Whitford: Well, I would even ask the question when I go to the medical clinic they start a brand-new record. They don't say, "Where is your old record?"

It seems to me and the reason this was included in the brief is that if we are going to be dealing with poor people and if we are going to be dealing particularly with Indian and Metis people in our society, we have to stop treating people differently. We have to provide the same kind of services in the same way out of the same door for all of our citizens.

Senator Carter: Where do you stand here with respect to Medicare? You are in a Territory, aren't you?

Mr. Whitford: That is right.

Senator Carter: Do you have a Medicare agreement? Does the Medicare Plan apply in the Yukon Territory?

Mr. Whitford: Not yet. It is coming in this fall, question mark. Not yet.

Senator Carter: Who runs these medical facilities here?

Mr. Whitford: Department of National Health and Welfare.

Senator Carter: They are federal?

Mr. Whitford: Federal facilities.

Senator Pearson: Both hospital and the clinic?

Mr. Whitford: Yes. No, I am sorry. The hospital and the nursing station and so on are from National Health and Welfare. The medical clinic which is referred to here is a private medical clinic.

Senator Carter: Why do the Indians not go to the private clinic?

Mr. Whitford: They don't. They go to the other.

The Chairman: It is the old theory of war-rants, and they continue to carry it on. It is foreign to you, but there it is. As wards of the government it has still been carried on in that concept.

Senator Carter: I thought we had got beyond that. I thought that era had passed.

Senator Pearson: I think this may be just peculiar to Yukon here because in Regina I know this is not so. I know a family who have Indian children and their own children, and they all go to the same clinic or the same place to get their treatment.

The Chairman: Senator, this is peculiar, but our job is to see that it does not remain peculiar to the Yukon that it stops immediately. That is the point.

Senator Quart: I just have a few questions and the reason why is because my question has been asked by Senator Carter. What have you done about it? Have you sent letters to Ottawa? Have you been in touch? What has been done about it?

The Chairman: Naturally it is the question, but perhaps not to him. He is a citizen like you and I.

Senator Quart: You represent an agency or whatever. He is counselling.

The Chairman: No. He is here, one of a voluntary group.

Senator Quart: If they accept a situation without doing anything about it, well, then, blame the people here.

The Chairman: No. No.

Senator Pearson: They have protested.

Senator Carter: The hospital facilities and nursing facilities are federal?

Mr. Whitford: Federal.

Senator Carter: This is where the Indian child must go?

Mr. Whitford: That is right.

Senator Carter: In addition to that who operates other facilities?

Mr. Whitford: Private group.

Senator Carter: They are a private practice and they have a general clinic?

Mr. Whitford: Yes.

Senator Carter: For the whole area; for the whole city?

Mr. Whitford: For the whole city. Anyone can go there, of course.

Senator Quart: Is it subsidized?

Mr. Whitford: No. I have no idea.

From the Floor: There are two clinics.

The Chairman: But he is talking about it being private.

Senator Carter: Anyway, that is something that can be corrected pretty fast, or should be.

Coming to education, you gave a broad definition of education. You went beyond academic and included training. What facilities do you have here? If your children want to go to take a course in mechanics or welding or electrician, can they get it here? How far away would they have to go to get it?

Mr. Whitford: We have quite a good vocational and technical training school here in Whitehorse. I can't say to what degree they will carry students, you know, in the final points of heavy-duty mechanical equipment. I shouldn't say "heavy-duty," but in pressure

welding or anything of that sort I don't know, but we do have a vocational training school here. It has very good equipment. Our high schools are well equipped, and so on.

Senator Fournier: What about employment after he graduates from the vocational school?

Mr. Whitford: I don't really know. I do know that 42 per cent of the people who responded to Questionnaire No. 1 were unemployed at the time that the survey was taken.

Senator Fournier: Were these graduated from the school?

Mr. Whitford: No, this would be a broad group.

Senator Carter: But apparently the native people, the Metis and Indian, for some reason or other their educational standards are lower. Is that it? That is what I got from your brief.

Mr. Whitford: That is correct.

Senator Carter: Why is that? Don't they have access to the same school?

Mr. Whitford: Yes.

Senator Carter: The same facilities?

Mr. Whitford: Yes, but access is not enough.

Senator Carter: What is the difference? What is the determining factor that keeps their educational standards lower?

Mr. Whitford: I think that my answer to that can apply to Indian and Metis people almost in any part of this country, and that is even though access is there to schools and to services, there is (a) a cultural difference which means they do not see the service in the same light, perhaps, that non-Indian people do; and, secondly, the services are created in the form and under the rules and regulations of "white man's institutions," and that in itself may be a barrier.

The motivation for education in the formal sense or the broader sense is not the same. Partially because many young Indian people who go through school come out the other end and feel, rightly or wrongly, that they are going to be discriminated against, that they have been discriminated against, that jobs are not open with the same facility as for non-Indian. In other words, it is the motivation.

The Chairman: May I suggest, Senator Carter, the Yukon Native Brotherhood covers it like a tent? We will have it tomorrow.

Senator Pearson: Mr. Whitford, can you tell me what kind of work there is in Whitehorse or district for people who are not government-employed, either the Indian or Metis or those who are not native people? What type of employment have we got in this area?

Mr. Whitford: There is a fair amount of work in the primary extractive industries, mining, and so on.

The Chairman: What kind of mining?

Mr. Whitford: Copper mining right here in town. Lead, silver, around the Territories.

The Chairman: Looking for gold?

Mr. Whitford: Yes. You get your pan out.

Senator Fournier: Gold has been taken away.

Mr. Whitford: In the Whitehorse area itself there is a good deal of employment in the service area which might relate, you know, to the secondary services to people, to tourists, and so on, whether it has to do with motels or food delivery or whatever. Entertainment and so on.

Senator Pearson: Is there lumber or anything like that?

Mr. Whitford: Yes. There is on a limited scale.

Senator Pearson: Then what kind of work do the Indian and Metis get that would pay anything like \$5,000 or \$7,500 a year?

Mr. Whitford: Some jobs in mining. Some jobs, mining for example, are very well paid. Some jobs in highway maintenance; construction. Construction jobs and so on.

Senator Carter: That would be working in steady employment?

Senator Pearson: I was just going to ask the question. Is the work for the Indian and Metis both seasonal, or outside of mining—mining I am sure is continuous; it is not seasonal.

Mr. Whitford: I think that the gentlemen of the Native Brotherhood will answer that question tomorrow, but by and large I think employment is seasonal, although there are jobs and there are native people who are

working full-time the year round with the industries such as Whitepath, at the hospitals and so on.

Senator Pearson: In the outlying area, say, twenty-five, thirty miles from Whitehorse, can an Indian get a job that will be worth \$7,500 a year? That is, outside the mines?

Mr. Whitford: Some, but according to our statistics very, very few do it.

Senator Pearson: There is no work for anybody I suppose.

Mr. Whitford: Well, that is a bit of a problem, yes.

The Chairman: I think that the Mayo group covers that pretty well. They have got some statistics in there that are pretty deadly.

Senator Pearson: In education, what arrangements are being made to have Indian teachers?

Mr. Whitford: For all practical purposes no special arrangements to have Indian teachers. There are Indian teachers in the Territory. There are three or four perhaps in the Whitehorse area that I know of. There is no special attempt either to utilize Indian teachers or to utilize the Indian language as the language of instruction which I think would be a very valuable thing to do in some areas.

Senator Pearson: It seems to me this is one of the problems that the Indian runs against, having to go to a white man's school, especially if a child has been away from school for a number of years and he is ten or eleven years old and he has to go to Grade 1 and mix in with white children who are probably in school at seven. They get quite embarrassed and get chased around and suchlike, and it seems to me that the Indian teacher is the answer to a great many of the problems of the Indians.

Mr. Whitford: Yes. Although if I may express a personal opinion, I would rather see Indian teachers teaching white children more than Indian children. I think it would do the white children a lot of good.

Senator Inman: Well, Mr. Chairman, I would like to congratulate Mr. Whitford for his very informative and excellent brief which holds a lot of information. There are a couple of questions I would like to ask. What would you consider the greatest one need for

the Yukon to improve the condition of the underprivileged, or two things? What do you consider the greatest need?

Mr. Whitford: Well, you know I am not going to answer your question in the way you want it. I think the greatest need which we have to solve the poverty problem in the Yukon or anywhere else is to decide we are going to solve the poverty problem, period.

We have not got the moral commitment to solve the poverty problem. We have the money. We have the know-how. We have political stability. We have the personnel. We do not have a moral commitment to solve the poverty problem.

Senator Inman: Along with that, would you consider that we should involve the people themselves, too?

Mr. Whitford: Oh, yes. Beautiful. Wonderful. Number one.

Senator Inman: Now the other question: are there any opportunities for mothers to work here? I am not advocating that mothers would go to work, but if the need were there, what opportunities would there be?

Mr. Whitford: There is a considerable amount of opportunity for such women to work, and we do have the Child Care Centre here. As a matter of fact, they will be presenting their brief as soon as we are finished here. So (a) there is opportunity to work, and (b) there is that supportive service to help them to work.

Senator Inman: Do you know how many working mothers there are in this area?

Mr. Whitford: I cannot tell you statistically. The answer is, yes, but I cannot tell you statistically how many.

Senator Inman: Now speaking of housing, I suppose there is some difficulty here as we have heard in other places. Do you find that landlords take any advantage of underprivileged people?

Mr. Whitford: Oh, yes. We have a couple of areas here which I suppose most towns have them, particularly most northern towns, which are deprived sections of the community. Most of the houses in those deprived sections belong to people who live in the not-so-deprived sections. I was not speaking of The Village; I was speaking of some of the other areas.

Senator Inman: Do you find that it is hard to get these landlords to repair those houses? Do people have to complain that they need repairs?

Mr. Whitford: In talking to the people living in those houses, they complained about ever even seeing the landlord except when it was time to pay the rent.

Senator McGrand: Now the Yukon is a large territory, about 600 miles I imagine from north to south, and half the population of the Yukon is in this town of Whitehorse.

Mr. Whitford: Yes.

Senator McGrand: And the rest of it, you have got Whitehorse, you have got Squall Village or community of Mayo, Dawson and one or two places beyond, and the rest of it is barren tundra.

From the floor: No. No. No.

Senator McGrand: I want to know something about it. To me it is barren tundra.

The Chairman: Just a minute.

Senator McGrand: Let me finish and let me ask the question.

The Chairman: I was not getting to that question.

Senator McGrand: This is my question: What opportunity is there for the people to get occupation except in these communities that I have mentioned? Is there any other opportunity for them except you have a little emerging oil fields perhaps in the north, but it is limited to these areas. Isn't that about right?

Mr. Whitford: Not just to the areas you have mentioned, but by and large you are correct. There are a small number of growth areas in the Territory.

Senator McGrand: It will come eventually perhaps.

The Chairman: Your question is clear, but the population is what I was getting at. There are 22,000 people in the Yukon, and eleven thousand are in Whitehorse. Now that was the thing for the record. Now go ahead.

Senator McGrand: Going back to this question of the Indian and the medical clinic, how many physicians are practising in Whitehorse?

Mr. Whitford: There is a whole new batch that just arrived.

Senator McGrand: You have a number?

Mr. Whitford: Yes.

Senator McGrand: And they practise mostly in one or two areas, in one or two buildings and those are private clinics?

Mr. Whitford: That is right.

Senator McGrand: Now if an Indian with plenty of money in his pocket wanted to engage one of these doctors in the medical clinic, and went in and engaged him as a private physician, he could go in and get care there?

Mr. Whitford: There have been instances where that has happened, yes.

Senator McGrand: Now what I am coming at is this: this system has grown up of giving the Indian care at institutions that have been provided for that purpose. What I want to know is, does the Indian that is compelled to go to the out-patient department get adequate care?

Mr. Whitford: Yes, he does. He gets very good care there.

Senator McGrand: All right. Now back to the employment: is he discriminated against when he seeks employment in certain areas? In Whitehorse, Mayo and so on. Is he discriminated against when he asks for employment in the mines or any other place where employment is general? Is there discrimination? How many work there, is what I want to know.

Mr. Whitford: I don't know how many work in the mines or in any specific industry in any of these communities. Could I say in response to your question that you asked a blanket type of question to which the answer is yes and no because the act of discrimination is something that you do to me and so I could say that in all the large enterprises over a period of, let us say, three years, that there is almost infallibly going to be instances of discrimination occurring because the employment official, that personnel officer whoever he might be this particular week does not like the look of that Indian that applies for that particular job and says, you know, get lost; we are hiring somebody else.

Senator McGrand: Well, I understand that the government made provisions—some government, federal, provincial, local or some government—that a certain percentage of Indians were to be hired on certain jobs. Has that been carried out?

Mr. Whitford: I was going to say that has not occurred here. I believe there have been one or two contracts where that has occurred here. However, that kind of contract is exceedingly difficult to make effective. I don't know if you know of the experience, for example, at Thompson, Manitoba, or Fort McMurray in Northern Alberta.

Senator McGrand: That is what I want to know about because I read in the Weekend an article and it shows an Eskimo driving a locomotive and the native people emerging and he is enjoying his affluence, and I want to know whether this is true or just an exaggeration.

Mr. Whitford: It is absolutely true at the time the picture was taken.

Senator Fournier: He is one in two hundred thousand.

Senator McGrand: Now I have one more question, and I want to go back to the question I asked first about the remark that I considered most of the area was rather a barren tundra and someone disagreed with me. This is not my first trip to the Yukon, and I travelled by bus from here to Dawson and I enquired everywhere I went, and I have read two research jobs done on Yukon and one says there is no agricultural possibility here and the other one says that there are areas in the Yukon with agricultural possibilities. Lumbering is restricted to certain areas.

Now, somebody seems to have the answer and I would like to know. We won't be going on. We will just be in Whitehorse. Can someone here tell me something about the potential of this vast Territory that I refer to as tundra?

The Chairman: We will have that.

Senator McGrand: I want to get that before leave.

The Chairman: You will get it before you leave because you will be here two days and tomorrow you will have the government brief which will give you all that information.

Senator McGrand: All right. I will be reminding you of it.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, like all the members of this committee I would like to say that I am pleased to have the opportunity to be here and to meet people in this area and hear about the problems firsthand from the

people who are living with them. It is quite different getting a report down in Ottawa to meeting the people who are actually dealing with these problems.

I would like to say to Mr. Whitford I am sure we are all very grateful for the tremendous amount of work that was done by the Yukon Family Counselling Service in preparing this survey, these two surveys, and getting the information that you have which I am sure is going to be most useful to us.

We really don't know what the Yukon Family Counselling Service is. Maybe some of us do, but not all, and I wonder if Mr. Whitford would explain a little bit about it. I gather it is a private agency; non-government. Does it have any subsidy at all? Is there just one branch or are there various ones in different places, and how many members make up the board of directors, or whatever you do have, and how many are on the staff? Who are your clients? Are they mostly native peoples or are they other people? There must be poor people in this area who are not the natives.

I wonder if you would just give us a little of that information.

Mr. Whitford: The Yukon Family Counselling Service is an new and small and as yet viable private organization. We receive a grant from the Department of Social Welfare. Perhaps I should say from the Territorial Government through the Department of Social Welfare, and we have one branch here in Whitehorse. I shouldn't say one branch. We have one office here in Whitehorse. We have two on the staff: my secretary over there and myself. And we have a board of twenty-one.

We have also I am pleased to report received a grant from Donar Canadian Foundation in Toronto to help us develop branch offices in some of the other communities around the Territory. And that will be one of our major projects for the coming fiscal year.

Senator Fergusson: Could I ask you if there are any people on that board of twenty-one who are in the poverty area, or are they all affluent people?

Mr. Whitford: I think this year they are all non-poor.

Senator Fergusson: The reason I mention this, is that more and more there is getting to be a policy adopted by many organizations that some of the people who are actually poor and need services are being put on these boards to give advice. Are you considering that?

Mr. Whitford: Well, you may be interested to know that we receive very, very few petitions for help from the group that we might call poor; but the great majority of our clients are quite well-to-do financially.

Senator Fergusson: Oh, I see.

Mr. Whitford: Maybe we should charge for it.

Senator Fergusson: What service do you give them?

Mr. Whitford: Family counselling, parent-child counselling, divorce counselling, premarital counselling; you know, the whole range of family counselling services.

Senator Fergusson: I understand what family counselling is. I know other organizations that do it, but I was under the impression a great deal of your service was given to the poor people.

Mr. Whitford: No. Very few. Most of the poor people go to the Department of Social Welfare.

Senator Fergusson: I have one other thing I would like to ask about, and it refers to page 7 of your brief when you say poverty is a social sickness, and you touched on this in speaking to Senator Inman. I think you said to Senator Inman that we do not have a moral commitment to solve the poverty problem.

Have you any suggestions how we can acquire this moral commitment or what more we can do to make affluent people realize that they owe something to the poorer people?

Mr. Whitford: Well, I think that your work with the Senate Committee is the very first thing. I hope that the work of the committee becomes in fact a broadly educational tool to do precisely what we are talking about here.

Aside from that, I would suggest that here is really only one strongly motivating force practically speaking for most people, and that is called self-interest, and if people in the comfortable part of our society will sit down and figure out (somebody else will have to do this for them)—sit down and figure out how much it costs the nation in direct costs and in terms of lost productivity, et cetera, to maintain 20 per cent of our population in poverty, then they might be motivated to help a little bit.

Senator Fergusson: That is a good approach.

Mr. Whitford: I might say that a couple of years ago I was working in a province south of here in the prairies, and we went to a small, isolated native community and we totalled up the costs to the taxpayer of maintaining this community.

There were fourteen hundred people in the community. They had schools. They had police. They had forestry people. They had Indian Affairs, health services, all in this little community.

When we totalled up the costs of maintaining all of these services for the fiscal year 1966-67 I think it was, it came to 2.2 million dollars for each year.

Now, on the credit side of the balance sheet you take out things like income tax, and considering there were only 75 people out of fourteen hundred working, the income tax was relatively small. It was a timber area so you count the stumpage costs, the revenue from stumpage, and revenue from fisheries, et cetera, et cetera. And when you add all this up, and by a rough estimate it came out to less than \$200,000 in revenue; in returns.

But of course we are not running a factory else we should close it down and find out what is wrong with the community. So we look to the social benefits then to see if our two-million-dollar investment is really worth while, and we find in this native community the part we have on the social side is that we are developing a population of children, for example, who have low educational attainment, people in poor housing with unsanitary surroundings, people who have a high infant mortality, and high maternal mortality and high TB incidence; all these indices of social dislocation show up greatly there.

And in addition we have fourteen hundred Indian people who are learning to hate the white man, and hate Canada and hate our institutions. Now I think it is time we close down that factory and find out what we are doing in communities like that all across the country.

The Chairman: Of course, you remember the Economic report. They suggested the cost was \$4 billion annually.

Mr. Whitford: Right.

The Chairman: That was their suggestion without being too definite.

Senator Quart: In connection with your counselling service, and I am sure you are doing a valuable job in counselling, do you charge a fee?

Mr. Whitford: We have a sliding-scale fee which is very nominal. We also give our volunteer counsellors freedom to waive them. We don't want money to be a factor.

Senator Quart: Well, somebody said "Oh." I suppose it is always a factor. You can't run anything on nothing, but you have been receiving donations.

Have you any volunteers?

Mr. Whitford: Volunteer counsellors.

Senator Quart: Have you any women's groups' volunteers working with you like homemakers or to teach budgeting to the poor, or cooking or sewing, or anything of this type?

Mr. Whitford: No. We have not done any of that.

Senator Quart: Do you know if any groups exist in this area, this type of volunteer organization?

Mr. Whitford: Not to my knowledge. Not that become directly involved in that kind of thing.

Senator Quart: I believe you have the Victorian Order of Nurses here, have you not?

Mr. Whitford: No. I don't believe we do.

From the floor: No. No.

The Chairman: We are running short, but I have Senator Fournier, Senator McGrand and Senator Carter.

Senator Fournier: No. I think, Mr. Chairman, we expect too much out of the first brief and many of the questions that we are looking for will be in the following briefs, and I am holding my question for the following brief.

Senator McGrand: In your vocational training, is your vocational training aimed at training people for the particular jobs that arise in the Yukon?

Mr. Whitford: I think that we could say yes that although there is a definite attempt on the part of the staff of the school to make the training programs relevant. For example, they have a mining school here.

Senator McGrand: Do you have any pupils from Mayo, Dawson or places like that? Is it arswell?

Mr. Whitford: Carmacks?

Senator McGrand: Yes.

Mr. Whitford: Yes, we do.

Senator Carter: Just two short questions, and before I ask you them I want to apologize to Senator Eudes that I did not mention his name. He was with us on the trip to Labrador. He is too far out of reach down there, but Senator Eudes was with us.

I have two short questions, and the first one is coming back again to the comparison with our visit to Labrador and here. One complaint we got there, that we do not hear about here as contributing to their poverty problem, was isolation. Do you people feel isolated here? Is isolation a factor?

Mr. Whitford: I don't feel isolated. I really don't know. Perhaps later on they could answer the question. I think personally the only people who feel isolated are the people who have been here for two weeks.

Senator Fournier: For half a day.

Mr. Whitford: Or half a day.

Senator Carter: My other question: on page 6, the third paragraph down around the middle of the page, you said:

When asked which governmental or non-governmental programs actually contribute to the creation or continuance of poverty in Yukon, thirty-five per cent stated that existing welfare policies and priorities were to blame.

And this word "priorities" sort of bugs me a bit. In the first place, will you agree with that statement yourself from your own knowledge, and whether you do or do not, can you give us some idea what the present priorities are? How do they list priorities here?

Mr. Whitford: I think again that particular question can be better answered tomorrow afternoon when the Department of Social Welfare is presenting what their priorities are.

I do believe that the people who receive services and the people who do not receive services but who look at the services which are being delivered by the Department of Welfare—and, by the way, existing welfare policies here does not just refer to the Department of Social Welfare territorially but also to the Indian Affairs Department.

Senator Carter: Yes, but when you spoke about policies, I was not quite clear whether

you were speaking of local policy of local territorial government or the larger policy, national policy.

Mr. Whitford: I think just as an example, to give you an example of what people are thinking about when they made those comments—and you will hear this in another brief; at least one other brief I know of—we often received comments from people who said, "Look, here is a family who are Indian and here is a family who are non-Indian and they are in approximately the same position in terms of number of people and possibility of income, and so on and so forth, and yet there is a great disparity in the kind of social assistance which is paid to the Indian family and non-Indian family."

Senator Carter: You mean two different scales?

Mr. Whitford: Two different scales; right.

Senator Hastings: Who is the highest?

Mr. Whitford: I don't know who the highest is. I thought I knew, but the reason I do not know is because we have had examples both ways, and the difficulty which this leads to is that one wonders whether anybody is following a policy or whether they are just responding to a situation. You know, the people who are supplying social assistance.

Senator Carter: I was just wondering, do you know from your personal knowledge? You are in counselling. You have some knowledge of social welfare.

Mr. Whitford: I am not in the department.

Senator Carter: No, but do you know if there is an agreement between the territorial government and the federal government with respect to the Canada Assistance Plan?

Mr. Whitford: Yes, there is.

Senator Carter: So with the Canada Assistance Plan you should not have any scale; it is based on need.

Mr. Whitford: Right.

Senator Carter: We will find out where they get the scale.

Mr. Whitford: Find out at least where they get the difference.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Miss Rae Parker (Department of Welfare): Could I speak to the point Mr. Whitford made about the two different families; the Indian family and non-Indian family?

The Chairman: Same size; same family?

Miss Parker: Right. I don't believe that is the case. My understanding is the Indian Affairs Branch provide the same assistance, food, clothing and otherwise, as provided by the territorial or provincial government in the province or territory in which they operate.

The Chairman: Yes.

Miss Parker: May I speak to a previous comment?

The Chairman: Yes.

Miss Parker: About medical services for foster children.

The Chairman: Yes.

Miss Parker: This has just been changed in the last two months.

Mr. Whitford: How many months ago?

Miss Parker: Three months.

Mr. Whitford: I suggest that that is probably not true.

Mrs. G. Lundy: We should know because the Department of Welfare is using this way of doing it.

The Chairman: Are you from the Department of Welfare?

Mrs. Lundy: Yes, I am, senator.

The Chairman: And you are using it?

Mrs. Lundy: We are using it.

The Chairman: Today you are our authority.

Mr. Whitford: The interesting thing is, they were my authority, too.

Senator Fournier: Would it be possible to visit your technical school from now until we leave?

Mr. Whitford: We can arrange it if you have the time.

The Chairman: You can pass up one of the other visits.

On behalf of the committee may I say to you how much we appreciate the effort that you put forward; the inquiries that you made were very useful. I do not know how you got so much information. It will be of value to us in assessing the situation. As Senator Carter points out, much of the assessment is the same, with very few exceptions, which indicates a pattern. We appreciate it and we thank you very much for the work you have done and for the way you presented your case. It will help to make our trip worth while.

Mr. Whitford: Thank you, sir.

The Chairman: We are pressed for time so we will go right on. We will now deal with a brief presented by the Child Care Centre Society. Mr. J. P. Kehoe, who is adviser to the Society, is technically qualified and he will speak to the brief and then answer questions.

Mr. J. P. Kehoe, Child Care Centre Society: Mr. Chairman, honourable senators, ladies and gentlemen, I would like first of all to apologize for the lateness for the submission of our brief, and particularly for the lack of a French translation.

I would at the same time thank you for offering to hear us at this late date. By way of excuse I am really not sure why we were so late in realizing the relevance of this committee; possibly because we failed to recognize that your committee can potentially help us, and by "us" I mean the day care centre movement, and, secondly, this is probably from our own conceit, we perhaps failed to recognize that poverty is very much a part of our problem, what we are trying to do in the work with the Child Care Centre. I am not only suggesting the centre is poor—our creditors remind us of that—but the group we would most like to serve are the poor.

The poor as I define here are those unable to participate in the fullness of our society for reasons that are really not of their making.

The Child Care Centre can and does serve people of this group. The single-parent families, meaning unwed mothers, widows, divorced or deserted women with families. Meaning also fathers who find themselves suddenly responsible for the day care of their children through death or mental breakdown or desertion of the mothers.

We also serve low-income families where both parents must work in order to meet the basic needs of the family, as well as serving

families where the father is incapacitated or where one or both parents are taking retraining or upgrading.

We could but do not serve at the moment the large group of people that we feel need the service most; namely, those who live in what are easily recognized as ghettos of poverty, to use the term that was in the guide for submissions of briefs to this committee. We are barely able to operate the service such as we have now where most of the patrons are paying their full share of the operating cost. To establish in an area without even a minimal kind of support would be economically impossible for us.

If we could, however, we would expect it to produce these effects: we would hope, first of all, to reduce dependence on welfare by allowing those who would do so to support themselves; to contribute to their own support as fully as possible.

Secondly, it would assist in particular women who are heads of families.

Thirdly, it would provide special attention to children in all conditions of deprivation; hopefully breaking the vicious circle of poverty breeding poverty.

Fourthly, it could restore indigent adults to gainful employment, and, fifth, it would offer a unique opportunity for an uncontrived contact with mothers from the "culture of poverty," for mothers who are in need of advice and need of assistance and need of example in child care.

Regrettably our experience in setting up our child centre in Whitehorse is discouraging as far as long-range goals of expanding service to these people is concerned. We do have community support and we have human resources, but we have, to date, a lack of a reliable source of revenue. Day care has been described as starved stepchild in the welfare field, and I think it applies fully to our situation here in Whitehorse.

We would, therefore, recommend the following steps be taken: first of all, that federal funds be made available for capital expenditures in the establishment of day care centres; secondly, that special encouragement be given to the establishment of such centres in areas identified as poverty pockets or local poverty ghettos, and, thirdly, that a federal department undertake to provide information and advice on the development and programming of child care centres.

Mr. Chairman, our presentation has been rather modest in size, but I am sure at this

point most of the arguments are familiar to the senators.

We have tried to outline briefly our particular experience here in Whitehorse and attempting to meet what we saw as a local need and part of which we now recognize as having been a question of poverty. Thank you very much.

The Chairman: Yes, but do not misunderstand. Your presentation here and the manner in which you have made it, and the fact you have a day care centre here, is impressive. I would like to know a little bit about yourself. Who are you? You made a presentation that strikes us as being a very responsible one. The leadership looks good. What do you do?

Mr. Kehoe: The child care centre?

The Chairman: No, no.

Mr. Kehoe: Me personally?

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Kehoe: I am zone psychologist for the Department of Health and Welfare here.

The Chairman: How long have you been here?

Mr. Kehoe: Two-and-a-half years.

The Chairman: Were you one of the people who started this?

Mr. Kehoe: I was involved in its inception.

The Chairman: That is very interesting to this committee and very important. Now, Senator Pearson would like to ask a question?

Senator Pearson: I just want to know, do you find this a very necessary need in the city here of Whitehorse?

Mr. Kehoe: I think there is great need for it. I think, unfortunately, as I say, the service we are providing now really does not fill the need. We are serving primarily people who can afford day care. It was not our intention to set it up strictly for people of need...

Senator Pearson: You mean people who are going to it now pay for the service?

Mr. Kehoe: I think everybody pays at least something. Two-thirds are paying the full economic weight.

Senator Pearson: Employed mothers who have to work, are they able to get their children in there?

Mr. Kehoe: Yes, very definitely.

Senator Pearson: Now are there many of them?

Mr. Kehoe: I don't have the exact figures. I will ask my consultant. This is Mrs. Kehoe. She is past-president.

Mrs. Kehoe: About probably half of the mothers who are using the service have been on their own and needed some form of subsidy and were not able to pay the full rate. The centre has accepted children where no money was paid for their care, where their parents were in a situation of having to go to work, and no child has been turned away from the centre for lack of ability to pay. But this has meant for those people the community has to support, to pay the difference.

Senator Pearson: About how many children would you have on the average a day?

Mr. Kehoe: Our capacity is thirty-five, and during the school year we are usually filled right to capacity. During the summer a lot of children come out of the day care for a variety of reasons; right now I think we are about twenty.

Senator Pearson: In other words, the mother stops working when the children stop school?

Mr. Kehoe: That, and people going on holidays.

Senator Fergusson: Just one or two questions I would like to ask. I want to know how many you have on the staff of your day care centre and what qualifications do the staff have to have? Do you give them in-service training or do they come with sufficient training?

Mr. Kehoe: At the moment we have a trained director who just arrived, almost on the plane before yours as a matter of fact. I think there are two full-time teachers plus part-time teachers and volunteers.

As far as training is concerned, we try to make sure all of our teachers have some sort of training. There are short courses in child care, in pre-school education, put on by the Board of Education during the summer months.

Senator Fergusson: Here?

Mr. Kehoe: Here in Whitehorse. We have just finished I think was six weeks long; two

sessions, and at the same time all of our staff has taken some of those courses.

I am not entirely sure we attended these, but I think I am safe in saying all of them are fairly well trained; at least at that level, and we try to have at least one person who has a teacher's certificate or training, full training in pre-school education and child care.

Senator Fergusson: I notice on page 3 you mention that you have never turned away a child because of the parents' inability to pay. Have there been instances where parents had sufficient monies to pay, but perhaps they did not have the need for your service as much as somebody else and you have had to refuse them?

Mr. Kehoe: No, we haven't. We anticipate this some day, and it is going to be a bit of a crisis in conscience I think, but the centre was set up not to serve specifically the poor. It was to fill this need for day care, and we accept people strictly on that basis until this time.

As I say, it will be a crisis in conscience when we are actually faced with it.

Senator Fergusson: You will have to make a decision when the time comes?

Mr. Kehoe: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: I realize how much you need assistance and especially financial assistance. Have you tried to get any assistance through the Department of National Health and Welfare? For instance, I don't know the Canada Assistance Act well enough to know if this would come under it, but I think it would.

The Chairman: It does. It specifically says so.

Senator Fergusson: I wondered if you had ever made application for it, for help from that source.

Mr. Kehoe: We have made representation to the Department of National Health and Welfare, and if I am not mistaken we are anticipating some assistance from the Department of Welfare, some subsidy, to make up for the people who are not able to pay the full rate. I am not entirely sure where that money is coming from, but I think it is the Canada Assistance program administered through the Department of Welfare.

Senator Fergusson: But you have applied for this?

Mr. Kehoe: Yes, we have.

Senator Fergusson: You are hoping to get some?

Mr. Kehoe: Yes. We should know very shortly.

Senator Fergusson: I know there are a great many applications in, and this is why some are not being advised so promptly. There are other cases which I am interested in that are only being held up because there are so many cases.

Mr. Kehoe: One of our concerns is that we might be missing a possibility here, and that is one of the main reasons we put in a third recommendation that some central body of the federal department undertake to inform people who are trying to set up such a service as to what funds are available and how to go about getting them.

The Chairman: You are not going to get very much help right now because government is not in the habit of advertising what funds are available.

As Senator Fergusson indicated, the Canada Assistance Act specifically says that money is available for day care centres. There are hundreds of them across the country in other parts of Canada, but the question asked was: is there an agreement between the territorial government and the federal government with respect to the Canada Assistance Act? I think the answer was yes. Senator Carter asked that question.

Senator Fergusson: That is what some said earlier.

The Chairman: So that for all purposes you qualify completely under the Act. When you suggest capital expenditure, you are a little outside the Act. You do not qualify for capital but you do qualify under the Canada Assistance Act for the maintenance of a day care centre for the purpose of providing a certain need.

Mr. Kehoe: Yes.

The Chairman: That means you do not get it for the people who need it, you understand.

Mr. Kehoe: You must appreciate our concern really has not been with that particular group. The community has in fact contributed very nicely with supporting that aspect of it. But the capital expenditure is the real issue because we cannot expand. There is no way

we can expand to meet the needs of the people we feel need it most without those kinds of funds to establish a centre.

Senator Carter: Mr. Chairman, you know the Canada Assistance Act pretty well; can you tell the committee the funds for day care, are they issued fifty-fifty?

The Chairman: Fifty-fifty.

Senator Carter: Like everything else?

The Chairman: Like everything else.

Senator Carter: Perhaps we should ask for a different share.

The Chairman: The program for child care centres has all kinds of literature put out by the Department of Welfare. If you drop them a line they will send it. I do not think you are the kind that needs it, but you might.

Mr. Kehoe: We have tried to approach every resource possible. We do have a bit from the department. I would love to see one department, one area, where we could go for all of this kind of information to make sure we are not missing anything.

The Chairman: That is what every one tells us; give us one source to go to. But we have not got an answer to that yet.

Senator Fergusson: There is one other thing I would like to say: in the third recommendation, are you only referring to where you can get money, or are you indicating you would like to see the Department provide information and advice on the development and a program? Is it difficult to get that kind of information or do you have adequate information?

Mr. Kehoe: I think we have adequate information on the problems and service, the type of service that should be provided. The main difficulty is where to get the funds; what sort of avenues.

Senator Fergusson: In some areas, for instance, in the area of aging, it has been found very convenient that through the Canadian Welfare Council a quarterly was established in which information was given about how people do projects in different parts of the country, and this is what I thought perhaps you wanted, some of that kind of information as well.

Mr. Kehoe: That would be very helpful, of course. It was the sort of thing we looked for

when we set the service up a year and a half, or two years, ago.

Senator Inman: At what age do you take these children? At what age do you start them?

Mr. Kehoe: Three years is the lower level.

Senator Inman: And up to?

Mr. Kehoe: Up to school age.

Senator Inman: How many hours a day?

Mr. Kehoe: The school is open from seven in the morning until six o'clock at night. The child can be in there at any time during that time.

The Chairman: With a meal?

Mr. Kehoe: A hot meal at noontime.

Senator Inman: Do you use any voluntary help in this day care centre?

Mr. Kehoe: As much as we can get. We do have volunteer high school students coming in, for example, after school, and we have also been used by courses in day care at the high school level. They have sent their students in as a training experience to the centre, and we have been able to get extra help in that way.

Senator Inman: In this school you take children from the affluent as well as low income?

Mr. Kehoe: That is right. We have the full range I am sure.

Senator Carter: Mr. Chairman, Senator Fergusson and Senator Inman covered some of these questions I was interested in.

You told Senator Pearson that you have twenty-five to thirty-five a day. What is your limiting factor? Is that what space you have or is that all the money you have got? How big is the need to be met? If you had sufficient funds and sufficient space how many children are there?

Mr. Kehoe: I would find that very difficult to even estimate. Right now we are serving as I say, many from the group who do have the money. There is a very large group that do not have money to meet the fees which is considerable, the full economic weight.

If the centre were located in the area where these people live and if it was available to them, I am sure we would have three or four times that many registered in day care.

Senator Carter: Is one of the limiting factors the location of the centre because people can't get to it?

Mr. Kehoe: A part from the economic consideration?

Senator Carter: Apart from the economic, it is not conveniently located?

Mr. Kehoe: In part, yes.

Senator Carter: So what you really want is two or three centres?

Mr. Kehoe: A city this size could be expected to have two centres, but as I say, it was economic considerations that put the centre in the position it is in right now, and it is very definitely an economic consideration, floor-space—that is limiting the number of children.

Senator Carter: You have been running since February, 1969?

Mr. Kehoe: That was our official opening.

Senator Carter: What does it cost?

Mr. Kehoe: The full rate is \$90 per month per child.

Senator Carter: That is for those who can pay?

Mr. Kehoe: That is right.

Senator Carter: What is the total expenditure? What would be your budget for a year?

Mr. Kehoe: I think it is approximately \$1,000 a month. I am sorry, but I do not have it immediately convenient, and I am a very poor man on budgets as it is, but as I remember the figure, it was just over a thousand dollars a month in expenses.

Pardon me. That is an underestimate considering the bank loan and whatnot, and the mortgage we were operating operating at a deficit of \$500 a month.

Senator Carter: Are you paying rent for your premises?

Mr. Kehoe: We are purchasing the premises and have a heavy mortgage.

Senator Carter: You have a place now?

Mr. Kehoe: Yes.

Senator Carter: How many families would the twenty-five to thirty-five children represent?

Mr. Kehoe: I am sorry. I tried to get that exact figure yesterday over a period of a year to find out how many we had served.

The Chairman: What about your wife?

Mr. Kehoe: She didn't have it either.

Mrs. Kehoe: It varies in that there are one or two children in a family and some months it would be 20 families and some months 25 families. Thirty-five children have come per month and at no time have there been less than 20 families.

Senator Carter: As a rough figure you would be serving probably 12 families?

Senator Pearson: No; 25 families.

Mr. Kehoe: Twenty-five families is a safer estimate.

Senator Carter: Did I understand you to say earlier that a half of these would be low-income?

Mr. Kehoe: One-third of the children at the day centre over the past year have been subsidized.

Senator Carter: Now you mentioned a hundred children have been served since you opened in a little over a year because I suppose like everything else they have holidays around the end of June, but that seems to me to be a terrific turnover. How come if you have twenty-five or thirty-five a day do you get up to a hundred different children in the run of a year? That seems to be a fast turnover.

Mr. Kehoe: I think it is somewhat the characteristic of our community.

Senator Carter: Is that characteristic of the community as a whole?

Mr. Kehoe: Yes. But there are other factors such as in some cases the parent needing day care only for a limited amount of time: for example, we mention a mother who went back for retraining. As soon as her course is over she was able to take care of the children.

I was saying that there are instances where the mothers need day care or the parents need day care for only a limited amount of time. Some of them, for example, have got back on their feet financially and the mother was able to stay home again. And I think this is where it was truly an economic problem.

And in this other instance I just mentioned, the mother went to school to upgrade herself at one point and needed day care for the length of time that she was at school. I am sure there are others if I could just account for them.

Senator Carter: And the maximum age was around?

Mr. Kehoe: Three years is minimum age.

Senator Carter: And from three to what?

Mr. Kehoe: Three to six. We have a kindergarten right within the centre itself for the five-year-olds.

The Chairman: Something that was said here left me with the impression that there seemed to be a considerable amount of work for women with some qualifications in the area. Is that true? There is work for these women and they go to work when they feel they need it? Has the community that kind of work available?

Mr. Kehoe: I may be wrong, but I suspect that is true in the case of women because the number of services, the proportion of services to other kinds of industry within the community. At least two of the major sources of employment within Whitehorse itself would be service areas and employment in clerical types of work through government agencies.

The Chairman: You are talking of stenographic help and clerical help, and then some service outside that?

Mr. Kehoe: Yes.

The Chairman: There is considerable of that around here?

Mr. Kehoe: Yes. That is right.

Senator Carter: You are paying rent or paying off a mortgage?

Mr. Kehoe: Paying off a mortgage.

Senator Carter: Why did you feel it necessary to get a building? Isn't there any space here that you could get that is relatively cheap, say, from churches, organizations, or other institutions?

Mr. Kehoe: Well, as a matter of fact, at the time we purchased this building there was close to a land rush on for housing that became available in Hillcrest area and it was extremely difficult at that time, and it was considered a good investment, and this was

done on the advice of our lawyer. This was considered a good investment.

Senator Carter: You have limited funds and you are doing two things: you are building up an equity in a building and providing a service.

Senator Pearson: Isn't paying off a mortgage cheaper than paying rent?

Senator Quart: I would think so.

Senator Carter: My idea was there should be somebody here that could give you space for that kind of work.

The Chairman: He told us that he has got a bit of help from down east; somewhat the same people who are helping out in Newfoundland.

Senator Quart: Do you know or have you had people like a mother who is ill or something of this kind? Let us say she is ill and she has younger children that you would take even for a day—do you refer them to any volunteer group or nurses, retired nurses, who probably form a group to help out in cases like this where the children would have to be looked after and the father would not have to stay home to look after them?

Do you know of any group that you could refer anyone to?

Mr. Kehoe: There is no group existing right now to give homemakers' service. I think there was an attempt to form one several years ago, but for some reason it did not get functioning. But we have in the past made these kind of arrangements.

Senator Quart: Individually?

Mr. Kehoe: That is right, with individuals. In fact, personally in my capacity as psychologist I have used the Family Counselling Service and made referrals to Family Counselling Service to find that kind of volunteer.

Senator McGrand: Speaking of housing and cost of housing, what does a building cost in Whitehorse?

Mr. Kehoe: Senator, I am afraid this is well beyond my area of competence.

The Chairman: May I tell you, young man, that we do recognize your competence. We also want to give you a special vote of thanks for what we suspect was leadership shown by you and your wife in helping to build this

up. It is very essential and necessary. It is a very fine social outlook. It helps a community.

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty expresses thanks to you and to the people who are involved in providing this service. What particularly impressed us—and you were asked questions about it time and again—was the statement that you had never turned away any child because of the parents' inability to pay. So, on our behalf, thank you very much.

—Upon resuming at 7.30 p.m.

The Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, I would like to call the meeting to order. We have a brief from the Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service Society. Sitting on my right is Dr. J. G. Clarke, and he is accompanied by Mr. Donald Baker. It is most unusual to find two men travelling five hundred miles in order to present a brief on poverty. It is a compliment to them rather than to us. It indicates the depth of feeling and understanding and how desperately some people try to help, not sure whether they are doing it the right way but at least giving it a try.

Doctor, the floor is yours.

Dr. J. G. Clarke: This brief was prepared by—it is a group effort by the Mayo branch of the Yukon Social Service Society. This is a small group of men and women that have been formed in Mayo mainly to try and help out where there is child neglect and to try to find something out about the real problem or the real sources of the problem that arises in Mayo. This society started out as quite a varied group of men and women and then the character changed.

There were men and women from white origins, men and women that were half Indian and some who were Indian women. I thought it quite interesting that the people who were most concerned were the Indian people or women who have stuck through all the way and after only a few weeks everyone seemed to have disappeared except the Indian women and then later some of the interested white citizens joined the remaining group and we have been fairly active.

We feel that this was an opportunity to present something about the story of poverty as we see it in Mayo.

Now, Mayo is north of Whitehorse in case anyone didn't know and the area as we discuss it in the brief is pretty well confined to Mayo and surroundings.

I later, after the brief was completed, I felt that perhaps we neglected Pelly Crossing which is between Whitehorse and Mayo because I think the poverty there is quite appalling, there are few people in Mayo who know the situation in Pelly Crossing and so not so as to have one individual's ideas, we had to confine our brief to things that everybody in the group knew about or were acquainted with or which we could find out about.

The first thing we had to do of course was to define poverty and we felt that that material poverty was more or less secondary to another type of poverty which we call spiritual poverty. It could have been called something else I guess but that covers a pretty wide field. It covers poverty in every field that couldn't be bought with money and anything that money couldn't pay for and that is rather a wide area. Basically it was a poverty of ideas or a poverty of psychical means as we say in the brief and incentives through an enthusiastic and energetic psychological development and a poverty of purpose in living.

Now, this particular thing, this poverty of purpose in living is quite apparent in Mayo. No one seems to have much of an idea as to what to do with themselves. If they are not working they go to a bar and if employment is poor that is where everybody sort of feels that this is the only sort of purpose there is.

However, many of the parents of families are very concerned about what is happening to their children and I think sometimes they expect results too soon and they improve their own way of living and set a better example perhaps for their children.

Recently, a couple of days ago as a matter of fact, a woman brought to my attention that she and her husband had not had anything to drink for a year and that they were having a very good time and that they were very sorry that they had wasted so much time in boozing. They are an Indian couple and she was very disturbed about the fact that the children were seeing alcohol and was frightened of what they were going to do in getting off on a very bad time.

In Mayo we have kind of three groups of people. During our meetings regarding this, there was considerable amount of discussion because of some people who were strangers to the town couldn't understand why we didn't have half-breeds; Metis or that kind of a culture, but although there are people in

Mayo who are part Indian, half Indian and quarter Indian, they have no different culture from the other groups.

We have people who are Indian and the only way we can tell an Indian is of course if they are defined as an Indian and the Department of Indian Affairs published a list of people who are Indian and then there are people who are born and brought up in Europe and have European type of culture and then there are people who are born and brought up in Canada that are white and are part white and they all have the same kind of culture.

We don't have a similar kind of culture or the same kind of culture similar to what one would find about the Metis in the provinces and we were very careful in the brief not to describe one as Metis but we called them half Indian. I hope that would be clear, that although these people are part Indian, their culture is European or whatever Canadian culture is—white Anglo-Saxon probably.

In investigating the various cultural groups, we found that as far as material things are concerned, money, income, that the Indians are right at the very bottom and that the others are further up the scale and there is a tendency—well, that a Canadian of Anglo-Saxon culture or whatever it is and people of European culture are right up at the top as was a very obvious thing apparent in getting the statistics on the few people that were investigated regarding their income that was, we found no Indian received an income of over five thousand a year.

There was one Indian that was between three and five thousand and the rest were below that level.

The amount of income required to live in Mayo in any kind of comfort—we came to the conclusion for a family of four, two adults and two children would be about six thousand dollars a year and a single person required about three thousand to four thousand dollars a year to live.

The cost of living there is very, very, very high and it is very difficult to compare Mayo with Whitehorse. There are very many reasons for this but it wouldn't be so bad if the standard of living were better but the standard of living is very low and having a very high cost of living with a very low standard of living is a very bad thing.

In the spiritual type of poverty, we describe the ways that—for instance, Indian housing was built, the way that the cost of houses—

cost to build them compared to the cost that they were worth when they were finally up there and the fact that the people who were going to sort of occupy these houses—well, whether they were consulted or not, their needs were sort of ignored. There was one particular case which showed this kind of poverty and that was one cabin which was built, and it was the first one that was built because there was a man who was paralyzed in both legs and required a wheel chair in the hospital all of the time—he couldn't be cared for at home because the house was inadequate. Wanting a hospital bed, they felt that he should be sent home and they built a house for him and the doors are not wide enough to accommodate the wheel chair and he can't get the wheel chair in the bathroom.

This is another situation which one runs into which we felt was poverty, but poverty on a different level from a material one but it is really necessary because the really necessary thing was not taken into consideration when the house was built.

Regarding social assistance—people who are defined by law as being Indian get their social assistance from the Department of Indian Affairs and people who are not on that list, they are undefined, get their social assistance from the Territorial Social Assistance and the difference between or as compared to what is given to an Indian and what is given to a white person is about one hundred percent. There were two that we could compare that belonged to the group. One was white status and the other was of Indian status. They both had large families, they both had very similar conditions, they both are women with no husbands living with them and the woman who is receiving her assistance from the Department of Indian Affairs was said to receive around one hundred and fifty some odd dollars a month and the one who was receiving hers from the Territorial Social Assistance was getting over three hundred a month so there really isn't much doubt that there is a wide disparity here and not only does this disparity appear to be ridiculous when they both have the same kind of responsibilities and the same kind of bills to pay but it also looks as though the Indians aren't worth as much and that the white's should have more than the Indians.

Now, it is true that they are coming from different government departments but we felt that all social welfare should be put under one government department and that this

legal definition of Indians should be abolished because we felt it created and encouraged feelings of discrimination, feelings of inferiorities, and worst of all feelings of hostility because there is a kind of split in Mayo. The Indian population especially is a very hostile one and I think with justified reasons and when the group was chiefly Indian women their discussions of the kind of life they had to live and the kind of things that were said to them by white people and the way they were treated by whites—I figured they had every reason to be hostile towards whites and especially people who are in authority.

We have had considerable problem with the Department of Child Welfare and although there have been changes in that department we feel—I should have said the Department of Social Welfare which includes wider groups, there is still a great deal of promising and not too much action being taken.

Over a period of years there has been problems arising with the children who require special schools because of either emotional retardation or mental retardation or both and these special classes that they require are not available in Mayo and amongst some culture, it is felt that the child is mentally retarded there is a sort of rejection in the family. The child can stay out all night and no one looks for him, even when he is only five or six, and of course this home situation—the neglect in the home is also very apparent in the cases where children are not up to standard.

With these children there doesn't seem to be much one can do except to remove them from the home where they are an embarrassment to their parents and also to put them somewhere where they can learn something and be trained a bit.

One child in particular has not been sent to a proper school where he can have a proper class but he has been moved to another home in Dawson City but that took something like six or seven years to get him even taken out of his home and put somewhere where he would have a better home and not be on the street all night and where he would get meals and be properly looked after.

One child I remember needed training in a school for speech therapy. The boy was deaf and required special treatment, special schools and he reached the age of seventeen without getting to one except for about three months, and of course three months was of not much use and unfortunately now he is being treated by the other people of his age

as being an idiot because he can't speak very well. There isn't anything wrong with his mind but he does have difficulty talking and in order to gain their approval he gets drunk with them or works just long enough to get money to buy booze with and joins them. His parents are quite concerned but the whole situation gradually developed over a long period of time and it could have been corrected or at least alleviated somewhat years ago. It is far too late now.

The thing about children and I share the same concern about children as a member of the group—the mothers, they want to learn as much as they can about looking after their children and our group has sort of been a kind of study group. We have studied about the development of children, how children can go wrong and how parents are very often overwhelmed by various things and they become bad parents and how they can be helped and as I say we have studied things along that level. It cannot though all be done in Mayo. There are many cases that require placement somewhere where facilities are available and there has been a tendency—there has been more than a tendency—I think that is putting it rather mildly—to neglect a good many of the children by saying well, you should do more for yourself or you should do it yourself and the other one is that we already have a couple or three children from Mayo that we are looking after and it is costing us too much money and the case will have to be deferred until the child is sixteen years old. This is the only thing that I can interpret because when a child is sixteen years of age and are delinquent and commit some offense, then they can be put in jail. That is one way of putting off the situation until facilities are available but we have a feeling as a group that for certain things the facilities have to be made available and if it is only a matter of money, then it should be made available.

If it is a matter of personnel, then often that can be obtained with more money as well.

In Mayo as well, there is a poverty of recreation. Although many of the people do go to a bar to spend their leisure hours, and it is a necessary sort of institution, because in the bar they get all their hostilities towards one another and they can say that they get this way when they are boozing. It is a centre, a community kind of centre where they are talking with one another and the communications in the bar is one place where there is

communication but other than that there is very little offered in Mayo.

In the winter they have a curling rink and they have a community hall where they show a couple of movies a week. We have felt that a lot of the juvenile problems would be helped if there was a recreation director in the district and we have felt that there is some of the people in Mayo who have leadership qualities which should be directed and helped and that some of the younger people living in Mayo, if they were sent to a centre where they could take a full course in leadership and perhaps in social work, they would benefit the community greatly.

I myself—now, this is not the group—but my own opinion is that if anybody got out of Mayo and—not that I would blame them at all I certainly wouldn't feel that they should be forced to come back because that wouldn't make for them doing a very good job if they were objecting to doing it because they were sort of serving time for having been trained but perhaps some would come back.

We did feel that recreation work and welfare work should go together.

Now, in this field of welfare and social work, the personnel is either in Whitehorse or in Dawson City. Nobody ever gets into Mayo to look after things. They spend maybe four days every three weeks—that is a maximum because well, it is only a few caseworkers that would do that and some of the caseworkers feel that one day a month is sort of enough to pass through and sort of get things over as quickly as possible.

There is a new caseworker who is planning on spending more time in Mayo, but it seems to me that there is a poverty of this sort of thing in Mayo. I don't see why the social worker couldn't be placed in Mayo and made to go to Dawson City for four days a month occasionally instead of the other way around. The public health nurse is the same. She is in Dawson. But that is because the government owns the building up there and I guess they both can occupy the same building and save money but Mayo has been very much neglected in this field.

There has been suggestions that somebody in Mayo sort of look after—some woman in Mayo, some man in Mayo, take over the social work or act in that capacity for most of the time.

First of all, nobody is going to do it because it is a small place. Everybody knows everyone else and no one is going to be led or told

or what have you about anything by any of the people who are living there. The transient people are transient people and that very fact—the fact that they may be there a year, they may be there two years, they may be there three months, makes them not very well qualified for the position and therefore either some body has to come from some other area for that job or some one has to be trained and kept away from Mayo for a few years so that they can come back having acquired a different kind of—or these people will think of them in a different way and have respect for them.

I would say that the brief we have written—there is another paper that can be obtained by people who can obtain these things which apparently does agree with the things we have said in the brief and it was written by Hillary White, B.A. M.S.W. from McGill and it is called Three Yukon Settlements based on mining, a study of social adaptation to northern isolation, and it can be obtained from Dr. T. F. Wise, the assistant director of Northern Economics Development, Department of Indian Affairs and Northern Development, 1376 Centennial Towers, 400 Laurier Avenue West, Ottawa, Ontario.

That is all. Thank you.

The Chairman: Thank you very much, doctor. Senator Carter?

Senator Carter: Well, I realize that the doctor has a long journey ahead of him. I don't want to delay him long, so I only have a few questions. You mentioned this first house that was built for Indians where they built the house and couldn't get the wheel chair through the doors?

Dr. Clarke: Yes. It was built for the purpose of having that man at home.

Senator Carter: It was built just for that purpose.

Dr. Clarke: Yes. Essentially that is why it was built. He had a mother and father...

Senator Carter: It was built essentially for this purpose?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: Essentially for the wheel chair?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: How long ago?

Dr. Clarke: Two years ago.

Senator Carter: Only two years ago?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: And who did that? The Department of Indian Affairs?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: Did they draw up the blueprints?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: For this man in a wheel chair?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: Well, you mentioned another house—a person with seven children?

Dr. Clarke: That was a woman.

Senator Carter: A woman and her children?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: And that was ten months being built?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: And when it was built it only had two rooms?

Dr. Clarke: It had two bedrooms, a living-room, a kitchen and a bathroom.

Senator Carter: It only had two bedrooms?

Dr. Clarke: That's right.

Senator Carter: For nine people?

Dr. Clarke: Yes. Apparently the Department of Indian Affairs have a standard kind of house and they are allowed to spend I think eight thousand five hundred dollars on the house plus the cost of transportation.

Now, if you notice a little further along, the house costs twelve thousand dollars and the present value is around five thousand and that is only a year ago old.

Mr. Donald Baker: It was finished last year.

Dr. Clarke: A number of people were working on it and there was just too much supervision and everybody got paid while waiting for supplies to come in and...

Senator Pearson: This is all part of the cost?

Senator Carter: Well, I am not concerned if it cost fifty thousand. What I am concerned about is that someone would build a two bedroom house for nine people.

Dr. Clarke: Well, you see, this is a standard house.

The Chairman: What the senator is saying is that it wasn't for a standard family!

Dr. Clarke: I know, this is why we felt that these people who were going to occupy the house should have been considered in building the house.

Senator Carter: Well, who ever was in charge of building that house must have known that a two bedroom house for a nine person family is just—well, I can't use the word I would like to use...

Dr. Clarke: Well, there was a meeting about this and someone said there is no law in a private house as to the number of people—or the number of rooms required for any number of people. Once you have a house you can put any number into it as long as it is not a hazard to their health or anything.

I realize that this argument is quite long but the department—the member of the group who did the investigation on this is not here. He was an Australian or New Zealander...

Mr. Donald Baker: A New Zealander.

Dr. Clarke: But anyway, he checked with the Department of Indian Affairs and although I am not exactly sure of my figures I think it was eight thousand five hundred dollars and all the buildings that are being erected are the same and that is that.

Senator Carter: Well, how stupid can you get? I mean, all the families aren't the same?

Dr. Clarke: Well, there is more to it than that. Firewood in Mayo is very difficult to obtain.

Senator Carter: Well, yes that's true but that is something else. What do people around here ordinarily use? They put a wood furnace in this house and there is no wood.

Dr. Clarke: Well, wood is very expensive. There are very few families using wood. The few that are—there may be two or three that are but they are not in the real underprivileged group.

Senator Carter: Well, you are talking about a woman with her eight children?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: So there was no husband around to cut the wood except the children or the woman?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: And yet they built this house?

Dr. Clarke: Well, the Department of Indian Affairs is supposed to supply wood but I know that they go around looking for wood from an old fallen down cabin or something like that.

Senator Carter: Well, what I am trying to get at, doctor, is how do they work? Who dreams this up?

Dr. Clarke: I don't know.

Senator Carter: Don't the laws of sanitation and the laws of health apply to the Indian people?

Dr. Clarke: Well, as I say...

Senator Carter: They don't have regulations for Indians in regards to so many square feet per person in an Indian family? Are all these things ignored by the Department of Indian Affairs?

Dr. Clarke: Well, we were told by one knowledgeable person that this didn't apply in private housing. They just don't take that into consideration. It is the same thing in regards to the Indian village.

Now, I am calling it the Indian village, but the Indians used to live on the opposite side of the Stuart River and a few years ago—more than a few I guess—they were moved into town.

They were all crowded in one little corner at the mouth of the Mayo River—where the Mayo meets the Stuart and the people actually wanted to be mixed up around the town and there may be some white people who don't want the Indians as next door neighbours and so on, but that really is beside the point. They want to move in and about the town.

There is one particular Indian who built his own house—he wants to own his own house and he is so glad that he is finished with the Department of Indian Affairs and he will have nothing to do with them except the fact that the Department of Indian Affairs covers the medical expenses and that, but other than

that he wants to be independent and free and he doesn't feel sort of obligated in any way to the Department of Indian Affairs.

Senator Carter: Now, in your cost of living you gave an example of a particular man who happened to be a war veteran and he has been trying to build a house for the last ten years.

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: Did this chap know anything about the Veteran's Land Act?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: Is he building under the Veteran's Land Act?

Dr. Clarke: No.

Senator Carter: Well, here I would think you don't have any land problems?

Dr. Clarke: You don't have any land problems? I should tell you that that is one of the things that we have in Mayo. Actually.

Senator Carter: Well, I am not talking about within the city limits. A fellow wants to build a house and to build under the Veteran's Land Act he has to have land of certain size.

Senator Hastings: And he has to have title to it?

Senator Carter: Yes, title to it. Did he explore these things, do you know?

Mr. Donald Baker: No.

Senator Carter: He didn't bother with it?

Mr. Donald Baker: No.

Senator Carter: Well, that is something just to keep in mind. Veterans should be taking advantage of it wherever possible.

You say on page three that a single needs thirty-five hundred to four thousand and a family of two with two children, six thousand dollars.

Well, when you talk about that I was just wondering how the old age pensioner gets along here? What happens to them? How do they manage?

Dr. Clarke: Well, they try to get by on what they have saved in their life and many of them haven't got very much to get along on and soon many of them will run out. And

you know, they have this worry and I believe in the last paragraph there I made mention about it.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Dr. Clarke: They have a "sunset home" in Dawson City and of course the home in Whitehorse are far too expensive I guess for people to move into.

Senator Carter: This poor chap who bought a car in 1950—twenty years ago . . .

Mr. Donald Baker: No, it was a 1950 model.

Senator Carter: That's right. What would he have to pay for a new car?

Dr. Clarke: For a new car?

Senator Carter: Say a new ordinary Ford or Chev.

Dr. Clarke: Well, three to four thousand dollars.

Senator Carter: Well, that is not much dearer than anywhere else?

Dr. Clarke: I beg your pardon?

Senator Carter: Well, cars aren't much dearer here than they are elsewhere?

Dr. Clarke: No.

Senator Hastings: It would just be the freight from Detroit.

Dr. Clarke: I have never been able to buy a new car so I couldn't tell you.

Senator Carter: Can you give us some idea of what an average person would spend on a grocery bill per week in Mayo. You say it is pretty high?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: Say a family of four or five?

Dr. Clarke: Well, a family of four or five—would probably be close to a hundred dollars a week anyway.

Senator Carter: Is that so?

Dr. Clarke: Yes. I have a family much smaller than that and my grocery bill is pretty big but the people you see who own the grocery stores won't buy—first of all, they won't buy anything from their own grocery stores because it is so expensive so they send Whitehorse to buy it and they get it in

bulk. Prepared foods are of course fantastically high and the people who suffer from poverty are rather inadequate about cooking and preparing meals and they have to buy prepared foods and they will spend forty-five to fifty dollars a day.

Senator Carter: Well, the cost of living is high here even for people who are permanently employed and getting good salaries?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: And have these people ever tried co-operative buying?

Mr. Donald Baker: It has been attempted in Whitehorse.

Dr. Clarke: In Mayo, no.

Senator Carter: You could start and work down and bring in the lower incomes if you could start doing it.

Dr. Clarke: Well, of course we can't understand why the cost of living should be so high—why the cost of food is so high?

Senator Carter: Well, I don't think you get much by questioning it because the only way to beat it is to beat them at their own game and a co-op is one way of doing it.

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Carter: My last question, Mr. Chairman, has to do with the two scales for social assistance. What amazes me about this is the fact that you have social assistance coming from two different federal departments.

Dr. Clarke: Well, one is federal and the other isn't.

The Chairman: I have just made a note of that, and that is so. Earlier in the day you told us that they came at the same level, didn't you?

Mr. James Whitford: No.

The Chairman: Well, what did you say?

Mr. James Whitford: I said that there was a disparity. I said there was a significant difference.

The Chairman: Yes, those were your words, "A significant disparity."

Mr. Whitford: That is right.

The Chairman: Well, I thought that someone told us—yes, who are you?

Miss R. Parker: I work for the Department of Social Welfare. The policy is supposed to be the same or is the same for Indians or other people on welfare.

Senator Carter: Well, about this different amount?

Miss Parker: I don't know. I just have the information that Dr. Clarke presented but one possibility could be if the Indian woman was expected to take into account the cost of food allowance or incomes from hunting or fishing.

The Chairman: No.

Miss Parker: I don't know. Is this just a food allowance or does it include clothing, etc.

Dr. Clarke: This is what she said she got a month. We asked her how much she got and she told us.

Miss Parker: Did you find out what it was for?

Dr. Clarke: Are you speaking of clothing and so on?

Miss Parker: Yes.

Dr. Clarke: Well, they don't get clothing, unless they ask for it specially.

Miss Parker: But they can be paid a cash allowance for rent and fuel?

Dr. Clarke: They live in one of those houses—the ones that were built for seven people.

Senator Carter: Are there more cases like this, doctor, or is this just one isolated case?

Dr. Clarke: We have very few people on any kind of welfare assistance in Mayo. I think there are only three that are on permanent welfare there.

The Chairman: The point of it is that Mr. Whitford, who is knowledgeable, said that there was a significant difference.

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

The Chairman: The lady said no, that there should be no significant difference—there should be no difference at all. We left it at that for the moment because there must have been some misunderstanding. He comes along now and says there is a difference of approximately one hundred and fifty, and our good lady said that there should be no significant difference.

Dr. Clarke: Well, I am sure that woman can't feed her children very well on one hundred and fifty odd dollars a month.

The Chairman: No, not seven children.

Dr. Clarke: No.

The Chairman: Senator Inman?

Senator Inman: Mr. Chairman, I was interested in page three. You speak of recommendations regarding jobs. What kind of jobs do you think could be made available and what resources could be developed in view of creating jobs?

Dr. Clarke: Well, this is a difficult question to answer and I have been thinking that this is a question that I would be asked. I don't know. We have thought and tried to think of various ways. Now, there are a lot of fish in some of the lakes around, there are various natural resources that have not been explored but I think this particular thing is where we need some new ideas. I felt if we could get somebody in to sort of explore the situation and make suggestions that it would be very helpful. It is a very pretty town and it is situated in a rather scenic background and we were thinking of the tourist industry and various things like that you know.

Senator Inman: What is the population of Mayo?

Dr. Clarke: It's about three fifty to four hundred in Mayo.

Senator Inman: All of course, it is suggestions we would like to have?

Dr. Clarke: I know, but with the problem of finding more employment, there have been suggestions of doing something to encourage tourism or a tourist industry I guess around there of course there has been a lot of mining but until somebody finds something new of high grade they are not likely to be able to develop that much more. There is some lumbering that goes on in the place but not enough to support a very large population.

We have felt that with perhaps people who are qualified in advising on community development and so on, could explore the situation we might—somebody might be able to give us a clue as to what direction to go.

Senator Inman: Well, when housing is being built and the construction is being done, are the native people or the inhabitants I should say of Mayo...

Dr. Clarke: The citizens of Mayo.

Senator Inman: Yes. Are they hired for this or do they bring in help?

Mr. Baker: They use as much local help as they can. As a matter of fact it was all local, even the carpenter who was supervising it. He was a local man this last time.

Senator Inman: On page three you also speak of employment opportunities and adult education and you seem to say that some of the people that didn't take advantage of the educational facilities?

Dr. Clarke: That's right.

Senator Inman: Why didn't they?

Dr. Clarke: Because they don't know the value really. They felt that anything in the educational line to improve their status as employees, it would have to be sort of told to them because they just don't see any value in it. They have got to be shown that it will be of value.

Now, various classes are available in the schools such as woodworking and various other types of things and programs in sewing and cooking and all these other things and they don't take advantage of them.

One of the Indian members of the group said that she felt all these things were of no value anyway; that what they needed was to be taught to read and write English and everything else would follow. If they could read a cookbook, they could cook for instance, and so on. The problem in convincing these people is the fact that a large number of them have had very little formal education.

Senator Inman: Are they anxious for their children to be educated and have they ambition for the children?

Mr. Baker: I would say no. I would say that they are hostile and they are punishing the whites by discouraging their children from learning. That is my opinion. There is great similarity between them and the French and the Belgians and the Dutch people during the last war when they did everything they could to harass the German army. I think the Indian population is more or less doing that to us here.

Dr. Clarke: Well, there is a great deal of hostility towards the school and towards the teachers or anyone in authority. There was a feeling that there was a lot of hostility on the

part of Indians towards the whites and the whites towards the Indians. But the Indians are hostile towards certain individuals amongst the whites.

Senator Inman: Are the places small enough that that happens?

Dr. Clarke: Oh, yes. And yet, there is a wide division you know between the feelings you know of Indians towards whites and so on. They are really hostile and aggressive.

Senator Inman: On page two you speak of the community clubs and you also mentioned that some Indians had been approached and they have refused. Now, would they be refused for the same reasons?

Dr. Clarke: Maybe partly then they always feel inferior, like they can't do the job. They feel that they are not qualified and they don't want to be embarrassed. They are embarrassed enough by people who sort of point out Indians that don't know anything.

Mr. Baker: And they are shy.

Dr. Clarke: Shy, yes.

Senator Inman: Just to get back to this housing question for a moment. Some years ago we got big blueprints of houses that were being built for the Eskimos and the Indians and the specifications for those houses were for families with two children, four children, families of six children and they were fairly spacious.

Dr. Clarke: Well, this is the situation now I'm afraid and this is the way it is.

Senator Inman: Do you remember that, Senator Croll?

The Chairman: Yes, and that of course is one of the reasons, Senator Inman, that they are going to do away with the Department of Indian Affairs. They finally got what was coming to them.

Senator Pearson: You say that there is about three to four hundred people in the town of Mayo?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Pearson: And you had a problem of a sewer line there breaking down?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Pearson: I kind of think that you people in Mayo sort of sit back and look at this thing—who built this sewer originally?

Mr. Baker: The Territorial Government.

Senator Pearson: The Territorial Council, you mean?

Mr. Baker: Yes. They brought in a contractor from Edmonton to do the installing. They had me in charge for a while until they couldn't handle it any longer.

Senator Pearson: Why couldn't you handle this any longer?

Mr. Baker: I was moonlighting and I had to give up one job or the other and I kept the easiest job.

Senator Pearson: Well, it seems to me that there should be someone in town there to take a hold of that, that thing.

Dr. Clarke: That is just the point.

Senator Pearson: That they could shut that thing off at some point and dig it up and put in a new piece of pipe.

Dr. Clarke: It was dug up and reopened and left open.

Senator Pearson: I know and left open?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Mr. Baker: It was dug up because of the frost heaving.

Senator Pearson: Because of the frost?

Mr. Baker: Yes and then they had to wait for repairs and then the high water came and they fixed it again and it was just one thing after another.

Senator Pearson: I see.

Mr. Baker: And because they had to wait for the materials it took a long time.

Dr. Clarke: Well, we had the zone director of Northern Health and Affairs up and he declared that it was an emergency and it should be dealt with immediately and actually the problem was in the hands of the local people.

The Chairman: Yes.

Dr. Clarke: It was in the hands of the local improvement people who were to see that tradesmen were made available to repair it. It is true that the people who were responsible for repairing it were sitting back just looking at it. My own feeling was that the ground was very badly contaminated by this open

sewer and I got to the point where I wanted the whole area blocked off and everyone moved off the street for a while until the thing was repaired.

Senator Pearson: Did you eventually get it repaired?

Mr. Baker: It is repaired now.

Dr. Clarke: But it was open for about twelve weeks I guess all together.

Senator Pearson: It is a queer thing to have a situation like that where you can't get a water main or sewer main fixed.

Dr. Clarke: Well, you see the local improvement people kept saying they only had twenty-four thousand dollars and they couldn't use it for that.

Senator Pearson: What did you do then?

Dr. Clarke: Well, I told them that they would have to find some more.

The Chairman: You what?

Dr. Clarke: I felt that they had to find some more money and they said well, do you think we can do these things without money and said, no, I know you can't but ..

Senator Pearson: What did they do, star building little out houses for you!

Dr. Clarke: No, they didn't even do that.

Senator Pearson: It seems to me that this is pretty ridiculous. However, getting away from that now I will move on to another subject. We had the Canada Council before a year or one time earlier this year and they suggested that a family of four to be just above the poverty line would have to have in the range of forty-two hundred dollars plus additional money now to cover inflation, etc. and so on. This would probably bring it up to around forty-four or forty-eight hundred dollars. A family of four in Mayo earning six or seven thousand dollars, according to one statement you made there in your brief, are having a great deal of difficulty putting some work on their house that they are working on. They finally got their house built but they have not been able to get it finished yet.

Can you give us any idea at all what a family of four would need to be above the poverty line in Mayo?

Dr. Clarke: Well, that is four children?

Senator Quart: You gave a figure I think of six thousand.

Dr. Clarke: That is for four, two adults and two children.

Senator Pearson: Two adults?

Dr. Clarke: That is the parents and two children.

The Chairman: A family of four?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Pearson: About six thousand dollars?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Pearson: That means that if there ever was a guaranteed income there would have to be different arrangements made for every part of Canada because you have an area here that is more expensive than even in Whitehorse?

Dr. Clarke: Oh, yes.

Senator Pearson: Well, this is going to be quite a problem if we ever try to work that thing out. If you can't do a sewer in Mayo now are we going to work this out?

Dr. Clarke: Well, there is no doubt about that. It is sort of common knowledge that people get one third more for their money in Whitehorse than they do in Mayo.

Senator Pearson: How much of a work force have you got in Mayo?

Dr. Clarke: You mean are actually working in Mayo?

Senator Pearson: How many people are actually working?

Dr. Clarke: Well, they are all the people who are working for the government but of the stable population there is approximately a dozen or so or maybe twenty-four. That includes people working in the hospitals, etc.

Senator Pearson: Is there any mining industry there at all?

Dr. Clarke: No, not in Mayo. Thirty-five miles from Mayo there is a mine and there are a couple of people from Mayo working there.

Senator Pearson: So you have been living what?

Dr. Clarke: I have no idea. There are three lumber companies now.

Senator Pearson: Cutting lumber?

Dr. Digby: Yes. They cut the lumber for the mining companies and that is about it.

Senator Pearson: Cutting poles?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Pearson: And you get your own meat by going out and hunting in the woods?

Dr. Clarke: Well, I don't get mine that way.

Senator Pearson: But some do?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Mr. Baker: And fishing.

Senator Pearson: But the Indians are quite more adept than the white man at that?

Mr. Baker: My kids won't even eat that meat.

Senator Pearson: Your kids won't eat the meat?

Mr. Baker: My kids won't even eat wild meat, so there's no use of me going hunting.

Senator Pearson: I see.

Dr. Clarke: The Indians find it more easier to open a can of meat than going into the bush and hunting.

Senator Pearson: Thank you.

Senator Fournier: I would like to clarify this land situation. All of these forests that we see around here—are they owned by the Crown or what?

Dr. Clarke: I think most of it is Crown land.

Mr. Baker: Yes, Crown land.

Senator Fournier: Is it possible to obtain a piece of land like that veteran who wanted to build a home?

Dr. Clarke: I guess it would be possible to obtain a piece of land. Within the town limits—the sewer and water lines are only on certain streets in the town and most buildings that are going to be built it is expected that they would build them on those streets where they will have sewer and water but about one third of the town—the part of the town that needs sewer and water most because the

water isn't fit to drink in that part of town have no sewer and water.

In the town itself there are a few lots which are held in the name of the commissioner and outside of the town it is Crown land, most of it I think.

Senator Fournier: Well, let us get outside of Mayo for a moment.

Is water a problem? Could you dig a well and obtain good water

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Mr. Baker: Yes, most everywhere.

Senator Fournier: Almost everywhere you can dig a well and have water?

Dr. Clarke: It depends. I would have to say that up to a half a mile from the Mayo River it may be all right. To go further away then there is too much iron in the water.

Senator Fournier: Now, I always understood that there were three groups of people. You have the white, the Indians and the Metis. Do the Metis receive the same treatment as the Indians?

Dr. Clarke: No, they receive the same treatment as the whites.

Senator Fournier: They do?

Dr. Clarke: Yes. The whites and Metis are sort of the same. They don't have a separate cult if you like, a Metis cult.

Senator Fournier: Can you tell me how many children are of school age in Mayo?

Dr. Clarke: There is usually about one forty to one hundred and seventy.

Senator Fournier: How many would you have at high school level?

Dr. Clarke: In Grade 11, there were five.

Senator Fournier: And how many Indians?

Dr. Clarke: There were no Indians in Grade 11. Grade 9 would be about the highest level where you would get any Indians.

Senator Fournier: Grade 9?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Quart: Do they drop out then?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Quart: When?

Dr. Clarke: As soon as they are sixteen.

Senator Fournier: Do any of the Mayo children take advantage of the vocational training institute here?

Dr. Clarke: A few of them have come but I don't think they do very much. They don't seem to get any supervision here or anything and they either carry on and do their work and so on and pass and get their grades or else they drop out. I know there have been a number that have started but I think there are quite a few who haven't finished. There may have been a couple of girls who have finished but not amongst the men.

Senator Fournier: None amongst the men?

Dr. Clarke: No, I don't think so. I can't think of any off hand that have.

Mr. Baker: They came down but they haven't completed their courses.

Senator Fournier: Why would they not complete their training?

Mr. Baker: They don't like discipline too well.

Dr. Clarke: And some of them start in without proper qualifications and when they couldn't make the grade they quit.

Senator McGrand: I think maybe we could pinpoint this cost of living in Mayo or any place up here. What is the price of a bag of flour or a bag of potatoes in Mayo?

Mr. Baker: My wife just bought a fifty pound bag but I just forget now.

Senator McGrand: But it is more expensive than in Edmonton or any other place?

Mr. Baker: Oh, certainly, it is double the price.

Senator McGrand: It is?

Dr. Clarke: Yes. The price of food on an average is one third higher in Mayo than it is in Whitehorse. People can buy for one hundred dollars in Whitehorse what it would cost one hundred and fifty in Mayo.

Senator McGrand: I remember some year ago a man who was in the hunting business down here in the Chugach Mountains told me that it cost him two hundred dollars a ton to bring hay in here.

Now, it must be a problem to get water supplies and sewage through the perma-frost. Is that a particular problem?

Mr. Baker: Oh, it is yes.

Senator McGrand: And that adds to your problems?

Mr. Baker: Yes.

Senator McGrand: Well, Senator Inman asked you the same question that I was going to ask you regarding more employment on page two I think it was. You stated that there had to be more exploration to find mining resources.

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator McGrand: Now, it seems to me that the explorers in the Canadian north are all over the place. In fact, there is a great deal of criticism today that they are destroying the Tundra of the north in searching for resources.

Now, evidently the work has been done but has been done by the wrong people, or has it been done by the right people using the wrong methods or for the wrong purposes? I am thinking of the agent for the large international companies that are out to make a quick dollar. Would you just explain that a little?

Dr. Clarke: Well, actually maybe I gave the wrong impression but really what we meant was making better use of the resources that we have other than finding anything in particular. The resources are here but perhaps we could make better use of them.

Senator McGrand: Well, what are the things that you could use to a greater degree or greater efficiency? What are the resources that you could use to a greater efficiency to produce more employment at a higher standard?

Dr. Clarke: Well, we have the forest and the lakes all filled with fish. There is lots of scenery and lots of low grade ore if somehow it could be put in to use.

Senator McGrand: Low grade ore?

Dr. Clarke: Yes, lead, silver and zinc.

Senator McGrand: Well, low grade ore is low grade ore.

Dr. Clarke: There is some phosphate mines around there which are not low grade, they

are rather limited. There is a limited amount of gold platinum mining going on for the people who own them, they are doing all right. Then we have a school which is a fairly good sized school.

Senator Pearson: You have what?

Dr. Clarke: A school and we have felt at times that it could be used as a centre—you know, there is only one high school in Whitehorse and there is one in Dawson and there is one in Mayo and if we could have children coming to Mayo in a residence there say, that would supply a certain amount of employment and make Mayo sort of an educational centre for that area. Up to grade twelve say.

Senator McGrand: Well, you say for that area. Are you referring to...

Dr. Clarke: Well, from Pelly Crossing, etc.

Senator McGrand: Within a radius of fifty miles?

Dr. Clarke: Well, towards Whitehorse it would be around seventy-five miles and north of Mayo about thirty-five miles.

Senator Hastings: Dr. Clarke I would like to return to the questioning of Senator McGrand with respect to education if I could.

You mentioned you have one hundred and forty to one hundred and sixty students. How many rooms would that be?

Dr. Clarke: How many school rooms?

Senator Hastings: Yes.

Mr. Baker: Two downstairs, four upstairs—six—about ten altogether.

Senator Hastings: How many teachers?

Mr. Baker: There were thirteen there last year.

Senator Hastings: How many Indian teachers?

Mr. Baker: None.

Senator Hastings: Who sets the curriculum?

Mr. Baker: The Board of Education in Whitehorse. The superintendent of education.

The Chairman: The Territorial Board of education?

Mr. Baker: The Territorial superintendent.

Dr. Clarke: The Territorial superintendents or the Territorial Board of Education.

Senator Hastings: Is he an Indian?

Dr. Clarke: No.

Mr. Baker: No.

Senator Hastings: I am going to make the observation that the rejection is for that very reason.

Dr. Clarke: Oh, yes.

Senator Hastings: And the curriculum is set by the whites, sets the standards of the upper class whites and the Indian children have rejected it.

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Do you agree?

Dr. Clarke: Yes.

Mr. Baker: There was an Indian fellow who came up here from Saskatchewan not too long ago and he was a supervisor around Whitehorse—and we invited him up to the Home and School Association to give a talk and we asked him if he thought that Indian teachers in the classroom would be an advantage and he said that he thought it would just be a complete whitewash—that it wouldn't mean anything.

Dr. Clarke: It would mean that they would improve things a lot. The unusual thing is that teachers in general are pretty much isolated from the Indian families and there is a great lack of communication between the Indian parents and the teachers. The principal has been trying to communicate, has made a real effort to visit the homes recently, say in the last year. There is not very good communication at all.

Senator Hastings: Are these teachers from the Yukon?

Dr. Clarke: No, they are from New Zealand, Australia, and all over Canada.

Senator Hastings: Are there none from the Yukon?

Dr. Clarke: No.

The Chairman: I am not too sure but I believe they do a special recruitment, they pay them a bonus in order to have them come up here for a period of time.

Dr. Clarke: I know they do a special recruitment but whether or not they pay them a special bonus, I am not too sure.

The Chairman: That is what they do in other places, and I am assuming that they would do it here as well.

Senator Hastings: You mentioned or you alluded to the fact that the bar was the centre of culture and so I am assuming that alcoholism is a major factor?

Dr. Clarke: Well, I don't know whether or not you would call it alcoholism but some people believe that any money they do have is for one purpose and they drink it. A large number actually compared to you know, the size of the town and the number of people in it. I have had people come to me and say well, I have arranged for my child to go into Whitehorse on the bus to have his ears examined and so on and I will say to them well, do you have money and they will say yes, but this is mine and then you will have to make other arrangements or else they will just spend it.

However, I do feel that the bar is one place in town where people do communicate and that is the reason I am interested.

Senator Hastings: You said that your examination was as a result of examining forty-one families. How many families altogether are there in Mayo?

Dr. Clarke: I would say maybe one hundred families.

Senator Hastings: So your poll is about fifty per cent of the people then?

Dr. Clarke: Well, not really.

Senator Hastings: Do the conditions as you have explained them here exist throughout all of the Yukon in towns of about the same size?

Dr. Clarke: I don't know how many more centres there are of that size.

Senator Hastings: Well, there must be more than one.

Dr. Clarke: I should imagine that this sort of situation would develop in any sort of town where there is no source of employment.

Senator Hastings: Finally, sir, you say respect to poverty that it is reflected in the course of law and you refer to the fact

suspended sentences and also that there is no follow-up by probation officers. How many young men are you talking about here?

Dr. Clarke: Well, I think it is the same as everywhere else. A great number of misdemeanors are committed by the same people as you know. I believe there has been about fifteen or so children that have committed hundreds of misdemeanors and of course this is replaced every year by another fifteen who fall into the same pitfalls.

Senator Hastings: And you also mentioned the fact that once this boy has turned sixteen he is forgotten.

Dr. Clarke: Well, that boy that I was speaking of in particular was a case where it was felt definitely—not only my own feelings but other peoples, felt that he definitely did need speech therapy.

Senator Hastings: Well, I didn't really mean that one, I was referring to the one where you mentioned he was neglected until he was sixteen years of age?

Dr. Clarke: Well, they neglect all of them.

The Chairman: Well, was that the last kid of the family?

Senator Hastings: Well, they neglected the child until he was sixteen and then he would go to jail or penitentiary.

Dr. Clarke: Well, that happens to a lot of children there. When they reach the age of sixteen and they commit a misdemeanor, they go to jail. The social worker does a case report on him as a caseworker and I send in a report on the medical aspect that are requested when the people are seen by psychologists and that sort of thing. The area is pretty well covered and it is recommended what should be done with the child and/or how the home should be handled but in this particular case nothing was done. There is only a certain limit as to what can be done in Mayo.

Senator Hastings: Yes, I understand.

Dr. Clarke: You just can't do everything because the facilities are not there either.

Senator Hastings: Well, I don't think this particular problem is special to Mayo?

Dr. Clarke: No.

Senator Hastings: I think it is evidence of our sickness. I think it is evidence of just

how sick our society is when we won't spend five hundred dollars or a thousand dollars on a boy to help him when he is fourteen or sixteen but we can spend five thousand dollars a year to fill up our penitentiaries.

Dr. Clarke: I have a feeling that this sort of situation might be the same all over northern Canada.

Senator Hastings: We have the highest penitentiary rate of any country in the world which are these boys which are going from sixteen to eighteen.

Dr. Clarke: Yes, and it seems to me that any correction that should be done should be done as early as possible.

Senator Fournier: In Mayo, are there any children who are not going to school on account of poverty?

Dr. Clarke: Well, the law says that they are obliged to go to school until they are sixteen and children—no, I think not. There are only three people on permanent welfare there, but there is another kind of poverty because of their homes. They are not sent to school and they are kicked around.

Senator Fournier: But could you attribute that poverty to lack of money because they have no money for transportation or clothing or things of that nature?

Dr. Clarke: Well, poverty doesn't always mean a lack of money.

Senator Fournier: Then it is not a lack of money?

Dr. Clarke: Well, as I say poverty is not always the lack of money.

Senator Fournier: It is the lack of attitude rather than a lack of money?

Dr. Clarke: Yes, and also lack of ideas from the parents and this doesn't necessarily mean that it will stop the same. What is supposed to be done if a child doesn't go to school at least fifty per cent of the time when the school is in session, then the child allowance can be cut off by the principal.

Senator Fournier: Yes, that is the baby bonus.

The Chairman: No, the youth allowance. A fellow earns his baby bonus. Don't forget that!

Senator Fergusson: Well, family allowances are suspended if a child doesn't go to school in accordance with the school's regulations.

Senator Fournier: Yes, after the age of sixteen.

Senator Fergusson: Even before sixteen.

The Chairman: We are talking about the youth allowance.

Senator Fergusson: Well, family allowances are suspended under sixteen.

The Chairman: For what?

Senator Fergusson: If the child does not attend school in accordance with school regulations because I administered that.

Dr. Clarke: I don't think it brings the children back to school though. In a case like that it doesn't make the parent get cracking and get the child back to school.

Senator Fergusson: Well, perhaps there is not enough incentive to send a child to school whereas maybe if there were more they would be more inclined to make a child go to school.

The Chairman: There are some things that I wanted to clarify. Referring to the earlier discussions about the maximum allowance, I understand the amount of allowance is the same whether it is for white or Indian. The only difference there is, is a matter of interpretation one from the other. That is the only basis of need. It is administered or interpreted on the basis of need in one group and it is interpreted on another basis in another group.

Now, that is not peculiar here because we came across this right across the country. As a matter of fact, in the City of Hull, which is right across the Ottawa River, a family of four, of same age group, will receive almost \$100 less than would in the City of Ottawa because the allowance in the Province of Quebec is lower than it is in the Province of Ontario.

That could be applicable to other provinces as well. That does not exemplify the conditions here but I merely point that out.

Senator Carter: There is a difference though, Mr. Chairman. In Hull, the need is assessed by the provincial government and in Ottawa it is assessed by the provincial government of Ontario. But here you have two federal departments, each making a different assessment, which is quite a different thing

because surely these two departments should be able to get together and use the same yardsticks. I mean, they probably use the same building.

The Chairman: It is quite possible, as we heard in Edmonton, that they have not talked to each other for quite a long period of time.

Senator Carter: I know that what you say is true, but it might be different here.

The Chairman: The thing is out in the open now. In any event, it is a basis of need—the need for an Indian child or an Indian person is the same as a white person. If he has got to eat, he has got to eat and that is it! We must provide.

Senator Carter: Well, Mr. Chairman, there is just one other point I would like to clarify before we wind things up. The Metis are not defined as Indians?

Dr. Clarke: No.

Senator Carter: Now, are there any other non-whites that are not defined as Indians apart from the Metis or are these the only ones?

Dr. Clarke: No, those are the only ones.

Senator Carter: When you mention here on page two about the community club—you say that any Indians approached to the members on the executive board refused. Why was that?

Mr. Baker: Probably because they felt inferior.

Senator Carter: Was it a matter of hostility?

Dr. Clarke: Partly that and partly because they felt inadequate.

Senator Carter: An inferiority complex?

Mr. Baker: Yes.

Senator Quart: Do you think that they felt it was merely a gesture that you were making.

Dr. Clarke: I think there is no doubt about it because you sort of get the feeling that you must have an Indian on just to make it look better. They probably feel just that way.

Senator Pearson: In Mayo, you have a bank, have you?

Dr. Clarke: No.

Senator Pearson: Can you grow your own vegetables in that area?

Dr. Clarke: No, not really.

Senator Pearson: Not too well?

Dr. Clarke: No.

Mr. Baker: No, it is too wet.

Senator Pearson: Thank you.

Senator Quart: Did I understand you to say that a bag of potatoes costs \$18.00?

Mr. Baker: Yes.

The Chairman: The brief delivered by the Yukon Native Brotherhood has on page 14 a list of articles giving the normal, the Ottawa and the Ross River prices. You will find that very interesting. I believe they will be about the same as in yours. What are the Ross River prices?

Dr. Clarke: I don't really know. I can only say for sure that there is about one third more charge than in Whitehorse.

Senator Fergusson: I was just wondering about potatoes at that high price. I was just wondering would it pay you to use instant potatoes because they could be brought in cheaper?

Dr. Clarke: I really don't know.

Mr. Baker: I have never really eaten them.

Senator Fergusson: Well, a lot of people like them better than the others.

Dr. Clarke: The things that are priced reasonably high are the fresh fruits, the meat and canned goods. However, people need these items.

Senator Fergusson: There are one or two other small things that I would like to ask although the subject has been covered pretty well.

You say on page three:

Until the present, the adult education classes in Mayo have not been free.

Does that mean that they are not free now or does it mean up to the present time they have not been free?

Dr. Clarke: Up to the present they were not free and up until the time we wrote the material they were still not free.

Senator Fergusson: I didn't quite understand that.

Dr. Clarke: They are not free now, but they may be someday.

Senator Hastings: Who sets the curriculum for the courses?

Dr. Clarke: The Territorial Department of Education.

The Chairman: When you say "is not free," what does your fee look like?

Dr. Clarke: About \$10 or \$12.

Senator Fournier: A month?

Dr. Clarke: No, for the course. The course usually runs about six weeks.

Senator Fergusson: On page five you mention that there is no probation officer in Mayo to enforce the kind of sentences that they give the young people. Are there any probation officers in other parts of the Yukon?

Dr. Clarke: There is one in Whitehorse who comes to Mayo. Sometimes someone in Mayo will act as probation officer.

Senator Fergusson: Voluntarily?

Dr. Clarke: Voluntarily.

The Chairman: How many probation officers do they have in Whitehorse, do you know?

Dr. Clarke: I have no idea how many come from Whitehorse.

The Chairman: Senator Carter?

Senator Carter: Just while we have Dr. Clarke with us, I would like to get his opinion on education. Education—somebody decides what the child has to learn. Is that geared at all to the kind of life they are going to live or is it just geared towards an academic role in life?

Dr. Clarke: Well, generally speaking, no.

Senator Carter: Does it provide for them to go on to university or for them to learn how to build their own homes and live in this area?

Dr. Clarke: No.

Mr. Baker: No.

The Chairman: You have the floor, sir.

Mr. J. H. Jones: I would just like to clarify a few points. First, regarding probation officers. There are two probation officers in the Yukon. I am one of them and the function of the probation officer is to travel with the courts. Both probation officers are based in Whitehorse and when the court moves to an area a probation officer goes there and a person who is placed on probation in such communities as Dawson or Mayo—they are supervised by a probation officer from Whitehorse who covers that district.

There are volunteer community supervisors set up in these areas to provide on the spot supervision of these young people.

The Chairman: That practice is used in other rural parts of Canada. That is normal. Do you have any trouble obtaining the services of some people in Mayo to do the reporting to you and that sort of "Big Brother" act?

Mr. Jones: Mayo is not my area. It is the southern part of the district. I think in Mayo there are persons who are interested in this sort of work and they do have a community spirit there. This feature of volunteer supervisors is something which has just started up with us.

Dr. Clarke: Well, I know they couldn't find a probation officer for one fellow a couple of years ago. Usually the probation officer is a case worker from Dawson who comes to

Mayo. Now, this may have changed recently but the court doesn't come to Mayo that often.

Mr. Jones: I think it depends on the number of cases.

Dr. Clarke: Well, they haven't been there for a long time.

Mr. Jones: Yes, but the procedure has changed. They have changed the department and they have added one adult probation officer since the end of last year. So it has changed a little bit.

The Chairman: Dr. Clarke, we are very appreciative of both you and Mr. Baker. In addition to thanking you, we wish you a safe journey on that road which is something less than a great one. Take it easy because you had a hard job getting down here.

The problems are not great in numbers but what goes on in the community is significant. There are 12 people there who are working and three who are on social assistance. The problem is there. You have been asked to present cases to us, and whether there are 12 or 1,200 really does not make a difference. You have performed a service in coming here, and we appreciate it very much. I am sure that Mayo thanks you, and certainly on behalf of this committee I take this opportunity to thank you. Thank you very much.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

"RESPECTING POVERTY IN THE
YUKON TERRITORY—1970"

(A brief presented to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty at Whitehorse, Yukon on Wednesday, July 22, 1970)

INTRODUCTION

The Yukon Family Counselling Service undertook a Territory-wide survey in order to obtain factual information for the preparation of this brief. Two questionnaires were constructed for the survey.

Questionnaire No. 1 (Appendix A) was designed to collect data from a broad geographic and a broad economic representation of the Territorial population. It was distributed throughout the Territory and was administered by volunteer teams of interviewers. Two hundred and four replies from twelve different communities were received.

Questionnaire No. 2 (Appendix B) was an attempt to sample some opinions about poverty in Yukon from the non-poor. A relatively affluent Whitehorse suburb was chosen as the geographic locus for this survey and eighty-four replies were obtained.

It is recognized by Yukon Family Counselling Service that our samples are small and cannot be considered statistically comprehensive; however, we have no doubt that the information obtained does indicate actual problem areas and does delineate, at least in outline if not in detail, the shape of poverty in Yukon.

One aspect of our methodology which is perhaps important to mention is that fact that we did not begin with a definition of poverty; we deliberately avoided an initial definition in the hope that we might in this way avoid also some bias in our findings. Thus our definition (page 7) arises out of the questionnaires and out of the experiences and observations of our volunteer interviewers and other workers.

ANALYSIS OF DATA

Figure 1 below indicates the ethnic origin of the sample responding to Questionnaire No. 1. The native population (Indian and Metis) accounts for nearly half of our sample despite the fact that they account for slightly less than 20 per cent of the total Yukon population—this disproportion will obviously affect the results of the survey somewhat.

In comparing the results from the two questionnaires, we find that marital relationships are reportedly more variable among respondents of the first questionnaire than for respondents of the second questionnaire.

Results from questionnaire No. 1 indicate that 12 per cent of those surveyed were separated from their spouses, 12 per cent were living in a common-law arrangement and 3 per cent were divorced. The results of questionnaire No. 2 indicate that only 2 per cent were separated, and there were no reports of common-law practice or divorce. As these latter statistics are not congruent with national statistics, we must assume either that our sample was too small, the respondents were not telling the entire truth or this particular suburb is statistically anomalous in this regard. The last mentioned possibility is not unlikely.

The average number of dependents reported on questionnaire No. 2 was 3.5 per family; on questionnaire No. 1, the number of dependents was reported as 4.0 per family while for the Indian and Metis sub-sample which was extrapolated the number of dependents was 5.5 per family.

The questions relating to employment and income were very revealing. Forty-eight per cent (48 per cent) of the respondent to questionnaire No. 1 were unemployed at the time the survey was taken and 52 per cent of the Indian-Metis sub-sample were unemployed. There were no unemployed reported from questionnaire No. 2.

Figure 2 illustrates the comparison of income reported by: (a) the total sample from questionnaire 1; and (b) the Indian-Metis sub-sample.

Figure 3 includes the information from figure 2 and adds the information from questionnaire no. 2 for the sake of comparison.

Levels of educational attainment show a high positive correlation with income. Respondents from questionnaire No. 2 reported 67 per cent graduated from high school or had post secondary training of one kind or another. The composite response from questionnaire No. 1 indicates that 68 per cent had less than high school graduation while the Indian-Metis sub-sample indicates that 92 per cent achieved less than high school entrance.

The various governmental "transfer payments" contribute very substantially to the

Figure 1

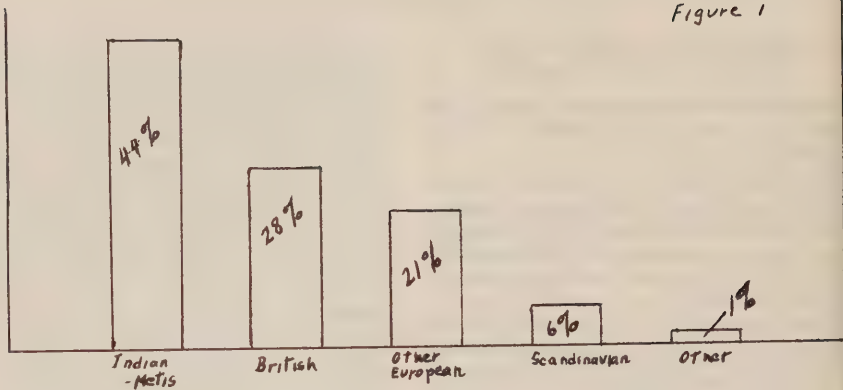


Figure 2

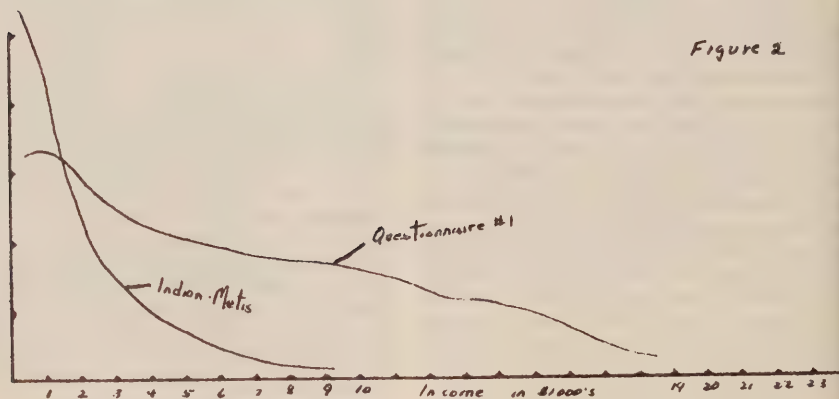
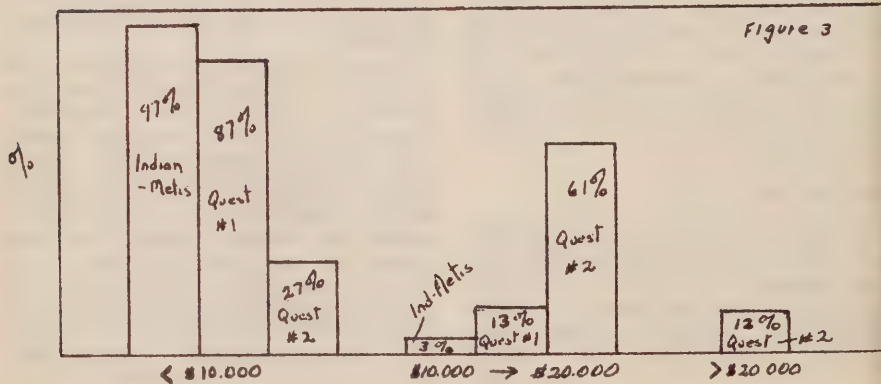


Figure 3



total income of families reporting to a questionnaire No. 1. Thirty-four per cent of that sample received direct assistance from either the Territorial Dept. of Social Welfare or the Federal Dept. of Indian Affairs and Northern Development.

The Canadian Medical Association brief to the Senate Committee on Poverty stressed the "intimate relationship between poverty and poor health" and our survey bears out this contention as well as indicating that health services and people are not always able to get together. Thus, twenty per cent of those responding to questionnaire No. 1 indicated that adequate local health services were not available (see appendix C listing distribution of local health services in Yukon). Thirteen per cent have never seen a dentist, thirty-nine per cent have never visited an optometrist and twenty per cent have never been hospitalized.

A common complaint of many Indians and some foster parents in the White horse area is that Indians will not be given treatment at the Whitehorse Medical Clinic but are instead referred to the Whitehorse Hospital outpatients' clinic. The excuse which is given is that the Indians' medical records are at the hospital.

Foster parents who have Indian children and "white" children in their homes may take the white child to the Medical Clinic but must take the Indian child to the hospital. Indian people interpret this sort of thing as rank discrimination.

Another interesting facet of our survey related to the incidence of involvement with law enforcement agencies. Twenty-three per cent of the respondents to questionnaire No. 1 admitted that they had been convicted of a criminal offense—for the Indian-Metis subsample, this figure was thirty-five per cent.

Housing, which is a persistent problem nationally, is a problem here as well and for the affluent as well as for the poor. The fact that adequate housing is scarce at any qualitative level is only indicative of one aspect of the poverty problem in Yukon. Other aspects are indicated by the fact that only thirty-seven per cent of people surveyed by questionnaire No. 1 own their own home while fifty per cent of those answering questionnaire No. 2 own their own home. This latter figure may seem abnormally low until one is reminded that a substantial proportion of the population of the suburb in question work for the government and are therefore provided with rental housing.

A further indication of the privation of many of our Yukon residents is the fact that only twenty-six percent (26.4 per cent) of those responding to questionnaire no. 1 lived in houses with sewer and water, twenty-nine percent (29 per cent) had telephones and sixty-nine percent (69.2 percent) had electricity in their homes. These bare statistics fail completely to illustrate the degree of poverty which epitomizes many, many Yukon homes: the lack of proper lighting in which to work or read or study, the lack of space in which to do homework, the lack of privacy, the lack of sanitary facilities and surroundings. One thing which every home does in our materialist society is to act as a status symbol and for many poor people their homes proclaim loudly their status: the lowest.

The rationale behind the creation of questionnaire no 2 was really two-fold; it was:

1. to accumulate local data as a base for comparison; and
2. to elicit from a relatively affluent group their ideas and attitudes relating to poverty and to poor people.

That this group really was "relatively affluent" is attested by the fact that seventy-four percent (74 per cent) of them reported incomes in excess of ten thousand dollars per annum while eighty-nine (88.9 percent) of the respondents to questionnaire no. 1 reported incomes of less than ten thousand dollars per annum.

Some of the more interesting and significant responses from the use of questionnaire no. 2 follow.

This group generally define poverty in terms of living conditions. Their home surroundings, their conversation and their responses to questioning all attest to an overriding interest in things, in status and in the "good life." There seems to be little awareness of the problems of the poor and little philosophic grasp of the means of dealing with poverty and development.

As to the causes of poverty, a majority, fifty-one percent (51 percent) attribute poverty to lack of education, twenty percent (20 percent) believe that poverty is due to lack of initiative on the part of the individual; the rest believe that poverty is due to a variety of causes such as lack of employment opportunities, high cost of living, over-consumption of alcohol or even social injustice. Only about seven percent (7 percent) indicated that they perceived poverty in more complex terms

requiring a global approach for its eradication.

Sixty-one percent (61 percent) of this group believe that poverty in Yukon is primarily associated with Indians and sixteen percent (16 percent) of this sub-group named discrimination as the major cause of Indian poverty.

When asked which governmental or non-governmental programs actually contribute to the creation or continuance of poverty in Yukon, thirty-five percent (35 percent) stated that existing welfare policies and priorities were to blame.

In seeking solutions to the problem of poverty, fifty percent (50 percent) of those answering questionnaire no. 2 felt that greater development of Yukon's natural resources would help alleviate existing conditions. Thirty-five percent (35 percent) reacted favorably to the concept of a guaranteed annual income while forty-four percent (44 percent) were opposed.

In answer to the question "How much money is required to live comfortably in Yukon?", the average response was nearly nine thousand dollars per annum (8,787.00) and the modal response was ten thousand dollars (10,000.00).

SUMMARY OF FINDINGS

Poverty is a significant problem in Yukon and is so perceived by the poor and the affluent alike. It has a broad geographic distribution and is characterized by economic disadvantage and by an inability on the part of the poor to utilize the resources of our society to satisfy their own needs and wants adequately.

It is recognized that poverty is a relative concept; we are not talking about famine and pestilence as it is known in many parts of the world; we are talking about economic hardship, political powerlessness, social alienation, lack of services, lack of self esteem, and a loss of hope for improvement which results in a loss of trust in our laws and other social institutions. This kind of poverty is just as debilitating, just as morally degrading and just as destructive of human purpose as the more dramatic forms of poverty experienced by other peoples in other places.

DEFINITION OF POVERTY

Poverty is a social sickness in the relationship between peoples and between people and institutions which results in lack of, or loss of, social and economic opportunities for a significant minority of our population.

It follows from the above definition that the solution to the so-called poverty problem does not lie in labelling one group poor and applying remedial measures to them alone; rather we must attack the relationship and this of course will involve dealing with the affluent as well as the poor. Our Canadian anti-poverty experience in the past decade has made abundantly clear that motivation of the poor to help themselves will not work without an intensive educational program aimed at the non-poor to convince them that they must make room for the poor to move up the economic and social ladders. Thus far, in the absence of such broad spectrum educational programs the affluent who sit in positions of power and influence in our society have been blatantly jealous of their position and power and quite unwilling to give up or share either for a wider common good.

One aspect of the poverty syndrome which should provide government with a point of attack lies in its own implication in the continuance of poverty. Social workers and teachers who find it impossible to understand and empathize with clients from different cultural origins than their own or different economic status than their own should be trained to be more effective or should be removed from that special responsibility.

Doctors, nurses, police, counsellors and administrators who are hired to serve people should be reminded of this trust. One of the commonest problems which the poor report is their inability to get appropriate service from government agencies. Too often the government representative, in whatever service specialty, seems more concerned about his agencies welfare than his clients. It is true that under normal circumstances agencies tend to create rules which assist them to operate organizations qua organization or which make things easier for their own personnel to operate. Some of these rules however serve as accidental or deliberate barriers to communication with the public. Whenever citizen with a linguistic or cultural disadvantage come to the agencies these rules may at times seem almost insurmountable to them. To make the point even more explicitly: it is also a fact that some agency personnel will deliberately use the rules (called : proper channels) to delay, deflect or deny petitions from anyone whose appearance or behaviour they may not approve.

Throughout our survey many of those who reported lower incomes and many people of Indian ancestry reported a considerable

degree of difficulty in communicating with many civil servants who reportedly appear condescending or discriminatory in their attitudes or simply uninterested in them as people.

Yukon Family Counselling Service might report its own problem of communication with certain government sources as well. In preparation of this brief, we asked the Acting Zone Director of Northern Health Services to supply us with the list of medical facilities in Yukon which we have appended as Appendix C. Because we were unable to interpret certain of the terms used, we phoned another official and asked her to differentiate between two or three of them. The immediate response was: "Why do you want this information?"

On another occasion we phoned to the Territorial Dept. of Social Welfare to ask for the number of illegitimate children which had been born in Yukon in the last year for which statistics were available. Again the response was: "What use to you intend to make of these statistics?"

If an accredited agency such as ours finds difficulty in obtaining simple answers to simple questions relating to public information, it is not surprising that poor people might find communication channels difficult to establish and maintain.

RECOMMENDATIONS

1. The first thing which Canadians must do in the face of the poverty amidst affluence in our land is to state clearly, forcibly and unequivocally that it is our common intention to eradicate poverty as an acceptable condition for citizens of this country.

This will be a statement of policy and because of the nature of the problem the statement must be initiated by the federal parliament. Part of the role of government in this action will be to undertake an extensive public education program with the stated aims of unveiling poverty in Canada, making Canadians aware of the present cost of maintaining twenty percent of their numbers in poverty and investigating means to overcome poverty. Surely, the finding of your Committee will form the base of some such education program.

There is no doubt in our minds that poverty can be overcome in Canada. We have the commercial-industrial base, the political stability, the sociological know-how and the personnel. What we really lack is the commitment and part of this commitment will come

from a general understanding of the extent of poverty and its present cost to the nation.

2. We also recommend a meeting of fifty to sixty of Canada's corporate leaders in an informal setting, out of the view of the press or public, to discuss the question of the corporations social responsibility. This is not an entirely airy thought—something similar had been suggested at the last Canadian Chamber of Commerce meeting in Halifax last year.

3. It is recommended that the federal government in conjunction with the several provincial and territorial jurisdictions begin an immediate investigation regarding the feasibility of introducing some type of guaranteed annual income plan which is tied to a regional cost of living index. It is important that the cost of living index be regional rather than national because of the economic disparities which might otherwise be involved. It must be recognized that such a plan would not be a panacea for poverty but would in fact only have positive results if there is a concomitant social and cultural input and people are motivated to involve themselves in decisions affecting their personal and community well-being.

4. Our local survey which was cursory in the extreme because of its own poverty problem, revealed more than anything else the need for a proper study of poverty in Yukon. We therefore recommend that the Territorial government either alone or in conjunction with the federal government contract with a non-governmental agency to undertake such a study in depth in 1971.

5. Because delivery of services is such a commonly expressed complaint of the poor it is recommended that personnel in education, health, law enforcement and welfare be encouraged through pay and promotion to develop their skills at relating to their clients in a manner which will be perceived as helpful by the clients.

6. Because our Indian and Metis population seem to be suffering most severely from cultural, economic and social deprivation, it is important that special efforts be made to enable them to compete successfully in our society. Experience from such diverse places as Mexico, Hawaii and New Zealand have indicated that aboriginal peoples make the best adaptation to new social forms when their native cultures are respected and developed. As a means of assisting native Canadian

ans to improve their own self image and therefore their ability to adapt to modern Canadian society, we recommend that every effort be made to encourage the creation of a positive image for people of Indian ancestry in Canada. We further recommend that the various departments of education should be encouraged to promote local Indian language

and culture through use of Indian teaching assistants and where possible, the use of a local Indian language as a language of instruction in the first three grades in areas where the use of the Indian language is indicated—perhaps in terms similar to those outlined in the Bi and Bi Commission reports for use of French and English.

APPENDIX "B"

DAY CARE NEEDS OF THE POOR

A Brief

Presented to the Special Senate
Committee on Poverty

July 22, 1970

I. Day Care and Poverty—A Philosophy

Poverty is a relative term and it is not our intention in this brief to attempt a comprehensive definition. We will instead mention only two aspects of poverty which are of particular relevance to the Child Care Centre Society. First, there is typically an imbalance between income and cost of living, often to the point where a family becomes totally dependent on welfare. Second, there is often a cultural pattern of life or set of circumstances which make it impossible for a family to participate in and receive the benefits of our free enterprise and work-oriented society.

Day care is essentially a child welfare service and it has been described as the "starved stepchild of the welfare field". The primary aim of day care is to provide adequate care during the working day for the children of parents who must work and are unable to find reliable and satisfactory caretakers for their children. This is not to suggest that child care is, or even should be, only for parents who are economically unable to provide care for their children but child care does offer a service to a large group of people for whom the threat of poverty has a real meaning: low income families where both parents must work, "single-parent families", meaning not only working mothers but often working fathers, and the physically or mentally handicapped. The service provided by a day care centre can often mean the difference between total dependence on welfare and at least a partial ability to stand on one's own two feet with all the implications that has for a person's psychological and social well-being.

II. Child Care Centre Society, Whitehorse, Yukon

The Child Care Centre Society of Whitehorse, a non-profit organization, was formed in part to meet the needs of the group just described. The Centre was officially opened by Madame Jean Chretien in February, 1969

22423-4½

and since opening it has served over 100 children. Of these, the fees for about one-third were subsidized by the Society. This group included self-supporting working mothers, low income working fathers (where the mother was absent by reason of legal separation or hospitalization for physical or mental ill health), low income families where both parents worked in order to meet the basic needs of their family, and self-supporting parents who were taking retraining, upgrading or vocational training.

Briefly, the aims of the Child Care Society are:

1. To establish day care centres in the Yukon as community projects supported and used by the citizens;
2. To maintain the highest possible standard both of operation and of compliance with fire and health regulations;
3. To formulate a program to develop each child within the scope of his own talent, and
4. To establish standards of day care in the Yukon.

In terms of the poverty question, centres such as those proposed could be expected to:

1. Reduce dependence on welfare by allowing those who would do so to support themselves as fully as possible;
2. Assist, in particular, women who are heads of families;
3. Provide special attention to children in all conditions of deprivation, hopefully breaking the vicious circle of poverty breeding poverty;
4. Restore indigent adults to gainful employment, and
5. Offer a unique opportunity for uncontrived contact with mothers from the "culture of poverty"—mothers who are in need of advice, assistance and example in child care.

III. "The Starved Stepchild"

The establishment and operation of our day care centre in Whitehorse has been a chancy and an uphill battle, not because of lack of community support, not because of lack of human resources, not because of lack of need for the service, not because of lack of know-

how, but simply because of lack of money. Our sources of revenue to date have been sporadic and unreliable. The Centre has operated on money received from fees, Territorial Community Development Grants, private donations and fund raising activities within the community. We have, as well, presented a brief to Territorial Council requesting financial support for the care of children whose parent or parents cannot pay the full rate.

The Child Care Centre has refused to compromise its ideal of exemplary child care and it has never turned away a child because of the parent's inability to pay. The resulting budget deficiency has been met in part by donations from the community but the incessant campaign necessary to continue operating on this basis is taxing both on the resources of the society and the patience and goodwill of the donors in a community that already is noted for its generosity.

IV. Recommendations

Our experience in this small community is not unique and it points out the need for a

comprehensive program to support the establishment and operation of day care centres. We, therefore, recommend:

1. That Federal funds be made available for capital expenditures in the establishment of day care centres;

2. That special encouragement be given to the establishment of such centres in areas identified as "poverty pockets" or "local poverty ghettos"; and

3. That a Federal department undertake to provide information and advice on the development and programming of child care centres.

Presented by:

J. P. Kehoe
for the
Child Care Centre Society,
Whitehorse, Yukon.

July 22, 1970

APPENDIX "C"

Summary of Brief on Poverty
to be presented to the Senate Committee on
Poverty by the
Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service
Society

Page 1

This brief has been prepared by the Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service Society, of Mayo, Yukon Territory, a small group of men and women of varied ethnic origin, the larger part of the group being Canadian Indian Women. The main objectives of the group are to improve the standard of living, especially in families where there is a tendency for child neglect; to learn about and promote constructive action in the field of child welfare; to encourage underprivileged families to take advantage of family counselling services and to encourage those who come to meetings to voice their opinions and feelings, with hopes that at least some of the meetings may be group psychotherapeutic and group community counselling sessions.

Definition of Poverty. Poverty has been defined as having physical, (material) and spiritual aspects.

Physical Poverty defined.

Spiritual Poverty defined.

Page 2

The Area Considered By The Brief. The region discussed is the Mayo area, that which is direct experience of the members of the Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service Society.

Cultural Groups living in Mayo are defined followed by a discussion of Poverty with respect to "job status", those who are the employers and those who are employees and suggestion to form co-op logging operations.

The Community Club executive is discussed briefly.

Next there is a discussion of the Annual Gross Incomes of 41 people in Mayo. This reveals extremes of affluence as well as extremes of Poverty. There is an obvious relationship between poverty and "Indian status" citizens.

Page 3

A recommendation that there be a Guaranteed Annual Income has been made as well as

the estimated required annual income to live in Mayo.

Employment opportunities in the Area are scarce. More jobs must be made available and as lack of education is a primary defect among the impoverished, adult education programmes must be instituted after a period of promotion among those who will benefit from adult education programmes. The opinion of Indian members with regard to the type of programme needed is significant.

Page 4

Indian Housing and Social Assistance for "Indian status" and "white status" indigents is criticized and seven recommendations to improve the situation have been made.

Page 5

The encouragement of segregation by legally defining Indians is discussed.

Poverty in the Courts of Law has been discussed. Since lack of money, lack of proper facilities and lack of properly trained personnel have been given as reasons for this condition, money, facilities and personnel must be made available.

Page 6

Poverty in the Administration of government departments has been discussed, especially Education, Social Welfare, Child Welfare, Municipal Affairs and Engineering.

Page 7

Poverty of recreation and the need to develop local potential leadership have been discussed.

Poverty at the political level has been noted and discussed.

Page 8

Comments by a member who holds a political position have been listed.

Page 9

A discussion of the high cost and low standard of living in Mayo is discussed.

Page 10

A recommendation is made that the Federal Government investigate monopolistic practices in the Yukon to determine the proportion of private profit to public benefit.

Poverty of self respect, pride, respect for property, self discipline and humanitarianism is discussed.

The economic status of Old Age Pensioners is discussed.

Brief on Poverty to be presented to the Senate Committee on Poverty by the Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service Society

This brief has been prepared by the Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service Society, of Mayo, Yukon Territory, a small group of men and women of varied ethnic origin, the larger part of the group being Canadian Indian Women. The main objectives of the group are to improve the standard of living, especially in families where there is a tendency for child neglect; to learn about and promote constructive action in the field of child welfare; to encourage underprivileged families to take advantage of family counselling services and to encourage these who come to meetings to voice their opinions and feelings, with hopes that at least some of the meetings may be group psychotherapeutic and group community counselling sessions.

Definition of Poverty

Poverty may be defined as an insufficiency of physical and spiritual necessities.

Physical Poverty

Physical necessities consist of nourishing, palatable foods; clothing suitable to the climate; housing with "modern conveniences"; heating; medical care and all those things which can be bought with money.

Spiritual Poverty

By spiritual poverty, we mean a poverty of psychical means and incentives to enthusiastic and energetic psychological development and a poverty of purpose in living.

A poverty of material things and spiritual poverty seem to go together. We believe that leaving people in spiritual poverty while supplying material needs is not the answer to the problem of poverty; but that if the spiritual needs are filled then the poor themselves will be better equipped to overcome their material poverty and will make more efficient use of material needs provided.

In spiritual poverty we would include a poverty of leadership and followership; the poor quality of administration by civil servants in all government departments and the poverty of ideas resulting from changing policies and personnel with no effective continuity.

Area Considered by Brief

The Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service Society felt that it should confine its brief to conditions directly experienced by people in this area.

Cultural Groups Involved

There are three ethnic groups in this area;

1. Canadian Indians (legally defined).
2. Varied European ethnic groups, (this group includes those people born and raised in Europe and includes English; Slavic; German; etc., cultures).
3. Canadians of European descent, (this group includes only those born and raised in Canada, some of whom are part Canadian Indian descent and are not included in group 1.).

Poverty re Status of Employers and Employees

Poverty is shown in the "Job Status" conditions in Mayo. In general, all the top positions in Mayo are held by "whites" of either category 2 or 3.

At the hospital all the positions are held by "whites" except the wardaide, janitor, laundress, and cook's assistance, (dish washer). In the Forestry Department, there is one permanent and one seasonal Indian employee—the other two positions and the man in charge are "white". The top position in Government Road Construction is held by a half-Indian of "white status". In the logging industry, the employers are "white", making very high gross incomes, the employees are Indian and half-Indian drawing minimum wages. The work is seasonal.

It has been suggested that there be a sharing of proceeds among workers in the form of a co-operative logging operation; a training programme in Forestry and encouragement for employees to improve their work qualifications by taking subsidized educational courses.

Community Club

There is no Indian representative on the Community Club executive. Those Indians approached to accept positions on the executive refused.

Annual Gross Incomes in Mayo

Annual gross incomes in the Mayo area in the survey done by one member of the Yukon Social Service Society Branch range from none to \$42,000.00 with Canadian Indians in the lower income brackets.

This survey was a sampling of Gross Incomes of only 41 people of the population, but the trend seems apparent. It must be understood that this is not the Net Income and has no bearing on taxable income, but it does reveal that there are extremes of material poverty as well as affluence in the community. It should be understood that those with means are widely divorced in outlook and do not feel that it is their duty to provide for the impoverished.

Nine—"white", over \$20,000.00

Three—"white", between \$10,000.00 and \$20,000.00

Fifteen—"white", \$5,000.00 to \$10,000.00 (This includes government employees, etc.)

Two—one Indian, one "white"—between \$3,000.00 and \$5,000.00

Twelve—Indian—under \$3,000.00

Guaranteed Annual Income

It was recommended that the government institute a guaranteed annual income policy to maintain an adequate income, basing the estimate on family size and cost of living fluctuations. We concluded that a single person required \$3,500.00 to \$4,000.00 a year to live in any comfort in this area and a family of two adults and two children, \$6,000.00 a year.

Employment Opportunities—and Adult Education

As the employment opportunities are scarce in this area, it is believed that more jobs should be made available for both skilled and unskilled workers. It was recommended that educational opportunities for training, on the job training and other adult educational programmes be instituted to raise the educational level of those who suffer from an educational deficiency. It has to be kept in mind that many adults have not passed the grade III level in school. Such a programme will be effective only if a strenuous promotion precedes it. Few people want education for its own sake and feel that education is its own reward and others will have to be convinced that there is something to be gained (namely, a better income) from the time spent in upgrading their educational level. At this time few people will take advantage of an adult educational programme but since this is a primary effect in this region among the impoverished, its value must be "sold" to those who will benefit from it. It was determined from those in the teaching profession that though adult

education classes have been offered, both at Mayo and Whitehorse, those who need them do not take advantage of them. Until the present, the adult education classes in Mayo have not been free. It was noted by Indian members of the Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service Society that adult education programmes offered in Mayo were of no benefit to the Indians. "It is not typing, cooking and sewing they need, that will come later after they have learned to read, speak and write English comprehensively." We recommend that free educational facilities academic and non-academic, be provided for adults after a period of promotion.

Indian Housing

We investigated the construction and results of one house provided by the Department of Indian Affairs for one "Indian status" woman and her children. The house required ten months to build and was completed last year. It is a log cabin with two bedrooms, a living room, kitchen and bathroom; for nine persons; no furniture was supplied but some furniture was given to the woman by people of Mayo. The house is heated by a wood furnace, (firewood is very difficult to obtain in Mayo). It has electricity and is hooked up to the Mayo sewer and water facilities.

The total cost of this structure was in the region of \$12,000.00 and at present it is not worth more than \$5,000.00.

Another similar cabin, with the same number of small rooms and three beds was provided for four adults. This house was the first one built, as it was deemed necessary to provide, as quickly as possible, a home for a paraplegic so that he could be cared for at home rather than take up a hospital residence indefinitely. The doors of this building will not accommodate a wheel chair and he cannot get into the bathroom or use it at all, (the wheel chair will not fit in it), because it is too small.

Another family has tried for four years to obtain better housing, first from the Social Welfare and more recently from the Department of Indian Affairs. This family lives in a one room cabin, divided for convenience into three small compartments. In the summer months, three adults and seven children reside there. In the winter, three of the children are away from Mayo at school.

Most of the Indians live in that part of Mayo near the mouth of the Mayo River and lack sewer and water facilities. There is a broken pump provided and beside the fact

that the pump does not work, the water was rusty and bad when the pump was working nine years ago. A great deal of river water is used. The town sewer opens not far from the Indian village— $\frac{1}{4}$ mile upstream from it.

The status of two women on social assistance with large dependent families was compared. One is of "white" status, the other of "Indian" status. It was found that the "white" status woman received 100 per cent more social assistance from the Territorial Social Welfare than the "Indian" status woman who must get her assistance from the Department of Indian Affairs.

It was recommended that there be:

1. One Social Assistance Department for both Indian and non-Indians.
2. That better supervision of building of Indian residences be provided.
3. That local conditions be considered when designing housing.
4. That the number of persons expected to live in the houses built be considered.
5. That the opinion of the prospective occupants be regarded and,
6. That civil servants involved in Government Departments who deal directly with people be delegated from those who feel dedicated to serving the public and whose aim is public benefit, rather than private prestige or profit.
7. It was suggested by Indian members, that the government, (or Department of Indian Affairs), should "allow Indians to buy the houses built for them over a period of years, on a small rental basis." The Indians could then enjoy the comfort and esteem of owning their own homes.

Legal Definition of Indian

Another aspect of poverty involves the legally defining of Indian people. This legal definition of "Indian status" and "non-Indian status", is the erection of a legal barrier to those of Indian status, making it necessary to create government branches in duplicate at various levels of government, one for Indians and one for non-Indians, and the Indians never fare as well as the non-Indians. The segregation at the legal level creates and encourages segregation at all levels creating feelings of inferiority, lack of self-esteem and intolerance on an ethnic basis. We recommend that there be no legal definition of "Indian" and "non-Indian".

Poverty Reflected in Courts of Law

Poverty is reflected in courts and in the care and disposal of delinquent children. There is a tendency to send children home on probation when they are found guilty of committing acts of delinquency, e.g.—breaking entering and stealing. There is no probation officer in Mayo to enforce this kind of sentence. The same few children are found guilty of such acts over and over again and though they are investigated psychologically, socially and medically; and though authoritative, considered advice is given on the basis of a thorough workup of the individual involved, action aimed to direct the child toward a stable, well-adjusted, responsible adulthood is very rarely taken and since the children grow and soon become adult delinquents, each case is urgent. Delay in taking the proper measures to turn a child's path to a constructive self-controlled existence is inexcusable. The reasons given for not helping these children and society is that there is a lack of money, lack of proper facilities and lack of properly trained personnel.

Poverty in Administration of Government Departments

It was revealed that there is a poor quality of administration by civil servants in all government departments. The Superintendent of Education on his visits to Mayo for the past three years has spent much of his short visits here discussing the erection of a fence around the school building. The proposed fence is never built and so becomes a subject which can be used to talk around essential conditions in the school classrooms. There has been frequent failure to advise the students as to what course and what subject must be studied to fill prerequisites for further training. Students find that they are lacking certain subjects required to enroll in the curriculum of their choice in universities and other institutions of learning and training in the Provinces.

The Department of Social Welfare, (Territorial), has avoided issues that is within the domain. Poor housing in at least two families has been for years "solved" by the Department of Social Welfare with empty promises.

In the Department of Child Welfare, until the present, there has been little action taken to help the majority of deprived, socially and mentally retarded children. The Mayo Branch of the Yukon Social Service Society has already written a brief to the Commissioner of the Territory with regard to the Department.

ment of Social Welfare. There was some difficulty in getting it to the Commissioner, as the Whitehorse Branch according to the by-laws, must pass all formal briefs that are submitted in the name of the society. The difficulty arose from the fact that some in Whitehorse, at the Annual General Meeting, believed it to be a personal attack on the Director of Social Welfare. Any criticism of a government department, apparently can be taken as a person attack if the director is so inclined to feel that way, or if others feel that he may be the one at fault. Anyway, the brief was passed unanimously by the Whitehorse directors and was presented to the Commissioner.

A sewer line on one street in Mayo broke about the middle of April, 1970. It had broken other times before, (the sewer-water line was put in Mayo in 1966) and this street now has ground filled with sewage. At this writing, June 16, 1970, the line has not yet been repaired and various excuses have been offered for this incompetence. It is a public health emergency, involving the local Trustees of the Local Improvement District and the Engineering Department of the Territorial government.

This emergency should have been removed and been worked on 24 hours a day until it was controlled. Instead, the families on the street were told not to use their toilets (or the sewer line—i.e. stop washing clothes, dishes, etc.). This ridiculous, impractical solution, which at least one family refused to succumb to has been used as an excuse;—i.e. because this family insists on using the sewer line for these eight weeks, sewage is contaminating the area widely.

There is a poverty of tradesmen qualified to correct this sewer breakage and no supervision from those qualified to oversee the job.

The water in the town is not being chlorinated due to similar unacceptable excuses.

It is easier to "talk around" actual factual problems than to take necessary action or obtain necessary money.

Officials escape responsibilities by making promises and then expressing their hostility to criticism and demands put upon them by a kind of passive resistance and inaction.

Poverty of Recreation

It has long been recognized that a full time welfare worker would be of great benefit to Mayo. Juvenile delinquency, poor management of welfare money by recipients and

child neglect are only three of the conditions that could improve with the guidance of a qualified leader.

There is also need for a recreational director for the District, as few 8 a.m. to 5 p.m. workmen are available, who are willing or capable of doing this important work. When the business of recreation is broached, it is always suggested that "someone" in the village volunteer to organize and direct a programme. Most people who are interested in the welfare of young people are too busy making a living for their immediate families to devote much time to others. It is not right to expect school teachers to undertake this work after spending all day in school with the youngsters. Many teachers do take on this added duty.

Development of Local Potential

With a welfare worker having recreational director's qualifications serving full time in Mayo, many problems could be solved and money saved on one hand could go a long way towards paying a qualified director. It is believed that there are some young people living here who have true leadership qualities who should be sent to centres to learn the techniques of social work and be trained in the arts and sciences of leadership.

Poverty at Political Level

We believe that we have poverty at the political level, in that our political "representatives" are inadequate in instituting or recommending policies directed toward means to alleviate conditions of poverty and conditions which underlie poverty and place personal promotion and their political careers before their constituents' stresses and demands.

The following comments were made by a member who holds a political position in the Community.

a. "At the Federal level; if a single elected member from the Yukon does not have the ear of the government in power, there is little chance of creating policy especially in the field of the humanities. Our small population in relation to areas which are extremely depressed, (e.g. the Maritimes) leave a single representative in a poor bargaining position.

b. At the Territorial level; the members of Territorial Council are very limited in what they can and cannot do in the way of improving anything. The Yukon Act, a Federal Act, sets out the guide



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament
1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA
PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

N° 59

LIBRARY

THURSDAY, JULY 23, 1970

★ OCT -7 1970 ★

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO

WITNESSES:

Yukon Native Brotherhood. The Consumer's Association of the
Yukon Territory.

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for the names of the witnesses
who were heard by the Committee.)

APPENDIX:

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for a list of the Briefs printed
as appendices.)

MEMBERS OF THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Fergusson	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Carter	Fournier (<i>Madawaska-</i>	McGrand
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	<i>Restigouche,</i>	Pearson
Cook	<i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Quart
Croll	Hastings	Roebuck
Eudes	Inman	Sparrow
Everett	Lefrançois	

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—

Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The questions being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

Whitehorse, THURSDAY, July 23, 1970.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 8.45 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*); Carter, Eudes, Ferguson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand, Pearson and Quart. (10)

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administration Officer.
The following witnesses were heard:

YUKON NATIVE BROTHERHOOD:

Chief Elijah Smith;
Mr. Michael Smith;
Mr. David Joe;
Mr. John Hoyt, Director of Skookum Jim Hall.

A video tape recording was shown as part of the submission.

Mr. A. R. Lueck, Legal Adviser;
Dr. R. L. Shields, Superintendent of Education, Yukon Territory.

THE CONSUMER'S ASSOCIATION OF THE YUKON TERRITORY:

Mrs. Susan Burns;
Mrs. Leona Lane;
Mrs. Barbara Phillips.

At 11.45 a.m. the Committee adjourned until 2.00 p.m.

At 2.00 p.m. the Committee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*); Carter, Eudes, Ferguson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand, Pearson and Quart. (10)

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The Chairman announced that the Government of the Yukon Territory had decided to withdraw its brief.

The audience having been asked for comments, the following witness was heard:

Mr. Norman S. Chamberlist, Member of the Yukon Territory Council.

The following briefs presented to the Committee were ordered to be printed as appendices to these minutes:

"A"—Brief presented by the Yukon Native Brotherhood;

"B"—Brief presented by the Consumers' Association of Canada, Whitehorse Branch;

At 2.25 p.m. the Committee adjourned until Monday, August 3rd, 1970, in Saint John, New Brunswick.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

WHITEHORSE, July 23, 1970

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 8.45 a.m.

Senator David A. Croll (*Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, I call the meeting to order. This morning our first brief is from the Yukon Native Brotherhood. Sitting alongside me is Chief Elizah Smith, who will introduce his delegation and make a brief statement on the history of the Yukon. After that we will see a videotape presentation, and then Chief Smith will address himself to the brief.

Chief Elijah Smith, Chief of the Yukon Native Brotherhood: Mr. Chairman, honourable senators and ladies and gentlemen, it is a great pleasure you have given me to sit here and introduce the brief that we have prepared for the Yukon Native Brotherhood, which represents the Yukon Indians.

With me are Mr. Michael Smith, executive director, Mr. David Joe, probation officer, and Mr. John Hoyt, executive director, Skookum Memorial Hall.

On behalf of the Indian people of the Yukon, I welcome you to our land. We hope while you are here you will understand why we feel proud of this land. We are proud of our past and we want to be able to keep our pride in the future. We hope your committee and other people will listen to what we say and help us to learn how to live with you in the future.

The Yukon Native Brotherhood is composed of all the Indians in the Yukon. All twelve of the bands are represented on the executive. Non-status Indians are also included.

The aim of the Brotherhood is to find ways for the Yukon Indians to better himself and his family. Even Indians sometimes experi-

ence poverty, so that's what we want to talk about.

Most white men think that everyone who does not have a house, good clothes, and a car is poor. This is not true for all Indians. Many of my people do not own many expensive things, but they are rich in their pride and their feelings.

Our younger people have learned from you white people that if they do not own cars, boats and things like that, they are poor. This is wrong.

We do have people who cannot provide enough for their families. They have to accept handouts. We do not like to be in a position where we must take handouts.

In this brief we will try to explain how this situation developed. We will also tell you what we think could be done to help.

We don't know too much about poverty in other parts of Canada, but we all know that it is a fairly new problem for the Yukon Indians. In the olden days before the white man came we depended upon one another and in this way no one was poor. We shared what we had. When we had the land to ourselves we got our living from the land. Even after the fur traders and gold seekers came, we managed to pretty well look after ourselves.

We didn't sign treaties, we weren't put on reserves, we were allowed to live where we wanted and to move around. During the gold rush it was the white man who experienced poverty. Not many books about the Gold Rush have been written to tell how they starved, froze to death, and got lost. Many became dependant upon the Indians for shelter, food, clothing, transportation, and guide.

The Gold Rush didn't last long and by 1910 most Indians returned to the old way of life. We lived in camps along the Yukon, Stewart, Pelly, Hoodlinqua and Takhini River. We cut wood and sold it to the riverboats. We trapped and sold furs to the traders. We built

our own homes, cut our own firewood, killed our meat and caught our fish. With the money we got for wood and fur we bought what else we needed from the trading posts.

When the Americans came to build the Alaska Highway, most Indians made money working in camps, on airports, survey crews or the boats. From big money during the war, to no money after the war the Indian people were hard hit.

The riverboats which provided jobs and a market for wood were removed by 1950. The Indian was left stranded on the river and had to move to the new highway—or to white settlements.

The Indian could see no way to make a living in the white settlement, and this is when we first experienced poverty—less than twenty years ago. It was not only the fact that we couldn't earn a living but—more important—we had been forced to move away from our old way of life. We are still trying to learn the new way—your way. What was not done twenty years ago is what we are asking to be done now. We need to learn how to live the new way and we will give you some of our ideas how we think it can be done.

In all of our solutions there will be two things that we are aiming at. First, our pride and self-respect. Second, dollars to buy food, clothing and shelter, or to use the white man's words 'economic security'.

We are going to discuss the seven places where we have problems which can be solved. Since this is a matter we can deal with later with the other government departments, we will not go into details in this brief. You have seen some of the living conditions in the Whitehorse Indians Village. I am sorry you don't have the time to visit the villages in other areas.

Some of our comments about housing have been put into sound to go with film we have made for you. Although this is the first time we have made a film, we hope you will get some ideas of what it was like in Ross River.

Our principal housing recommendation is to allow the Indian families through his band council to choose where he wants to build his house."

(Video Film Presentation on behalf of the Yukon Native Brotherhood.)

The Chairman: Chief Smith?

Chief Elijah Smith: First of all I would like

to thank David Joe for making a fine job of being a cameraman on that trip.

Senator Quart: May I ask who paid for the film?

Chief Elijah Smith: The Yukon Native Brotherhood.

Senator Quart: Oh, they paid for it themselves?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes. The land; when we talk about poverty among the Indian people in the Yukon, we are talking many different things. A major reason for what white men call economic poverty among Indian people in the Yukon is that, unlike the white man, we are told that we do not own our own land. Yet our fathers and grandfathers and their fathers have lived in this land all their lives and considered this to be their country.

For the white man, private land ownership is the basis of all social and legal organization in Canada. The Yukon Indian suffers because his people's concept of ownership of land is completely unrecognized by the government. Land which was available for Indians to hunt, trap, and fish the old Indian ways before 1914, is now in many cases being developed by the non-Indians. Roads, industrial and mining developments are crossing and damaging our trap lines, hunting and fishing grounds. The Indian concept of land ownership recognizes the right of an individual and his family to use, live on and make a living from the land on which they live. We find it strange that white men often "own" land which they do not use. Indians did not make a living from one small plot of land. They moved over their area of land, taking what they needed and regarding their territory as belonging to the group.

This point is very important and must be understood. We are not what you refer to as migratory with no special idea of land ownership. The same as in the trap lines, a family only hunted to make a living from a particular area of land. Maybe he gets prevention from the (Indian) owner. This is why we have always said "This is our land."

Recommendations: we recommend that the government of Canada recognize its legal and moral obligations to negotiate an immediate and just settlement with the Indian people of the Yukon Territory. The United States gov-

ernment has recently completed such a settlement with native people in Alaska. Canada can no longer ignore its responsibility to take the same action.

We now call for special questions relating to land.

Senator Carter: Mr. Chairman, I'm afraid that if we start asking questions that we will not have time to finish the brief.

The Chairman: No. Chief Smith will finish it.

Senator Carter: Finish the brief?

The Chairman: Yes, finish the brief.

Chief Elijah Smith: The senators have read our descriptions of problems linked with our children's education and now we give you our recommendations:

1. Either put elementary teachers in the Indian villages to learn the

(a) Indian way, or

(b) put Indian people in the classroom to help teach the lower grades.

2. Involve Indian parents:

(a) put on school advisory committees

(b) form Indian school advisory committees in Indian villages.

(c) Consult with parents and older Indians about what parts of the "Indian way" should be taught in the schools.

(d) Invite Indian people—maybe on a part-time salary—to talk to classes—both Indian and non-Indian would benefit.

3. Design courses of study and textbooks for Yukon—including Indian culture and history.

4. Make education fit and jobs—the future of the Yukon is in mining which includes many jobs for the Indians. Remember, Yukon Indians will continue to live here—not outside.

5. More outdoor instruction promotes Indians and non-Indians.

6. Adult education in villages—maybe even in the homes—similar to Frontier College. Department of Education cannot meet the needs of local people as well as Frontier College.

7. Local group foster homes (Capital cost \$15,000 in each village)—operated by the local Indian people to replace hostels.

For example, Al Kulan's House in Ross River—available for \$1.00 per year.

8. For those children who have used the Indian language in their homes, they must be taught for the first three years in that language. This is what has been found to be necessary in Greenland, Russia and Lapland—and more recently in Quebec and Alaska.

9. Finally, give us some room for failure.

Employment and economic development. We have given the senators a long description of the way we see the future for employment and economic development and here are our recommendations:

1. An Indian Fur Buyer to travel from village to village in the winter time.

2. Compensation for damage to trap lines.

3. Someone to explain the prospector's assistance plan to those people who need it.

4. Prospectors courses for people in the villages and in the vocational schools.

5. Kids should be learning about rocks in the early grades in school, so they will become interested in mining.

6. Indian housing outside company mining towns so Indian families won't have to change their whole way of life.

7. Accommodation—single men rental—for Indians working in Whitehorse, but who came from outside the villages.

8. Run regular courses at vocational schools in co-op management—manpower could do this.

Alaska has a highly developed system of Indian and Eskimo co-ops.

9. Use a small loan and development fund—money to set up co-ops or private businesses in: Old Crow, Dawson City, Pelly, Carmacks, Whitehorse, Ross River, Haines Junction, Carcross. Old Crow has a trading post, Dawson City, fresh, dried and smoked fish, Pelly—a saw mill. A trading post at Carmack's, tourism, craft-work, cement blocks and taxi at Whitehorse. A sawmill at Ross River, a farm at Haines Junction and at Carcross tourism—boat tours on lake, fishing.

10. Employment offices in villages.

11. Indian councillors in Manpower to talk to Indians who are looking for work.

12. Indian persons to work as field workers for Manpower—he would travel around the villages and explain all about the training, apprenticeship, employment that is available.

13. The position of placement officers in Indian Affairs in Whitehorse should be transferred to either the Brotherhood or Skookum Jim Hall—as both are concerned and involved in this area.

Community development: the following are our recommendations for the community development.

1. Funds for Community Development Programs should be given to the Brotherhood so that local Indian people could be trained and put to work in the villages under the direction of the local band council.

2. Local Indian people should be trained as village constables to help enforce the law and replace the bad image of the RCMP.

3. Local Indian people should be trained to work as Recreational Directors to work for the local band councils.

4. The small group homes should be built in each village (Capital cost \$15,-000.00). This would be operated by Indian people and would be a place for old people to stay. Then they wouldn't have to leave their village to live in an old folks home or hospital.

5. Each village should have a community hall. This could be used for potlaches, sports, movies, rummage sales, dances, binges, adult education, kindergartens and many other programs.

6. Each village should have a community bath house where people could do their laundry and take a shower.

7. Fire fighting equipment, fire alarms, and public telephones would make people in the villages feel safer. Many homes burned, some with children in them.

The Indian Consumers that we have described for you in our brief the many problems confronting the Indian Consumers. Here are our recommendations:

1. Pension cheques and other financial assistance cheques should be paid bi-monthly, rather than monthly so that

people can learn to handle money in smaller amounts.

2. Programs of consumer education should be available so the Indian people can learn how to make the best use of their money.

3. Shopping aids should be hired to work in stores. They could help older people buy groceries and clothes, both in quantity and quality.

4. One deep freeze with lockers could be built in each village so that a family could store food without buying an individual freezer.

Now, most meat must be eaten when it is killed.

5. Some form of transportation should be available in villages, such as Whitehorse Indian Village and Cormacks. People live some distance from the local stores and at present have to hire taxis to take them back and forth to shop.

Communications. In our brief we have talked about the breakdown in the communication between the Indian people and the government agencies.

Here are some of the ways that we think communications should be improved:

1. Development programs which will allow nonstatus Indians to participate.

2. Field workers for Brotherhood and Friendship centres who know what programs are available.

3. Indian agents who understand the people and will explain the contents of letters and circulars.

4. Rewording of all correspondence and plans at local offices as very little which is being sent out from Ottawa, Vancouver, and Whitehorse is understood.

5. There must be more flexibility in policy so that local conditions can be dealt with. Remember most Indian Affairs programs are designed for bands who receive treaty money. No band in the Yukon has any of its own, so most programs are not going to work.

6. All departments must either learn how to talk, explain things to the Indian people, or else they should hire Indian people to do it.

These people should travel to the villages and not stay behind desks in Whitehorse.

7. When Dr. Black, zone director of Northern Health Services, was preparing his budget, he had a meeting with the Indian people to talk about plans, policy and programs. Why can't all departments do this?

8. All information regarding programs which affected the Yukon Indian people should be sent to the Yukon Native Brotherhood and Skookum Jim Memorial Hall.

In this brief, the Yukon Native Brotherhood has tried to describe to you some of our ideas of what poverty means to the Indian people. We have also described what we feel we can do about it. We have pointed out that poverty is new to our people. There is no reason why it should keep getting worse.

The recommendations in this brief came from eight of the twelve Indian bands in the Yukon. They are ideas which have been suggested again and again by the Indian people. We could carry these ideas out ourselves if we were given the necessary resources.

We ask you to consider our suggestions carefully and not just to file them away on some shelf in Ottawa. We have the people. We have the ideas. We ask that you give us the chance to carry them out.

Thank you very much.

The Chairman: Thank you very much for your brief, Chief Smith. It is a very down to earth and practical brief. You have omitted some portions of it but it will all be made a matter of record.

Senator Carter: Chief Smith, I would like to congratulate you on this brief and your recommendations which are, in my opinion, very practical and full of common sense. There is certainly a lot of wisdom in your brief.

When I studied your brief yesterday, the thing that impressed me was that you are making a contrast between the Indian way of life and the white man's way of life.

Now, I am a white man, I was brought up in a little village in Newfoundland where the way of life was almost the same as the way you describe it. In my area people didn't live off the land but they lived off the sea and they were free to go where they wanted and people agreed among themselves that the person setting a net here would be alright and a person setting a net there would be

alright and that they would pass births, as we called them, down from generation to generation and we didn't work by the clock. We didn't work nine to five and if a person had something else to do one day, he did it and there was a general freedom and people didn't feel poor.

I suppose they didn't feel poor mainly because they were all on the same level but there wasn't this preoccupation with material things which is the curse, I would say, of the white man's way of life today. I think it is something that has to be reckoned with all over the world but this has happened mainly, and it is happening to white people now like it has happened to your people, because of industrialization. This is the essence of industrialization. It brings this concentration on material wealth, getting material things and developing a different spirit and I don't think it is a good spirit.

What I couldn't see as I read your brief, thinking about your people, thinking about the white people as I was brought up seeing the changes that is happening to them the same that is happening to you—is there any way of escaping that? Is it this industrialization something that is spreading and is going to catch up with you sooner or later? It is going to catch up to you as it is catching up to my people.

You spoke about in the old days your people could go hunting and they had their trap lines and they moved around over the land and chopped wood and sold it to the riverboats and they got a little cash but by and by the riverboats disappeared because of industrialization which has brought about new requirements and you just can't escape them. The riverboats are no more and you can't sell your wood to them.

How do you, thinking about your people and your concern for them, how do you feel? Is there any way of escaping that and if there isn't any way of escaping it, and I don't think there is, how do you see your people adjusting to it? Are you prepared to accept an adjustment?

Chief Elijah Smith: I brought it up and I am going to bring it up again, that the United States have paid for their land from the Indian people.

Now, they put those Indian people up to the face of the world to compete with the white people. They are making their own industrial

areas where you people have to buy from them. This is what I want for my people—for you people to pay for this land so we could set up something.

Senator Carter: Yes, that is something else.

Chief Elijah Smith: But this is the only way that I can explain it to you.

Senator Carter: Yes, I see. But even if you get paid for your land you are still going to get this sort of thing happening.

The Chairman: Senator Carter, I did not understand him to say that. I understood him to say that if they were paid for the land under the Alaska payment from the Americans, they would then use the money for the purpose of industrializing, if that is the thing. Is that your answer?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes, that was my answer.

The Chairman: That is what I understood him to say.

Senator Carter: But that wasn't quite my question. My question was if you get some money you get two separate ways of life you see. In your brief you gave me the impression that you would like to continue—being the white man's way of life is bad and I agree that it is bad because I don't think it is as good as your way of life you know but it has higher standards, health standards and more material compensations and things like that but it has bad things as well.

I am asking you, can these two ways of life exist together separately. That is what I want to get at? If they can't exist separately how—what compromise can be made between them? That was the point of my question and that was what I was going to get at.

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, what you are asking me to say is whether we can live with you people or not, is that it?

Senator Carter: Whether the two ways of life can exist side by side?

Chief Elijah Smith: They are existing now but barely existing.

Senator Carter: But not satisfactorily?

Chief Elijah Smith: Not satisfactorily is right. The only way that I could see that we be given a portion of our land for ourselves to live on—if we want to live separate and

what is bothering the people more than anything else as I go through all the Indian people is that they are getting tired of having to cut down fences and cut down fence posts. You talk about your going out on the ocean and fishing together. You have no fence posts to cut down out there but these people have and this land is hogged by maybe three or four people.

Senator Carter: Well, perhaps you people haven't faced that question yet. I think it is an important question and I think you should face it and talk it out among yourselves because I think it is basic to whatever policies that is going to be developed for the betterment of your people. I think this question is at the root of it. Perhaps I shouldn't have asked it but I only asked you to find out if you had given any thought to this and if you haven't I think you probably should.

You talk about land. Land is basic. It is the crux of your problem as you see it. In this land which you say is your land, are there boundaries to it? What I mean is, are there any legal claims to it? Can you say where your land ends and where somebody else's begins?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes. They had the lines right into our country here and what has happened is that the white man has come and cut that line in two and split.

Senator Carter: Before the white man came?

Chief Elijah Smith: Before the white man came, the Tlingit's used to come up here and that is our background. Our background is Tlingit.

Senator Carter: But do you have a boundary line?

Chief Elijah Smith: We have no boundary lines.

Senator Carter: You have no boundary lines?

Chief Elijah Smith: No, we have no boundary lines.

Senator McGrand: Pardon me, what was that name again?

Chief Elijah Smith: Tlingit.

The Chairman: The Tlingit tribe.

Chief Elijah Smith: From Alaska. They came from the northern part of Alaska.

Senator Carter: You spoke about the U.S. settlement?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Carter: Can you tell us exactly what kind of a settlement it was—what the main features of that settlement were?

Chief Elijah Smith: It was a land settlement.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Chief Elijah Smith: I haven't got my briefcase here, if I did I could show you some of these papers that I got from Alaska.

The Chairman: Senator Carter, this is very recent, very new and very complicated but it was a settlement.

Senator Carter: But what I am trying to get at is whether or not the American government paid money for this land. I was wondering if they had the boundaries for the land they paid for.

The Chairman: That's right.

Senator Carter: That is why I asked this question about boundaries and whether or not it came into it.

Senator McGrand: Now, I have an awful lot of questions but I don't think I will have time for them all. I will start where Senator Carter left off about this land which you speak about.

Now, if the Government of Canada gave you sufficient money, as they have done in Alaska, or we will say they gave you the title of fifty thousand acres of land or twenty-five thousand acres of land in selected areas. How would you proceed to develop the land that you had in mind that would give the Indians a good livelihood off that land resource? I think that would be the question.

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, first of all I would get...

Senator McGrand: Well, you would have the mineral rights and oil rights and so on.

Chief Elijah Smith: Right. I have twelve communities here that are being interfered with by mining, some of them have been very fortunate. The white people have taken out good money from them and have given nothing to the Indians.

Senator McGrand: Well, what I mean is this. We will say that the government cancels

the mining companies rights and give them the title of the land and everything that goes with the land to the Indians or even if they made an agreement with you that you have the land and that the mining companies had the right to develop the material or mineral wealth. What I want to know is how you would proceed with a program to develop these things for the benefit of the Indians? You have thought about it for a long time and you must have some plans?

The Chairman: Mr. Al Lueck, the legal advisor will answer that.

Mr. Al Lueck, Legal Advisor: Senator McGrand, the program as they had considered here was that there would be a northern development or an Indian development corporation set up which would administer any monies that were coming in if there were mineral royalties.

For example, allocated to this corporation the money would be used and allocated among the Indians for development in their areas.

They would divide this down to supply the necessary first — housing, accommodation, street lighting, water, sewers, and so on and once the villages were set up to a certain standard at least, then they would be starting to move into secondary industry such as shopkeepers and so on and they would train their people.

Senator McGrand: Yes.

Mr. Lueck: They have to start right from the ground floor.

Chief Smith feels, and he said so in his brief, that they have to start out by teaching the people to be prospectors, they have to teach them the white man's way of life and when Senator Carter said you live in the two worlds—well, I am sure I have heard Elijah Smith say that many times that there is no such thing as the old life anymore.

You have to accommodate, but the point is we don't want to assimilate—they don't want to become white men.

Senator McGrand: Well, that really wasn't the question I had in mind.

Now, you talked about mining and fishing and it seems to me that the Indians, being natives of the place—he has a knowledge of woods and a knowledge of nature that the whiteman doesn't have until he acquires it and it seems to me that the Indian would be

the logical man to go into the woods taking and running lines and so on because I was told years ago by a land surveyor in New Brunswick that he would rather have Indians in his crew running lines than white men because they knew what they were doing—an inborn knowledge that the white man didn't have.

I wonder if that isn't true here and that this is one thing that you could develop and give the Indians employment on running lines and surveying the land and so on.

Now, I wanted to go back to Ross River. Now, that is about two hundred and fifty miles from here, isn't it?

Chief Elijah Smith: Close to it, yes. It is northeast.

Senator McGrand: Now, you mentioned something about a coal mine. What is the population of Ross River, approximately?

Chief Elijah Smith: That was Carmack.

Senator McGrand: What is the population? How many people are there?

Chief Elijah Smith: Oh, about two hundred and fifty.

Senator McGrand: Well, you talked about coal mining there. What is their employment? Two hundred people in a village and they must have something to earn money? Do they work in this coal mine?

Chief Elijah Smith: No. They have hotels there and stores and other small mining camps but the coal mine is run by the Anvil Mining Company.

Senator McGrand: Underground mines?

Chief Elijah Smith: Underground mines and above ground mines.

Senator McGrand: And the Indians get employment there, do they?

Chief Elijah Smith: Thirteen out of I think—twenty-eight or twenty-nine.

Senator McGrand: Well, I don't think that I will trouble you with any more of my questions because most of them have already been answered.

Senator Pearson: Mr. Chairman, I would like once again to refer to the land question.

This is a problem that can't be settled in a day or a week or a month or a year. There is two sides to that question. The white man

was continuously satisfied to live in the southern part of the country for many, many years when he came to this country but they have discovered minerals in the north now, they are moving in.

Industrial people from all over the world are coming in here to get into this particular mining venture and make some money.

The Indian was pleased to move back into the north country and make some money himself and he took possession of this land without actually paying for it or anything like this. It wasn't recognized by the government of Canada at all but the Indian was there to live and they lived on that land.

He lived on hunting and trapping and such life but now there is a new type of industry coming in, a new way of life coming in here. The Indian laid claim to this land and the white man laid claim to the land too because he figured he won this land from other people.

The question is who has the title to this land? The Indian hasn't got title and the white man claims he has.

Now, you say you want compensation for these mines and the white man says to the government "Well, I am not going to put in my mine there unless I have a title for that land." and the government gives them the title.

The question is an adjustment here. It is not a question of title at all—it is a question of an adjustment.

The Indian is being pushed off and he wants to work there, he wants to live here and yet it seems to me that a settlement must be made somewhere along the line that the Americans have done in Alaska. I don't know exactly what their settlement was but there must be some settlement with the Indians in the northern areas of Canada on their rights to compensation for being disposed or being dispossessed of their way of life.

I think this is the whole crux of the situation. It is not a question of title to land, it is a question of compensation for being dispossessed of all your rights that you have enjoyed for years. That is all I have to say.

The Chairman: Senator Pearson, you have hit the nail right on the head. What the Americans did was that they compensated, as you suggest, but they also set aside a very large area and deeded it to the Indians. That is what they did, a little of both.

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Mr. Lueck: I think there should be a couple of comments made on that.

First of all, you mentioned that the Indian does have a right.

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Mr. Lueck: He had rights.

Senator Pearson: He had rights.

Mr. Lueck: And there is one thing that I wanted to comment on. You said that he has moved back into the north but I think the Indian was here all the time. He didn't move back into it.

Senator Pearson: I see.

Mr. Lueck: Although he hasn't got legal possession, the Indian didn't have a system of legal possession.

Senator Pearson: I see.

Mr. Lueck: He never had legal possession.

Senator Pearson: He had living rights there under his own system?

Mr. Lueck: Yes, and again if you look back to the history of Canada—this land wasn't won from any one. It really wasn't won. It followed the Indians as he came and these treaties were so that there wouldn't be any fighting. He did this with all of the southern Indians but he neglected to do it with the northern Indians and therefore they do have rights that have never been settled and this is the contention of the Indians.

Secondly he should have a right to all of the land but he realizes of course realistically that he is not going to get the land back. There has to be a settlement as you say but it has to be a reasonably good settlement because what is happening, the trapping and the fishing and this kind of thing...

Senator Pearson: Their old way of life is gone.

Mr. Lueck: It is going steadily. Every time an area is being developed by the white man it cuts into this area—the hunting and fishing areas and therefore he has got to be compensated for this in some manner and my feeling is that it can be done in a very few years if the system that the committee on Indian Rights and Treaties worked out—there should be within the next three years definite programs and commitments, settlements for the

Indians within treaty areas and non-treaty areas.

Senator Inman: Well, Mr. Chairman, I would also like to compliment Chief Smith on this brief. It is one of the most interesting I think that we have had before us since we started out. It is very complete and factual. On page 11 you speak of Haines Junction and a farm development there. What type of farming is this?

The Chairman: What are you suggesting, Senator Inman?

Senator Inman: On page 11, recommendation 9, where they speak of the different businesses that could be developed and at Haines Junction you mentioned farms. What type of farms do you think could be developed there?

Chief Elijah Smith: There was an experimental farm up at Haines Junction. It is one hundred miles north of here. This was an operation as an experimental farm and what we tried was to find out how we could get a hold of it after it was shut down.

Senator Inman: How much land up there would be suitable for farming? If your people moved in there and took up farming, how much land would be available for farming and how much land would be suitable?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, they grow vegetables all over the Yukon if that is what you want to know. I mean you can grow potatoes, cabbages and everything all over the Yukon. You can grow these things all over the Yukon no matter where you try even on top of the perma frost.

Senator Inman: Because you have such a long season and so much sunlight?

Chief Elijah Smith: That's right.

Senator Inman: There is no limit as far as that is concerned.

Chief Elijah Smith: There is not limit as far as farming is concerned.

Senator Inman: Why do not some of them take it up.

Chief Elijah Smith: No market.

Senator Inman: Well, would it be too difficult to bring it down to places like Whitehorse? Or do you have to import these things now?

Chief Elijah Smith: A fellow tried a potato farm down at Carmack and he just about starved to death and if it wasn't for Cariboo migrating through the country he would have.

Senator Inman: Why?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, like I said nobody wants to buy any of that stuff.

Senator Inman: Why?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, it is cheaper to ship it in than to bring it down from there.

Senator Inman: Than to bring it down from there?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

The Chairman: Cheaper at the price you indicate here? You indicate here \$2.05 for ten pounds of potatoes, and at that price it would be still cheaper to ship them up here?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

The Chairman: You indicated that in Ottawa ten pounds of potatoes would cost 99 cents. You may be out a few pennies, I don't really know, but here you indicate that it would cost \$2.05 and in Ross River \$1.97. That is about right, isn't it?

Mr. John Hoyt: That is about right but the issue in the brief refers to a specific developed federal Department of Agriculture experimental farm which was developed and used Indian labour since its inception. This has been discontinued and left and is now being turned over to another department and it is the Indian people who have been working on this farm and staffing it who have requested to the government an opportunity to run it themselves.

Senator Fergusson: Well, do they want to run it as a farm or would they be willing to run it as a tree nursery?

Senator Inman: If this land is suitable for growing things there, then why isn't a little bit done? You tell me it wouldn't be suitable, that it would be too far from the market but I can't understand why you have to import things from so far away if you can have it that much nearer?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, there is a fellow who is farming just about a mile away from 1016 and you can buy your potatoes and cab-

bage and everything down there and it is a lot cheaper but you must remember the community of 1016 has only about fifty or sixty people in there.

It means that he has to sell his product to the people of Whitehorse and the Whitehorse people have to go up there to get it.

The Chairman: How far?

Chief Elijah Smith: He won't deliver it.

The Chairman: How far?

Chief Elijah Smith: One hundred miles up the Alaska highway.

Senator Inman: On page 14 you list price comparisons with Ottawa.

Where did you get the prices that are quoted on that page?

Mr. David Joe: These prices are from Ottawa and I went into a local IGA and picked up these prices.

The Chairman: In Ottawa?

Mr. David Joe: In Ottawa.

Senator Inman: Because I shop in Ottawa South and I notice the local bread is listed at nineteen cents. Well, you can buy that on Monday morning what is left from Saturday or the Friday before but if you buy a loaf of bread—a sixteen ounce loaf, you will pay twenty-nine cents.

The Chairman: You must have been in there on a Monday morning.

Senator Inman: You mentioned also ten pounds of potatoes. That is pretty high because you will pay that when they first come in—some of these potatoes that are imported from the United States, but ordinarily Prince Edward Island potatoes and New Brunswick potatoes you can buy ten pounds for fifty or sixty cents.

Senator Pearson: But you can't buy those in other centres of Canada at the same price.

Senator Inman: Well, I can understand that. These are Ottawa prices that he quoted. There are other prices quoted as well, such as a dollar sixty-five for a pound of tea.

I was just wondering about these prices and particularly the potatoes of course. When I was coming up on the plane there was a lady on the isle from me and she got off and her home was either in Fort Nelson or Watson Lake and I noticed the land from the plan.

there before we landed that some of it was plowed and some of it was left fallow and I asked her and she said oh, we can grow anything here. We do a lot of farming and we have cattle and I just wondered why so much of this has to be brought long distances.

Mr. Lueck: Farming across Canada, as you know is right in the doldrums right now and in the Yukon Territory you have got to break your arm, you have got to get rid of the trees, and you have to develop it and this costs a lot of money. The Indian hasn't got any money for it. The farm that they speak of is a farm that is already developed, cleared, the grass is seeded and growing and the fences are up and the buildings are there and that is a particular area that they feel they can cope with.

However, for an Indian or any one else in this territory to go out and start farming on a large scale, it would be impossible. I think it would be impossible at this time I think economically or very marginal at least because when you get first class land like you have at Fort St. John, or a few hundred miles south, the farmer is in a sad financial state and he has been in the business for years and I just don't think it is financially feasible to do it here.

Senator Inman: Is there very much personal gardening?

Chief Elijah Smith: No, and I will tell you the reason why. The Indians—it comes back to land again—he doesn't own the land.

First they tell us you own the land and then they tell us you don't own it and so these Indians feel that they will not touch anything or do anything to develop the land because they don't own it when he could be kicked out tomorrow from it.

This could be what would happen and it could be sold out from under them the next day.

Senator Inman: I may just add that the reason I am so interested in farming is that I come from Prince Edward Island where we do farming and fishing.

The Chairman: Well, Senator Inman, I introduced you to him before and he knew here you had come from.

Senator Fournier: Well, Mr. Chairman and Chief Smith, I think I understand your brief very well and I sympathize with you in the

conditions which the Indians have to live in the Yukon.

I am interested very much in your way of life and so I may ask you a few questions about that.

What is the Indian population in the Yukon?

Chief Elijah Smith: Twenty-six to twenty-seven hundred.

Senator Fournier: Twenty-six to twenty-seven hundred.

Chief Elijah Smith: Registered Indians.

Senator Fournier: What do you mean by registered Indians?

Chief Elijah Smith: Registered Indians are treaty Indians more or less.

The Chairman: Just a moment. You are using an unfamiliar term there. You said earlier that there were no treaties.

Mr. Lueck: The Indian Act means status Indians. I mean, they qualify under the Indian Act and they have to have a status as an Indian as opposed to Metis.

Under the Indian Act, the Indian is defined as a person who is—I can't think of the word now, but anyway he has been registered as an Indian and if you are not registered as an Indian then you don't qualify under the Indian Act.

The Indian Act defines the term Indian—and I can't remember the word or the wording of it right now, but when you qualified there then you become an Indian then the Department of Indian Affairs takes the responsibility.

There are other Indians who are not qualified for one reason or another or Indians who have decided to disenfranchise themselves from the Indian Act.

Senator Fournier: Do you have many of those?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes we have and I would say about a couple of hundred of them.

Senator Fournier: Do you have any Metis?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes. There are more Metis than there are Indians.

Senator Fournier: Are they classified as Indians?

Chief Elijah Smith: No, they are classified as white.

Senator Fournier: Well, if I understand right you have twenty-six or twenty-seven hundred Indians living in an area of about two hundred and five thousand square miles spread over the Yukon?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Fournier: This is not a great population for the area. Do you understand what I am trying to say?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Fournier: And you have twelve bands?

Chief Elijah Smith: Right.

Senator Fournier: Do you speak the same languages?

Chief Elijah Smith: No.

Senator Fournier: Do you have twelve different languages?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes, they would be different.

Senator Fournier: Do you understand one another?

Chief Elijah Smith: I can understand about four of them.

Senator Fournier: But there are different languages?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes, they are different.

Senator Fournier: Divided among twenty-six or twenty-seven hundred people?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Fournier: Do you live alongside of each other in friendly harmony or do you sometimes have bad relations?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, I haven't been clubbed out of any community yet, if that is what you mean.

Senator Fournier: Well, something like that. There is a long way between black eyes and friendship! Now, let me ask you this. What is the average number of children per family, roughly speaking?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, that's really hard to say.

Senator Fournier: Well, do they go for large families, small families or birth control?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, there is no birth control, I can tell you that.

Senator Fournier: Well, roughly speaking what would be the average?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, about five.

Senator Fournier: I am satisfied with that. Is the mortality rate high with the children? Do you lose a lot of young children?

The Chairman: The brief of the Department of the Yukon gives us these statistics on the Yukon. We will be having that brief this afternoon.

Senator Fournier: All right. When we were talking about farming here I don't think that we can think of the Yukon is going to become another western prairie like Saskatchewan or Alberta.

I am very interested in the gardening situation. You don't need farms but you need a small garden where you can produce potatoes and carrots and cabbages and various vegetables very, very handy because things are not expensive.

For a dollar you can produce two or three hundred dollars of groceries in the fall. I think Chief you answered part of that due to the fact that the Indians don't have gardens because they don't own the land.

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Fournier: I could dispute that but if this is your way, it is your way and that is the way you think about this. You get all kinds of meat and all kinds of fish and plenty of it and it seems to me that a little bit of gardening would be quite a help as far as nourishment is concerned.

Mr. Lucas: If I may suggest there, there are two other reasons or possibly three other reasons why there wouldn't be home gardens here. One is that the men folk and their wives who sometimes go with them going out cutting lines as was suggested for mining companies and so on. They get their summer employment and then this is the time when most of the work is done out on the mining claims.

If the Indian is going to get any work at all which is good work, he is going to be doing it at the time during the growing season so he is not going to be home.

On August 1st the moose season starts and all your people will be coming in to moose

hunt. The Indian and his wife, who usually acts as camp cook or whatever, will take hunters out in the bush and act as guides.

Senator Fournier: Who looks after the children during those periods?

The Chairman: A grandmother or a neighbour.

Chief Elijah Smith: Right. The relatives.

Mr. Lueck: If I may suggest one other thing on this gardening aspect. In the Whitehorse area my wife set up a garden and it cost about seventy-five dollars to haul in dirt and for fertilizer for a little patch of ground about thirty feet long and twenty feet wide.

I don't think we are going to get seventy-five dollars worth of vegetables off of that piece of ground as I look at it every day.

Senator Fournier: Well, that is what we wanted to hear because we were told that this ground would produce most anything. It has not been producing everything if you have to ring in fertilizers and soil.

Mr. Lueck: In the Whitehorse area. There are certain areas in the Yukon where the soil is better but I believe that particular dirt was hauled twenty miles.

Senator Inman: Well, that is only in a small area but generally speaking there is a lot of land that will produce?

Mr. Lueck: Some of it will, yes.

Senator Quart: You mentioned, Chief Smith, that the old folks group should have a home in each village.

Now, I presume you mean the Indian old folks?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Quart: Well, I think it is a marvelous idea if you could but where you have the white senior citizens and the Metis in that area, would it not be advisable to have a home which these three people could live together and surely when you become a senior citizen you become more tolerant, more understanding of the different races and peoples, or would it be only for the Indians in this case?

Chief Elijah Smith: The Indian ways of life are entirely different from the white man's way of life.

For instance, their way of cooking and things like that and this is why you can't put

an old Indian woman with the white people. She won't stay there—she is gone.

There is a lot of ages Indians that went to Charles Canso Hospital, with is a TB hospital, and they have run away from there because they don't like the white man's ways.

Senator Quart: Supposing they had a few Indian nurses on the staff or a few Indians in these places, would it not be feasible because it would be, I imagine easier to get your viewpoint across if you could establish a sort of an area home rather than a senior citizens home, rather than just for one particular group.

Another thing I was amazed about and I would like you to clarify is this. You mentioned at one time that because you were not a property owner you couldn't get any insurance.

Now, is that the company's fault or what?

Chief Elijah Smith: The insurance could be sold to any one who has money.

Senator Quart: Oh, it is a question of money?

Chief Elijah Smith: Why would an Indian insure a government house?

Senator Quart: Yes, but for what is in it.

Chief Elijah Smith: It is government houses that we are living in.

The Chairman: Senator Quart said the contents.

Senator Quart: The contents.

The Chairman: What belongs to the individual.

Senator Quart: Would the companies not insure in that case?

Chief Elijah Smith: That could be insured.

Senator Quart: There is no refusal or discrimination there?

Chief Elijah Smith: No.

Senator Quart: In Newfoundland, for instance, the steady complaint has been that there was difficulty receiving answers to the letters to the various departments in Ottawa. Have you found the same thing? I had an opportunity of being with you driving and you did explain a lot of this to me but maybe the rest of the Committee would be interested in hearing about the delay in answering letters. I know you got to Ottawa twice a month

but there seems to be a delay in answering these letters.

Chief Elijah Smith: The communication between Whitehorse and Ottawa is awful poor.

The Chairman: Due to the mail strike!

Chief Elijah Smith: No. When we write a letter and put it through our agency here, he has got to go to Vancouver to the director and some place along the line it is forgotten and is filed away in the waste basket.

When I do go to Ottawa myself I receive a good reception there. They even put a man out to work with me. To go around Ottawa and to get the things I want done. This man is posted with me all the way through no matter where I want to go or who I want to go and see but this is why we want direct communication and not to go through these fellows who are pretty handy with waste baskets.

The Chairman: And red tape.

Chief Elijah Smith: And red tape, yes.

Senator Quart: Yesterday morning you mentioned to me while kindly driving us around that the hostel or mission or both of these—I don't know just which groups are affected or why, but you mentioned that they were being closed. Is there any particular reason why they are being closed?

Chief Elijah Smith: Can I call upon Mr. Hoyt to explain?

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. John Hoyt: I would rather have Dave Joe speak on this because he spent several years in the hostel and he has worked on this brief and I think he could explain from his own experience on the hostels situation.

Mr. Dave Joe: As you know, the hostel system brings in the Indian students who cannot attend school in the villages and not being a sociologist but I am sure that you all know that the family unit is the basic unit of society and they remove the children from the family thus breaking down the family system. This has proven inadequate for the Indian people and it has led to various problems like the children themselves don't have their parents to rely on and the parents don't have the direct communication with their children and this in turn often leads to the breakdown of these families.

Senator Quart: But there isn't any compulsory attendance or anything. They go there on their own free will?

Mr. Dave Joe: Well, not too much on compulsory attendance but there is a juvenile delinquents act which says that a child must attend school up to the age of sixteen and being that there are no schools in the community the Indian students have to attend the hostel. He more or less has to go to the hostel whether he likes it or not.

Senator Quart: And the other building across the street, Chief Smith, the mission or something that is being closed also due to lack of funds?

Chief Elijah Smith: The Catholic Mission.

Senator Quart: And that is being closed as well?

Chief Elijah Smith: It is a residence.

Senator Quart: That would not be subsidized?

Chief Elijah Smith: They are both subsidized.

Senator Quart: Do you consider them good for the community?

Mr. Dave Joe: Well, they are good in terms of providing the necessary education otherwise they are not very good.

Senator Quart: Over the radio this morning I heard about a city in St. Paul's. Do you know anything about it?

The Chairman: Well, that is not his territory.

Senator Quart: It is not his territory, know.

The Chairman: It is in another province.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, since put up my hand indicating that I had something to say, several people have brought up the subject—the same subject but I perhaps have one or two further questions to ask.

Like Senator Inman, I would like to congratulate Chief Smith and the other people in his delegation who presented this brief to this morning. We realize that there has been a great deal of time and work spent in getting this brief ready and I was particularly interested in the videotape and in the fact that you say the equipment is owned by

Brotherhood. Have they owned this equipment long or have they just acquired it recently?

Chief Elijah Smith: Just about two weeks ago.

Senator Fergusson. Was that to help you make your presentation?

Chief Elijah Smith: Right.

Senator Fergusson: I think that we should be very grateful to you for having gone to that expense as well as all the work and time you have given and I think you gave us a lot of information that we are unable to get for ourselves because we can't visit some of these places.

I am sure we are very grateful to you for that. One or two of the things that I have put down related to page 7 where you made mention of the foster homes to replace hostels and you gave an example of one in Ross River and you say "available for \$1.00 per year."

What do you mean by \$1.00 a year?

Chief Elijah Smith: That is Al Kulan's.

Mr. Al Lueck: Possibly I could answer that.

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Lueck: Al Kulan was a prospector who owned Dynastine Mines and he is now wealthy and he built a large home in Ross River which was his home at one time. He is now living in Vancouver and he turned that home over to the Catholic Church there and he lease rental of \$1.00 a year to be used.

Senator Fergusson: Thank you. I didn't understand that. One thing I would like to ask in regards to education.

Do many of the girls from this area study to become nurses or teachers?

Chief Elijah Smith: The opportunity is there and a few of them have taken this opportunity.

I just don't know how many went through this vocational school training as nurses but I think there are more Indian girls at the present time that are training for nurses.

Senator Fergusson: I just wondered if they were interested in doing it and perhaps were training and then come back to be helpful in their own homes.

Mr. John Hoyt: Mr. Chairman, I wonder if I could say that to my knowledge that there are no Indian people from the Yukon teaching

in the school system anywhere, or at least in the Yukon I can think of and to my knowledge there are no registered nurses.

Now, what Chief Smith was referring to was the nurses aid and there is a vocational school course for that.

Senator Fergusson: And are they taking the nurses aid courses?

The Chairman: Yes, he says that they do.

Senator Fergusson: You refer to the fact that each village should have a community hall and a kindergarten and such programs. Do you have any kindergartens now?

Chief Elijah Smith: We have some kindergartens but the only community hall we have is right here in Whitehorse. There is a kindergarten school going on there.

Senator Fergusson: That is the one we visited yesterday afternoon?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: And do quite a few children attend?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, I really don't know but I would think around fifty all the way round.

Dr. Steels, Superintendent of Education: All of the Indian children from age three to five voluntarily attend that particular kindergarten in that village. There are kindergartens in every community in the Yukon where we have enrollment enough to substantiate it and the best attendance at kindergarten are the Indian people. The best attendance is from the Indian people.

Senator Fergusson: Do you transport the children to kindergarten or how do they get there?

Dr. Steels: The only transporting of children to the kindergartens is handled by the community itself. The government supplies the grants for assistance and supplies and the salary of the instructors. The rest is handled by the community itself.

Senator Fergusson: There was one other thing that I would like to ask. On page 12 you mentioned recommendation number 2, you say:

Local Indian people can be trained as village constables to help enforce the law and replace the bad image of the RCMP.

Do the RCMP have a bad image?

The Chairman: Mr. Lueck, would you care to answer that?

Mr. Lueck: Yes.

The Chairman: Go ahead.

Mr. Lueck: That is my answer, yes, they have a bad image.

Senator Inman: Why? Can you tell me why they have such a bad image?

Mr. Lueck: Lack of understanding I think by the RCMP of their role as officers which stems from a lack of education.

You have an RCMP officer today who can become such with a Grade 11 education. They may have raised it to Grade 12 now but he has no university training whatsoever and as society gets more sophisticated you have got to have a policeman who understands what their role is and some of them don't.

You also have the cultural problem, the white man versus the Indian. I am not saying that all RCMP officers are this way but some of them are. I am again not totally familiar with the Yukon problem but I do know—and I am originally from Saskatchewan—there was a tremendously bad RCMP police image there. I think it is almost as bad here.

The Chairman: Mr. Lueck, I must say this to you. When I read the brief that was the thing that I marked to speak about, because it came to me as a complete and total shock as far as the RCMP are concerned. Their image in the country is one that we have always heard commended. For instance, their work amongst the Doukhobors is outstanding. They showed understanding. You are mistaken when you suggest that they do not have the education. Their education requirements were raised. Their pay was raised, and they are recruiting high calibre people.

Now, so far as an environmental approach is concerned, I am no judge of that because I do not know much about environmental approach, but the image of the RCMP is generally something that this country is very proud of and we have had no occasion to hear anything less than that of it.

Mr. Hoyt: Mr. Chairman, might I say that in the north the history of the RCMP is unique. In fact, until recently, the RCMP was the authority for all spheres of government

action in the community and in many instances he was the only white man.

In the past twenty years in the Yukon there have grown up government departments in every sphere and all of these people have taken away small areas of what the RCMP used to do as a more community development officer.

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. John Hoyt: This has in turn taken a lot of the glamour off or northern postings for RCMP officers and this role has left the RCMP with the history of a very glamorous role but in practicality it is very sorted day to day existence.

The Chairman: I think it should be made clear that every province in Canada with the exception of Ontario and Quebec uses the RCMP instead of provincial police. That in itself is an indication that there has been great confidence in them. My view has been that they are an outstanding force, and one of the things that we should really be proud of.

I did not like to see the suggestion made that they were something less than that in any part of the country. Policing is a very important business in the country and unless you have an understanding of it and confidence in it you can get yourself into a lot of trouble. These people, as we look on it, have been pretty highly trained.

Mr. Lueck: You are speaking as a white man and you are speaking as a man in the white culture. I think the RCMP are terrific. I think they are a good force but what the Indian is saying is that from their point of view he is not and he is looking at it from the point of view of the fellow on the other side of the fence.

The Chairman: Of course I can't speak like an Indian—you only have to look at me. You know that, but that isn't the point. These people around the table here have years and years and years of experience and understanding and come from every province.

Now, we have heard all kinds of briefs. You name it and we have heard it. We have heard from every Indian group and I have never heard this. I must say that sometimes they were pretty angry but none of us has ever heard this before.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, didn't you have a brief from the Saskatchewan Met

Association with respect to police tactics in the North Battleford area?

The Chairman: We had?

Senator Hastings: Yes.

The Chairman: From whom?

Senator Hastings: From the Saskatchewan Metis Association.

The Chairman: Yes, and who spoke for them, Adams?

Senator Hastings: Yes.

The Chairman: I don't remember Mr. Adams saying anything about the RCMP.

Senator Hastings: As I say it was in the brief, sir, about the police tactics used in the North Battleford area of northern Saskatchewan.

The Chairman: Well, I do not recall it. I was there when he gave evidence. I don't know who else was there when he gave evidence. But let us go on to something else.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, I have two brief questions and I would like to involve David Joe and Mike Smith. They are in respect to education. Both of you I gather went through the whole system or are still involved in the system but the question I would like to ask is the same question I asked last night with regard to your curriculum, as you proceed through your school system.

Who sets that curriculum?

Mr. David Joe: Well, the curriculum that we studied was set in Victoria. There is no regard for the Indians in that curriculum.

Senator Hastings: And that is what you are saying here that your books and material supplies were from Victoria, British Columbia or the white middle class society. Is that right?

Mr. Michael Smith: Right.

Senator Hastings: In other words, if it's good enough for royal roads Cormack?

Mr. Michael Smith: Yes.

Senator Pearson: Why would they come from Victoria?

Mr. Michael Smith: We don't know.

The Chairman: Well, we will have the people here this afternoon and you can ask

them that question and they will have an explanation.

Senator Hastings: And there are no Indian teachers in the Yukon I gather?

Mr. David Joe: No.

Senator Hastings: Are there any Yukon people teaching in the schools?

Dr. Steels: We do not have any Indians from the Yukon teaching in the Yukon. We have one young girl or young lady from northern Saskatchewan who is an Indian but the fact that we are endeavouring to train kindergarten instructors.

We have Miss Jane Jose who is having an internship at Old Crow this year. We also have Miss Emma Shortty who will be doing internship at Fishwood Hall this year.

We are very anxious to get more Indian instructors in the Yukon.

The Northwest Territories have a program instituted quite a few years ago to train Indians, Eskimos and Metis teachers. We had a program like this rejected. We do have grants and scholarships though available for students, Indians and sons and daughters of the Yukon to go on to university. Our problem though is to get the Indian student through high school. The problems are the result of the mobility of the families, social problems, welfare problems in the community.

I believe the brief this afternoon will show you that the majority of students in the hostels are there because of welfare problems.

The Chairman: Well, let us save something for this afternoon!

Senator Hastings: I just want to ask the boys what was the worst feature that they would have to overcome in getting them to where they are today. What was the biggest difficulty you had?

Mr. David Joe: My biggest difficulty was trying to understand the white man.

Mr. Michael Smith: Well, my biggest problem was just adopting to the white ways and accepting them.

Senator Hastings: Thank you.

Senator Quart: You mentioned in your brief that an Indian field worker for Manpower would be very useful. Do you feel they would have more confidence or take more interest in their job? I heard over the seven

o'clock news this morning on the radio that there were a few jobs available to the area.

Do you think an Indian field worker would take more interest in digging up jobs?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes, I mean, there are jobs available that the Manpower has but the Manpower don't go through the trouble to tell the Indian what kind of job it is.

He brings it out in his own words and the Indians don't understand him. It could be pick and shovel work and yet he would bring it out in his own lawyer's words and he don't understand him.

Senator Quart: In other words, all these forms should be simplified and that would make things much easier?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Fournier: I want to go back to what I said a few minutes ago. Here in the Yukon with an area of about two hundred and fifty thousand square miles and approximately twenty-five hundred Indians spread over this area.

My first question is, are your families increasing?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Fournier: Do you see an increase that is going to increase from year to year? I am speaking about the population now because when I get an answer from you I will give you the second question.

Chief Elijah Smith: It is increasing all the time.

Senator Fournier: Well, you have the Yukon here which is a very promising country, a very wealthy country and it will take millions and millions of dollars to develop this country.

You haven't got that money. The Canadian people in Canada haven't got that type of money and we will need the help of the Americans. It will take millions and millions and millions to develop this country.

Would you people be ready to accept the fact that all the Indians of the Yukon would be brought to one community, say three thousand together, the white people—let's call them the invaders—will build you a village or a city and give you all the facilities that we have and tell you to live there without working. Just to keep you there. After all—it may sound funny but when you go back to the dollar value with the wealth of this country, it is worth something.

Now, while we do this you will be there. You will have your system of education which is the basic way you want to go and you would get your start by education. The system will provide you with education and out of your community you will find leaders, engineers, lawyers and all types of professions. Over a period of years you will be integrated with the white people on the same level but you have to start somewhere and somebody will have to make the sacrifice. You will have to sacrifice your old ways and we will have to sacrifice our dollar value. It would just be a question of time.

Mr. David Joe: What we are saying we don't want development because it would take away everything from us.

Senator Fournier: You don't want it? Okay, I am satisfied.

Mr. David Joe: We don't want your pollution.

The Chairman: We don't want it very much either.

The Chairman: Senator Carter?

Senator Fournier: But the answer is no.

The Chairman: No.

Senator Carter: Dave Smith, you mentioned on pages six and seven in your brief—you talk about education and you make recommendations about the curriculum and you mentioned the Frontier College.

Have you made contact with Frontier College or have they been working here with you?

Chief Elijah Smith: I would like to have David Joe or Michael answer this question.

Mr. Michael Smith: When we were going through Farrell about two weeks ago making this brief, we went into a dining room and saw a notice saying something about Frontier College and about when classes would be held and that is all we know about it but it is in the Yukon.

Senator Carter: But you have never had Frontier College worker or teacher working amongst the Indians?

Mr. Michael Smith: No, sir.

Senator Carter: They are doing a good job. As I said earlier some weeks ago we were u

in Labrador and we saw these people in northern Newfoundland.

Now, Chief Smith, you talk about Indian teachers. How can we solve this problem of Indian teachers if the Indians themselves don't want to go into teaching or if they don't want to stay in school long enough to become teachers.

You told Senator Fournier that there are twelve tribes and they don't all speak the same language and you yourself speak four different languages. There must be a tremendous problem in this area and how do you see this problem being solved?

Mr. David Joe: First, I see the white man is going to have to start learning about the Indians. I think he is going to have to start learning about the Indians in order to bridge that gap in communications. Right now we are learning all about the white man and the white man isn't learning about the Indians.

The Chairman: After sitting around here for awhile I may be led to think that every white man is a terrible person. I don't believe that, you know. I really don't believe that. We try very hard in our own way; we may not succeed but we do try.

Senator Carter: Well, Mr. Chairman, he hasn't answered my question. My question was how do you see the solution solved?

Senator Hastings: I think he has answered your question when he said we have to adapt our system to the Indians.

The Chairman: It is your problem not his.

Senator Carter: Well, you talk about making education fit the job and the kind of work that is available here.

Are there any university extension courses up here? Do you have access to any extension work of any university?

Chief Elijah Smith: No.

Senator Carter: On page 15 you say government aid makes Indians feel inferior. Can you give us some examples of that?

The Chairman: Senator Carter, where does that appear?

Senator Carter: At the very bottom of page 15.

The Chairman: "Government officials talk to Indians in a way which makes us feel inferior."

Chief Elijah Smith: I mean, the government officials, when they talk to Indian people that they do not explain just what they are talking about to these Indian people.

Senator Carter: It is not something deliberate it is just that they don't know how else to communicate. That is really what you are saying?

Chief Elijah Smith: Yes.

Senator Carter: It doesn't mean that they don't attempt to?

Chief Elijah Smith: Right now when a policeman walks up to an Indian, he doesn't know what that policeman is going to do. He just stands there shaking and the policeman could read out the worst crime in the world to him and as long as he is laughing the Indian will accept it but if he looks mean, he just doesn't know what to do. He will either go and jump in the river or do something else.

Senator Carter: Well, I understand what you mean now but I didn't fully realize what you meant by that statement. What you are really saying is that they just don't know how to communicate?

The Chairman: That's right.

Senator McGrand: I have two or three little short questions.

The Chairman: Go ahead.

Senator McGrand: The first question is on land tenure. Who has the authority to make a grant of land in the Yukon. Is it the territorial government or is it the federal government?

Mr. Lueck: Both. Most of the grants are from the federal government but they are administered by the local land titles office and the local commissioner and I believe there is a certain area under the local supervision of the commissioner which he can give grants to.

Senator McGrand: You have also stated that the Metis pass here as a white man. In Saskatchewan and Manitoba the Metis is in a worse position than the Indian because he doesn't have any of the Indian privileges and he carries all the prejudices against the Indian. Does the white man in the Yukon hold prejudices against the Metis or does he accept him as a white man?

Chief Elijah Smith: Well, speaking for myself I think that what I have been trying to do with this Yukon Brotherhood and I have been told by some government officials that I cannot have them in my organization but I certainly would like to have them in my organization because some of them are highly educated, they could take the place where I am sitting right today and bring this Indian organization up to something that would be worthwhile listening to.

Senator McGrand: Now, the next short question is this. We have talked all forenoon about the conditions in southern Yukon and we didn't get up as far as Ross River.

Now, what about the north of the Yukon. You must have problems up there as well and no one has mentioned Old Crow and this is very important to me. What is going on in Old Crow?

Chief Elijah Smith: If you had given me six months notice or if the government had allowed me some money to do my research with when I asked for it about a year ago, I would have had answers from all communities for you.

Senator McGrand: There is just one more thing I would like to say before we leave this. We have been talking about agriculture in the Yukon and it seems to me that in Alaska, where they have a quarter of a million people and seventy-five thousand live in the city of Anchorage, they have no agriculture. Except for one little valley, they produce very little stuff. It takes a long time to make soil and it seems to me that as far as growing something in the Yukon—it is only in the garden type and only if you have storage for it. I don't think anybody can talk about the development of agriculture. That is all I have.

Senator Quart: Mr. Chairman, I would like to mention this. I wonder if the Indian people in the Yukon realize that way back in the '30's in the province of Quebec when the Indians on the reserves did not have the right to vote, that they elected to the provincial legislature an Indian industrialist of Lorette, Mr. Roger Bastien. He was elected way back then and he was being opposed by a white man and he was elected because they realized that he was a wonderful person for his people and for the community.

Senator Pearson: The Indians had no vote?

Senator Quart: They had no vote when they were on the reserves.

The Chairman: Chief Smith, I want to thank you and Michael Smith, Dave Joe, Mr. Lueck, and John Hoyt. You have been very helpful to us. It was a good brief and was well presented. I must say you have given us some new concepts and some new views that we have not had before.

We realize your problems and we have had some new views on them. You have had an opportunity to place your views on the record where they will be widely read. They will be given full consideration by us. On behalf of the committee, Chief Smith, I thank you.

The Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, the next brief we will be hearing is from the Consumers Association of Canada, Whitehorse branch. Sitting on my right is Mrs. Susan Burns, who will introduce the two ladies with her.

Mrs. Susan Burns: The lady on my right is Mrs. Leona Lane and sitting next to her is Mrs. Barbara Phillips. I will be presenting the major brief and they will be here for questioning.

As a Consumers Association, we look at poverty from two points of view. One was a quantity of material goods and services and the other was the quality of life. We feel that these two are equally important and I will take the first one, the quantity of material goods and services.

It is well recognized that low income consumers—and we are talking from the consumers point of view—the low income consumer pay more due to the very fact that they don't have the money to buy in quantity, they don't have the money to buy durable goods that are going to last a long time and they often lack transportation.

Here in the north we have a peculiar situation where people are in isolated communities and often when they do buy the can't even get things in large quantities—they are forced to buy in small uneconomical quantities. The stores are very high priced.

Another aspect of the high cost of living is the fact that many communities cannot use water from the rivers near by. The must boil the water because it has been contaminated by flying wastes, by white man's pollution. Therefore they have to buy serviced lots or buy their water. The cost of building

and building materials are high. Fuel and electricity are very high here and for these reasons the low income consumer in the north pays much more of his money for the basic necessities of life.

For this reason we recommend that tax concessions be given to northerners to equalize their spending power with southern Canadians. In the same line we also recommend that the co-operatives be encouraged and by this we mean a group of people who are interested in setting up a co-operative as access to somebody who knows the facts, who can say in a situation you should proceed this way and you need this kind of background, you need this many people—just somebody to help in the management and financial aspects of the proposition. The Old Crow co-operative has this financial and managerial assistance from the federal government on a temporary basis until they can get on their own.

Our second recommendation is that we know that families, all families regardless of income receive family allowance cheques depending upon the number of children. We recommend that these family and youth allowances be classed as part of taxable income which would mean that families of higher incomes would return these benefits and that the ones with lower incomes would keep the money.

On to the quality of life. Many Canadians suffer from cultural poverty and now with the increase of leisure time it becomes important that people learn to use their leisure time for self-enrichment. We notice that the Department of Education has cut librarians and music teachers in the Yukon. We therefore recommend that more vigorous programs in the arts be established and maintained in our schools from kindergarten right through to grade twelve.

There is a large number of working mothers in the Yukon and this necessitates the fact that many children are placed with baby sitters who often do not provide adequate care for them. We therefore recommend that more support be given to existing and improved day care centres and money be available for the formation of more day care centres.

In the Yukon there is a total lack of household help. There are very few older people, grandmother type people that would be willing to look after young children while families are in trouble or in need, say to

mental illness or physical illness, there are very few people to call on in such circumstances.

Also when a family wishes to go outside, out of the territory and they would like baby sitters to care for their children, this is a very difficult thing to get and with the cabin fever syndrome here, it is often very necessary for parents to get away.

We therefore recommend there be a formation and support of a home help organization to provide a reliable source of help in the case of family need. Right now at present in our school system there is no uniform consumer education. We feel that today's young people are going to be the ones that have money, they are on the one hand going to have money, but they are not going to have the concept of money management and with so many places where money can be spent we feel that consumer education is very necessary.

We recommend therefore that it be integrated into the schools as part of regular courses such as social studies and mathematics as well as under a separate section headed consumer education.

We recommend that these be integrated into the schools starting from grade seven.

Our major recommendation includes the recommendation of a neighbourhood information centre.

Now, independence of income, there is a poverty of—you may call it apathy—a fatalism that cripples one power to get things done to be effective and live a happy and fulfilled life.

We recommend the establishment of neighbourhood information centres which would act as interdisciplinary resources and information centres located right within a community with the aim of informing and servicing as self help centres. These would be essentially human resource centres as opposed to places where you would get money or places concerned with business. This would be strictly for self improvement for the good of the community, a humanitarian aspect. It would be aimed at improving the quality of life from budget to pollution control and would serve as a method of effectively distributing and co-ordinating all the different community services and government services available to people.

It would serve as a base for disseminating consumer information and counselling.

Now, for example, this type of centre could provide shoppers for—as was suggested by the Indian delegation, for the Indian people who wished such shoppers to decide how their money could be best spent and how to read labels, how to determine whether a huge box is a better buy than a small box.

The Chairman: Can you!

Mrs. Burns: With our handy calculator and sliderule.

The Chairman: Yes.

Mrs. Burns: This is a much needed service in Whitehorse. These centres would necessarily be independent non-sectarian and non-political and thus be a centre where any citizen of any class, creed, colour or religion could seek advice.

These would have to be co-ordinated nationally to maintain a high standard of service and also a high standard of information.

They would be heavily depended upon volunteers for assistance and this would necessitate professional staff to train these volunteers but once these volunteers were trained they would also be available for the community at large so there would be a two-fold benefit.

Finances would be provided jointly by federal, provincial and municipal governments and all their information would be seminated through this central location and the centres would be accountable to the community through a voluntary board of neighbourhood residents and the representatives of sponsoring organizations, both voluntary and government.

That is the end of our brief and I might conclude by saying that we do not recommend strictly added money to combat poverty. We feel that the things that matter are the insufficiency of material goods and services and as well an insufficiency of quality of life. These two are first and foremost.

Thank you very much.

Senator Pearson: I just have two short questions and one of them is on taxation. You say that the taxes should be equalized so that the spending power would be as good as it in the south. Isn't the earning power greater up here where all the work than it is in the south?

Mrs. Burns: Yes, this is true. The incomes are ten to twenty percent above the national average but the cost of living in the Territories is still higher.

Senator Pearson: What percentage higher?

Mrs. Burns: Twenty-two percent higher according to a Territorial Taxation study in 1968.

Now, according to this from the presentation to the House of Commons Committee of Finance, Trade and Commerce Affairs on the White Paper on taxation. This was published by the Chamber of Commerce and the Yukon Chamber of Mines.

They said it was twenty-two percent higher to live in the Yukon—the incomes are ten to twenty-two percent higher than the national average but because the costs are higher they are taxed at a higher rate therefore they worked out one example, on a figure counting the dispering of living where the Yukon resident must gross fourteen thousand dollars as opposed to ten thousand for his southern counterpart in order to have equal spending power.

Senator Pearson: The other point I wanted to suggest was you recommendation on page 2 regarding the situation about income tax. I think the chairman pointed out yesterday that while you get these added benefits, you could tax it back.

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

Senator Pearson: Actually the government doesn't get the money back. You take a person who with two thousand dollars a year and take thirty-three percent, his tax would be six hundred and sixty dollars. Take a chap with twenty-nine hundred dollars, that's nine hundred dollars, take the old age pension payments in with that, the difference there is two hundred and ninety-seven dollars so they don't get the nine hundred dollars back—they only get two hundred and ninety-seven of this back.

Now, if you take a person with ten thousand dollars, it's just the same thing. It comes out to exactly the same figure—the two hundred and ninety-seven dollars is all you get back out of it.

The Chairman: You understand what the senator is saying to you?

Mrs. Burns: Not really.

The Chairman: The justification for giving

a millionaire old age security—we are not talking about any senators, by the way—is the fact that everybody says, “Well, he gives it back in taxes.” Now, what Senator Pearson is telling you is that you do not get it back in taxes. I suppose the next question he is going to ask is why should we continue giving it?

Senator Pearson: Yes.

The Chairman: That is the point.

Senator Pearson: You don't get it back. You only get a third back.

The Chairman: Yes.

Senator Pearson: That is all you get—33 per cent is a third. You only get a third back.

Mrs. Burns: Well, is this not better than not getting any back at all?

Senator Pearson: I think the best thing is not to pay it in the first place or tax it all back.

The Chairman: We can't tax it all back.

Senator Pearson: Then the best thing is not to give these cheques out to everybody.

Mrs. Burns: Well, if it is not given to anybody it becomes, well, like welfare.

Senator Pearson: Yes and you are talking about a means test and you don't want to get into a means test.

Mrs. Burns: No. There is a real stigma attached to it.

The Chairman: What Senator Pearson is saying is that people who earn more than, say, \$10,000 ought not to be receiving the old age pension. That is what he is saying. Doesn't that make sense?

Mrs. Burns: It makes sense in terms of money but it doesn't make sense in terms of dignity.

The Chairman: Well, what is undignified about saying you earn less than ten thousand and we will give you so much.

Mrs. Burns: Personally I would feel and I would think that others would feel that by cashing a cheque—say I earned less than ten thousand dollars and was given a family allowance which is what the issue is—

The Chairman: Yes.

Mrs. Burns: And I was cashing this I would think that I would feel badly. It would be a

matter of lack of pride. It would be a matter of lack of pride if somebody else wasn't getting it.

The Chairman: Well, when you talk about cashing a cheque, do you think there is any loss of pride by people who now cash these cheques—the seventy-nine dollars or the hundred and eleven dollars, is that what they get for old age security? People in the lower income brackets or people in any brackets at all? Do you think there is any less pride in that?

Senator Pearson: You could say, Mr. Chairman, that those who I have known, people who get a great deal more than ten thousand, and they get the old age security money every month and they feel quite embarrassed going into the bank, and depositing that money which they don't use. It embarrasses them to have more money that they don't need. That is the other side of the coin.

The Chairman: And yet the record indicates that nobody takes the trouble to send it back.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, no one gets the old age security unless they have applied for it.

The Chairman: That's right.

Senator Fergusson: If they don't want to take it, they shouldn't apply for it.

The Chairman: She is our expert she administered the act and knows all about it.

Mrs. Burns: But isn't old age security for families different in Newfoundland?

The Chairman: No, but we will take a minute and talk to you about family allowance. Let us take a family allowance of a young man who is earning twenty-five thousand dollars a year, whether he is up here or any other place. The present family allowance is going to him. Do you think that helps him?

Mrs. Burns: No.

The Chairman: Well, the concept is that if you give the family allowance to people who earn—here I am guessing again now—seventy-five hundred and double this and triple it and you use it all, aren't you doing more than just spreading it out?

Mrs. Burns: This is very true but this is something we haven't thought about.

The Chairman: Well, in that case we will not get into it.

Mrs. Barbara Phillips: I still think that since the machinery is all set up family and youth allowances are being received by everyone in order to equalize a bit and I really see nothing wrong with increasing it substantially and having it classed as taxable income.

The Chairman: Well, as you know family allowance isn't.

Mrs. Phillips: No.

The Chairman: You are suggesting that rather than cut it off, we should tax it.

Mrs. Phillips: Tax it, then those who are in the low income bracket—increase it first—just don't tax it the way it is—increase it substantially since the high income people are going to be paying most of it back in any case.

Senator Pearson: Well, you mentioned babysitters on page 3 and babysitters you find don't give too much help to the family or service but would you suggest in the smaller areas like Mayo, for example, it would be rather difficult to set up a day care centre in Mayo but if you train a babysitter or two or three babysitters could do a great deal of work in that area?

Mrs. Burns: This is exactly what we are recommending. We don't call them babysitters because we feel that these people would be doing more than just supervising. They would be doing household help and if needed they would be there to help with the dishes, feed and dress the children and this kind of thing and there are agencies I know, say in Vancouver where a group of people willing to do this have got together like office overload and when somebody needs household help they phone and one person is sent out and will do the job.

As you suggest, this would work and it would work in small centres as well.

Senator Quart: Mother's helpers?

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

The Chairman: I didn't think that was what you were saying, because you added something to it. I thought about that cabin fever and I thought what you were saying was this: that there comes a time when you and your

husband want to get away. You haven't got a grandmother here and you haven't got anyone else and you want to hire someone and turn the household over—as my daughter does—and just go away for a holiday and leave the household to them. They turn it over to some responsible woman. However, I would like to tell you something. Those are very, very hard to get and there are very few of them in Toronto and Montreal and they are most expensive. They can almost demand their own price, but they are first class.

Senator Inman: We have that sort of thing in our province but that is taken care of women, not professional women but older women who make a very good job of it. These are women say in their forties whose families have grown up.

The Chairman: We are not talking about professionals.

Senator Inman: Yes, they are rather competent women.

Mrs. Burns: Well, the thing is there are not that many people here who are willing. If such an agency was formed and perhaps people would be willing to come knowing that they had a job or an opportunity for employment. There is a great need for this.

You mentioned this for people who are going to go off on holidays and this is part of the recommendation but it is just another aspect of where you could use somebody in the home and in the situation in Vancouver these people are often trained. They range from young girls to older women—you know, there is a complete gap there for ages who are interested.

Senator Inman: Would it be possible for ladies such as yourself to establish this sort of thing?

The Chairman: I think, Senator Inman, this depends on them. If they are really serious, and I really think they are, what they could do is have somebody who knows pick one woman who is an older woman whose family is grown up. The girls get together amongst themselves and say, "I'll take her for three weeks and you take her for three weeks next month" and she could go there while these people go away on their holidays. And she is well paid. That is what women do in other places.

Senator Inman: Yes.

The Chairman: I know the girls do that and they pass them around. That is the way they get away.

Senator Inman: I belong to a women's service club in my own province and that is exactly what they did. There was no money involved or anything and one woman acted as the registrar and they also trained younger women who would like to do that work and it didn't cost any money.

Senator Fournier: Mrs. Burns, I understand you were talking about consumers co-ops.

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

Senator Fournier: Grocery stores?

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

Senator Fournier: How many stores are there in Whitehorse that sell groceries?

Mrs. Burns: There are two stores—supermarkets you may call them and there are three major corner stores.

Senator Fournier: And what is your population here?

Mrs. Burns: They say eight to ten thousand.

Senator Fournier: Well, if I were part of our community and you asked me to organize a co-op with the co-operation of the rest of the community, I would say no.

My experience is that you have not enough population required. It would be very difficult to find the membership that was required unless you were subsidized, like I understand they have in Old Crow.

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

Senator Fournier: To have a co-op that could survive by itself. It has been proven that unless you have a population of at least ten thousand and you do a lot of lecturing and training and you prepare your members that eventually they fail. They cannot exist very long. Really to be successful you must at least have a minimum of three hundred memberships that can buy and sell not only consumer goods but you have to get into agricultural equipment, building materials and items such as this. You really have to spread it out and I would think that this would be the problem here because it really is a small community and you already have three or four grocery stores.

First you have to compete with these people and you eventually will find out that

even your most active members will take advantage of the neighbours sales. They will forget about the co-op for the moment because they can save a few dollars.

They do that because the co-op has trained them that way. No, you have to put all the factors together so I would say that your thinking is right, and it is a great way to work co-operatively to save money. You have to be an expert to make it survive even in the most prosperous regions and they are collapsing by the hundreds all across the country at the moment.

Mrs. Burns: I think I will let Leona answer that.

Mrs. Leona Lane: In the matter of co-ops, supposing it was feasible to establish a co-op in Whitehorse, most of the shoppers from the outlying areas send in mail order grocery orders which go out on freight trucks so the population which would serve a co-op would be a great deal higher than Whitehorse itself.

Senator Fournier: Outside of Whitehorse?

Mrs. Lane: Certainly. We would involve the entire Yukon and mining camps, etc.

Senator Fournier: So you have the population?

Mrs. Lane: I think there are the shoppers here but the thing that is lacking here is the management know-how and this is what we are asking, to have someone available because where does a person go to get management and training?

Senator Fournier: I would like to add this if I may just cut in for a moment. Management is not only the answer. It is only fifty percent of the answer. The other fifty percent is the attitude of your members towards these co-ops and this is a most important part.

Mrs. Burns: Well, there was a form of a co-op started here oh, seven months ago and they called themselves the 'price watchers' and there was over one hundred of them who banded together in order to get food in bulk by case lots and they did this on their own without forming an association or whatever.

They did this just to test the reaction to it and it was favourable but mind you they suffered from a lack of management know-how and just simple warehousing techniques, and this kind of thing.

Senator Inman: Mr. Chairman, on page 3 at the top it says:

The Yukon Department of Education (for so called economic reasons) has phased out the school librarians and music specialists from Yukon schools, leaving only two band specialists in Whitehorse on staff.

What extra expense did they incur to have to be disbanded. It seems to me that they would be quite valuable for children?

Mrs. Burns: We feel the same way that they were valuable. Now, they say that it would be a saving, but dollars and cents, I really couldn't tell you what the saving was, but I really think it was quite minute.

Mrs. Phillips: I believe it was around three thousand dollars.

Mrs. Burns: They did this by hiring clerks instead of librarians. They had librarians and then they hired clerks instead. They also phased out the music teachers except for the band.

Senator Inman: Do they not have any school libraries at all?

Mrs. Burns: Yes, there will be a librarian at the largest school here and it serves about eight hundred and fifty students and I believe also Whitehorse elementary and I believe the school population there is about seven hundred students but this cuts out any specialists from any of the other schools.

The Chairman: This is a skilled qualified librarian, not a clerk. This is what they are saying.

Senator Inman: Thank you.

The Chairman: It strikes me as rather peculiar. I was going to question you on it as it struck me as being vital. You three girls seem unusually bright. Surely there must be some librarians amongst you, so why couldn't you undertake some of these things on a part-time basis and spread it amongst yourselves.

Mrs. Burns: I'm afraid we have too much to do above our heads right at the moment and I don't know. Whether you realize it or not it is over organized. There are so many organizations and so few people.

Senator Fournier: Within the hands of a few people?

Mrs. Burns: Yes. There are very few people who are willing or what not to give free time

and yet what we are doing—we are doing as much as we can.

The Chairman: I will put you right into your own field, consumers. Why don't you tell the Board of Education, "we will take the responsibility for delivering one or two lectures a week at the schools"? One of you three, instead of hiring a teacher, could go in and give them that view on consumer education. Why don't you do that?

Mrs. Burns: We are starting to.

The Chairman: You know, we have had all sorts of things happen here which have just seemed to happen as we arrived. I don't know why! By the way, I must tell you this. Information is a very vital subject. The Department of Citizenship will establish information centres through your consumers group if you get in touch with them. If you are interested in starting an information centre on a priority basis you just get in touch with the Department of Citizenship.

Senator Carter: I assume you are a branch of the Canadian Consumers Association?

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

Senator Carter: You spoke about the hundred people that got together and formed a buying club. Did you form a buying club?

Mrs. Burns: It wasn't us. It was a group of other people.

Senator Carter: And you said that they shipped away outside of Whitehorse?

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

Senator Carter: I went in a buying club one time and it was only a small group of us that got together, perhaps twenty and we took turns each week so that one person would have the responsibility of buying the goods and his turn would only come once every twenty weeks and we had an assembly point and everybody would come together on a certain day of the week, usually Wednesday, and bring a list of their shopping needs. A few cakes of soap and a few packages of this and that and when everybody had cited their needs then we totalled it together and put in packaged lots, wholesale lots. If we were a little bit—say if we wanted to buy a gross of soap and we were six cakes short somebody would take the extra cakes and we would do that and we would end up with a big long list of groceries. Well, what we did was we we

down to say, two or three grocery stores that were already there and we went to the various grocery stores and said well, tender on this, let us see what you can do and you would be surprised how they bid themselves because there was an order of several hundred dollars coming in every week and they didn't want to lose it.

Why don't you try that?

Mrs. Burns: It is an excellent idea. That is exactly what we need.

The Chairman: They wound up better than we did. We had given them more ideas than they have given us!

Senator Fergusson: On page 4 you refer to the fact that those in need, the Yukon provides ample welfare benefits.

Now, in so many of the provinces we have visited, there has been the complaint that for those in need the province was not providing adequate service and I know this is something that we will be discussing with the Social Welfare Department of the Yukon later on this afternoon.

Is it your opinion that the Yukon Territories provide adequate welfare benefits for those in need?

Mrs. Burns: Yes, we feel that it is adequate. We feel the food per month is perhaps slightly low but we feel on the other hand that the clothing and incidental allowance makes up for it and we have been lead to understand that the welfare will pay almost any bill incurred as far as electricity, fuel and housing concerned. They have set a maximum but people go beyond this maximum they are pretty well obliged to meet the bill and from our own research it seems although it is not a curious life, it is certainly one that one could make ends meet on it.

The Chairman: This has been a study which you people have made, isn't it?

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

The Chairman: Would you mind reading it out for the records. Just take your time and read it to us for the records because I think it will be worthwhile having.

Mrs. Burns: The Territory has been divided into two areas—Area 1 is Whitehorse, Carleton Place, and the immediate vicinity and Area 2 is Mayo, Haines Junction, Dawson City, Old Crow, Beaver Creek and other points.

For the food in dollars per month, for one person it is forty-eight dollars in Area 1, fifty-five dollars in Area 2. For two people, seventy-eight dollars in Area 1, eighty-eight dollars in Area 2. For three people ninety-five dollars in Area 1, and one hundred and eight dollars in Area 2. For four people one hundred and ten dollars in Area 1 and a hundred and twenty-four dollars in Area 2. For five people, one hundred and twenty-five dollars in Area 1 and one hundred and forty dollars in Area 2. It progresses along on a similar basis. Also an extra fifteen dollars a month is available if there is a special diet or if there is a disease such as TB.

For clothing, under age six, seven dollars for Area 1 and Area 2 is just two dollars more in every category for clothing so I will take Area 1. From six to nine, eight dollars.

The Chairman: You say eight or ten because the reporter has to get it down.

Mrs. Burns: Under age six, Area 1, seven dollars. Area 2, nine dollars. Age six to nine, eight dollars Area 1, ten dollars Area 2. Age ten to thirteen, ten dollars Area 1, twelve dollars Area 2. Age fourteen to fifteen, eleven dollars Area 1, thirteen dollars Area 2. Age sixteen and up, twelve dollars, Area 1 and fourteen dollars, Area 2.

For incidentals—this is the same for both areas. For one person, ten dollars a month. Two people, twenty dollars, three people, twenty-five dollars, four people, thirty dollars, five people, forty dollars and six people, forty dollars and up in ten dollar intervals.

For lights, electricity in Area 1 and in Area 2—up to one hundred and twenty dollars a year for two people and two hundred and twenty-dollars a year for three or more people.

For fuel, Area 1 and 2, up to two hundred and forty dollars a year for two people, and up to three hundred dollars a year for three or more people but both lights and fuel, the money will be given according to need even in excess of maximums.

Medical expenses are covered. In the area of housing, rent or mortgage payments will be made if the mortgage is carried over from a previous ownership. The welfare recipient when his mortgage is paid, will gain title to the house.

There are some welfare homes that have been built in Whitehorse and in the outlying

areas and are paid for by the welfare branch and there is some way that these people may be able to buy these houses through a rent-lease agreement if such a possibility comes up.

Money is given in a lump sum to the recipients and they are told how the money should be spent but any other further education is left strictly up to the welfare worker or public health nurse who must take the initiative.

The Chairman: Is that everything?

Mrs. Burns: And the total amount is up the discretion of the Social Welfare Department which means that covers almost anything that can happen.

Senator Hastings: With respect to that discretionary power of the social welfare worker the figures that you have given us are maximum allowances?

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Have you any knowledge of what percent actually gets up to the maximum?

Mrs. Burns: No, I don't but I believe that some go over and I have been lead to believe that they need these payments.

Senator Hastings: Do they make the maximum allowance?

Mrs. Burns: They make the maximum allowances and if the costs go over the allowances or the maximum they will meet that cost as well.

Senator Hastings: Yes.

Mrs. Burns: This is what they mean by discretionary powers. Often they can cut it off.

The Chairman: I wanted to say for the record that that information will be available to us this afternoon. I myself will say to the senators that I have in hand a booklet from one of the provinces which we visited as to what is allowable there. I am not going to tell you what it is, but you do better here.

Senator Fournier: Do you make a difference between need and necessity? You are talking about needs. Now, where do you draw the line between needs and necessity? How do you define need?

Mrs. Burns: I think primarily—you are talking about physical needs, are you?

Senator Fournier: No, I mean the needs of a family. Take for an example a family of four. What would you define as needs?

Mrs. Burns: Well, necessary food with all the nutritional values and this sort of thing, a warm house and I would say—this is an awful difficult question.

Senator Fournier: It is and that is why I asked it.

Mrs. Burns: They say food, clothing and shelter but there is also medical needs and education for children if they are to be able to study in the home or work in the home and not have it so crowded. I think water and lights and sewage.

Senator Fournier: I know it is difficult and the reason I asked it is because that nobody has been able to define this right across Canada. We have people who insist on having two telephones. You know, one upstairs and one downstairs and we have people that want a black and white television downstairs and a coloured set upstairs. They feel this as a need. I know of course that you don't have that here but where do you draw the line in cases like that?

Mrs. Burns: Well, I think a telephone but in cases such as an Indian village, I think one telephone in the area is sufficient. Not necessarily one telephone in each house.

Senator Fournier: You are not asking for very much.

Mrs. Burns: No.

Senator Fournier: Thank you.

Senator Cartier: I assume that these three ladies do the buying for their families?

Mrs. Burns: Yes.

Mrs. Lane: Yes.

Mrs. Phillips: Yes.

Senator Carter: How big a family?

Mrs. Phillips: I have a family of two small children.

Senator Cartier: Two small children?

Mrs. Phillips: Yes.

Mrs. Lane: I have nine.

- Senator Carter:** Nine children?
- Mrs. Lane:** Yes.
- Senator Fournier:** What is wrong with you!
- Mrs. Burns:** Well,...
- The Chairman:** You have time yet.
- Senator Carter:** I wonder if they could give us some idea of what they spend on food for example, in a week.
- Mrs. Phillips:** Well, in our household my husband is away a lot of the time and I get by on very little.
- Senator Carter:** Well, when he is away?
- Mrs. Phillips:** Well, when he is away I spend about twenty dollars a week but it varies but never under twenty dollars a week.
- Senator Carter:** Well, when he is home?
- Mrs. Phillips:** Well, when he is home maybe up to forty dollars a week.
- Senator Carter:** He is a hard man to feed!
- Mrs. Lane:** I would estimate some where between sixty and seventy dollars a week.
- The Chairman:** How old would the oldest be?
- Mrs. Lane:** The oldest is almost sixteen.
- The Chairman:** And the baby?
- Mrs. Lane:** The baby is four.
- Mrs. Burns:** I spend approximately twenty dollars a week.
- Senator Quari:** You mentioned—shoppers or welfare recipients. In this area where you have so many Indians, if that were set up on voluntary basis would you encourage the Indian family to take advantage of that service?
- Mrs. Burns:** Definitely, yes.
- Senator Quari:** Good.
- Mrs. Burns:** This would be primarily—many Indians do not know how to read and are told that often when they go into supermarkets it is the colour of the package that they buy and thinking that they only have a small amount of money they only buy the smallest quantity.
- Senator Quari:** And you the tactic to ask them to just come with you and shop and let them see what you do for a week or two and gain their confidence rather than just saying, come along and we will help you out with your shopping?
- Mrs. Burns:** We haven't really formulated an actual tactic because I think that this will possibly evolve once you get to know the people and this is a trust thing. You just can't say now we are going to do it this way or that way, because they don't want to do it that way, it is not going to work.
- Senator Quari:** No, I can understand that because you would have to gain their confidence.
- Mrs. Burns:** Yes.
- Senator Quari:** Thank you.
- Senator Hastings:** With respect to welfare, are they paid by voucher or by cash?
- Mrs. Burns:** Payment is usually by cash. Vouchers are—well, they are giving both but I was given to understand that they are given mainly cash.
- Now, I have seen a lot of recipients with vouchers so perhaps there are some people in the audience who could answer your question.
- The Chairman:** Well, we have the social welfare group here this afternoon and we can ask them.
- Senator Hastings:** Yes.
- The Chairman:** I would like to thank you three lovely ladies for taking the time to come before us and present a brief such as you have done. You are interested in the problems of the consumer, and we know that there are problems. We thank you very much. You said that you were over-organized here in this city, if you want to have some fun there is a book titled 'Up the Organization'. Buy it and you will enjoy it.
- We want to thank you very much and to say that you have made a contribution. We know the Consumers Association very well, all of us do. We think it is a plus in a city to find a young group like yourselves anxious to get out and help. You do much more good than you think you do by your very presence. There is a certain caution taken. The merchants know you are there and looking over their shoulders. They know you are there if they get out of line.
- Your work is very valuable and although you are not always told about it, it is very

much appreciated. On behalf of the Senate committee we thank you very much.

Upon resuming at 2 p.m.

The Chairman: It is five minutes after two and I will call the meeting to order. I have an announcement to make. The brief from the Government of the Yukon Territory which had been scheduled to be presented at two o'clock today and which is now in the hands of the Senate members will, on direction of the appropriate authority, not be presented in its present form or context today. I am informed it will be amended and forwarded to the Senate Committee at a later date. This just came to our attention a little while ago.

So, if there is nothing further, we have heard all the briefs that were to be presented.

Mr. Norman Chamberlain: I am a member of the Territorial Council.

The Chairman: Yes, I know who you are.

Mr. Chamberlain: I was impressed, Mr. Chairman, by the words in your statement when you commenced the sittings here, when you indicated that poverty meant more than dollars and cents and requirements of the individual. I was very much impressed with those words because, Mr. Chairman, you had indicated that poverty meant other things, and certainly it meant what, with due respect to all honourable members of the Senate, had shown that they were void of knowledge of the Yukon Territory when you people came here. Not by any fault of your own, but by the fact of the lack of dialogue between the federal government and the people of the Yukon Territory.

Certainly if your honourable committee had been informed about certain things—for instance, one lady senator asked a question, "Haven't you people written letters to Ottawa?" and, Mr. Chairman and members, you will recall there was quite a considerable amount of laughter. It seems that letters don't go anywhere but in File 13. And also when members of the Territorial Council have appeared before the Standing Committee on Indian Affairs and Northern Development to make recommendations about the Yukon, that they, too, have been ignored.

I think it would be well, Mr. Chairman, in this regard to note that the members of this

Committee, august as they are, are not knowledgeable of our political affairs here, and I think it is important that you should go and recognize and say to those in Ottawa that you can perhaps influence, that the colonial status that exists whereby we have a legislative body without the power of administering their own affairs, are such that hinders in fact the future of the people of the Territory. And this is where poverty exactly takes over, where those elected to office can't do very much to help those in poverty and those that need help because we are stifled by the Department of Indian Affairs.

This has been continuous in that Department notwithstanding whatever political administration is in office at Ottawa. This is happening over the years.

Now it is unfortunate that not proper consideration is given to our native people. Unfortunately I was not here this morning when their brief was submitted, but it is unfortunate because the greatest enemy of the Yukon and in fact I would say of the people of Yukon generally in relation to poverty is the fact that the Department of Indian Affairs have become a government within a government and is not permitting the people of the Yukon and the native people themselves to express an opinion as to what help is needed.

I am hoping, Mr. Chairman, that honourable members will remember that to get to know what is needed in the Yukon is to come and speak to the people of the Yukon, and I think that you are to be commended in coming all this way up here to just find out those exact things.

The Chairman: Thank you for your last statement. Thank you for all your statements. We go to Newfoundland and they say, "What four days? What can you learn in Newfoundland in four days? What they do not understand and sometimes do not appreciate is that our research staff has researched as much as possible the problems that we are likely to face and what is the condition of the area that we will be examining."

If you had noted the questions here on previous days you would have noticed that they were pretty knowledgeable about things that they were concerned with. We are not too knowledgeable, of course, about political affairs in the Yukon, but that is really not within our scope at the moment. I must go

you that every member sitting here helped establish the new kind of government in this Territory. It came about within recent years. We all considered the legislation and most of us spoke to it. We all voted for it in order to improve the status of the Territory so that people like yourself could be elected.

We are not without knowledge and we are not without awareness, but we have only so much time and we can only go to so many places. We try our very best to get around. After all, we have got to get to the point where we are in a position to make a report. So you must appreciate the fact that when we come up here and spend a day or two, it is a great deal more than other people have spent with you in your lifetime.

Mr. Chamberlain: This might be true, and I do not wish to debate with you, Mr. Chairman, because I disagree to some extent with what you said because if you are trying to say you are responsible for our form of government...

The Chairman: No, no, no.

Mr. Chamberlain: ...it is nothing in your favour, and I am sure you don't intend that. Although I have not heard many of the other members, I have known you, Senator Croll, since you were Mayor of Windsor, a long-time Member of Parliament, and I know some of the things you have done during the time you were Mayor of Windsor. You certainly made municipal law a record on the legal books of history. I have been able to read that quite specifically.

What I am concerned with, Mr. Chairman, and very, very few people in the Yukon could disagree with me on, is the fact that from time to time we have people come along and fact-finding committees yet they have not been properly briefed themselves as to what they should be looking for.

Now, going back to your opening remarks when you referred to poverty meaning so many other things, and it certainly does, but the political aspects of our life are very important to the very fact-finding type of thing that you are trying to do because with-

out the control and say-so to look after our own people, under our present situation, a colonial type of situation, we will never be able to take that great step forward that will improve the lot of our people.

The Chairman: All I can say is that we have to deal with situations as we find them. As far as poverty is concerned, we can recognize it easily. We know exactly what we are looking for. As I say, we recognize it very quickly, and it is not much different here except in some aspects which we have indicated from time to time.

That is the situation. We have not any brief this afternoon. If there is nothing further, I am going to adjourn the meeting and call it a day. I am not going to make any comment on the fact that the brief has been withdrawn. That is their privilege and their right. We have profited by coming here to the Yukon because there are some aspects that had not appeared before. But in the main the symptoms are the same. The needs are the same and the remedies will have to be the same.

I cannot tell you any more than that except to indicate to you that we have covered the country. We have only two more provinces to visit, and a few more hearings, after which we will direct our studies toward a report.

It has been a long, long grind for us, and the members of the committee have devoted themselves to this particular task.

We looked forward to obtaining some information this afternoon, which will come to us on another occasion. We have to live with these things, and since we ask people to oblige us, we cannot force them to do anything.

I say to the hospitable people of this community who have given us not only their friendship but very pleasant weather, that we have met some people here who have impressed us very much. Take my word for it. We leave this community with a very high impression of its capabilities, its contents and its possibilities. We hope that poverty will not be with you for long. Thank you very much.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

BRIEF

Presented to
The Special Senate Committee
on Poverty
by

The YUKON NATIVE BROTHERHOOD

July 23, 1970

Whitehorse, Yukon

Spokesman: Mr. Elijah Smith, Chief, Yukon Native Brotherhood.

Witnesses: Mr. Micheal Smith, Executive Secretary, Yukon Native Brotherhood; Mr. Dave Joe, Probation Officer, Department of Corrections; Mr. Allan Lueck, Legal Advisor, Yukon Native Brotherhood; Mr. John P. Hoyt, Executive Director, Skookum Jim Memorial Hall.

Mr. Chairman, Honourable Senators,

On behalf of the Indian People of the Yukon, I welcome you to our land. We hope while you are here you will understand why we feel proud of this land. We are proud of our past and we want to be able to keep our pride in the future. We hope your Committee and other people will listen to what we say and help us to learn how to live with you in the future.

The Yukon Native Brotherhood is composed of all the Indians in the Yukon. All twelve of the Bands are represented on the Executive. Non-status Indians are also included.

The aim of the Brotherhood is to find ways for the Yukon Indian to better himself and his family. Even Indians sometimes experience Poverty, so that's what we want to talk about.

Most Whitemen think that everyone who does not have a house, good clothes, and a car is poor. This is not true for all Indians. Many of my people do not own many expensive things, but they are rich in their pride and their feelings.

Our younger people have learned from you white people that if they do not own cars, boats and things like that, then they are poor. This is wrong.

We do have people who cannot provide enough for their families. They have to accept handouts. We do not like to be in a position where we must take handouts.

In this brief we will try to explain how this situation developed. We will also tell you what we think could be done to help.

We don't know too much about poverty in other parts of Canada, but we all know that it is a fairly new problem for the Yukon Indian. In the olden days before the Whitemen came we depended upon one another and this way no one was poor. We shared what we had. When we had this land to ourselves we got our living from the land. Even after the fur traders and gold seekers came, we managed to pretty well look after ourselves.

We didn't sign treaties, we weren't put on reserves, we were allowed to live where we wanted and move around. During the gold rush it was the Whiteman who experienced Poverty. Not many books about the gold rush have been written to tell how they starved, froze to death, and got lost. Many became dependent upon the Indian for shelter, food, clothing, transportation and guides.

The Gold Rush didn't last long and by 1910 most Indians returned to the old way of life. We lived in camps along the Yukon, Stewart Pelly, Hoodilinquia and Takhini Rivers. We cut wood and sold it to the riverboats. We trapped and sold furs to the traders. We built our own homes, cut our own firewood, killed our meat and caught our fish. With the money we got for wood and fur we bought what else we needed from the Trading Post.

When the Americans came to build the Alaska Highway, most Indians made money working in camps, on airports, survey crew or the boats. From big money during the war to no money after the war the Indian people were hard hit.

The riverboats which provided jobs and market for wood were removed by 1950. The Indian was left stranded on the river and had to move to the new highway—or to white settlements.

The Indian could see no way to make living in the white settlements, and this when we first experienced poverty—less than twenty years ago. It was not only the fa

that we couldn't earn a living but—more important—we had been forced to move away from our old way of life. We are still trying to learn the new way—your way. What was not done twenty years ago is what we are asking to be done now. We need to learn how to live the new way and we will give you some of our ideas how we think it can be done. In all of our solutions there will be two things that we are aiming at. First, our pride and self-respect—second, dollars to buy food, clothing and shelter, or to use the Whiteman's words "economic security".

We are going to discuss seven places where we have problems which can be solved.

I Land

When we talk about poverty among the Indian people in the Yukon, we are talking about many different things. A major reason for what Whitemen call *economic* poverty among Indian people in the Yukon is that, unlike the Whiteman, we are told that we do not own our land. Yet our fathers and grandfathers and their fathers have lived in this land all their lives and considered this to be their country.

For the Whiteman, private land ownership is the basis of all social and legal organization in Canada. The Yukon Indian suffers because his people's concept of ownership of land is completely unrecognized by the Government and which was available for Indians to hunt, trap, and fish in the Old Indian Way before 1948, is now in many cases being developed by the non-Indian. Roads, industrial and mining development are crossing and damaging our traplines, hunting and fishing grounds. The Indian concept of land ownership recognizes the right of an individual and his family to use, live on and make a living from the land on which they live. We find it strange that Whitemen often own "land" which they do not use. Indians did not make a living from one small plot of land. They moved over their area of land, asking what they needed and regarding their territory as belonging to group.

This point is very important and must be understood. We are not what you refer to as agrarians, with no special idea of land ownership. The same as in the traplines, a family only hunted to make a living from a particular area of land. Maybe he gets permission from the recognized (Indian) owner. This is why we have always said "This is our Land."

Specific Cases:

An example of how our rights to land are being taken happened recently in the Klutane area. Families who had always lived and hunted there were told by the Game Department that a game sanctuary had been established on their land. When Mr. Tom Smith killed a moose on this land to feed his family he was charged and taken to court. The Appeal Court of British Columbia made a final ruling that it was **WITHIN HIS RIGHTS** to hunt there as he always has. Yet today, Territorial Game Department which recognizes no special hunting and fishing privileges for Indians continues to forbid them to hunt in this area. How else are they to provide food for their families? What kind of legal system is this?

In the Lake Lebarge area there is a large area of land which has always belonged to Indians, Indian houses still stand on this site. One year ago the Territorial Government granted a lease to an American Businessman to bring in bulldozers and develop this land. At no time were Indians asked how they felt about this. Now, a year later, he has built a road and plans to build a tourist lodge on our land. We want to know what right the Government has to do this. How and when are Indians living in the Yukon to be compensated for their land?

Recommendations:

We recommend that the Government of Canada recognize its legal and moral obligation to negotiate an immediate and just land settlement with the Indian people of the Yukon Territory. The United States Government has recently completed such a settlement with Native people in Alaska. Canada can no longer ignore its responsibilities to take the same action.

Questions:

II Housing

Since this is a matter we plan to deal with later—with other Government Departments—we will not go into detail in this brief. You have seen some of the living conditions in the Whitehorse Village. I'm sorry you don't have time to visit the villages in the other areas. Some of our comments about housing have been put in as the sound to go with a film we have made for you. Although this is the first time we have made a film, we hope you will get some idea of what it is like in Ross River.

Our principal housing recommendation is to allow the Indian family through his Band Council to choose where he wants to build his house.

Questions:

III Education

Many Indian parents say they do not understand why their children do not succeed in the Whiteman's school. We are told that the most important learning for a child is his first six years. We have known for centuries. By the time we were ten years old we had many responsibilities—the girls with her mother and the boy with his father.

Today when our ten year old is taught, he is taught by someone who knows nothing about the child's first six years. This is the main reason that today's system of Education in the Yukon does not work for Indian children. Less than 1 per cent of the Indian students graduate from Highschool. All the material studied and the books used are prepared in Victoria, British Columbia for white, middleclass city children. Teachers know little about "The Indian Way" and show little respect for Indian Culture and History. What was taught as good by the Indian Child's Parents is often later taught as bad by the teacher. The Indian child is told "The Indian Way" is dead, and that he must learn the only way "The White Way". Most teachers are from outside and don't even know about the Yukon.

Indian Parents are not able to take part in the teaching that goes on in school. They are expected to encourage their child to go to school and to make good marks, but they don't understand what is going on in the school. What the Whiteman calls a generation gap (between parents and Kids)—is a cultural gap for the Indian student. Everything is new and different and in no way the same as what he learned at home in his first six years. Indian Parents don't mind his boy or girl taught the Whiteman way—he knows that it is necessary. But he does not accept what is happening now—I mean the Indian Child is growing up ashamed of being an Indian—This often means—ashamed of his own parents.

In the Yukon in 1968-69 there were 3,671 students in school. 725 of these were status Indians. 300 of these lived in two hostels in Whitehorse and went to school here. Hostels and Residential Schools have been the major cause of the breakdown of the Indian family.

The Indian family has been until recently the backbone of Indian life and these institutions have proven disastrous. Now we are going to make some recommendations. Dave Joe and Mike Smith are here to help me today. They are two of the three University Students from the Yukon.

(1) Either

(a) put elementary teachers in the Indian Villages to learn the Indian Way, or

(b) put Indian people in the classroom to help teach the lower grades.

(2) Involve Indian Parents:

(a) put on school advisory committees.

(b) form Indian advisory committees in Indian Villages.

(c) consult with parents and older Indians about what parts of "The Indian Way" should be taught in the schools.

(d) Invite Indian people—maybe on part-time salary—talk to classes—both Indian and non-Indian would benefit.

(3) Design course of study and textbooks for Yukon—including Indian culture and history.

(4) Make education fit jobs—the future of the Yukon is mining which includes many jobs for Indians. Remember, Yukon Indians will continue to live *here*—not outside.

(5) More outdoor instruction for both Indians and non-Indians.

(6) Adult education in villages—maybe even in homes—similar to Frontier College. Dept. of Education cannot meet needs of local people as well as Frontier College.

(7) Local group foster homes (Capital cost \$15,000 in each village—operated by the local Indian people to replace Hostels. For example, Al Kulan's house in Ross River—available for \$1.00 per year.

(8) For those children who have used the Indian language in their homes, they must be taught for the first three years in the language. This is what has been found to be necessary in Greenland, Russia, and Lapland—and more recently in Quebec and Alaska.

(9) Finally, give us some room for failure. Questions:

IV Employment and Economic Development

There are two ways which unemployed Yukon Indians can become employed.

First we can be trained for the jobs that exist.

Secondly, jobs can be created for which we are already trained.

—In some cases it may be necessary to combine the two.

1. Trapping—many Indians continue to trap in the winter—they move to fish camps in the summer and pick up seasonal employment fighting forest fires. The trapping has been interfered with by:

1. Fur buyers are all in Whitehorse and there are no local traders. Hudson's Bay and T&D's are now large Department stores and do not have the confidence of the trappers.

2. Interference with traplines by:

(a) mining activities—Dawson and Ross River.

(b) land development—Ross River.

(c) roads—Watson Lake.

(d) white poachers—Ross River.

2. Mining—We Indian people know and accept the fact that the Yukon's future is mining. If Skookum Jim hadn't found the gold for George Carmacks, maybe the whitemen would not be here yet. There are many ways in which we can earn a living with the mining. First thing in mining is prospecting. We know the land and we know the rocks. But not enough Indians are prospectors. The reason is that the older Indians who have learned to prospect do not feel they will get a fair deal from the Whiteman for the minerals they find. So they don't prospect too much any more. Another thing, this prospectors' assistance plan they have is no good for some of our people. They are afraid to apply because they don't read and write. The money is there for them, but they won't ask for it. Prospectors Assistance is something like a grubstake and a man has to have one today.

Many of our people could learn to become prospectors, but when training courses are given they are no good as a person can't read and write too well.

The second thing in mining is staking. We are hired to go out and stake for ourselves.

Next, comes surveying and line cutting. We cut most of the trees but most foremen are Whitemen.

Even when development starts, we operate heavy equipment—but this is as far as we go. We don't have experience in mines, so the

foremen are all outsiders. When there is a chance for promotion, we don't have the education.

The most important problem today facing the Yukon Indian who wants to get a good job in mining is to live in a mining town. Few Indian families will live in apartments. They would rather live in their own homes with privacy from neighbour.

3. Co-ops—There are several opportunities for co-ops to be run by the Yukon Indian people. Indian Affairs has tried three: The Ross River sawmill The Indian Craft Store and Joe Netro's Store in Old Crow. All three are run by Whitemen. The Craft Store is now private, the Old Crow store manager is quitting and none of the Indian people know what is going on at the Ross River sawmill. Why Can't our own people be trained?

4. In Carmacks the coal mine is now being operated with mostly Indian labour. New prosperity has affected thirteen families. The trading post is for sale and it would be a good business for the Indian people.

5. In Pelly Crossing there exists a sawmill rusting away in the middle of the best timber in the Yukon. The owner died last year. He has always used Pelly Indian labour. The Government has given away the timber leases to an outside firm who plan to export logs to Japan. The Indian people would like to operate this mill, but Indian Affairs say they aren't interested at this time.

6. In Dawson City no Indians are working at the Clinton Creek Asbestos mine (which was discovered by an Indian and which interferes with an Indian trapline). This is an open pit mine where lots of jobs could be done by Indians. Most mines bring in their people from outside the Yukon through the Union. Indians are told "If you don't have a job, you can't join the Union" and "If you don't belong to the Union, you can't get a job." Also in Dawson City there is a good opportunity for commercial salmon fishing. Such a program needs management and capital on a small scale.

7. In Old Crow, the Indian people have had the highest per capita income of all the Indians in the Yukon. Their income was from muskrat trapping. Now the oil companies are working in the middle of these trapping grounds and the Indian people don't know what they can expect.

8. At Haines Junction there has been an experimental farm for several years. Most of the people who worked there were Indians, now the farm is being closed. The Indians asked for the chance to run it themselves. Without talking to the people of the Band that lives there, the Government has completed plans to operate it as a tree nursery.

9. In Whitehorse, there is a Cement Block Plant which has been for sale for over a year. It hasn't been sold because the owner has used Indian Labour for Twelve years and wants to sell to the Indian people. Money has been found to pay 50 per cent of the cost of purchase, but Indian Affairs will not put up the other 50 per cent.

Also in the Whitehorse Village, plans for store and restaurant were stopped because we have no water and sewer.

10. In Carcross, the mine is operated with outside labour while most of the Indian people are unemployed. Commercial fishing, for the local market (50 miles from Whitehorse) is not encouraged.

11. Anvil Mine is 65 miles away from Ross River but does not at present employ one Indian from Ross River, even though they entered into an agreement with the Government to hire Indian people.

12. If employment is to be provided for Indian People, then some understanding of the Indian as an employee must be developed by employer. Routine shift work, wages, unions supervision and many other factors are not part of "The Indian Way".

13. Although Indian People work as labourers and line-cutters on several projects, seldom does an Indian or group of Indians bid on such a contract. Often they do not understand how to go about bidding.

14. When Indian young people successfully complete training (for Instance at Vocational school), they face two obstacles which usually combine to make sure he can't get a job. Firstly, employers ask if such a person has experience. Anvil offered to take five top heavy duty operators. The class leader was hired first. The foreman on the job did not agree with the companys' policy. The young lad was fired in 24 hours due to inexperience and management was informed by the foreman that they "were not running a training school for Kids".

When a young man does land a job, he often doesn't have a place to live. Even the whitemen can't find a place here in Whitehorse. It is nearly impossible for an Indian. So then he quits his job and goes back to his home. So all his training is wasted.

Recommendations:

1. An Indian Fur Buyer to travel from Village to Village in the wintertime.

2. Compensation for damage to traplines.

3. Someone to explain Prospector's Assistance plan to those people who need it.

4. Prospector's Courses for people in the Villages and in the Vocational School.

5. Kids should be learning about rocks in the early grades in school, so they will become interested in mining.

6. Indian housing outside company Mining towns so Indian Families won't have to change their whole way of life.

7. Accommodation—single men rental—for Indians working in Whitehorse, but who came from outside Villages.

8. Run regular course at vocational in Co-op management—Manpower could do this. Alaska has a highly developed system of Indian and Eskimo Co-op's.

9. Use a small loan and development fund money to set up co-ops or private businesses in:

Old Crow—trading Post

Dawson City—Fresh, Dried and Smoked Salmon

Pelly—Sawmill

Carmacks—Trading Post

Whitehorse—Tourism, Craftwork, Cement

Block and Taxi

Ross River—Sawmill

Haines Junction—Farm

Carcross—Tourism (boat tours on lake), fishing

10. Employment offices in villages.

11. Indian Counsellor in Manpower to talk to Indians who are looking for work.

12. Indian person to work as Field Worker for Manpower—He would travel around the villages and explain about all the training, apprentice, employment that is available.

13. The position of Placement Officer at Indian Affairs in Whitehorse should be transferred to either the Brotherhood or Skookum Jim Hall—as both are concerned and involved in this area.

Questions:

V Community Development

We do not have any Community Development Workers in the Yukon. Four years ago none of our Bands has an active Band Council. Local problems were only brought to the attention of the Indian Agent when he was travelling around from his office in Whitehorse.

There are no Social, Recreational, Educational, or Cultural Programs in any of the Villages, except here in Whitehorse. We have been asking Indian Affairs for Community Development workers for four years.

Every Village has a problem of transportation. Groceries have to be packed a long distance as there are no stores close to the Villages.

Even 25 cent rummy games in private homes are stopped by the R.C.M.P. A lot of drinking that goes on in the taverns is because there are no programs in the Villages.

Recommendations:

1. Funds for Community Development Programs should be given to the Brotherhood so that local Indian People could be trained and put to work in the Villages under direction of local Band Councils.

2. Local Indian People should be trained as Village Constables to help enforce the law and replace the bad image of the R.C.M.P.

3. Local Indian people should be trained to work as Recreational Directors to work for Local Band Councils.

4. A small group home should be built in each Village (Capital cost \$15,000). This would be operated by Indian people and would be a place for old people to stay. Then they wouldn't have to leave their Village and people to live in an Old Folks Home or Hospital.

5. Each Village should have a Community Hall. It could be used for potlatches, sports, movies, rummage sales, dances, bingos, adult education, kindergartens and many other programs.

6. Each Village should have a Community Bath House where people could do their laundry and take a shower.

7. Fire fighting equipment, fire alarms, and public telephone would make people in the Villages feel safer. Many homes burned, some with children in them.

Questions:

VL The Indian Consumer

One of the most difficult things for our people to understand is the Whiteman's idea of saving money and material goods. In the old days, we shared what we had—food, clothing and other things we needed so that everyone was looked after. A wealthy Indian man was one who gave away goods rather than keeping them for himself. Even now, an Indian who shoots a moose or catches lots of fish shares with the people in his village.

But the Whiteman is different. He becomes important by buying things and keeping them for himself, and by having lots of money stored in the bank. The Whiteman also talks a lot about budgeting time and money. He plans, works, eats and sleeps on a weekly, bi-weekly or monthly schedule. Yet we are paid and given financial assistance by a Whiteman's monthly calendar. We can't always adjust our lives to fit this time schedule. When money is available Indian people spend it, just as in the old days we had a feast when we killed a moose or caribou.

It is often hard for our people to shop in your stores. Yet we need food. Game laws in some cases prevent our hunting, especially in the case of non-status Indians. So we buy from stores. Often our people are confused by so many kinds of packages with fancy labels. Many older people cannot read and buy the package because it looks good not because of what's in it. Because many have no place to store food, food cannot be bought in large quantities. If taxis are used to get food home, it costs a lot more money.

Here is a list of some prices in the Yukon compared with your's in Ottawa:

	Ottawa	White-horse	Ross River
1 loaf bread	.19	.38	.39
10 pounds flour	1.64	1.16	2.38 (25 lbs. bag)
1 dozen eggs	.51	.69	.79
1 large tin milk	.17	.23½	.27
10 pounds sugar	1.07	1.59	1.98
1 pound tea	1.65	1.96	2.03

	Ottawa	White-horse	Ross River
1 dozen oranges	.79	.25/lb	.25/lb
1 pound coffee	1.05	1.13	1.11
1 pound bacon	.79	1.19	1.25
10 pounds potatoes	.99	2.05	1.97
1 pound weiners	.75	.79	.79

The welfare department gives some people financial assistance, but cheques do not always arrive on time. Many old people never know when they will receive money, or if they will receive it, so they can't plan.

To save money, people buy the cheapest clothing which does not last. People from Villages feel uncomfortable in large department stores, so they often buy the first thing they see, rather than shopping around for better bargains.

Some Indian People now want cars, record players, T.V. Sets, deep freezes, and so on. But they do not understand the salesman's talk. They do not bargain with them to get a better price. Sometimes they are encouraged to buy on credit—something which they do not understand. Buying on credit can be a disaster, because a man suddenly finds he owes more money than he can ever pay back. Recommendations:

1. Pension cheques and other financial assistance cheques should be paid bi-monthly rather than monthly so that people can learn to handle money in smaller amounts.

2. Programs of consumer education should be available so the Indian people can learn how to make the best use of their money.

3. Shopping aides should be hired to work in stores. They could help older people buy groceries and clothes—both in quantity and quality.

4. One deep freeze with lockers could be built in each village so that a family can store food without buying an individual freezer. Now, moose meat must be eaten when it is killed.

5. Some form of transportation should be available in Villages, such as Whitehorse Indian Village and Carmacks. People live

some distance from local stores and at present have to hire taxis to take them back and forth to shop.

Questions:

VII Communications

All of our talk about economic development depends upon good communications between the Indian people and those Government Departments who are supposed to be helping solve our problems. We feel that many of these Departments are more interested in themselves rather than the people they are supposed to help.

The Yukon Indian people deal with the Federal Departments of Indian Affairs, Health and Welfare, Fisheries, and Manpower. Also the Territorial Departments of Welfare, Education and Game. In all these Departments, policies which affect the Indian are made by non-Indians.

Plans for the Indian people are made without consultation or recommendations from the Indian People. Programs are sent to Indian Bands in a language which cannot be understood. We understand English, but not all your big words. Also if Government people would talk to our people in their villages, even through the Band Councils, it would be better than the way they do now—always across their desk in a big office. Officials talk about policies when Indians are talking about specific problems. If an Indian says nothing, the official thinks he understands, but usually he doesn't. Government officials talk to Indians in a way which makes us feel inferior.

Because of the distances between Villages, most information never reaches the people concerned. This is especially true of programs planned by Indian Affairs and Manpower.

The Yukon Native Brotherhood is trying to set up a system where we can get information from the Departments, and then explain it to the Indian people.

There are many specific cases where communications has prevented progress on our own war on Poverty. We will tell you about an example. Sixteen months ago, the Whitehorse Indian Band Council wrote their Indian Agent asking if there were training courses available for recreation directors, band constables, welfare officers and other jobs. The Indian Agent wrote back "no". After all these months of writing letters to "outside" places they have earned that these training pro

grams do exist and the Department of Indian Affairs pays for some of them.

In my meetings in Ottawa with the National Committee, I have met Government Officials who tell me about Cultural Affairs grants, small loans to business, revolving loan fund for economic development and others, which could help us with some of our plans.

The local offices have never come to us to explain that such programs are available for the Indian people of the Yukon.

Recommendations:

1. Development programs which will allow non-status Indians to participate.

2. Field Workers for Brotherhood and Friendship Centre who know what programs are available.

3. Indian Agents who understand the people and will explain the contents of letters and circulars.

4. Rewording of all correspondence and plans at local office as very little being sent out from Ottawa, Vancouver, and Whitehorse is understood.

5. There must be more flexibility in policy so that local conditions can be dealt with. Remember most Indian Affairs programs are designed for Bands who receive treaty money. No Band in the Yukon has an income of its own, so most programs are not going to work.

6. All Departments must either learn how to talk and either explain things to the Indian

people, or else they should hire Indian people to do it. These people should travel to the Villages and not stay behind desks in Whitehorse.

7. When Dr. Black, Zone Director of Northern Health Services was preparing his budget, he had a meeting with the Indian people to talk about plans, policy and programs. Why can't all Departments do this?

8. All information regarding programs which affect the Yukon Indian people should be sent to the Yukon Native Brotherhood and Skookum Jim Memorial Hall.

Conclusion:

In this brief, the Yukon Native Brotherhood has tried to describe to you some of our ideas about what poverty means to the Indian people. We have also described what we feel we can do about it. We have pointed out that poverty is new to our people. There is no reason why it should keep getting worse. The recommendations in this brief came from eight of the twelve Indian Bands in the Yukon. They are ideas which have been suggested again and again by the Indian people. We could carry these ideas out ourselves if we were given the necessary resources. We ask you to consider our suggestions carefully not just file them away on some shelf in Ottawa. We have the people. We have the ideas. We ask that you give us a chance to carry them out.

APPENDIX "B"

BRIEF ON POVERTY

Submitted to:

The Senate Commission on Poverty

By: Consumers' Association of
Canada, Whitehorse Branch,

P.O. Box 1886,

Whitehorse, Yukon

July 23, 1970

Introduction

As a Consumers' Association, we are looking at poverty from the point of view of the consumer, this involves essentially two basic concepts:

(A) Quantity of material goods and services

(B) Quality of life.

(A) Quantity of material goods and services

Situation

The low income consumer pays more due to insufficient money to buy in bulk, lack of immediate funds to buy quality for long term durability and savings, lack of transportation to shop comparatively, and a number of other reasons.

In the north a fair percentage of the low income population live in isolated areas, where the local grocery store sells only in small quantities and at high prices compared with those in Whitehorse). River water in most Yukon communities (e.g. Mayo and Pelly rivers) is not fit for drinking unless treated. Thus those people without serviced lots must buy water or risk infection from river water. Cost of building and building materials and cost of repairs are higher in the north, as are rents, electricity and fuel. For these reasons the low income consumer in the north pays a higher percentage of his income for the basic necessities of life. Yet, Yukoners are taxed at the same level as the rest of Canada.

Recommendation

Tax concessions should be given to Northerners to equalize their spending power with southern Canadians.

Recommendation

We feel that co-operatives would help to alleviate existing economic problems.

The co-operative presently operating in Old Crow is a giant step in the right direction. This is a situation where a store, whose owner retired, was purchased by the Old Crow Co-operative through a government grant. A manager hired by the Department of Indian Affairs is presently managing the store, and the directors of the co-op are learning the mechanics of merchandizing and the advantages and responsibilities of co-operative effort.

It is our understanding that a management workshop under government auspices was also conducted.

Since many people in other areas of the Yukon, including Whitehorse would benefit by this type of venture, we propose that assistance in the form of managerial and/or financial aid to any group desiring it.

Situation

All families regardless of income receive equal family allowance payments.

Recommendation

We see value in increasing family and youth allowances substantially and considering these allowances as taxable income so that more benefits are received by those in need while higher income families would return these benefits in taxes.

(B) Quality of life

Situation

Many Canadians suffer from cultural poverty and the inability to make constructive use of leisure time for self enrichment. Unfortunately, the Yukon Department of Education (for so called economic reasons) has phased out school librarians and music specialists from Yukon schools, leaving only two band specialists in Whitehorse on staff.

Recommendation

We recommend that more vigorous programs in the arts be established in our schools from kindergarten to grade XII.

Situation

There is a large number of working mothers in the Yukon and a large number of children being placed with babysitters who in most cases do not give these children a great deal of stimulation. It has been proven that the preschool years are extremely important

in brain development. Deprivation in the early years can lead to failure to adjust and integrate into normal adult life. In this situation, again the poor pay more, as they are often unable to afford adequate day care for their children who suffer.

Recommendation

It is our recommendation, therefore, that more support be given to existing approved day care centers and for the formation of more day care centers.

Situation

In the Yukon there is a real lack of reliable household help to assist families in times of stress. Most Yukoners have no relatives in the territory to whom they could turn in times of trouble. Also the cost of taking a vacation out of the territory is beyond the means of many families unless they have some home help to care for the children. Such a vacation is a real need, as demonstrated by the northern psychological phenomenon "cabin fever".

Recommendation

We recommend the formation and support of a Home Help Organization to provide a reliable source of help in the case of family need.

Situation

There exists a "poverty culture" where the whole social environment breeds apathy. In this subculture it is not only money that is lacking. It is dignity, education and resourcefulness. For those in need the Yukon provides adequate welfare benefits. But it is often the fatalistic social climate that impoverishes.

Money alone can not rectify this poverty, only opportunity and education can break the cycle. If those people caught in this subculture could see that through their own decisions they could exercise some control over their own life, there could come self respect, dignity and pride. What this would be essentially is education. Even those with higher incomes fail to realize and take advantage of the opportunities around them.

Recommendation

We therefore recommend the establishment of neighbourhood information centers'—interdisciplinary resource and information centers located within a community with the aim of informing and serving as self help centers. These would be 'human resource centers' aimed at improving the quality of life from budget management to pollution control. They

would serve as a method of effectively distributing and co-ordinating the multiplicity of community and government services already available to the citizen, and as a base for disseminating consumer information and counselling. For example, such a center could provide "shoppers" for welfare recipients to help them manage with the money they receive—a much needed service in Whitehorse.

These centers would be independent, non-sectarian and non-political and thus be a center where citizens of any social class could go and seek advice. In order to maintain high standards of service and provide accurate and up-to-date information, such centers would be nationally co-ordinated.

These centers would depend heavily on volunteers for assistance, thus necessitating careful training of volunteers combined with professional staff for supervising. The community would then benefit by having a core of trained persons for organizing citizens action issues of local concern.

Finances would be provided jointly by federal, provincial and municipal governments. The centers would be accountable to the community through a voluntary board of neighbourhood residents and representatives of sponsoring organization, both voluntary and governments.

Situation

There exists no uniform consumers education in the public school system of the Yukon. Some schools have no consumer education curriculum at all. Such education is sorely needed now by adults and will thus be needed by today's affluent youth who have money to spend but no concept of management.

Recommendation

We therefore recommend that from grade VII consumer information should be well disseminated—integrated within mathematics and social study courses as well as under separate sections in economics and guidance classes.

Conclusions

In conclusion we recommend a two pronged attack on poverty, one to combat the insufficiency of material goods and services and the other to improve the quality of living for every Canadian.



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament
1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA
PROCEEDINGS

OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 60

MONDAY, AUGUST 3, 1970

WITNESSES:

The Social Services Council of Greater Saint John and The United Fund of Greater Saint John. The Council of Saint John Home and School Association. The Saint John Board of Trade. The New Brunswick Federation of Labour (C.L.C.). The University of New Brunswick Student Council. The Universal Axle. South End Improvement Association and South End Tenants' Association. The Crescent Valley Tenants' Association.

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for the names of the witnesses who were heard by the committee.)

APPENDICES:

- "A"—Brief submitted jointly by The Social Services Council of Greater Saint John and The United Fund of Greater Saint John, Inc.
- "B"—Brief submitted by The Council of Saint John Home and School Association.
- "C"—Brief submitted by The Saint John Board of Trade.
- "D"—Brief submitted by The New Brunswick Federation of Labour (C.L.C.).
- "E"—Brief submitted by Mr. Alan Martin, Second Year Student, The University of New Brunswick Student Council.
- "F"—Brief submitted by The Universal Axle.
- "G"—Brief submitted by South End Improvement Association and South End Tenants' Association.
- "H"—Brief submitted by The Crescent Valley Tenants' Association.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche,</i> <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

“With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.”

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

Saint John, New Brunswick,
Y.M.C.A., Hazen St.,

MONDAY, August, 3, 1970.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators Croll (*Chairman*); Fergusson; Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*); Hastings, Inman, McGrand and Quart—(7).

In attendance: Mr. Frederick J. Joyce, Director.

The following witnesses were heard:

The Social Services Council of Greater Saint John and the United Fund of Greater Saint John: Mr. Henry E. Stegmayer, Executive Director; Mr. James Finnigan, President, Community Workers Association; Miss Mary Jane Whipple; Miss Nancy Reed.

The Council of Saint John Home and School Association: Mrs. Stig Olsson, President; Mr. Eric L. Teed, Chairman of the Committee Submission.

The Saint John Board of Trade: Mr. Peter L. Wood, Chairman of Submission; Mr. Henry E. Stegmayer, Executive Director of United Fund; Mr. R. N. Wynott, Manager, Board of Trade.

At 11:55 a.m. the Committee adjourned until 1.30 p.m.

At 1.30 p.m. the Committee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators Croll (*Chairman*); Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand and Quart—(7).

In attendance: Mr. Frederick J. Joyce, Director.

The following witnesses were heard:

The New Brunswick Federation of Labour (C.L.C.): Mr. Fred Hodges, President; Mr. George Newell, Vice-President; Mr. Richard Saunders; Miss Catherine Gale, Executive Secretary, United Fund and Social Services of Greater Saint John; Mr. Joseph Drummond; Mr. Bill Craig, Labour Council of New Brunswick.

The University of New Brunswick Student Council: Mr. Alan Martin, Second Year Student.

The Universal Axle: Mr. Jason Paikowsky, Student; Mr. Garry Curran, Program Manager of Universal Axle; Mrs. Ann Chisholm, R.N.

At 4.20 p.m. the Committee adjourned until 7.30 p.m.

At 7.30 p.m. the Committee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators Croll (*Chairman*); Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand and Quart—(7).

In attendance: Mr. Frederick J. Joyce, Director.

The following witnesses were heard:

South End Improvement Association and South End Tenants' Association:
Miss Anne C. Maxwell; Miss Anne Marie McGrath.

A videotape submission of about twenty minutes duration was shown.

Mr. Joseph H. Owen, President, South End Tenants' Association; Dr. Joseph A. MacDougall, President, South End Improvement Association.

The Crescent Valley Tenants' Association: Mrs. Mary Jane Whipple; Mr. Richard Saunders, President.

The following briefs were ordered to be printed as Appendices to these proceedings.

Appendix "A"—Brief submitted jointly by The Social Services Council of Greater Saint John and The United Fund of Greater Saint John, Inc.

Appendix "B"—Brief submitted by The Council of Saint John Home and School Association.

Appendix "C"—Brief submitted by The Saint John Board of Trade.

Appendix "D"—Brief submitted by The New Brunswick Federation of Labour (C.L.C.)

Appendix "E"—Brief submitted by Mr. Alan Martin, Second Year Student, The University of New Brunswick Student Council.

Appendix "F"—Brief submitted by The Universal Axle.

Appendix "G"—Brief submitted by South End Improvement Association and South End Tenants' Association.

Appendix "H"—Brief submitted by The Crescent Valley Tenants' Association.

At 9.20 p.m. the Committee adjourned until Tuesday, August 4, 1970, at 9.00 a.m.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

August 3, 1970, Saint John, New Brunswick.

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9 a.m.

Senator David Croll (Chairman) in the Chair.

The Chairman: I will call the meeting to order. This is the first meeting of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty in the Province of New Brunswick. You see before you the very distinguished senators who have come to attend this meeting. It would not be fitting if I did not indicate to you that there are three members sitting on this committee from the Province of New Brunswick, for whom we of the committee have a special regard.

They have been very much concerned and devoted. They have given a great deal of strength and understanding to the committee. On my left is Vice-President Senator Edgar Bourcier. You know him. He has served the province for many years with great distinction, and he has been a tower of strength on this committee.

On my right here immediately is Senator Lurriel Fergusson. She is outstanding, as you now. She is the foremost woman in the political life of Canada. It has taken her a little time to get there but she got there.

Next to her is Senator Fred McGrand. In earlier days he gave great, unstinting and unparalleled service to the Province of New Brunswick. Now he gives it to the Dominion of Canada through the Senate. He was telling me, when we went out in the country last night to one of the homes, that he had served that area when he was practising medicine and had brought into the world many, many of the people who now live in New Brunswick. He is still devoted to these people.

All these senators have a particular understanding of poverty in all its aspects, and the committee is richer for having three outstanding people from the Province of New Brunswick. We only gave one seat to the rest

of the provinces with the exception of Ontario; whereas we thought we could profit from having more than one from New Brunswick.

Now, the other matter to which I would like to call attention is the White Paper on Social Development and Social Reform. I understand that most of the task force of the committee are here. I am not going to say anything at all about it, except this: that in my view—and I think it is the view of the committee—it is one of the most progressive and imaginative approaches to the problem of poverty that has been elucidated in this country for many years. We say to the task force, "Good luck in finding solutions." All we ask is that they say "Good luck" to us.

We have visited all the provinces with the exception of Saskatchewan and Quebec, and we shall be visiting them. Then we will have completed our trips across the country.

There are some things that you should understand. We, as a committee, are not here to protect the past. We are looking to the future. Most of you people here in the audience know what I am speaking about when I talk about the poverty line as defined by the Economic Council. In 1968 they had it up to \$1,800 for a single person, and in 1970 it has grown to \$1,944 as a result of an increase in the cost of living. But that is not the point I want to make.

This is important. These myths die hard and the myth that most of poor are in the Maritimes dies hard, and we might as well start nailing it down little by little. I did it in the Senate some time ago. We have done it from time to time. Those of you who take the trouble to read the interim report will find that the percentage of population below the poverty line, which is applicable across Canada, is 15 per cent in the Atlantic provinces, whereas it is 30 per cent in Quebec. It is 25 per cent in Ontario. It is 20 per cent in the Prairie provinces, and 10 per cent in

British Columbia. It is well to keep those figures in mind.

There are other myths that are important and need some thought too. I know that since the thirties we have believed that if you had enough good will and money anything could be solved. Well, it just is not so. We also believed that if you created some unemployment you could solve inflationary tendencies. We tried it and we wound up with worst of both worlds. We know that is not so. We do know that social security and society must undergo continuous changes and renewals. It has to be responsive to the winds of change.

Now, we started out on this task of ours without a textbook or without precedents. We have to be pathfinders. To this extent we have succeeded beyond doubt. We have increased by our hearings the individual's feeling of responsibility, participation and being part of society. I think we have gotten a message across to the people who are vitally concerned with poverty, in that they are affected by it; that they have to be part of the solution. They have to participate. The more we get around the country and the more we visit cities we realize we are not facing a generation gap; we are facing a gap of generations.

We have gone about the country to find out what the country is thinking. It is my view that the people are way out in front of the politicians, who have been slow to catch up with the ideas which have fired the imagination of the masses. In this day and age I do not think we can take anything for granted; for those who take it for granted will find themselves in an awkward awakening.

What is equally important is that what we have begun no one will be able to stop or deny or ignore or put aside. The war on poverty has been started. Others will take it up. They will keep the torch high. They will rally to the cause. There are countless numbers of people in this country who believe that poverty sears the nation, and they will continue this fight to eliminate the paradox of poverty in the midst of plenty.

We have been spending seven-and-a-half to eight billion dollars annually in this country on social measures. They are good measures. They are useful measures. They are well thought out. In return we have had misunderstanding, mistrust and misfits. Our committee is faced with the task of finding a solution to the problem of poverty. We have accepted the

challenge, and here we start today in the Province of New Brunswick.

Our first brief we have is submitted jointly to the committee by the Social Services Council of Greater Saint John and the United Fund of Greater Saint John. Mr. Henry Stegmayer will speak to it.

The usual routine is for the speaker to give an outline of the brief and then subject himself to questioning within the allotted time. We hope there will be sufficient time.

Mr. Henry E. Stegmayer, Executive Director, United Fund of Greater Saint John, Inc.: Thank you, Mr. Chairman. Mr. Chairman, senators, ladies and gentlemen: first of all, on behalf of the Social Services Council of the United Fund we are very proud and elated indeed that you could find your way out of the heat of Ottawa to the balmy, cooling breezes and the fogbound shores of the Bay of Fundy in Saint John. We feel that you wanted to escape the hot air of Ottawa and it took the heat of August to come down here, and we are delighted that you were able to come.

We at one time heard you had planned not to be here and in February when you were scheduled to be here the weather would have been even more atrocious than it is now, so we commend you for your drive and energy and we hope that your stay here will be pleasant, and will be as meaningful as all the others you have had, and perhaps even more meaningful.

The brief we are about to present was drafted last winter in conjunction with a citizens' group, developed originally—believe it or not—by the Company of Young Canadian who had some community development programs going in the Crescent Valley at the north end of this city.

From them the family services saw fit to assign a staff person to work with the citizen of this area and with a group of these citizens we were able to document by personal interview through recorded fashion some of the concerns, problems and needs, as it affects them, most of whom were welfare recipients or people of low income.

We should mention that two of these ladies are in the audience with us today and they have agreed that if the committee would like to pose questions of a general nature to them they are prepared to answer them.

With reference to the brief, I think it would be in order, Mr. Chairman, to sort of briefly give you a history of the City of Saint John. I know you have a fact sheet before you which gives the bald facts, the statistics about levels of income and labour force, et cetera, but Saint John is the oldest city and it is also the newest city. We became incorporated in 1793 or 1795 and became enlarged on January 1st, 1967, with the amalgamation of the City of Saint John, which at that time had a population of about fifty-eight or sixty thousand people, the Parish of Simonds and the City of Lancaster.

We are still suffering some of these growing pains. The individual localities seem to continue to identify themselves with their local area, and we are still attempting to develop a total community spirit. Added to those growing pains, the Province of New Brunswick invoked—and I use that word in quotation marks—the program of equal opportunity, which meant that the whole matter of welfare, education, health, justice and municipal affairs became centralized in the areas of government in Fredericton. I only make this point so that you can get some inference as to the administration and public attitudes which result from this type of development. We feel personally it is a development that will augur well in the future, but at the moment I am only speaking on this point personally.

The process of amalgamation and the process of centralization removed to a degree some grass-roots responsibility. Now, people used to be able to identify with their local municipality and their local councillors, and this has been somewhat estranged from them, and this has a certain connotation in the subject matter with which we are dealing this morning.

Economically, Saint John has been designated as a growth centre and we have recently heard in the press that we are to benefit by an infusion of something like \$62 million for the development of intra-structure, roads, sewers, services, facilities, et cetera, in the hoped-for future, where we expect to see a growth rate of 20,000 people by 1980- ? -. At the same time as we have been designated as a growth centre we have also observed the population statistics and on the other hand, paradoxically, these do not indicate any real material or population growth.

I think our growth rate over the last ten years has been in the order of about 1 per cent per year, which is about 5 per cent less

than the average growth rate for Canada as a whole, and this again has some significance for the kinds of problems with which we are faced. There are something like 42,000 wage-earners in the Greater Saint John area, but at the same time the level of unemployment at the present time hovers between ten and eleven per cent. Now, this is considerably higher than the Canadian average, but of course these figures can be interpreted by whoever wants to draw them up.

Statistics sometimes do not always tell the whole story. This unemployment rate, I think, has an effect on the delivery of services to our people in the area. There are also sociological implications which I think we should consider, and these are rooted in the type of employment and opportunities that have been available in the past.

As you know, Saint John is a port city and a great measure of employment takes place during the winter months when our port is ice-free and when all other ports in Canada are locked in. There are other considerations in that our primary industries have been concerned with fishing and lumbering and this has developed a certain kind of work habit and work attitude which, if we are to move into an industrial society, may sometimes take a little while to re-adjust to.

Now, one can compare this with a graph that has a sort of up-and-down cycle, which has an effect on the habits of our people as far as the input and productivity is concerned. If one could take the example of the port; one would work six months of the year making some fairly decent wages and then perhaps biding the summer through either fishing or doing something else, and perhaps even being on the unemployment rolls. If this area is to move into an industrial type of community then these work habits will have some effect on the kind of productivity industries will require.

I only mention this as a background, Mr. Chairman, to make your committee aware of some of the problems of our people.

More specifically, the agencies which I represent is the United Fund of Greater Saint John, which is a fund-raising, budgeting and planning organization, which is attempting to raise funds in the private sector of this community which these agencies, who have joined therein, cannot raise through other sources but require to meet their operating programs. We call that deficit financing. The

20 agencies are found in the health, welfare, recreation and community services areas.

On the other hand, the Social Services Council is a planning body, attempting to coordinate the work of the 130 community agencies which exist in this community, all trying to do something for the benefit of their fellow citizens.

This type of organization was mooted 40 years ago by Charlotte Whitton when she came on a barnstorming trip to Saint John and suggested that we ought to have a social planning council. Thanks to her early input, a generation and a half later we finally got a Social Services Council, which, however, is still struggling to obtain funds to make its program and its services viable to this community. It was through the input of the Social Services Council that this study with the Crescent Valley group was launched.

The methods employed in drafting this brief were rather simple. Our feeling was that the people who knew the greatest about welfare and its shortcomings and perhaps even some of its strengths, were the people who were the recipients of the services who were able to articulate these concerns to us. At the same time it required an adroit listing of questions which would try to develop the facts that these people had to offer. In their submissions we became readily aware that they had a great deal of insight into their conditions and their problems, and this was a plus, as far as we were concerned, in dealing with these people.

The real opportunity that they were missing was an ability to vent their feelings and as a result of this earlier community development or demonstration project the citizens' organization was developed, which led into all sorts of other positive and productive things. The brief starts off with an interview about the organization of a winter carnival. We thought this was a good jumping-off point because they could all talk about that freely and very quickly. From there the stage was set whereby some of the more immediate and intimate problems were exposed to us. The brief is purely a story, true, non-fictional, and, hopefully, factual. It was recorded as it was spoken. There was very little editing or rewriting done in the article or in the information which the citizens gave us.

We should also mention at this point that the Family Services, who had assigned a staff worker to this group, were most helpful in

giving us directions on this and I believe they are to present a brief tomorrow. We also wish to acknowledge the support of the Social Welfare Department and the City Recreation Department, with whom we co-operated in preparing the material for this brief. I think it may be evident that there are a number of groups who can come together and support the people who find themselves in this type of position.

There are many things in the brief which, I am sure, the senators have already heard in their trip across the country and in their studies and interviews, which they have conducted, I believe bear repeating. I would only like to just briefly summarize the recommendations which the brief makes. We feel that there is a need for the assignment or availability of funds to assist these people in a more constructive way than the present system allows. Some people have called it a guaranteed annual income, or a negative income tax, or demographic grants, or what-have-you. Many of us are not quite sure as to what all this means, but a guaranteed annual income, we feel, would do a great deal to support and strengthen the dignity of these people.

However, the confusion of money itself directly to the recipient is only part of the story and only part of the requirement. We feel that along with the additional income, in whatever nature it may be, there should be the development of a team of community action people, or community engineers, to assist these people in giving them new directions and develop within them some of the indigenous leadership which rests within them. We feel that the grass-roots citizens group has a great deal to offer and that their concerns and their abilities should be harnessed to bring together more aggressive and more active programs so that they themselves can help themselves; so we are recommending that not only money but staff be developed even if it has to be on a demonstration basis to show the community that the money spent on both sides of the ledger, both the granting of funds and the availability of staff, would be a progressive forward step.

However, along with this recommendation we also are aware that staff just cannot be found in any old corner of the community. Some suitable, responsible organization and possibly a coalition of citizens' groups should be responsible for recruitment and assessment and supervision of this kind of staff. Here recruitment would also have to be su

plemented with development of adequate courses of instruction so that these people, who are going to help deliver the service, will also have the insights necessary to deal with the people to whom they are assigned; so we face it even on a more elementary level, and that is the search for manpower to help bring the services to our communities.

I have already touched on the third or fourth recommendation, and that is each community, after adequate research, ought to develop some useful demonstration programs whereby it can prove to the politicians, to the granting authorities or citizens' boards, to the commissions or whatever may be the authority under which this may operate, that a program of this nature does produce results.

Finally, of course, are the people themselves who are concerned. They must be given opportunities to organize, not in the fashion of an autocratic system where you have someone on top who tells them what to do, but rather on what I like to call the supervisory system where the person in charge has a great deal of vision but very little super. I do not know whether that point comes across. "Supervision" consists of a great deal of "vision" and very little "super."

We feel there is a quality of life that can be achieved, that there is a goodness and desire for all of them and all of us to upgrade ourselves and we should, with very economical means, be able to develop that kind of a program.

If we are to have a war on poverty and if war is also a significant word, we need a commander-in-chief. We need a high command who can carry or plan technical manoeuvres and assign the approaches which have to be made. We need a co-ordination to develop the war and an aggression which would see the eradication of the disease or of the enemy, and we need strategic command posts in our community with troops who are properly financed to carry out these responsibilities.

In summation or in conclusion, Mr. Chairman, if I may be permitted, I would like to enter into the record an extract from the July issue of Reader's Digest—I believe it is a Canadian publication—written by the president of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, Atherston Spillhouse. It is entitled "The Next Industrial Revolution." Dr. Spillhouse speaks about the problems of productivity, pollution, about the

private sector and the public sector, and in his last paragraph he states the following, and I quote:

We have seen our food supply grow to abundance with fewer and fewer people needed to grow it. We are seeing the automation of factories with an abundance of 'things' provided by fewer and fewer people.

"On the other hand we have a shortage of human services and a shortage of people providing these services. It follows quite simply that if private enterprise is not to dwindle while the public sector grows to be an all-embracing octopus, then private enterprise must go into the fields of human service. The next industrial revolution is on our doorstep.

"Let us be the revolutionaries who shape it rather than have it happen and shape us.

Thank you very much.

The Chairman: We have Senator Fournier, Senator Fergusson and Senator McGrand.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Chairman, I am going to make a remark about the brief. This is a personal remark and it has nothing to do with the committee. I am referring to page 2, about a dance band called "The Killer Apes." Personally, I take a strong objection as a parent to creating a dance for the children around the word "Killer". I think it is not a good thing, in my view. Does the dance have anything to do with the title? I think we are giving very poor education to our children and this is possibly one of the problems we have now.

With regard to my second question, I am speaking on behalf of the committee and on page 16 I read the following.

My mother couldn't keep me going because there were twelve at home as it was. So the social welfare asked me—he said, 'If you had a boyfriend, you could live common-law.'

I understand this was said by the social worker.

Now this is the truth.

Is it a fact that social workers are telling these sort of things to the people—that a woman should live in common-law otherwise you cannot get assistance?

This is not the first time we have heard this.

Mr. Stegmayer: Mr. Chairman, to Senator Fournier's remarks dealing with the item on page 16; this was actually said and actually happens.

Senator Hastings: Did you say "actually happened" or "actually happens"

Mr. Stegmayer: Happens. As to the item concerning the "Killer Apes", I do not know—they may have used "naked apes", which may have been worse.

Mrs. Mary Jane Whipple, Social Worker: It is not "Killer Apes" it is "Killer Eggs". All they do is kill eggs.

Mr. Stegmayer: Therefore we apologize for the typographical error.

The Chairman: Eggs?

Mr. Stegmayer: The Killer Eggs. This may have something to do with exterminating life at the beginning.

Senator Fournier: Well, that is not the same thing.

Mr. Stegmayer: "The Killer Eggs" is, I suppose, a rock band.

Mrs. Whipple: It is a psychedelic rock band and they are terrific.

Senator Fournier: I have no more comment on that but the word "Killer" kind of struck me as a little bit different from what children should hear and building an attitude around the word "Killer", I do not think is proper.

How many families are on welfare in the City of Saint John, do you know, roughly?

Mr. Stegmayer: I would only hazard a guess, Mr. Chairman, but I think there is a resource person in the audience, Mr. Chairman, if I may ask him to answer that question.

Mr. Finigan, could you answer that question?

Mr. James Finigan, Resource Worker: I believe it is right now around sixteen hundred cases. These would be families or it would be individual cases which possibly would comprise families or a single individual.

Senator Fournier: Would you, sir, be able to break it down? Suppose we overlook the disabled, the widows and the separated who are a class by themselves, who naturally need

help. I am talking mostly about the unemployed that could be employed.

Mr. Finigan: There is approximately thirty percent of these cases unemployed which we feel physically could be employed but who possibly for different reasons are not acceptable for employment.

Senator Fournier: Thirty percent of sixteen hundred.

Mr. Finigan: We feel thirty percent. While I am on my feet, that item on page 16, I was not aware of that and it has never been brought to my attention that any worker in this office, which I have directed for the last seven years, have ever advised clients to live in common-law relationship.

We accept common-law relationship but we do not advise and this is the first I have ever heard of that.

Senator Fournier: Thank you, Mr. Chairman. I pass.

The Chairman: Senator Fergusson, Senator McGrand and Senator Inman.

Senator Ferguson: Mr. Chairman, I would like to thank Mr. Stegmayer for the presentation. I know the Committee are all very grateful for the work that was done in preparing this presentation for us and I think it is quite a different presentation and I think the information that was brought out through the interviews brings very vividly to our attention things that are existing at the present time and the feelings of the people who are recipients of welfare.

This method you have adopted, Mr. Stegmayer, seems to me to make us much more aware of these things than we possibly could be if you had just written a brief, as so many people have done, good as many of them have been.

I think we are all very grateful for this kind of presentation.

Now, the thing in which I am particularly interested is the home-maker service program which is referred to at the very beginning of the brief, which is conducted by the Family Services Incorporated, and I did ask some questions last night when we were fortunate enough to have an informal gathering, but I would like to know for the record, for instance, how many workers are in this home-maker service and who pays them? Where does the money come from? Just what

do they do; and also I would be interested in knowing how they are received by the people with whom they are working?

Mr. Stegmayer: Mr. Chairman, perhaps I could answer some of the points that Senator Fergusson has raised but there is also another resource person here whom I hope you would give permission to answer. The financing of the funds provided for the home-makers come from several sources. In the main I believe Family Services, a private agency, made the original grant available for a community person and also to hire a home-maker.

Senator Fergusson: Is it all volunteer?

Mr. Stegmayer: They were originally indigenous people from the area. Some of it is voluntary and some of it is paid for.

I wonder if Mrs. Whipple could comment on it, Mr. Chairman?

Senator Fergusson: I am sorry. What I meant by "voluntary" was: are the finances all given by voluntary groups?

Mr. Stegmayer: Yes. Not all but in the main they are. Family Services is a private agency but also receives beside voluntary funds through the United Funds government grants for specific projects.

Mrs. Whipple, would you like to comment on the number of home-makers and what they do, please.

Mrs. Mary Jane Whipple: Senators, I am Mary Jane Whipple, I am in the home-maker services and I am also with Family Services. I am the community worker that Family Services has put in this area.

I am also a home-maker, which is separate again from the Red Cross Home-Maker Services. We do home visiting, help with family problems, home-making chores and this sort of thing on an advisory basis only, and try to help steer these people to agencies who can then help them, professional social workers.

Our money for home-making comes from federal, provincial, CMHC grants \$5,000. per year. Out of this there are three part-time home-making workers. We do many more things than visit homes. We have good rooming courses. We have adult education, cooking courses and sewing courses and we have volunteers to teach these courses, so all in all there are quite a few people involved as volunteers.

Is there any other information you want?

Senator Fergusson: No. The one other question I asked is: how you are received by the people with whom you are working.

Mrs. Whipple: On the whole, quite well now. At first they sort of thought we were housing spies and all the other ideas that do go around about any new organization that starts but now most people who know us—down the valley they call me the "road runner". I am pretty well accepted by everyone. We are into everything that goes on and so we are quite well known by these people.

Senator Fergusson: They ask for your advice now, do they?

Mrs. Whipple: Yes, they do, even at three o'clock in the morning.

Mr. Stegmayer: Mr. Chairman, I believe the Crescent Valley people are also presenting a brief later on.

Senator Fergusson: Yes, I know they are but because it was referred to in this brief I thought that I would like to ask something about it.

The Chairman: Do you have anything else, Senator Fergusson?

Senator Fergusson: No.

The Chairman: Senator McGrand?

Senator McGrand: On page seven this lady says:

If I were to go to work my rent goes up so high, I can't afford it.

In another place she says:

My rent now is based on my husband's yearly income.

What type of housing does she live in? Is it privately owned or is it part of public housing?

Mr. Stegmayer: It is public housing, sir.

Senator McGrand: I would like to know more about this. How is the rent determined in private housing?

Mr. Stegmayer: I think there is a scale—I have not got the figures with me—which sets forth the rate to be paid according to the income from whatever source. I believe the size of the family...

Mrs. Whipple: Now?

Mr. Stegmayer: Now. This has just been recently amended. They take this also into

consideration. The scale, I believe, is set by the Housing Commission. Nancy or Mary Jane, could you elaborate on this?

The Chairman: Your name, please?

Miss Nancy Reid: Nancy Reid. It is based on your income. It goes up to thirty percent. You can pay up to thirty percent of your income.

The Chairman: Starting at what?

Miss Reid: Nineteen.

The Chairman: Nineteen up to thirty, gross or net?

Miss Reid: Gross.

The Chairman: All members of the family?

Miss Reid: Right.

Mr. Stegmayer: Also the income is considered. Is that right, Miss Reid?

Miss Reid: That is right. There is a new rule in now where it is a little easier for children working which goes into effect on the first of August.

Senator McGrand: Is this a common complaint in Saint John?

Miss Reid: Yes. Public housing?

Senator McGrand: It is a common complaint.

Miss Reid: Yes.

Senator McGrand: It is not just an occasional complaint. It is quite common. What would you suggest as a remedy to overcome this problem?

Miss Reid: I think they should stay on with the lower rents for people of lower income and have a set rate that your rent cannot go over a certain amount. When you reach that maybe they could give you a year at that amount and once you reach a certain figure that you are making in a year then you have to move. In this way it would give everybody a chance to get ahead. The way it is now you cannot get ahead because if you make an extra dollar housing takes it.

Senator McGrand: Now, I have another question. I was not clear on what you said. Did you say sixteen hundred families or sixteen hundred people on welfare in Saint John?

Mr. Finigan: Mr. Chairman, I said sixteen hundred cases. Now, cases can be an individual or families.

The Chairman: Senator, you asked how many people that involved.

Senator McGrand: I know. He mentioned a figure of sixteen hundred and I wanted to know whether that was families or persons. For example, there may be six people in a family and they would all be added up to make sixteen hundred people.

Mr. Stegmayer: Mr. Chairman, it would be treated as one case, as one family, no matter how many people were in that family.

Senator McGrand: I understood you to say that about thirty percent of those people were unemployed people. Is that correct?

Mr. Finigan: Yes, I would say about thirty percent physically unemployable.

Senator McGrand: Can you give me some idea or your idea of how you would go about giving employment to these people in this area? What do you have in mind?

Mr. Finigan: Well, actually these people who are unemployed are simply skilled or unskilled people mainly through lack of education or trades.

I would really think—although there are a number of technical schools in the province, and we have one in the Saint John area—that there should be a greater number of these and possibly maybe skills or trades could be learned at them, not as high a level as they do in technical schools, but it would bring these people possibly into the labour force at a certain period.

For instance, if they had some courses for say two years you could possibly have the crash course of three months or something but then again you have to have businesses developed.

Mr. Stegmayer: Yes.

Mr. Finigan: The labour force has to absorb these people and right at the present time it could not absorb the labour force even if all these people were trained so this is another problem besides getting people trained.

Senator McGrand: Then you would have to find employment for them after they are trained?

Mr. Finigan: That is right.

Mr. Stegmayer: I believe there is a whole inter-locking problem here. There is the availability of jobs, the kind of skills available to meet those jobs, the development of specific jobs to meet those skills, but even more elementary than this is the whole problem of adult education so that people can say "I must go for this job".

We have to get them to develop certain insights and approaches that they themselves will pull themselves up by their own boot straps with some kind of support to make them do that.

They have to develop these personal insights so they can say "Well, I can tackle this job. I have the confidence to go for this job or I have the confidence to go for this kind of education." I think this is even more elementary.

Senator McGrand: I have one more question. How many of these people who are your welfare problems, are native born Saint John people? What percentage of them are from outside Saint John, from other parts of the province or other parts of the Maritimes who drift in here looking to drift in here looking to improve their situation.

Mr. Finigan: Mr. Chairman, I have not statistics on that but we have found over recent years that there is a large mobility of people moving down from possibly different rural districts who have possibly been fishing and woodworking and small farms where they cannot make an adequate income, and when some large project seems to be started in this area these people will come in here and get jobs. There may be jobs available. Where there is a large refinery built specialists are needed and these people are not equipped so they come to Saint John.

They come here for different reasons, possibly better education and better medical resources available.

Mr. Stegmayer: Health services.

Mr. Finigan: Things along that line and there has been quite a flow from rural districts into the urban cities, which is quite a general flow in North America anyway. We have noticed that over the years and it is a continuous thing.

Senator McGrand: But you have no idea of the percentage? I was really a little surprised that because in doing your casework you certainly would ask a person where they were

born and how long they had been a resident of the city, and I would think you would have a fairly accurate idea of how many people belong to that influx of those who are always looking for the end of the rainbow.

Mr. Finigan: Well, actually I would think the head office in Fredericton would have that information. There are statisticians who work on that particular aspect and I would imagine they would have those figures.

Mr. Stegmayer: I think, Mr. Chairman, in general terms one could say most of the influx is from other parts of the province rather than from outside of the province.

Senator McGrand: There would be a few from Nova Scotia coming over.

The Chairman: Senator Quart?

Senator Quart: Mr. Chairman and Mr. Stegmayer, I think the brief is a very imaginative one and it gives us an insight into your various problems.

Now, on page 15, I believe it is, I am particularly interested because this is my pet question since we have been operating. In regard to the welfare system it says on page 15:

Would you feel that the system almost makes you cheat?

She said in answer to that:

It certainly makes a grand cheater out of you, I'll tell you that, and a great liar.

She does not hedge there. She said it with spirit evidently.

You mentioned in the paragraph above that if you earn \$20.00 a month you are cut off welfare or it is deducted from your welfare. Here you also mention if you have a son, let us say with a paper route and if he earns \$20.00 a month, that is also cut off. That seems rather strange to me.

Would you feel that a welfare recipient could be very frank with the welfare officer and say "Well, I owe so much money. I owe \$100.00 or \$150.00 or \$200.00. I have accepted a position and I have earned \$70.00, \$100.00" and not be cut off until our bills are paid and she would have an incentive to work.

It would not kill incentive and eventually that person instead of them going behind and falling back on welfare only, which would be your responsibility, simply remained on the job and then she would finally get off welfare.

Does that sound like a practical solution for the moment.

Mr. Stegmayer: I think it would be a solution, Mr. Chairman and Senator Quart, but I think because the system is laid down and the regulations apply to the mass of the people that any exceptions that are made to the regulations could make the system break down; and I am somewhat concerned that there is not this flexibility in the kind of legal systems that have been adopted for programs to our disadvantaged people.

I think perhaps Mary Jane might comment on that.

Mrs. Whipple: Well, senator, I am down here as "Mary Jane", and I am actually Mary Jane so there goes my identity out of the window but I am the one who said that and I stand behind it.

There is very little I have not said to Mr. Finigan and I have said this before and actually Mr. Finigan has attended many of our meetings.

I think your proposal is an answer to a lot of prayers but unfortunately it is not a fact. It does not work that way. It is still the \$20.00 but many of our workers, if I am free to say, have helped in this way. Without putting it down in the books and they encourage people to go out on their own, and I personally have been helped by welfare.

I have been hindered by the welfare too but this is being done in individual cases when the people are honestly trying but only up to a very small part. People are being helped with things like this. Did I get anybody in trouble?

Senator Quart: Not with me.

Senator Inman: Well, Mr. Chairman, I would like to endorse what Senator Fournier said about this brief.

I have a question I would like to ask Mr. Stegmayer. Do you feel that some social welfare workers do not give recipients of welfare enough information regarding welfare and what they could receive?

I noticed several times in your brief this is mentioned. They have not been told.

Mr. Stegmayer: If you are asking a general question, my answer to that would be a general quote "yes". The workers are not telling the people what they are legally entitled to. Yes, they do not tell them.

Senator Inman: Well, could you make any complaint about these people? Could they not be told?

Mr. Stegmayer: I think a number of community groups have asked, and I think the Board of Trade was one, these figures be published so all people know what they are entitled to in the various categories.

In line with that question in the White Paper on Social Development by the Province of New Brunswick there is a table, table four in the new publication which compares a social assistance allowance with the poverty standard for an urban family in 1969 and it uses as its base the recommended base of the Economic Council of Canada.

Just as an example, a couple with four children, ages 4, 7, 9 and 12, in New Brunswick has a budget allowance of \$2,947.00 to zero. The Economic Council recommends \$4,000.00 for that family and the difference is \$1,052.00 a zero less in New Brunswick than the recommended level that the Economic Council has suggested.

Senator Inman: Yes, but what I am getting at is these social workers who do not give this information. I should think it would be part of their work to tell these people who do not know themselves what they can do.

Mr. Stegmayer: I would agree.

Senator Inman: Has any effort been made to do that?

Mr. Finigan: Mr. Chairman, Mr. Chairman—yes, this is the complaint that we have heard. In recent months I have attended two meetings of groups who receive assistance and I have gone so far as to distribute a number of copies of our regulations to both these groups for them to study and I have offered as soon as they want at any time, I will go down and discuss it with them.

Our department feels that every recipient is entitled to know what benefits they are entitled to. It has gone so far as our present director has made the statement he would like to see a copy of our regulations in the hands of every recipient of welfare service. My staff informed me that they do tell the people what they are entitled to so at least now we are making an effort by the distribution of our regulations to these groups, which they are studying.

I have offered at any time I will go and help them and they are ready to take advantage of this offer, I understand, having talk-

to one of the presidents of the group last night; so if this is a complaint, it should not really be a complaint because we want the people to know what they are entitled to and that is the first thing we do when a person applies. We inform them of what they are entitled to at the present moment and then possibly three months after they have become more or less long term cases, additional benefits are offered at that time.

Although we know that people complain about this, if they come to my office I certainly tell them and I am sure most of the workers do. Possibly some do not understand but we are not trying to hide from them the benefits which are available through the program.

The Chairman: Mr. Finigan, I heard you say "Every recipient is entitled to know". You cannot talk to every recipient so it is not possible for you nor your staff to make contact personally.

Here is a directory of services provided by the Department of Social Services and Rehabilitation by the Government of Newfoundland and Labrador, in which they set out what is available under the social welfare departments. Everybody can read and everybody will know exactly what is involved. It is of an expensive document. It is made up by their own printer and they have the information.

Now, we have had that complaint right across the country. To me there is really no excuse for not getting a booklet such as that, or a similar booklet, to every recipient and have them read it so they will know. Then the heat is off you and you can discuss it very easily.

We have used this suggestion which you may not have known of before, that these are available, and you can bring them up with the proper authorities for discussion as the way to ease the burden on yourself and on the recipients.

Mr. Finigan: Thank you very much for the suggestion, sir. I certainly will take that up.

The Chairman: When you spoke to Senator McGrand and mentioned sixteen hundred files, how many people were involved in those sixteen hundred files?

Mr. Finigan: There would be approximately 150 off hand, I would say, possibly six to seven thousand.

The Chairman: Out of a population of a hundred and ten thousand?

Mr. Stegmayer: A hundred and two thousand.

Mr. Finnigan: It runs approximately five to six percent really, which is not out of the way for people in poverty in any section of North America, let alone New Brunswick.

The Chairman: You know, Mr. Finnigan, I started out by trying to create a different atmosphere here. Maybe I did not succeed. I started out by telling you you did not have all the poverty in the world in New Brunswick and I gave you the figures. Now, when you say it is not bad for New Brunswick, you are making the suggestion that in New Brunswick one expects more of this than any other place. Well, it is not so. It is just one of those things that people keep repeating and they think there is truth in it, so be careful.

Mr. Stegmayer: Watch the myths.

Senator Inman: I have one more question, Mr. Chairman that I would like to ask. In paragraph four of the recommendations:

The evident inflexibilities of the social welfare system as they are now administered through government auspices, are a retardant factor in the rehabilitation of the disadvantaged person. It was evident in the discussion that, unless the people themselves did something by themselves, very little was accomplished.

My question is: do you find it difficult in getting people on welfare interested in doing something by themselves for themselves?

This is a double-barreled question; and do you find that some of these people have a quality of leadership if they were encouraged in this direction? What is being done to encourage them along these lines?

Mr. Stegmayer: Well, Mr. Chairman, I think the essential requirement is the kind of thing that we have demonstrated in the Crescent Valley area. First of all, an atmosphere has to be created where the people can accept one of their own who perhaps have a little more drive or interest to try to upgrade the whole quality and that is a very difficult job to do. As Mary Jane mentioned a moment ago, people are suspicious when you first try to come in and organize.

It needs a very sensitive and sensible kind of person to do that and this is why I referred

to the recruitment program. These kinds of people have to be almost handpicked.

Once that confidence has been established—and we have one or two other demonstration projects in the area that will be mentioned later—once the contact and the confidence has been established I think that these people are very anxious to become involved and to say their piece and to organize and do the things that they see as being important for their future development, but it takes a kind of preliminary input, a searching and feeling, meeting with people, listening to their beefs and their gripes and their complaints, but feeling as they do and understanding them and then working on some of their strengths. They have shown that you can work with them.

Nothing is impossible again in this area but the original starting point is the kind of sensitive person—I use the word “planted” and I mean that in terms of growth. Not planted in terms of an insidious process—planted into the centre of these kind of people.

I think in that connection the Company of Young Canadians in its origin did a commendable job and were able to identify with the needs of these people and show their sympathy and help them to move into a new direction.

Senator Inman: I am thinking of an example we had. The other members of the Committee will remember it.

A woman came into the district and had to go on welfare and all her neighbours were on welfare and she herself became a leader and she raised the women up to the point where they hired a school teacher and got the Mayor to give them a loan and they did the job amongst themselves.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right.

Senator Inman: They did their baby-sitting among themselves and staggered their hours.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right.

Senator Inman: We were so impressed with what this woman had done.

Mr. Stegmayer: Well, this is precisely what has happened with the Crescent Valley group where the women themselves are helping each other. Mary Jane mentioned grooming classes, sewing classes, teaching them how to shop, to organize their budget and some of the other community needs which are availa-

ble to them and so on; again, it is a slow process and it is a frustrating process but it does work.

I think sometimes a community becomes a little impatient with this kind of process because something does not happen overnight but the community has to work with people and through people.

It is one which is very frustrating but it can work if the people who are assigned to do the job stay with it.

The Chairman: Mr. Stegmayer, when you made reference to the table four, the comparison of social assistance allowances to the poverty standard, you indicated that for a family of four there would be a shortage of \$1,052.00.

Mr. Stegmayer: That is correct.

The Chairman: Actually you were comparing bananas with oranges because the \$1,052.00 is for 1961.

Mr. Stegmayer: That is right.

The Chairman: The yearly budget is 1969.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right. If you throw the inflationary spiral in there that gives you the limits and that would produce a total perhaps of \$5,000 or \$6,000.

The Chairman: Well, actually for a family of four it is now \$4,536 up to date taking in the eight per cent increase in the cost of living without troubling about the standard of living. I thought those figures would be useful to give.

Mr. Stegmayer: Thank you, sir.

The Chairman: One more question. This province has done very well attempting to meet the needs, up to a point, of the working poor. It has done better than many other provinces despite the fact it is not the richest province in Canada. Now, has it been pointed out to the department by you and all the others that by being flexible, half the cost is picked up by the Dominion Government of the earnings.

Mr. Stegmayer: I think some people may have a comment on this but if you are referring to the Canada Assistance Plan...

The Chairman: Yes, I am.

Mr. Stegmayer: Directly, sir, one of the things we face is that the Canada Assistance Plan will pay fifty per cent of the costs by

sometimes a disadvantage to province, such as our own, has difficulty in finding the other fifty per cent to meet that cost or deliver that service. It is a cash grant.

The Chairman: Well, of course, we are fully aware of that. If you have followed our record you will have noticed that members of this committee have protested time and time again that we do not think that is fair. But when you are dealing with the working poor and you are making allowances to keep them off relief....

Mr. Stegmayer: Yes.

The Chairman: .. that is the place to exercise the most flexibility.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right.

The Chairman: Because you are really saying something. My point is that this is the thing that you should be emphasizing to the department.

Mr. Stegmayer: We have, sir, and I think many other community organizations have one the same thing and I think in pursuing our presentations you will find this theme will recur over and over again.

The Chairman: We shall pursue it. May I say to you on behalf of the committee that the brief has been presented in a rather unique way—this is a compliment—because when you have finished reading it you have touched all these bases.

It was very impressive and it sounded like a serial which came out of the mouths of the people who were concerned.

We have read the brief. We have had presentations, as you know, on many occasions by people from various parts of the country. Our brief does not take second place to any, and your ability to handle the situation is very good.

On behalf of the committee I want to congratulate the organization that you represent for coming here today and presenting this brief to us.

Mr. Stegmayer: Thank you very much, sir.

The Chairman: The next brief is by the Saint John District Council of Home and School Associations. On my right is Mr. Eric Ed, who tells me we already have something in common. He is a lawyer and a former mayor and I am a lawyer and a former mayor. So we are getting off on the

right foot. Sitting alongside him is Mrs. Olsson, who is the president of the group. Mr. Tweed will open the meeting by giving us a run-down of the brief.

Mr. Eric L. Tweed, Chairman, Saint John District Home and School Association: Mr. Chairman, honourable senators and ladies and gentlemen, it is certainly a privilege for the District Council of the Home and School Association to present this brief. We represent some twenty-six schools which are attached to us and we feel there are some three thousand registered parents and there are probably ten thousand parents who are, directly or indirectly, affected by our operations.

Now, it is difficult and unusual brief because people say "What does Home and School have to do with poverty?" but we feel we are interested in education and our thought is that the basis and the real reason for poverty is the failure of our educational system; and we are taking poverty as not the unfortunate person who by perhaps illness or death of a supporting spouse is in a particular situation where they cannot support themselves but rather the able bodied worker who is willing to perform gainful employment at a wage level which will remove him from the poverty class. The man or woman, the husband or wife, who can physically perform useful work but cannot find work.

We submit that there are two main factors. The first is the failure—and we are not going to be very popular—of our educational system to train persons to become useful members of the community.

The second one—and again we are probably not going to be very popular—is the dismal failure of employers—and this is a complete category—to employ persons who are capable of doing the work by insisting on what we call over-qualification. If you can get around those two I do not think you are going to have poverty in our communities.

Dealing with the educational system, we feel it is not designed to cope with poverty. It is designed to train in some fanciful manner persons who have abilities to achieve academic brilliance and those who do not achieve that academic brilliance drop by the wayside.

Now, you may say "What do you mean by all this?" basically—and you have to go back historically—many years ago education started out that those who were able to afford education were given it. If you wanted educa-

tion you went to a private school, or whatever it was, and you went as far as you wanted to go and then you went out and got a job.

We got the concept that everybody was entitled to education which I am going to say is a state concept and a very proper one but unfortunately this has not quite got across to the educators.

We say children must go to school until they are sixteen and the school systems says "fine, we will stick them in the classrooms until they are sixteen", but the educators have not come across with a program which will properly educate or train these persons.

Our concept is that a person must be trained to take his place in the community and that training must be geared to the ability of that individual.

One of the previous witnesses mentioned that they had some little group which taught them how to budget and how to shop and how to do things like this, how to live, in other words, in the community. We suggest that that should be done at the school level. Why should a person have to go to school until he is sixteen, possibly get married and have some children and then finally because of the benevolence of a government welfare program be taught how to live properly, how to budget, how to get clothes, much later than they should have been.

The present philosophy, we suggest, of the educational system is that it was developed, as I say, at a time when it was the prerogative of a few and basically the program is still designed for academic training of those who would be community leaders.

The philosophy of the system is not to prepare one for a useful role based on his ability, but to train and select—and the select are governed by the fact they have the ability to cope with the program, in a program designed to develop the trained mind capable of philosophical and scientific inquiry. This is where we find the academics.

If you recall our program today, basically our whole educational system is geared to high school graduation. We all know that the training today in high school has nothing to do with normal living. You do not learn how to treat children, how to buy or how to shop. You take courses such as Spanish or geography or take philosophy or ancient history.

That has nothing to do with living in Canada in a practical aspect. As people go out

and find these courses that they cannot digest in the period given they drop out—and we have a mass of drop-outs but the system does not worry about these drop-outs.

In fact we had one very prominent educator who stood up in a school in this district recently and said "You know, it is really a burden that the school board has to be saddled with these people that do not have ability. We should be able to get rid of these people. We should only train those who have a great and enlightened intelligence which allows them eventually to go on to a PhD."

We feel this is wrong. The school system does not support the vocational school or industrial arts training. It used to be you got to grade seven or eight or nine. In grade seven it has been cut out. There is a little bit in grade eight and if you are lucky you may get more in grade nine. This is the practical training which people use in everyday life. A girl learns how to cook and sew and various things like that. A boy learns how to work around the house or the basis of some of our trades, electronics, plumbing and that type of thing, but the policy has been to cut this out.

Instead of searching for teachers who can teach this material, the School Boards have been closing our courses on the grounds that they cannot find teachers but they can find teachers to teach geography to the thirty or forty or maybe one hundred students out of the ten thousand students who go to our high schools.

They can find teachers to teach Spanish courses—and I'm sure we have many more—or specialty courses but they cannot find teachers to teach the basics in grade seven or grade eight.

I suggest that this is part of their policy. They have not kept in tune with the times in so far as the education system is concerned. They are training those who have the ability, and those who do not fall by the wayside.

Now, there have been attempts by some to change this. They have vocational schools and technical schools. We feel this is not touching the poverty level.

To attend a technical school now you must graduate from high school before you can go. With the vocational school, it was not so many years ago—I was on the Board at that time—where they raised the levels. You must get out of grade nine before you could go and then they raised the grade levels so you couldn't go to vocational school until you had

graduated from grade nine in a primary school. It used to be you could start with grade seven or grade eight.

Our feeling is that the method of education, that is how you take a child and teach him the three RRR's, this is the responsibility of the educator who is a trained technician.

The philosophy or the policy of education, what you should teach, is not the prerogative of the educator. It is the prerogative of the state. I think it is time that we got down to basics and said people should be trained to take their part in society and they should start their training in grade one.

The basics, of course, in our society today are you must learn how to read. If you cannot read it is very difficult. I am going to suggest if a person cannot learn to read then they are obviously in a very different class of limited intelligence. They must learn how to write or print and you still find people in New Brunswick who cannot do that. They must learn arithmetic so they can add up the grocery bill and find out if they are being over charged or under charged.

Once those are done and I might say once you can speak to your fellowman in an intelligent manner, once those basics are there then the rest are what I call academic, theoretical training, which is very nice. It stimulates the mind and makes them very happy. But, learning the ancient history of Greece does not help me rivet a gun or stir a test-tube or whatever it may be. It is very nice if we can do it but I do not think the program should be oriented that way.

We have put in some statistics to show the drop from grade nine downwards. Educators say they are drop-outs. I suggest they are dropouts because of the failure of the system to accommodate them.

The steps taken today by what I call the drop grade people through government assistance, through the technical schools and Canada Manpower where if you have been out of the labour market for so many years you get assistance and you can go back and retrain.

I suggest this only indicates a complete failure of the system because you should not have to go back and retrain. You should have been trained as far as you can go. It is like putting bandages on after the wound has been made.

We suggest that a change would stop the wound instead of all these palliatives and

trying to bandage up something that has already happened.

Mr. Chairman, going to the other phase of it and this, I think, is a very serious one in our community, which is the employer's position. We feel that a major factor contributing to a growing number of the poverty class is the failure of employers to accept persons for employment on the grounds of what I call over-qualification. Employers are using schools as screening grounds to lower the cost of their own training programs.

I was quite amazed just a few years ago when speaking to a prominent manager of one of our larger businesses who said "You know, we insist for a certain job on grade twelve graduation. We have to train them. High school has nothing to do with what we do. We have to take them right in and train them."

I said "Why grade twelve? Wouldn't grade nine do it?" "Oh," he said "Grade nine could do it but in grade twelve they are intelligent enough to take three months training whereas with a grade nine person you would have to train them eight months so we save five months in our payout for training. It is very simple".

Now, if that philosophy is being followed—and I think it is being followed—you are going to find out that all of the people with only grade nine just do not get work.

Again there was another example where a company was insisting upon high school graduation for a truck delivery man. Now, what a high school graduation has to do with driving a truck or delivering a parcel, I do not know, but this is what he insisted upon.

I suppose he thought eventually the truck driver would work into it and eventually become a president, but that philosophy, I think, is wrong.

He must go on the basis that everybody who is employed is not going to have all the qualifications to become president because they are not all going to be the president, so the employers have fallen into this error of economics.

They are demanding much higher qualifications academically than is needed for the particular work.

Many people can be trained with lower qualifications but it takes a little longer but the employer may save himself a few dollars. It is foisting a great mass of people into

unemployment and it puts us back in the poverty class and again the state is going to have to step in and give these people assistance which we feel we do not want.

It is much better to have people working on gainful employment. Unless our policy is everybody is going to be on state welfare, then we must have a policy. Everybody is entitled to gainful employment and to do this the employer is going to have to accept his responsibility.

Instead of saving a few extra dollars he is going to have to realize that he is part of our system of government in this country, which is a free enterprise system and he must accept the responsibility of taking in people who may be a little more expensive to train, but if they are capable of training, he should be able to do it.

The same philosophy applies to a great many trades and professions. They are raising their standards far above what is needed and those who could do the work are just being left out and finding themselves unable.

So our position, Mr. Chairman and honorable senators is that basically two changes have to be made. One is the state must step in positively and say "Look, the educational system must be changed to ensure that people are trained to suit their ability, to prepare them to take their place in the community" and (b) the employers must be induced—if they will not do it voluntarily then steps will have to be taken—to take in persons who are capable of doing the work but are not what I call over-qualified.

In other words, if he does not insist on academic training which is not needed being part of the system.

If these two things are brought in we feel a great deal of the poverty—in fact our definition of the poverty class will be removed. It will be a much happier state and a much happier country.

The Chairman: I have Senator Hastings, Senator Fournier, Senator McGrand and Senator Inman.

Senator Hastings: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman. Mr. Teed, I do not think the observations you have made in your brief will make you unpopular with the members of this committee.

Certainly as we have travelled everywhere we have gone we have found this indictment

against the educational system. We are in a country where we seem to be hell bent on training PhD's for the upper middle class of our society and the child from the poor received his first rebuke when he enters the system. He in turn rejects the system by the time he is twelve or sixteen years of age.

We have found everywhere we have gone that the system has been designed for the upper income groups and that the children of the poor have the worst schools and the worst teachers and probably the worst additional facilities they need in their educational systems instead of the best teachers and the best schools.

I would like to make this point in respect to Saint John. How many high schools are there in the City of Saint John?

Mr. Teed: Five.

Senator Hastings: How many of those would be serving—in other cities they call it the inner-city school—that is schools which are serving the working poor and the poor.

Mr. Teed: Mr. Chairman, I am going to say that the Saint John system fortunately does not in that sense discriminate because they are all lumped together. They do not split them at all other than possibly the Simonds High School, is the area which services the lower income persons or a bigger majority. Other than that the central high school takes them in from every community.

Senator Hastings: What was the one you mentioned?

Mr. Teed: The Simonds High School is in the Simonds region and that basically does—, am going to say on the average—contain a bigger number of lower income families than the others. The others are quite a melting pot.

Senator Hastings: Do you know is there any attempt by the educators in the city, to your knowledge, to see that that particular school receives added services or additional services as compared to the others?

Mr. Teed: I would say not that I am aware of because I think in fairness they are all treated the same. The Board does not, as far as I am aware, recognize any poverty areas as such.

Senator Hastings: They are all treated the same but by treating them all the same, you are discriminating against them because the child in that school needs more.

Mrs. Olsson, President, Council of Saint John Home and School Association: May I make a remark on the Simonds High School?

The Chairman: Certainly.

Mrs. Olsson: They have had a pre-employment class for some years and this year it was cut out because of a lack of appropriation of funds. The teacher who had been teaching these classes of pre-employment students was not rehired and I have never been able to find out the reason for it.

Last year the reason for not having as many students as they have had before was a lack of classroom space, but this year the class was discontinued.

This took care of those students who were not able to go on through to academic high and it was just that, just that, a pre-employment class and there were many, many children all through the Saint John district that could have used these facilities that were not available for all, so you see there are a great many of these children that are being neglected.

Senator Hastings: They are not being neglected. They are being discriminated against. Do the other schools have pre-employment classes?

Mrs. Olsson: No. This was the only school that had pre-employment classes.

Senator Hastings: It was not serving a useful purpose.

Mrs. Olsson: Yes, it certainly was.

Mr. Teed: If I may say, I think in fairness our School Board has followed the philosophy of the superintendent whose basic is "Those who can shall be pushed and those that cannot fall by the wayside".

In the vocational school, which is one of the earliest ones in the Province, the same basic has been tolerated. The academic high schools have been pushed. They have got essentially the best and they have even gone so far as to adopt an undeclared policy that when you are new teachers for the junior grades, you take new teachers just a couple of years out of school because you do not pay them as much and you can save money to pay the higher paid teachers in the academic schools.

Mind you, I am not on the Board now. The Board has since changed. These things I could never accept but that is the philosophy.

Senator Hastings: It is obvious the areas that need additional services are where the children of the poor are. The first ones to feel the brunt of a budget cut would be that area. The other schools receive equal services and they should receive less than the poor.

We were in Whitehorse two weeks ago and we found that fifty percent of the Indian children of the Yukon Territory were trying to absorb a curriculum set in Victoria. You speak about falling by the wayside. I think they put two through university from the Yukon Territory. The rest of them fall by the wayside half way between the white culture and the Indian culture and fall back into poverty all the time.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Teed, I think you have put me in a kind of strait-jacket this morning. I have to agree with you about what you said about education in New Brunswick, especially when it comes to vocational education but I have to take exception with you when you speak about failure.

As a former vocational teacher, I am part of the failure which you mention.

When you look around at the system that you and I condemn our achievements still include producing the finest engineers in the world, the finest scientists in the world who can split atoms, sending a man to the moon under the most difficult conditions, I do not think we can use the word failure all the time because I think it is a very strong word, although on the other side I think it is a national word for you to use to make some people realize that there has been some failure; but maybe we should say we did not achieve the goal which we expected. It is a little milder.

Mr. Teed: Well, Mr. Chairman, if I may. First, I didn't mean to put Senator Fournier in a strait-jacket at all.

Secondly, I do not say as far as educators are concerned that they have failed in their goals. They have persisted in their goals. Their goal is to educate those they can in a theoretical system where the brain is stimulated and a person, when he is dumped out on the world, is intelligent enough to be able to analyze what has been done.

That is their goal to a certain extent. You can get into many arguments, professional educators saying "No, no, you are not talking about education. You are talking about technical training. That is not education."

Now, my view is as far as education for J.Q. public is concerned it should be to prepare that fellow for a useful role in society and the goal they have set as educators is not the goal that should be set.

Unfortunately I think a lot of professional educators have taken over completely and I think they probably notice, but the concept of education—and I have taught educational courses and learned more than the students did when I was teaching—

One of the first instructions I can recall is that only teachers know what education is and keep the rest of these fellows out and do not let them stick their noses into it. This concept is drilled, I submit, into leaders and it is a wrong concept.

We are just as entitled, and in fact we should be running the system, not the educational teachers, but what should be done is that it should be set up by the people. Not by the professional man who can experiment all he wants up in the clouds and come out with a PhD.

The vocational school has not been expanded in New Brunswick to the extent it has elsewhere and what I used to call the shop, instead of being expanded it has been cut down.

I think this is the educational philosophy of the group. They do not want to teach practicalities. They want to teach kids.

Senator Fournier: I would go along with you in your comments on that.

Now, you mentioned something about the employers. I do not take objection to your point because I know of many occasions when I have argued with Manpower where they insisted a young boy must have grade twelve to become a barber.

I cannot agree with that and that is only one example. And it is the same thing with hairdressers and a lot of other things.

Now, I can agree some boys need grade twelve to become a specialized barber, to do the grooming of hair and so on but the regular barber who has got good hands and can handle a razor, doesn't need grade twelve as far as I am concerned. We have discussed this problem with the union and they have an argument about it also but I believe in the case of truck drivers and so on employers are asking on many occasions a standard which is too high, with the result that we have several problems facing the unemployed and those who are in poverty. Thank you, I pass.

Senator McGrand: On page one you say:

These are the failure of the education system to train persons to become useful members of the community.

I do not know whether you meant to place special emphasis on the word "useful" because I think the word "useful" has many meanings.

I think we agree that education should be something that trains the whole person, the academic, the vocational, spiritual and the emotional—and perhaps the emotional is most important—in order that he has the ability to live with other people and to live with other creatures that exist in his environment.

Unfortunately most people who speak of education, maybe not today, but at least half a generation ago, would say that they wanted their children to have a good education so as to be able to make a better living than his parents did, and perhaps that has been the concept of education right along, that this higher education leads to something that man is striving for, and has forgotten the equally important aspect of living.

Is that what you had in mind when you said that?

Mr. Teed: Well, senator, there is a philosophy, and it is not yet current in Canada, that if a man performs to the best of his ability he should be entitled to exactly the same as somebody else.

In other words, let us say I have limited capabilities—and many people possibly think I have—and I determine to become a barber. As long as I am the best barber, of which I am capable of being, I should be entitled to \$20,000.00 a year. If, on the other hand, I am a genius—which I am not—and I am entitled to be a scientific physiothist—all right then, did my training as a scientific physiothist and I am entitled to \$20,000.00 a year because I am doing the best I can do in my line. If I wanted to be a barber when I am capable of being a physiothist, I should not get \$20,000.00 a year. If I am not performing for the state.

Frankly, I am quite sympathetic with the idea but unfortunately this idea that the higher you go in education the more money you get, I think is wrong. We have the concept now.

Senator McGrand: Well, that has been the concept, has it not?

Mr. Teed: It has been but I think it is changing. It is changed. We cannot exist because people

who do not get that education still have to work and to live. They have to live on an economical basis. If you do not accept that then you have got to go on the basis of—all right, those who do not get their grade twelve all go on relief and those who get past grade twelve—just using arbitrary figures—will then have to support those who do not.

I do not think that is the concept of our society. If it is, I think we should change it—but I do think that a person is entitled to work and I do not think it is good for our society to say “fine, you did not get very far in school,” therefore you are going to sit on your chair and we will give you a pay cheque once in a while.” That is not good for our country.

I think a person is entitled and I am going to say the average citizen wants to do something useful. He does not want to sit and twiddle his thumbs. We are forcing him to do that because we are not training him to be useful and there are those who are using him because it may save a few dollars if they get somebody else to train for less.

About the spiritual side—I do not know about that. People say the church is supposed to look after that or the home. I don’t know, but basically I agree...

Senator McGrand: You will agree with me on the emotional, that the emotional is important to a person in order to live in his environment with other people. And adjust to this sort of thing.

Mr. Teed: Oh, yes, I agree. We have got to teach them to become a member. In other words, you cannot just leave them. Somebody has got to train the person and educate him not to live as a hermit because if everybody lived as a hermit we have no society.

We also realize, I think, that there are limitations and even people who are genius have very peculiar traits sometimes. I mean there are two extremes. There is the man with limited intelligence and there is the man who is a genius who does oddball things as well. We have got to train them both so they become useful members of society.

Senator Inman: On page five of your brief you say:

Many children attend school simply to retain family allowance cheques for their parents. Truancy is stopped in many instances by threatening to stop these cheques.

My question is this: how many children attend school to retain family allowance cheques? Is it the fault of the parent to want the cheque or is the teenage child in many cases allowed to have the cheque for spending money? I know of many cases of this happening.

Mr. Teed: Oh, I would say in these cases we are talking about the parent who needs the family allowance cheque and the truant officers—they do not use that term any more—but if the child is not in school at fifteen or sixteen years of age, say in grade eight, goes to the parent and say “Look, you keep the child in school or you don’t get the cheque while the child is not in school.”

This is the kind of thing we are talking about. It is a practical method of insuring the child attends school.

The Chairman: Actually I think you are talking about youth allowances. Up to what age?

Mr. Teed: Family allowances up to sixteen.

Senator Inman: I have one other question.

Senator Fergusson: If you do not mind me interrupting, perhaps I should make a comment.

I think the Committee somehow has the idea that Family Allowances stop the cheque. Actually I think, Mr. Teed, if Family Allowances report the child is not attending school in accordance to the Schools Act and that is the way the cheque is stopped and then the school reports to the Family Allowances...

Mr. Teed: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: ...if the child is not attending school in accordance with the Schools Act and then family allowance is stopped because the child is not complying with the Schools Act but, the Family Allowances do not themselves stop the cheque.

Mr. Teed: No, no, I agree. It is the truant officer who starts the ball rolling, but they do not use that term now.

Senator Fergusson: This has come up before and I felt there was a misunderstanding by the Committee and that is why I mentioned it.

Mr. Teed: We find this is changing. We had some teachers on the Committee and they say the factual result is that you get a child who is not interested in school. He is fifteen and

he is in grade seven. There is no point in him going to school. He has been repeating every grade right up the line but the parents say: "Look Johnny, it is \$5.00 or \$8.00"—I forget the amount—"You cannot work. You are not sixteen. You have to go to school."

So, he settles down in school. He takes the school term, as it used to be called. Word eventually gets back to the school authorities that he has not been at school who say "look, you know, he was not at school last week." It is the simplest way of getting it. The parents say "so what, he is not learning anything?" The simple answer is "you get him into school or we will report this and you will lose your cheque."

The Chairman: Senator Fergusson, under the Act,—as I understand it, family allowances are paid on the basis of the birth of a child and his age.

Senator Fergusson: They must attend school in accordance with the Schools Act of the Province.

The Chairman: Does the Family Allowance Act provide for that?

Senator Fergusson: I think so. I am sure that is the way it is operated. I forget the section. I am sure it provides for that.

The Chairman: You were the administrator.

Senator Fergusson: That was quite a long time ago now.

Mr. Teed: Legally, I would say it is being used for that purpose.

Senator Inman: I have one more question concerning problem B on page one: It reads:

The failure of employers to employ persons capable of doing the work by insisting on over-qualifications for those they hire.

Do you find many employers in Saint John taking this attitude?

Mr. Teed: Well, it is not only in Saint John. It is a growing trend all over. The more intelligent a person is the easier it is for him to do it. There is a method. Instead of setting up their own screen and giving them whatever the tests might be, they set an arbitrary grade X, Y or Z and it is being done more and more by more and more people.

Senator Inman: The reason I am asking is that in the Town of Riley, nobody does it. If

anybody wants a job, they get it, if they have a B.A. or not.

Mr. Teed: Well, you will find it doesn't work here. As I say I know of two instances, one where the general manager told me specifically that they insisted on this and this is the reason.

Secondly, one of our directors told us of a case where the standard was to drive a truck was such and such and this just does not make sense. If everybody had a B.A., you would not have any truck drivers.

The Chairman: No, I do not think that is so at all. I know some B.A.'s who, as you say, do not know how to drive a truck at all. But that is not the point. These people want the best qualified chap that they can get to do a job.

Mr. Teed: No, I am not saying that. I am saying they have set a standard which is not needed to do the job because it saves them a little bit of money in training. It takes a man six months to train to drive a tractor-trailer, if he has got grade twelve and it takes nine months to train him if he has got grade eight, once he is trained, he can operate a tractor. In fact, you find sometimes they are better operators. It is cheaper for me to say "all right, you must have grade eleven because it is going to save me six months' training." Once they are trained, they are all the same.

The Chairman: When you apply for a job isn't the first question they ask, after asking your name and address, "What experience have you had?" That is always the next question: "What experience have you had in doing this line of work?" That has been traditional since time immemorial.

Mr. Teed: We are starting with people who have had no work.

The Chairman: That is a different thing. want to know just how good you are, how smart you are, before I give you this truck to drive. It involves some responsibility.

Mr. Teed: No. Our submission is that the employer has a responsibility to ensure that a reasonable portion of his employees are what I would call people who are not going to become college graduates, but they are not doing it.

If everybody in the shop would be a college graduate, even if it is only sweeping floors,—that is an exaggeration—but that is the concept.

Senator Fournier: I would like to ask this question. There is a problem when a boy has graduated from vocational school, he has his training but he hasn't got experience. You have got to start somewhere. This is where the failure has been with the employer. He would not take this boy on. He knows he has no experience. He is just out of school but he may be a good truck driver, but somewhere along the line we have got to find a way to start these people somehow.

The first approach should be up to the employer.

The Chairman: Senator Quart?

Senator Quart: Mr. Chairman, Senator Inman asked my question but may I congratulate Mr. Teed and I agree. I agree with the A and B of your recommendations if you delete that word "failure" as a compromise for another word.

However, on page four you mention in your brief:

We are not advocating that all those who drop out of school before completing grade nine would not drop out if Vocational and Technical training were offered at an earlier age.

I think that is an excellent idea but I do not know what the technical schools feel about that, but I must say I know all the members of this Committee know a gentleman who boasts about never going further than grade six. He says: "Well, as far as the engineers and lawyers are concerned, they all work for me now." He has just very recently given a cheque for \$350,000.00 to the Children's Hospital in Ottawa and he boasts about never having gone further than grade six, but he was able to profit by some common sense, I suppose.

I think your brief is excellent. Thank you.

Senator Fournier: I would like to clarify one point that you mentioned, Senator Quart, I think we too often refer to technical schools as one thing. There are various types of technical schools. There are vocational schools and there are technical training schools and you have shop training. It makes a big difference.

The average person refers to that as a technical school and that is wrong.

Mr. Teed: As I say, there is a misunderstanding. We have two technical institutes which require a high school graduation before

you can get in. The others are technical schools and I hate to say this, but I presume the more general a school is, the difference between a vocational school and a technical school is you get a grant if you go to a technical school.

We have a technical school in Saint John, the Saint John Technical Institute teaches electronics and advanced things and teaches heavy equipment operating and this type of thing.

Our point on that Section is that the reasons they are dropping out is because the school is not offering them a program which does them any good or which they can absorb, so they drop out.

The Chairman: Mr. Teed, in the light of what Mrs. Olsson said to us earlier, that they are actually cutting back on this, and in the light of what you have said, that they are operating on the very old theory of perhaps even primitive education or the primeval education theories they have, how is it that this message—in view of the unemployment and failure of the welfare system—has not been gotten across, that you train for living?

Mr. Teed: Well, I am going to suggest, Mr. Chairman, that the reason is that education has become a clouded mystery, plus the philosophy of the educators that it is their business and nobody else's. Now, that is the same as a doctor saying "it is my business whether you are alive or dead." It is not. It is my business. He would like to think it is his business. The same with education. It is our business but the educators say "don't stick your noses in. We are doing quite well".

I think this committee will be a great assistance in pointing that out. We have got to have a shake-up. We have the same policies now that we have had for close to one hundred years since they started public education.

The same philosophy and the same trends will go on and on and on to higher heights. Attempts have been made, and vocational school training was one, to be practical. Teach them something they can use. This has not been supported. In fact I think there is no question: for a number of years those that went to vote were looked down upon as not being very bright, but this has got to be changed.

We have got to recognize everybody cannot do everything and certainly I can do some things that others cannot—and others can do

other things better than I can. I cannot pound nails very well.

Senator Hastings: Has education simply reflected the views of society? You said it is our business. Certainly it is our business and it was our business but we have failed.

Indeed, I will disagree with my distinguished colleague it is quite true we have sent a man to the moon and we have split atoms but in the meantime our welfare rolls grow and poverty grows so we have failed; but I say we have failed because the educational system simply reflects our views in setting the standards of education for the upper middle class.

Mr. Teed: No. I am going to say education has reflected the views of the educators not the people, because they have never become involved.

Fifty years ago if you did not go on to college, fine, you could have training or you could have become an apprentice. This concept has not caught up. Today, let me put it this way, it used to be a high school graduation certificate was equivalent to a B.A. today. Today if you have a B.A., it is nothing. You have got to go out and get an M.A. or something else.

You have this philosophy. I can think of one organization of which I know which does training. They set up an enrollment for which you must have grade ten. This was set up when you graduated from grade eleven and at that time grade eleven was quite high. Today you matriculate at grade twelve and in some cases you do not matriculate until grade thirteen but they still have that grade ten concept. They just have not caught up. It means nothing.

I can think of the legal profession. It was not too long ago you graduated from high school and then you took two years pre-law and then you could article or take law again. Somebody—I know who it was—came along and said “look, before you can take law you must have a degree”—not a degree in philosophy—just a degree. It may have been engineering, but you had to have a degree before you could go into law and this concept has caught on.

They call it up-grading. I do not call it up-grading because it has nothing to do with what you are going to follow. I think registered nurses are a classic example. They have up-graded themselves out of a job. It is getting to the stage with registered nurses that

in not too long they are going to have to be college graduates and the person who does what I call the nursing—the ones we visualize who swath the poor patients brows and take thermometers, are not going to be nurses. They are going to be the registered nurse's assistances.

I think that is the most classic example of a group that I have seen who have upgraded themselves out of work, but there are other examples.

This is the concept that we have because people just do not get involved.

The Chairman: Look at the bottom of page three and the top of page four. You give us some statistics and I am satisfied that they are accurate, where you say that:

9.8 per cent in New Brunswick have no schooling compared with 5.7 per cent in Canada; 19.5 per cent in New Brunswick having less than grade five, while Canada shows 13.4 per cent.

Why?

Mr. Teed: That becomes a political philosophy. Basically a large number here is due to the poor school system which was in the northern parts of the province. This is being changed. And I am not advocating any particular political system. We certainly think there is going to be a big change in this because the school system has been arranged but that it still is not going to take care of the poverty level or of those who are not going to be able to take the system. We will still have large numbers. It is not going to serve.

But that is the reason. It is from the northern part of the Province. They just did not go to school for many reasons.

Senator Fournier: I believe we find most of our poverty in the group that has been getting their education in those areas. They did not get the education because the system was not giving it.

Mr. Teed: Well, Mr. Chairman, I can see even if we do have schools and if the present system of education is carried on in fifty or one hundred or two hundred schools throughout the province, you would still end up with the poverty group.

In some of those northern sections, the schools are on a higher level and you would find somebody who, because of limitations or a lack of ability in some cases, just would not be accommodated as well. A number would

drop out and you would still have a group who are not trained for anything.

Senator Fergusson: I have one more comment. I do not like to insert a note that is not in agreement with what some of my colleagues have said because I do agree with most of what they have said, but I would like to ask Mr. Teed what education he feels every person should have.

He said "Training for making a living". It seems to me the objective of training for making a living is not the only objective of education and poverty is not only because of a lack of money and not only a lack of being able to make money but there are a lot of areas where people have not had an opportunity to appreciate history and poetry and other things that they learn in school.

I feel we may train people that can make money but get very little else out of life so surely that will be a poverty stricken civilization we would be developing. I would like to know how much education you feel everyone should have.

Mr. Teed: Well, senator, you have got a very good point. I am not saying "train to make a living" I am saying "training for living", but that does include making a living.

Senator Fergusson: You referred to people making money and learning how to make money.

Mr. Teed. Well, you have to be able to support yourself. It is unfortunate, but I will put it this way. I have only changed my views recently but I have come to the conclusion, but let us say anybody might appreciate some of the finer arts. They might appreciate music. I do not care if I am a genius or I am a dunce, music is nice. Anybody might appreciate a beautiful picture. I do not know if you do or not. We are not being trained unless we get out of high school.

Now, this is what I would call training in living. Fine! If we go to work and make lots of money then what do we do? Do we sit down and watch TV?

I do suggest you must learn the three r's. You must learn how to read. You must learn how to write and you must learn how to count. Then, once we have learned those in theory at least we can pick up a book and read how to do almost anything else but instead of learning calculus which nine hundred and ninety-nine out of a thousand are

never going to use or instead of learning some other wonderful course which nobody is going to use, maybe we should get down to some of the arts, appreciation of the arts and appreciation of music. I do not know, but this, I am sure, would make it a much happier society; but these things are not basically taught as part of the program.

They are either extras or if somebody happens to have enough money they might stick those in. I can think of courses which just do not help out living at all with your fellowmen which are being given and insisted upon. It used to be that Latin was given and in theory this is a similar line of training.

Well, they are now dropping Latin and they are putting in a number of other courses which today have no part basically in preparing a person to live with his fellowmen.

I would suggest we have got to train them to earn a living and the employer must accept the responsibility and (b) we have got to train them to be able to utilize his training in a useful and practical manner.

Part of it is not being done which is, as I say, every day living, how to budget, how to live, how to buy things properly and, heaven knows, we are being besieged right, left and centre today by advertising which induces the unfortunate to go out and buy things they do not need.

You have probably all heard many complaints that the social welfare cheque goes to the Dominion store or goes to the Supermarket and which buys exotic foods which somebody else who is earning a living would not buy in one hundred years. They have not been trained or taught or educated or whatever you want how to live properly.

You do not go buying strawberries costing \$1.00 a box in the middle of winter when you have not got enough money to buy staples but they do it because they do not know the difference.

Senator Fergusson: You think that should be taught in the school?

Mr. Teed: It is not being taught where it should be taught. It used to be you learned that in your training but not anymore.

The Chairman: You used to learn it at school with the domestic science course.

Mr. Teed: They are cutting out domestic science. That was exactly my point. That is my point, they should get down to teaching a

person to live in his community properly and then if they want to go on and have all their academic courses for those that have that bend or trait, fine, train them.

The Chairman: Mr. Teed, as Chairman of the Brief Committee, you have presented a very useful and helpful brief. On behalf of our committee I want to thank you and Mrs. Olsson for taking your time in appearing before us. You have hit the nail on the head, of course, and what you have said is both clear and true.

The Chairman thinks that education is a diploma out of poverty and the committee shares the view that education is vital for them to take their place in society or at least to start to help them take their place in society. As Senator Hastings indicated, we have had this presented to us many times and in many ways—not any better than you have done today or any more forcefully by any had this presented to us many times and in many ways—not any better than you have done today or any more forcefully by any means—but we emphasize that it needs emphasis for them.

On behalf of the committee, I thank you and Mrs. Olsson.

The Chairman: We have a brief from the Saint John Board of Trade. On my right is Mr. Peter Wood, Chairman, who will make the statement on behalf of the Board of Trade.

Mr. Peter Wood, Chairman, Health and Welfare Committee, Saint John Board of Trade: Thank you very much senators and ladies and gentlemen. I just have a few brief comments to make concerning the brief that has been put forth by the Board of Trade to this Commission.

The Board of Trade, as long as I can recall, has been involved and interested in local society problems and since the advent of the Provincial White Paper dialogue has been going on and since the studies of this Commission started and in view of the upcoming federal government White Paper, coming out in the fall presumably, we feel that we should be involved in as much dissemination of knowledge in the area of the poverty battle as we can.

Unfortunately we have not had enough time to prepare anything but a very lightly

documented brief and we apologize for that, but I think really what we are saying, more than anything else, is that we are really offering an expression of our commitment to help in whatever way possible in the battle to remove poverty as an unacceptable condition of blight in this affluent society.

We do not suggest suggestions. We are really asking a lot of questions and we hope that you will bear with us in understanding that this is just the beginning of this dialogue from our point of view and we hope to become more and more involved in the discussion that will continue.

The Board feels, I think, that the moral issues are great but even if we look at it from the purely selfish economic point of view of the sheer cost and the sheer waste of human resources then the Board really feels it must be involved in this consideration.

We suspect our role could well be that of an attempt to clarify the attitudes of the givers. We see great, and we believe successful, efforts being made concerning the identification of the problems and a study of the attitudes of the recipients. This is vital and these efforts must be successful but we feel also that almost equally as important is the education and attitude of those who give. This is an essential ingredient on the attack on poverty.

Thank you very much.

Senator Inman: Mr. Chairman, I have two questions. On page two you say:

Before the federal government imposes anymore social service programs on the provinces, it should properly determine just what the provinces really need and are in a position to effectively implement

Now, do the provinces themselves know what the problems are?

Mr. Woods: I don't know, senator. I would suspect this is part of the ongoing discussion. The dialogue that is occurring on the White Paper is involved in this. I presume the provinces are going to come up with some pretty strong recommendations as to what the federal government should do and what the provincial government should do.

I do not know whether that answers your question.

Senator Inman: It does for the time being. Well, my second question is from page four. You say:

Should there be a differential allowed for varying economic needs of people by region as well as by rural versus urban considerations?" "What methods can be devised to assure that a solid base of citizen involvement is encouraged in all possible areas of delivery of social services? Can we be sure of that, wherever possible, private agencies provide all necessary social services?

ow, the first part particularly interests me:

Should there be a differential allowed for varying economic needs of people by region as well as by rural versus urban considerations?

f course, I feel that there should be allowances. Have you any comments by which you could enlarge on that? Perhaps some of the other senators would like to ask about that?

Mr. Wood: I think perhaps some of the resource people could answer that better. My own feeling is that I am entirely uneducated on the subject. I really have heard all the suggestions both ways and our own Committee have discussed it and come up with both sides of the question.

I think our initial thinking was that there could be a differential.

The Chairman: We will get back to that, Senator Inman.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Wood, on page 3 you say:

Community education will mean a team effort and the Board of Trade is prepared to do its share, particularly by involving the business community in social development action...

What programs do you have at the present time for involving the Board of Trade?

Mr. Wood: I should say here, sir, on page three we have used the word "change community attitudes". We mean clarify community attitudes. It is on the second line on page three. "Change" there should be "clarify". That is at the second line of page three.

What we really are doing is groping for answers. We had some fairly strong reaction, rather sporadic reaction, to meetings and discussions on the White Paper; a reaction against some of the thinking for more socialism in the country.

I think really what we have to do is to establish what the members of the Board of

Trade are in fact giving publicly, what they do think and what their attitudes are. We have a questionnaire we have prepared now in which we hope to ask some of the pointed moral questions along with some strictly economic questions.

Senator Hastings: Do I understand you to have no program going involving the Board of Trade or have not had any?

Mr. Wood: Not on this subject, no. We have had discussions on the White Paper within our own group and we have had one open discussion with the Board of Trade and we are now in the stage of preparing a questionnaire to establish the attitudes of that portion of the giving public any way. We feel this is a role we probably can play.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Wood, did you hear the previous witness with respect to the discontinuance of the pre-employment classes at Simonds High School?

Has your Board of Trade expressed a view or taken any action in that respect?

Mr. Wood: Quite frankly, I did not hear of that until an hour or an hour and a half ago.

Senator Hastings: Now you are aware of it, what do you think?

Mr. Wood: I think the Educational Committee certainly—or whatever Committee handles education with the Board, should take an interest in that.

Senator Hastings: I agree with you. Further down that page, sir, on page three, you say:

A consistent and major area of friction between the attitudes of the givers and those of the recipients is that of misuse, or alleged misuse, of social service funds, including unemployment insurance.

Further on down you say:

They are not prepared to support the growing number of perennial abuses of welfare assistance.

On what did you base these statements?

Mr. Wood: I think what we are really saying is that—if we sound as if we are being too direct on it—what we are really saying is that this is an area division between givers and recipients and it has been a constant source of irritation. The givers are always spilling off some little story they have heard about misuse of funds. They all seem to be armed with some of them, you know.

I think this is a matter that should be studied and there should be some considerable assurance to the givers that any welfare funds are properly handled.

Senator Hastings: In your view they are not properly handled? Do you think there is definite misuse?

Mr. Wood: No, I don't, sir, not me. I really don't. I think this is something that is a source of irritation and obviously needs clarifying and obviously needs a lot of education for people who are really listening to hearsay.

Senator Hastings: I agree with you and I think in your program of clarification of the attitudes of the giver, you will find that that is one of the myths we have got to dispel in our society today. It seems we are committed to the concept that to give is human to accept is a crime, and that is one of the great barriers we have got to break down.

That is just one of the myths. I do not suppose there is anymore misuse of welfare than there is income tax evasion in this country.

The Chairman: The abuses are about the same,

Senator Hastings: If it is good for business, it should be good for the welfare recipient.

The Chairman: But like everything else, as you say, it has grown up and been continued. We will have to keep hitting the myth on the head.

Senator Hastings: Well, as I say, in your studies you will find it is a myth and you will not be making that statement.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Chairman, on page three the first line reads:

Another challenging test of government and people alike is to change community attitudes concerning this matter of poverty.

Now, you pinpoint two groups, the government and the people alike. Do you believe that the government is really the people responsible for the group responsible or is the government able to do that in a very impartial way?

Mr. Wood: I am sure they could provide funds to the...

Senator Fournier: That is a different thing. Do you find that it is difficult to get people interested in working on a volunteer service?

Do you find it is difficult to get people to participate in these projects of welfare in the community organization. Do they have an attitude such as "that is not for me. I have no children and let somebody else do it."

Mr. Wood: I do not really know how to motivate the people to feel responsible for their fellowmen, sir.

Senator Fournier: In your brief you pinpoint the government and people alike.

I agree as people we should but whether the government is really the body to do it, I have my doubts.

Senator Quart: Well, Mr. Wood, again on page four you mention:

What methods could be devised to assure that a solid base of citizen involvement is encouraged in all possible areas of delivery of social services?

Could that mean that maybe the Canadian Chamber of Commerce or the Saint John segment of it would take the initiative in calling a meeting, let us say, of the volunteer group in this area and the private agencies maybe investigate what type of involvement they could provide in social services and probably establish a rapport between the social welfare workers and the volunteers and sort of break down this professional jealousy, let us say, which should not exist in sense? Would your Saint John Board of Trade be willing to take that initiative?

Mr. Wood: I can certainly put it to them yes. Their representatives are here if you want to ask them.

Senator Quart: Maybe I am putting you on the spot.

Have you many volunteer groups helping both the government and the private agencies?

Mr. Wood: Well, apart from the co-ordinating social services council, they would be the ones, I would think.

Senator Quart: Just one more question and I don't know if this point has been asked all in our hearings. It occurred to me from what you have mentioned about the abuses sometimes the idea gets across that the funds for welfare are being abused.

In campaigns for funds like the Red Feather—I don't know what you call them here but I do know definitely that there are quite

number of people disillusioned when they see reports of the cost of administration and even the promotional angle of these campaigns and now very little is left for actual relief. Have you any reaction in your group to that?

Mr. Wood: Yes, I had a reaction to the United Way. I think the cost there is very reasonable. I think some of the individual campaigns outside of the United Fund might well be pretty high in their costs.

I have forgotten what it is in the United Fund. Perhaps Mr. Stegmayer could answer that question.

Mr. Stegmayer: I came prepared for the question, Mr. Chairman. I have an audited statement of the Saint John United Fund in front of me, which I will submit to the Committee.

Senator Fournier: We will take your word for it.

Mr. Stegmayer: The cost of raising the money is about seven per cent.

Senator Inman: Oh, that is marvelous.

Mr. Stegmayer: Now, where the confusion arises is sometimes in delivery of services because people themselves confuse salaries for nurses and social workers as administration but, if you want to make a comparison, Mr. Chairman, with the cost of running the school system, most of it is charged to the cost of teachers.

When you bring services to people you need other people to deliver that service.

Senator Inman: Thank you very much.

The Chairman: Mr. Stegmayer, stick around for a minute. Mr. Wood is going to lean on you for another question. The question asked was: should there be a differential allowance for varying economic regions, rural as well as urban considerations, having in mind what we have been talking about, maintenance allowance.

I will ask you first: can you think of any possible basis for saying the line is here and everybody on this side of the line gets so much and everybody on the other side of the line gets so much?

After we have your answer I will ask some more questions.

Mr. Stegmayer: You have put me on the spot, sir.

22427—3

The Chairman: That is the general idea.

Mr. Stegmayer: I think in the voluntary sector, the point should be made that because of the inadequacy of volunteer funds, the relief programs or the whole program has now been accepted as a government responsibility.

The voluntary sector has put its emphasis on guidance, counselling and giving citizens direction as to best how to organize their lives; but where there have been agencies that have been giving emergency aid. There has been a yardstick adopted which more or less is the amount of money available for that agency, the number of cases that have to be settled and the amount that that particular case needs, which is never enough. So, there is flexibility.

The Chairman: But you see, what we are talking about—is the great amount of money that the government collects from all you nice people. You understand, we are talking about the government program and the government responsibility, and not the volunteers. That is what we are talking about, and let me help you here with your answer if I can. If you do not agree, it is up to you. In the light of that you pay the same basis of tax as I do, living in Toronto.

Mr. Stegmayer: Correction, sir, we pay a ten percent surtax.

The Chairman: That is for the privilege of living in New Brunswick, but generally on the federal basis you pay the same as I do.

Mr. Wood: Right.

The Chairman: You draw the same family allowances as I do and everybody else in the country does. You draw the same old age security as everybody else in the country does. Workmen's Compensation is the same the province over. An arm is an arm and a leg is a leg. Unemployment insurance is paid on the same basis.

Mr. Wood: Right.

The Chairman: If there are tariff concessions everybody gets them on the same basis. Now, tell me: can you conceive of any maintenance allowance that can be paid on anything other than a uniform basis?

Mr. Stegmayer: Not under the present structure, no.

The Chairman: Under what system?

Mr. Stegmayer: I think that the matter of need can be introduced but if the system is a bureaucratic system, the flexibility has been removed and need can be interpreted differently in different parts of the country because it is subject to individual interpretation; but then you face the conflict about the regulations that have to be interpreted and I think that perhaps the guaranteed annual income of some kind or a negative income tax could establish need.

We all file income tax reports now. Or at least some people file income tax returns. Why could not all people file income tax returns which then become a measure of need?

The Chairman: But do we do that now with old age security?

Mr. Stegmayer: No, we don't.

The Chairman: Why should you? If you ask for a supplement with old age security you must file an income tax return.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right, but other major assistance programs are based on an actual per diem or per monthly grants. It is perhaps the general exception to the rule.

The other thing is that sometimes mass assistance programs are a political expediency of the need of a particular community.

The Chairman: Well, without political expediency you do not get very far anywhere these days.

Mr. Stegmayer: You may remember sir, the introduction of family allowances.

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Stegmayer: It became universal because it was too difficult to administer a means test. As a result we are now paying universal family allowances to all segments of the population, many of whom do not need it.

The Chairman: Yes. Of course, that is not quite true because I was there when it was introduced.

Mr. Stegmayer: I remember.

The Chairman: And so were a lot of other people and Senator Fergusson administered it for the province. The reason it was done in that way at that time was that the administration costs to do anything else would have been prohibitive. Today we punch a computer and the answer is there, and so this is a

different story entirely. Times have changed, and they are now discussing it at the very highest level, as you know.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right.

The Chairman: I should point out again that one of the complaints we have heard in your province, and in other provinces, is the fact that the basis of need was not considered at all when the provinces were put under the Canada Assistance Act.

Mr. Stegmayer: That is right.

The Chairman: The province was on a 50-50 basis. We think that is unfair. We think that there is a special need for the poorer provinces particularly to have that taken into consideration.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right.

The Chairman: That special need is applicable to the poorer people.

Mr. Stegmayer: Correct.

The Chairman: That need should be taken into consideration and we have not to differentiate.

Mr. Stegmayer: But then how can you—am asking you a question?

The Chairman: Go ahead.

Mr. Stegmayer: How can you—if need is a subjective thing and need arises because of the area in which we live and because of the economic impacts and so on of the area,—there has got to be some flexibilities but the Act does not allow really in its total sense that flexibility to meet the needs of individuals.

The Chairman: Let me tell you what the committee has been discussing, and it is no secret. The word "need," of course, in the Canada Assistance Act has the widest possible scope you can give it.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right.

The Chairman: It could mean anything and it is intended to be that; but what the committee members have been turning over in their mind is that income should come from the federal government, services from the provincial government and the delivery under the umbrella of the Canada Assistance Act with all the acts put under it. There may be some cutdown but with an umbrella not to big. That is the general theory.

Mr. Stegmayer: That is right.

The Chairman: And this, of course, is constitutionally correct, if we still understand the Constitution, so that we are on solid ground if we can sell the concept.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right. Again I think it relates to the economic climate in a particular area. Even if the Federal Government says we are going to go to a cost-shared program, it should also consult—I think this is your point, sir—with the provinces as to whether the provinces can afford to meet the cost of the rest of the program.

An example is Medicare. Many provinces in Canada have opted in for medicare but New Brunswick has been without medicare for the last three or four years since the inception of the program.

In the meantime the citizens of New Brunswick are paying a certain part of the medicare program for which they are not getting any benefits; although we are told that medicare will start on the first of January of this year.

The Chairman: You mean you are paying part of the medicare program for me?

Mr. Stegmayer: That is right.

The Chairman: That is right. That is exactly what you are doing.

Mr. Stegmayer: On the other hand, if our level of health in the Province of New Brunswick is less—and I am only assuming that. I have no facts, sir—than the other parts of the country then it may mean that New Brunswick or Nova Scotia or Prince Edward Island may need more than the other fifty percent to meet or bring our services up to the standard of some of the other provinces, which has perhaps a higher standard.

The Chairman: I must say this to you: that in our inquiries the greatest pauperizer of all is health, pauperizing the individual, the family and the generation. If you have a long prolonged illness you are beat.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right.

The Chairman: Now, in fairness to the federal government and in fairness to everyone, provinces such as your province and other provinces receive what they call an equalization grant. No one understands it, including the chairman. Nevertheless they do receive it, and the allegation is made, and with some

substance, that what was intended to be an equalization grant to assist people on welfare is used to build bridges and roads.

Mr. Stegmayer: Right, sir.

The Chairman: There is truth in that, but this committee is not here to throw stones at the provincial government. But it is not only in New Brunswick. There are worse offenders than New Brunswick, if New Brunswick does offend, I do not know anything about it.

So the problem of the committee is that social security is a matter apart entirely from other matters and should be dealt with in that sense. That is our thinking. We have come to no conclusion.

Senator McGrand: I want to repeat a question that Senator Inman brought up, before I ask that question I want to remind you there is throughout Canada in a lot of places a great objection to anything that is a means test. They call it the 'mean test'.

When you start to talk about a means test in order to meet individual obligations of different people, you are in a very delicate area. But what is meant by 'region as well as rural versus urban considerations'? What is meant by that?

Mr. Wood: I think we are really asking questions, as I suggested, sir, of you good people and of the world generally.

Senator McGrand: You are asking questions?

Mr. Wood: We are asking the questions, I am afraid. I think what we are thinking of is that it is pretty obvious that there is a different cost of living when living in Toronto as against living in rural New Brunswick. Whether the various costs that are greater in Toronto and less in New Brunswick or vice versa, balance out or not, we do not know.

Senator McGrand: Do not take Toronto. Compare the costs with Saint John and with rural New Brunswick.

Mr. Wood: Well, I would think they might very well balance out. I should think there are some things more expensive in Toronto.

Senator McGrand: I am not talking about Toronto.

Mr. Wood: Oh, the rural?

Senator McGrand: Compare Saint John with Hamilton or Havelock.

Mr. Wood: I would think this is a question we are asking. Really, I do not know.

Senator McGrand: A bag of flour costs about the same in both places, does it not?

Mr. Wood: Yes. If you are living on a small farm that is slowly going down hill you can still grow a few rows of potatoes and that sort of thing so you do have a slight advantage.

Senator McGrand: You could go and cut your own firewood if you wanted to.

Mr. Wood: Right.

Senator McGrand: But that question has come up, whether there should be people living here paying rent. There is one thing about living in rural New Brunswick. The taxes pays the rent, does it not?

Mr. Wood: That is right, sir, but they are the same as the working poor. The old farmers that have no family left on the farm and whose farm has gone pretty well downhill still has a pretty slim life but they can grow potatoes.

Senator Fournier: There are two boards here: one is called the Chamber of Commerce and one is called the Board of Trade. Is that the same thing?

Mr. Wood: No, sir. It is just the Board of Trade.

Senator Fournier: There is no more Chamber of Commerce.

Mr. Wood: Not in Saint John. They go by various names in various communities.

Senator Fournier: Now, on page three, the second paragraph, we find this:

Having committed the Board of Trade to the challenging task of changing community attitudes leads us to another vital matter.

What are you planning to do to change that?

The Chairman: He said he meant to use "clarify" instead of "change".

Senator Fournier: How do you propose clarifying it?

Mr. Wood: That is a good question, sir. We are attempting to do it by a questionnaire to see if we can't get a consensus. We will not get a consensus but we should get a majority opinion, we hope, of attitudes on various fairly tough moral questions.

Senator Fournier: How soon do you expect that?

Mr. Wood: May I ask a question?

Senator Fournier: Certainly.

Mr. Wood: Mr. Whynott or Mr. Ward from the Board of Trade. Can you tell me when that questionnaire, that we are hoping might do a little clarifying, might be circulated?

Mr. Whynott (Member, Board of Trade, Saint John): Mr. Chairman, the questionnaire has been circulated to our Health and Welfare Committee. It is going to our Executive Committee tomorrow and will be circulated to our members in early September.

I would just like to explain. The purpose of the questionnaire is to get some opinions from the givers. The Board of Trade represents the majority of businessmen in the business community.

We would like to get some opinions from them because basically they represent the givers in the community. We want to know what they think about welfare programs or social development programs. That is the purpose of it.

Senator Fournier: This circular will be distributed to members only?

Mr. Whynott: To members of the Board of Trade, yes sir. We are speaking for the Board of Trade.

Senator Fournier: How many members have you got?

Mr. Whynott: Eight hundred and fifty-nine.

Senator Hastings: May I ask a question?

The Chairman: Certainly.

Senator Hastings: What was the motivating force or what precipitated the Board of Trade being challenged to make this commitment?

Mr. Wood: We have had a Health and Welfare Committee for as long as I have been with the Board of Trade. They have taken up quite a number of challenges that have been passed out in the community on social problems such as like forming the United Fur and forming a social services council. They have been some things that have eventually been realized such as a study of mental health in the province. That was triggered by the Board of Trade. They have had a great interest in social problems in the area.

Senator Hastings: I am just wondering: you cannot pin it down to anyone particular reason for having made this commitment with respect to poverty.

Mr. Stegmayer: If I may address the Committee. I think the idea was really triggered by what was called a Forum Day in 1964.

The Chairman: Which?

Mr. Stegmayer: A Forum Day, where the citizens were asked to appear before the Board of Trade to state their concerns about the community in all regards; business, economic, education, health and welfare.

I think it was from that meeting that the citizens, before the Board of Trade, expressing their concerns that the Health and Welfare Committee had its development or its impetus. It may have been in existence a lot earlier than that but the whole program of the Board of Trade in terms of social development, I think, stems from the Forum Day in November 1964.

Senator Hastings: And from November 1964 to now you have not undertaken a program?

Mr. Stegmayer: Yes, the Board of Trade is responsible for finding seed money and bringing into being the Social Planning Council.

The Board of Trade was instrumental in launching the study on mental health services in the Province along with other community agencies.

The Board of Trade has been concerned about the per diem grants for social assistance cases and submitted a brief. This was about three or four years ago. It is at present, you heard, sir, trying to clarify the attitudes of the business community in relation to welfare and social development.

It has had a general meeting which it shared with members of the Board of Trade to bring before them new developments in social programs in this community, and I think that along with its either fifty or sixty committees the Board has done a fairly decent job in prodding the community, particularly the section of the community it represents in studying this relationship between economics and social development. It is really operated by volunteers. The staff is fairly diffuse because it has to service many other committees.

Senator Fournier: Do you have monthly meetings?

Mr. Stegmayer: The Health and Welfare Committee?

Senator Fournier: No, I mean your Board of Trade itself.

Mr. Stegmayer: Oh, yes. I cannot answer for the Board, Senator Fournier.

Senator Fournier: Out of your 859 members, what is your attendance at these meetings?

Mr. Whynott: Senator, we have any number of meetings in a month. We may have one monthly meeting at which we would have anywhere from fifty to sixty members. We may have twenty-five meetings in a month with anywhere from four to five members up to twenty or twenty-five people at a meeting.

Of our 850 members we have approximately 250 members active on Committees.

Senator Fournier: Thank you.

The Chairman: Mr. Wood, you have done us a service and you have done the community a service by having the Board of Trade come in here as a Board and show your interest and your concern. Something of the activities have come to light. The Board of Trade has a role to play in the community because a large amount of its success depends upon the success of the community. You have presented your case. You have asked questions. I do not know whether we have given you any answers. You have given us some answers. In any event, we have tried to play it fair and give you some answers to some of your questions.

Thank you on behalf of the committee. We will adjourn now until 1:30 this afternoon when we will then hear the District Labour Council.

The committee adjourned.

Upon resuming at 1:30 p.m.

The Chairman: I will call the meeting to order. We now have the Saint John District Labour Council of the Canadian Labour Congress. The President, Mr. F. D. Hodges, is sitting on my right and is appearing with the brief and to respond to questions.

Mr. Frederick D. Hodges, President, Saint John District Labour Council of the Canadian Labour Congress: Mr. Chairman, senators,

this is the first time to my knowledge that the Saint John Labour Council has been a part of such an inquiry. I would like to say a few words on certain things that we have mentioned here. I will start with housing. We are in agreement that we should have more public housing and that the public housing should not be segregated but should be integrated with the rest of society. In other words, we should not have a group of rich people living in one segment of our city and the so-called public housing in another area. This is bad because of the educational system. The children in the schools have the same type of people all week long whereas in society at large they have to contend with all society, of whom they have no knowledge and with whom they have nothing in common. There is quite an objection in this area to this type of society.

We are strongly in favour of credit unions and co-ops. In this area we have a local consumers' co-op but I know, being a director of it, that it is mostly made up of those who make over \$10,000 or better. Too many of them are members of this consumers' co-op whereas the worker, who needs it most, goes elsewhere to buy his groceries and such.

We are quite in sympathy with the brief from the Home and School Association which was given this morning. We have been condemning the educational system for quite some time. We are not in sympathy with the type of educational system and the grading at the present time. We feel that a person should be educated or conditioned for all of his lifetime. The school education at the present time is an employment agency or a status symbol. We feel that education is something where a man or women will know how to live with himself as well as with his neighbour.

The labour movement is organized to bring the unorganized to the organized field. In this area we have trouble because of the so-called establishment and their power to put obstacles in our way; such things as ex parte injunctions under the Labour Relations Act, which in my estimation is not geared to the needs of the worker in this area.

I think that will be enough for the present time. I prefer to get on the hot seat and answer questions.

Senator Fournier: Thank you, Mr. Hodges. You mentioned you would be in the hot seat; I think you will be for a few minutes anyway.

On page 2 of your brief, the second paragraph, you say "Our Nation today is going

through a crisis and it is because of lack of leadership?". Are you sincere when you say our country lacks leadership?

Mr. Hodges: I am not talking about the political leadership. I am talking about leadership dedicated to the welfare of people.

Senator Fournier: I am not referring to political leadership. I mean leadership you find in all society?

Mr. Hodges: I am afraid I can't find it in this area or in Canada as a whole at this time.

Senator Fournier: We are getting into the political side now. Here is what you say in the briefs: "The political machinery required to operate or function during an election, plus the extraordinarily high cost of organizing any kind of political campaign, limits participations in our democratic government to all but a few."

Do you really know what makes a political campaign so expensive today?

Mr. Hodges: No.

Senator Fournier: You don't?

Mr. Hodges: No. Why should it be?

Senator Fournier: It is because people don't want to go to vote. You have to pay them to vote.

Mr. Hodges: There is something wrong with the system.

Senator Fournier: A great majority of the people you have to pay them to vote. This is a crime.

Mr. Hodges: Is it not against the law? I imagine you are speaking from experience sir.

Senator Fournier: I just bring this to your attention.

Mr. Hodges: I will remember that.

Senator Fournier: Then you say that the political campaign limits participation in our democratic government to a few. I know a little bit about politics and never to my knowledge has anybody been restricted in participating in any political campaign. Regardless of party it has always been open to anybody. Again the point is that you cannot find anybody unless you have the dollars to pay them.

Mr. Hodges: Don't people go into politics to win an election?

Senator Fournier: An awful lot don't care which side is going to win. It is how much they get. As long as they are going to be paid during the campaign.

Mr. Hodges: I am talking about the person that runs.

Senator Fournier: I am not talking about the individual. I want to come back to my point. I think this is a false statement. To my knowledge nobody has ever been restricted from joining a political party of his own views. The door is always open on either side and I hope it remains open.

Now we will get to the cool seat. How many people are paying rent in Saint John? Is it the great majority?

Mr. Hodges: I think in this area most people in Saint John City pay rent, 75 per cent.

Senator Fournier: Is the rent expensive compared to Moncton or Fredericton?

Mr. Hodges: Oh, yes.

Senator Fournier: More expensive than Fredericton or Moncton?

Mr. Hodges: In Moncton I don't know. Around here they pay \$100 or over, \$125 I think is average in Saint John. I could be wrong.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, I was impressed with the statement of the witness with respect to the support of the Home and School Association and their brief presented this morning. With respect to the section on education in your organization, do you have an Education Committee or Educational Council?

Mr. Hodges: Yes.

Senator Hastings: How often does it meet?

Mr. Hodges: We have an Educational Committee that meets whenever it is necessary.

Senator Hastings: How many times would have met in the last six months or in the last year?

Mr. Hodges: In the last year I would imagine about six times. Different units have their own educational schools. We have one at St. Francis and this year we have a Canadian Labour Congress school at McGill.

Senator Hastings: I wish to deal with Saint John.

Mr. Hodges: The people from Saint John go there, they go from elsewhere.

Senator Hastings: For education?

Mr. Hodges: Yes.

Senator Hastings: I am talking about education within the community. How often do you meet?

Mr. Hodges: About six times a year.

Senator Hastings: We had evidence this morning with respect to pre-employment classes at Simonds High School that had been discontinued. The witness said that worthwhile courses had been done away with that had been utilized by the students. They were done away with for budgetary reasons or some other reasons I failed to find out. These were Manual Training and Home Economics. With regard to these pre-employment classes did the Educational Committee...

Mr. Hodges: We didn't know anything about it, at least I didn't anyway.

Senator Hastings: You speak about involvement in the community. We have the Board of Trade and they knew nothing about it. I am not condemning you.

Mr. Hodges: This was in this other area.

Senator Hastings: The Simonds area.

Mr. Hodges: There is a rich section called Champlain Heights. I don't think you will find many organized workers living in Champlain Heights.

Senator Hastings: I am talking about involvement in the educational system of your City. The fact is a worthwhile course was discontinued which was being utilized by the underprivileged and poor in this high school. The Board of Trade knew nothing about it and you know nothing about it. This course is completely discontinued and no one cares.

Mr. Hodges: We may care now we know about it.

Senator Hastings: If we had not come here you would not know about it.

Mr. Hodges: We are happy you are here.

Senator Inman: On page 4 you are speaking about co-ops and you mention there is a

movement to discontinue them. I was wondering why or how did this movement start because we heard a lot about them in other places and that they are growing.

Mr. George Newell, Vice-President of the Saint John District Labour Council: Our points of view are based on the movement across Canada today to impose heavy taxation on the limited profit of the credit unions. Pressures we believe, from what we have been able to see, come from the banking circles, the Chambers of Commerce, who are opposed to the idea of credit unions and co-ops.

Senator Inman: I didn't think you were opposed to it. I was surprised to see this in the brief because it is contrary to what we have been hearing in other places.

The Chairman: Let us turn for a moment to Organization. How active is the labour movement here in New Brunswick?

Mr. Hodges: We try to organize as much as we can.

The Chairman: Have you had any success recently?

Mr. Hodges: Yes, we have success; not in the manner we like.

The Chairman: Who does the organizing?

Mr. Hodges: Each unit does its own. The Labour Council has organization of its own.

The Chairman: Who goes out to organize any movement?

Mr. Hodges: Whoever is interested in picking the groups up.

The Chairman: What do you mean by "picking the group up"?

Mr. Hodges: If a group of employees are interested somebody is contacted because, you know, we have to be very careful now that the Supreme Court has handed down a decision on the Baldwin Operating Engineers' case.

The Chairman: You can organize new groups or your own. They don't have to be part of yours, they can be separate and then join?

Mr. Hodges: Yes. We don't care as long as we get organized.

The Chairman: You say you are organized in this province to the extent of 21 per cent

of the workers. Now, the national average is 33 per cent. Why is your organizing less?

Mr. Hodges: There are more obstacles put in our way.

The Chairman: What obstacles would you have that the others would not have?

Mr. Hodges: Management.

The Chairman: Management does not like unions in other parts of Canada. They don't love them at all. They have the same obstacles. As a group what expenditures or what efforts do you make?

Mr. Hodges: You mentioned the word "expenditure". It costs more to organize in New Brunswick because there are fewer people per unit than in Ontario where you have a mass density of people.

The Chairman: Newfoundland is more highly organized. Maybe it is the lumber people.

Mr. Hodges: The sulphite people.

The Chairman: What is the Congress doing? What is your organization doing about organizing the poor?

Mr. Hodges: We haven't done anything to be proud about. It is only now since the last convention...

The Chairman: What help do you give to the other organizations, the tenant organizations and others?

Mr. Hodges: We have offered them help. They haven't told us specifically what they want from us.

The Chairman: Was that offered some time ago?

Mr. Hodges: No. The last month or so.

The Chairman: Their problem has been the same problem for some time and you people who are in the organizing business and understand the organizing business should have been out there long ago to help these people.

Mr. Hodges: I agree.

The Chairman: If you agree and I agree why was not something done a long time ago?

Mr. Hodges: Because others don't agree. It is your job and mine to convince them.

Senator Hastings: On page 6, Mr. Hodges, with respect to the news media you say that opinions and thoughts are controlled by the news media.

Recent discussion in our Legislature on Welfare payments was exploited by the news media and has turned workers against their very neighbours.

Would you enlarge upon this statement "exploitation by the news media"?

Mr. Hodges: What was meant there was at our last Convention we had a discussion on the White Paper and Social Welfare. Some of our delegates took the stand they should cut Welfare out altogether and some of us had to take the other side and convince the delegates and workers that Welfare is here and the people should have no stigma. After all they do read newspapers and they have TV's. After all some of the workers are very affluent.

Senator Hastings: This was an ordinary debate and a discussion and you say it was exploited by the news media. You had two opinions. Was it not fairly reported?

Mr. Hodges: The newspapers never report anything.

The Chairman: What he is saying is they reported the proceedings which consisted of members of the District Labour Council being opposed to welfare.

Mr. Hodges: At the convention.

Senator Hastings: You had a discussion on the pros and cons of Welfare and it was reported in the press. Was it not fairly reported? Did they report just one view?

Mr. Hodges: No, they reported both sides but the side that naturally gets attention is the one they want—Welfare is bad.

Senator Hastings: Is that the view of the press in New Brunswick?

Mr. Hodges: You better ask the press.

Senator Hastings: I will ask you. I would be interested in your view.

Mr. Hodges: From reading our local paper I could say "Yes".

Senator Fournier: You mentioned on page 4 the problems of the working mother. Like any of the briefs presented to us you commend nursery care centres. Now as a union man, a union leader, do you believe

that the married woman whose husband is making a good salary should be working or should be in the home looking after her children?

Mr. Hodges: To that question I would say I am against that.

Senator Fournier: Against what?

Mr. Hodges: The woman whose husband is making a sufficient salary to keep her should not be working. That is why it is so hard to organize.

Senator Fournier: And if the husband is not making a sufficient salary?

Mr. Hodges: Then as we say, day care centres should be established.

Senator Fournier: And would you blame society?

Mr. Hodges: We blame society. We are part of the society and therefore we have to blame ourselves; not for all of it but for some of it.

Senator Fergusson: I have one question on housing. There is a reference made on page 4. We know that we cannot provide adequate housing for our people without some help, some subsidization, but we also know and we have been told many times that there is a stigma attached to people who live in public housing. You say here on page 4:

Unless we are prepared to integrate subsidized or other type of low rental housing into our community we cannot erase the stigma.

Can you give us any idea how this could be done? When you refer to other types of low rental housing what do you mean?

Mr. Hodges: I disagree with you when you say we can't get enough housing. If we spend money for war we can have the same amount of money for housing. I don't accept that whatsoever.

Senator Fergusson: I didn't say we couldn't get it. I said we couldn't get it without subsidization.

Mr. Hodges: I don't care how you get it.

Senator Fergusson: Do you think you can do it without subsidization?

Mr. Hodges: It reminds me of welfare. You call it "Welfare" for the poor and "Subsidization" for the rich. It is the same thing—welfare—whatever name you call it. It is

incentive or subsidy to the rich and welfare to the poor.

Now to go back to housing, we say they should integrate it and we should not have one segment for the rich and one for the poor. We have one area in the south where they have a difficult time in getting good teachers. Now I was born in West Saint John and I came up in an all-white neighbourhood. I had the same teachers that the rich people had. Why can't the other segment of the City have the same type of integrated society? We all lived there, we didn't socially intermingle but we had the same teachers, the same churches and the same playgrounds. These people I grew up with we talked among one another, we talked the same language. We may not like one another and we don't belong to the same social clubs, I grant you that. There are certain clubs that are for all whites and not for union people. The trade union is not acceptable. We are not accepted, we are tolerated, they despise us. If they didn't need us to be the hewer of wood and the drawer of water—they don't want any worker. What do they want him for?

Senator Fergusson: This is what you think. Are you sure?

Mr. Hodges: I think, that is all. That is wrong too, you shouldn't think.

The Chairman: Who doesn't want you?

Mr. Hodges: Society, those who control our society.

The Chairman: Don't want the worker?

Mr. Hodges: They need them. Need and want are two different things.

The Chairman: You said they didn't want them and now you say those who control society need them. If they need them they want them to meet the need.

Mr. Hodges: Need and want are two different matters.

The Chairman: Let us get on.

Senator Fournier: On page 3 of your brief you mention "When we can find massive amounts of money for giant office buildings and for extensions to breweries..." You are not against private industry?

Mr. Hodges: Who?

Senator Fournier: You. This is your brief. You say shopping centres and extensions to

breweries and paper mills, extensions of dry docks. This is private industry. When I read this here I am under the impression you are against these extensions.

Mr. Hodges: We say if you can get the money for that you can get it for other things.

Senator Fournier: They don't get their money from the government. That is private industry.

Mr. Hodges: They get money for certain things.

Senator Fournier: They may get loans.

Mr. Hodges: Loans they never pay back.

The Chairman: Now, Mr. Hodges, I cannot do anything about you making statements but let's stick to the facts here. When you talk about a loan which is not paid back, I am not aware of any loans that are not paid back and which are made ordinarily by the government. If they make a loan to you, try and see if they will give you a housing loan or any other loan. It is in the same category. The question was asked: Are you opposed to private enterprise? You say "No".

Mr. Hodges: If it pays its own way.

The Chairman: A shopping centre pays its own way, and as far as I know the breweries pay their own way. There is no subsidization.

Senator Quart: On page 5 in the middle of paragraph 1 you say: "Our Labour Council therefore suggests that programs be established for our older citizens." Have you many recreation centres here for the senior citizens?

Mr. Newell: Recreational facilities are limited for the type of people or the group of people we are talking about, they are extremely limited. We have to some limited degree some facilities for senior citizens. In the brief what we submit to you is that senior citizens who are living on an extremely low level pension type there is nothing we have seen available to them except a park bench. We are simply saying to you that in their declining years there has to be something more valuable to them in our society for these people who have worked so hard to build our nation.

Senator Quart: Thank you. You go on to say:

It is hoped that the cost of transportation by bus, train or plane be set at half the normal adult structure at any time they desire and not to be used only to fill vacant seats when the transportation companies cannot find any other passengers, or to be placed on standby.

I think that is very important. Senior citizens cannot be ready to pick up and go at the last moment. Therefore I think that a special rate on the transportation facilities would be very much better. I think that would support your brief.

The Chairman: I think they have special rates for students.

Mr. Newell: Everything is based on standby.

The Chairman: Are we talking about local transportation?

Senator Hastings: Air transportation. I would agree with Senator Quart that it is a very worthwhile suggestion and the first time we have had it and we would congratulate you on it. Sell tickets on a regular basis.

Senator Quart: On your local buses do you have a rate for senior citizens?

Mr. Hodges: No.

Senator Quart: What about the theatres?

Mr. Hodges: Yes, specials.

The Chairman: We were talking about newspaper reports, and you said they had reported a meeting. Did I understand you to say that at a meeting of the Labour Council in the area here that members of that group voted against having welfare?

Mr. Hodges: No. This was at a discussion we had at the New Brunswick Federation of Labour Convention. It was a political night. No vote or anything of that nature.

The Chairman: You brought it up?

Mr. Hodges: It was on the White Paper.

The Chairman: Everybody is opposed to that. You know that! I understood you to say that you were talking about welfare, and that they were opposed to it if any of their money went for welfare.

Mr. Hodges: We had to change our opinion on welfare. We have changed some of their opinions on welfare, I hope.

Senator Inman: Do you have centres here for senior citizens where they can go in the evening and see TV?

Mr. Hodges: Three, I think, Senator Inman.

Mr. Reg. Saunders: There is one in East Saint John and one in the north end and one in the west side of the City where they can go and get together in a community spirit. It has been organized.

Senator Quart: Do they serve meals?

Mr. Saunders: From my understanding they have little lunches, a little get-together. They do not have too much money to work with here. The money is not available like in Toronto.

The Chairman: You are a member of the congress?

Mr. Saunders: Yes, I am, I think I am a delegate.

The Chairman: You are a member of the union?

Mr. Saunders: Yes.

The Chairman: I imagine that members who have been members of the union find themselves in the homes from time to time, do they?

Mr. Saunders: I think the union members do go around to visit.

Mr. Hodges: Mr. Saunders lives down there.

The Chairman: Mr. Saunders, Senator Quart asked you whether they had meals and other things and you said you didn't know. Mr. Hodges tells me you live in that area.

Mr. Saunders: I live, sir, in an area of subsidized housing. As I say, they have formed three or four groups, three that I know of. They do have meetings regularly once a month and they go for shows and they do exactly what the Senator has asked me. Now we are in a disparity area and funds are limited in this part of New Brunswick. They do the best they can for them.

Mrs. Catherine Gale: I might be able to give you some information. They have centres for dropping in for recreation and a cup of tea and so on. They have also organized bus tours in the summer taking them on week-end trips and to the beach for picnics. There is nowhere that they serve actual meals but

they have lunches for special occasions. The YMCA has a Senior Citizen Club that meets once a week and it has a program with refreshments for special occasions like birthdays and so on. This is an area which has been slow in progressing in our City but it has developed and at this point has quite a good program even though it has a long way to go. In fact the senior citizens in the Province are organized to the point where they have had a day long convention this summer in one of the church facilities and they drew up all kinds of things. I think they even have a Constitution. They are well organized in Moncton too and I think you will be hearing from them. This is something that is coming along quite well.

Mr. Joseph Drummond, Human Rights Commissioner, NSACP: I am quite surprised to hear about these senior citizens because we have a certain segment of our community in the City, some who came with the Loyalists, and they have been grossly neglected in the senior citizen activities. Those are the senior members of the Black community.

The Chairman: That is all contained in the brief. You will have your time to present that.

I happen to know a great number of Labour Councils across the country, and almost all of them have a committee that is devoted to looking after the old folks' homes. They make visits and report back. Would you not have that sort of committee in your organization here?

Mr. Hodges: That is the first time I knew the Labour Council had one. Of course I don't know them all.

The Chairman: Let us talk about the minimum wage. What is the minimum wage in this province?

Mr. Hodges: Do you want the Minimum Wage Act?

The Chairman: What is it?

Mr. Hodges: I will put that to Mr. Craig. You would have to have the Act.

The Chairman: Who knows it?

Mr. Bill Craig, Canadian Labour Congress: The minimum wage is \$1.10 for a factory worker and \$1.00 for service like restaurants and hotels.

The Chairman: Men and women the same, \$1.10 and \$1.00?

Mr. Craig: Of course there is the federal Minimum Wage Act.

The Chairman: I am talking about the provincial. We are aware of the federal.

Mr. Hodges: The minimum wage doesn't cover everything.

Mr. Craig: It doesn't cover domestics and that sort of thing.

The Chairman: It doesn't cover domestics in other parts of Canada. The exemptions are what makes it ineffective. \$1.65 is the minimum wage federally.

Mr. Craig: In some instances it is \$1.25, in mining and lumbering at least.

The Chairman: The minimum wage has been moving up somewhat in some of the other provinces. Is there any prospect at all for it moving here?

Mr. Craig: It is under review by the Minimum Wage Board now.

The Chairman: Do you know how it compares with next door?

Mr. Craig: Nova Scotia is zoned in different zones and different rates in each zone. I don't think it is any higher in the zone that has the highest rate.

Senator Fournier: What is your working week?

Mr. Craig: Forty-eight hours, time and a half after that.

The Chairman: Mr. Hodges, thank you very much for taking the pains and the concern to present a brief to indicate your interest in the people who are poverty stricken. It has been our experience that where we find working people highly organized we seldom find them in poverty. That is why we have asked the questions, so that you will do what you can in the way of organizing these people to help them get out of poverty. Thank you very much.

The Chairman: We have a brief from Mr. Alan Martin, President of the Students Representative Council of U.N.B. at Saint John. He will explain how he came here and make a short statement indicating what is contained in the brief.

Mr. Alan Martin, President of Students Representative Council of U.N.B.: Mr. Chairman, fellow senators—I shouldn't say "fellow" I am not one yet! Ladies and gentlemen. Although I was approached through the Students Representative Council I am not presenting this as someone involved with the Council. I am presenting it as an individual university student. Hopefully my views will represent that and if the students across Canada do the same they can present some sort of cross-section of how university students feel about the idea of poverty in Canada and the problems it presents.

In my introduction in the brief I stated that not being involved in any welfare or aid group that my ideas and my proposals present a much wider base than other briefs which are geared toward individual group aims. I still stick by this because I feel this is lacking in all the briefs. They are presenting one small aim in their brief and I think a more general type of brief is needed.

When initially deciding on the scope of the brief the first question I faced was how can such a rich nation as Canada have a poverty problem of any great magnitude. If we looked at the countries around the world like Biafra and Pakistan and China we must realize that no one in Canada is poor by world standards. Then you try and tell a person who is living in the slums this. You try and tell him this and he will approach you with this sort of approach: you look at what you have and you look at what I have and then try and tell us we are both not poor. I agree fully and this is now I think we should meet the context of our approach: the fact we are dealing with poverty in Canada, not poverty in the world.

In this context we must again question: Why does Canada have a poverty problem? I think the key to the problem is environment. If we could only say that every Canadian has equal chances of success and that all Canadian citizens enjoy the same basic privileges how easy it would be and how much it would ease our souls. Yet how can a slum dwelling family whose parents have not finished high school and who are now only periodically employed ever raise a child that has an equal chance with a child whose parents are college educated and the family is planted in the middle or upper class of Canada. It would take a poorer child of superior intelligence, desire and stamina to achieve the position that the middle-class child achieved at birth.

This environment creates a wall around the poverty class, sealing them off from society, a

wall fortified with ignorance on both sides. It is ignorance on the side of the middle and upper class in that they hardly know the problems that the poor are meeting day to day. On the other side the poverty stricken are retarded in their surroundings in the fact that they will never have an equal chance and it will take a superior person from their environment to have the same chance as a person in the middle or upper class.

My proposals are, I would say, fairly basic and really some of them are involved in things I have seen happen in Saint John itself. I think this wall must be broken down by the enlightenment of the public to the poverty problem and most important self-help groups which the poverty stricken can create through themselves and thus alleviate the problem through themselves rather than having some outsider come in and do it for them.

My emphasis is on the fact that if we are to do away with the permanent poverty class we must combat the environment or social setting that creates it. This must not be done by straight economic programs, such as the guaranteed annual income unless it is supplemented by programs in the field of education and recreation. This is what I have dealt with, the fields of education and recreation. I think I will go through some of the proposals in my brief.

There are many agencies which are educating the poor in programs which could be more beneficial if they were supported more substantially by government. Many could be self-help agencies which, once established, would offer minimal cost to government. In Saint John the poor have been encouraged to organize themselves through self-help groups formed in the South end and the Crescent Valley areas. The plan should be supported to the extent of establishing community centres where a number of services could be offered. First of all trained personnel, some trained social workers with others merely welfare recipients who are recognized community leaders, could act as supervisors and resource personnel. Day courses for mothers could be offered in much needed subjects as birth control, family care, family budgeting or whatever courses the people want or need. The basis behind such a program is that if a person is learning and communicating with others the feeling of pessimism will soon disappear. At the same time a day nursing centre could be in operation to alleviate

mothers of their burden with pre-school children.

The purposes of such a centre are fairly obvious. First of all the low-income group is becoming organized in a self-help type group which would create a much-needed voice for them in community affairs. Also a community centre would establish a community entity or feeling to combat the feelings of neglect and alienation these people often encounter.

Another proposal in the line of education is expanding the use of night schools and technical schools. At present an individual who is lacking a basic education, such as grade school, or has no specific trade, will be subsidized by the Federal government to enable him to go to technical school. I don't think they are fulfilling one basic need. That is the fact that night courses or courses offered to adults in the field of economics, legal rights of the individual, and this sort of thing, should be intended to educate the person beyond the point of employment. The fact is that one of the things sadly lacking in most slum areas or areas of just low income is the fact that the environment is not creating a good atmosphere for a child to learn in so any person involved in the low income bracket is now learning for the one basic reason—to get a job. There is another need—just the idea of education for the sake of education and this would create a better atmosphere for the child.

Now I come to the idea of recreation and the lack of it. There are three proposals I brought forth. One was through watching what is going on in Saint John area and the idea of drop-in centres where the centre is run by the youth and the programs planned by youth. This has been done through the work of Ron Brothers and I feel this is a very good program when you think that frustration in school is at its peak during this age group. I think the idea of a Drop-In centre where they are creating their own programs is very beneficial. Another program designed for the younger children is the day camp and resident camping.

Once again I will quote from the brief, at page 8:

Although programs of this sort are being carried out at present their scope is quite small. For instance last year was the first year a resident camp was offered completely free of charge specifically to children between the ages of 9 and 12 years whose low-income background

would otherwise have prevented them from attending. It involved about 100 young boys. Much more of this work is needed. It offers an ideal chance for a poor child to get away from the crowded urban setting, to enjoy optimum chance for not only recreation, but also to break down the feeling of frustration and restlessness these children often have in the city. If enough resources were offered every child could have a chance to attend camp for a few weeks while the rest of the summer they could attend day camp and other recreation programs as are carried on in any urban area. Yet the key to the success of such programs is that enough qualified staff with enough adequate resources to work with are maintained for them.

My final idea is for the working youth. That is the working youth who probably dropped out of school between the ages of 16 and 21 and really does not have enough qualifications to maintain a proper standard of living by Canadian standards. There is a lack of program for them. The idea for this program comes from the universities across the nation where the trend is toward co-op housing. Co-op housing offers cheaper accommodations than residence housing because the bulk of the work is done by the residents. At the same time the residents are providing a social function for themselves by the mere fact that there are a number of them living and working together. This idea could be used to bring together the young worker (possibly a drop-out who is not making enough to sustain an adequate living, with other like himself). Co-operatively they could discuss mutual problems, offer each other moral support and probably be more equipped to survive the rat-race of Western society. Like the community centre, night courses could be offered to enable the residents to better themselves or just to learn some basics which would be of some use to them. The basic thought is that as a group they can help each other while as individuals they are often helpless.

That pretty well concludes my proposals but my basic thought is that in presenting this brief I am not trying to present the hard cold facts of what my proposals are. I think the major problem is in the environment and you are going to propose any programs you

should not forget about the fact that most problems are derived from the environment of the poverty stricken and if you are going to try and solve the problem, if it is to be solved at all, you must deal with it in terms of their environment.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Martin, I would like to thank you for your brief and I no doubt speak for every member of the Committee. We have found that one of the greatest tasks we have to perform is to educate people and if we can be as successful as you have been we will have succeeded and I hope we can.

I would like to deal with one of your proposals, the Drop-In Centre. I didn't catch the name of the organization.

The Chairman: Senator Hastings, the next brief deals with the expert on Drop-In Centres. Perhaps we could leave it to them.

Senator Hastings: Could I ask the witness a question? What counselling does he receive here that he would not receive at a school?

Mr. Martin: At school, as I have already said, the frustration is at its peak because at that time in school the school is geared to one thing and one thing only and that is education through books, through teaching, and the curriculum is so rigid there is no room for private counselling. I have experienced this myself. It was my frustration in school at this time, I would say between Grade 6 and Grade 10. This is when it is at its peak because you are feeling you want something more than learning through books at this time and yet that is what you are faced with day-to-day in school life. That is all you are being faced with.

Senator Hastings: What do you get there?

Mr. Martin: At the Drop-In Centre you are not faced with a rigid program; you are allowed to make your own program; you go at your own speed and do whatever you feel like that particular day. I am saying that school is too rigid at that time for any person involved in school. They need some sort of outlet for their recreational needs.

Senator Hastings: Are your clients at the Drop-In Centre there because of frustration or is it psychological problems?

Mr. Martin: I don't know. I haven't been involved with a Drop-In Centre. I think that more of a question for someone who is an expert.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Martin, if I were a complete stranger not living in Canada and I read your brief I would be under the impression we were doing very poor job in education. Being a Canadian living in Canada I think it is little better than what you have presented to us.

Mr. Martin: You must realize, Senator Fournier, I say we are dealing with Canada. We are not dealing with the world. Certainly our technical standards are very high in the world. We are dealing with people in relation to people in Canada. We are dealing with Canadians in relation to Canadians. I am saying that our technical standards of the low income are very low in relation to other Canadians; not in the world.

Senator Fournier: You say here on page 6 of your brief: "Both technical school and night school courses should be offered to adults in fields of economics, legal rights of an individual, etcetera."

Now, you must know that not only millions but billions of dollars are spent in Canada to build vocational schools and one of the problems that some of the schools are facing now is not the building, it is not the money, it is the interest of the people to go to these schools. There is always a problem filling up the night schools. The availability is there, the schools are there, the teachers are there, and the people won't go unless they are being paid. In the daytime you have to organize classes and if you don't pay their transportation they don't go to school. They don't want to learn something they want to go to school because they draw a salary.

Mr. Martin: This is what I feel is wrong. I feel the night schools and technical schools are failing to fulfill a need. The courses are just the basic idea of education and not the idea of training someone for a particular place in the industrial society. That is not what I am trying to get at. I say the night schools and technical schools are already fulfilling that need and if someone wants to do this he has the proper chance. I am saying they are not helping to create an environment in the child's home that is good for learning. If you have read this quotation it states that the low income homes have relatively few resources in the area of education. This is what is lacking more than anything else. If you are going to provide night schools and technical schools I think you should create in the adult's mind, since he will be the major socializing agent of a child, that education is

something beyond the job role. The fact is education is something someone should be doing all his life and you should never be satisfied with the education you have. The fact is education is not something for the idea of gaining a better job but the idea of bettering yourself.

Senator Fournier: Which leads to a better job?

Mr. Martin: They go together but the technical schools and the night schools concentrate on one thing and leave out the other and the fact is the child is brought up thinking of going to school and getting a job and that is it. You go to school, you get the job and if you are satisfied you don't try and educate yourself for the rest of your life because you have the job you want. That is not my idea of education.

Senator Fournier: I don't see it exactly as you do.

The Chairman: Do lawyers and accountants and others who are professional continue their education, as you suggest, throughout the rest of their lives?

Mr. Martin: Some certainly do. They continue their education in their particular field.

The Chairman: Do the men we train to be carpenters and bricklayers, or whatever we train them to be, prove themselves as they continue with their work and as they grow older? And do they do a better job in the same way that a lawyer or doctor does?

Mr. Martin: Yes; but often lawyers and doctors become involved in community work, in community affairs and learn how to better themselves as a citizen. I don't think that in the technical schools...

The Chairman: We have had the District Labour Council here and they became involved in poverty. They are always involved in the problems in the cities. We have had far more representation from labour groups and poor people than we have had from professional people before our Poverty Committee although we invited them all.

Mr. Martin: I think your basis is geared towards these people and I certainly am grateful to see something like this because I feel up to now they haven't had a proper voice. I feel the major voice in all Canadian community affairs is not from the lower class. This is what is lacking, environment.

The Chairman: Let us not fall into the term "lower class". You mean "lower income".

Mr. Martin: I am talking about the lower economic class.

Senator Fournier: There is something here I don't agree with. In our school systems in New Brunswick and Quebec and almost everywhere whether you are in the low income group or a millionaire you have the same privilege, you go to the same school on the same buses and you play in the same yard.

Mr. Martin: But you don't go home to the same environment.

Senator Fournier: There is a little difference there. I don't think we should draw a line too heavily between these two and build up a wall. The wall is not there at the moment. I know it is different when they go home and that is most unfortunate but in the school hours everything is on the same ground.

The Chairman: He says he thinks there is something that can be done. Go ahead, Mr. Martin, you have the floor. You tell us.

Mr. Martin: All I am saying is that we have equality in schools but you don't have it at home. You should be trying to change the environment the child is brought up in.

The Chairman: How?

Mr. Martin: I have tried to put it forward...

The Chairman: You have said education and recreation. What do you mean by changing the environment by education? You describe that to us.

Mr. Martin: Well, I have been trying to but I guess I haven't done a very good job. I think I had better read this.

The Chairman: No, don't read it.

Mr. Martin: The quotation is the whole point.

The Chairman: You mean from the sociologist?

Mr. Martin: Yes.

The Chairman: Oh, we have much better quotations than that. We have had live experts, the very best in Canada, before us and they have talked about the same thing

What they have been saying to us is that we have to take the child in the home almost at 3 years of age and we have to start educating the child so that by the time it gets to kindergarten it is not behind the others and doesn't lose any years or time along the way. In the poorer schools you have to have better teachers and better facilities rather than poorer. That is what we have been told by others. How would you like to change that?

Mr. Martini: I would add one thing. You have to have better educated parents.

The Chairman: The parents are out earning their living. The man is a hard-working man. How do you convince him that he should be educated? He is a busy man with five children and working as a truck driver or carpenter and he is tired at the end of the day. How do you improve him?

Mr. Martin: You try to create some sort of stimulus and even though he is tired he has some feeling that he wants to go out and go to night school and learn for the sake of his job.

The Chairman: The people who do that are small majority.

Senator McGrand: How do you reach him? What is your technique?

Mr. Martin: I have no technique. I am not an expert. I am not sure of the mechanics of the thing. I think I have recognized the problem. The fact is environment and where is the environment lacking? It is lacking in the fact that the education is not high enough. As to the mechanics I am as lost as someone off the street.

Senator Inman: On page 4 you speak about such programs as "Guaranteed Annual Income" which is not the answer in itself... On page 5 you say: "The answer is education—education in the field of welfare and low-income living."

You emphasize the need of education. Do you feel the welfare system of today is very inadequate?

Mr. Martin: I am afraid I don't know enough about the welfare system to judge whether it is adequate or inadequate. When I am talking about education in the field of welfare and low-income living I am talking about a person who has always lived on a basic subsistence and he will never be able to live with it unless he is properly trained in the way to budget and that sort of thing.

Family budgeting is a need that I think should be fulfilled. Right now there are only a certain number of resources that people living on low income have and sometimes I don't think they are used to their maximum. If it were possible that some people who had been in the same situation could act as teachers in some way or another to provide knowledge for those people so they could better use their resources I think this would be a much needed program.

Senator Inman: University students are really concerned with world conditions and with the great unrest and stability how do you think they feel about it?

Mr. Martin: One of the basic problems in the universities is the fact we are saturated with so many problems; we are saturated with pollution and saturated with this and that. Usually you concentrate on one thing and possibly some people would be very concerned about the poverty problem whereas others will really not be concerned at all. They will be concentrating their attention on something else.

Senator Inman: Do you think that students find it hard to know where they are going or where they are going? Are they concerned about world conditions and things changing from one day to another? Years ago a person 20 years of age knew what he was going to be or what he was going to do. I think that today some are still undecided. Why is this? Is this on account of the world conditions?

Mr. Martin: World conditions, yes. I think the idea that things are so unstable means you have instability in your thoughts. You cannot feel if you make a decision now it is going to stick for very long. If I make a decision on my life right now as to what I am going to be and stick to that maybe in 10 years I am going to be obsolete. You feel sort of unstable. I think that is the problem concerning a lot of students.

Senator Fournier: What happens to you if you don't make a decision and wait another ten years?

Mr. Martin: Probably I'll become a permanent college student. There are some of these.

Senator Quart: May I ask a very personal question? Have you ever been a Boy Scout, Mr. Martin?

Mr. Martin: I was a Cub and got to Boy Scouts and I gave up.

Senator Quart: You seem to have a dedication and concern for things in general. Maybe when you were a Cub you did gain some of that concern for helping others.

Mr. Martin: I think my involvement in that is only one small part. If I gained it it was because of what I have been involved in through this working with students. I have been involved with students for quite a while and I feel this is where I have gained the concerns that I have.

Senator Quart: You mentioned that you presented this brief as an individual. Did you consult any students about this and do you feel there are many other students in the U.N.B. who would probably join you in some movement for betterment?

Mr. Martin: I think they need to be motivated. That is the basic thing with any university student. As I said before you are saturated through the media with so many problems and so many aspects that to be really motivated you have to be supersaturated. You have to have personal contact with the problem before you are concerned with the problem. If you are going to have university students involved in the problem of poverty you will have to have them faced with it in direct contact rather than just through reading a book because we are saturated with that already. We are facing problems every day in college life so another problem won't bother us too much unless we are faced with it.

Senator Quart: You mention camping in your brief. There is a very large camp at Lac Aux Trois Saumons, which is very well operated. I happen to know the director of the camp. Many students come there as monasteries during the summer just for their food and lodging. Do you know of many across Canada who do this?

Mr. Martin: No. The only experience I was involved with was as a counsellor at the camp I mentioned in the brief. That was the reason why I mentioned it in the brief because I saw a great need for more things like this. I saw that the children involved in it were actually getting something out of it.

Senator McGrand: I really want to congratulate you on this brief. It pleases me very much that a person of your age put so much thought into it. You are a New Brunswicker, are you?

Mr. Martin: Yes.

Senator McGrand: You say at the bottom of the first page "The problems and attitudes of the poor of our country?" Most people in their briefs have brought out the problems of their area. Are you thinking of Saint John, New Brunswick or the whole of Canada?

Mr. Martin: I am thinking of Canada although I base my views and ideas on what I have seen in Saint John and what I have read.

Senator McGrand: This is your observation post?

Mr. Martin: Yes. I have to use something as an observation post.

Senator McGrand: At the bottom of page 2 you say "In Canada the poverty level has risen three-fold in the last 60 years." That is since 1910. I remember that period very well that was in the horse and buggy days. At that period we had very few labour saving devices; technology was very limited; automation was unknown; production, as a rule, did not equal the demand; education at that time was little more than the three R's; high school graduations were limited; university education was almost reserved for the well-to-do families. Yet there was not the great poverty at that time as compared to today.

Poverty has increased a great deal. With all this technology and this newer education and all the avenues that have been developed in educational facilities and technical training, what is your opinion as to why poverty increases as education goes up and labour saving devices go up? You are quite a philosopher, would you give me your opinion on that?

Mr. Martin: I would say the fact is that we have shown that poverty is not merely an economic problem and that it is a social and psychological problem. Even though the economy can be an expanding economy and creating new technology and changes the poverty won't be alleviated because of this. The social problem still exist and the psychological problems that have been bred through the years even though the economy is expanding.

Senator McGrand: On page 4 you mention the urban poverty problem and in the next two or three lines you say "The urban poor in Canada". You seem to put an emphasis on the urban poor. What connection do you see between the urban poor and the rural poor rural poverty and urban poverty?

Mr. Martin: I think the rural poverty is something which is not as acute as urban poverty. This is my own view. In a rural setting one can be poor in wealth and material things and still be just as well off as someone much more affluent.

Senator McGrand: As we travelled around Canada and got to Toronto and Montreal we found the poor who are their problem are Maritimers who have come up from the Maritime Provinces and from rural Canada. If you were here in Saint John I think you would find a great many people in the poverty level who have a rural background. Why do they try to escape if conditions could be better? You think perhaps they are better in the country? Why do they try and run away from that and come into this problem of urban poverty?

Mr. Martin: It is a fact that it is the trend today, the whole trend of society today is towards urbanization. The rural society is being slowly squeezed out by the urban setting. You take Ontario, a hundred years ago the majority of Ontario was a rural setting. The majority of Ontario residents were rural.

Senator McGrand: So was it in New Brunswick.

Mr. Martin: Yes. Although in New Brunswick the trend is towards urban. In Ontario is actually one megalopolis. You can travel most completely across Ontario and not really hit a rural area. You will find suburbs in cities but not hit much of a rural area.

Senator McGrand: Natural resources around in our nation and our per capita income is among the highest in the world. How do you tie together this poverty we are talking about and the fact that our per capita income is one of the highest in the world? I am not trying to pin you down, I just want your opinion. How do you work this out?

Mr. Martin: Once again you are talking about what I was trying to point out. That is it in the world we are a very affluent nation. In Pakistan or in China...

Senator McGrand: Compared with Pakistan?

Mr. Martin: Yes. In China, or any person involved in one of these less affluent countries would probably feel very fortunate to be a Canadian and yet why don't all Canadians feel fortunate?

Senator McGrand: Would you say that we were affluent as compared to Scandinavia or New Zealand? They have far less resources than we have and yet they have less poverty.

Mr. Martin: The whole idea of the economy is altogether different. For instance, we are a more industrially oriented economy, much more industrially oriented.

Senator McGrand: Well, I would not say that. I think they take far greater advantages of their natural resources than we do.

The Chairman: You said something about poverty, something about not being able to judge poverty unless we face it. Did you say that or did I take you out of context?

Mr. Martin: I don't recall it.

The Chairman: All right. Speaking about poverty you said it was a social problem. Do you realize that the social measures passed by the government in this country are as good as any and better than those of very many other countries? We have attempted to meet our obligations through social measures. Where have we failed, as you say?

Mr. Martin: I don't think we have failed in that sense. I think we should not be satisfied with what we have. As a country we are very well off but I don't think we should rest on our laurels.

The Chairman: We are speaking now of the segment of the country, 20 per cent of the population, who are living in what we consider poverty. You were asked about this by the doctor. You indicated in the brief that we had a very high average income, gross national product. You said we had failed socially.

Mr. Martin: I don't know if we failed in our social advance. I think in the urban setting we have failed in our social advance because of the fact you see people coming out of the urban setting and they really are not equipped to meet the needs of modern-day society; people coming out of the urban slums. The fact is it is not an economic problem, it is a matter of a social problem because they just don't have the equipment to deal with change radically. Their social background has not trained them to cope with that radical change.

The Chairman: But they are normal people with a normal understanding and normal reactions, are they not?

Mr. Martin: Probably normal from the outset but I am saying that environment

retards a person's basic knowledge, basic functions as a human being, to the point you are behind other people. It is not the fact you were not born into this but it is the fact you were socialized by your family that actually was not on the same level as some other family in the middle class area.

The Chairman: If that assumption is correct what hope is there for us to save the children of those who are poverty stricken, in the sense that you present it? If we cannot do too much for the adults, we can do a great deal for the children. From what you say what hope is there we will do anything for them since they were poverty imbued?

Mr. Martin: This is where I try to bring out my proposals and try to alleviate the problems. Maybe they don't offer very good solutions. The whole idea is the fact that the child is brought up by parents who do not have a proper education to equip him for modern-day society. We have been concentrating on the education of the child and we have proper educational standards. It is the fact that the adult has the lack of education and if we are trying to alleviate the problem we should try and upgrade the standards of the adults, the parents of the poverty stricken children. This is the way I feel.

The Chairman: When you get to be about 40 years of age, try going back to school under your own terms and find how hard it is to pick up. It is very nice to talk about educating these people or offering them opportunities for education, but try it sometime and see how difficult it is.

Mr. Martin: I imagine it would be very hard. I have never been involved outside of education. I have been educated all my life, I have been in an educating institution all my life.

The Chairman: Mr. Martin, we are very happy that you presented the brief, that we had this conversation with you and that you took the time to show an interest and concern. Unfortunately we have had too few briefs from university students or university groups. When we asked them why, they said that the subject did not have enough sex appeal in it. I can't understand why pollution should be more appealing than poverty, but there you are! That was one of the reasons we welcomed you. You have given us some thought. You had guts to come up and discuss this with people who know something about

the problem. You did very well, and for that I thank you.

The Chairman: The next brief is from the Saint John Y.M.C.A. Sitting next to me is Mr. Jason Paikowsky, who is a university student. Beside him is Mr. Gary Curran, Program Manager, and he is also a university student. This is a relatively new and novel idea being tried out. Would you please go ahead.

Mr. Jason Paikowsky, University Student: Mr. Chairman, senators, ladies and gentlemen. This afternoon we are going to discuss briefly the concept of drop-in centres. Drop-in centres are relatively new in this country, a new concept, and we feel that this afternoon we have a very good opportunity to discuss with you their role and what their role is in relation to disadvantaged youth.

We feel that disadvantaged youth are economically separated from other youth of their age and background and do not have access to the same outlets of recreation and enjoyment as youth of higher income families. We feel that a culturally, socially and economically depleted environment may force the disadvantaged youth to seek outlets of aggression which will make subconscious feelings of resentment build up because of his environment. We term these acts as a result of anti-social behaviour patterns. However we seem to feel a middle-class life vouchsafes conformity and conformity to the disadvantaged youth becomes impossible when the element of conformity are non-existent to these kids. We feel that here is where drop-in centres can find their purpose.

Disadvantaged youth need to communicate their fears, their problems and thoughts with someone who understands their needs. Drop-in centres can provide this contact potential but it must be maximized. In other words, the drop-in centres must be person-oriented rather than facility-oriented. To merely provide facilities would be analogous to building a log cabin without a fire-place, for warmth and friendship must pervade the atmosphere.

In the brief we have discussed the philosophy behind the implementation of drop-in centres but we feel we should make a number of points about them. Much of what has been written has been mainly stated before by sociologists who have appeared before the Committee and there are many briefs which have discussed the sociological implications of poverty. Let us discuss a few of the essential points.

A drop-in centre should provide a place for disadvantaged youth operated by those young people for their peers. By providing youth with a place of their own, there will not occur a subjection to the whims of others in authority, for example, police, restaurant owners, etcetera. In a drop-in centre social skills can be developed, a sense of belonging, a sense of accomplishment, and a sense of worth through the operation of the drop-in centre. A very important function of the drop-in centre can be to foster inter-personal relationships between the youth involved, especially in a society such as ours where these relationships are becoming increasingly difficult to mould. Disadvantaged youth need help. They need the help of concerned, middle-class citizens and perhaps drop-in centres are the place where these polarized sectors of our society can meet and become one.

My colleague Gary is going to spend just a few minutes discussing the main problems we have in our drop-in centres.

Mr. Gary Curran, University Student: Despite the fact that drop-in centres are new we have already encountered many problems in running them. These fall under five general headings.

The first one is staff. Saint John lacks trained and experienced personnel to operate drop-in centres. Lack of training both in the way of how to operate the drop-in centres, how to administer them, and how to communicate with the youth, and in a frustrated effort for both the youth and the staff because there is no communication to solve problems.

A second staff problem lies in the fact that staff have two masters; their employers, be they government or private agency, and the group which they intend to serve.

Thirdly, the staff member is forced to spend his time improperly, not with the youths who he is supposed to serve but rather involved with filling out administrative forms and making sure attendance figures are high.

Secondary is finance. Too often a drop-in centre must operate programs solely to make money. Thus staff members again have time taken from them and disadvantaged youth cannot afford to attend these events. The end result for the poverty stricken is alienation from the drop-in centre and destruction of the total concept.

The third area is support groups. Support groups are those persons to whom staff are

responsible, who provide funds and back-up services. In other words, government and private agencies are the employers of those working in drop-in centres.

Firstly, when erratic behaviour emerges, these groups become reluctant to continue operation and either close facilities or impose stringent rules, resulting in real problems with those attending the centre, i.e. those who have trust and faith in its operation. A middle-class bias is forced on the centre's operation and this renders the goals of the centre unobtainable. Support groups often measure the effectiveness of the centre in unacceptable terms, that is in relation to numbers passing through the machine, proper behaviour, etcetera, rather than personal success of participants, and as a result are satisfied with the wrong results.

There is a lack of coordination in this city between different agencies providing drop-in centres. Too many people are doing the same thing improperly.

Administration. Drop-in centres are structured so that they only operate when staff are available thus hindering an on-going process. This results in the centre operating only for a small portion of the day and leaving youth on the street during the rest of the day. During the hours when the drop-in centre is not operating we have developed a street-corner society.

Presently drop-in facilities are located in church basements, Y.M.C.A.'s and schools. Disadvantaged youth, unaccustomed to these more affluent surroundings, or who may resent these institutions for a variety of reasons, feel uncomfortable in the and hence are reluctant to attend drop-ins in these areas.

The last problem is community support. Since there is no guiding body for drop-in centres there has been a failure in making the community aware of the goals, methods of operations and problems encountered. When difficulties arise, or when results aren't attained rapidly, an outraged community demands changes without understanding their ramifications. This lack of communication will also hinder the internal growth of the drop-in centre. Drop-in centres need the commitment of the community, and this can be only attained through an attitudinal change and increased empathy. This ends this part of the report and Jason will go on with the recommendations.

Mr. Paikowsky: Senators, we feel there are five areas in which we would like to make recommendations:

- Physical location of facilities
- Staff training and programming
- Improved administration of facilities
- Acquisition of funds
- Support groups and general community awareness.

We recommend that drop-in facilities be provided in the slum areas of the community. As Gary pointed out the kids feel uncomfortable when they have to leave and come into more affluent surroundings. It would be like me having tea with the Prime Minister. I would not know how to act. I would feel very uncomfortable.

The Chairman: He wouldn't!

Mr. Paikowsky: A staff training program should be implemented utilizing the resources at hand in the community, that is educators, guidance counsellors, psychologists and sociologists. Training programs should be held every three months to ensure that staff are aware of new techniques of solving problems, group maintenance and performance, and that they have a chance to discuss problems they have encountered in the drop-in centres.

In the area of administration we feel that the drop-in centre should ideally operate from 9:00 in the morning until midnight with a minimum of staff there continuously. We recommend that the centre operate 12 months a year because of the wide spectrum of youth who will be attending.

In the area of acquisition of funds we recommend that the Department of Youth of New Brunswick grant to the drop-in centres funds which will be budgeted by the administrator for a year's operation. We have found in other areas when you start asking people for money they start setting conditions on the funds. We feel a support group should be formed of interested citizens in the community to act as a resource for the drop-in centre and to foster improved community-drop-in centre relations. They will budget money wisely. These are the people who know how to set up programs.

The administrator of the drop-in centre will be hired by and will relate to the advisory group. The advisory group will be aware, however, that the drop-in centre will remain in the hands of the youth for it is youth to whom this brief is dedicated.

Now I am available for questioning.

The Chairman: Let us deal with attendance for a minute. When did you start the drop-in centre?

Mr. Curran: We have been operating the Universal Axle since the 1st of July, one month.

The Chairman: What acceptance have you had?

Mr. Curran: We have a thousand members now, which is one of our problems. This is hindering us helping people we should be. The membership excludes a certain class of people, people who do not have the money and people who do not feel comfortable belonging to an organization. Often we have people who are members who are only dance members and we are effectively cutting out a certain segment of the population, which is one of our problems.

The Chairman: Well, if you improve a man's dancing you are helping him, aren't you?

Mr. Curran: Very often we are completely dealing with the middle class. It is the middle class people who have the money to come and go to a dance.

The Chairman: What do you charge for membership?

Mr. Curran: Fifty cents for a membership.

The Chairman: That is not prohibitive, is it?

Mr. Curran: Not really. Again you find people knowing this is an organization backed by the Y.M.C.A. in the recreation department and the stigma of these operations keep these people from joining.

The Chairman: The stigma of what? Of the organization?

Mr. Curran: Often the Y.M.C.A. has a middle-class attitude and this is one of the problems. They are pushed with middle-class attitudes down their back and they are tired of it.

The Chairman: Who is being pushed?

Mr. Curran: When they come to an organization such as the "Y" they see the middle class trappings around them and the people around them and they cannot identify with this and hence they will not attend.

The Chairman: You are indicating a class society to me that I never thought existed in this country. You bring them into the Y.M.C.A. and you say this is a middle-class attitude. If they are not comfortable in the Y.M.C.A. where else could you bring them? It has to be a group of their own amongst themselves or otherwise they are not comfortable?

Mr. Curran: What we are proposing is a place where all people could come to meet together. I would like to see a building placed out of an organization of the "Y" or any other group, placed in the south end, or some other end which has no previous connotations, either bad or good, that youth can create for themselves.

The Chairman: The Y.M.C.A. or the Catholic equivalent is the greatest melting pot we have had in this country. All people can go and enjoy it. Or has that changed?

Mr. Curran: I don't believe that today, no.

The Chairman: You don't believe that today?

Mr. Curran: No, I don't.

Senator Fournier: You have covered some of the ground that I was going to cover. Why have a drop-in centre in the City of Saint John when you have all the facilities of the "Y", one of the best in the Atlantic Provinces, as far as I know. You have more recreation centres in the City of Saint John than anywhere else in the Maritimes. You have parks, you have recreation facilities, you have the best gyms, you have all the facilities available and you have people behind you. Why do you want to build something separate of your own somewhere when it is going to cost a lot of money?

Mr. Paikowsky: As we pointed out in our brief, too often in our society things are becoming facility-oriented. We can have 600 gyms, pools, recreation facilities in Saint John and if we are not helping the emotional problems of disadvantaged youth we have failed. We are not reaching out to the person then we have failed. This is why we said in our brief the drop-in centre must be youth and person oriented, not facility oriented. We are talking about a youth culture which has developed today and by its very commercial nature has excluded disadvantaged youth. They cannot afford to buy the records and buy the new clothes and all the trappings. This is why we need drop-in centres. We

need to reach these people. Okay it is going to cost a lot of money. We have a gross national product in this country of 80 billion dollars...

Senator Fournier: Eighty-three billion dollars.

Mr. Paikowsky: Eighty-three billion dollars. A certain portion goes to defence spending and a certain portion comes to other aspects. We budget the Canadian funds, why don't we budget some for people? This is necessary, this is just as necessary as any Air Force planes or anything else.

Senator Fournier: Do you think so?

Mr. Paikowsky: I think so.

The Chairman: We hear that sort of talk from other people. Do you know when you graduate next year what you will have cost the country? You will have cost the country \$25,000. I cost the country that when they graduated me from college. Are we wasting that money? When you say we are using so much for defence we do that quite willingly as a country.

Mr. Paikowsky: Certainly. The country is providing \$25,000 for me to graduate but what about the person who does not graduate who dropped out at grade 8 or 9 or 10?

The Chairman: When you say he dropped out, that is the name of the game we have here. Why does he drop out from grade 8 or 9?

Mr. Paikowsky: That is what we want to find out at the drop-in centre.

The Chairman: Why do you need a drop-in centre for that?

Mr. Paikowsky: Because we feel the education institutions have failed to answer the obligations of youth. We feel that they have not lived up to their obligations there. We feel that a drop-in centre with the right kind of people at our disposal, and there are these people, could help.

The Chairman: We have had the drop-out problem since we began, and we have called in the best experts we could to find out what is the answer and we haven't had any answer. Now, I am prepared to see that we spend \$50,000 on your people for a drop-in centre if you have the answer, but these people have lived with the problem for years and years.

Mr. Paikowsky: Could I put it this way? About three days ago we had a meeting with kids for the drop-in centre—and this is to the point of having drop-in centres—and one of the girls said "What if I cannot go home and explain to my parents the problem I am having in school because they either don't understand or won't listen?" She said that she would like to have a place to go where she could ask a colleague or someone from high school to give her help and guidance. They are scared sometimes to go to the guidance officer or their parents. They want someone of their own age. This is where a drop-in centre could be valuable.

Senator Fournier: I don't see any need of carrying on the argument any further.

Senator Hastings: I will try to close the generation gap! You say that these centres should be staffed by young people under the direction of a supervisor. Is it centre or centres? What have you got now?

Mr. Curran: What we have is many organizations running drop-in centres. The City runs eight or nine, the Y.M.C.A. runs one, the Y.W.C.A. runs one, also an organization called The Group runs a drop-in centre strictly for people with drug problems. You have all these groups operating in the City.

Senator Hastings: Are you telling me that the ones run by the "Y" are not reaching the people we want to reach?

Mr. Curran: Quite often. We have got down here a list of the people who have been attending these and six of these groups have "middleclass" marked beside them, which means they are reaching strictly the middle-class people, which is completely leaving out the people in the poverty bracket.

Senator Hastings: The one you are operating with a thousand members, who is the administrator?

Mr. Curran: I am.

Senator Hastings: How many employees do you have?

Mr. Curran: I am supervised by the Y.M.C.A., the Program Director. I am the Administrator of the Program and underneath me I have five students who do maintenance tasks such as running campaigns, taking admissions at doors.

Senator Hastings: Does the Y.M.C.A. finance you?

Mr. Curran: No. This is one of the problems. They are saying "You must finance yourself". They are backing us but they say you must run dances and a coffee house and these kind of activities to raise money to run the drop-in programs. As I was saying earlier this alienates people. If a person cannot afford to come to a dance a couple of nights a week and a coffee house another night then he doesn't feel it is his facility. He feels like it belongs to the middle-class.

Senator Hastings: You have only been operating a month so I don't suppose you can tell me any result. Do you have any examples of what you have done, concrete examples of how you have reached out and touched somebody?

Mr. Curran: As I was saying we are encountering all the problems in the brief. A lot of these are our problems and they are cutting down our effectiveness a great deal. These are things that have to be cured or cleared up before we can function and do something worthwhile.

Senator Hastings: At the moment your support group is the Y.M.C.A. and you would like an outside support group?

Mr. Curran: We need an advisory group and we feel some groups have to be able to back this organization in terms of money so we don't have to alienate people by running dances and coffee houses.

The Chairman: How many drop-in centres are there in the city?

Mr. Curran: Nine.

The Chairman: Are they reaching the poor people?

Mr. Curran: No. The city has a problem. They are under-staffed, as many groups are. They don't have one person looking after the drop-in centres. You have an administrator at the top hiring college students. I myself do not feel perfectly qualified to run a drop-in centre. I don't have enough experience or ability yet to communicate with these people. This has been running for two months and all these things have to be cleared before the drop-in centres can be more effective.

Senator Fergusson: Is the objective to reach the poor people or youth generally?

Mr. Paikowsky: Basically we would like to reach the disadvantaged youth first then bring in the other kids with other problems.

related to their environment. I think the problems of youth run from the lower income to the very high income levels. I think there are more real problems for the disadvantaged than for the middle-class. After we get the disadvantaged on our side we will let them organize and then bring in the other kids who have problems of their own that they would like to discuss with us. I think youth today are in a very bad position.

Senator Hastings: You mentioned frustration. Is it psychological and emotional more than an objection to school? Have you done any counselling? Do you do any counselling?

Mr. Curran: Myself and other staff members try to take time to go around and sit and talk with the people who are attending the drop-in centre and get their impression. This is not Jason's and my idea completely. We have asked them about their problems and the brief is the result of Jason and I compiling this. As far as the structure and counselling atmosphere, people come in and talk over their problems with us and maybe get a new light. I think perhaps we have done some work in this area.

Senator Hastings: If a young chap has been on a bad trip or something can you help him?

Mr. Paikowsky: We can refer him to a doctor for immediate medical health. As far as the long range implications of the drug problem I don't know if we would try to advise him psychologically. We could hopefully find people who could help him out.

Mr. Curran: We could give him our views and the way we feel about it and the way we look at it within this environment in which we feel comfortable. This is all we could do. Our ideas and our views hopefully will change his.

Senator Hastings: Which will do more for him than my views?

Mr. Paikowsky: Maybe not. If we could have adults who would build up a trust with youth there should not be any such generation problem. There really isn't.

Senator Hastings: I am going to quote to you from a brief we had this morning:

The Board of Trade is prepared to do its share particularly by involving the business community in social development action and encouraging it to play its proper role in such action.

When you are looking for a support group I suggest you arrange to speak to the Board of Trade and give this speech to them.

Senator Quart: Or the Service Clubs.

Senator Inman: You hear about the generation gap. Can you tell me why is there that gap today?

Mr. Paikowsky: We could probably spend from now until 10:00 o'clock tonight discussing the generation gap. I think basically it can be answered by saying that the youth today, more than the youth of previous generations, have become aware of certain things happening in their society, more aware than, say, my parents had been. They question the hypocrisies of certain things that take place and the relevancy of certain things that go on in society. Parents, because of their background and their life style are, don't understand why the youth today should be asking these questions. Therefore we have two views. You have the youth and the parent. This is why I think you have a generation gap. I think the whole idea of the generation gap is being far too much over-emphasized. I don't think it is as serious.

Senator Inman: I don't think so.

Mr. Paikowsky: Why would we be discussing it with you if there is such a generation gap.

Senator Inman: I have grandsons about the age of you young men and I don't find a generation gap. I find my grandsons coming to me and telling me their troubles and I am a grandmother helping them out.

Mr. Paikowsky: There is with disadvantaged youth because the parents don't understand the needs of the young people. They haven't got the education and they haven't got the wherewithal to deal with kids. This is why we have a lot of kids with problems and this is where we could provide help.

The Chairman: If you are going to keep the poverty stricken youth in organizations of their own, as you suggest, what is the difference between segregating them on the basis of economics and segregating on the basis of colour?

Mr. Paikowsky: This segregation is not made by us, Senator. We are using the segregation as a springboard to a point which can be reached where these disadvantaged youth will feel confident enough to start breaking

through and grabbing a piece of the pie that has been deprived to them.

Senator Fournier: Would you describe the need of the youth? What do you expect the young boy or girl needs today?

Mr. Curran: I don't know if you can say any particular youth in total have any particular needs. There are so many different problems whether they are university, high school, drop-outs, or juvenile delinquents. I think mainly that most of these kids want to find themselves and find where they are going. I think this is youth back since all time. They want to know where they are going. Today with the rapid change in society that is confronting them we have to provide a place to get together and talk and find some of the answers themselves. Today more and more youth are reacting to the situation where they are talking to a counsellor on the other side of the desk who is in a white shirt and represents the great myth of the establishment. That is the basic problem. If they could work the problems out themselves in low key intensity centres where they could talk freely and openly...

Senator Fournier: Don't they do that now? Don't they think the man with the white shirt, who has maybe 30 or 35 years of experience, has some value which he will pass over the table?

Mr. Curran: I think sometimes youth makes an unfair accusation of the person sitting on the other side of the desk but nevertheless they do make the accusations. He is one of them and I am one of us and never the twain shall meet. Perhaps through dealing with people sitting on the other side of the desk through a staff at the drop-in centre they could be the medium through which the two groups could communicate with each other. Quite often they won't communicate basically. Maybe through an intermediary they will.

The Chairman: You are a sociology student, and next year you will graduate. Tell me, what are your needs as compared to what your father needed at your age? You must have discussed it. What is it that you need particularly that he did not need at his age?

Mr. Curran: I don't think there is anything.

The Chairman: What are we talking about then?

Mr. Paikowsky: I disagree.

The Chairman: Let us hear what you have to say.

Mr. Paikowsky: My father is dead but when we did communicate we did talk about these things. His need was different than mine in the sense that many adults of his age searched for some kind of economic security after the war and I think that this is a great strive. I think today the youth are not searching especially for this. Here is a big generalization. I am searching for something that may be of long range or more intimate value to me than my parents were. Maybe this has contributed to the generation gap.

The Chairman: I think what you say makes sense. You said your father was in the war and came back after the war and he had to support a boy named Jason and make a living the best way he could. He was interested in that particular thing. Jason perhaps had brothers and sisters too. Your father lost five years during the war. He has made it possible for you, or you have made it possible to have an education. You are going to graduate from university one of these days and it is a different sort of life and you are interested in things other than that. Jason—I am older and I can call you by your first name. Jason, tell me this: somebody paid for your education as you went along the way and made it possible for you. There was only so much you could earn, or things must have been kind of rough otherwise. The state has helped some and perhaps you have had scholarships and perhaps other things to make it possible for you.

Mr. Paikowsky: Yes. I understand what you are saying but I don't understand what you are leading up to.

The Chairman: What I am getting at is: society has tried to make it easy for people like you and others as you go along. It has changed since your father's day. You can do different things than he could have done.

Mr. Paikowsky: Right.

The Chairman: How then have we the elders treated you people so badly?

Mr. Paikowsky: I have never made this contention. I disagree with the point you are trying to make. Certainly, as I pointed out, and you agreed with me, the needs of my father versus me are different because of the way our society has travelled in those 20 years. Obviously they are different. However I really don't understand the point you are trying to make. I understand you are pointing out the need difference. I am a different person than my father because of my envi-

ronment and because of the way things are coming at me, because of different things.

Mr. Curran: I think that too often people think that the youth of today are trying to tear things down. Certainly a certain number are and a certain number of adults are trying to tear things down too. Basically I don't think the majority of youth are trying to tear things down. The great thing today is that after many years of experience you can go through the system and say "This was wrong and that was wrong, let's change it." We feel today that we are right out of it, right in the system, and we can see some of the problems occurring. We don't see why we have to wait 20 years to speak. We should be able to present the problems to people like yourself and you should be able to listen to us. Maybe they are right and maybe not but together youth and adult can find a solution.

Senator Inman: Do you ever think in 20 years when you have a family how differently you would treat your family than you have been treated or brought up?

Mr. Paikowsky: I think the way I will be treating my family if I do raise one, will be through the experience I am gaining in trying to deal with the problems of society. I will be imparting to them what I feel are the real values that I have learned over the past years of my life. This is what I think involved young people are going to be doing. They are going to be telling their kids, as our parents did. Now whether they have told us right things or not we have yet to discover because I think we are questioning a lot of their advice. I am going to give them the best advice I can and it is up to them to decide whether that advice is correct and they can make their own decision.

Senator Inman: What values have you required that you would impart to your children other than what you had imparted to yourself?

Mr. Curran: I think today's young people question very readily. Because of the instability caused by the war our parents tended to accept things, they were forced to get back on their feet economically. Today we haven't got those problems and we have more time to sit back and criticize the systems. I think there is the main difference between the generations.

Mr. Paikowsky: This is where the drop-in centres would have a benefit.

The Chairman: I think what they are saying, Senator Inman, is that you and I accept the establishment as is. They don't. They question it.

Senator McGrand: I don't.

The Chairman: That is what they are saying. From their point of view they have got a real point. Whether you and I accept it or not is another matter. I only mean by that the older generation.

Mr. Paikowsky: I don't mean that you don't question. Certainly the fact that you are concerned here means that you do question. I think that the young people are questioning more intensely. I am not saying you people don't question it at all. Certainly you do.

The Chairman: Perhaps I should have said "Don't question it as seriously".

Senator McGrand: Why do the poor people from poor families object to seeing middle-class trappings in the Y.M.C.A.? What would you put in a building if you were to provide a building? What would you put there in the way of equipment? You have to have something there. What would you put there that would not be facility oriented? You have used the words "facility oriented" several times. What would you put there, a TV and juke box?

Mr. Curran: As to the first part of your question I don't agree completely. It is not so much the trappings, the building itself. It is the people who use it more than the facilities themselves. In other words, the person who comes to the Y.M.C.A. goes to the health club and makes a certain income and if you only make three or three and a half thousand a year you are not comfortable in the kind of clothes you wear and the kind of language, which is very different, in associating with this person. You feel they look down on you. You don't feel comfortable in that environment.

Senator McGrand: It is the attendance of those who are there that make the poor people feel alienated.

The Chairman: How does he know how much you are earning? How can you tell?

Senator McGrand: It is the clothes he takes off!

The Chairman: It never occurred to me to question a man's income.

Mr. Curran: First of all, I am not talking about swimming in the pool. I am talking about the people who attend the drop-in centre. A kid drives up in his father's car, which may be a \$5,000 Buick, and has all the best clothes and the newest styles and all the latest hip records and talks about things that are meaningful to him. Another kid comes in and his father is on welfare and he has dirty ripped dungarees and his language is different. He is thinking about leaving school whereas the other kid says he is going to stay at school and get his B.A. and his M.A. They are two completely different polarizations. They feel uncomfortable together. We have had this problem in our youth program at the "Y", Saint John High School, which is the high school in the City, and it is thought by many people they are the main people who attend the Y.M.C.A. Youth Department. If you ask the people at any of the other schools why they don't attend they say it is Saint John High School's territory and it has all the values of Saint John High School and the people that attend that school. A person who comes from the Vocational school is looked down upon because he is not planning to go to university whereas the people from Saint John High School mostly are. It is unfortunate but there is the polarization.

Senator McGrand: Isn't that segregation? Are you not trying to segregate one group from another group?

Mr. Curran: The groups impose segregation on themselves. They force it upon themselves.

Senator McGrand: The group that wants to segregate is going to impose, self-impose segregation?

The Chairman: Don't youth have to fight people who try to impose segregation in themselves?

Mr. Curran: We are saying we need a separate facility, a facility for all youth. This place has a stigma about the kind of youth and about the way you act at the Y.M.C.A. and where your father comes from. This new centre, which would not have to be a magnificent building which is empty most of the time, this would be the kind of place where all groups could perhaps meet and perhaps youth could get together. I don't think they are ever going to get together here.

Senator Inman: What about the young person who has the money and the opportunity to go on with an education and go to

university but still drops out? How would he feel in a place like that?

Mr. Paikowsky: Regarding a drop-in centre and, say, a university student who drops out, our drop-in centre is not specifically oriented towards college age students. However, I believe that a college age student would be welcome to come in and talk and sit around and ask questions of us; just start discussing why he has dropped out of college. I know many people have dropped out of college and have nobody to talk it over with, they can't relate to anyone. Maybe after the drop-in centre gets going in better surroundings these people also can be helped.

Senator Inman: You could influence them?

Mr. Paikowsky: Certainly.

Senator Hastings: I think it should be pointed out, Mr. Chairman, that I agree wholeheartedly with these young men. They are not advocating segregation itself. They are telling us there is only way to reach these people, to go out and touch them and bring them in. The only way you can do it is on their terms and not on ours.

Senator Fergusson: I would like to go back to the drop-in centres. I would like to say, Mr. Chairman, that I find these presentations by concerned young people are very interesting and I might say very refreshing for this Committee. Personally I would like to see you get the support you are seeking so you can try your experiment on a wide scale.

I would like to refer to page 6 of your brief in which you speak about the support groups:

A middle-class bias is forced on the Centre's operation and this renders the goals of the Centre unobtainable. Support groups measure the effectiveness of the Centre in unacceptable terms, i.e. in relation to numbers passing through the machine, 'pauper's' behaviour, etcetera, rather than personal success of participants...

How do you measure the success of a drop-in centre? Do you feel that having a thousand members, as you said, is a measure of success? If not, how do you measure it? You say "rather than the personal success of the participant". How do you estimate when a person has had personal success?

Mr. Curran: I will answer this by leading up to your question. The City of Saint John operates nine of these drop-in centres.

throughout the City. Based on the annual report they devoted a certain section to drop-in centres and they made no other comments at all on the drop-in centres other than listing the attendance figures. This is how they are measuring success of the drop-in centres. In the Y.M.C.A. they measure the success by having no bad language and the kids not wrecking things. We feel that this is an improper way to do it because there is a reason a kid becomes destructive, it is not because he is a bad little boy. We feel that if a person comes into our drop-in centre and can sit down and start talking with us and asking questions about his school work and we can advise him how to get a better job if he has dropped out and if he is opening up his mind to things and if he can relax for an hour or so instead of constantly worrying about money, etcetera, then we feel we have succeeded.

Senator Fournier: My skin is maybe harder than the rest of the members of the Commission. I think your intentions are good, you are trying to do something. I don't disagree with you. Before somebody follows your recommendation and spends billions of dollars putting buildings right across the nation let us discuss it. You mentioned a while ago that the gross national product was \$83 million and that we are spending billions of dollars in the Army and we should use some of that money. I took it for granted out of your words and out of your brief that you suggest we build centres right across Canada, right and left, spend billions of dollars and that we give it to you people to try something, make an experiment.

Why can't you make your experiment with the facilities that are available to you at the moment? There will be some inconvenience, I agree, but it is worth trying. Some day you will be facing the people who have to pay for it. It doesn't matter what you do somebody has to pay for it. You may be rolling the ball for weeks before you strike but there will be a day that somebody will have to stop and say "It is going to cost money".

Why don't you make your experiment and try and achieve something and then have something to sell to the people? Why don't you use the facilities instead of thinking of these dreams of having buildings and trying to convince your self in your own mind you cannot achieve what you want because you have not got the facilities?

Mr. Curran: I think the last thing we need in Saint John is another Y.M.C.A. sort of

thing. I agree with you whole-heartedly. We have a Y.M.C.A. and it provides this kind of facility. What we are talking about is an old store front or an old house or some other old building somewhere that they are going to tear down that the kids can move into and take over and make into their place.

Senator Fournier: I don't think that the City of Saint John or the School Board would object to giving you access to some of the fancy gyms.

Mr. Curran: Gyms are not the problem. It is not lack of recreational facilities. It is a place to gather and sit around and talk where you are in your own environment and where you feel completely comfortable and where there is not somebody in a white shirt and tie running around and saying "Be sure to keep your feet off the furniture". What we want is something old and comfortable that you can have as your own. It doesn't belong to the adults. A place like this in the South end of the City or some other area.

Senator Fournier: You said you have a thousand members. How many of those thousand members that you have are joining your organization because they want advice or consultation in the time that you mention? How many out of the thousands are really coming to you because they want advice and want you to solve some of the problems which cannot be solved by the Welfare or some other people?

Mr. Curran: The largest part of our membership is middle-class children or youth who have joined the Universal Axle because we have dances on Monday and Saturday nights, two dances a week, to support the program.

Senator Fournier: This comes to the point. Don't you think that more people are joining your organization because they have access to dances?

Mr. Curran: This is what we want to stop. The Universal Axle in its inception was not dreamed up to provide dances. There are schools and other facilities to provide dances for teenagers. We do have 50 to 100 people who come four nights a week and sit around and just talk and get down to the problem of what is wrong in the City. It is a place to air their beefs. This is what we envision a drop-in centre such as this to be.

The Chairman: The drop-in centres that I know are not as gloomy as you picture them. They do sit around and they do listen to

records but the boys come, and the girls come and they get friendly and dance. There is much joy in them too, you know.

Mr. Curran: I agree. Naturally this is part of the drop-in centre but too often this is the total emphasis. A drop-in centre has got to be more than that.

Senator Quart: I think dancing is a marvelous thing for them. I really do.

Senator Hastings: I don't think these boys have asked for billions of dollars to be spent in Canada. All they are asking for is a support group to assist them in getting started and make it operate as they want it to operate. I can only tell you from experience in Calgary that it works. There is the store front and the young man will go there when he is in trouble because he can communicate with someone and someone can communicate with him. There are psychiatrists on call and doctors on call when they are needed and the boy on a bad trip or in trouble can go there sooner than to a hospital or his parents for help. It doesn't take a great deal of money, it takes commitment on the part of the support group to go there and make it work.

The Chairman: Who supports it in Calgary?

Senator Hastings: The College of Physicians. The doctors are on call.

Mr. Paikowsky: We are recommending that a psychiatrist should be available to whom we could refer serious individual problems.

Senator Hastings: No records are kept. It is run for the Youth.

Senator Quart: Do you have any old buildings, a hotel or any other old building that you would recommend that some group would pick up for you?

Mr. Curran: I hesitate to make a statement on this because it is very important. When we started to run the program we wanted to hold it in a place outside of the Y.M.C.A. and we went around the City and went to various people and asked them if we could use their vacant store front and as soon as they found out who we were and what we wanted the price went up so high it was impossible for us to finance this.

The Chairman: These are two very nice boys and the minute they describe what they have in mind they put the thumb down on them. They are not so sure about the others.

Senator Quart: I understand. I have 23 grandchildren and I find that I am the gap between the generations.

Senator McGrand: You have spoken about the lack of communication between children and their parents and the question of the hypocrisy of this generation of which we adults are members. Now youth has, I think great objection to certain things that are going on in the world. Now among the young people that you know, the people who feel alienated from society, who are not satisfied with the way things are going on, what do they think of the money being spent on space travel and trips to the moon and such things as that? Is that a fair question?

Mr. Paikowsky: It is a fair question. If I could relate this to drop-in centres it would be much more to the point.

Senator McGrand: I was expecting you to say that. I said a while ago I never belonged to the establishment.

Mr. Paikowsky: Children cannot relate to their parent...let me get to that first. Children cannot relate to their parents, as we have discussed before, for several reasons. A general gap because a lot of families, especially the disadvantaged, have unwanted children, some of whom they have acquired through unwanted pregnancies, etcetera etcetera. They don't have a real love for their children but reject their children and do not provide an environment of communication between the kids. When the kid comes home from school he has to rush out and deliver papers. There is no conversation at the dinner table. Mother and father may be working and there is no one home for him to talk to. There is your communication gap. I think this is where the drop-in centres could help.

As far as my friend's feelings on money allotted to things other than what we think are necessary many of my friends object very strenuously, and some more strenuously than I do, to where the money is going. This is why we feel the Committee on Poverty is important. Maybe now we can really look at where the money is going in this country. I think I read in the paper that you have heard over a hundred briefs. I am sure that 99 per cent of these briefs point to the problems in the society for the poor people. This is what is important to solve before we go to space. We have to help the people.

Senator McGrand: And that includes the unnecessary expenditures on space travel and

such things, unnecessary things that do not bring any benefit to the people.

Mr. Paikowsky: It is a matter of priorities.

The Chairman: Let me say to both of you not to be discouraged, because new ideas find opponents very easily. They are a little harder to sell than normally would appear to you. They are not fully understood but they have a value. The encouraging part is that two young men like yourselves, both products of our environment and our education, take it upon themselves to come before the committee and present an idea for consideration and with the hope that you can help others. That in itself is worthy of commendation. I thank both of you for coming.

The Chairman: I understand that Mrs. Ann Chisholm, who is in the audience, wanted to say something.

Mrs. Ann Chisholm: I live in Saint John and am an odd person insofar as I have two professions and yet in the past year I have only earned just about \$500. I have put down my monthly expenses here and I have \$155 that comes to me to handle and my monthly expenses, without food or heat, amounts to \$172. Therefore every month, of course, I have less and less.

I am firstly a nurse, an R.N. My activity as private duty nurse in Saint John came to a rather abrupt close 17 years ago this month when the wife of my dying patient asked me "I would stay the night in her place so she might have a few hours of uninterrupted sleep." I explained to her I couldn't possibly say. I will have to say that because I did accept this against my own desire—I would like to be home in bed myself—I stayed the night without pay and without being in the room, no contact whatsoever with the patient, but from that time onward I haven't been given a single solitary case at a hospital in Saint John.

After many months and years of striving to get a hearing I finally gave up temporarily and took up teaching. I taught for approximately 10 or 11 years and I feel I have done quite a good job. The trouble is I have a big mouth and when I see something that is wrong and continues to be wrong, somebody picks their foot in my mouth, one foot and the other foot and the rear end and out I go. I was teaching at a school for retarded children when we went for a period of five weeks

without drinking cups in a building that had no ventilation, the windows were not opened and they were high up. I brought this to the attention of a general meeting and that was certainly the beginning of the end for me.

There were also such things as a little welfare boy who found a half bottle of pop and he drinks it and then he is denied his next gym period which was only 45 minutes once a week. This was a mentally retarded child. I object to that heartily.

My objection is I am out. I haven't had any work and I think I am perhaps one of the poorest people in your poverty program with less than \$500. Thank you.

The Chairman: Have you applied for welfare?

Mrs. Chisholm: I haven't but from what I gather I think I will apply soon. I am beginning to think they are far better off than I am.

The Chairman: That is your right. You should exercise your right.

Mrs. Chisholm: I would like to say that part of the money I do have is the newly acquired Old Age Pension that my brother gets and the other if for my mentally retarded 75-pound sister who I may bring tonight or tomorrow and you can see. That is my income.

The Chairman: Thank you very much.

This concludes our meeting this afternoon. There will be a meeting scheduled tonight commencing at 7:30 and 8:30.

The meeting adjourned.

Upon resuming at 7:30 p.m.

The Chairman: Order, please. We are continuing our hearings. We have the presentation from the South End Improvement Association, and the South End Tenants' Association. On my right is Miss Anne Maxwell who will make the presentation, and Miss McGrath. She will take some time in presenting the case and then there will be a video presentation which will take about 15 to 20 minutes.

Miss Anne Maxwell, Member, South End Improvement Association: Mr. Chairman, Members of the Senate Committee, ladies and gentlemen:

In our attempt to discern and suggest solutions to the problem of poverty in Canada we

considered all those factors of deprivation—such as those which were listed in the Canadian Medical Association's brief to this Committee—economic, social, political, judicial, educational, informational, intellectual, moral, emotional, and perceptual—which render people less free to choose, less capable of controlling their own lives.

We interviewed and talked with as many residents of our area as possible—welfare recipients, land-owners, young, old, alcoholics, recently-released prisoners, those on marginal incomes, and community workers—in order to ascertain the true needs of the poor and to give them a medium through which they could express their opinions and make others aware of their plight.

It was difficult to compartmentalize the conditions which contribute to and aggravate the problems of the poor since those conditions are interdependent and inter-related.

We can broadly divide the subject matter of our brief into six main areas:

1. Education
2. Economic security and welfare benefits
3. Housing
4. Law
5. The family
6. Attitudes of society

Since it is the children who suffer most severely when poverty is present we feel that it is at this level that attempts should be made to break the poverty cycle and to forestall even greater problems which cannot help but present themselves with advancing technology. Taking into consideration that education is constitutionally a Provincial jurisdiction, but realizing that such a limitation should not be allowed to completely govern the methods or means for solving the problems at hand, we have recommended:

That all levels of government channel energy, resources, and tax dollars towards the implementation of a programme for what are now pre-school children, so that they, through access to free compulsory medical examinations and ready availability to psychiatric services, will be given an opportunity to early overcome physical, perceptual, attitudinal, and psychological handicaps which start them early along the poverty road.

That Day Care Centre and Head Start Programmes be made an integral part of the previous recommendation.

That Head Start programmes be set up as an integral part of the regular school system but that volunteer groups make an effort to fill the gap in the meantime.

That apprentice training programmes be set up to meet the needs of students who are dropping out of ordinary academic programmes.

That teachers in inner city schools be specially prepared to teach in areas of material or cultural deprivation.

That teacher-pupil ratios be kept low during the first three years in areas suffering from a great deal of poverty.

That homes for emotionally disturbed children be set up to better facilitate their treatment in neutral surroundings and thus enable them to return to their home environment.

That the need for continuing adult education be stressed and that emphasis be placed on teaching illiterate adults to read.

That children be given a quality education that is to say we must remember that those children who enter school in September of this year will face a very different world twelve years from now.

In all our discussions we realized that a more realistic approach to welfare needs must be sought. We have recommended:

That those on welfare be allowed to earn a reasonable amount to supplement their welfare income.

That although the incentive to work must be retained, families and individuals should be given a short period of time to "get ahead" of themselves.

That those permanently incapable of work be given the security of knowing their needs will be met.

That home-making courses be set up to rehabilitate the living habits of those who need it and to provide those who wish means by which they may learn to better manage their resources.

That credit buying be strictly regulated.

That cost of living clauses be included as an integral part of all welfare schemes.

That consideration be given to re-evaluating the concept of "basic needs".

That low-income families be involved in solving their problems.

That granting of Old Age Security and Family Allowance Benefits be reassessed on a basis of need.

Many of those with whom we spoke considered inadequate wages as one of the prime contributors to the creation of poverty. We have therefore recommended that a national guaranteed income be established either through an increase in basic wages or through supplementation of income earned—whichever is the more economically feasible. The ever widening gap between the rich and the poor must be closed and this is one measure which would help to bring this about.

With approximately 1.5 million people in Canada over sixty-five we have recommended that a study be undertaken to ascertain their needs. With the present emphasis on the young, many of our senior citizens who often live alone and in old neighbourhoods, constitute our "hidden poor". We have also recommended:

That efforts be made to locate and urge those older members of the community to avail themselves of frequent medical examinations to maintain their physical and mental health.

That private organizations and governments when sponsoring senior citizen housing locate them within the mainstream of the community.

That this segment of the community be looked to as an untapped resource for working with deprived youth.

That businesses, industry, and communities set up pre-retirement programmes to prepare and enable people to cope with retirement years.

That families be given help from government in carrying out their responsibilities towards aged members of the family group.

We have also recommended that in areas of high unemployment Manpower Centres be set up using the resources of those in the area whenever possible; and that the psychological problems of the unemployed be further explored. Victor Frankl says:

Remarkably enough the most prominent symptom of the unemployment neurosis is not depression, but apathy. The unemployed become increasingly indifferent and their initiative more and more trickles away. This apathy is not without grave dangers. It makes such people incapable of grasping the helping hand which may be extended to them.

Keeping this in mind it would be advisable that Manpower employees and community workers go to the unemployed rather than wait for the unemployed to go to them. It is not surprising that this condition of apathy and helplessness can be found among the poor no matter what the cause of their problem.

We suggest that company pension plans which exclude men who although young are too old to fit into the plan be examined.

The need for an increase in adequate low cost housing was a recurrent theme in our discussions with people in preparing this brief. That human beings are allowed to live in buildings that are unfit for animals is a poor commentary on our society. The effects of rat-infested, fire-prone, poorly-serviced buildings on those who occupy them cannot be measured. People who live in such houses cannot help but wonder whether living in such an environment does not also indicate a devaluation of their human worth. The psychological and sociological effects on a family of six or seven being brought up in two or three rooms in a slum neighbourhood contribute greatly to the problem of poverty. To help alleviate this aspect of the problem we have recommended:

That care be taken in community renewal programmes so that adequate housing is provided before existing housing is destroyed.

That the Federal Government make money available at lower rates of interest to individuals and still lower rates of interest to Provincial Governments to build low-cost housing.

That rent ceilings be established based upon housing market, services offered, and condition of apartment being offered.

That municipalities enforce existing health and building by-laws regarding housing.

That Provincial Governments re-examine their legislation pertaining to landlord-tenant rights.

That Provincial boards of appeal be established to arbitrate contentious issues between landlords and tenants.

Recognizing that all men deserve equality before the law, and that lack of economic resources may contribute to a person's not being able to obtain adequate representation, we recommend a national system of legal aid to be established through the co-operation of

the Attorneys-General and the members of the legal profession.

In keeping with our belief that prevention of future deprivation rests principally with our treatment of the coming generations we have recommended that laws be consistently enforced for all levels of society, and that those laws which are irrelevant be either rewritten or abolished.

We recommend that:

Juvenile Court Judges be chosen as careful-ly for their compassion and consistency as for their legal capabilities.

That juvenile offenders be removed from complete contact with society as a last resort and that a mid-way course between probation and confinement be sought.

We recommend the establishment of half-way houses for adult offenders to assist them in re-establishing themselves as members of the community.

We recommend that family heads who desert their children be forced to contribute to the maintenance of those children.

We recommend also that legislation should not precede the public's readiness for it. Unless the structures of society have been readied for the enactment of enlightened legislation unforeseen problems may in turn present themselves.

If we accept the statement in the United Nations Universal Declaration of Human Rights that: "The family is the natural and fundamental group unit of society and is entitled to protection by society and the state," it is our responsibility to ensure that each member of such a unit is enabled to carry out his responsibilities to and derive his rights from that unit. We have therefore recommended:

That Day Care Centres be established so that children who need supervision and care for all or part of the day may receive it from qualified people in suitable surroundings.

That provision be made to provide children who are not receiving proper nourishment at home, at least one balanced meal a day at school.

That visiting homemakers be made available to families in situations where emergency takes one or more of the parents from the home environment.

The "poverty" which most impressed us lies in the realm of attitudes where people

who have a greater measure of material wealth than those living at or below the poverty level do not recognize that there is a problem. There are also many in this group whom we encountered with the concept that all people on welfare are lazy, that the poor are poor because they have "messed-up" their own lives.

We feel that the responsibility for coming to terms with the problem and seeking a solution cannot rest solely on the shoulders of government. Although we believe that government must assume the task of preparing a suitable climate for change to take place, attitudes cannot be legislated. It will only be on the basis of individual people assuming their responsibilities as members of society that the problem can be solved. Therefore the greatest return on time and energy invested will be realized when those to be helped (the poor) and those trying to help, work together in small unwieldy groups. All the work that needs to be accomplished cannot be done by paid workers and it is doubtful whether it should. However, social and community workers must be given small enough case loads to free them to spend more time with those who come to them for help. At the same time professional organizations, and community groups backed by supportive government aid must offer their talents to the poor so that through the concept of self-help they will eventually become self-sufficient.

To government and public agencies must go the task of informing the poor of their rights and of the avenues by which they may improve their lot.

We recommend finally that the problem of poverty not be studied to death while its victims continue to suffer. Although none of the people to whom we spoke were awaiting miracles, they do want to see a steady progression of events leading to concrete solutions NOW.

As part of the preparation for our brief video taped the opinions of residents of the South End—we would like now to present approximately 20 minutes.

—Video tape presentation shown.

The Chairman: The film you have just seen which portrayed conditions and interviewed for information, was made by Miss Maxwell, Miss McGrath and Mr. Owen and Mr. Smith who are sitting over here. They tell me they are sheer amateurs. It was not going to suggest that we recommend them for an Academy Award.

Award but I thought a great big "E" for effort would be worthwhile for them because they did very well.

Senator Fournier, have you some questions?

Senator Fournier: Yes, I might ask some questions to get the ball rolling here. Now, if everybody had the minimum income, as you recommend—I am not mentioning any amount—would you still insist that all of your recommendations be followed? Do you still want what you are asking for? Would you want both or would you be satisfied with the minimum income? Would the minimum income solve most of your problems?

Miss Maxwell: No.

Miss Anne Marie McGrath, Member, South End Improvement Association: I do not feel that a minimum income will solve the problem but there are many other things that are not on an economic sphere which must be taken care of.

This is just part and parcel of the whole thing. We do not feel that if we got the minimum income tomorrow that everything else should be thrown out. That is just part of it.

Senator Fournier: Can you define for the members here what you classify as the basic need for a family?

Miss McGrath: The basic need?

Senator Fournier: Yes.

Miss McGrath: I think that as far as most people are concerned basic needs seem to be food, clothing, shelter and medical care, but I think too, access to some of the things that they do not have, such as proper educational facilities. These are the needs we consider basic needs.

Senator Fournier: How about a car, automobile or telephone?

Miss McGrath: That is still material.

Senator Fournier: A television set?

Miss McGrath: That is still material.

Senator Fournier: You would not classify them as basic needs?

Miss McGrath: Yes, it could be.

Senator Fournier: A telephone would be, I would imagine.

Miss McGrath: I would think so. I would think that in 1970 a television could possibly be. I think we mentioned in our brief a newspaper. It is not right that today a newspaper should be a luxury and yet in many families it is a luxury they cannot afford.

Senator Fournier: Are you satisfied with the educational system of today?

Miss McGrath: No, I am not.

Senator Fournier: Would you point out some of the missing links?

Miss McGrath: There are a great number of missing links, Senator Fournier. I think one of the missing links right now is the fact we ignore children up until the time they enter school at 6 years of age.

I think too we do not take into consideration the children who come from deprived families have very little in common with children who have probably come from middle-class surroundings and middle-class homes.

I think that is part of our problem and I also think we do not make proper provision for these people who are not academically inclined.

That is part and parcel of it.

Senator Fournier: All right. I thank you and I will pass to somebody else for the moment.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, I would like to turn to the last paragraph of the brief where you say:

Although none of the people to whom we spoke were awaiting miracles they do want to see a steady progression of events leading to concrete confrontation...

What do you mean by "concrete confrontation"?

Miss McGrath: Well, I think that you will admit that is nebulous but I think that we feel...

Senator Hastings: It is not very nebulous "confrontation".

Miss McGrath: It could come in so many different forms but I think we mean that instead of waiting a year for something to happen—it is not just up to this Committee, it is up to all of the people. Each and every one of us have to do something about the problem of poverty.

I realize that you people must go back to Ottawa. You must study what you have found but in the meantime there are people who can do things, who can offer their services and possibly do something to fill the gap and this would mean just taking a look at the problem and getting together and doing what we can do.

Senator Hastings: In other words, you are not referring to violence?

Miss McGrath: No, I am not.

Senator Hastings: During the film I noticed one of the witnesses said something about he would appreciate receiving a regular cheque on Thursdays. How is welfare distributed in New Brunswick now?

Miss McGrath: I am not familiar with the distribution. Perhaps Mr. Owen would know.

Mr. Owen, Member, South End Tenants' Association: The Welfare cheques are distributed on the first of every month.

Senator Hastings: He wanted them every Thursday the same as a regular pay cheque. It is not by voucher?

Mr. Owen: Some are by voucher and some are by cheque.

Senator Hastings: Thank you. What percentage would be by voucher?

Mr. Owen: I cannot give you the percentage.

The Chairman: The usual practice we have heard about across the country is that some people, who do not make the best use of their cheques for various reasons, come to the attention of the department. They give them a voucher instead until such time as the lesson gets home. That is not the usual practice.

Senator Hastings: I would like to ask the witness a question with reference to the changing attitudes and opinions and I presume that refers to the attitudes of the poor. We had an interesting observation this afternoon that the press were misinterpreting the position of the poor or misinterpreting the views of the poor. Would you agree with that with respect to communication?

Miss McGrath: That the press are misinterpreting the conditions of the poor?

Senator Hastings: That is right, the plight of the poor. You mentioned about improving communications.

Miss McGrath: Not in any circumstances where we have been involved. It could be possible but where we have been involved we have not found they have been misinterpreting the conditions of the poor.

Senator Hastings: In other words, the press are doing all they can in the line of communication?

Miss McGrath: I think so but I think it has to go further than just the press. We will have to use all the media we can.

Senator Quart: Mr. Chairman, on page 1 may I ask the witness how they would work this out and I quote, "Manpower employees and community workers..." I can understand about community workers in the community—"...go to the unemployed rather than wait for the unemployed to come to them."

Miss McGrath: I think this is now being done to some extent in Halifax where a gentleman from the area was trained by Manpower...

The Chairman: We visited the area in Halifax.

Miss McGrath: And he could go and work in his own area instead of just talking with people together. It may be in a small area where he would know the people. He might possibly go to them because I think this is a specific problem of the poor people, their understanding of what goes on and their environment becomes smaller and smaller and they lose track of the fact they are still in contact with the rest of the world.

Senator Quart: That sounds like a very good idea. Are you satisfied with the service of Manpower?

Miss McGrath: No, not really.

Senator Quart: We have had that before. Thank you very much.

Senator Fergusson: On page 11 I notice you refer to the fact that the government cannot do everything. You say:

All the work that needs to be done cannot be accomplished by paid workers and it is doubtful whether it should

I thought this was very interesting. You do not think everything can be done by the government.

Miss McGrath: No, I do not.

Senator Fergusson: We must get others involved. You say that professional associations and community groups should be involved. How would you expect to accomplish that?

Miss McGrath: I would think that most people have something to offer, depending upon their own background and their abilities and I think that, for instance, teachers could get out and encourage people to start volunteer Headstart Programs and possibly go to one or two meetings a week or a month until they get on their feet.

I think this is the sort of thing we can do in the interim. In fact I wonder if we were to do for the interim if it could possibly be for the duration.

Senator Fergusson: If these things get organized.

Miss McGrath: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: I was very interested in that because so many people think that we are now paying our government to look after these things and we have no further responsibility.

Miss McGrath: No, I think that is part of the whole problem, not taking our responsibilities up.

Senator Inman: Well, on page 5 you speak about credit buying. Do you think that credit buying contributes something to poverty?

Miss McGrath: Yes, I think it does. I think that our media have established common goals for people and quite a number of these goals are material goals and it is only normal and natural if people are told that a good segment of the population has certain things and by having those things you are a success, it is natural for them to go and acquire these things even though they do not have the foresight sometimes to see that they are getting themselves into trouble.

Senator Inman: The mass advertising that we see on TV does have an effect on people, does it not?

Miss McGrath: Yes, I think it does.

Senator Inman: You speak of some sort of control should be put on credit buying. What sort of control would you think there should be?

Miss McGrath: On credit buying I would think that people should be allowed to buy on credit only within a certain percentage of their income. I do not know what that percentage would be but I think that could be worked out. People could buy within that percentage knowing that they would never really get in over their heads. It is just this idea they could get ahead of themselves.

The Chairman: Miss McGrath, do you think there is any justification for limiting my credit to buy?

Miss McGrath: Possibly.

The Chairman: What could the possibility be?

Miss McGrath: Well, Senator, I do not know your assets.

The Chairman: Seriously can you think of any reason for limiting my capacity to obtain credit? I have a fair income as a result of being a senator, so is there any possible reason that my credit should be limited?

Miss McGrath: I think that if tables were drawn up so that within a certain area a certain percentage of a person's income would be regulated as far as the output is concerned for credit buying, yes. I think that within possibly certain areas you could say "Well, you are on your own. They can afford to be on their own."

The Chairman: Do you think the government has a right to interfere with me or with anyone with respect to our rights as to how we spend our income?

Miss McGrath: I think we mentioned somewhere when we were talking about housing we did not like to recommend more restrictions on housing because in doing so we limit either a person's right to own a house or to rent them, and I feel that I would not want to interfere with your right to buy.

At the same time I think that people are being victimized to a certain extent by the advertising that they are being conditioned to and that instead of being able to cope with it they find themselves in greater trouble. Now, if people could somehow be taught how to use their money properly...

The Chairman: What we have had before the committee time and again is that there should be some courses at the early school level to indicate how they should budget and how they should plan. But from what you know of people who are on welfare, do you think that there is any housewife who can do better or budget better than they can with the little income they have?

Miss McGrath: Some of them could.

The Chairman: What do you mean, some of them could? There are some of them that are in the \$10,000 or \$20,000 class and ball it up there.

Miss McGrath: Some of them do exceptionally well. You know, I do not like making a blanket statement but quite a number of people—as Mr. Owen said with one cheque a month it is very difficult to regulate that with one cheque a month if you have not been taught somewhere along the line that you put off tomorrow's goals to achieve next week's or next month's goal. I think this is where the problem arises.

The Chairman: By the time you have been married 10 or 15 years and have children—surely you should have learned that in your first or second year, as to how to plan that.

Miss McGrath: I do not think we human beings learn that easily. It would be nice if we did. It would be nice if we learned from our mistakes but we are not all that terrific so we really do not.

The Chairman: You are the first one with that approach. I think the only other objection we have heard across the country about handing out cheques twice a month came in a hearing we had in Newfoundland. Other than that everybody receives their cheques once a month and they say that it works very well indeed. That with the little money they get they do very well.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, I wonder if I might ask Mr. Owen: Is there any great administrative difficulty in being paid twice a month?

Mr. Joseph H. Owen, President, South End Tenants' Association: It is set up by a computer now so the cheques are computerized and the computers would have to be re-set to establish it for twice a month so that is the only drawback.

Senator Hastings: It would just be a matter of re-setting the computer?

Mr. Owen: That is right.

Senator Fournier: Press another button.

Senator Hastings: And turn it on twice a month.

Mr. Owen: That is right.

The Chairman: They usually turn out all the cheques. When you say they only have to turn it on twice a month, it costs money.

Mr. Owen: Once a month is a streamlining thing.

Senator Hastings: You just push the button once.

Mr. Owen: Right.

The Chairman: When you talk about changing attitudes, how would you go about changing attitudes?

Miss McGrath: I do not really know, Senator Croll, because the very fact of changing attitudes in itself is very difficult but I think we have to look at ourselves as human beings and ask ourselves whether our response to other people as people is what it should be in itself and if it is on a higher plane, and if it is not if we want to be the kind of people we think we want to be we had better change our attitudes.

I do not think it is easy to change attitudes. Sometimes I do not think that people who have negative attitudes have them deliberately. I think that very often you find that people take the attitude they do towards the poor because they do not know about them. They have never met many and they do not conceive of them as people. They think of them rather as statistics or as those ones who live in that end of town so I do not think attitudes are always deliberate.

The Chairman: Do the poor have to change attitudes?

Miss McGrath: Yes, some of them. Yes, some of them have to change attitudes.

The Chairman: How easy is that going to be?

Miss McGrath: It is not going to be easier than changing the attitudes of those who are rich, who have negative attitudes towards the poor.

The Chairman: Then where are we, Miss McGrath? The rich are not going to change

The poor are not going to change. Where are we?

Miss McGrath: Well, I do not think I said they are not going to change. I said it is going to be hard for them to change. It is not going to be easy but I think people are changing.

The Chairman: You have seen changes?

Miss McGrath: Yes, I think we have seen changes among people and Mr. Owen has mentioned that. We have seen changes in our own community just by the fact that people are getting together to discuss their problems. It is not going to be an overnight solution but I think we will be able to get some sort of change.

The Chairman: When you spoke of the maintenance income you said it was not the total solution, and this, of course, is something with which we agree.

When Senator Fournier asked you what services you would do away with, I do not recall your answer. I gather you did not specify. If you received a basic minimum income—for the moment let us consider it is adequate—would there be any reason for having, say, an allowance for the blind or crippled people or other similar allowances that we now pay?

Miss McGrath: No, I cannot say.

The Chairman: You cannot say.

Miss McGrath: I cannot see, sir, the need for those if we have the basic annual income.

The Chairman: If there was a basic annual income, you would agree there are many of these services that we have on that basis of a demographic annual payment we could do away with?

Miss McGrath: Yes, they could be re-channelled into other...

The Chairman: Is there anything else that could be re-channelled in that sense that occurs to you? You are a school teacher. You have this some thought. You are very knowledgeable with your knowledge of the poor. What else could be channelled out rather than in?

Assume we have the basic income so we do not have to worry about that. You know the services and the social benefit that they receive from time to time. Can you think of any? There may not be?

Miss McGrath: No, not at the moment.

The Chairman: Well, then, let me put another question to you. If we pay a minimum income to "X" person, whoever he or she is, then what basic services would you have available for that person in addition to what the income was?

Miss McGrath: Basic services?

The Chairman: Yes. What do you have in mind?

Miss McGrath: I would think that a person would have access to medical care.

The Chairman: Yes, I am providing for that.

Miss McGrath: Providing for that. All these basic...

The Chairman: You people are a little slow on Medicare. I am presuming that everybody has got it.

Miss McGrath: I am sorry.

The Chairman: Now, you are very good in your social services. Your concepts are excellent. I am assuming everybody has got Medicare and you will have it very shortly, I am told.

Outside of that, let us see what you think.

Miss McGrath: Services other than that?

The Chairman: We have Medicare, we have dental care. We have all the things. You have the basic annual income. Where are we?

Miss McGrath: I think that we would need some sort of—these people, if they have the basic annual income and are able to work—that is one side of the ball. If they are not able to work...

The Chairman: Let us have it for the disadvantaged at the moment.

Miss McGrath: I think we should set up programs by which, even though they are capable of earning their living, they could do something by which they could feel, and not just feel, but be useful so that this type of program would be helpful.

The Chairman: What you are saying is that these people should have opportunities. I am thinking of something aside from that. What would they need in the way of social services? Would they need counselling?

Miss McGrath: Yes.

The Chairman: Do they need programming at times of difficulty? Do they need the help of a social worker?

Miss McGrath: I would think that depending upon what their disability was they would need different services. A blind person might need entirely different services than possibly someone who had been injured or was out of work and therefore found himself psychologically cut off from everything that he or she had done before and there would be a need for counselling.

The Chairman: Then assuming for the moment that the disadvantaged—that is, those out of the labour force—receive the basic income and services and opportunities, would that be enough? Would that give them a decent life?

Miss McGrath: Probably not.

The Chairman: Why not?

Miss McGrath: I cannot think right now but there is something missing.

The Chairman: There is nothing supposed to be missing from that or else we have been missing a lot of things.

Miss McGrath: No. I think that as long as you take care of a person's material well being and we give them the opportunity to take part in life as it is around them, that is not going to be the kind of solution but at least it is going to be a way of achieving a kind of solution.

The Chairman: Give us a more adequate solution? What is the final solution? I do not like to use the word "final," because you do not mean final.

Miss McGrath: No, I do not.

The Chairman: What is a more appropriate or adequate or suitable solution?

Miss McGrath: I don't really know.

The Chairman: That is all right. I am not sure we know either. I think we have some ideas on it.

Senator Fournier: I understood that you would be in favour of consumer training?

Miss McGrath: Some types of consumer training, yes.

Senator Fournier: We have discussed also the problem of involvement in your organization and you are gaining ground. You are

getting ahead. There are some people becoming involved.

Miss McGrath: Yes.

Senator Fournier: Now, are there any children that do not attend school in Saint John on account of poverty?

Miss McGrath: I would not say there are children who are not attending school on account of poverty but there are children who are attending school and not getting the full benefits of school because of poverty. They go to school under-nourished. They come to school from homes where four and five people live in the same room. They come to school from homes where there is one light in the house and therefore you just cannot study in the evening. There is no table to put your books on.

There are children in the City who are coming to school but they are not coming to school...

Senator Fournier: You would say the number is rather small?

Miss McGrath: No, I would not say it was small. Just speaking about the areas that I really know which is the inner-City area, I would say they comprise approximately one-sixth or one-eighth of the school population.

Senator Fournier: Now, changing the subject a little bit; in this South End Tenants Association, about which you were talking and which had the film we saw a while ago do they have any alcoholic problems?

Miss McGrath: Yes. We have a great number of alcoholic problems. The Provincial Government has just passed a law by which it is no longer a criminal offence to be found drunk in public. The law in itself is very good.

At the same time we are not equipped yet to face the consequences of such a law.

As part of our preparation for this brief we did four hours taping for filming. We filmed the drunks of the area in which we live. We thought it was not fair to them to show it, but these men are on the street. There was nowhere to go. There is nowhere they can get a free meal, a good square meal every once in a while.

When winter comes they will be driven to criminal acts so they can get a nice warm bed for the winter, so we have a great problem with alcoholism at the present time.

Senator Fournier: What happens to a man who is under the influence of alcohol and he is arrested by the police. What do they do with him?

Miss McGrath: It is no longer a criminal offence to be found drunk in public. It is still a criminal offence to be found drinking in public. Generally very little is done with him unless he has been disturbing the peace or something like this and then he is taken.

Senator Fournier: What will the police do with a man if he is half drunk on the sidewalk? Will they take him to jail or take him to the hospital?

Miss McGrath: I really do not know what they do with them. Nine times out of ten if he is not causing too much trouble or bothering anybody else he is left in the doorway. If possible they will take him where he belongs but very few of these men have permanent homes.

Senator Fournier: What do you think is the cause of the alcoholic problem in certain areas; lack of work or lack of education or lack of many things maybe?

Miss McGrath: I think it is something deeper than that that causes the alcoholic problem. The alcoholics with whom we spoke did not lack education and they did not lack opportunity.

Senator Fournier: Family heritage maybe, father to son?

Miss McGrath: Not really. It is something that has to be gone into in great detail deeper than we have gone into it but a good number of the men to whom we talked were not disadvantaged as far as education was concerned, but as far as family background was concerned.

Senator Fournier: Thank you.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, may I ask a quick question?

The Chairman: Yes.

Senator Hastings: On page 9 you, as we have heard many times before allude to the fact there is justice for the poor and the rich and you state:

Free legal aid will be available to those in need at preliminary hearings and trials.

Are there not legal aid available at preliminary hearings and at trials in the Province of New Brunswick?

Miss McGrath: I think not, just for trials, not for preliminary hearings.

Senator Fournier: It is just being organized now.

The Chairman: I think what has happened is that legal aid is available in every province and, to a measure, here. If I recall correctly we raised this with the deputy minister when he was before us in Ottawa. We were told it is being organized. You can rest assured it will be one of our recommendations anyway.

Now, we have had a very interesting meeting here with both you girls. You have been very good witnesses. You are both very knowledgeable and it has been an interesting brief. We have covered many matters that are important.

Senator Fournier: May I ask one more question? I overlooked a point.

The Chairman: Yes.

Senator Fournier: What is the reason why these homes are not being repaired by the landlord? We have been told that Saint John is the oldest city in Canada. There are many old buildings and I would assume that many of them need to be repaired and possibly one of the problems is that you are required by the City, when repairing a building, to rebuild it to a certain standard and many of these buildings have been built during the 19th Century and it is almost impossible to repair them to good living conditions.

Is that one of the factors why there are so many homes where the landlord is so slow in spending money to repair the homes?

Miss McGrath: I do not know whether building standards apply to old buildings as well as new.

Mr. Owen: Presumably they are but there would be no way that they could possibly enforce them across the City without most of the people being evicted.

Senator Fournier: They would have to be demolished completely and rebuilt?

Mr. Owen: That is right. This would obviously have to happen with most of these houses so the City is sort of closing an eye to that type of building for the time being while urban renewal projects and buildings are going ahead. To enforce this overnight, they would have to move out a quarter of the population.

The Chairman: Let me just say it is becoming that a school teacher should do her homework, and she did it well. Thank you very much.

The Chairman: We have a submission by the Crescent Valley Area, Saint John, New Brunswick. On my right is Mrs. Mary Jane Whipple, who will present the brief. Next to her is Mr. Richard Saunders. Mrs. Whipple will now proceed to present the brief.

Mrs. Mary Jane Whipple: Mr. Chairman, senators, ladies and gentlemen, the recommendations contained in this brief are the distilled products of open meetings held in the Crescent Valley area in May of 1970.

We feel that this area, which is a public housing development of 388 families, has a great deal of importance to say to this committee based on the hard facts of their daily existence.

The opportunity given to the people of Canada to express their feelings about the problems of poverty, and the future course of social development, are well appreciated and the governments in Fredericton and Ottawa are to be commended on their initiatives in this direction.

But it is important to stress that however valuable dialogue is, and however vital the setting up of study groups and task forces, in the final analysis, it will be by their effectiveness in initiating solid, progressive programs that work, that they will be judged.

In this regard, we feel that it is of vital importance to any program that hopes to fight poverty that the lines of communication between people and government remain open, and that the poor be actively and continuously involved in the initiating and administering of these programs.

The poor are by no means a homogeneous group. They include the working poor, the disabled, the young and the old, all with differing needs, hopes, desires and abilities. We would like to call the Government's attention to the fact that low income groups are often in a worse position than welfare recipients who at least have the security of free health services.

In regard to the future of welfare programs, we recommend:

1. Information as to benefits, rights, appeal procedures etc. should be readily available to welfare recipients in easy to understand language.

2. Investigations into purely personal affairs should cease.

3. Familiarization programs should be initiated among welfare clients to overcome the fear of recriminations by officials.

4. There is a need for improved sensitivity on the part of welfare workers as to the needs of recipients.

5. More effective incentives should be built into future welfare legislation.

6. The permanently unemployable, the aged and disabled, should be provided with adequate supports that would alleviate fears for their future security and well being.

In so far as the poor as a whole are concerned, the problems are much broader than purely financial deprivation. The solving of these problems will require fundamental changes in the society as a whole. In this regard, we recommend:

1. The initiation of a guaranteed annual income scheme with built-in incentives.

2. Improved income support allowances for cultural activities and recreation.

3. We recognize the need to organize groups of persons who share similar problems to act as pressure groups for change.

4. One of the most serious blocks to the alleviating of conditions which create poverty is the failure of the school systems to meet the needs of young people. This is evidenced by the increase in the number of "drop outs" in the last few years. It is, therefore, recommended that the school systems be looked at critically in an effort to make them fill the needs of the youth for whom they are in operation. Such a study should heavily involve youths themselves.

5. Adult education should be readily available at every level, and incentives offered to encourage the re-educational process.

6. We urge the setting up of a family court system and legal aid system as an urgent need in this province. As it is now, the poor are in a nearly hopeless position in regards to family matters such as marriage breakdown, desertion, inter-familial brutality, et cetera.

Young people too, who become involved with the law on various charges do not have available to them a lawyer's services, if they

are unable to pay, until the trial—if there is one—actually begins. On minor charges, and some not so minor, the poor suffer from lack of legal advice, and are often the victims of summary justice.

SUMMARY

The purpose of this brief is to point out to the Government the steps that can be taken to break the cycle of poverty, and to offer hope to those crushed by our present systems.

Lastly, and in the strongest possible terms, we would urge the Government to act before the opportunity for efficacious action has been destroyed by the despair of inertia. By "we" I am a "we". I am not discussing them and those. I am poor.

Senator Fournier: In what section of Saint John is Crescent Valley?

Mrs. Whipple: It is the north end, public housing.

Senator Fournier: The north end?

Mrs. Whipple: Yes, public housing.

Senator Fournier: You say here when the other brief was presented, the South End Tenant Association, you would approve the brief that was presented before?

Mrs. Whipple: I didn't catch the question.

Senator Fournier: Did you approve of the brief?

Mrs. Whipple: Yes.

Senator Fournier: Are your problems about the same?

Mrs. Whipple: No. As far as housing is concerned I would say we are much better off.

Senator Fournier: On the housing situation are there more new homes?

Mrs. Whipple: This is a public housing area, Crescent Valley, all CHMC housing and therefore we don't have the problem they have in the south end, that particular problem.

Senator Fournier: I notice in your brief where you gave a little example, case A and case B. Do you have that in your brief?

The Chairman: That brief is not being presented.

Senator Fournier: I didn't get the other one.

The Chairman: You must have.

Senator Fournier: I have got it now. I don't need the brief. You agree with the other brief and you think your conditions are about the same except for housing.

Mrs. Whipple: Yes, that is right.

Senator Fournier: Your thinking is the same as the other lady who presented the brief. If you had the minimum income you would still want all the services and some of the recommendations?

Mrs. Whipple: Yes. I don't think money is the overall answer but I know it certainly helps when you are hungry. It is not the answer to recreational facilities and they are very much needed and cultural activities. They should be part of the school curriculum.

Senator Fournier: How many members are there in your Association?

Mrs. Whipple: In the Crescent Valley Tenant Association?

Senator Fournier: Yes.

Mr. Saunders: I would say about 125 members in the Crescent Valley Tenants Association. I would like to clear this up. This brief is to be submitted by Mrs. Mary Whipple; it is not the Crescent Valley Tenants Association. They tell me there is a brief submitted by the Crescent Valley Tenants Association, which I am not aware of and I am the president of the Crescent Valley Tenants Association. I have been informed, senator, that the brief is in here, but I say I am unaware of it. I am here and you graciously put me on your program and I would like to speak on behalf of the poor if time will allow.

Senator Hastings: You say "Investigations into purely personal affairs should cease". Would you enlarge on this recommendation?

Mrs. Whipple: I think a person's affairs are their own and the Government should investigate our financial situation if they are going to help us but morals and principles and this sort of thing are our own business.

Senator Hastings: Do they investigate morals?

Mrs. Whipple: Not mine as much as my neighbours, but they have asked questions.

Senator Quart: You look like an innocent type.

Mrs. Whipple: Not really.

Senator Fergusson: One of your recommendations is "The initiation of a guaranteed annual income scheme with built-in incentives." What built-in incentives did you have in mind?

Mrs. Whipple: I think this is leaving us room to work and if we don't make enough money the guaranteed annual income would ensure we made enough to live in safety as well as perhaps some comfort and yet we would have our reason to go on working.

Senator Fergusson: It would be worth your while to go on?

Mrs. Whipple: Yes.

The Chairman: What they had in mind for the people who are disadvantaged and out of the labour force was a minimum income and then a certain portion, say \$200 above, but it would only make a reduction of \$100. That is what I think they had in mind.

Senator Inman: On page 2 you say:

Information as to benefits, rights, appeal procedures etc. should be readily available to welfare recipients in easy to understand language.

Would family counselling be the answer to this?

Mrs. Whipple: It would certainly help. I still think that the literature and every day useful intelligible language, and no \$10 words in it, would be just terrific.

Senator Inman: Items 2 and 3:

Investigations into purely personal affairs should cease.

Familiarization programs should be initiated among welfare clients to overcome the fear of recriminations by officials.

Is there fear and if so what do they fear?

Mrs. Whipple: Well, of course they fear losing the only life-line they have, their welfare cheque. Whether these fears are altogether founded or not does not lessen the anxiety that we feel.

Senator Inman: Have you known cases where the welfare cheque was taken away unfairly?

Mrs. Whipple: As the law stands they are judged pretty fairly, I think, on the whole. I don't always agree with the rules of the wel-

fare. I feel that a person who wants to go out and work and earn \$50 or \$60 a month should not lose part of their cheque over it.

The Chairman: Mrs. Whipple, they don't in this province. This is one of the provinces that helps working people who do not earn enough or as much as they would get on welfare. This province has a record for permitting that, comparable with almost any other province except Alberta.

Mrs. Whipple: That is providing you can live on welfare in safety. If I was on welfare and applied for \$240 a month and I only made \$200, they would give me \$40. Actually, I could earn \$20 but if I earned \$20.01 over what I am allowed on welfare I would lose it.

The Chairman: What I am saying to you now is being practised in very few provinces. Some more have started to practise since we have got on their neck about the matter. Your province does at least allow a man to continue to work and give him the basic difference. They cannot do much more at the moment.

Mrs. Whipple: That is true, but it is still not enough to live on.

The Chairman: We are not arguing that point with you, young lady. We do agree with you.

Mrs. Whipple: If we were allowed to make more than \$20 above our welfare, this would be the answer, or one of the answers.

The Chairman: That \$20 above your welfare is a very local rule. As a result of complaints that came such as yours, it was raised to \$40 in the Province of Ontario after the minister appeared before us and a couple of the members went after him pretty hard. Conceivably it could be raised here. The other \$20 would come from the federal Government, and that is not bad. I am going to ask you a question and you do not have to answer because it is a personal question.

Mrs. Whipple: How personal?

The Chairman: Not too personal. I know something about you and the things that you are doing. When you tell me you were a road runner I found out what it was all about. Now you are improving yourself. What was the most important factor that helped you on your way up?

Mrs. Whipple: The faith that other people had in me, the encouragement and strength they gave me, and the practical help and the

to get out off welfare and be free to call my life my own and set my children free.

The Chairman: Would you elaborate a little?

Senator Hastings: You said "practical help". Could you tell us about that?

The Chairman: I am trying to get her to elaborate a little. In what respect, who had confidence in you?

Mrs. Whipple: I think it started with the welfare workers. Mr. Finnegan at the time was my welfare worker and he encouraged me. I didn't get any help with further education. I tried hard for that and didn't make it. Our parish priest helped and then there were social workers, at that time the Catholic Welfare of Saint John and then the Family Services took me on and were willing to train me with people who have their Masters in Social Work. I have been working and training for three years at the same time as a community worker. If these people didn't have faith in us and were willing to gamble on us, we would not have had the chance.

The Chairman: How many more were there?

Mrs. Whipple: Three of us all together.

The Chairman: Have you all made your way?

Mrs. Whipple: We are making it.

The Chairman: Have you improved your position as you went along?

Mrs. Whipple: When you go from nothing up you have to improve.

The Chairman: Was your salary improved as a result of your experience and as a result of the work you did?

Mrs. Whipple: My salary on the whole—I should say I am considered the working poor, but with the work I am doing now the future, of course, is a lot brighter. There is hope for the future. Before there was no future, no out. You had someone's foot in your back all the time.

The Chairman: You see a better future for yourself and your children?

Mrs. Whipple: For myself, yes. Certainly for my children. I have four teenagers and it's pretty hard to be told all your life "you can't work because we will lose the money off

the welfare cheque. You are not helping yourself or me. No, you can't join the Boy Scouts because I can't afford it. It is for the middle class. No, you can't take music lessons because we can't afford it. No, you can't do everything, you can't even work for yourself."

This is the difference between welfare and freedom.

Senator McGrand: Most social workers are graduates of social science courses at a university and many of them, while they are very familiar with poverty, have never experienced poverty at their personal level. Some of the poor who appeared before this committee have been critical of the social workers. Now it occurs to me that some social workers could be recruited from the ranks of the poor who by hard work have made their way from poverty to a sense of security and their return of freedom, as you expressed it. What do you feel about the professional social worker being recruited from people such as yourself?

Mrs. Whipple: Do you mean social workers trained without diplomas or social workers who have their MSW?

Senator McGrand: Lead up to it.

Mrs. Whipple: I think it is all in the individual personality. If they are suited for a social worker I don't care where they come from. If you come up from the school of hard knocks and whatnot you can be the most miserable social worker and you can feel "I done it, why can't they?" You can come from a well situated financial background and have much more sympathy. I think it is the individual and not necessarily where they come from.

Senator McGrand: There is the opportunity. Some ten years ago people who went through what you experienced would never have aspired to being a social worker.

Mrs. Whipple: No.

Senator McGrand: This is a phenomenon of the last few years and we find this everywhere, people who have gone through the school of hard knocks and are doing their best to help others out of it.

Senator Fournier: I understand that you are living in this new development, these new buildings developed by CMHC.

Mrs. Whipple: Crescent Valley is the oldest public housing in Saint John, 20 to 25 years old.

Senator Fournier: How do you find the buildings?

Mrs. Whipple: Cold and drafty. We have wood and coal furnaces, and mine blows up occasionally.

Senator Fournier: I was interested in the new buildings. Would they meet the requirements?

Mrs. Whipple: Each unit that has been built, each development becomes better than the one before, and the newer public housing buildings in the City of Saint John are very nice.

Senator Fournier: You are using a wood furnace?

Mrs. Whipple: Wood and coal.

Senator Fournier: Do you have janitors looking after it?

Mrs. Whipple: Not unless you want to call me a janitor. Each one looks after his own.

Senator Fournier: Is there only one family in each home?

Mrs. Whipple: One family to each apartment, four families to each building.

Senator Fournier: One furnace for the four?

Mrs. Whipple: Four furnaces. Each apartment. Three hundred and eighty-eight apartments and each of those apartments has its own furnace.

Senator Inman: On page 2, item 2, you recommend: "Improved income support allowances for cultural activities and recreation." What sort of cultural activities do you mean? I can understand recreation.

Mrs. Whipple: I would think that would be music appreciation, appreciation of the arts. I think it would be up to the individual. The opportunity should be there to develop the interest of the children. I think our children are our hope for the future. This should be developed in them at an early age to be able to find relaxation in good literature and the arts.

Senator Inman: Would that be done in the school?

Mrs. Whipple: It could start there. It should go on.

Senator Inman: Do you mean centres should be available to them?

Mrs. Whipple: Yes.

Senator Inman: Facilities should be made available that they could visit the art centres, and things. That is what you mean by that?

Mrs. Whipple: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, I would like to ask Mr. Saunders one or two questions as he is the president of the Crescent Valley Tenants Association, and I have a brief from them here.

On page 2 they refer to some of the things wrong with the housing. They say:

There is no insulation under the floors, making heating difficult in the lower flats.

There is no soundproofing in the apartment, and thus absolutely no privacy.

House-wiring does not seem to be heavy enough to carry modern appliances. Fuses blow if more than one appliance is plugged.

Do you agree with these things?

Mr. Saunders: This is absolutely true. In the Crescent Valley area they tell us we in the south end are living in mansions. We have never told the south end this but there is no insulation between the floors. If the woman upstairs is going to the bathroom I know she is going there. It is a bottom floor and an upstairs floor and no insulation whatsoever. If the children get upstairs and fight we hear every word. Also if they turn the radio up.

This is the first development they made in Saint John and this is why we are in it. Today we are building ivory towers, but the ordinary poor people don't want ivory towers. They want an ordinary home where the children can be upstairs and the livingroom is downstairs.

Senator Fergusson: Would you be satisfied with this kind of place, for instance, if you had insulation?

Mr. Saunders: Insulation... I don't know how we are going to do it out there. What we have suggested in the brief is that you could build row houses with the livingroom and kitchen downstairs and the bedroom will be

upstairs and if the children start any trouble upstairs one family could control the unit. It is either this or you must make sure there is insulation. We are going crazy out there with fights with neighbours upstairs and downstairs over this insulation.

Senator Fergusson: Isn't it possible to put in insulation after a house is built? I live in a house that is a good deal older—over 100 years old and I had insulation put in after I bought it about ten years ago.

Mr. Saunders: We have met with the representatives of Central Housing and Mortgage Corporation, the Tenants Association, and their committees have, and we had a meeting with the provincial end of it. They are a partner in this. We never met with the city yet. They say the expense to do this is almost like building a new house and they are engineers and much more expert than I am on that.

Senator Fournier: Now I have the right brief I would like to ask a question.

Mr. Saunders: I would like to read this brief for the knowledge of the general public who are here.

The Chairman: You do not have to read it, o.

Senator Fournier: On page 2 you give the figures on case A and case B based on income. You give a total of \$130.50 for one and \$189 for the other. If you subtract your heating, the coal and the oil for the kitchen, and so on, in case A it is \$66 for heating and case B it is \$74.

I think these amounts are really high. This just heating.

Mr. Saunders: We have submitted a brief that was supposed to go to all levels of Government. Some way or other it went to the Saint John Housing Authority. It was supposed to go to the three levels of government. In the brief we stated we would like to have a set ceiling of \$60 for the low income people. There is an incentive for people to go out and go to work. The way our scale works now, the rents are this way: we pay from a low of \$17 to a high of \$153 in these houses. The \$153 is based on a man's salary of \$6,400, which the post office men are getting now. They have to pay \$153 rent.

Senator Fournier: That is why they don't deliver the mail!

Mr. Saunders: One of the boards that was set up said the wage should be 6 per cent ... we are all working people out there and when we make 6 per cent, and add this 6 per cent increase on to \$400 and turn around and have to pay the housing authority 25 to 30 per cent it is no good getting a raise. It is going strictly to the Government.

The Chairman: We have had quite an evening. Mrs. Whipple is a new kind of social worker. Her job is based on hard experience and she understands what is involved. More of that is being encouraged amongst those who are interested in social work. I think the experience here has been a very interesting one and a very good one. We want to thank you, Mrs. Whipple, for presenting the brief and for the work you are doing and for the encouragement you are lending others. Mr. Saunders, thank you for coming.

Our meetings start again tomorrow morning at nine o'clock. This meeting is now adjourned.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

BRIEF ON POVERTY AS SUBMITTED JOINTLY TO THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY BY THE SOCIAL SERVICES COUNCIL OF GREATER SAINT JOHN AND THE UNITED FUND OF GREATER SAINT JOHN, INCORPORATED, SAINT JOHN, N.B.

August 3, 1970.

Brief on Poverty as Submitted Jointly to the Senate Committee on Poverty by the Social Services Council of Greater Saint John and the United Fund of Greater Saint John, Inc.

March, 1970

The Social Services Council of Saint John and the United Fund, upon the request of the Senate Committee on Poverty, hereby submit a brief for the Committee's consideration.

The best analysts of the welfare system are the recipients, themselves. The following is an interview with seven welfare mothers who reside in the Crescent Valley Development of the Saint John Housing Authority.

The interviewers were:

Mr. Henry E. Stegmayer—Executive Director, United Fund of Greater Saint John Inc.,

Miss Catherine Gale—Executive Secretary, Social Services Council of Greater Saint John.

Those interviewed readily agreed to this, and are part of a group of the Homemaker Services Program conducted by the Family Services (Inc.), Saint John, with Mr. Larry Gallant, M.S.W., assigned to the project.

The locale of the interview was in an upstairs apartment made available by the Saint John Housing Authority as a focus for "out-reach" programs for community and citizen development.

The reader is asked to be aware of the meaningful insights projected by those interviewed, and the depth of their understanding of the complexities surrounding them.

The histories which follow are written almost in their entirety, and with little editing as they were recorded.

The points that stand out in the interview emphasize the need for a revision of the welfare system to remove the stigma that the recipients feel, and to remove the penalty of

having payments slashed if the recipient or members of his family earn additional money to raise their standard of living beyond the subsistence level.

This should include day-care facilities to encourage mothers to be self supporting. It also points out the need to increase and upgrade the quality of staff in the welfare offices so that the workers are people with sensitivity and insights who treat their clients as human beings. A whole change in attitude is indicated.

Mr. Stegmayer: Would you tell us some thing about the Winter Carnival?

Mary Jean: It's the Crescent Valley Winter Carnival and it's the first one we've had down here—they have them in every other end of town, but not as elaborate as ours has been planned. Friday is the starting-off point, with their teen dance, "The Killer Apes" is the most popular dance band in the Maritime right now, at least in the N.B. area, anyway. The Killer Apes is a dance band for teenagers from Saint John. They are having their own crowning of their carnival king and queen. In this dance, they will reign until next year. They will also have a prince and princess from the first drop-in centre which is from 10 to 13; the second is from 14 to 19 and up.

Mr. S. Mary, is this the first Winter Carnival you ever organized in the Valley?

Answer: It is the first carnival of any kind at all at this end of town actually, and it's the first really organized community effort that we've had that could and should involve everyone in the Valley.

Mr. S. Who is going to be involved?

Answer: It is being organized by the people of the Valley, for the people of the Valley. The drop-in centre, which is City Recreation is involved and the Crescent Valley Homemakers are involved to a point...but the people of the Valley are doing the work themselves.

Mr. S. Do you have various committees working?

Answer: Yes we have. The teens are working jointly with the adult committee. They have made a quilt, and have sold tickets on to raise money. The teenagers made the quilt

Mr. S. Who sparked all this? how did it come about that suddenly you're going to have a Winter Carnival?

Answer: It came about by Mr. Ron Brothers, Supervisor for the Recreation Department, and the mothers and teens, to do something. The Recreation Department has a Carnival, with costumes, judging, in their different drop-in centres about the City. But this one is going to take in the "drop-in" and the Valley residents, so they're going to have a parade.

Mr. S. In other words, it's more than for the kids, more than for the teenagers—you get the mothers and the dads, the dogs and the cats, everyone.

Answer: Right! Everyone can become involved—quite a few people are involved in it right now.

Miss Gale: About how many are involved, Mary?

Answer: Twenty or so—in the planning—There are more than that involved in the whole plan. We need all the people we can get. We are hoping they will do some decorating on their own apartments, outside their windows. Floats have been donated, and are being decorated by the teenagers. We have fire trucks, the police department have two cars in. We have, we hope, the Sea Cadet band, and the Majorettes, the Scouts and Guides, and all the children are going to march in costume, and their costumes will be judged, according to age groups, at the end.

Mr. S. How many people live in the area?

Answer: There are 388 apartments in the Crescent Valley area, approximately 5.4 people per unit... about 1,900 people.

Mr. S. What, for instance, are the things that are common to you all, that seem to bother you most?

Cathy: Well, this is a public housing unit in Crescent Valley, and most of the houses are like—there are two different kinds here—the apartment that I'm living in right now has hardwood floors and tile, and I have a basement with a furnace. The other type has completely tiled floors; they have a basement, but they are without a furnace. It's generally considered the lower section of town.

Mr. S. What do you mean by that?

Answer: Slums yes.

Mr. S. How has this been made known to you?

Answer: There are three different categories for public housing in Saint John. You have Crescent Valley, which is the lowest; Thornborough is next—a little higher; then the public housing down around Rockwood Court, Brunswick Drive, the new high-rise apartments.

Mr. S. These are all subsidized through the municipality, is that right? And you have to have a certain level of income before you qualify for residence... How does that work, can you tell me?

Answer: If you apply for public housing... in my own case, I applied for public housing and I didn't care where they put me, but I was on welfare at the time, so you'll find most welfare cases are channeled to Crescent Valley, away from Thornborough, or Rockwood Court or Brunswick Drive. Most of them are channeled into the Valley.

Mr. S. By whom? The welfare department?

Answer: No, the Housing Authority.

Miss Gale: What about the Rife Range area next door? Is that public housing, and how does that rate with Crescent Valley?

Mary: That is the housing that was built for the war veterans, so they're quite a bit older than Crescent Valley, and they're set rates... one should be a war veteran to get in there.

Mr. S. Let's go back to the Valley arrangements. You mentioned that there are different kinds of apartments. How are these assigned to you... on the basis of the size of your family? Is there any measurement taken?

Cathy: I wouldn't say that. I have three children, myself, and have a three-bedroom place; but right next door there's a family with 12 children. They've got a four-bedroom.

Mr. S. The maximum is four bedrooms... what are some of the other things? You mentioned something about the furnace arrangement or the heating arrangement. I heard that this is quite a sore point amongst some of the residents.

Answer: It is. They are obsolete. They are coal and wood.

Mr. S. The kitchen stove is coal and wood?

Answer: The furnace is coal and wood. In your kitchen you use whatever you have.

Mr. S. The furnace is a central furnace?

Answer: No. Each apartment has its own furnace, and you have to supply the coal or wood.

Mr. S. That must cost a lot of money.

Answer: I know for some families it does, especially downstairs apartments; it's very cold with the open basement.

Mr. S. And it heats the upstairs so the fellow upstairs gets a little reprieve from the heat coming from below; and the choice apartments are the upstairs apartments, in the wintertime.

Answer: The choice apartments are the upstairs apartments, anytime, especially if there are kids, and you have to live under them. There's absolutely no insulation between the upstairs and downstairs apartments. The noise is terrific for anyone living downstairs.

Mr. S. I suppose that brings conflict and all sorts of problems... the neighbour downstairs banging on the upstairs ceiling.

Answer: I think I've lived here 2½ years, and the only time I've talked to my downstairs neighbour is when we've had a fight over the kids.

Mr. S. Why is that? Don't you ever get together under any conditions... you have nothing in common with them?

Answer: It's just that they are an older couple—their children are all grown up. Before I moved in, there was just one gentleman living there, and no noise, then I moved in and disrupted the whole building.

Miss Gale: Is this common in these apartment units for people not to know their next door neighbour or is there a friendliness between the people?

Answer: No, it is very common that the people just don't get together, unless they're forced.

Miss Gale: Why do you think that is?

Answer: Personally, when I first went down there, I really didn't have time to meet my neighbours. I went to school all day long, and at night I had the kids.

Mr. S. You say you went to school—you were teaching school?

Answer: No, I attended Technical School. I took an up-grading course. Before that, I was on welfare, and who wants to be on welfare!

Mr. S. Are you working now?

Answer: I am working now, but not at the trade I started out at Technical School.

Mr. S. What do you do?

Answer: I drive a mail truck for "Friars Midway".

Mr. S. What did you learn at Technical School?

Answer: The first year, I took "up-grading"... from Grade VI to Grade X. The second year, I didn't have much of a choice... I tried to get in and take the XI and XII... they only allow one year of up-grading—then the course. I took practical nursing but this just wasn't for me.

Mr. S. How did you find the up-grading training? Did you enjoy it?

Answer: I did very much.

Mr. S. Did it add something to your person the fact that you got new confidence in your self? Could you tell us a little about that?

Answer: Very much. Before I went to school, you wouldn't find me sitting here talking at all. It's the teachers out there, really. You're an adult, being helped by an adult, and that's the way you're treated... especially our English class. We had a lot of good discussions, topics of common importance things like this; so it brought a lot of people into the show, really.

Mr. S. And the people there were understanding of your needs, and they met you on your level, if I may say that? And they let you develop at your level? I imagine you became intensely interested in everything you were doing, once you got your teeth into it?

Answer: That's right.

Miss Gale: How did you have your children cared for during the day when you were doing this?

Answer: I had baby-sitters come in, which was very difficult. I didn't have any luck at all. In the wintertime, they (edit.—the baby sitters) didn't want to go all the way downstairs to fill the oil can and light the furnace or keep the furnace going. They had problems keeping the children quiet enough so that the people downstairs weren't raising a fuss. At the end of it, I had to board the children out through the week, and bring them home on the weekends.

Mr. S. If you had a Day-Care Centre in your area, would you have felt more comfortable about your children?

Answer: Very much.

Mr. S. Do you think it should have been that kind of program that should have run parallel with your up-grading program?

Answer: I think so, yes. Not just this. Now that I'm out working, I still need a baby-sitter. I'm fortunate enough that my mother is taking care of the two youngest ones, and my oldest one that is in school here at Crescent Valley, he comes home with me.

Mr. S. It would be a real asset to have a Day-Care Centre both for those people who are going through the training course as well as those who are out working, or even for the mothers who have large families, and could get two or three of them out of the home for a while perhaps, and could attend to the others a little more—give them that primary attention that the younger child will normally need. Do you think that sounds like a useful facility?

Answer: Yes I do, and it's very much needed here in the Valley.

Miss Gale: Do you feel that there are a lot of working mothers who would make use of his kind of service, and be much more calm about going out to work or to school?

Answer: Yes, I do.

Mr. S. You are now working, and are no longer on welfare rolls as such. Is that correct?

Answer: That is correct.

Mr. S. If there were a Homemaker program, could you afford to contribute toward that program, or would you hope to have the community provide it?

Answer: I could afford a certain amount.

Mr. S. What would you see in this program for the children, according to your needs?

Answer: I start work at 8 o'clock... a lot of people start work earlier than that. I find it would be most beneficial, because my children are used to being in the Valley. Right now, I have to take them out of the Valley to have them taken care of. I don't feel that if I bring anybody else in, that the children will get the care that I feel that I can give. Taken to a Day-Care Centre, or something like this, the people there are trained to take care of children, and I know the baby-sitter isn't going to lie down and go to sleep, and let the kids do what they feel like doing.

Mr. S. In other words, it would be a real help to you, all the way round, and primarily also to the children, and they would get the proper care, and they would get the kind of socializing experience that they would normally not get with, say, a teenage baby-sitter

or one who is doing a job for the sake of doing a job.

Miss Gale: Your children are pre-school, are they Kathy?

Answer: Two of my children are pre-school. The others are six and eight.

Miss Gale: Are there any other girls here who have this problem?

Mary: The way I find it...my husband works, and he doesn't make that much money. If I were to go to work, my rent goes up so high that I can't afford it. I have six children. Who can afford to go to work, pay double rent really, and then pay a baby-sitter for looking after children at home?

Miss Gale: Do you think this rent scale is unfair?

Answer: Yes it is.

Mr. S. How does it work? Can you tell me about it?

Answer: My rent now is based on my husband's yearly income. He was out of work for about two months, I still have to pay the same rent.

Mr. S. You mean when he's out of work, not earning anything, that's not taken into consideration?

Answer: Not when it's on a yearly basis. You've got to pay it whether he's working or he's not.

Mr. S. Have you ever gone to the authorities to tell them this is a little unfair?

Answer: My husband was down to talk to them, and they said it's based on a yearly basis.

Mr. S. How much do you pay?

Answer: I pay \$61.50.

Mr. S. And that's based on what—25 or 27 per cent of our husband's income?

Answer: Approximately.

Miss Gale: When your husband was unemployed, was he getting unemployment insurance or was he on social welfare?

Answer: No, he wasn't on either.

Mr. S. Are you getting social welfare supplementation now?

Answer: No, he's working now.

Mr. S. But when he stopped working, were you getting welfare then?

Answer: No.

Mr. S. He just didn't bother?

Answer: I probably could have got it.

Mr. S. What about his Unemployment Insurance? Did he claim that?

Answer: When he was drawing Unemployment Insurance, I still had to pay the same amount of rent, because regardless, our rent is on a yearly basis. Say he was making \$75 per week now, I'm paying \$61.50. If he went on Unemployment, say he was drawing \$30 per week, I'd still have to pay \$61.50.

Mr. S. Mary, what are the other expenses that you have? In terms of heating the place, and Hydro, and so on. Could you just give us an idea of that?

Answer: For my kitchen stove, I have oil in that, and that amounts to approximately \$5 per week.

Mr. S. That's \$20 a month just for the kitchen stove. Does it heat the hot water?

Answer: Yes, it heats the hot water; but if you want heat for the rest of the house, you have to have your furnace on.

Mr. S. How much does that cost?

Answer: Well I'm not sure because I get help from my brother.

Mr. S. What is a ton of coal?

Answer: \$15.40 a half ton. It's \$2.60 for a small bag of coal, which has to be purchased in one or two bag lots, and costs much more than the price of a ton, and only one bag is purchased usually.

Mr. S. So how much do you figure, if you can think back... how much that coal for the furnace in the wintertime, would cost you per month—roughly?

Mary: Mine averages for the last year, between \$48 and \$53 per month for all the fuel.

Mr. S. That's for the winter months? Starting when in—October?

Answer: November, December, January, February, March—we broke it down.

Mr. S. Five months—that's another \$200 per year—roughly \$20 per month. So you have your base rent plus your heat of roughly \$20 per month. Your rent would now be up to about \$81 per month. What other expenses do you have?

Answer: For lights, mine is usually \$4.30 or \$4.50 per month.

Mr. S. So it's roughly \$85 just to run the house. Let's talk about groceries. How much do you spend on groceries? You are a family of eight, right?

Answer: Yes. I buy my groceries on Friday and usually spend about \$35 or \$40 when I get my order. That doesn't do for a week. You have to skimp, and try to stretch everything as far as possible.

Mr. S. What would you buy for \$35?

Answer: You go around and pick out everything that's on 'special' for your weekend.

Mr. S. From store to store—chase up all the specials?

Answer: You have to in order to try to feed them all.

Miss Gale: Do you walk to do this?

Answer: My husband has a truck. We go to Sobeys and Dominion where they have the 'specials'.

Miss Gale: It's still worth it to travel around?

Answer: When you have a family that large, you have to.

Mr. S. What do you buy, Mary?

Answer: First I buy a 50 lb bag of potatoes for the week, on 'special' on the weekends for \$1.49. Meat—that is something I usually go to the Market (O'Reilly's) for that. To buy some of the stores to get it cheap, it's hard to get rotten.

Mr. S. What do you buy in meat?

Answer: I start off with hamburger. It usually is to be 3 lbs for \$1, it's down to two for \$1. Usually their sausages are very cheap, and for a while their turkey was the cheapest you could buy; and beef—we can splurge the weekend and have roast beef; then hot dogs and bologna. That's about the only kind of meat you can afford to buy. Then a 20 lb bag or 25 lb bag of flour every two weeks. You have to make your own cookies—part of the time I make my own bread.

Miss Gale: Do you buy much fish, Mary? Do you like fish?

Answer: I like fish, yes. I don't buy much because they don't like it.

Mr. S. How old are your children—what ages?

Answer: Twelve, ten, nine (3 girls) and the boys—six, five and four.

Mr. S. Let's finish the shopping tour. What treats do you buy, if any?

Answer: I buy a couple of bottles of pop a week, and get that two for 45¢. I can get a $\frac{1}{2}$ gallon of ice cream for 89¢ at Levines.

Mr. S. All the way across town—four miles away.

Answer: I have to go there for potatoes. You get from the paper beforehand which stores have certain things, and mark them down. Well, then you know what you're going for.

Mr. S. How long does this take you?

Answer: About two or three hours.

Mr. S. With your husband chauffeuring you in the truck. Does he help you shop? Who keeps the money?

Answer: He hangs on to that till we are ready to go to the store, and then he passes it over. When you have a family, and mine is tight, you've got to shop around.

Mr. S. May I ask you what your husband does?

Answer: He drives taxi.

Mr. S. How much would he earn?

Answer: If he's lucky, between \$50 and \$60 a week. This is about averaged out. Some weeks he makes more than others.

Mr. S. And you don't go to work at all.

Answer: No, I couldn't afford to. If one could possibly get by on what he makes, one is better off doing that, because if I were to go to work, pay a baby-sitter, and then pay for rent, I'd be behind. I wouldn't make anything, really.

Mr. S. Let's talk about welfare. Are you on welfare now?

Dot: I have been for four years.

Mr. S. Are you married?

Answer: I have been married.

Mr. S. Any children?

Answer: Five.

Mr. S. You're a single parent? How old are the children?

Answer: Fifteen, fourteen, twelve, eight and four.

Mr. S. How long have you been separated from your husband?

Answer: Four years.

Mr. S. How have you managed in that time?

Answer: Welfare.

Mr. S. What does welfare grant you or do for you? Let's be direct and say, what social assistance in terms of money do you get?

Answer: \$218.

Mr. S. That's for a family of six. How many children go to school?

Answer: Four.

Mr. S. This \$218 is for what?

Answer: Food, clothing, rent, fuel, light.

Mr. S. How do you manage on that?

Answer: If I had to live on just welfare—clothes and all—couldn't do it.

Mr. S. How do you supplement that income—what other money do you get?

Answer: There is a society that has more or less adopted the children.

Mr. S. Is this a fraternal organization—they've been doing this for four years?

Answer: Three years, but without their help, we couldn't have managed.

Mr. S. How do you feel about the whole system?

Answer: I feel imprisoned. I can't get out to work. I have to be careful where I go, what I do, who visits, who doesn't, in case I get cut off.

Mr. S. Tell me more about that. Why would you get cut off?

Answer: Malicious gossip, for one.

Mr. S. By whom? Your neighbours? Why would you feel so keenly, so badly, about this? Did they report you?

Answer: They reported me.

Mr. S. How did they do that?

Answer: They called the welfare office.

Mr. S. Is it any of their business?

Miss Gale: Why is it any of their business?

Answer: They make it their business (both the welfare and the neighbours.)

Mr. S. And they actually would bring you to task if they thought that you were doing something that wasn't according.

Answer: At one time, there was a neighbour down our way that caused me a lot of trouble—told a lot of lies.

Mr. S. And they never asked you what the stories were, they just took names?

Answer: They'd ask but...

Mr. S. How long ago was this?

Answer: Some while back.

Mr. S. Has it never happened again? You sort of learned your lesson early.

Answer: No. I became acquainted with some of the neighbours who carried a little bit more weight.

Mr. S. Have you ever gone to the welfare people, and said this malicious gossip is not true?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. Let's put it another way. Is the welfare supervising your moral life? Is that what you feel?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. Do you think they have a right to do this?

Answer: No, although in some cases it would depend on the individual.

Mr. S. But in your instance, it would not be legal, or right or proper?

Answer: I don't have anything to hide.

Mr. S. Let's go back to the issue about the welfare worker telling you to "mind your P's and Q's." Remember we said the suspicious people or the money people in the neighborhood said they saw someone visiting you whom they thought shouldn't be there? They reported it to the welfare office, and you would hear about it or get a call from the welfare office.

Answer: I'd be told about it when I went in.

Mr. S. Do you have to go in to pick up your cheque?

Answer: I don't now, they send it to me.

Mr. S. You mentioned something too, about medication, and you felt that it would be helpful if mothers on welfare would be able to get the Pill as a prescription.

Answer: They can get the Pill as a prescription, free.

Mr. S. But they have to pay a deterrent charge?

Answer: No.

Mr. Gallant: This was Dot's comment, that she, as a mother, has to pay a participation fee in getting a prescription filled for her or her child.

Miss Gale: Kathy was asking if Dot had ever been told that she was eligible for sheets and blankets and this kind of thing.

Answer: No I hand't.

Mr. S. Let me ask you this straight-forward. Had you worker ever told you all the benefits that you're legally entitled to?

Answer: No.

Mr. S. Has he or she ever sat down and said, "Dot this is what you're allowed to get."

Answer: No.

Mr. S. Do you know what you're allowed to get?

Answer: Not really.

Mr. S. Would you like to know?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. You should know.

Answer: Yes, I'm running the household I'm the "breadwinner in the family". I should know.

Mr. S. Do you know that this is a legal right that you have?

Answer: No, I don't. As far as I'm concerned, I have no legal rights.

Mr. S. Why do you say that?

Answer: I'm a second-class citizen. I'm put down because of welfare. You're paying my way. Any working person is paying my way.

Mr. S. Has this been told to you directly?

Answer: No. This is the way I feel. This is the feeling. The ordinary working man feels this way.

Mary Jean: I've been told that many times especially by the working class, 'cheating on income tax'. They were paying my way when I was on welfare for eight years with six children, and I was paying my own way just as much as they were, because although I was separated from my husband, he was out working and paying pretty high income tax and every time I paid 6 percent and then 10 percent on the dollar, I'm paying for my own welfare.

Dorothy: Yes, but the other taxpayers don't stop to think that we have to pay sales tax.

Kathy: I've done just as well on welfare as I do out working, because there is no such thing as a Day-Care Centre, or a supplement for anyone working.

Mr. S. Let's talk about that for a moment. How do you think the system could be changed to give your incentive back, and still make sure you've got enough to live on?

Answer: I think this talk about the guaranteed income is a good thing. I think that welfare could do a lot more in rehabilitation of families that have one parent, either mother or father alone, and re-education, and make it worth their while to go back to school. When you go back to school, your income is so low, that you really don't have the clothes to go with—your children aren't always looked after properly because you can't afford better help, and there is no Day Care Centre. You will still receive your medicine free, except for a nominal fee of \$1 for children's prescriptions and \$2 for adults. Other than that, that's about the only help you get.

Mr. S. By the guaranteed annual income, you'd also be removed from all these impositions that are put on you by the system. You could spend your money as you saw fit. Do you feel that this would be the means of making you feel like a person again?

Answer: It would give you back your self-respect, and it would give you a reason to try, and a reason to go on and do something with your life. But more important than that, it would give your children a reason to work and an incentive. As it is right now, if you're on welfare, if your children go to work, it can be deducted from the "breadwinner" as Dot calls it. The welfare goes down according to the income of the family. I was on part welfare because I received an army pension. If you work and earn \$20 per month casual labour, your welfare is not affected; but if you make \$20.01, they take \$20.01 off your welfare. If your children went out and got a paper route, they'd make \$20 per month. If they made 1¢ more, it would come off their mother's cheque. So there's no future. I have four teenagers. Two of them are senior teenagers and in high school, and one of the reasons I went off welfare and went on my own is so that they would be allowed to work and make their own way in life without somebody holding them back.

Mr. S. Would you feel that the system almost makes you cheat?

Mary Jean: It certainly makes a grand theater out of you, I'll tell you that, and a

great liar—with straight face; because if you get the chance to go out and scrub floors, you'll do, but you can't do anything that you have to pay unemployment insurance. You have to beat the system—you have to do this. It's an honest day's work, and it's a hard day's work, but if your children need shoes or if some furniture is gone and you have to get it repaired or replaced, you have to find the money yourself.

Mr. S. So you become very devious. Not only do you become devious, you become a liar. You become a cheat, and over and above that, the community seems to think of you as a second class citizen.

Answer: You're treated as second class citizens. There's a stigma attached to welfare. There's a stigma attached to public housing which is now called Family Housing by the CMHC. I think the system is ready for a change. Welfare has come up. It is still a long way to go. There is a rehabilitation program in the "welfare" by which the adult of the family could go to school or go out and learn a trade. But it really isn't implemented. It's just there doing nothing.

Mr. S. No one puts any effort into getting the people to go on these programs, do they? It's only when a person like you takes advantage of it.

Kathy: Can I just say something about the welfare, and my going to school at the same time? The second year, I took a practical nursing course while I said it wasn't for me anyway. The first five months, this was in-school training, I got \$65 per week by Manpower. When I went into the hospital, my allowance was cut to \$30 per week. I went to the welfare, and by the time they decided to help me, I was so far behind in debt that I couldn't have gone on even if I wanted to.

Mr. S. In other words, the thing didn't work fast enough to keep you from going back into debt again.

Answer: It could have if my worker had wanted to push it. I could have had it right away.

Mr. S. Do you feel the worker does this with an indifferent attitude? How do you feel about the workers?

Theresa: I don't have much respect for one particular worker. I've been separated for 15 months now and when I left my husband, I left furniture and all, and just took the children and came over to the Boulevard and lived with my parents. I went to the social

worker and asked for some assistance. I didn't have a job at the time. My mother couldn't keep me going because there were twelve at home as it was. So the social welfare asked me—he said, "If you had a boy friend, you could live common-law." Now this is the truth. I didn't have much respect for him right away. I didn't know how to take it. I said, "Well I don't have that interest thank you, I'd just as soon live the way I am." So he agreed that he would give me a certain amount of money for groceries a week, and this was all. Just \$15 for groceries to cover my three children and myself.

Mr. S. Yet you were completely eligible for total assistance if you wanted to push the case. He used his authority in a very arbitrary way to tell you what you could have, because he was almost playing God with you.

Answer: This is the way I do feel. I would love to have stayed home with my three children and got my own apartment, but this was impossible. I didn't have any furniture, and I thought if the welfare is going to think this way, I'd just as soon go out to work and live the way I am living now. This is another problem. There are four bedrooms and fourteen people in the house. I have to sleep with my three children in a large bed. This is the way that I have to live, and I can't afford to give any more money to my mother from my salary.

Mr. S. Are you working now?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. You're not on social assistance now?

Answer: No, I didn't stay on it very long.

Mr. S. How long were you on it?

Answer: About three months. Another experience—I had gone to town to get a grocery order, and my brother gave me a lift home, and the social worker called me in to his office and told me that I had been seeing a man—that he himself, saw me get out of the car. He followed me.

Mr. S. He also suggested that you should live common-law, and yet he turns around and chastises you for being seen with a man who actually was your brother.

Answer: My brother is married and lives in town, and was giving me a lift.

Mr. S. He didn't even ask you who it was you were with?

Answer: I told him that this is my brother who drove me home.

Mr. S. Did he believe you?

Answer: No, he just laughed. So I was going to be belittled. I was too mad.

Kathy: Yes, but when you have three children, it makes a difference.

Theresa: I'm more fortunate than a lot of others—I have my parents. As I said, I'd rather live the way I am now than the way I was before to begin with. If I weren't staying with my parents, I'd have to stay home and take all this.

Mr. S. But then your children are also suffering, are they not? They're with your parents who also are not that much interested in the children.

Answer: They are very good to them.

Mr. S. They're good to them, but there must be conflicts there.

Answer: There are a lot of conflicts. My mother isn't as young as she used to be. I have a brother who is six months younger than my oldest boy who is five. She's never been out of diapers really. She deserves rest. I feel guilty a lot of times about this. She does have a heart condition, so we try to pitch in at night, and get all the petty work done. But then there is the bathroom—this with any household, but with fourteen people—when can you get in there? If you go out to work in the morning, it's hard. When you come home at night, especially you're used to a little bit of peace and quiet you can't get this because the family—boys—and boys are going to play. There's much noise. There's no insulation, and the noise comes back as an echo.

Miss Gale: How many rooms do you live with fourteen people?

Answer: Four bedrooms, living room and a very small kitchen. It's quite crowded. I take turns eating. Mum feeds the children before the school children come home, and I have a brother who goes to school and goes to work. This is another thing about the house too. I might suggest at this point, that he tried to put himself through school and get some education, and yet the Housing is paying up the rent because he is working part time to buy his clothes and his books. This is the way it's working.

Miss Gale: Could you afford to have an apartment of your own?

Answer: No, because I'd have to get my children looked after, and I wouldn't be able to afford this.

Miss Gale: So you have great need for a Day-Care Centre too.

Answer: Very much.

Mr. S. You not only have need for a Day-Care Centre, but you also have need for some sort of housing that belongs to you as a family.

Answer: I don't feel like I'm their mother. I feel like I'm their older sister.

Mr. S. You have a fairly good job, don't you?

Answer: I have a good job, but it doesn't pay as it should. I'll be blunt. I'm making \$50 per week.

Mr. S. What job do you do?

Answer: I'm a legal secretary.

Mr. S. Your speed would be 80 words a minute typing and 40 words a minute in shorthand?

Answer: My speed in typing might be 75 and my speed in shorthand might be 90.

Mr. S. Is this a large or small firm you're working for?

Answer: There are three lawyers.

Miss Gale: Have you ever asked them for more salary?

Answer: I got a raise last summer—\$5 aise.

Mr. S. How long have you been working with them?

Answer: A year.

Mr. S. Let's talk about the total working conditions—levels of salaries. How do you think they could be changed?

Answer: They should be brought up with the rest of Canada as far as I'm concerned. I made much more money when I worked as a secretary at St. Vincent's High School than I do now.

Mr. S. If you went on welfare, you'd be eligible for more than you're making. Did you know that?

Answer: I didn't realize this—no. The social welfare worker never ever told me what I could have and what I couldn't have.

Mr. S. He was just happy to get you off the rolls.

Answer: That's right.

Mr. S. Your father support the rest of the household?

Answer: That's right. He makes about \$50 a week.

Mr. S. And there's other income from other members of the family?

Answer: From one sister.

Mr. S. So the total income in your family of 14 would be about what, \$150 per week?

Answer: At the best.

Kathy: When I lived on welfare, they allowed me \$153 a month for everything. They never told me that I was eligible for any extra—life for bedding—if I needed a new stove, a new frig or anything like this. There is a special amount that is allotted each year for replacement of household goods.

Mr. S. There's a school allowance too, isn't there?

Answer: At the beginning of the school year. If they think what you've put down is too much, they'll cut you back.

Mr. S. Let's talk about the kids at school. Do your kids go to school?

Joan: Yes, I have three in school.

Mr. S. What school do they go to?

Answer: One goes to St. Francis and the other two go to St. Malachy's.

Mr. S. How do they get along?

Answer: Not bad, but I think boys are all lazy more or less in grades seven and eight.

Mr. S. Why do you think they get lazy?

Answer: I think it's just natural, isn't it, for all children in that age group more or less.

Mr. S. What are their major interests?

Answer: Really, not too much. He works up at the store at Hillside once in a while. He's not the sporting type at all. I've tried to get him into Scouts and to go to Recreation, but he doesn't like the children down around here. I don't know what it is about it. He feels uncomfortable about it.

Mr. S. Why would that be?

Answer: He ust can't make frineds with the children in the neighborhood. I don't know what it is.

Mr. S. How about school? Does he get along in school?

Answer: Yes, he seems to. He passes, that's all; but he doesn't have any trouble.

Mr. S. Do the teachers think highly of him?

Answer: Oh yes.

Mr. S. Does he think well of the teachers?

Answer: Yes, he likes most of them.

Mr. S. Do you have any trouble at all with him in school?

Answer: Couple of fights going to school. He jiggered once this year, and I found out about it, and I really reprimanded him about that and it hasn't happened again. I don't think it will.

Mr. S. If you have any problems, do you have any difficulty in getting to the teacher and talking to her?

Answer: No.

Miss Gale: Are most of the children in school from this area?

Answer: Quite a few of them, but up here at St. Francis, they all come in from Loch Lomond.

Miss Gale: Do the children have any trouble with the other children who know their family is on welfare? Is there a stigma attached to this? Do you think they make it hard for them?

Answer: Well I really haven't run across any specific problem.

Mr. S. Do the kids ever say anything about this? What do the children discuss with you about their school life?

Answer: As soon as they walk in the door, I'll ask them, "What did you do to-day, did you do good?" They'll show me, and just tell me if they did well or not.

Mr. S. They're proud of what they're done in school?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. And they feel that they'd like to get ahead. Can you sense this with the children?

Answer: Yes, with the boy it's harder to get across, but the two girls do very well.

Mr. S. What about group activity such as Scouts and so on?

Answer: No, my children just don't go out. I'm a bit like that myself, so I suppose I can't blame them.

Mr. S. Do you have a husband in your family?

Answer: No, I'm separated.

Mr. S. Do the children feel this?

Answer: Well, they did. I've been separated now six and one-half years; and the first couple of years I found it worse than it is now. I've sat down and explained things to them.

Mr. S. They understand the situation? They listen to you and you have no trouble with them in any way?

Answer: Oh yes.

Mr. S. What about some of the others... your kids, Dot.

Dot: I have one girl with a 'chip on her shoulder.' She always looks as though everyone is bothering her. Everything's a both. She doesn't want to go through school.

Mr. S. She becomes withdrawn? Does she stay away from things?

Answer: No. She likes to dance and she likes to go. She doesn't like school, and she wants to quit.

Mr. S. How old is she?

Answer: She'll be fifteen in March.

Mr. S. Has she made good grades up to this point?

Answer: No.

Mr. S. She flunked a couple of years?

Answer: One.

Mr. S. What grade is she in now.

Answer: Eight.

Mr. S. What are you doing to keep her in school?

Answer: Right now I'm keeping her there until she's sixteen, and hoping for the best then.

Mr. S. Did you ever think of having someone sit down with her, talking to her?

Answer: No, she's not that type.

Mr. S. Do you think she might be induced through some counsellor? She'd react badly would she?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. What do you think is ahead for her?

Answer: I can't say.

Mr. S. What would you like to see?

Answer: I'd like to see her make something of herself.

Mr. S. Do you counsel her in any way?

Answer: I try. She's a child who doesn't want to be told.

Mr. S. She's your eldest, is she? Does she ever speak to you about her dad?

Answer: She's very, very bitter against her father. The three eldest are. They remember.

Mr. S. How do they react?

Answer: They just don't want anything to do with him.

Mr. S. They don't talk about him even?

Answer: If they do, it's in bad terms.

Mr. S. Does he ever come to visit?

Answer: Now and then; he's in Ontario.

Mr. S. What do the kids do when he comes?

Answer: The youngest girl will, 'daddy, daddy' but now the three eldest ones don't even want to talk to him.

Mr. S. Have you talked to the teachers at school about your oldest girl? What did the teacher say?

Answer: I had to call the principal a while back to make her go back to school. She refused to go.

Mr. S. Did the principal ever suggest she needs a counsellor?

Answer: There's no counsellor.

Mr. S. What about Mr. Cushing, or someone like that?

Answer: No, I feel that she's a child that authority...

Mr. S. I'm really not thinking in terms of authority.

Answer: This is how she would think.

Mr. S. Do you think if she had a group life with other children...

Answer: She has; she goes dancing.

Mr. S. But she is a worry to you.

Answer: Yes, she is.

Mr. S. Does she have a boy friend?

Answer: No.

Mr. S. What does she do in her spare time?

Answer: Dances, goes out with girls. The kids come to the house with her. One thing I want to put across—the married life and her home life, and the life they have now—

they're much better off on welfare than they ever were before.

Mr. S. Before your husband left? You had an acute situation there?

Answer: Very much so. She's not ashamed of how we live, but she thinks she's all grown up, and nobody can tell her any different. If she were here right now and decided everything just wasn't going her way, she'd blow up in front of everyone.

Mr. S. She'd get angry and sound off?

Answer: Yes. Her aunt is very good to her that's my only sister. They do a lot for us too. She's blown up in front of her at different times.

Mr. S. Her aunt could get through to her?

Answer: No. They're both alike—hot tempered.

Mr. S. Do you realize that there are services available that can be of help in this area?

Answer: Not to my knowledge.

Mr. S. You've never heard of any services that could be used?

Answer: I've tried the 'Y'. She's been in different things going on around the school.

Mr. S. Have you talked to a family counsellor?

Answer: No.

Mr. S. Let's change the subject for a minute. Let's ask, just a general question—how about church, does that mean anything to you?

Theresa: It started to mean more to me now, than it ever did before. I would say in the last seven years, I don't think I went to church too frequently. My hopes and faith are just coming back, or they have been coming back in the last few years.

Mr. S. To what do you think this is attributable?

Answer: I used to wallow in self-pity a bit, and when I started getting out of feeling sorry for myself and realize that I wasn't the only one in this predicament, I started believing again in different things and in other people. You sort of withdraw within yourself, and you lose confidence, and don't think you can do anything on your own. I still have a little fear, but not like it was.

Mr. S. Did this come when you got a job and went back to work, this sort of reconfirmation of yourself as a person?

Answer: My employers have a lot to do with it. They encourage me quite a bit. In fact, how I got this job—I was going for legal advice, for a legal separation, and the lawyer then asked me if I was interested in a part-time job. First of all he asked if I had any experience—where I worked, etc.—and that they were thinking of hiring a part-time girl in a month or so, and could he give me a call, would I still be interested? I said by all means. This is what happened, and three weeks later I went down full-time.

Mr. S. So this church bit came a little stronger as you became recognized as a person who had something to contribute. Am I putting this in the right words?

Answer: Yes, but more. Like I said, my employers did a lot for me and helped build up by self-confidence, and I started feeling better about people in general. I started thinking that this world isn't so bad after all.

Mr. S. Mary, how about you?

Mary: I've always been very strong in my faith, in my own way perhaps, but I've kept the children in church because I felt it would give them strength and the courage they needed, and I think it has helped them. They'll go to church on their own, and they don't have to be told—except for one, the older one now, he'd rather sleep in; but I've never forced the issue on him. He dropped out of church for quite a while, but now he's going back on his own. I never asked him to go back. I think the church has played a very large part in the family. Being a mother alone, with six children, I'm the oldest one here, and I have the oldest children here. My oldest one is 17. She's very active in the church. She's an Assistant Cub Master.

Mr. S. Mary, how old are you?

Answer: Thirty-five. My son is a Cub Instructor and he's interested in sports in the different team groups that they had at the church. When I needed counselling for my children, I went to our own parish priest, and he counselled them, and they always knew that he was not just a priest—that he could be a father image if they let him. He could be very kind to them. He could be very strict, which was very good.

Mr. S. He laid down the law when it was necessary.

Answer: He really did. We relied on him quite a bit. As I became more self-sufficient and self-employed and what not, I tried to

take over the reins myself, but I don't think I'd want to take over the family completely.

Mr. S. In other words, you need some kind of a male figure in the family.

Answer: I tried to be mother and father both, and I was failing; so I gave up trying to be father and just concentrated on being a mother, and that's not too bad.

Mr. S. to Mary B: You lived in the Crescent Valley district for six years, is that right? Now you've moved out? How long ago did you move?

Answer: Before Christmas.

Mr. S. And you moved to where?

Answer: Westmoreland Road in the East Side.

Mr. S. What kind of living arrangements have you got there?

Answer: We have a bottom flat. There's lots of room, and it's quite modern.

Mr. S. You bought it?

Answer: No, we're renting.

Mr. S. You have five children and a husband?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. What does your husband do?

Answer: He works for Imperial Oil.

Mr. S. What about the change from here to Westmoreland Road?

Answer: I find the children—especially my older one—his attitude has changed quite a bit. He's doing better at school. I don't really think he liked it down here. He's just the type of child who didn't get along too well with the other children.

Mr. S. Was he aggressive? Tell me why he didn't get along.

Answer: I really don't know. We've been trying to figure that out.

Mr. S. But he's doing better in school than he did here?

Answer: He's doing better, and his attitude has changed a bit. He's a more likable child now.

Mr. S. Would you say this went for the whole family?

Answer: No, my other children are younger. I have a boy twelve, but he's the 'going' type. He's in sports and all sorts of things.

think he would be happy anywhere. The older one now—he's just a little bit different. He's a sullen child.

Mr. S. He's your first-born?

Answer: Yes, it isn't that he want his own way all the time. He's just a different child. He likes books and that sort of thing; but now that we've moved, he has taken an interest in sports. It's surprising! He never did here.

Mr. S. Do you think the competition was too tough for him here? Or not enough?

Answer: Perhaps it was. The children down here are rough as we all know.

Mr. S. If a child is a studious child in an area such as this, he doesn't fare too well. Would that be a fair thing to say?

Answer: No, I don't think so. It's the matter of the personality of the child himself.

Mr. S. And you understand this personality, I'm sure.

Answer: Yes, I try.

Mr. S. What about your relationship with your husband. Does he get along better as a result of the move? Let's assume that you've always gotten along well.

Answer: I think we're just getting adjusted, but I think when we moved that they were more or less concerned about the children—the noise they would make; because with a family of five, you just know they're not quiet. So I think things are ironing out now, and we're just beginning to relax now.

Mr. S. You feel a lot better for it?

Answer: Yes, I do. The atmosphere out here is different, of course. There isn't the friendliness.

Mr. S. What kind of a neighborhood is it? People work in offices and plants?

Answer: Yes. A lot of the women work—the woman upstairs works. I shouldn't say a lot of them work. Some of them do.

Mr. S. You don't work, do you?

Answer: I can't say I don't 'work', but I'm home.

Mr. S. What made you decide to move—just for the children, really?

Answer: This was a big part of it, but our rent was quite high.

Mr. S. Is your rent cheaper now?

Answer: Well no—it's the same, but we don't have to pay for heat now.

Mr. S. You're living in a rented place which you rent from a landlord? It's a new flat, is it?

Answer: It's quite new—about four or five years old.

Mr. S. And you're renting that cheaper—your cost is less—your over-all cost is less?

Answer: We don't have to buy oil now.

Mr. S. Was your husband working when you were living here?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. So you've got a little more by being out on your own than when you were living in so called family residential areas, such as this.

Answer: Low income families. If you're getting good wages, you're going to have to pay here too.

Mr. S. So you found the incentive to get out. How long did you look for this place?

Answer: We've been looking for probably three years.

Miss Gale: Is it an apartment building?

Answer: Two tenement—one up and one down.

Mr. S. What about group activities for the family?

Answer: We're quite active in the church.

Mr. S. Do you go to church every Sunday?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. Your husband too?

Answer: No, he doesn't go as a rule.

Mr. S. Do the kids go to church?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. How about school—do they make out alright there?

Answer: Pretty fair. They're average students.

Mr. S. Are they making friends in the new place pretty easily?

Answer: Yes.

Mr. S. How about you? Are you making friends with the other women there?

Answer: It's pretty hard in the wintertime; people generally stay in the house. In the

summertime—I don't find it too hard to make friends.

Mr. S. What are your hopes for the future?

Answer: I hope to own our own home eventually.

Mr. S. How are you going to accomplish that?

Answer: I don't know really. The way things are right now, it's pretty impossible.

Mr. S. Just making ends meet, if that. Any savings at all?

Answer: No.

Mr. S. How would you think one might be able, in your circumstances, to get a home of your own?

Answer: I really don't know.

Miss Gale: As your children get out on their own, you'll have more money for yourselves. Maybe at that time you may be able to save something. Do you think you could?

Mr. Stegmayer: That's a long time away...

Answer: If you don't do it now—It's such a long-termed thing.

Mr. S. If I proposed an idea to you, and say the City or some public body got into the housing business, and they were able to lend you money at a lower rate for mortgages than is presently available, would you be able to swing a mortgage of 6 percent and say \$2,000?

Answer: Not right now. Maybe in a couple of years, I don't know.

Mr. S. Say \$2,000 at 6 percent would cost \$120 per year interest, and then you'd pay back on the principal maybe another \$200. It might cost you from \$500 to \$700 per year, if there were some civic or governmental body that went into the housing business from whom you could borrow money at a lower rate. You're paying that much rent now.

Answer: We're paying a lot of rent, but that's taking in all our facilities.

Mr. S. How much rent do you pay?

Answer: We pay \$150.

Mr. S. In other words, if you had a down payment of \$2,000 or \$3,000 which you could repay at a low interest rate, you could almost swing a house. I have a three bedroom house, and I pay \$92 per month for principal, interest and taxes. I bought it ten years ago. The down payment was something like \$4,000—it

was a \$14,000 house. But I'm paying less than you are.

Answer: If you pay \$150 on rent, it's going to take a good \$60 more a week to eat. Well, say \$150 a month to eat.

Mr. S. So you live from payday to payday—and sometimes you don't even live to the next payday. You sort of have to "make do" for a couple of days before the paycheque comes in. What would happen if somebody became ill? Say your husband became ill?

Answer: We're pretty well covered at his employment.

Mr. S. Has he been working there long?

Answer: Eight years.

Miss Gale: What does he do, Mary?

Answer: He's a route salesman for Imperial Oil.

Mr. S. They're a pretty up-to-date company.

EPILOGUE: (Spoken by Mary Jean).

I JUST SAID THAT GOD HELPS THOSE WHO HELP THEMSELVES UNTIL YOU WIND UP ON THE WELFARE, AND THEN IT'S GOD HELP THOSE WHO GET CAUGHT HELPING THEMSELVES.

RECOMMENDATIONS

It is admitted that this presentation only reports one phase or one segment of the problems of poverty. It is, however, evident that this group of people in particular, have considerable insights and with the help of a staff person from the Family Services, have developed a comprehensive understanding as to their problems. It is also indicative how capable most of them are in resolving their problem with very limited resources.

The hostility which they express about the welfare system may be just and proper. We think it is an indication that the need for competent, professional people to work at the grass-roots level with people in such disadvantaged areas, should be a primary consideration, along with an increase in funds for maintenance programs or even as part of the introduction of a guaranteed annual income.

We feel that financial programs, by themselves, are rather sterile, and almost extend the problems to many in many areas, unless there were the opportunity provided, through community resources available, to having professional people planted in the centre of such areas where they can personally reach

all those affected. This would call for tremendous financial input in terms of staff and trained personnel. The place to begin, is to develop a recruiting program for the training of personnel who could supplement staffs from existing agencies essential to helping such people.

The evident inflexibilities of the social welfare system as they are now administered through government auspices, are a retardant factor in the rehabilitation of the disadvantaged person. It was evident in the discussion that, unless the people themselves did something by themselves, very little was accomplished.

It is indicated in the discussion that if similar demonstration programs, such as the Family Services program in the Crescent Valley area, could be introduced in various communities which are in such a particular situation, then a more positive advance could be made in the solution of these problems.

We seem to think always in terms of just providing maintenance funds to recipients, but we think that it is highly important that a competent level of leadership be provided so that resource people can be fed into a community area or into a neighborhood area who can help these people to realign and redirect their whole way of life.

As to the necessary staffing of such an operation, it would seem that a whole new

concept of a team-approach be instituted. It seems almost an immediate requirement that a greater co-ordinating of existing resources be also affected. It is evident that such services as Homemakers, Day-Care Centres, Retraining Programs for all the various needs of the population be explored and implemented.

Furthermore, these people need to be given an opportunity to be able to articulate their problems. Such new programs as adult education courses, or open forum programs with the use of films and printed materials, study groups and so on, could also be part of the method whereby services can be provided to such people.

The whole piecemeal approach to poverty and its solution will be an expensive program until the basic attitudes of the community can also be changed. We have shown conclusively in the presentation that people generally are anxious to become productive members of society. A process of eliciting their own self-confidence is paramount in their rehabilitation. In the long run, the present costs of welfare would be drastically reduced by diverting some of these costs into retraining programs.

The whole aspect of the development of insights and attitudes both on the part of the community and the recipients, seem to be, to our mind, a primary objective.

APPENDIX "B"

The Council of Saint John
Home and School Association

Honourable Members:

The Saint John Home and School Association are concerned with poverty as it affects the home and the student.

For purpose of this brief we are not considering poverty brought on by protracted illness or death of a supporting spouse but rather are concerned with the able bodied workers who are willing to perform gainful employment at a wage level which will remove them from the poverty class.

We are confronted with the man, woman, husband or wife who is physically able to perform useful work and can find no work available.

It is submitted there are two main contributing factors to the poverty problem which is basically economic disability.

These are:

- (a) The failure of the education system to train persons to become useful members of the community.
- (b) The failure of employers to employ persons capable of doing the work by insisting on order qualification for those they hire.

It is proposed to first deal with the failure of the educational system.

Our educational system is not designed nor used to cope with our poverty problem. The system is still centered around the basic concept of stimulation of the mind.

Our education program is geared to prepared students for academic training and only a minute portion of the program is geared to the teaching of occupational or social living. The courses from 1 to 9 are geared to qualify the student for entry into secondary schools, not to prepare a person for a useful role in society. Those who are unable to reach the academic qualifications are dropped by the wayside.

The present philosophy of the educational system was developed when education was the prerogative of a few. The few were the select who became the community leaders.

The programme of academic training for those who would be the community leaders

may have had merit. The philosophy of the education system was not to prepare one for a useful role in society, based on his ability, but rather to train the select (being selected by their ability to cope with the program) in a programme designed to develop the trained mind capable of philosophical and scientific inquiry.

The masses were not considered in this concept.

Our changing society has outgrown or greatly enlarged this basic concept but our educational system strictly adheres to it. Educators still feel and adhere to the philosophy that academic training is basic to any field of endeavour. For example: A student has to pass grade eight basic and be recommended for vocational training before entering the two years courses in the fields of commercial art, motor mechanics, electronics and carpentry at a Vocational School. But before being admitted to the three year course in the above mentioned courses the students must have completed grade nine academic.

The theory of training the whole child appears to have been somewhat clouded when a Superintendent of schools announces, as was done recently in Saint John, that the School is responsible for academic program only. He says that those who are inclined towards a different type of training should be excluded from the schools.

Also in the public school system a cut back of teachers has been required. Subsequently at the head of the list of courses for removal are the shop, home economics, physical education, art and music, all courses which the prepares a person for practical living.

Many schools have excellent wood working, metal and motor mechanics shops as well as facilities for home economics courses but these are not being employed to any great extent and further it appears that the educational policy is to remove them completely.

A manual training course is a subject which is of daily use in later life as it is applicable to daily living. Home economics possibly even more necessary as children coming from deprived homes are usually lacking in the requisite skills required to raise their future family's standard of living especially in the areas of nutrition, clean

ess, budgeting, sewing and baby care. Yet little attention is given to encourage the type of housing given. It is agreed programmes might be determined by the individuals' capabilities but nevertheless the educational programme should be geared to a useful and practical output rather than a theoretical and impractical programme.

Those in the poverty class are principally here because they are not trained to perform useful work nor to function as a normal worker in our society.

The three R's reading, writing and arithmetic which are fundamental to modern living are basically completed by grade six. However, further training in Social living is not a basic part of our educational program. For example, how to purchase necessities economically, how to drive, and many other types of practical courses are not taught although all matters which are involved in daily life.

Teachers know early who are more inclined towards practical rather than to academic training but are forced to keep these people in an academic program and judge them accordingly. There is a correlation between the children who do not get preschool learning at home or at Kindergarten and lack of success in academic subjects. These people are branded immediately, as being in the "D" group of less than average intelligence.

With the advent of academic streaming use in the "A" group feel smarter and superior to the others while those in the lower streams feel inferior and inadequate from the beginning. The judgment standards are purely academic. Very little guidance and help is offered to those preferring trades to high school and college.

The Dominion Bureau of Statistics, 1961 report states that there are 9.8 per cent in New Brunswick with no schooling, compared with 5.7 per cent in Canada; 19.5 per cent in New Brunswick having less than grade five, while Canada shows 13.4 per cent.

1965 statistics indicate quite clearly that the dropping power of the schools in the Atlantic provinces was considerably below that of the schools in all of the western provinces. From a labour force standpoint, a significant fact is that a higher percentage of girls are retained to grade eleven than boys in all provinces except Newfoundland. In New Brunswick, the retention rate for boys was 50 per cent and for girls 57 per cent. Nova

Scotia showed 60 per cent for girls and 46 per cent for boys, while Prince Edward Island was 38 per cent for boys and 43 per cent for girls. In Alberta, 80 per cent of the boys and 82 per cent of the girls were retained, while in British Columbia figures showed 78 per cent of the boys and 79 per cent of the girls. This indicates the educational programme is not attracting a large number of persons due to the wrong type of programme.

The retention rate for New Brunswick during 1965 in grade nine was 84 per cent of boys and 82 per cent girls, while in the western provinces, the average retention rate of boys was 92 per cent and for girls it was 93 per cent. Grade ten in New Brunswick statistics showed 62 per cent of the boys and 63 per cent of the girls were retained, while in the western provinces the retaining power showed 79 per cent of the boys and 82 per cent of the girls.

We are not advocating that all those who drop out of school before completing grade nine would not drop out if Vocational and Technical training were offered at an earlier age. We can assume however, that a good number of them cannot cope with the academic work beyond grade six and become frustrated and leave school accordingly totally unprepared to play a useful role in society. They graduate quickly into the poverty class.

Everyone needs the feeling of success even in a minute way, such as the making of a wooden lamp in a shop period, or the painting of a picture in art class. It is a known fact that success in one area develops confidence that carries over into other areas. If the pupils are all forced to conform to a purely academic standard until the end of grade nine, a good number of students will meet a series of frustrating failures. If these young people could have the choice of entering vocational courses at which they may be more proficient, then it must be assumed that their relative success in the trade courses may be the catalyst that keeps them in school.

Before these pupils can enter a trade and specialize in a given field they must be able to reason and be sufficiently stimulated to be able to handle the type of training offered. Does it take nine or more years of academic training to accomplish this purpose? Can the pupils not get the background of academic training earlier than this so that they can be offered the choice of an academic course or the technical and vocational courses? By the

time the child completes grade six he had learned the basic skills of reading and writing, and should be conditioned in the learning process.

There are educators who feel that schools should not be strictly academic. For example many Canadian and American colleges witness the fact that the ability of some students on the Football Field for instance is more important than their achievements in their academic classes. Therefore these athletes are literally handed their degrees at the end of a four year Football career. The coaches and professors are forced to do this because the educational system demands academic achievement before the recognition of various other functions.

The same principle should apply in the primary and junior high school level where the students are forced to take approximately nine years of academic courses in order to enter the program or trade of their desire. Many teachers have to push students from one grade to the next until they are old enough to quit school.

Many children attend school simply to retain family allowance cheques for their parents. Truancy is stopped in many instances by threatening to stop these cheques.

It is submitted that a major revision of the basic concepts of our educational system needs to be undertaken.

Professional educators are too apt to say "let us control education" by which they mean both the method (technique) and the content. The content is the business of the state to ensure each citizen receives a useful and meaningful programme.

It is necessary for the state to interfere and give strong direction before the present unsatisfactory system will be changed in such a manner as to alleviate the "poverty class". It is submitted that the policy of our educational system must be changed to a policy of preparing each person to play a useful role in our society and be self sufficient to the greatest degree possible.

Employers Failure to Assist

A major factor which contributes to the growing number of poverty class persons is the failure by the employer to accept persons for employment who are not over qualified. Employers use the schools as screening grounds to lower the cost of running their own training program for their employees.

Employers are also looking for a standard to judge people by. Unfortunately, the only one they employ is the academic standard of diplomas and degrees in courses and grade completed. Employers feel that if a person has a high school certificate or a degree then he has the ability to learn quickly what will teach this person. It would be more practical to train the person in the school in the type of work that he will be employed to do. What would be more useful to a person employed to drive a truck—a three year academic high school course or three years a motor mechanics?

Before the eighteenth century vocational education took place through apprenticeship to the master handicraft workmen under Guild supervision. Modern industrial education has grown out of the need created by the industrial revolution of the late eighteenth century which introduced the factory system.

The instance of employers on over qualification (i.e. High School Graduation) has resulted in a lowering of standards to insure persons will be graduates.—This is a feeble attempt to resolve the problem and is not beneficial to either the academic student or the overall system. A lowering of standards is not required rather a change in standards.

Careful examination will show that many of those in the poverty class can perform the necessary work when trained in the practical aspects of the work.

Employers and the education system fail to appreciate that every employee is not going to become the General Manager and does not need to graduate for that purpose. It is submitted that a re-appraisal of our educational system must be given so that the educational system becomes the means for the individual to play a useful roll in the country.

It is submitted under our system of enterprise employers have a duty to accept for employment—persons who are capable of performing the work to be done. They should be discouraged from insisting upon over qualification for all employees.

In order to relieve the continued development of the poverty class, employers must be made to revise their approach to the employment of persons with lower academic qualifications but who are otherwise able to perform the work required.

By over qualification we mean the person has academic training beyond that which is practically required in order to perform the

work. (i.e.) an; employer who insists upon a grade 12 certificate for a delivery man when the requirements are ability to drive and read the address on the parcel. There is an the work to be performed (a long shore man increasing demand for more advanced academic qualification which has no relation to the work to be performed (a long shore man does not need to know biology or latin or chemistry to load ships or operate dock equipment.)

It is respectfully submitted Canada cannot continue to ignore the poverty class by Social standards—Gainful employment must be

provided. To do this our system must (a) educate those who are unable to continue in the academic field for useful work (b) owners and employers absorb a faire share and proportion of the less gifted but nevertheless capable worker.

Respectfully submitted,

Saint John District Home and School
Association

Eric L. Teed

Chairman Brief Committee

Mrs. Olsson, President

APPENDIX "C"

BRIEF TO THE SENATE COMMITTEE ON
POVERTY

Submitted by the Saint John Board of Trade
August 1970

The Board of Trade and Chamber of Commerce movement in Canada generally subscribes to the statement "What is good for the community is good for business".

No one should quarrel with the suggestion that every individual in Canada should have an opportunity to have a standard of living adequate for at least the minimum acceptable standards of health and well-being of himself and his family. Therefore, we might say that our biggest challenge and task is to provide those opportunities which are so badly lacking in so many areas of our country today. This brief submission will not attempt to suggest just how this might best be accomplished as the solutions are not easy ones; but it is imperative that all those responsible in one degree or another for providing opportunities for all individuals work actively and co-operatively together.

The Saint John Board of Trade is vitally concerned with industrial development, but not in a vacuum. Social development must go hand in hand with any industrial growth in this city. With the subject of poverty in mind and the numerous and complex social problems which contribute to it, the Board of Trade feels the future of this city from the point of view of infrastructure must include the consideration of these social problems.

Infrastructure is an essential element in any industrial development program and this development will undoubtedly attract large numbers of people from other areas. Such a migration may result in an increase in the number of social problems in Saint John. This probability must be considered in any government-supported infrastructure programs undertaken in Saint John.

Another most important consideration is that of social input in physical planning for redevelopment schemes in our metropolitan areas. Saint John is one of many Canadian urban communities undergoing extensive urban redevelopment and here again particular attention must continue to be given to those social problems which must be included in planning if redevelopment is to really be effective.

Federal involvement in a war on poverty is essential. However, before the federal government imposes any more social service programs on the provinces it should properly determine just what the provinces really need and are in a position to effectively implement. It has all too often been the case that the provinces haven't been able to find the money to meet their portion of federal-provincial cost-sharing arrangements. Each province, because it has its own peculiar circumstances to contend with, must be treated according to its abilities to pay. Cost-sharing arrangements must therefore be flexible and within financial reach.

Another challenging task of government and people alike is to change community attitudes concerning this matter of poverty—both those of the recipients and of the givers. Motivation must be given to initiate a continuing grass-roots dialogue that is positively action-oriented. And every effort must be applied to assure that all segments and voices in the community have an opportunity to be involved in such dialogue. Community education will mean a team effort and the Board of Trade is prepared to do its share particularly by involving the business community in social development action and encouraging it to play its proper role in such action.

Having committed the Board of Trade to the challenging task of changing community attitudes leads us to another vital matter. A consistent and major area of friction between the attitudes of the givers and those of the recipients is that of misuse, or alleged misuse, of social service funds including unemployment insurance. We are concerned that the subject of welfare could become a dividing force in our society unless obvious abuses are eliminated. While we believe Canadian taxpayers are quite prepared to support fully genuine cases of hardship, they are not prepared to support the growing number of perennial abusers of welfare assistance. The full recourses available for welfare should be directed to those having legitimate needs, all others should be identified and eliminated from welfare assistance programs. If we do not develop this kind of efficiency in welfare assistance the Canadian taxpayer, who after all bears the financial burden, will reject necessary programs and the whole concept of enlightened social assistance will be endangered. Can we build in some assurance that a

constant, close scrutiny will be kept over the distribution of social service funds?

There are obviously many other problem areas which need investigation and the following are only two:—

Should there be a differential allowed for varying economic needs of people by region as well as by rural versus urban considerations?

What methods can be devised to assure that a solid base of citizen involvement is encouraged in all possible areas of delivery of social services? Can we be sure that, wherever possible, private agencies provide all necessary social services?

With all our modern technology we are seemingly unable to effectively come to grips with our social problems and the multitude and complexity of causes behind them. Canada needs social structures that will give its people the right and the opportunity to

achieve the basic minimum kind of economic and social well-being adequate to meet their particular needs. Somehow we must create the enabling organization that will see to it that the best social structures are established and made to work to the betterment of all our people. In this regard we feel that a great deal of the sheer dollar costs of an adequate welfare or income supplement plan could and should be made available through the cancelling of the universal aspects of such programs as family allowance and old age pension and combining these plans with other existing social service programs into a one-channel program aimed directly at those in need.

Respectfully submitted,

SAINT JOHN BOARD OF
TRADE

Frederick J. Roderick, President
Peter Woods, Chairman Health
and Welfare Committee.

APPENDIX "D"

BRIEF
to
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
on
POVERTY
by
THE NEW BRUNSWICK FEDERATION OF
LABOUR
(C.L.C.)
August, 1970
Saint John, N.B.

Honourable David A. Croll, Q.C., Chairman and Members of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty:

The New Brunswick Federation of Labour was most pleased to receive an invitation from your Research Consultant, Mr. Richard L. M. Lord, to appear before your Special Senate Committee on Poverty and make known to you our views on those people that are not able to provide for their material, social and cultural well-being.

Background on the New Brunswick Federation of Labour

The New Brunswick Federation of Labour has been in existence since February 25, 1914, when it obtained a charter from the Trades and Labour Congress of Canada. In 1956, the Canadian Labour Congress came into being with the merger of the Trades and Labour Congress of Canada and the Canadian Congress of Labour. The C.L.C. granted the New Brunswick Federation of Labour its new charter on August 27, 1957.

Our Federation is composed of forty-one different unions with 163 locals and 25,000 members. Also affiliated are seven Labour Councils representing major communities in our province. It is estimated we represent 112,500 union members and their families out of an estimated N.B. population of 625,000.

Statement by the Canadian Welfare Council.

In January, 1969, the Canadian Welfare Council issued a statement entitled "Social Policies for Canada, Part I".

We would like to quote from the statement, some of their comments:

"Continuing poverty in rich urban and industrialized countries means exclusion

from the expanding comforts, opportunities, and self-respect accorded to the majority. Physical hardship is not poverty's only characteristic. A person is poverty stricken when he is full of a deep sense of inequality and feels chronic exclusion and alienation from the wider society in which he lives."

The Council noted different causes of poverty by categorizing them but added further that "in real life different types of poverty and their causes intermingle, sometimes in an inextricable manner."

Life-Cycle Poverty—is liable to press in on people during predictable periods in their lives; in childhood, later when they have children of their own to support and again in old age.

Depressed Area Poverty—At any point in time some regions will depend more heavily than others on declining forms of production.

Crisis Poverty—Some people suffer from sharp but temporary set-backs to their living standards arising from unemployment, illness, injury, desertion or death of the breadwinner.

Poverty Due to Long-term Dependency—Many people are physically or mentally handicapped from birth, and have never earned a living.

Inner-city Poverty—There tends to be some segregation of richer and poorer households in every town or city. In larger towns the concentration of poor people in particular areas may impose an accumulation of mutually reinforcing social handicaps upon all who live in these neighbourhoods.

The Canadian Welfare Council has called for a complete review and revision of current social policies to plug gaps in existing social welfare programs and to improve existing programs. The Council calls for provision of a guaranteed annual income for all Canadians as a needed first step.

Statement by the Economic Council of Canada

In their *Fifth Annual Review* the Economic Council of Canada said:

"Poverty in Canada is real. Its numbers are not in the thousands but in the millions. There is more of it than our society can tolerate, more than our economy can afford, and far more than existing measures and efforts can cope with. Its persistence, at a time when the bulk of Canadians enjoy one of the highest standards of living in the world, is a disgrace."

In their *Sixth Annual Review* entitled *"Perspective 1975"*, the Economic Council of Canada spoke of the costs and economic implications of poverty. These were best described as:

Lost Output—the additional production of goods and services that the poor would have generated had their productive potential been fully developed and effectively used.

Diverted Output—consists of the goods and services not produced because productive resources are diverted from other potential uses into activities made necessary by the failure to eliminate remediable poverty.

On welfare assistance the Council said:

"Welfare assistance is provided in a manner and amount that all too frequently undermines, rather than reinforces, the abilities and the aspirations of recipients to participate productively in the economic system." . . . "The majority of the poor contribute more to general tax revenues than they receive in the form of government welfare expenditures."

Canadian Labour Congress' Concern

Our Federation is aware that the parent spokesman for labour in Canada, the Canadian Labour Congress will be appearing before our Committee at a later date. We would be at our duties if we did not mention in brief the concern of the C.L.C. for the millions of Canadians in every part of the country who are forced to exist on incomes and circumstances which deny them a proper standard of living.

The C.L.C. is represented on the Economic Council of Canada and has representation on the Board of Directors of the Canadian Welfare Council.

During the last seven years, the Canadian Labour Congress has urged its affiliates to turn their attention to a particular problem affecting Canadian society in what has become known as labour's Citizenship Month Program. This year we focused attention on A Guaranteed Annual Income as a social right for every Canadian. Some of the other Citizenship Month Projects were: Canada Pension Plan, A Health Charter for Canadians, Taxation—Carter Commission Report, and Housing. All of these programs play some role in the matter that has become a concern of your Special Senate Committee.

Canadian Labour, the official monthly publication of labour devoted a whole issue in August, 1969 to the question of poverty. Other publications of the C.L.C. have had articles on the subject and almost every trade union publication in Canada has had articles on poverty in order to inform their members of the problems of the poor.

Before embarking upon the views of our own Federation, we would like to quote excerpts from the Memorandum to the Government of Canada by the C.L.C. on March 23, 1970 and from the Policy Statement on Poverty as adopted by the 1,500 delegates at the 8th Constitutional Convention of the C.L.C. in Edmonton in May of this year.

In the Memorandum, the C.L.C. said:

"The allegation has been made that in insisting on high wages, the trade unions are somehow doing an injustice to those who cannot bargain for their own incomes: the aged, the unorganized, and those with low incomes generally. We cannot accept this proposition. Trade unions do not create poverty. On the contrary, they have tended to eliminate it for that portion of the working population which is to be found in their ranks. Trade unions have furthermore a proud record of action on behalf of those who do not directly enjoy the benefits of union efforts, as witness campaigns for improved old age security legislation, medicare and other social measures. We do not for a moment believe that voluntary restraints on our part would contribute in any way to improving the lot of the poor. We doubt that Canadian corporations will respond to more modest wage demands by keeping prices down or

giving consumers any other benefit that such restraints might justify. The rules of the game do not work that way."

"The solution for poverty lies in your hands since government alone has sovereign powers to effect a more just redistribution of the national product as well as to equalize opportunity. We do not think that the way to accomplish this is by imposing restraints on trade unions whether in the name of preventing inflation or otherwise. Indeed, as we indicate below, your anti-inflationary efforts are likely to lead to an increase in poverty since you seem so readily disposed to accept an increase in unemployment with every indication of equanimity."

The Policy Statement on Poverty said:

"The Canadian Labour Congress in convention declares that the elimination of poverty must be a major goal for Canada. The continued development of natural resources, the introduction of new technological devices, the growth of industry and the increases in productivity must be directed not only at providing greater corporate wealth or improving the incomes of those who are already well off, but must contribute effectively to raising the living standards of those who are segregated, by their lack of means, from the main stream of Canadian life. A major redistribution of the national income is essential with a larger proportion going to those who are classified as being poor."

"Basically, every Canadian, regardless of the causes of his need, should be assured of an income and services which together will provide him with a satisfactory minimum standard of living. Such a guaranteed annual income, progressing with each improvement in the living standards generally, is a proper goal for the government and the people of Canada."

"The provision of a minimum income, however adequate, is not enough. Before large numbers of the poor, the answer lies not in such a minimum but in opportunities to provide for themselves. This requires a policy of full employment, supplemented by adequate minimum wage legislation, strong labour market and manpower policies and by improved programs for regional development and rehabilitation."

New Brunswick Government's action

The New Brunswick Government in 1966 established a Royal Commission on Finance and Municipal Taxation in New Brunswick. The Report was completed in November, 1966, and the Government proceeded with its Program of Equal Opportunity in 1967. The program transferred many of the financial responsibilities and services of the municipalities and fifteen county councils to the provincial government. These services, all relating to people directly, were health, welfare, justice and education.

The quality of services varied from community to community as did the taxation system. The poor areas of the province had an inadequate school system, the highest welfare costs with taxes being assessed on almost everything. The larger municipalities had the better quality of services.

The area that the Government has been concentrating their efforts in since the program was implemented has been in the education system. Regional schools have been developed as well as new university campuses, teachers' colleges, technical and trade schools.

The Government has recently received report from its Consultants on the delivery of hospital services and some steps have been implemented to improve the administration of justice.

In March of this year the Premier, Honorable Louis J. Robichaud, tabled in the Legislative Assembly a White Paper on Social Development and Social Welfare.

Quoting from the White Paper:

"The program for Equal Opportunity has given New Brunswick the capacity to guarantee to every citizen the right to full participation in social and economic change."

"As in the rest of the world poverty still exists in New Brunswick. An unacceptable large portion of our population has found it beyond their capacity to adjust to new demands for educated, healthy skilled and mobile workers."

"Some, with proper kinds of assistance can be returned to self-sufficiency. Others have permanently lost their earning capacities and must rely on society for sustenance."

The White Paper further said:

"There principles will be the foundation of New Brunswick's social development policies of the seventies. There are:

1. The Government of New Brunswick has accepted as a fundamental philosophy the right of every citizen to participate in economic growth and to share in its benefits.

2. The Government believes the people of New Brunswick must be equipped with the skills and resources to take full advantage of new opportunities resulting from economic growth.

3. It is the policy of this Government that these skills and resources must be provided without regard to constitutional jurisdictions or traditional administrative forms to enable the citizens of New Brunswick to lead productive, healthy, rewarding and happy lives."

Since the introduction of the White Paper, the Premier has established a Task Force to be co-chaired by Mr. Emery LeBlanc and Very Rev. H. L. Nutter to perform a two-fold task:

1. To stimulate discussion on the White Paper and on the objectives and approaches proposed in the White Paper.

2. To recommend broad guidelines to the government to assist in the development of future priorities and programs in the fields of social development and social welfare.

New Brunswick Federation of Labour's Concern

Our Federation is as much concerned about a better way of life for New Brunswickers and all Canadians, as is our parent body, the Canadian Labour Congress. Limited in manpower and resources, we will attempt to give to your Committee our views on this vital question with which you have charged yourselves, that of the responsibility of finding some answers.

This concern has been shown down through the years when we sought new legislation or asked for improvements to existing legislation.

In early March of this year we submitted our annual legislative brief to the New Brunswick Government. The brief was centered around four main items of concern as well as a number of resolutions aimed at specific government departments.

We questioned the high level of unemployment as well as incomes below the national average. We indicated support for the Regional Development Incentives Act and the pro-

posed growth centres. We suggested to the Government that the next step was to establish industrial estates around these centres. We offered suggestions as to when tax incentives should be used; we referred to methods employed in other countries in financing the industrial development of their lagging regions; we mentioned initial government financing of the infrastructure government, the construction of industrial plants which are subsequently sold to private industrial firms; we stressed that firms locating in the province under the Regional Development Incentives Act must be prepared to allow their employees to organize into unions and that industrial development be related to human existence... people do not exist to serve industry.

Our brief raised the question of the delay in the implementation of the Medical Services Act. We noted the federal government's share of the total cost would be 70 per cent and that over 40 per cent of the population are without private pre-payment coverage. We suggested further that we supported the government or its decision that there would be no premiums, and we urged that the additional revenues required be obtained on the basis of "ability to pay". In the delivery of quality health services we suggested the establishment of group practice in community health centres where consumers can play a role.

The brief called on the provincial government to exercise its influence with the federal government to overhaul Canada's entire social security system, and the implementation of a guaranteed annual income for all Canadians.

On May 8 of this year, we made our annual submission to the Minimum Wage Board requesting that there be one minimum wage order and that it be \$1.50 per hour.

(Since the presentation, our Federation held our annual convention and a resolution was adopted calling for a minimum wage of \$2.00 per hour. This will be sought in our next presentation.) The brief further requested that the provisions of the Canada Labour (Standards) Code be implemented in New Brunswick to cover all workers under provincial jurisdiction. The brief noted a number of Conventions and Recommendations of the International Labour Organization, and suggested that the Board should seriously consider these, as the Conventions are minimum labour standards which all member countries (including Canada) are obligated to put into effect, while the Recommendations provide guidance as to policy, legislation and practice.

Our brief suggested to the Board that it consider another important point in reference to minimum wages: "That increased wages to employees will make management become more efficient either by new production techniques or better management. Workers cannot be expected to subsidize a weak management or an industry that is not viable by being paid inadequate wages or having poor working conditions."

We included in our brief a number of exhibits. One exhibit noted the high unemployment rate of 7.7 per cent in December, 1969 with only 21 per cent or 44,293 workers organized out of a labour force of 207,000. We posed the following question to the Board—To what degree does the low percentage of unionization of the working population and the high degree of unemployment help in keeping the minimum wage and minimum standards of employment down? To date, we have not received an answer.

In June of 1969, our Federation presented a brief to certain New Brunswick Cabinet Ministers requesting legislation that would encourage co-operative housing—During the last sitting of the Legislature the Government passed legislation for co-operative housing. Meetings have been going on between members of the Atlantic Co-Op Council and the four Federations of Labour of the Atlantic Provinces to establish a full-time organizer-technician to act as a Third Force to interest groups in co-op housing. This would be similar to the good work that St. Francis Xavier Extension Department has done in Nova Scotia.

At our recent annual convention a Political Education Conference was held with representatives from the three political parties in New Brunswick and a representative from the labour movement to discuss the White Paper on Social Development and Social Welfare with questions from the delegates. This dialogue gave our members an opportunity to hear some of the problems relating to this vital question.

New Brunswick Federation of Labour's Views

Our Federation seriously respect the task you have undertaken and we fully realize that there is no simple solution to poverty.

We feel it will take the efforts of many people, groups, organizations and various government departments and agencies.

We sincerely hope that your recommendations will lead to a dedicated effort to make

Canada a better place to live in for all Canadians

In line with what we have just said, we would like to offer our views in those areas where we feel it would be of most benefit for the plight of the poor.

1. *Encourage Collective Bargaining*—Mr. William Mahoney, National Director of the United Steelworkers of America in an article that appeared in the Toronto Daily Star on February 6th said

"actually free collective bargaining and the growth of democratic trade unionism has been something that has been tolerated in this country rather than encouraged."

Trade unionism found its start in the ranks of the poor. Legislation, employers and Labour Relations Boards are continuously placing roadblocks in the way of workers seeking their universal human right "to form and to join trade unions for the protection of their interest". Canada, through its eleven jurisdictions of labour must revamp their thinking in this area and think of people, in line with the Conventions and Recommendations of the I.L.O. as a minimum standard. A country such as ours should be setting the example rather than trying to catch up. It should be borne in mind that only 21 per cent of the work force in New Brunswick is organized as compared with 30 per cent in Canada.

2. *Minimum Wage-Fixing*—We are of the firm belief that people as human beings still take pride in themselves and their families. Minimum wage legislation must provide workers with an incentive to work. Minimum wage rates should be established at a level that would maintain a suitable standard of living for a family unit of husband, wife and two children. They should be adjusted upwards with the cost-of-living. Once a worker begins to make a contribution to the economy he will want to seek ways and means to improve his status to purchase those goods and services that will make living more enjoyable for his family.

3. *Economic Development*—We have focused some of our concern earlier on this question. The continuing out-migration of our people which was 35,127 between 1961-1966 (Second Annual Review, Atlantic Provinces Economic Council) represented over 80 per cent under 29 years of age. Thus, due to the tendency to migrate in the more productive age groups, there is an excess of those in the age groups who are unable to work because

They are either too old or too young. This relatively larger number of dependents lowers the per capita income. With an expenditure over 30 million dollars planned for the caring of the province's 50,000 poor in 1970, we must make it our task to provide good paying jobs to keep our young people here and attract new immigrants to our region.

The expansion of existing industry coupled with the new industry we are able to attract in our province under the Regional Development Incentives Act will determine for us and our children whether or not, we are really a true partner of Confederation or an economic unit expected to fend for oneself.

4. *Education*—Our Federation respect the efforts being made by the N.B. Government to upgrade our school facilities, our teachers and finally our children. We are very much concerned though with the opportunities of those students that must venture to university under government loans and who have borrowed their maximum and are not able to continue their education. Also the handicap of leaving university and having to repay the loan, at a time when the individual is contemplating marriage or had married and is committed to further responsibilities of a young married couple. Realizing education is a provincial responsibility, we see no reason why the federal government in co-operation with the provinces cannot undertake a program that will not deny to a student an opportunity to complete his education to the maximum of his ability without financial obstacles over his or her head.

We are concerned about adult education especially in the area under manpower programs, where unemployed persons can have educational upgrading in order to give each individual an educational level that will allow him to pursue a trade or course at a trade school. It is our feeling that such programs should also include leadership training so that the unemployed person can assist himself in other areas. Such programs are provided for management personnel under a heading such as supervisory training.

We are concerned about the use of the Memramcook Institute of Continuous Learning. The Institute, a new venture in adult education in New Brunswick is not being fully utilized for the role for which it was designed. We find the institution being used more and more by management for the training of their supervisory staffs while those in the need of adult education are being neglected.

We are concerned about our New Brunswick universities and our New Brunswick professors in the role of leadership and adult education. Very little is being done in this area in comparison with what has taken place in our sister province, Nova Scotia at St. Francis Xavier University and Dalhousie University. Universities should not be regarded as monuments of stone and places of learning for our children. They must become involved in the total community about them.

5. *Housing*—Realizing that the family unit is the basic unit in our society, we must change our attitudes in making available housing to our citizenry. A Task Force and housing conferences have discussed this problem. It is said a person must earn \$8,500 in order to qualify for a N.H.A. loan. Where does this leave those people in Poverty? If people in poverty could acquire a home, the pride of such ownership will encourage them to improve their well-being to an even greater extent. More efforts must be made by governments to eliminate land speculation by land assembly. Monies should be made available from the Canada Pension Plan and private pension plans at a better rate of interest for home mortgages. Mortgages could be extended for a longer period of time, e.g. up to fifty years, as in Australia. The setting of rents for low rental housing should be changed to give low-income workers some incentive to increase their incomes. Changes in the building code, new products and methods in building homes and the provision of services should be studied by government agencies or private industry. Municipalities should be encouraged to provide more residences for senior citizens.

6. *Credit Unions and Co-operatives*—These organizations founded among poor people are playing their role to some extent yet. It appears that such self-help groups are tolerated by government but not encouraged. We encourage our Eskimo people to do things co-operatively but wherever there may be a conflict with "free enterprise", nothing is done to encourage the development of co-operatives. Sometimes we feel the leaders of such social movements have lost sight of their real purpose. Governments should encourage the development of the credit union and co-operative movements by having specific government departments to encourage people with low incomes to organize and become members of such groups. Credit unions and co-operatives already established should be required to educate their members on con-

sumer affairs and to make a sincere effort to help people on low-incomes become members of their movement. The defenders of our free enterprise system should not oppose this type of self-help for those in poverty as they will become an asset to all in our society.

7. *Present Social Security Programs*—There are some responsible people that consider present Social Welfare legislation as "free stuff". Over 50 per cent of said monies is raised by special taxes while another 30 per cent is from employee-employer contributions. Monies raised for workmen's compensation, unemployment insurance, Canada pension plan, provincial hospitalization, provincial medical care and old age security are a form of pre-paid insurance that places an unwarranted burden on the low income groups.

We support a complete review of our present social security programs with a view of greater co-ordination between all programs. It is hoped that said programs will be geared to the cost-of-living to assure those people on fixed incomes will not move further down the economic scales. All private pension plans should have clauses to give retirees increases as the cost-of-living rises.

A greater liaison should be established between administrators of manpower, unemployment insurance and welfare agencies to assure each citizen that the most is being done when he or she is in distress.

8. *Taxation*—We urge a complete revamping of our taxation systems based on the Carter Commission Report. People should be allowed

enough income to maintain oneself and family prior to being required to pay taxes. Serious consideration should be given to the negative income tax as suggested by Mr. Reuben Baetz, Executive Director of the Canadian Welfare Council.

Conclusion

Senator, your task is not an easy one. We do hope our submission will be of some value in your final conclusions.

May we leave with you the motto of the International Labour Organization which was founded in 1919 with Canada as a founding member, "Poverty anywhere constitutes a danger to prosperity everywhere."

Respectively submitted

New Brunswick Federation of Labour

Paul LePage
President

Gregory Murphy
Secretary-Treasurer

1st Vice-President, Rolland Blanchette
Edmundston

Vice-President, Phillip D. Booker, Fredericton

J. Eric Pitre Bathurst
Frederick D. Hodges, Saint John
Timothy McCarthy, Newcastle
Chester McNair, Dalhousie
Alvin Blakely, Moncton

Opeiu 225

APPENDIX "E"

Brief to the
Senate Committee on Poverty

by

Alan Martin

President of Student's Representative
Council of UNB in Saint John

Although I am involved in student government and the initial approach to prepare a brief was made through this channel, I must make it clear from the outset that the views in this brief should be considered those of an individual rather than a representative of a group. I decided to prepare a brief with the intent of having a small group of interested persons work on it. Due to a number of factors, this became impossible; yet, I still felt interested enough to carry the idea through myself.

This brief was as much a method of educating myself on the poverty problem as it was a way of presenting an approach to the problem. Thus my basis is general and probably most of my points will seem redundant to the committee members.

Yet not being involved with any welfare or relief group has one possible advantage: My brief is not geared towards any particular agency or group and thus my ideas and proposals present a wider base. Whether an advantage or not, I have at least educated myself through the compiling of this brief with a working knowledge of the problems and attitudes of the poor of our country.

In Canada our culture and economy are based on the needs and desires of an affluent populace. Natural resources abound in our nation, so much so that our problem is the economic development of our resources rather than a lack of them. Our per capita income maintains one of the highest averages in the world. Although our economy has suffered from a number of problems which we all are aware of, Canada should have a very bright future lying ahead. Yet one problem which growing abundance has not solved and which is not about to solve is poverty. The Economic Council of Canada in its Fifth Annual Review defining the low-income state as using 70 percent or more of one's income for food and clothing and shelter, found that almost 29 percent of the Canadian population fitted into

this category. Although our per capita income level of poverty is higher than in most other countries, the problems of our low-income still remain. Being poor is a degrading experience in Canada even if you realize that there are others less fortunate again than you.

In our capitalistic economy, the economy as a whole is progressing, yet in the wave of progress is leaving an ever-increasing wake of bitter pessimistic poverty-stricken people.

The basic conception of a welfare or low-income class is not undesirable in itself. Indeed in every society there will always be a low-income class no matter whether the economy is stable or unstable nor whether the country itself is affluent or poor. In Canada the poverty level has risen threefold in the last 60 years due to a corresponding rise in per capita income over the same period. Whereas in 1904 the generally accepted poverty level for an individual was \$500 annual income, in 1964 the recognized level was \$1,500 annual income per individual. Thus an expanding economy or an affluent nation does not solve the problem of a poverty class.

The problem lies in the fact that the low-income class is for the most part poverty-stricken and the longer one remains in this class the less chance one has of getting out of it. This is derived from the fact that this class of society has developed a culture and society completely separate from that of the rest of Canadians. Their culture instills in people the feeling of rejection, neglect and disdain by the Canadian society. They are made to feel that many of the rights we middle and upper class Canadians enjoy and expect are not theirs also. They are made to feel inadequate and the longer these feelings are bred in one's mind, the more apt one is to succumb to them. The life of a welfare recipient is one with little hope for advance. This is when the problem of poverty stops becoming economic

and starts to become psychological. In the welfare culture the golden rule of capitalism, competition, is often rejected. Although they want to be productive and honestly earn a decent standard of living, their environment retards their chances. People become frustrated in their attempts to find a useful and worthwhile niche in society. Families brought up on welfare in their closed society are made to feel that welfare is not a temporary state but permanent and chronic.

Their environment of poor housing, lack of medical care, poor nutrition, lack of recreation and a lack of education disillusion a child growing up under such conditions. They come to expect abuse. This leads to a number of costly problems. Vandalism and crime have, by far, the highest incidence rate within this class. Medical care is greatly needed and very costly to society. It has been estimated in the U.S. that one poor man can cost the public as much as \$140,000 between the ages of 17 and 57. Yet it is more costly in another way.

Marriage separation is high as is family break-up. Parents sometimes place their children in foster homes voluntarily to give both themselves and their children a better chance in life. These problems threaten our society as we know it. How do we cope with this problem?

To aim at eliminating poverty is idealistic. It is similar to aiming at zero unemployment. This problem is too complex to even attain such a goal. Instead every possible opportunity should be made available to those on welfare to raise themselves from their status and to achieve a more acceptable place in our society. We must aim at eliminating the environment which causes much of the problem.

The two most important channels of aid to the low-income class are education and recreation. Without heavy dependence on programs in these two fields the poverty problem will never be coped with. The poverty problem is becoming increasingly more of an urban phenomenon. Great problems arise from the housing and caring for great numbers of people in small areas. Lack of recreation becomes a major problem leading to vandalism and other forms of crime. At the same time education is becoming a more fundamental ingredient in one's success in urban society. It has been found that there is a high rate of failure and drop-out amount low-income pupils as is stated in the following excerpt from a sociology text:

Low-income homes have relatively few resources for disciplining and stimulating the child in ways that are helpful in his schooling. There is less practise in reading, less use of formal language, less effective development of self-control, less effort by adults to encourage and satisfy curiosity. These deficiencies, compounded by an often turbulent and uncertain home life, contribute to school failure. Furthermore, most schools do not adequately cope with the problems of the lower-class child.¹

This is what I shall discuss, the urban poverty problem, specific areas of concern and ideas from programs to deal with them.

What problems do the urban poor in Canada face? I have already mentioned few—poor housing, lack of recreation poor nutrition and medical aid, poor education, all of which help to develop a poor environment with an inherent feeling of pessimism. Such a program as Guaranteed Annual Income is not the answer in itself for although it would provide persons with an income great enough to maintain a decent standard of living the welfare class will still have many of the same problems already mentioned. A more direct approach is needed. A person who has never had more than enough money to provide his family with a basic subsistence should not and cannot be expected to be farsighted. He is used to living on a day-to-day basis and often encounters major household problems when the slightest emergency occurs. The answer is education—education in the field of welfare and low-income living.

There are many agencies which are educating the poor in programs which could be much more beneficial if they were supported more substantially by government. Many could be self-help agencies which, once established, would offer minimal cost to government. In Saint John the poor have been encouraged to organize themselves through self-help groups formed in the South End and the Crescent Valley areas. The plan should be supported to the extent of establishing community centres where a number of services could be offered. First of all trained personnel, some trained social workers with other welfare recipients who are recognized community leaders, could act as supervisors and resource personnel. Day courses for mothers could be offered in much needed subjects.

¹Leonard Broom & Philip Selznick, *Sociology* (New York, 1968), p. 353.

jects as birth control, family care, family budgeting or whatever courses the people want or need. The basis behind such a program is that if a person is learning and communicating with others the feeling of pessimism will soon disappear. At the same time a day nursing centre could be in operation to alleviate mothers of their burden with preschool children. To gain full use of the community centre concept, a cooperative store could be established for use by low-income families who would become members of the co-op and thereby entitled to reduced costs on items sold.

The purposes of such a centre are fairly obvious. First of all the low-income group is becoming organized in a self-help type group which would create a much-needed voice for them in community affairs. Also a community centre would establish a community entity or feeling to combat the feelings of neglect and alienation these people often encounter. Finally the centre, nursery and co-op store could be employing people of this class, thus creating more chances for success which at present are obviously lacking. Certainly the idea could be modified to meet the needs of the particular group, yet the community centre concept in itself is an excellent approach to the urban problem.

Another type of program now offered which could be expanded upon is the use of night schools and Technical schools. This program is excellent and should be extended to offer chances for greater and higher mobility of such persons so they can become fully competitive in our society. At present an individual who is lacking a basic education (i.e. grade school) or has no specific trade will be subsidized by the Federal government to enable him to go to Technical school. Yet another use is lacking. Both Technical school and night school courses should be offered to adults in fields of economics, legal rights of an individual, etc. with the intent to educate the person on our society and also stimulate interest in education beyond the point of employment. This will help to create a better learning atmosphere in the home of the low-income families which as I have already stated is sadly lacking at present.

In the urban society the poor are often suffering from a lack of recreation as well as lack of education. As I have said before, this is very costly to society. If more resources were channelled towards recreation programs for these children, delinquency now and crime in later life could be curbed with

many, thus saving what resources would have been spent to detain criminals. There are three types of programs which I shall discuss. Although none are new concepts, they could be more fully utilized.

The first idea is one which recently has been attempted in Saint John. It is designed for the early teens at a time when frustration in school is at its peak. The first is the idea of drop-in centres where the centre is run by the youth and the programs are also planned by youth for their own particular needs and wishes. They require minimal cost in that the only thing they actually require is a place to drop into.

This program could be instituted into the community centre program very easily and provides youth of this age with a useful outlet for his energies.

Another program designed more for the younger children is the idea of camping, both day camping and resident camping. Although programs of this sort are being carried out at present their scope is quite small. For instance last year was the first year a resident camp was offered completely free of charge specifically to children between the ages of 9 and 12 years whose low-income background would otherwise have prevented them from attending. It involved about 100 young boys. Much more of this is needed. It offers an ideal chance for a poor child to get away from the crowded urban setting, to enjoy optimum chances for not only recreation, but also to break down the feeling of frustration and restlessness these children often have in the city. If enough resources were offered every child could have a chance to attend camp for a few weeks while for the rest of the summer they could attend day camps and other recreation programs as are carried on in any urban area. Yet the key to the success of such programs is that enough qualified staff with enough adequate resources to work with are maintained for them.

My final idea is a program designed for the older youth, some of whom may be working, others who are just separated from their families. The idea comes from the universities across the nation where the trend in living accommodations is towards co-op housing. Co-op housing offers cheaper accommodations than residence housing because the bulk of the work is done by the residents. At the same time the residents are providing a social function for themselves by the mere fact that there are a number of them living and work-

ing together. This idea could be used to bring together the young worker (possibly a dropout who is not making enough to sustain an adequate living, with others like himself). Cooperatively they could discuss mutual problems, offer each other moral support and probably be more equipped to survive the rat race of Western society. Like the community centre, night courses could be offered to enable the residents to better themselves or just to learn some basics which would be of some use to them. The basic thought through is that as a group they can help each other while as individuals they are often helpless.

Throughout this brief I have tried to maintain a perspective as to what the basic problems the poverty class in Canada have and some proposals which could help to solve them. Yet the poverty problem is much too complex to offer a simple solution for it. I have dealt basically in two fields—education and recreation. These two fields are basic in the fight against urban poverty. Yet I feel the government plays only one part in the role of combatting poverty through such programs. The government will undoubtedly provide the

impetus for these programs, yet most of the effort must come from an enlightened public and active poverty class. All programs will cost money but with initiative, planning and imagination the costs can be cut considerably.

The Senate Committee on Poverty will help to enlighten the public to feel concerned for their less fortunate fellow Canadians. Self-help programs can activate the low-income class. From this point the responsibility rests on the shoulders of every Canadian.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- *Poverty in Affluence*, ed. Robert E. Will and Harold G. Vatter. New York, 1965.
- *The Paradox of Poverty in America*, ed. Kenneth S. Davis. New York, 1969.
- Broom, Leonard and Selznick, Philip. *sociology*. New York, 1968.
- *The Challenge of Growth and Change*. Economic Council of Canada 5th Annual Review. September, 1968.

APPENDIX "F"

DROP-IN CENTRES

THEIR EFFECT ON DISADVANTAGED YOUTH

Presented to: The Special Senate Committee on Poverty

Submitted by: The Universal Axle (Sponsored jointly by the Saint John Y.M.C.A. and the Recreation Department of the City of Saint John)

August 3rd, 1970

SENATE COMMISSION ON POVERTY
THE CONCEPT OF DROP-IN CENTRES

To properly discuss the concept of DROP-IN CENTRES in a community, to understand their function and utility, we must pose certain questions pertaining to the problem. They are as follows:

1. What are DROP-IN CENTRES?
2. Why are DROP-IN CENTRES necessary? Where should they be located?
3. Are DROP-IN CENTRES fulfilling their purpose?
4. How can deficiencies in their utility be corrected?

The first question is relatively simplistic. DROP-IN CENTRES are, at present, a place where disadvantaged youth can gather in the evenings, to mix with others of their own age and background. The centres provide entertainment in the form of coffee houses, dances, and in-door recreation.

These centres are staffed by young people under the direction of a supervisor. The difficulties encountered by the staff in relation to the functioning of the centre will be discussed in another section of this document. However, it would be proper at this time to point out that staff and administration difficulties are numerous.

The second question is perhaps the most difficult to answer and will, therefore, fill the bulk of this document.

Disadvantaged youth are economically separated from other youth of their age, and do not have access to the same outlets of recreation and enjoyment as youth of higher income families. The situation can be traumatized if the disadvantaged youth has acquaintances in higher income levels, because in a stratified class structured society

such as Canada, the physical deficiencies of the poor, such as money, can be exceeded by the psychological problems these deficiencies bring about. A culture of poverty evolves, trapping all who live in that environment. Young people become discouraged, and this discouragement can turn into frustration and hostility. A culturally, socially and economically depleted environment may force the disadvantaged youth to such outlets of aggression which will make subconscious feelings of resentment surface or, to fill a void in his/her life. We term these acts as a result of anti-social behaviour patterns, however in as much as a middle class life style dictates conformity, conformity becomes impossible when the elements of conformity are non-existent to the disadvantaged.

DROP-IN CENTRES can find their purpose within the situation we have described. Frequently, these centres are described by the average middle class person as "good place to keep these hellions off the streets." Indeed, DROP-IN CENTRES can perform this function—if we accept the belief that disadvantaged youth must conform to the stereotyped vision of a well-balanced, affluent young person. However, we have shown that the forces at work to create a "hell-raising" youngster are much more complex than the average citizen realizes—if this is the only purpose behind the creation of DROP-IN CENTRES then they have failed, for there is no substance to them.

Disadvantaged youth need to communicate their fears, problems and thoughts with someone who understand their needs. DROP-IN CENTRES can provide the contact potential, but it must be maximized. In other words, the DROP-IN CENTRES must be person-oriented; rather than facility-oriented. To merely provide facilities would be analogous to building a log cabin without a fireplace, for warmth and friendship must pervade the atmosphere.

Within the last ten years, the phenomenon of a definitive youth culture has increased to problems of disadvantaged youth. Largely commercialistics, young people have been manipulated by consumer-oriented business interests and a facade of values has been constructed. Encouraging the young to buy cars, clothing and other fashionable items as proof of their "coolness" and "hipness" has

forced disadvantaged youth into an unenviable position. On one side, these young people have the opportunity to shun these crass values and create their own set. On the other, this vast commercial swing has pushed disadvantaged youth into increased envy and frustration, for they realize that these artificial goals set for them by this new false culture are unobtainable. DROP-IN CENTRES can provide the genuine side of a new culture, imparting real values and goals.

Centres should be located within the heart of the ghetto or slum community. Anywhere else would only impede the work of the centre, as the surroundings must not be uncomfortable—in the sense that a lavish environment would only make the young feel ill at ease. Also, to have open communication in the centre requires that problems be discussed. It would be foolish to assume that youth problems, be they emotional or physical, can be solved outside the environment in which these problems occur.

We have at some length discussed the philosophy behind the implementation of DROP-IN CENTRES. A number of points have been made, but it would be redundant to restate those points. Much of what has been written has been stated on many occasions by sociologists and social psychologists and we are certain that many briefs will be submitted to the Senate Committee which discuss the sociological implications of poverty. However, let us conclude the section of the brief herewith discussed with a number of what we feel are essential points.

A DROP-IN CENTRE should provide a place for disadvantaged youth operated by those young people for their peers. The centres should provide a place for disadvantaged youth so that their interests can be expanded through wholesome recreation. Centres should provide an opportunity for disadvantaged youth to identify their own problems and undertake and implement a solution to those needs. DROP-IN CENTRES should provide adequate guidance to youth so that involvement is practiced and not preached. DROP-INS should provide an opportunity for contact between disadvantaged youth and the general community so that age groups become inter-related groups.

By providing youth with a place of their own, there will not occur a subjection to the whims of others in authority, i.e. police, restaurant owners, etc. In a DROP-IN CENTRE a

trained supervisor can relate to the youth without interruption. In a DROP-IN CENTRE social skills can be developed, a sense of belonging, a sense of accomplishment, and a sense of worth through the operation of the DROP-IN CENTRE. A very important function of the DROP-IN CENTRE can be to foster interpersonal relationships between the youth involved, especially in a society where these relationships are becoming increasingly difficult to mould.

DROP-IN CENTRES can become a common meeting place and a centre for future projects, such as a job core, educational and psychological guidance, a night school and projects related to the general community.

Disadvantaged youth need help. They need the help of concerned, middle-class citizens and perhaps DROP-IN CENTRES are the place where these polarized sectors of our society can meet and become one.

DROP-IN CENTRES in Saint John suffer from many deficiencies which reduce their effectiveness in working with disadvantaged youth. The main problems lie under four general headings of staff and finance, support groups, administration and community support.

DROP-IN STAFF

Saint John lacks trained and experienced personnel to operate DROP-IN CENTRES. Most staff members have a sincere interest in the problems of disadvantaged youth, but have never seen established centres operating in other communities. As a result when the guiding people are unable to provide proper programs, the centre flounders. Lack of training in relation to communicating with youth adds to the problem. The result is a frustrated effort for both parties, for the youth who need to communicate with staff who they feel can help them, and for the staff who must provide help but are ignorant of the available methods.

A second staff problem lies in the fact that staff have two masters; their employers, be they government or private agency, and the group which they intend to serve. As stated previously it is the youth who should run the centre with staff in attendance as the guiding force. A staff member must keep both groups happy. This therefore, impedes the development of the DROP-IN CENTRE into a viable entity.

Thirdly, the staff member is forced to spend his time improperly, i.e. not with the

youth who he is supposed to serve but rather is involved with filling out administrative forms and making sure attendance figures stay high. This results in neglected youth when a "quantity versus quality" situation is enforced.

FINANCE

Too often a DROP-IN CENTRE must operate programs solely to make money. Thus staff members again have time stolen from them and disadvantaged youth cannot afford to attend these events. The end result is alienation from the DROP-IN CENTRE and a destruction of the total concept. Thus a vicious circle has evolved.

Support Groups

Support groups are those persons to whom staff are responsible, who provide funds and back up services. In other words government and private agencies are the employers of those working in DROP-IN CENTRES.

Firstly, when erratic behaviour problems emerge, these groups become reluctant to continue operation and either close facilities or impose stringent rules, resulting in real problems with those attending the centre, i.e. those who have trust and faith in its operation. A middle-class bias is forced on the centre's operation and this renders the goals of the centre unobtainable. Support groups measure the effectiveness of the centre in unacceptable terms, i.e. in relation to numbers passing through the machine, "proper" behaviour etc. rather than personal success of participants and as a result are satisfied with the wrong results.

There is a lack of co-ordination between different agencies providing DROP-IN CENTRES. Administration is therefore haphazard.

The centres lack a positive perspective and are hindered in achieving goals.

Administration

DROP-IN CENTRES are structured so that they only operate when staff are available thus hindering an ongoing process. This results in the centre operating only for a small portion of the day and leaving youth on the streets during the rest of the day. Nothing meets youth's needs during these non-operational hours and hence we have developed the street corner society.

Presently facilities are located in church basements, YMCAs and schools. Disadvantaged youth unaccustomed to these more affluent surroundings and/or who may resent

these institutions for a variety of reasons feel uncomfortable in them and hence are reluctant to attend. This further complicates the problem already discussed regarding staff, who must keep attendance figures high. It becomes difficult for disadvantaged youth to relate the problems they encounter in the slums if the facilities for guidance, such as a DROP-IN CENTRE, are not placed in that area.

Community Support

Through a lack of a guiding body for DROP-IN CENTRES, there has been a failure in making the community aware of the goals, methods of operations and problems encountered. When difficulties arise, or when "results" aren't attained rapidly, an outraged community demands changes without understanding their ramifications. This lack of communication will always hinder the internal growth of the DROP-IN CENTRE. DROP-IN CENTRES need the commitment of the community, and this can be attained only through an attitudinal change and increased empathy.

Recommendations

The authors of this brief intend to make recommendations regarding the improvement of DROP-IN CENTRE. These recommendations are not only directed to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty, but also to Provincial and Municipal agencies, and private agencies. These recommendations will fall under five categories:

- Physical location of facilities
- Staff training and programming
- Improved administration of facilities
- Acquisition of funds
- Support groups and general community awareness

Physical Location

We recommend that DROP-IN facilities be provided in the slums and ghetto areas of the community. We also recommend that these facilities include certain facets of recreation, namely discussion facilities that provide an area where youth can discuss their problems comfortably with a staff member, an area where creative talents can be expanded, an area large enough for coffee houses, general discussion and indoor recreation. Ideally this physical location should be self-contained i.e. not under the auspices of another organization. These recommendations, if implemented, will allow the potential of DROP-IN CENTRES to be maximized.

Staff Training

A staff training program should be implemented utilizing the resources at hand in the community, i.e. educators, guidance councilors, social psychologists and psychiatrists. Training programs should be held every three months to ensure that staff are aware of new techniques of solving problems, group maintenance and performance and that they have a chance to discuss problems they have encountered in the DROP-IN CENTRE. A psychiatrist should be available to whom we can refer serious individual problems for consultation. Administrative functions should be streamlined so that staff are not spending too much valuable time in other roles.

Administration

The DROP-IN CENTRE should ideally operate from nine in the morning until midnight with a minimum of staff there continuously. We recommend that the centre operate 12 months per year because of the wide spectrum of youth who will be attending.

We recommend that the operation of the centre should be in the hands of one person who will administer the day-to-day affairs of the DROP-IN CENTRE. The administrator should co-ordinate the staff and the program of the centre.

Acquisition of Funds

We recommend that the Department of Youth grant to the DROP-IN CENTRE funds which will be budgeted by the administrator for a year's operation. The conditions under which this grant should be set up are that the Provincial agency will have no control on the internal operation of the DROP-IN CENTRE and the proposed budget will be made public. Failing this the administrator of the centre will solicit funds from interested citizens of the community with the same conditions prescribed above. Under no condition should there be any charge levied for admission to any DROP-IN CENTRE function.

Support Groups and Community Support

A support group should be formed of interested citizens in the community to act as a resource for the DROP-IN CENTRE and to foster improved community-DROP-IN CENTRE relations.

The administrator of the DROP-IN CENTRE will be hired by and will relate to the advisory group. The advisory group will be aware, however, that the DROP-IN CENTRE will remain in the hands of the youth for it is youth to whom this brief is dedicated.

Respectfully submitted,
Gary Curran
Jason Paikowsky
John Gittens

APPENDIX "G"

BRIEF TO
 SENATORS' COMMITTEE ON POVERTY
 FROM
 SOUTH END IMPROVEMENT
 ASSOCIATION
 AND
 SOUTH END TENANTS' ASSOCIATION

SAINT JOHN, N.B.

JULY 21, 1970.

Gentlemen:

Since we were informed that your committee has two avenues of investigation before—expert research and a series of public hearings—we felt that in view of the facilities at your disposal any attempt we might make in preparing a statistical study of the problem of poverty would be pretentious. Therefore we decided to express the opinions of those in our associations as well as the people in our neighbourhood with whom we discussed the problem of poverty—alcoholics, property owners, inhabitants of slum housing, recreation workers, children, welfare recipients, social workers.

As a result of our inquiries we found that poverty for the people in our neighbourhood is a relative thing: —

For the recently released prisoner it's no job to go to, no money to spend, no one to help.

For the store owner it's the threat of broken windows and the fear of talking.

For a tenant it's three weeks without water before the landlord had the plumbing fixed.

For the little kid it's a bag of potato chips and a bottle of pop for dinner and supper.

For the older person it's watching your neighbourhood disintegrate before your eyes.

For one family it's porridge every meal the last three days before the welfare check arrives.

For the policeman it's having an opinion, not being free to express it, and being blamed for the whole mess.

AND for some people it's the inability to realize that all the above exists.

The memberships of our two associations as well as the area in the City of Saint John,

New Brunswick, which we represent is heterogeneous in make up. We include those on welfare, members of the professions, those who live in abject poverty, those who do not consider that there is any reason why they should concern themselves with the problem. We believe that a rich society is one in which there is a wide spectrum of people of different ages, backgrounds, and occupations. At the same time we submit that though poverty in its broadest sense is not merely the absence of material goods, the many types of human deprivation that exist cannot be entirely divorced from the lack of economic security. Therefore the ever-widening gap between the very rich and the very poor must be closed, and to this end we would RECOMMEND that emphasis in taxation should focus on the opposite ends of the scale. Those on minimal incomes will be given help from the tax dollars of those earning very high wages. This is not to suggest an equalization of income but a more just distribution of wealth.

In treating the question of poverty we considered all those factors—economic, physical, psychological, moral and perceptual deprivation which render people less free to choose, less capable of controlling their own lives. The role of society as we see it is therefore to seek to solve present problems without delay and at the same time to strive to forestall even greater problems being presented by advancing technology. Poverty in 1970 is not the same as poverty only twenty years ago. Opportunities for overcoming economic deprivation are vanishing with continuing prosperity so that now we find ourselves on the verge of an age where unskilled workers may have no place, and where people will be paid for not holding a job.

Since it is the children who suffer most severely when poverty is present we would

suggest that efforts be made to combat poverty by trying to break the cycle at this level. And since the pre-school years are so important in the formation of attitudes and habits and in awakening interest we RECOMMEND that although Education is constitutionally a provincial responsibility the Federal Government in co-operation with the Provincial Departments of Education channel energy, resources and tax dollars into the setting up of a programme for pre-school children up to the age of six years. Such a programme would include compulsory medical examinations with ready access to psychological and psychiatric services. This type of investment would pay off in early detection of physical handicaps and psychological disorders. Co-ordination with Day Care Centres and Head Start Programmes which we will mention further on. Counselling services for parents should be an integral part of such a plan. Follow-up and continuation of this concentration could be introduced year by year as the first group to be so treated passed through the school system with variations introduced at each level of their development.

We RECOMMEND the establishment of Head Start Programmes preferably as a part of the regular school system and that specially trained teachers be provided in this area. However we suggest that volunteer workers guided by an expert elementary school teacher should attempt to fill the void until such a programme can become a reality.

We RECOMMEND that through the co-operation of business and education courses be provided by which students not suited or attracted by the conventional academic programme may spend a portion of the day in a class-room designed for their needs and the remainder of the day in learning a marketable skill.

We RECOMMEND special orientation courses to prepare teachers to work in inner city schools where socio-economic conditions are poor. Very often the teacher and pupil coming from vastly different backgrounds suffer from what has been called "cultural shock" so that neither one profits from the experience of being together. We RECOMMEND also that teacher-pupil ratio be kept low in such situations especially during the first three years of school.

We would also RECOMMEND the establishment of homes for emotionally disturbed children where, if it has been deemed as an aid to the treatment of the disorder, children

may be removed from the home context for a period of time during which initial treatment may be begun and the child may be prepared to return and better cope with his environment.

We would stress the need of continuing adult education and retraining with special emphasis on teaching the illiterate adult to read by employing techniques suitable to his age and interests. Illiteracy not only reduces his job opportunities but deprives him of access to a wide body of knowledge.

Lest it be thought that the sole purpose of these recommendations is to provide workers for the labour market and thus decrease unemployment, we RECOMMEND that Provincial Departments of Education strive to see that children from all levels of society be given a "quality" education so that they may better adapt themselves to change and will be able to come to terms successfully with the future age of increasing leisure.

A more realistic approach to welfare needs must be sought. Those who cannot work (through sickness, age) and earn a living should be given the security of knowing that their "basic needs" will be taken care of through social assistance programmes. Those who are temporarily forced to seek welfare assistance should not have their initiative completely stifled by being penalized for attempting to earn something to supplement their welfare benefits. Serious consideration should be given by Provincial Departments of Welfare to the problem of how much a welfare recipient should be allowed before his benefits are reduced. The incentive to work must be retained, but at the same time families trying to break the vicious circle of the poverty cycle must be given a short period of time during which they can get "ahead" themselves or they will be permanently trapped. It is in relation to the problem of helping families break the poverty cycle that we RECOMMEND the establishment of home makers courses in communities or neighbourhoods at which the poor can learn how to get the best value for dollars spent, how to get the value for food or clothing bought. Involvement of low income families who manage their resources well should be sought. In the same vein we RECOMMEND stricter regulation of credit buying for all consumers so that those who have already fallen victim to excessive credit buying will be restrained from making the same error and so that others will be prevented from doing so.

We urge that Provincial Departments of Welfare be encouraged to include a cost of living clause when drawing up scales for welfare allotments so that those receiving benefits do not find themselves caught in the tight squeeze of rising prices and static allotments.

Consideration should also be given to the concept of "Basic needs". Are human beings only in need of food, shelter, clothing, and medical care? Canadians must decide whether their measuring of need is qualitative or quantitative. Should a daily newspaper be considered a luxury? To many poor people it is. To achieve a more realistic conception of the adequacy of welfare benefits those who have experienced living under such conditions should be consulted when new scales and legislation are being considered.

Many of those with whom we spoke attributed inadequate wages as being one of the prime causes of poverty. They cited the fact that often jobs were available but that the salary was insufficient to live on. We would therefore RECOMMEND that a national guaranteed income be established either through the increase of basic wages or through supplementation of income earned—whichever is the more economically feasible.

We would suggest reassessment of Old Age Security and Family Allowance Benefits with a view to increasing benefits for those who are in need and decreasing or discontinuing them for those who are not.

Since there are approximately 1.5 million Canadians over sixty-five years of age we RECOMMEND that a study to ascertain their needs be carried out. Often living alone and in old neighbourhoods many of our senior citizens constitute our "hidden poor". Efforts must be made by which they are assured adequate income so that they can afford suitable housing and nutritious diet. So that they will have access to frequent medical check-ups to maintain their mental and physical health with neighbourhood groups and organizations should strive to locate them and urge them to take advantage of the available facilities.

In keeping with our concept of maintaining heterogeneous community life we RECOMMEND that when private organizations or governments sponsor senior citizen housing projects they locate such projects within the mainstream of the community so as to retain the people as active members of the social group. We also RECOMMEND that this segment of the community be looked to as an

untapped source of talent for becoming involved in volunteer programmes with the young.

Since many people on reaching retirement age are still young, businesses, industries and communities should be encouraged to prepare pre-retirement programmes which would better enable people to cope with the use of retirement leisure.

Families should be encouraged to assume their responsibilities towards aged members and governments should aid them in carrying out these responsibilities through visiting nurses, clinics and provision of nursing home facilities when the family is incapable of providing required care.

We would also RECOMMEND that in areas of chronic or high unemployment that Manpower Centres be set up using the human resources of those in the area. We suggest also that the psychological problems of the unemployed be further explored and that they (the unemployed) be given counselling to better deal with their plight. Frankl says:

Remarkably enough the most prominent symptom of this (the unemployment) neurosis is not depression, but apathy. The unemployed become increasingly indifferent and their initiative more and more trickles away. This apathy is not without grave dangers. It makes such people incapable of grasping the helping hand which may be extended to them.

Keeping this statement in mind it might be advisable that Manpower employees and community workers in the neighbourhood go to the unemployed rather than wait for the unemployed to come to them.

We would suggest that the problem posed by company pension plans which exclude the employment of relatively young persons because these people are too old to fit into such plans be studied by both business and government with the view to finding a solution to this kind of discrimination.

The need for an increase in adequate low cost housing was a recurrent theme in our discussions with people in preparing this brief. The effects of rat-infested, fire-prone, poorly-serviced buildings on those who occupy them cannot be measured. The psychological and sociological effects on children being brought up in such an atmosphere, as well as the morale of parents forced through circumstances beyond their control to rear their families in this environment contribute

greatly to the problem of poverty. Municipalities when undertaking community planning should seek to mix different types of housing and different income levels in one neighbourhood or area. When large groups of people are displaced through urban renewal efforts should be taken to ensure adequate accommodations for the displaced families. A mass exodus into any one area of a city often results in the creation of a problem. When homes originally intended for one or two families are subdivided to provide accommodations for four or more families both property and human relations suffer from the overcrowding. It is very difficult to recommend solutions to this problem for it is not easy to reconcile the guaranteeing of the rights of private property and ownership on the one hand with the taking advantage of those caught in the freeze of a housing shortage on the other. We also feel that in justice we must recognize the existence of tenants who contribute to the deterioration of property and the considerable effort that will be needed to rehabilitate such individuals.

We therefore recommend that the Federal Government make money available at lower interest rates to individuals and at still lower interest rates to Provincial Governments for the purpose of building homes and apartments to overcome the shortage of low cost housing.

We also recommend that Provincial Legislatures enact legislation so that unfair advantage cannot be taken of people during a housing crisis by the establishment of rent ceilings based upon the housing market, services offered, condition of apartment or flat being rented.

We recommend that municipalities be pressured to enforce their health and building by-laws regarding housing and that they be encouraged to seek new legislation where necessary to ensure that decent standards of housing be maintained.

Since the onus for maintaining decent housing rests equally with the tenant and the landlord we recommend that Provincial Governments re-examine their legislation re: landlord-tenant rights to insure the rights of both parties are being protected.

We recommend that while the preceeding recommendation is being considered that Provincial boards of appeal be established with branches in major population areas to arbitrate contentious issues between landlords and tenants.

Recognizing that all citizens deserve equality before the law and that lack of economic resources may contribute to a person's not being able to obtain proper legal advice or representation, we recommend that a national system of legal aid be established through the co-operation of the Attorneys-General and the members of the legal profession by which free legal aid will be available to those in need at preliminary hearings and trials. We further suggest that the defendant be represented by the lawyer of his choice if possible.

Society is faced with another phase of poverty when confronted with the problem of juvenile delinquency which has increased in the last twenty years but this increase is not confined to the economically poor

La délinquance s'accroît de façon «non male» dans les milieux défavorisés, alors qu'elle augmente d'une manière «non male» et spectaculaire dans les milieux aisés.

We would therefore recommend that laws be consistently enforced for all levels of society and that laws which are not effective be either abolished or rewritten so that they meet the needs of society today.

We recommend that Juvenile Court Judges be chosen as carefully for their compassion and consistency as for their capabilities as members of the legal profession. We recommend that juvenile offenders be removed from complete contact with society as a last resort, and that a mid-way course between probation and confinement be sought by establishing centres where small groups of juveniles may remain in ordinary school surroundings during the day and return to the jurisdiction of the centre after school hours. An attempt to establish a home atmosphere in such centres should be sought.

We recommend the establishment of halfway houses to help adult offenders leaving correctional institutions avoid the situation or environment that led to arrest and at the same time give them assistance for a short period of time in trying to re-establish themselves as law-abiding members of the community.

We recommend that family heads who desert their children be forced to contribute to the support of those children until they are able to support themselves. Co-operation between provinces would be necessary for the successful implementation of such a plan. facilitate the payment of maintenance, per

ments could be paid into and received from Family Courts.

There is no doubt that problems can be created when the populace is faced with legislation that it cannot understand or for which the structures of society have not been prepared. Therefore we recommend that legislation should not proceed the public's readiness for it.

If we accept the statement in the United Nations' Universal Declaration of Human Rights that: "The family is the natural and fundamental group unit of society and is entitled to protection by society and the state." It is therefore our responsibility to ensure that each member of a family is enabled to carry out his responsibilities to and derive his rights from that unit. We must also ensure the total well being of those who are members of broken or poorly functioning family groups. To this end we recommend that Day Care Centres be set up so that children who need supervision for part or all the day will receive it from qualified staff and in suitable surroundings. Cost of such services should be based upon the parents' ability to pay. Such centres would service one-parent families, working mothers, the well-to-do and poor alike.

We recommend that provision be made to provide children who are not receiving proper nourishment at home, at least one well balanced meal a day while at school. A programme of parent re-education should be considered part of the same effort.

We recommend that visiting home-makers be made available to families in situations where emergency arises and one or both parents are removed from home environment. Again payment of such fees should be scaled according to ability to pay.

The "poverty" which has most impressed us is in the realm of attitudes where people who have a greater measure of material wealth than those living at or below the poverty line do not recognize that there is a problem". These are the people who feel that the government or someone else should do something about "it", while they have no responsibility for alleviating the causes of poverty.

We feel the responsibility for coming to terms with the problem and seeking a solution cannot rest wholly on the shoulders of the various levels of government. Although we believe the task of preparing a suitable

climate for change to take place can be accomplished by governments, attitudes cannot be legislated. It will only be on the basis of individual people assuming their responsibilities as members of a society that the problem can begin to be solved. Therefore the greatest return on investment of time and energy will be realized when those to be helped (the poor) and those trying to help work together in small unwieldy groups. All the work that needs to be done cannot be accomplished by paid workers and it is doubtful whether it should. Rather professional associations, community groups; backed by just legislation and a government striving to maintain economic stability which does not penalize any segment of society; must offer their talents to the poor.

To government too must go to task of informing people of the attitudes and opinions of their well-to-do and poorer neighbours. The advances in communication (especially television) have been credited with being responsible for the setting up of material goals for society. The fact that all people do not have the means of achieving these goals has compounded the poverty problem.

We would recommend that churches, service clubs, and professional organizations—rather than further their own interests—voluntarily undertake those programmes NOW which they would like to see eventually become the responsibility of various levels of government.

We would also recommend that citizens' groups give overt moral support to policemen, social workers, and community workers in their areas so that a climate conducive to progress and co-operation can be formed.

We feel that if citizens with governments act now social disorder will be prevented. We recommend that the problem of poverty not be studied to death while its victims continue to suffer. Although people are not awaiting miracles they do want to see a steady progression of events leading to concrete confrontation and elimination of the problem.

Respectfully submitted,
South End Improvement Association
South End Tenants' Association

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. Frankl, Viktor E. *The Doctor and the Soul*. Alfred A. Knopf, Inc. New York: 1969.
2. Charbonneau, J. P. *Le Devoir*, January 21, 1970.

APPENDIX "H"

BRIEF FROM THE CRESCENT VALLEY

TENANTS' ASSOCIATION

TO

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON

POVERTY

The Crescent Valley Tenants' Association hereby presents a brief to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty.

The Crescent Valley Tenants' Association was formed in January, 1970, and presently has 70 paid-up members, and is continuing to enlist more.

The tenants' in the Crescent Valley subsidized housing units are obviously best able to present the problems and inadequacies which they encounter in their housing facilities. Therefore, they have organized themselves in an attempt to have these inadequacies corrected.

The problems cited below, indicate the needs and inefficiencies encountered by the tenants, in attempting to establish an acceptable standard of living for their families.

1. As in other aspects of the welfare system, tenants in public housing are penalized for trying to upgrade their standard of living beyond the subsistence level. The rent structure is such that as the tenants' earnings increase so does the rent on a higher percentage basis, to a level which makes any improvement in living standards impossible. Therefore, there is no incentive for a worker to get promotions in his job, and increase his earnings.

(a) Many of the wives in Crescent Valley have excellent work experience, some in offices, telephone switchboards, hotels, etc. Some would like to work part-time or full time, in order to pay off back debts, get things they need for their homes and families, and upgrade their standard of living to a point of being able to move out of subsidized housing, making room for others. Because their earnings would cause their rents to increase, there is no incentive for them to join the work force, and become independent and more useful members of society.

(b) Parents prefer to have teen-age children, who have finished school and now are employed, remain in the home rather than being on their own without supervision. Here again, the boy or girl's salary increases the parent's rent, thus killing incentives in both parent and child.

There is something wrong with a system when the parents who have encouraged their children to stay in school, and have met considerable expenses in doing so, lose these children as soon as they could be a help financially. This is disheartening, particularly to those on a low fixed income, who feel that they will never be able to improve their circumstances; and it is not surprising that they become very discouraged.

It should be noted that the children, most of whom have a trade or skill, not only move elsewhere locally, but also go to other provinces.

All of this is having a bad effect on the younger children who will graduate in the next few years, and it will give them just another reason to join the 'modern' crowd and leave the province.

If the rent is increased as a result of the above, the alternative is for the family to move—if it can find other suitable accommodation—but since most children leave eventually, the family would then find it impossible to return to low-cost housing, due to the long waiting list.

2. There is no insulation under the floors making heating difficult in the lower flats.

3. There is no soundproofing in the apartments, and thus absolutely no privacy.

4. House-wiring does not seem to be heavy enough to carry modern appliances. Fuse blow if more than one appliance is plugged.

5. Two typical budgets for heating *ground floor apartments* alone, per month, are as follows:

(a) Furnace Coal (per ton)	\$ 32.00
Wood to start the coal	14.00
Oil for kitchen stove and heating water	20.00
Rent (based on income)	64.50
Total	\$ 130.50

(b) Furnace Coal (per ton)	\$ 32.00
Wood	14.00
Oil	28.00
Rent (based on income)	115.00
Total	189.00

VOTE: IN CASE (a) THE AVERAGE MONTHLY COST OF FUEL AND RENT, PRO RATED FOR THE YEAR, WOULD APPROXIMATE \$109.50, AND IN CASE (b) WOULD BE \$160.00

During the summer months, the only amount that decreases, is the furnace coal and wood. May we emphasize that these basic costs are for low-income families, some of whom are on social welfare.

The Crescent Valley Tenants' Association strongly makes the following recommendations:

1. There should be a ceiling on the rent scale to encourage tenants to get better jobs, and thus upgrade their standard of living. The suggested ceiling for an unheated apartment is \$60, and for a heated apartment, \$70.
2. It is essential to install the oil furnaces presently under discussion, and to include the cost of heating the apartments in the rent—at \$10 per month all year round. This will spread living costs on an even basis during the year. It will be cleaner, more economical and safer.
3. A wife should be allowed to work without increased rent. An unmarried child, who is employed, should be allowed to pay reasonable board to the family, without his income being added to the parent's income for purposes of rental charges. Otherwise, it is more reasonable and economical for such an employed child to board outside the home. In other words, under the present regulations, such an employed member of

the family is being forced to live away from home if he hopes to advance in his social and economic position.

4. A progressive programme of insulation and soundproofing these structures should be implemented.

5. Electric wiring in all units should be improved as a matter of safety as well as a convenience to both tenant and Housing Authority.

6. A system of heating hot water should be included with the furnace installation.

7. It is recommended that the Housing Authority, in planning for future housing development, give serious study and consideration to the possibility of row-housing instead of the present type of structure.

The Crescent Valley Tenants' Association urgently requests serious consideration of this Brief. The recommendations present a great step in improving a situation that is psychologically detrimental to the tenants, and prevents them from rising above the social and economic status in which they find themselves.

Each family that is encouraged and enabled to become self-supporting, represents considerable saving in cost to the community, both in money and in human dignity.

The following recommendations were added from the floor at a general meeting, after the above brief was prepared.

1. We recommend that special consideration be given to family situations where only one parent is present, and that parent is the sole support of the family. We further recommend that the cost of home care, up to \$18 per week, be reckoned in assessing rent.
2. Tenants should not be penalized, financially, for having parents living with them who are on old age pension.
3. Be it further recommended that, for the residents with more than three children under 16 years, the rent should be reduced \$4 for each child.
4. We strongly recommend that, should the tenant be forced to put in an oil furnace at his own expense, because the one in the apartment is unusable or condemned, he should be reimbursed.

May, 1970

LIBRARY

NOV 3 1970



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament

1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE

ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 61

TUESDAY, AUGUST 4, 1970

WITNESSES:

The Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick, Department of General Practice, Saint John General Hospital. Saint John Community Workers Association. The New Brunswick Association for the Advancement of Coloured People. Family Services, Saint John, Inc. New Brunswick Forest Extension Service. New Brunswick Federation of Woodlot Owners.

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for the names of the witnesses who were heard by the committee.)

APPENDICES:

- "A"—Brief submitted by the Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick.
- "B"—Brief submitted by the Department of General Practice, Saint John General Hospital.
- "C"—Brief submitted by the Saint John Community Workers Association.
- "D"—Brief submitted by the New Brunswick Association for the Advancement of Coloured People.
- "E"—Brief submitted by the Family Services, Saint John, Inc.
- "F"—Brief submitted by the New Brunswick Forest Extension Service.
- "G"—Brief submitted by the New Brunswick Federation of Woodlot Owners.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Mada-waska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

TUESDAY, August 4, 1970,
Y.M.C.A. Hall,
Saint John, New Brunswick.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators Croll (*Chairman*), Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand and Quart—(7).

In attendance: Mr. Frederick J. Joyce, Director.

The following witnesses were heard:

The Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick: Mr. William L. McNamara, P.Eng., Chairman, Briefs Committee; Mr. Claude MacKinnon, P.Eng.

Department of General Practice—Saint John General Hospital: Dr. H. Bruce Parlee, Chairman of submission.

Saint John Community Workers Association: Mr. Archibald Smith, Chairman of Submission; Mr. James Finnigan, President; Miss Bernardine Conlogue, Supervisor, Child Welfare Section, Department of Health and Welfare; Miss Catherine Gale, Executive Secretary, United Fund and Social Services of Greater Saint John; Mr. Henry E. Stegmayer, Executive Director, United Fund and Social Services of Greater Saint John.

At 11.45 a.m. the Committee adjourned until 2.00 p.m.

At 2.00 p.m. the Committee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators Croll (*Chairman*), Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand and Quart—(7).

In attendance: Mr. Frederick J. Joyce, Director.

The following witnesses were heard:

The New Brunswick Association for the Advancement of Coloured People: Mr. Joseph Drummond, Executive Advisor and Past President; Mr. Fred Hodges, President, District Labour Council.

Family Services, Saint John, Inc.: Miss Florence Christie, Executive Director; Mrs. W. R. Forsyth, Member of the Board; Mrs. Marian J. Perkins, Field Representative, Department of Health and Welfare.

New Brunswick Forest Extension Service: Mr. J. B. Kelly; Mr. N. C. Bastin; Mr. J. Torunski.

At 5.05 p.m. the Committee adjourned.

On Wednesday, August 5, 1970, the Committee visited Bloomfield Junction, where they heard a brief presented by the Rev. William E. Hart, President of the New Brunswick Federation of Woodlot Owners.

Also present and heard: Mr. Gordon Fairweather, M.P.; Mr. C. B. Sherwood, M.L.A. (New Brunswick); Mr. Scarboro.

A brief report on the visit of the Committee immediately follows these proceedings.

The following briefs were ordered to be printed as appendices to these proceedings.

"A"—Brief submitted by the Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick.

"B"—Brief submitted by the Department of General Practice, Saint John General Hospital.

"C"—Brief submitted by the Saint John Community Workers Association.

"D"—Brief submitted by the New Brunswick Association for the Advancement of Coloured People.

"E"—Brief submitted by the Family Services, Saint John, Inc.

"F"—Brief submitted by the New Brunswick Forest Extension Service.

"G"—Brief submitted by the New Brunswick Federation of Woodlot Owners.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

VISIT TO BLOOMFIELD STATION

AUGUST 5, 1970

A brief was presented by Reverend W. E. Hart supported by Mr. Scowsbow dealing with the small woodlot farmer of rural New Brunswick. In addition to the members of the Committee, Gordon Fairweather, M.P. and Mr. Sherwood, M.L.A. were in attendance.

The following are the main points which came out of the presentation and discussion:

New Brunswick is 85 percent forest and the demand for pulp-wood by the year 2000 is estimated to be four times the current demand.

Between 1861 and 1961, the amount of cleared land that is reverting to forest is indicated by the fact that 15,826 acres were clear in 1861 in King's County, and in 1961, only 7,858 were clear. A woodlot must be greater than 600 acres to provide even a meagre income.

Large companies are buying up small woodlots (free-hold land). Reverend Hart believes that a small owner can produce and sell pulpwood cheaper than the large companies. However, the demand for pulp-wood is such that the large companies can use only their land to meet the demand, keep the mills fully busy, and hence, buy from the small woodlot operator at the company's price.

Pulp and paper companies are monopolies in buying and selling wood pulp. Of the crown land, 45 percent of the New Brunswick total, over 80 percent is leased to large pulp and paper companies. Even the 29 percent which has small holdings is not necessarily owned by small operators.

Reverend Hart on Sweden—Sweden has an efficient forestry industry because there are very strong forest owner associations. They export a finished product unlike New Brunswick. They have strong buying and selling cooperatives. They train wood cutters as a profession and provide full time employment unlike New Brunswick which has no trained wood cutters, and provides work for only six months of the year.

Mr. Sherwood suggested that the takeover of the small holdings by the big companies is on. He says that 30 percent of the New Brunswick economy is based upon agriculture, that people get off the land for purely economic reasons (the Swedish situation is different in that there is not as much inducement for the Swedes to leave the farm because the difference in income attainable in the cities and in the rural areas is not that much different).

Scowsbow is a farmer and is concerned with the exodus to the cities which he feels is basically caused by the large rise in agricultural productivity which has resulted in larger, more viable farm units. He says that farmers would be happier to be poor on their farms, than poor in the city.

As a solution to the exodus, he suggested machinery stations should be created where small farmers could rent machinery. In addition, he suggested that the Government, as part of its training program, train people to be better farmers.

During coffee, he was asked why they had not tried to create machinery cooperatives. His answer was that the farmers of New Brunswick are independent.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY EVIDENCE

August 4, 1970,
Saint John, New Brunswick.

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9:00 a.m.

Senator David Croll: (*Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Chairman: I call the meeting to order. We have a brief this morning from the Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick. On my immediate right is Mr. W.L. McNamara. He is the principal in the consulting firm of A.B.I. Limited of Fredericton, and the chairman of the brief committee. Next to him is Mr. Claude McKinnon, a native of Glace Bay, Nova Scotia. He is employed as a building inspector for the metropolitan area of Greater Saint John.

Mr. McNamara would like to read his brief and he will begin now.

Mr. W. L. McNamara, Chairman of The Brief Committee, Association of Professional Engineers of New Brunswick: Mr. Chairman, Honourable Senators, ladies and gentlemen. For the benefit of the Committee Members following the brief I would like to start on page 2, saving the summary of conclusions and recommendations.

The Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick is the licensing and regulatory body of the professional engineering in the Province, whose members include employees of industry and governments, corporate executives, and private consultants. They presently number approximately 830 members. It is a participating member of the Canadian Council of Professional Engineers in cooperation with ten similar professional engineering associations of other Canadian provinces and territories. Through the Canadian Council of Professional Engineers mailing contact is available to all of the approximately 60,000 registered professional engineers in Canada. A number of local branches of The Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick operate in cooperation

with local branches of The Engineering Institute of Canada to conduct periodic meetings and discussions on topics of local interest.

As a profession directly involved in the application of capital assistance programs, and as a representative group of Canadian citizens, we wish to address certain brief remarks to this learned Committee for its consideration.

The Webster's New World Dictionary states "poverty" as the broadest term "implies a lack of the resources for reasonably comfortable living".

For our discussion we would define "poverty", as it applies to the family supporter, as "the lack of resources to provide the basic necessities for a healthy and reasonably comfortable life for one's dependents and oneself".

We suggest such lack of resources usually includes one or more of the following:

- (a) Lack of suitable education or training
- (b) Lack of employment opportunities utilizing available training and experience
- (c) Lack of mental initiative
- (d) Lack of physical capacity (such as the ill or physically handicapped)
- (e) Lack of mental capacity (mentally handicapped or mentally ill).

It is suggested that lack of income is one of the immediate symptoms of such lack of resources but lack of income by itself is a very inadequate definition of poverty. Through present assistance programs and education systems, education and training are rapidly becoming available to all, but the forms and circumstances do not always create sufficient incentives to induce the mental initiative for persons to take advantage of training opportunities.

Abnormal deficiencies in physical and mental capacities can obviously only be overcome to a limited degree, so it is suggested that such conditions will always require and deserve direct and continuing assistance from

the rest of the population. Government participation in the training and care of mentally and physically handicapped persons seems to have been quite callously minimal to date.

For discussion purposes we would divide assistance programs into two broad categories: "personal" (such as individuals or families), and "regional" (such as industrial incentives, low cost housing, etc.).

It is observed that present personal assistance schemes all seem to discourage a recipient from attempting to achieve personal income unless it is significantly above the level provided by the assistance.

He can therefore easily become "locked in" to a situation where his income earning ability falls steadily farther below the assistance allowance available.

The Association suggests that such assistance should instead foster and encourage personal initiative with "income incentives" which would reward and subsidize personal income on a diminishing scale which would phase out at some acceptable minimum income level. We feel the terms "negative income tax" or "guaranteed annual wage" for such assistance seem as inappropriate as would be the terms "negative corporation tax" or "guaranteed annual profit" for industrial assistance; however, it does seem appropriate that such a scheme be administered under the Income Tax Act to minimize administrative costs.

It is suggested that a program could be arranged to provide a fund for current monthly personal income assistance based on a formula similar to that used for installment tax payments by self-employed persons (i.e. based on the previous year's reported income). Such a fund could be readily incorporated into personal income tax returns for the current year.

Effective administration of such a program under the Income Tax Act would most likely require coordination through local Canada Manpower Centres for individual personal assistance in obtaining benefits.

I would like to vary from the written brief a little but at this point to add an up-to-date note of the dismay of our members regarding the apparent duplication of personal assistance schemes which tended to cloud the real purpose of each individual scheme and must surely be confusing to both the recipient and the donors as well and which adds tremendously to the administrative costs and there-

fore reducing the general effectiveness and productivity of the whole scheme.

An example of this on which our Canadian Council of Professional Engineers has already commented to the Federal Government is the proposal of the Unemployment Insurance scheme, with which we do not necessarily disagree in principle, but which appears to be coming another body of tax for the purpose of adding to more welfare systems and surely could be more efficiently incorporated into the general scheme as we have just outlined.

Regional assistance programs, based on specific planned objectives, tend to be more constructively coordinated. However, unless followed up with appropriate training programs, some industries so attracted result only in an influx of higher paid personnel most of whom were already employed. This causes a statistical improvement in average income in the area with little or no effect for the man "locked in" to the personal poverty situation except a higher cost of living and an even lower community status.

Avoidance of such situations requires the simultaneous analysis of manpower availability and trainability to ensure the maximum initial use of low-skilled labour combined with on-the-job training, and facilities for more advanced education and training for the succeeding generations. These considerations should be primary criteria for the selection of industries to receive government incentive assistance.

It is considered that training programs cannot be overstressed as the most effective means of alleviating poverty. Engineers of the Atlantic Area well know the frustration of suffering trained manpower shortages during general unemployment rates of over 10 per cent. No better utilization of assistance funds can be suggested than to provide training programs designed to upgrade unemployed persons to fill jobs being created by the industrial development.

Encouragement of individual "entrepreneurship" should not be lost in the race for "showplace" industries. Talented individuals, given minimum incentives and professional assistance, can often develop local industries which are not attractive to large corporations, but which provide relatively immediate returns to the community involved. The effect of such developments on community and individual spirit is obvious.

In summary this Association shares the belief that all Canadians have a right to

healthy life in this prosperous and developing country. However, we also believe that, in return for that right, it is the duty and obligation of every citizen to contribute his efforts, within the limits of his abilities, to the maintenance and promotion of that prosperity, and conversely it is the responsibility of governments to ensure he is able to contribute.

Physically and mentally handicapped persons must be recognized as having the right to appropriate publicly financed training to allow them to make a useful contribution to society within their capabilities, of course.

Personal assistance schemes should recognize human nature and provide positive incentives for personal betterment. The administration of such schemes on a national scale could be through a joint effort of the Income Tax Department and Canada Manpower.

Regional and Industrial assistance should be more carefully related to utilization and appreciation of local human resources, and should be combined with simultaneous investment in training programs to ensure the success of that utilization.

Local individually owned businesses could be more effectively promoted by simplified application of existing industrial assistance programs, and by the provision of professional guidance to assist in obtaining such benefits.

Ladies and gentlemen: this Association stands ready to assist in any way possible with the development of programs for which its members may be especially qualified.

Some areas of such possible assistance include: the distribution of details of capital assistance schemes to the membership combined with talks by administrative personnel to ensure the understanding and success of the schemes.

Utilization of statistics on manpower availability to encourage design of new industrial facilities to provide the maximum opportunity to available manpower.

Advice on the content of technical training programs to best serve the prospective industries.

The Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick, its branches and its national affiliates, we feel quite sure are at the disposal of Governments for such assistance in the promotion of effective programs.

Thank you.

Senator Fournier: Mr. McNamara, what do you think should be done in our technical training program in our vocational schools that we are not doing?

Mr. McNamara: I think the technical training program in the province is an excellent start. What we are talking about primarily perhaps is a little more direct coordination between the industrial incentive schemes and the forms of technical training available.

Senator Fournier: In what way?

Mr. McNamara: I am not really sure how much contact is actually now going on in this regard, I must admit, but perhaps in setting up industrial incentives when an industry is being negotiated with for possible establishment in New Brunswick. I hope that some discussions will also take place with the technical training personnel in the province to determine the availability of training programs or to initiate training programs, if they are not already available.

Senator Fournier: To my knowledge there is quite a bit of this going on. An example is the Power Commission where they need so many engineers or power plant operators and so on. They usually specify what they want, and they do attempt to train them in that special line. The same thing happens in the pulp and paper industries, but perhaps it should be done on a larger scale. I would go along with you on that.

I believe also that people think that technical training produces trained engineers. It is not the same level. I think you understand that.

Mr. McNamara: That is correct.

Senator Fournier: There is a certain amount of confusion among the general public as to certain levels of schools. We have a technical training school. We have a trade training school. We have a vocational school, and a shop training school. They are altogether different as far as training is concerned. The great number of average people we see in shop training school are just from Grade 5 or 6 having done some manual work. They think it is a trade training school and it is not.

Senator Fergusson: Thank you, Mr. Chairman. I would like to thank Mr. McNamara and his associate for the work and time that they have spent on this brief, and I am sure we appreciate it very much.

The thing that particularly struck me, and that I would like to ask about, is on page 3 where you refer to defining poverty "as the lack of resources to provide the basic necessities", and among these lack of resources you list under (c) "Lack of mental initiative".

Then in the next paragraph you say there are lots of programs, "but the forms do not always create sufficient incentives to induce the mental initiative for persons to take advantage of training opportunities". Then in your recommendations you say:

Personal assistance schemes should recognize human nature and provide positive incentives for personal betterment.

Can you tell us something more definite? That is generalizing. Just how would you provide these incentives? What would they be? They are not in existence now. People want to help their families.

Mr. McNamara: That is quite true. A specific circumstance, I think, is the present situation where a family breadwinner is on welfare assistance, and if he is able to attain some casual income—whether it be by shovelling snow in winter for a day, or what have you—the tendency is for that to reduce the assistances available to him. That, we contend, is a direct negative incentive. In other words, he is told he must not work—not directly, but in effect.

Senator Fergusson: That is a disincentive to work.

Mr. McNamara: That is, in effect. He is told he must not work. That is a no, no; if he wants to get welfare. This, we suggest, is a negative incentive. Instead we would rather see an assistance scheme whereby we say "If you can earn \$10, we will match it."

Now, I realize that is an over-simplification and it is not quite that simple but something to that effect. We have not done a study and obviously are not qualified to hold up a scheme by which this can be carried through but something along that line is what we mean by providing a positive mental incentive.

In other words, the person who has some reason to want to assist in this in fact he can, just the same as if a person who is getting a certain amount of money by earning a wage, if he did casual labour he improves his position. The present situation, it seems to us, is that a person on welfare gets locked into that thing and unless he can somehow get a big

wage that brings him above that, it just is not worthwhile. Why bother?

Senator Fergusson: If he could make a living you would encourage him by giving him a bonus?

Mr. McNamara: Yes, within some reasonable limits. This principle, we feel, could be applied.

Senator Fergusson: There was just one other question I would like to ask. On page 3, Section 3.5 you say:

...Government participation in the training and care of mentally and physically handicapped persons seems to have been callously minimal to date.

Does that apply only to New Brunswick or do you feel that is all over Canada?

Mr. McNamara: Well, I am probably not qualified to comment for all over Canada. As far as I am aware a few provinces have, what might be considered, really adequate training and care facilities, government finance, for training of either physically or mentally handicapped persons.

There are institutions, government assisted but as far as I am aware they are not locked into the education system.

Senator Fergusson: What I meant was: Was it a general statement, or did your brief apply to our province?

Mr. McNamara: We are most familiar with our province.

Senator Inman: I was very interested in this brief also and I find on page 2 you speak at (c):

Advice on the content of technical training programs to best serve prospective industries.

Has any effort been made in this Province

Mr. McNamara: Yes, I would say there has been. The Association of Professional Engineers has been active in setting up an association for Certified Technicians and Technologists. We have had a committee assist in the setting up of that organization and we also have an Education Committee directly involved at that end and in the educational content of training schools, trade schools and technical schools.

That is in a general way. As far as I am aware, we have not been approached regarding specific industries for a specific area.

Senator Inman: Then on page 3—this is in the same area as the first—you say:

...but the forms do not always create sufficient incentives to induce the mental initiative for persons to take advantage of training opportunities.

In what way do you consider the forms of education and training deficient?

Mr. McNamara: Well, the circumstances to which I was referring were the lock-in circumstances to which I referred before.

The forms, I think, really refer to Senator Fournier's comment on the general public misinterpretation of the intent of the various training programs.

I am a little bit vague here, but I have had a very limited personal contact with some people who have taken advantage of the lower level training programs for people of Grade 4, 5 and 6 and in that sort of category, where they are actually paid a nominal sum, I believe, to attend trade schools to learn the rudiments of a trade.

It appears to me that the effect of this was that this was just another means of getting a little bit of supplementary income for a while. Some of them lived in areas where they could not possibly utilize the training they were getting and they were going back to those areas so it was simply a means of getting a little bit of money for a while without having to work too hard at the training.

Now, it seems to me that something is missed in these people. Whether the incentive is not there or whether it has not been explained to them, I do not know.

Senator Inman: Or are they trained for the wrong thing sometimes?

Mr. McNamara: This may be. Obviously here is no instant solution to this.

Senator Inman: I have just one further question, Mr. Chairman. I come from Prince Edward Island and I was interested in the last paragraph of the brief where you mentioned something about the smaller industries and local industries which are not affected by large corporations. Prince Edward Island, as you know, is a small place and it does not lend itself to very much great industry. I was wondering about what small industries you were thinking of?

Mr. McNamara: Well, you know, from our experience, and my personal experience in the consulting field, we see this first-hand

fairly often. There is a great tendency where a person is resident, and perhaps has a small industry, to take him for granted. The tendency, I think is to try to attract people to the province with incentives and sometimes I think this gets carried a little bit too far, where they provide more incentive and more assistance to the outside firm to come in than is readily made available to the local industry because he is here and he is going to stay here anyway. There is that sort of thing.

Senator Inman: That is exactly our situation. Thank you.

Senator McGrand: I would like to follow up Senator Fergusson's question. At the bottom of page 2 you have: "...implies a lack of the resources 'for reasonably comfortable living'." As you answered Senator Fergusson's question, you seemed to be dealing with human resources—unimproved or improved human resources. Now, employment comes largely from the development of the natural material resources of a province. I am not thinking just of Saint John; I am thinking of the entire Province.

Now, what do you have in mind when you think of New Brunswick as a whole, and the development of resources for the gainful employment of people?

Mr. McNamara: I do not think I have any clear-cut solution in mind. I think, sir, it has been my experience that human resources with the proper conditions can create wonders from very little natural resources.

Senator McGrand: Well, you are aware New Brunswick has tremendous natural undeveloped resources?

Mr. McNamara: I am, sir.

Senator McGrand: This is where I will put the emphasis. Senator Inman referred in her question to little industries in Prince Edward Island, and you sort of agreed with that. Now, what development of small industries from local resources can you think of in New Brunswick that would relieve this unemployment situation?

Mr. McNamara: The best example I can think of is the one my firm is presently involved with, a small wine operation in Havelock, New Brunswick, where a local man is expanding his plant at the result of assistance programs which took some considerable leg work to get on the rails, partly, I think, because he was a local man again; but this is

a local industry that is expanding and will employ local people in that local area.

Senator Fournier: What is the difference between an engineer and a professional engineer?

Mr. McNamara: He pays fees. He is legally entitled to call himself an engineer, for one thing. They pay fees, and the Association is the licensing body.

The term "engineering" of course is available to the stationary engineers by prior right. In other words they existed first and they continued to use the term, quite legally, as engineers.

Senator Fournier: Locomotive engineers?

Mr. McNamara: It tends to be a little bit confusing. We have used the term "Professional Engineers".

Senator Quari: Mr. McNamara, you mentioned in your brief on page 5:

Encouragement of individual 'entrepreneurship' should not be lost in the race for 'showplace' industries.

I notice you have a statement at great length of the expansion regarding small industries but these "showplace" industries do always seem to have a certain group. Banks are able to get a loan for them and create the show for the showplace industry; but on the other hand there are many individuals who, as you claim, have the initiative and knowledge and know-how but they have not the money, and they are in a certain class where the banks are afraid to give them a loan for a small industry, which would be very profitable for the area.

Would it be feasible at all in your mind for the government to set up some sort of loan system, as they do in the United States, for those individuals, or even to back them? I am not a business person but this thought just came to me. It would certainly facilitate the setting up of small industry. Do you think that would be feasible at all?

Mr. McNamara: Again, I can only speak from personal experience but it appears to me that the difference really between a small firm and a large firm is in the fact that a large firm can afford to hire professional assistance to go through the various channels to ensure them getting assistance.

The banks, I believe, are fairly amenable to lending money once a person has a commit-

ment for Federal or Provincial assistance funds. In other words, that becomes a part of the equity and it is a short-term proposition. There is something like that existing at the moment.

Senator Hastings: The I.D.B.

Senator Fournier: The Industrial Development Bank.

The Chairman: Mr. McNamara, suppose a man, qualified as to education and background, goes to the Manpower Department and says "I want to learn trade A", and the Manpower people say, "Well, in the area in which you are situated there are not too many openings for trade A", but he says, "That is what I want." At that moment the Manpower Department have not much choice, have they? He graduates from the class, and does very well so he is qualified. At that point he decides what he is going to do. Now, do you know any way at all in which we can be helpful to him in doing other than merely indicating where there is a possible opening, or possibilities for employment, and if he does not want to go there what should we do?

Mr. McNamara: Well, this is a very complicated but probably fairly common situation. Basically I think we feel that the system should be set up to provide the maximum flexibility for personal choice by the individual and if the incentives—if the results of this are simple enough and obvious enough we would put our faith in the choice of the individual to take advantage of those incentives.

If it can be made clear enough that taking another trade is to his advantage then in the long run and in the long haul there will be individual acceptance obviously so we feel the tendency would be to take advantage of the incentive that provides initiative.

The Chairman: Do you mean that at least we have got somebody trained for something regardless of whether he is able to use that training immediately, or not? He may use it at a later date.

Mr. McNamara: Yes. But the basis of his choice in that trade might well be influenced if he can be made aware somehow before making that selection. There are various advantages it holds for him.

The Chairman: That, Mr. McNamara, is why they have counsellors in Manpower who attempt to influence and explain. Despite the

we have many people coming before us saying that people in their area are trained for occupations that do not exist or are not available. How do we overcome that? You are in business. How do we influence or overcome that?

Mr. McNamara: About the only other further clarification I can make on that on our points would be the fact that if an industry is set up in an area perhaps—if the trade openings are going to be created for that industry are made known then a campaign might be undertaken to have people trained specifically for employment in that industry. Frankly, I am a little out of my depth in this.

Senator Fournier: May I add a word to this from personal experience?

The Chairman: Yes, go ahead.

Senator Fournier: Take the example of a boy of 15 or 16 who wants to become a motor mechanic. That is all he dreams about; he just wants to be a motor mechanic. You may tell that boy, "There is no opening. You are going to take a job at very little pay. You should be a bricklayer", but he does not like any other trade but that of a motor mechanic. He would not be happy, and he would not be a very good bricklayer. He may take a course and fail, but in any event there is no opening. However, give him a good motor mechanic trade and he is going to find employment somewhere, if he is really convinced that is what he wants to do.

Mr. McNamara: Well, yes.

Senator Fournier: But, try to guide him in something he does not want and you will have trouble.

The Chairman: That is exactly the point I was making, senator, in saying the man took what he wanted. There was not an opening at that point and we are in no position to say you must go to such and such a place in order to find a position for yourself. We do not do it and so there is criticism of the Manpower Department. Have you any suggestions?

Mr. Claude McKinnon, Building Inspector, Association of Professional Engineers of New Brunswick: Mr. Chairman, I might say that you probably compound the situation when you tell Manpower, on the one hand, the people who create the job, that they must give a man a trade and then put him in an area, or at least he goes to the area that

cannot provide an opportunity and the employed people paying the salary because he is unable to work.

In a lot of cases—I am speaking more from information I have received—people will stay at one specific job in order to receive Unemployment Insurance knowing full well they cannot acquire that particular job in the area they are in. Or, even we will say in Saint John, there are a number of people not working here in Saint John that cannot acquire work they say they are looking for rather than say "I will take any sort of work".

The Chairman: Yes, but I think the provision is "suitable work". How many of those are there? We have heard that story, Mr. McKinnon, not only from you but from others of people who go to Manpower for the purpose of qualifying for Unemployment Insurance but it is infinitesimally small. Here and there you come across it, of course, but it is hard to find. They do exist but in the main 95 per cent of the people are trying to get a job and they find themselves in the position that we were discussing with Mr. McNamara at the present time. He has got his qualifications. As Senator Fournier said he has got what he wants. If he is not going to use it today, is he going to use it some other day?

Mr. McNamara: I would like to make another suggestion here between the youth coming out of the school system and learning a trade. I suggest this individual is rather more flexible in that he can probably travel where the job is available and this is an immediate example of the kind of initiative about which I am talking. This man is free. He can go where this opportunity is, in all probability.

A much more serious problem is the family man who looks up and down the community and suddenly finds his farm is no longer support for his family, or the job he held no longer exists. This is a problem. This is the man who does not want to move and I do not know the answer to that, I am afraid.

Senator Fournier: I have another question. This is my favourite question and I am very happy to ask the professional engineers this morning about it. Do you believe it takes a great while to take training in a barber shop to become a barber?

Mr. McNamara: Probably it does, having tried to cut my son's hair and not succeeding.

Senator Fournier: Think about it? Give me your reasons.

The Chairman: He did. He said he tried to cut his son's hair and did not succeed.

Senator Fournier: I want to hear your opinion on this. I am a firm believer in Manpower's requirements for some of the trades, but the standards are too high in some cases because in many cases it is possible to upgrade a boy or a man. It has been tried. Yet he is a Canadian citizen. He has got a family. He has to live. There are facilities. We know he will never become an expert in his line, but he would have some kind of trade. We close the door for him because he has only got Grade 12. He will never get Grade 13.

Mr. McNamara: Mr. McKinnon may be better qualified to comment on that than I am. It seems to me that any organization that is made up of human beings will tend to try to do something for those in the organization to operate as a closed door organization for personal purposes. We have these pressures within The Association of Professional Engineers. We are conscious of them and we try to avoid them. I am sure it is true of trade organizations as well. They are human too.

Mr. McKinnon: Just one thing, Mr. Chairman. I think probably the people that you are referring to as far as educational requirements, being a little bit higher, are more apt to be in the 30, 40, 50 year old range rather than a young person coming up because the educational requirements of the younger people today are much much more higher.

I think the people that are getting locked out, as Mr. McNamara referred to them, are the people in that category. They are the ones that are having the problem. I think they are also the ones that are being, if you can call it, phased out.

Once we get rid of that particular age group we are hoping the younger people coming along are going to do the job we want them to do. I think we are locking out everybody in the older age groups.

Senator Fournier: I think that is a good answer, but not all of it.

The Chairman: It makes a lot of sense.

Senator Quart: I have just one last question to follow up Senator Fournier's question. It has always been one of my pet questions too,

about Manpower not being able to deliver the goods. I have listened to your radio on many occasions since I have been here, but I have never heard, as we sometimes hear in Ottawa, the jobs available at Manpower. Do they publish any lists here of jobs available?

The Chairman: The same ad. goes on here. I heard it this morning and it is the same sort of ad. which goes on the air in Ottawa, except this morning they were advertising for a couple for whom they had jobs here. There were four or five jobs advertised on the CBC.

Senator Quart: Do you mean in the newspaper?

The Chairman: No, on the air.

Senator Quart: I must have been listening to another station.

The Chairman: It is a standard ad. that goes across the country.

Senator Hastings: I wonder if we could return to our educational discussion. Did you say there were 854 professional engineers in the province?

Mr. McNamara: I think it is somewhere in the order of 830.

Senator Hastings: How many have been licensed and registered in the last reporting period?

Mr. McNamara: I believe in the last two or three years the gain in membership is in the order of 40 to 60 per year.

Senator Hastings: Let us say in one year there were 50.

Mr. McNamara: Yes.

Senator Hastings: How many of those received their basic training outside Canada? In other words, how many would you say had taken their education and received their standards in another country and by transfer came to your organization?

Mr. McNamara: I have no statistics, but just from being on the Council receiving these applications I would hazard a guess probably less than 5 per cent. I think I am being liberal in allowing 5 per cent. It may be less than that, particularly in this area. The vast majority of our new members tend to be graduates of maritime universities.

Senator Hastings: I personally have received criticism that your education

requirements are far too high and you do, in fact, discriminate against the man who has just arrived in Canada and who has a status in his native country. He arrives in Canada and finds he cannot in any way be licensed or registered in your federal organization. I am not criticising you in particular.

Mr. McNamara: Well, we maintain a list of universities around the world. This work is carried on primarily by the Canada Council of Professional Engineers. They have a standing committee to do this work. These are universities whose standards are recognized automatically. A graduate of these universities with the experience requirement, which amounts to two years in engineering work, is automatically the same as a graduate of a Canadian university. There are universities in Canada and in the United States that are not recognized automatically. The graduates of those universities are required to prove their technical competence just the same as people from other countries.

Senator Hastings: As a Canadian?

Mr. McNamara: That is right.

Senator Hastings: In your brief, you say:

All Canadians have a right to a healthy life in this prosperous and developing country.

What do you mean by "healthy"? Do you mean keeping alive?

Mr. McNamara: Well, that, like the word poverty" or "prosperity" is a relative term. I think every man almost has to define that for himself.

One, I suppose, can define it statistically by the health standards of the day which, again, varies as years go by. I imagine what is considered a reasonably healthy life today is quite different from a reasonable healthy life in 1920.

Senator Hastings: In other words, you are referring to physical and mental health?

Mr. McNamara: I am referring to physical and mental health. These, I think, cannot be separated from a person's financial well-being.

Senator Hastings: Does your Association believe that every Canadian has a right to sufficient resources to provide the basic necessities of life and a reasonably comfortable life for one's dependents and one's self?

Mr. McNamara: That is correct.

Mr. McKinnon: We use the word "resources" in its broadest sense.

Senator Hastings: He has a right.

Mr. McNamara: He has a right to the resources. In other words he should not be prevented from getting to the resources, and incentives should be such as to encourage him to get to the resources.

The Chairman: Mr. McNamara and Mr. McKinnon, for two reasons we are very thankful to you. When we started our hearings we sent out invitations to professional bodies and you are the first Professional Engineering body that accepted our invitation. We are very appreciative of that.

On top of that you travelled some distance to come here, and this morning you have made a contribution, and you have been helpful to us. In a quiet way you have said many things that needed saying from people who are in the field, and who are concerned and have the interest of the country at heart. The committee thanks both of you for your contribution this morning.

Mr. McNamara: Thank you very much.

The Chairman: We have a brief here from Dr. Bruce Parlee. He is Chief of the Department of General Practice at the Hospital. We do not see too many general practitioners as we go around the country but as was pointed out to me Dr. McGrand was a very general practitioner many years ago.

Dr. Parlee will read his brief and then we will put some questions to him.

Dr. H. Bruce Parlee, Chief of the Department of General Practice, Saint John Hospital: Mr. Chairman and Honourable Senators, my brief is very short, as you know, and I am basing it on the right of a person to live his life with dignity and possibly by changing his environment it will increase his chances to live that life.

I have been asked to report to you concerning poverty as seen through the eyes of a practising physician in this City. You will have had briefs in great detail concerning Education, Guidance, Intelligence, Disabilities, and Calamities as they affect the picture of poverty in our country. However, the aspect beyond all others with which a general practitioner is daily confronted is Environment

for we are called to see people in the very poorest of surroundings where the resulting depression, apathy and loss of human dignity are as much a part of the medical picture as the patient's illness.

People in poor housing feel lost, with nowhere to go but down. Recently I have seen families moved to new housing developments and can bear personal witness to the change in their appearance, attitude and self-determination. This has been remarkable. Their incentive to break the poverty cycle has been restored, and the re-establishment of their human dignity has reclaimed the individual as an integral part of his community.

All of the things listed in the first paragraph play a part, but the single factor which stands out over all others is that a change in environment—if only better housing—at least will restore their self-respect and their faith that they can cope with their lot. I believe the Declaration of Human Rights states that everyone is entitled to live his life with dignity. Give them this chance, and you have wiped out the worst aspect of poverty anywhere in the World.

The Chairman: Senator Fergusson, you are our latest housing expert, so will you take the witness?

Senator Fergusson: I am sorry. I think I had better wait and ask my questions later.

Senator Fournier: I will take a crack at him.

The Chairman: Go ahead.

Senator Fournier: There is not much in the brief itself, so I imagine it is wide open for questioning.

The Chairman: Yes, surely.

Senator Fournier: I agree with you, doctor in your remarks on housing and changing the environment. I think it is a good point. I suppose you do not believe that progress is fast enough. We are too slow in changing the environment and that includes housing and so on, in the City of Saint John and everywhere else in Canada?

Dr. Parlee: Yes, I would like to see things move much faster.

Senator Fournier: How would you do it? Is it a question of money? Who is going to pay for all the expenses?

Dr. Parlee: I think it is a question of money. I think the government has got to come forward and subsidize housing, and provide more low cost housing.

I think we are building, at least as I see it, some of these high-rise apartments that cost a great deal whereas they could perhaps put in component homes and things that are much cheaper. We have lots of room. There is a lot of territory around Saint John. There is land everywhere.

Senator Fournier: Even in the rocky hills?

Dr. Parlee: I used the term "in the rocky hills". I think they could expand out even into the smaller communities.

Senator Fournier: Trying to provide a decent home for every family?

Dr. Parlee: Yes, I think so. What we see, in making our calls to patients that live in very poor surroundings, is that there is no incentive for them to better themselves. The housing we have in developments is very good because they built in areas where there are lawns. There are wide streets. There are areas for children to get out. These people see something in front of them. Well, with their neighbours, they are going to keep up with the Jones's. They are going to keep their apartment looking nice.

Senator Fournier: It makes a difference to somebody when a family owns a home?

Dr. Parlee: Owns a home?

Senator Fournier: As against paying rent?

Dr. Parlee: No, I do not think it is necessary to own a home, as long as they have some place, or at least they have a room with windows in it.

Senator Fournier: I do not think you go my question. If we provide a home do you not think they have an incentive to keep it clean and paint it and it would be better than if they were just paying rent and it is up to the landlord to look after the home. The tenant says "I don't care if the window is broken or if the steps are rotten", and so on.

Dr. Parlee: No, I think you will paint it and keep it better if you own it.

The Chairman: Doctor, take a minute and speak to us about the environment, will you? When you started out you sort of said "I am not going to talk about education, guidance"

disability or other things. I am going to talk about environment." Can you express it in such a way that it lives before us?

Dr. Parlee: I think in a brief tour around our City in some of these areas you could see for yourself the homes that are old. They are run down. These are places in which people are asked to live because they have no place else to go and they cannot afford anything better. There is no place for their children to get out and play except perhaps they run three or four blocks away to a small area that the City has tried to fix up as a park or playground.

The Chairman: But, doctor, poverty is not confined to the south part of Saint John, about which we are talking, or any other place or area. In every city we find poverty here and there where it is least expected. There is no use in taking that as a total sample.

Dr. Parlee: This is what we see in making house calls to people. They live in sub-basements. They have no proper plumbing. There is a bathroom maybe down the hall or somewhere upstairs. When you go into the bedroom there is no window in it but there is somebody sick in there.

I say move these people out of this area to a place where there are better surroundings and then they have a chance to try to do something for themselves.

What can a mother do in a home like that? She cannot do anything.

Senator Inman: Dr. Parlee, I was very interested to hear your experience in this field. I would like to ask you: How much service, if any, is provided for the poor who live in this province or even in Saint John?

The reason I ask you this is that this week we heard some people from, I think it was, Sint Clair and they have a very active clinic there for the poor people. Is there such a thing here?

Dr. Parlee: Yes, senator. We think it is probably unique in our province. We have a clinic in Saint John's Hospital that is open five days a week. I think there are 28 clinics in all. They run from the General Practice Clinic early in the morning to all the speciality clinics.

These are for what we call our medically indigent and they receive a card from the Department of Welfare. They are entitled to

attend these clinics at any time. Everything they get is free—all their investigation, their medical services, their doctors and their drugs are free—supplied by the hospital and I think there are roughly about 2,000 people attending these clinics.

Senator Inman: If they require house calls, is there any way that doctors make arrangements for this?

Dr. Parlee: House calls are getting to the point they are almost lost causes.

Senator Inman: In a lot of cases?

Dr. Parlee: Yes. In our field we still have about 30 general practitioners in our area and they do make house calls. It is not a question of "Can you pay or not?" The doctor still goes and with our out-door running 24-hour service and with general practitioners on call 24 hours a day, these people take advantage of bringing patients to this out-door clinic. Besides our clinic this is a 24-hour service.

Senator Quart: Doctor, you represent the Department of General Practice?

Dr. Parlee: Yes.

Senator Quart: Therefore you are a G.P.?

Dr. Parlee: That is correct.

Senator Quart: Now, would the medical profession not be a logical field to start a real protest against this living because you can frighten the public by saying it is not only very bad for the individuals who live in that environment and slum and so on and so forth, but it could start an epidemic.

Senator Fournier: You could even start one.

Senator Quart: If you called a press conference and said that it is a terrible thing, they would be more afraid of you than they would of another group because you have the know-how. That is a challenge for you now.

Dr. Parlee: Thank you.

The Chairman: That one he will not accept.

Senator Hastings: Dr. Parlee, with respect to the environment, you tell us that the change is remarkable. Was it just the change in environment that brought on this change of attitude, or was there something other than that?

Dr. Parlee: Oh, I daresay there are other contributing factors. I was thinking, when

I spoke of this, of one family in particular that I attended that lived in a sub-basement—I mentioned this before—where everything was bad. At a later date I was called to see this family and was surprised to hear they had moved to one of the new housing developments in our city. I went out and the change was, as I say, remarkable. The house was clean and the family was happy. The children had got out and tried to get jobs. They were going to school now. The father was making a better effort to watch his behaviour, which was before quite degrading, and they had some incentive to keep this place running.

With this family it just struck me, would it not be wonderful if you could move everybody out of these poor homes and put them in places like that, and they could all come alive.

Dr. Parlee: Yes, I am sure it is just one step.

Senator Hastings: But that is just one step.

Senator Hastings: There must have been other contributing factors.

Dr. Parlee: As I have said you could take all these things. You could go into education but this is just one step, I agree.

Senator Hastings: With regard to the change in environment, in another province I was talking to a father, 45 years old, with eight children. He was being encouraged to move to a centre of development, and the government would move him. I asked him "Are you going to move?", and he said, "No." I asked "Why?", and he said "Because if I went there I would have nothing." I said "Well, you have nothing here", and he said "Yes, but I would sooner be here and have nothing than there because I know where I am here."

I am asking you: Do you bodily move a man out of that environment where he is quite happy to be, and where he has grown up and where he knows he can exist?

Dr. Parlee: I do not know. I think it is just not the man. It is the wife and children who want this too. It just does not depend on him only.

Senator Hastings: By his answer he was used to this environment. He knew he could exist there and he just was not about to move. At the time it struck me that perhaps we would be damaging this man if we forced him to move.

Dr. Parlee: Yes, it is very possible.

The Chairman: Doctor, speaking of health, what are the out-patient facilities like in the city here?

Dr. Parlee: First of all we have one building that houses, I think, the clinics and this area is a new building which the people can attend and have excellent facilities in this clinic area.

Our Emergency area at the present time is being remodelled. Plans have been drawn for remodelling. I am talking about the General Hospital and we hope this will be underway very shortly. The facilities are good but we are crowded. By remodelling, we hope we will be able to remove most of the waste spaces.

The Chairman: Did you by any chance happen to read the brief of the Medical Association which was presented to this Committee?

Dr. Parlee: No.

The Chairman: It was a very good brief in which they made three observations, as I recall them. They said there was a lack of medical men in areas in Canada; out-patient departments were out-moded and needed renovation—some places have not been improved in 40 or 50 years and are totally inadequate—and hospitals were built for doctors not for patients.

These were the three observations. The were constructive observations and they were not hitting anybody. They were top men. Some of these observations apply here?

Dr. Parlee: To a certain extent, yes. Our government recently had appointed about a year ago the Lewellyn Weeks Commission to study the problem of the health needs of the Province of New Brunswick.

This brief is finished and it comprises two large volumes and it is being studied at the present time by medical personnel as well as the government and no doubt there will be a lot—at least I hope—some good things come out of this. Maybe it is not all good but at least good things, we hope, will come out of it.

We are told by members of the Department of Health they are stressing now ambulatory care, which is out-door facilities, and care for convalescence at home.

The Chairman: There is one more thing I would like to ask you. Before the doctors appeared before us there appeared a group from Montreal who were called the "Store Front Group." Do you know what I mean by that?

Dr. Parlee: Yes.

The Chairman: There were young doctors and some students, just out or just about to be out, and they were carrying these sorts of services to the poor. Our schedule was not fixed in that way—it just so happened—and my own feeling was that the Medical Association totally approved of what they were doing.

Dr. Parlee: This is the group in Point Clair?

The Chairman: That is right. What is your view?

From the Floor: Point St. Charles.

The Chairman: Yes. What is your view on making the service to the poor and to the needy? That is what they were doing, actually.

Dr. Parlee: I think that is fine if you can, but with the facilities that we have we just cannot do it.

The Chairman: Can you not, doctor? Saint John is a small city and we have been told time and again for the last two days you have an area at which you can point a finger—it is not so easy in other places—and have services available there on the store-front basis? Would it not be easier there than it is in other cities?

Dr. Parlee: Well, in a small way we have tried to do this because we have medical clinics set up throughout the City. There is a medical clinic in West Saint John. There is another one in the north end. This is comprised of anywhere from four to six doctors working in clinics. There is another clinic in East Saint John. These people are in private practice, of course, but the clinics are seeing private patients as well as welfare patients. They are not seeing indigent patients or the patients that attend the clinics.

The Chairman: No.

Dr. Parlee: They are divided out through the city.

The Chairman: How do you get paid at the moment for welfare patients?

Dr. Parlee: We have an agreement with the government whereby we accept a 30 per cent cut in our schedule of fees. We are paid 70 per cent of the schedule.

The Chairman: You are hoping for the full 100 per cent or 90 per cent?

Dr. Parlee: Well, we would like something better than that.

The Chairman: Are there any other questions?

Senator Fergusson: Dr. Parlee, I certainly agree with what you say about housing changing the attitude of people because I have seen it very recently myself. If people have a decent place to live in they respond to it. In the course of what you were saying I think you said that the government will probably have to supply more public housing.

Dr. Parlee: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: That is probably right but we have seen a great deal of this throughout Canada and one of the complaints from people who live in some of the public housing is, even though they are well housed, of the stigma that attaches to being in public housing. Even if you do have the physical conditions, if you have something like this that is irritating and bothering these people then this is another kind of poverty. It may not be financial poverty.

Can you think of any way by which the government could provide public housing which would eliminate that stigma? You see, the children have told us when they go to school it is thrown up at them that they are in public housing, and they are looked down upon.

Dr. Parlee: Really, I do not know. They should be required to pay a certain amount of rent according to their ability to pay.

Senator Fergusson: But the very fact that there is public assistance for their housing is often thrown up to them, and they consider it a stigma. We have found this in other places where we have visited public housing.

Dr. Parlee: I do not know if it would help to change the name. They used to call it the poor house. My own father spoke of that many times. I know of one where they changed the name and called it Sunset

Manor, or something like this, but it is still public housing, so I suppose in public housing if you change it or call it by another name, it would not help.

Senator Fergusson: Well, perhaps if it were not built the way it is it might be better. If it were a little more divided and perhaps among other houses people would not realize it is public housing. Do you think that could be?

Dr. Parlee: That is what I was saying.

Senator Fergusson: However, it may be too expensive for the government.

Dr. Parlee: Well, component homes can be built and put up very cheaply now.

Small communities, instead of assembling large apartments, comprised of small individual homes using these component homes that can be put up very quickly, could be established.

Senator Fergusson: You would almost have to put them in different localities.

Dr. Parlee: Of course.

Senator Fergusson: They could not be all together in any one place that points a finger at them.

Dr. Parlee: That is right.

Senator Fergusson: I just wondered if you had thought about how such housing could be built?

Senator McGrand: If you put up that type of housing would it not affect the real estate values of the other areas around?

The Chairman: Personally, I have heard that argument time and time again. I think it is a lot of hooley. For years I have heard that same thing and, of course, we have had people in the neighbourhood actually oppose the building of public housing. They do not know what they are opposing but they say "My boy doesn't want to play with that boy. He doesn't even know the boy." After they are there a short time they find they are the best of neighbours. I do not believe it.

Senator McGrand: That is not the statement I made.

The Chairman: You did not make a statement. You asked a question.

Senator McGrand: This is what I am talking about: In a certain area land is valuable,

and if you put this type of housing here and there over this area there is a tendency to downgrade the value of that land because people say to themselves "I do not want to live here". I think they pay more for the land than they pay for the house in a select area. Therefore, I would think you would get a lot of opposition from those who are in the real estate business. It is just a question of dollars and cents to the real estate people.

The Chairman: I agree with you that these people should not be segregated.

Senator McGrand: You have not answered the question I asked.

Dr. Parlee: I am sorry, I cannot answer that, senator.

The Chairman: Well, doctor, you gave us a very short brief this morning. I can assure you, for reasons I cannot state but which are very good reasons, that for us it had a thrust. Thank you, doctor, for coming before this committee.

The Chairman: The next brief is being submitted by the Saint John Community Workers Association and on my right is Mr. Archibald Smith, who is a Social Service Worker with the Department of Health and Welfare. He will make their submission.

Mr. Archibald Smith, Social Service Worker, Department of Health and Welfare: Mr. Chairman, Senators and ladies and gentlemen. The name of our Association is the Saint John Community Workers Association. The purpose of our Organization is to promote fellowship and understanding among the various agencies of the City. These include Health, Welfare, Educational, Justice and Recreation. Originally we had planned on making some startling remarks but in the last two days all the points that we had intended to bring up have been brought up.

We would like in our brief to stimulate conversation among you and give you some food for thought.

We found it most difficult to define the term "poverty" in this 20th Century due to the numerous connotations that are applicable to such a problem.

The other portion that we attempted to expand upon was that of deprivation. We feel that an individual who cannot participate fully and wholly in our Canadian Society because of economic inadequacies is in a form of poverty. To us poverty means substandard

of health, work efficiency, education, justice, child rearing, recreation, and it usually promotes a general deterioration of self esteem and respect of others, and thereby blocks an individual from reaching his potential and becoming a productive member of our Society.

It is our opinion that there is a definite need of reform within our present day system and society. We believe that all Canadians want to be a part of this change, and that all persons have a right to a full and normal existence. Therefore, our efforts must be directed with the utmost speed to re-integrating poverty stricken individuals into the normal experiences of community living. We feel we can no longer afford to allow individuals in our community to be isolated and segregated within the community setting. As an organization involved in community services we feel there is a drastic need of change in the following areas:

- (1) A definite need of attitudinal change among professionals as well as non-professional persons within the community setting.
- (2) A complete re-examination of the community's working poor class.
- (3) A more concentrated attack on the problems of and experienced by today's youth.
- (4) More assistance offered to our elderly citizens in the realization of happiness and contentment.
- (5) A more thorough integration of all community services, federal, provincial and private agencies.
- (6) A complete revamping of the present cost sharing systems in health and welfare.

Attitude change will need to be brought about in three phases:

- (a) Change in the attitude of the professional
 - (b) Change in the attitude of the public in general, with focus on the business community
 - (c) Change in the attitude of the recipient
- (a) The professional must be willing to attack the whole problem, not just the segments of a problem. He must no longer limit himself to the specific area of an individual problem that is served by his organization, but rather he must strive for comprehensiveness of service to

the whole individual in relationship to the community.

(b) The attitude of the non-professional appears generally to be of a negative nature. This attitude is perhaps a direct result of his being inadequately informed of the poverty situation within his community and he therefore does not have a total awareness of the situation. This lack of awareness is perhaps an outgrowth of the apathetic attitude of non interested professionals and possibly even his own willingness to perceive isolated incidents as being the rule rather than the exception. Due to the lack of education and public awareness the non professional feels his money is being squandered on those too lazy to work and is unable or unwilling to understand how his taxes are being used, that is to reintegrate these individuals back into a productive role within the community thus in the long run relieving these monetary pressures on the remaining community.

(c) The attitude of the recipient, which is one that varies from that of demand to that of apathy and personal defeat, can be looked upon as the product of his environment. This is to say these attitudes stem from lack of those services which form the positive growth of an individual within his environment. The prime service lacking is that of educational training, both academic and technical. These in turn limit the parents' financial income, thus affecting his family's cultural development by stagnating their aspirations to achieve those goals which would allow them and their families to aspire to a higher level of living within the community.

(2) The Working Poor: It is our contention that the plight of the working poor is as it exists, perhaps the most disheartening of all the elements within our society. We feel this because it is this group, who although they have the desire to raise their self esteem and improve their conditions of living, are however unable to do so due to lack of educational and technical training. They find it difficult to maintain their existence due to the numerous frustrations they encounter in the matters of low wages, lack of proper medical attention, poor and inadequate housing and sporadic employment. It is this group of individuals who are most inclined to surrender in despair and turn to rely solely on government organized assistance programs such as Social

Assistance or Unemployment. To counteract this lack of work incentive we must take immediate studies in the following areas:

- (a) To have the minimum wage increased.
- (b) We must devise a new and more comprehensive system of service in the welfare program which will meet the needs of the working poor.
- (c) Provide adult education and technical training.
- (d) Provide a reasonable guarantee of medical care for all.
- (e) Improve the housing situation in both quality and quantity.
- (f) Devise a complete and comprehensive scheme to provide counselling by professionals in the areas of budgeting, family planning, and family living which would be readily available to all persons.

We feel that in attacking the problems in this area, we are waging the war on poverty on two fronts. First by upgrading the individuals in this area, we dispel any thoughts of relying on government services by creating an incentive to work and gain prosperity. Secondly, by increasing the employment quota we also invariably increase the tax dollars needed for more intensive programing in the more impoverished areas of the community.

(3) Our Youth: Another area of vital concern in our present day society is that of today's youth, who in the majority of cases, are in some type of poverty when the term is taken in the context of our definition. In order to guarantee the continuation of our society we must assist these young persons to assume a productive and meaningful role within our society. To accomplish this a more concentrated approach must be taken in the following areas:—

- (a) Educational facilities
- (b) Counselling and guidance
- (c) Living accommodations for youth who cannot adapt to living in their own homes as well as transient youth
- (d) We must offer more assistance to the parents of our youth in helping to bridge the "generation gap" which often exhibits itself in family frustrations and family crisis situations. We feel that more active and concerned work in this area will help to alleviate some of the potential poverty cases in future years.

(4) The Elderly: In today's urban society we no longer find the strong large family unit that existed at the turn of the century. Today with people living in small homes or apartments the elderly person often finds themselves without true companionship when they need it most. Due to insufficient-fixed incomes their position in the community has become endangered. They encounter problems with housing, budgeting for vital necessities not to take into consideration entertainment or relaxation. The elderly citizen often finds himself alone and unable to make an adequate social adjustment to the new community role he must play. The senior citizens have bonded together to offer themselves some protection from the perils of the aged. However those who are active and over 65 quite frequently refuse to accept their position and drift further away from their peers as their friends die thus finding themselves alone in a society foreign to them.

(5) Service: To provide the proper types of service to everyone we must discontinue to categorize these persons and their problems into little compartments, each of which is handled by a variety of agencies or organizations, but rather we must view our society and its problems as a whole. Our present day system allows us to freely shift the responsibilities of these persons from one agency to another, with no one agency willing to assist the family in all respects of their problems. We can no longer afford to tolerate the compounding of problems because we are too busy to provide the assistance needed immediately when the problem originates. We must attempt to locate the source of the problem, and not just patch it up.

If our goals are to be realized we must begin by integrating our services and coordinating our efforts at each of the various levels of government, and between the public and voluntary agencies within the community. A complete and thorough revamping of our outdated assistance service programs is needed to meet the requirements of our modern society. We must strive for more comprehensive service with the emphasis on prevention and promote the ideal of a better and just society for all.

(6) Cost Sharing: We feel the present system of federal assistance in the areas of Health and Welfare, known as the Cost Sharing Program, does have inequalities for economically deprived areas of this country. The present cost sharing program is not realistic to the

areas where unemployment is in excess of the national average. Unemployment can be controlled to some degree by the Federal Government and those areas where unemployment is higher than the national level will use community agencies to a greater degree, thus increasing the provincial cost of these agencies and increasing provincial expenditures. By increasing Provincial expenditures the tax payer feels the burden thus effecting those on limited or fixed incomes.

Recommendations: We realize of course that there are no immediate or spontaneous solutions to the existing problem of poverty. However, we feel that through long range planning and the continuous revision of our present systems we can alleviate many of the pressures caused by our inadequate services. We would suggest that the six major components of the poverty problem as we view it can be attacked in the following manners:

1) **Attitudes:** The professional's attitude must change if he hopes to solicit acceptable responses from his clientele. The individual professional must endorse the "battle on poverty" from a community standpoint and not that of an individual agency or person. He must learn to use his imagination in utilizing the community resources.

The negative attitude of the non professional or lay man within the community should be combated by helping him to understand the poverty situation and those who are in it through the use of the news media and public relations, and thus by informing him of the use of his tax dollars and educating him in the long range benefits of such expenditures he might gain his support and assistance.

The recipient, for his part must be made fully aware of his right to assistance, of his ability to rise above his present situation through the services offered by the community resources. It is only through this awareness can he be motivated to appreciate his own capabilities thus breaking the endless poverty cycle.

2) **The Working Poor:** To alleviate the pressures on the working poor and curtail any desire to give up in despair we must initiate immediate changes in the areas of training, income, and housing. By raising the minimum wage standards we place those individuals above the income level of welfare recipients thus creating a work incentive. Through utilization of subsidized social assistance programs we can encourage individuals to strive towards self efficiency, and becoming produc-

tive citizens within our community. As stated in the New Brunswick White Paper on Social Development, "There is evidence to indicate that some wage earners and their families would improve their conditions should they leave the work force and become recipients of social assistance." This factor alone should be reason enough for us to re-examine our system of service.

There must be steps taken to improve the crisis caused by lack of proper housing and provisions made to curtail abuse of the situation by landlords who take advantage of the opportunity to request ridiculous rates of rent for slum dwellings.

Our agencies must begin offering extensive service through group and individual counselling, including household budgeting. The basic unit of our society is the family and we must therefore strive to offer intensive counselling in the areas of family planning and assist in overcoming the complex problems which develop within the family setting.

We must strive to provide increased adult education and technical training to assist these individuals in the development of their skills and thus becoming self supporting in obtaining the goods and services needed by them to maintain themselves and their families.

(3) **Youth:** The problems encountered in attempting to deal with today's youth are, to say the least, complex and varied. The difficulty found in attempting to meet their needs is multiplied by the lack of adequate and proper facilities. We find that our educational facilities are inadequate to meet their needs and would strongly recommend a complete revamping of the present educational system with an emphasis placed on counselling and guidance to assist the "drop-out" as well as the participating student.

We must attempt to understand the "problem adolescent" and "hippie groups" and to assist them in finding solutions to their problems whether they be behavioral, emotional, or an inability to cope with the pressures of modern day society. We are obligated to at least try and understand the drug problem, keeping in mind that while a number make use of drugs in an attempt to expand his intellectual and emotional horizons there are also many who use them to escape from reality.

The term "generation gap" is more than just words, but rather it is indeed a fact. Increasingly more parents are experiencing

this problem and are absolutely unable to cope with it. We must offer extensive counselling services to both the youth and parents in an attempt to bridge this gap and maintain a reasonable standard of family living. For those who are unable to adjust to family living we must attempt to provide adequate housing facilities to meet their needs.

Due to a lack of employment we are finding an increasing number of transient youths wandering aimlessly throughout the country. We must provide adequate housing for them. We must initiate programs of training for future employment of those individuals as a means to help alleviate potential poverty cases in the future.

The magnitudes of the problems of our youth are demonstrated in the use of drugs, protests, and in the attempts of our young people to alienate themselves from society which seemingly ignores their needs. Unless we act immediately to their obvious request for help we will find the situation completely beyond our control.

(4) We are also of the opinion that greater consideration should be given to the elderly citizens of our community. Greater emphasis should be placed on the provision of low cost housing for these persons. The old age pension programs should be and must be reviewed and if necessary revised periodically to insure that at least a reasonable existence can be maintained on the amounts allotted. A government sponsored agency should be formed to promote the social aspects of the senior citizen's life and encourage membership to such activities. We should attempt to lessen the stigma of old age activities and promote the use of voluntary agencies to assist our elderly citizens to continue a productive role within the community setting.

In dealing with the problem of delivery of service we must keep utmost in our thinking that these services are a universal right of every citizen and in no way should take away from his dignity.

We feel that there must be co-ordination of efforts of all persons in an attempt to eliminate duplication of services among the various community agencies.

We would suggest that the concept of a team approach would be most beneficial to the clientele and enable us to provide a more comprehensive service with an emphasis on prevention.

We must co-ordinate the services offered by government agencies and community services

to provide the maximum service to those in need. To accomplish this we must develop a feeling of partnership and above all respect among the various professions.

To provide more equality in the cost sharing program we feel that if the government were to introduce a cost sharing program based upon the unemployment average for specific regions or zones, that all Canadians would benefit, particularly, the more economically deprived areas. We would suggest that in those areas where unemployment is greater than the national average that assistance be allotted in the same ratio. Likewise in areas where unemployment is less than the national average the assistance should correspond. We realize this suggestion fails to take into consideration those individuals in our Society who are employed, but in need of subsidized assistance, and suggest that these individuals be included in the fixed differential scale.

In summarizing; as a group concerned with the betterment and development of the whole community we feel we cannot tolerate the continuance of the present situation. We would ask that the recommendations of this report be given serious consideration by this Committee. We realize that the implementation of these changes and reforms cannot come overnight. However, we feel these changes cannot come too soon; but to ignore them further will only create more serious problems for the future. It is our desire to see that every individual in our Canadian society is insured of his rights of equality.

Thank you.

Senator Fournier: This brief has certainly a lot of material for discussion here. There is one point. You used some very strong words. It seems to me, in various places where you say that "you cannot tolerate". It seems to me that you are going to the extreme, and then you say "to ignore". Again this seems to be extreme.

Mr. Smith: In between that there is a compromise somewhere, a happy medium, yes.

Senator Fournier: Then you speak about the professional attitude in two or three different places. Does that professional attitude really exist, as you put in your brief?

Mr. Smith: I believe it does, yes. I think we have our own agencies and we are not willing to let go of any of our domain. We do not want to share the problem with other agencies.

cies or request assistance from another agency.

I think this attitude of working on it from a private point of view or an individual point of view is wrong. I think we should contact other agencies and use other resources, frankly.

Senator Fournier: I should have asked it as the first question. Does the Saint John Community Workers Association go in the field? Is it a welfare community organization in a welfare association?

Mr. Smith: It is all the various social agencies in the community, AA, Health and Welfare, Nursing, and so on.

Senator Fournier: That is good enough. You also refer to a change in training programs to provide adult education and technical training. Do we not do that now?

Mr. Smith: We do it, but we do not have enough of it.

Senator Fournier: Is it a matter of buildings or facilities?

Mr. Smith: Facilities, for one thing.

Senator Fournier: In what way? What are we short of in the schools in Saint John?

Mr. Smith: I think they are not adequate to meet the adult problem which we have run across continuously and that is you need Grade 10 for, we will say, a motor mechanic.

Senator Fournier: To become a barber.

Mr. Smith: People may only have Grade 7 or 8. If they do not have Grade 10 they are out of luck. They cannot get any training.

Senator Fournier: The upgrading facilities do not achieve the purpose?

Mr. Smith: They do, but they are not the group of whom I am thinking. When I say adults, I am thinking of these children at 16 or 17 years of age. I have come across many cases of boys from reformatory training school who are just not capable of even taking a course and passing exams, and getting into it. Therefore, they are limited. They have no way of getting into it.

Senator Fournier: There are no facilities for them?

Mr. Smith: Not that I am aware of, no.

Senator Quart: Mr. Chairman, the first question I would like to ask Mr. Smith is: Does your Community Workers Association act as a coordinating council for the other community services in the area?

Mr. Smith: I will pass that on to a resource person, if I can, and ask Mr. Finigan, who is the president, to answer that.

Mr. James Finigan, President, Saint John Community Workers Association: Mr. Chairman, the Committee of the Workers Association actually is a group that meets constantly, at least once a month, and discusses problems and we have a luncheon meeting and one of the prime factors for that is the people who work in the field get to know each other.

In other words, when we talk about this we get to know this person. We have special speakers in the Lions with the work that we do. We also have periods when each agency describes what they can do so that other people in the community working with people realize that if they need a referral where they can get this referral.

Senator Quart: How many members have you? How many communities have you in the group?

Mr. Finigan: How many agencies?

Senator Quart: Agencies.

Mr. Finigan: Well, we have numerous agencies in Saint John—all health agencies, recreation and welfare. We even have a clergyman in our group.

Senator Quart: They all belong to your group?

Mr. Finigan: They all belong to our group.

Senator Quart: Approximately how many members would that entail?

Mr. Finigan: Well, it is hard to say the number of people. Possibly we usually have about 50 active members at a meeting.

Senator Quart: Have you a regular full time office?

Mr. Finigan: No, we do not have an office like an agency. It is just more or less...

Senator Quart: Getting together?

Mr. Finigan: You could say it is a social gathering of people to discuss problems and to understand problems in other agencies.

Senator Quart: And it is voluntary?

Mr. Finigan: It is all voluntary, yes.

Senator Quart: Do you charge any fee?

Mr. Finigan: Yes, we have a small fee we charge for membership.

Senator Quart: It keeps things working?

Mr. Finigan: Yes.

The Chairman: Mr. Finigan, one of your recommendations on page 2 is:

A more thorough integration of all community services, federal, provincial and private agencies.

Now, it occurs to me that if anyone can help do that it ought to be this group. What have you done?

Mr. Finigan: That is right, senator. I think actually what we are thinking in this particular portion of the brief is that for instance, the Social Welfare Department operates in one particular spot, and the other welfare divisions operate in another and Health in another. We are thinking of integration along the lines that these things would be all together which would result in better service and a better relationship between the agencies.

The Chairman: You are now mixing the private agencies with the public agencies. Is that what you say?

Mr. Finigan: Well, actually there would be a benefit even if the private agencies had their headquarters in fact right in the same building that we do because we are working with these agencies so constantly, like the Family Services of Saint John. They have a new Family Counsellor which refers cases to us and if they were right next door to us people could go right next door and obtain service there.

The Chairman: Yes, but Mr. Finigan, when most people think of integration of the services they do not think of having people sitting alongside of one another, but that some ought to be eliminated, and only some remain. That is the general opinion. I am not going to ask you what you think about that, but that is a general viewpoint.

Mr. Finigan: Well, it may be some people's general view. It is not mine.

The Chairman: No, I do not think so.

Mr. Finigan: I personally think that with so many different problems you have so many specialists in the field so therefore you cannot eliminate the professional service and Alcoholic Research service and some other person possibly is not experienced enough to handle that particular aspect of service that is necessary.

The Chairman: Is it not possible, Mr. Finigan, for all the services, perhaps with the exception of the Canada Pension Plan and Unemployment Insurance to be handled under the Canada Assistance Act, for any need that arises for any Canadian at any place in Canada?

Mr. Finigan: Do you mean, handled by one particular agency?

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Finigan: Yes, that is possible. In fact, in our department at the present time we are combining Welfare, Child Welfare and categorical pensions, and one worker handles the whole thing.

Senator Fergusson: I would like to refer to your statement about the elderly on pages 4 and 6. You say that things are more difficult for them than they used to be. There is no longer a strong family unit that takes care of the elderly people. Of course, they had large homes and it was easier to keep them. The way you refer on page 11 to the fact that the old age pension should be reviewed, and then you continue with:

A government sponsored agency should be formed to promote the social aspect of the senior citizen's life and encourage membership to such activities.

I think somewhere you referred to housing for older people. Would you mind telling me, Mr. Smith, what housing there is for older senior citizens in this area?

Also, last night we heard that the Recreation Department and some other agencies provided quite a lot of recreation for older citizens here. From your brief I gather you do not think there is enough. Would you enlarge on these two points, please?

Mr. Smith: Well, I am thinking more of the old age homes in Saint John. I do not know what I think if I were their age I would not want to be put into them.

I suppose it has good points to be with your own peer group but I find it hard to imagine

myself removed from the family and placed off with a group of individuals whom I do not know. I think there is need for us to provide counselling and guidance assistance to the old age group.

There is a lot of emphasis put on youth and not on family life. I do not know of any agency that is specialized in old age persons.

Senator Fergusson: Have you some of these smaller apartment houses which are built under limited dividend?

Mr. Smith: We have one on Brunswick Drive. This is strictly for old age. This is for elderly people—low income, I believe. It is a one-bedroom apartment. This is the same thing I was thinking of. This is what I had in mind, something that is not a dormitory type of thing but individual houses.

Senator Fergusson: This is what I had in mind. I wondered how many you had of this sort?

Mr. Smith: The only one I know of is the one on Brunswick Drive, and I do not believe that is only for elderly persons. I believe it is for widowers, and widows with one child.

Senator Fergusson: There are a number of cities where they have a great many of these and they really are for older people and they are built with older people in mind, you know, and with the facilities that would only be necessary for older people. I just wondered how many of these you had in Saint John.

Mr. Smith: That is the only one I know of unless Mr. Finigan knows of something.

Mr. Finigan: Mr. Chairman, outside of these apartments for elderly citizens in public housing, there is also 40 units in Crescent River Range district of the City. 20 were sponsored by the Rotary Club and 20 were sponsored by the Kiwanis Club. These are confined to just elderly couples for membership for residence there.

They also have in the Corporal Avenue district a certain number of small apartments for elderly citizens. There are plans now I understand, for about 100 additional units, which is in the planning stage right now.

Senator Fergusson: Where are they going to put those?

Mr. Finigan: I do not believe that they have decided yet but this in the planning stage to build more, but five or six years ago the

Rotary Club sponsored 20 elderly people and the Kiwanis Club sponsored 20 elderly people and this is going to be expanded now.

Senator Fergusson: What about recreation?

Mr. Smith: There are different organizations such as the Kiwanis Club and the Rotary Club who sponsor activities for elderly citizens. I do not think this is carried on continuously. I do not think this is a program that has any solid background to it. It is just a spontaneous sort of thing. It depends on the season of the year, sleigh-rides in the winter.

Senator Fergusson: There is no one building assigned to this?

Mr. Smith: Not that I know of.

Senator Fergusson: I know in Ottawa we have one called "The Good Companions." It is open every day and all day. People can go to it. I remember that Senator Croll and I both visited it. There are many others like that throughout Canada and I wondered if you had anything like that in Saint John.

Mr. Smith: I am not a very good resource man.

Senator Fergusson: I am sorry. It was just because you referred to the elderly in your brief.

Mr. Smith: I think this is quite a concern. I have always been concerned.

The Chairman: What do you mean when you say you are not a resource man?

Mr. Smith: Not on that point; I do not know too much about the elderly.

The Chairman: Let us see whether we understand each other. There was a textbook on the elderly resulting from a report made by a Senate Committee on which Senator Fergusson, Senator Inman, and Senator McGrand served, which is regarded by professionals as being one of the best in the country. Have you ever read it?

Mr. Smith: No, I have not.

The Chairman: How many social workers in the audience have ever read the textbook on the report on the Senate Committee on Aging?

Mr. Finigan: I cannot say I have read the whole book, but I have read excerpts from it.

The Chairman: That is all right. You have read it anyway. Is there anybody else?

Mr. Finigan: Miss Gale says that she has.

The Chairman: That is some help anyway.

Mr. Finigan: Do not ask them what they think.

The Chairman: I do not care what they think only that they have read it. If they had read the book they would not have come up with some of these statistics they are giving at the present time, because many of the answers are there. I hope we will have better luck with the report we make on Poverty than we did on Aging.

Senator Inman: On page 1, Mr. Smith, at the last paragraph, you say:

It is our opinion that there is a definite need of reform within our present day system and society.

What reforms do you suggest? What reforms would you like to see?

Mr. Smith: The biggest reform I would like to see is the changing of the service delivering. This is coming about. The White Paper on Social Development and Social Welfare covers this pretty thoroughly. This is what I had in mind when we wrote this phrase in or this sentence.

Senator Fournier: You were not thinking of the mail delivery?

Mr. Smith: No, that has gone. The stigma attached to social welfare recipients by means of the delivery of services we have, needs a drastic change here. We all realize this.

Senator Inman: Have you any suggestions as to how it could be changed?

Mr. Smith: For one thing we in our Department feel that the team approach to the problems is going to be a major factor. The individual worker has individual cases and he has a supervisor, of course, to rely upon, but in the new means we are going to be using, we will handle all aspects of the family problem, whether they are financial, counselling, teenage problems. There are lots of problems that we will have to refer to other agencies, of course, such as health and mental health and this sort of thing, but it will save duplication of services. Quite recently we pre-

pared statistics in our department, and 25 per cent of our cases are also being handled by Social Welfare.

The Chairman: Twenty five per cent of whose cases?

Mr. Smith: Of the Child Welfare.

The Chairman: They are also handled by Social Welfare. There is a duplication to that extent?

Mr. Smith: That is right. This is a waste of time and money. As a result we are not able to handle as many people.

The Chairman: If someone comes to your department, do you not ask them if they have been to another group and what has been done for them?

Mr. Smith: Definitely.

The Chairman: And if they say yes, how do you then get into it?

Mr. Smith: I would like to have Miss Conohue answer that.

Miss Bernadine Conohue, Supervisor, Child Welfare, Department of Health and Welfare: I am the Supervisor of Child Welfare, Department of Health and Welfare.

At the present time we are the section of the Department of Welfare operating with the Social Welfare Department, and our main focus is on the protection of children so in case where Child Welfare and Social Welfare are both involved such as a situation in which there is a child or children in the family who are neglected or are potential neglects; we will go in with this sort of specialized service whereas the Social Welfare carries the financial responsibility and share the case with the Child Welfare.

But, with the integration of services, which is coming about in the fall, we hope a lot of this overlapping will be dispensed with.

Another hope we have is that with a workers handling all kinds of cases the caseload on each worker should be a more satisfying job because it is a very difficult situation for a worker to have perhaps 150 or 200 cases of indigent families and in contrast another worker has 50 or 60 adoption cases or 100 adoption cases or married mothers cases in a specialized department. So, we really hope that the integrated services will be

better thing, not only for the clients but also for the workers who are delivering the service.

The Chairman: I gather from what you are saying that the case loads you mention are normally that size?

Miss Conohue: Their case loads are like that.

Mr. Finigan: That is right.

The Chairman: They are as much as that?

Miss Conohue: Yes, 150 or 200 cases.

Mr. Finigan: And more.

The Chairman: To put it mildly, that is a surprisingly large number. I do not know why you call it a case load because no one would have any more time than just to look up and say "What is your name? What can I do for you?" With 150 cases, what advice could you give them?

Senator Inman: On page 10 you speak of the generation gap. How do you think this came about and also why do you think young people today reject family life as they seem to be doing? In your work you must meet a lot of these young people and hear them talk.

Mr. Smith: Well, the generation gap, I believe, is a form of lack of communication between parents and child from the early years. If you cannot talk to your child at age 6 or 7 or you will not talk to your child at age 6 or 7, when they get to be 16 or 17 they are not going to talk to you, and this is a problem that many parents are experiencing.

Senator Inman: Do you blame the parents for that?

Mr. Smith: I do. I think that we are just a little too busy to sit down and talk to them. When a child asks a question I think we should answer it. As I say, we expect this child to take advice from us. As they get a little older they feel they should not have to and they feel they are grown up. If they cannot in the early years obtain their advice then they are certainly not going to want it as they get a little older and as they become more intelligent.

I think that is what I was referring to as the generation gap, this lack of communication. The parents cannot understand the child and the child cannot understand the parents.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, I would like to continue this discussion of the generation gap with Mr. Smith, because I happen to be one of those parents who are experiencing this problem and are unable to cope with it. I have one 18 year old somewhere between Halifax and Calgary on the Trans-Canada Highway, and another 16 year old who would like to be with him but I had to forcibly detain him at home. The only one that will conform is a 10 year old daughter.

We had two witnesses yesterday who said, as you did, that parents cannot communicate. I am going to ask you: Can social workers communicate?

Mr. Smith: Absolutely not.

Senator Hastings: The boys said yesterday that youth can communicate with youth. Do you believe that?

Mr. Smith: They would like to think they can, yes.

Senator Hastings: Who can communicate with them?

Senator Quart: Grandmothers. The sociologists say that when everything else fails get the grandmother. She can get both sides of the gap together.

Mr. Smith: I feel we can communicate, senator, in so far as ours is not a personal thing. We are not looking at it from a personal viewpoint, and what might rile you about your son would not necessarily rile me. I might be able to see his point of view.

Senator Hastings: As to getting his hair cut?

Mr. Smith: I don't agree with that but it would not upset me as much as it would you.

We find the same difficulty in our agencies, trying to get to these kinds. We do not know what the answer is. I think whoever can come up with the answer will make himself a bundle. There is just no one simple solution to it.

Senator Hastings: The boys also said yesterday you have seven or eight drop-in centres in Saint John. It disturbs us to hear they are rejected by the young or poor children.

Mr. Smith: I know there are drop-in centres. I have never been to one. I would not say they are rejected by them. It may be.

Senator Hastings: They were advocating that youth could operate a drop-in centre much more successfully for youth than you or I or the establishment can.

Mr. Smith: Well, there are two types of youth. We have our rough-necks and we have the kids who are out looking to expand their intellectual horizons. If we do not have someone there to keep out the troublemakers I cannot see how these things could work. They are bound to fail without some sort of order and security. There are children there who are legitimate in their beliefs, but there are a lot of punks in the group.

Senator Hastings: You do not think that youth could administer their own centres?

Mr. Smith: Well, they have not done a very good job so far.

Senator Hastings: I just have one other observation. You mentioned the transient youth wandering aimlessly throughout the country, and that we must provide adequate housing for them. I want to say I have adequate housing for my son.

Mr. Smith: No, I do not mean adequate housing in his own home but if your son arrives here I think we should be prepared to look after him rather than letting him sleep on the railroad tracks.

Senator Hastings: I am afraid he may be arriving any day.

Senator Inman: Just to follow up on adequate housing for them, would that mean a type of hostel?

Mr. Smith: That is what we are referring to.

Senator Inman: They would certainly have to be very well supervised.

Mr. Smith: Well, that is it. You have on the one hand a 14 or a 15-year old girl who decides that she wants to see the world—very innocently she is going out to wander throughout the country—and on the other hand you have some 19-year old fellow who has other things in mind. I think we owe to this 14 or 15-year old girl some sort of protection.

Senator Inman: Yes. I visited many hostels in England, Ireland and Scotland, and they have to be so very well supervised. There is a place in Ottawa, the Church Hall, which was

given over to what I would call the hippy types. In the beginning they allowed a minister to be with them, and then finally they told him they did not want to see him. I was speaking to him and I said "Well, I would put the whole bunch of them out." There are some places where they do not go along too much with the idea of setting up these hostels. They would be more for the local group but not transients.

I have one other observation. I wanted to ask you if, when you are inviting different agencies to your luncheons, you ever think of including the Kiwanis and the Rotary Clubs. They do pretty wonderful things.

Mr. Smith: I believe the organization will welcome anybody. We do call upon various groups in the community to come and speak to us and to tell us what they are doing in the community.

Senator Inman: Mr. Chairman, coming back to this generation gap, I quite agree with Senator Quart, and I am a grandmother too. I find I can communicate where perhaps others cannot, but, do you think that the manner of living today has something to do with the gap? In the old days every house was made to have an older person in it. I think the children miss that, and I think the older people miss that.

Mr. Smith: I think the basic unit of the society, which is the family, is gone. If it is not gone, then it is very close to gone.

Senator Inman: That is too bad because I cannot hardly remember a time when there was not a grandmother, or perhaps both a grandmother and a grandfather, or an elder aunt or uncle, and there was communication between those older people and the children.

Mr. Smith: Well, the family set-up was different, but today the dad is out running around with the next guy's wife, and she is running around with the husband, and the kids are left at home, so this is very true.

Senator Inman: It is too bad but housing and everything is not geared to that sort of living.

Mr. Smith: The housing situation is bad because you have only one or two bedrooms.

Senator McGrand: New housing is not geared for it at all.

Mr. Smith: No, definitely not.

Senator McGrand: This thing came up time and time again before the Committee on Aging. I can remember Senator Fergusson and Senator Quart bringing up this question of houses with the grannie quarters, or a place for the grandfather and grandmother—the grannie flat. At that time we had heard a good deal of evidence that the reason why these families did not keep their aging parents with them was the objection of their children to the grandparents being around. I quite agree with Senator Quart that the grandparents are the best referees—or, the grandmother, I would say.

Senator Quart: I would say the grandfather.

Senator McGrand: At about that time Arnold Toynbee—and we all recognize his ability—wrote an article on the decline of a different civilization throughout the history of the world. He said that the western civilization of today was the only civilization in history that put the old people out of their homes. He predicted dire consequences for society in the long run.

What is going to be the future of designing homes for old people? Is it going to be to further exclude and separate the old people from their immediate families and grandchildren, or will there be an attempt to put up something that will accommodate three generations?

Some of these old houses in Saint John, built a good many years ago, and which are now in the area of blight, were built to look after three generations. Should you restore them or should you build this type of housing that physically separates the families?

Mr. Smith: I definitely do not believe—and do not think anybody here does—in segregation. I cannot understand why anybody would want their parents in a home. This would be my own personal view. I can see if it was for mother-in-law, or something like that. Yes, I think, is part of the problem. You have two sets of families there. Who is staying in, who is going, and who is staying?

The Chairman: What Senator McGrand is saying is that nobody is staying. That is his point.

Mr. Smith: You cannot go from one extreme to the other. You cannot have the whole community in the home. You would have two sets of in-laws, his and hers, and a mother and father.

Senator McGrand: That very seldom happens. In North America's largest Chinatown, which is the most densely populated area of the United States, there is the least crime of any part of the United States. And that is in New York's Chinatown. It is the oldest person in the generation that makes the final decision when it comes to family problems.

Mr. Smith: With age goes wisdom.

Senator McGrand: That is right, but, you see, we have got away from that and all these social planners and this fantastic modernization does not seem to bring about any solution.

Mr. Smith: Has anybody told them? We tried to tell them about these planning problems, and the importance of the family unit.

Senator McGrand: The construction of homes is done by the real estate people and the construction industry.

Senator Fournier: The next generation will exclude parents. They will not be allowed in their home.

The Chairman: Getting back to your brief again, you talk about incentives to have the minimum wage increased. The minimum wage, I think, in this province is \$1.10 or \$1.15.

Mr. Smith: \$1.15.

The Chairman: Now, surely that is an important factor because the minimum wage at the federal level is \$1.65, and those who are hired on federal jobs get that even within the province, which is a good thing. But, what have you people locally done to improve the minimum wage standard which has such an effect on the working poor particularly.

Mr. Smith: I do not know if there is anybody in the audience that can answer that. I know I cannot. I have never done anything about it.

Mr. Finigan: do you know anything about this?

Mr. Finigan: Mr. Chairman, the minimum wage comes under the Department of Labour and they review it constantly, and I believe the trouble they have is that industry can only pay so much. I do not know if we need the type of industry that pays \$1.15—probably we do, but I think the Department of Labour bows to these industries. They say "Well, if you raise the minimum wage, we

will move out of the province." I think there is very little that we can possibly do ourselves although this has been discussed in the White Paper that the province has brought out. I think they are going to look at it along different lines, possibly along the lines of different occupations and different reasons.

I cannot see how we can do anything as citizens in the community unless we put pressure on the Department of Labour and have it raised. We also have to think along the line, "Are we going to lose this industry?"

The Chairman: Mr. Smith, you spoke about a change in attitudes. That, I would gather, is a pretty local matter?

Mr. Smith: Yes.

The Chairman: What have you done to help change the attitudes of both the receiver and the giver?

Mr. Smith: We have not done all that much actually, Mr. Chairman. As far as the receiver goes we are trying to inform these people this is a right as well as a privilege, but it is more a right, and we should in no way take away from their dignity.

There was a time when you went up with your hand behind your back and your head down. This day is going and increasingly more so. We have to keep promoting this idea.

I would like to get back to the second question, and that is as to work incentive. We put this in...

The Chairman: Put what in?

Mr. Smith: The work incentive when we brought up this point. We had in mind too the fact that the welfare recipient in many cases is better off financially than the fellow going out to work for 48 hours a week, so the fellow working is not going to work too long at that rate.

The Chairman: What do you suggest?

Mr. Smith: Well, we cannot take down the recipients rates because they are not enough as they are. Therefore we have to raise the minimum standards. There are no two ways about it.

The Chairman: You could subsidize the working poor.

Mr. Smith: You could subsidize them through social welfare, apparently, yes.

The Chairman: This is being done now in this province, and in almost every province of Canada to some extent at the moment, to keep the working poor off welfare.

Mr. Smith: As long as the person who is paying the man, the employer, is not abusing the social welfare.

The Chairman: That is part of the problem.

Mr. Smith: It is a very important part because I do not think the general public would allow—I know I would not—the paying out part of my taxes to subsidize the working poor problem you had.

The Chairman: We are assuming that when you are subsidizing, you are subsidizing people who are within the law. And if they are within the law you would do it and if they are paying starvation wages, you do not do it. There is no argument on that, but you say in the brief, speaking of the working poor:

It is this group of individuals who are most inclined to surrender in despair and turn to rely solely on government organized assistance programs such as Social Assistance or Unemployment.

The most startling figures we have are the ones from the City of Toronto and Mr. Anderson, who is in charge of Welfare, and a very capable man, told us that there were 30,000 persons in the City of Toronto who are working at their jobs and earning less than they could receive if they were on welfare. I am satisfied that the same thing is reflected here. There would be no difference here. It would be about the same thing so when you say that they are most inclined to surrender, do not think that is right. There are some people who make up their minds they are not going to surrender and they do not, but when you bring in unemployment insurance, that is another matter entirely. Are you referring to unemployment insurance?

Mr. Smith: Yes.

The Chairman: The man pays for it. He has a right to it. He does not depend on you at all. He pays for it and the law says he can draw it for so many weeks at such and such a rate. We have no right to question that.

Mr. Smith: The point we are getting here is that I still believe that if a man can get \$250 from Social Welfare and he can only get \$200 from his job, plus the fact that

gets all medical care on Social Welfare, he is a fool if he does not take Social Welfare.

The Chairman: He is not a fool because for the last two days we have been listening to people here who have said constantly there is more to this whole business of life than a maintenance income and that sort of thing.

This man is fighting desperately to maintain the things that he values. On the other hand, we are to some extent responsible for putting him in that position. We can help him if we want to, and we do want to, and we ought to do it here in the Province.

Let me just ask you one more thing. In so far as services are concerned, which is a local matter, what have you people done in respect of improving the services to the people on welfare?

Mr. Smith: The latest thing that has come out, as I said, is the White Paper on the integration of services which is coming in in the fall. This is past the planning stage. It is ready to be implemented now. Through this we will be able to provide much more thorough service to welfare recipients as well as old welfare clients.

The Chairman: I think your supervisor indicated that there was some possible intention and improvement in services. I do not see this in a belittling way, but whenever we appear on the scene across the country we have good honest-to-goodness witnesses who tell us before us and say "Yes, we were just on the verge of doing this before you got here." They are getting that until it becomes a little uncomfortable. We do not like saying to people: "What did you do about this yesterday; what did you do about it the day before?", because that is not our approach. On the other hand it is bothering us.

Mr. Smith: Well, the thing is that there are many different factors. One is that there is a new building going up and, therefore, we are going to be together. We have already produced a new approach. We are drafting plans for this to finalize it. There is no use going in something backwards. We are going to make plans.

Instead of a family having possibly three workers, one is a Social Welfare worker, another one is the, another one handling a juvenile delinquent in the family and another handling parents, we will have one worker handling all the problems within the family. Therefore you get to know the total family and the total problems of the family.

All these problems are related. The teenage delinquent as Senator Hastings mentioned—he may not be the cause of it but maybe his wife is the cause of it or the mother is the cause of it. All these things are inter-related.

Senator Hastings: I fully agree that the wife is the cause of all the trouble.

Mr. Smith, with respect to your previous remarks, we have had witness after witness from the Child Welfare group saying that time is running out for the studying of these problems, for White Papers and so forth; that we have got to start continuing research. We have got to start showing results.

I am saying "we", not "you", but they keep referring to the fact that time is running out. We just do not have it any longer.

Mr. Smith: Obviously it is, senator, when you see the drug abuse and student protests and the destruction of public properties. Obviously somebody is lacking something. There are no two ways about it.

Senator Hastings: You have been speaking about poverty and the poor. We have got to start showing results.

Mr. Smith: I agree.

The Chairman: Mr. Smith, you said something earlier. You are representing a social group here. The amount of subsidization in the Province of New Brunswick for the working poor is minimal, but some of it is being done. What I do not understand is why the social workers have not said to the authorities: Mr. Smith is earning \$200. He is working 48 hours a week. He has got a family of five. He just cannot get by. If he was on relief he would receive \$250. He is going to quit his job next week. We are going to have to pay him \$250. Why do we not give him \$50 in order to have him continue his job and perhaps help him upgrade himself?

I use those figures as an example. Why have not the social workers done that? Why have not the social workers gone to the authorities and said, "This will save you money".

Mr. Smith: The White Paper is the result of this. We have passed this information on, and it is recognized now. There is the matter of legislation too, of course.

The Chairman: Where is the particular reference in the White Paper? I have read it. I do not remember that but perhaps I missed something? Is it there some place?

Mr. Smith: What is that?

The Chairman: The reference that you made about assistance to the working poor in that sense.

Mr. Smith: I believe it is, yes.

The Chairman: Can you identify it? I do not remember it.

Mr. Finigan: Mr. Chairman, I do not think it says that in that particular area but the White Paper goes into the whole question of welfare and of economics, of levels of income, rates of pay and so on, and levels of education.

It does not go into the narrow definition of the question of the poor house but I think one must understand that New Brunswick has just recently moved into the wider concept of bringing services to all people and this has come about after 50 or 100 years of a sort of feudal existence, where the municipalities operated welfare programs and I think we are going through our growing pains at this particular time.

The Chairman: Yes, I am glad you mentioned that because of any subsidization that is made the Federal government pays 50 per cent. It may be difficult for you, of course, to pay the first 50 per cent. I know your problem, but you see, you have got to reach for that first 50 because you are saving, as was indicated, a vast sum of money.

Miss Gale, did you want to say something?

Miss Gale: You were asking the witness about why these social workers did not go to the government and speak about this kind of thing. You see, since the White Paper has been issued...

The Chairman: It was a task force.

Miss Gale: Yes. The Social Services Council organized a meeting in which we sort of simulated community programs over different segments of the community and we were asked to respond to the White Paper, which was done, and a lot of these recommendations have gone to the Provincial government. I just wanted to make that point.

The Chairman: I am glad you did because the White Paper is certainly a good beginning.

Mr. Stegmayer: I think, Mr. Chairman, the core of the White Paper is on page 30 and 31

which asks four specific questions. What the citizen is prepared to pay for the introduction of this program and I am lost for the other three, but I remember the first one. It is on page 30 or 31.

The Chairman: It is on page 29 which you are looking at. Of course, these are very important questions.

Mr. Stegmayer: They are the nub of the White Paper, sir.

The Chairman: Yes. Mr. Smith, on behalf of the Committee I want to thank you for coming here today. This is a good brief. It contains a great deal of material that is very useful to us and very interesting, and with the conversation we have had this morning we have some understanding of the problems that we did not have before, which is always very helpful.

I want to convey to your group the appreciation of the Senate Committee for the time and effort that you put into the preparation of your brief. Would you also tell them that when they have documents issued by the Senate of Canada they should read them.

Mr. Stegmayer: May I make one brief comment?

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Stegmayer: I think we should all thank the Committee because the kind of searching questions you have raised here will also stimulate our community to go further and become a little more active in things we might be doing. Thank you very much.

The meeting adjourned.

Upon resuming at 2.00 p.m.

The Chairman: We have a brief from the New Brunswick Association for the Advancement of Coloured People. Sitting on my right is Mr. Joseph Drummond, Executive Adviser and Past President, Vice-Chairman of the National Black Coalition of Canada, and Chairman of the Welfare Committee, and a native of the province.

Mr. Joseph S. Drummond, Executive Adviser and Past President, The New Brunswick Association for the Advancement of Coloured People: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman and honourable members.

The New Brunswick Association for the Advancement of Coloured People in Sa

John, New Brunswick, are concerned with poverty as it affects the black minority in this particular area.

For the purpose of this brief we are not considering poverty brought on by a protracted illness, or the death of a supporting spouse, but rather we are concerned with the able-bodied workers who are willing to perform gainful employment at a decent wage and with the same chance of vertical mobility as their white co-workers. We are confronted with the man or woman who is prepared to perform useful work and can find no work available.

We believe that there are two main factors to the poverty problem—one is economic poverty; the other social poverty—both of which are dehumanizing. Combined at one and the same time they are fatal physically and psychologically. Black people in this area suffer from both.

The economic poverty is based on the function of the education system to train people to become useful members of society. Secondly, the resistance of employers to employ minority persons (in this case black) capable of performing all types of work. A brief on the educational system is being presented to you by the Council of Saint John Home and School Association. Thirdly, economic poverty as portrayed in this area by employers hiring blacks mostly in semi-skilled or unskilled positions causing the female partner to seek employment to complement her husband's wages or in some cases, because of the seasonal nature of his job, she must support the family for a number of months. In other cases, the black male is denied a job because of race. Although this is done in the most subtle manner imaginable, it happens. The family then becomes a matriarchy, not a patriarchy, as should be expected when the male is in the home. This in turn causes family disruption which signifies again poverty of the highest level.

This type of poverty manifests itself in many ways. Most would be classed as negative in this society, which uses western concepts for its value measurement, but since they involve non-whites nobody worries about it.

The most significant signs are alcoholism, drug use (both hard and soft), and violence against each other. This type of poverty was written about in the famous Monihan Report which only made one person rich and he was white. Black people are still poor as a result of this report.

Further, we feel that in the economic portion of this brief we should add the plain and bitter facts about Saint John. A list of Saint John metro-area Board of Trade lists a total to 58 firms employing 100 or more employees. Twenty-four of the listed firms do employ or have employed at some time black people, while 34 have never employed blacks in any capacity. In a total of 18,960 employees shown in January 1966 for the 58 employers, 88 were black people.

Looking a bit further again, we find that in a total of 264 employers shown in the area of industry, transportation, trade and services in the municipality of the County of Saint John, and employing from 10-100 employees, 36 do employ or have employed black people; 228 do not employ and have never employed blacks in any capacity.

We black people understandably have expressed our plain unvarnished views and deep concern in numerous surveys and interviews about the limited areas of employment, all seemingly to no avail. This society which educates its members to the "Protestant Ethic" with the exclusion of other ethics, most notably Afro-Canadians or Afro-Americans, find it hard to give gainful and meaningful employment to the products of this educational system. This exclusion, both socially and economically, signifies to us a form of "cultural genocide", which is a primary cause of poverty in our society as a whole, because it denies vertical mobility on the basis of individual ability because of race.

Some of the areas in which the absence or under-representation of black people is particularly conspicuous are as follows:

1. Public Transportation (1)
2. Banking, Trust and Finance Companies (0)
3. Real Estate (0)
4. Public Accounting (0)
5. Insurance (0)
6. Newspaper Publishing (0)
7. Telephone Communications (1)
8. Retail Sales (3)
9. Delivery Sales—Dairies, Bakeries (0)
10. Broadcasting—TV and Radio (0)

It is not unreasonable for one to expect that all levels of government should provide leadership in equal opportunity in employment. We have not found this to be the case.

In looking first to the City of Saint John, there appears to be more or less token acceptance of black people. We find one black stenographer, two policemen in a force of 175

policemen and three policewomen, and four labourers (plus two part time) under the umbrella of the corporation. It is particularly conspicuous that there has never been a black fireman or salvage corps man in a force of 196 employees.

Provincially, we find an appreciable number of blacks as male and female attendants at the provincial hospital. With the exception of the New Brunswick Liquor Commission (one sales clerk) there are no black people employed in any other branches or departments of the provincial Government in Saint John. This includes all the agencies with the exception of the New Brunswick Institute of Technology.

The federal Government has only given token acceptance to black people in the Department of Veterans Affairs, Department of Public Works and Department of Transport. It is incomprehensible and inexcusable that the Department of Manpower and Immigration office (employs 38) and the Department of National Revenue and the Canada Post Office do not employ any black people on a full time basis. Only two men are employed by the Department of Transport here in Saint John. It is a sad testimonial for Saint John when we find only four black women in all this city employed as stenographers. Not one other stenographer, secretary or typist, bank clerk or teller (and they are available), has been able to find an open door in Saint John's business world. Young black men and women have been passing through the educational system and moving on to Toronto, Montreal, Boston and New York because of the prevailing negative attitudes about employment in this area as it concerns the black minority.

The question or statement we then make, and it is to the point: How can we of the black minority expect economic justice when the "elite" of this city practise social injustice; i.e., golf clubs, curling clubs, various lodges such as the Elk, R.A.O.B., Masonic Order, Shriners, etc. Social poverty or social and cultural deprivation, call it what you may, it is there. Even our government pays lip service to this in holding social functions at clubs or lodges which exclude black people every day, either blatantly or subtly; i.e., "gentlemen's agreement".

We black people, in our quest for economic and social justice in Saint John are climbing a molasses mountain dressed in snow shoes while whites are riding the ski lift to the top. But we are on the march demanding a share in all that this country and city has to offer to

its citizens. A social and economic system that denies us less can, must and is to be challenged.

Poverty in itself can only be eliminated to a degree, by a different method of distribution. At the present time, the masses, unaware of it that they maybe, produce a high standard of living for the "elite", who are in essence the ruling class of our society. If this is so, we can envisage the resistance by this minority group that the status quo remain. Therefore co-operation will be needed in order that there be a more equitable distribution of goods produced by one society. We ask the committee if they have any views or desires to change this system?

Thank you.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Drummond, can you tell us what is the population of the black people in the City of Saint John?

Mr. Drummond: It fluctuates between 90 to 1,000 people. On births it goes up, but we have had a lot of deaths in our community, and a lot of outward migration of our young people who, as I said, pass through the system.

Senator Fournier: Is the population increasing?

Mr. Drummond: No, it has decreased since the turn of the century. Up to 1926 we used to have a stable population of black people of about 4,500, who were visible blacks.

Senator Fournier: How long ago was it that you had 4,500?

Mr. Drummond: Forty-five hundred just before the war, then it started to drop, and drop, and drop.

Senator Fournier: How many are you now approximately?

Mr. Drummond: Nine hundred to a thousand. Every time the plane or train goes out there are a couple on it.

Senator Fournier: How many families would that be?

Mr. Drummond: Roughly, that would be about 230 or 240 families. I am not a statistician and it is hard to try to get that.

Senator Fournier: Do you all reside in that one section of the city?

Mr. Drummond: No, we do not. We are spread out. The largest population areas are

the place where I live in the Crescent Valley area, the old Black River Road area, and the Spark Road area. Those are your largest population areas of black people within this city.

Senator Fournier: Would you know about the population of coloured people in the Fredrickton area?

Mr. Drummond: Not offhand, not having lived there. Going up there all the time I would say about 300 to 400, roughly. That is a very rough figure, it could be give or take.

Senator Fournier: What about the schools? Are you all going to the same school? No separate schools?

Mr. Drummond: No; but the school is all geared to the white majority. We have been neglected, sadly neglected in the schools. It has been a calculated neglect. We have never learned anything about ourselves. When I came through the school system the only thing you saw concerning black people was little Black Sambo. After we reacted and they took that out it left three lines in the history book: black people were slaves. They would sing and dance. They were happy.

That is no life at all, geared to the white majority. It is the same as Indians. I don't have the right to speak for Indians, but I do want my history. I had to learn from my grandmother that William Hall, V.C., was a black man and yet every other V.C. winner in Canada is well portrayed in the history books across the country. I won't say this area is one.

Senator Fournier: I want to make a last remark here. Your list of employment in the industries—I am not going to use the word "locking", but it does surprise me.

Mr. Drummond: It is no surprise for the black people.

Senator Fournier: The difficulties you have with employment and some of the employers and the small number of coloured people that are employed, I deplore the situation, not knowing the facts. I hope some of my colleagues will enlarge on that.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Drummond, you indicated the migration of the black people from the Saint John area to the cities like Toronto and Montreal. Is that migration as a percentage greater or less than the ordinary

migration of the white people from the Maritimes to those areas?

Mr. Drummond: No. It is a great majority of our people who are leaving, not only young people, there are old people and also the middle-aged people who after their sons and daughters have gone on a lot say "Come with us. It is a little bit better up here." Away they go.

Senator Hastings: Is it a greater or lesser percentage than that of the whites who are doing the same?

Mr. Drummond: It would be about the same if we had the same numbers of population. It is about on a par.

Senator Hastings: Migration from the Maritimes is no greater for the black man than for the white man.

Mr. Drummond: We can't afford it though, because our community is so small. We want to keep the community here.

The Chairman: If they are leaving to improve their way of life, have you or I a right to say no? They want to move from here to there because they think they are improving themselves. What is wrong with that?

Mr. Drummond: We don't have the right to tell them no, but the only thing I would say is this has been our home here and most of us black people who are born in Saint John have been here for generation upon generation. I feel we should be able to earn a living in our home. I feel this very strongly that I should have the right to earn a living in my own home town as a born Afro-Canadian.

Senator Hastings: Not in Canada?

Mr. Drummond: I prefer to live in Saint John. I like Saint John. It has its bad points, but we stay and fight.

Senator Hastings: Are you the only group that are working in the interests of the black minority?

Mr. Drummond: No. There is another group here, I think it is called Probe, or something like that. We are the only group that brings things to the fore and stands up and tells it as it should be. In our welfare work our Association has members who go around and visit our elderly black citizens. We see they get food. We appear at the welfare office if they are afraid at the officialdom, we appear for

them and find out their rights and what they are entitled to. Also, we appear for the young people. We keep them in school. We have a scholarship in our Association which gives four black university students roughly \$600 a year. Last year we decided to take the children of one-parent families and try to keep them in school by giving them a small scholarship. These are children who are in the senior high school and that helps keep them in lunches and pants, or a dress for a girl, and they don't feel embarrassed when they go out. This is what we have done.

Senator Hastings: It has been recommended time and again that there has to be a change of attitude between the have and have-nots before we will ever come near a solution to this poverty problem. In your experience, sir, in the last 20 years, have you seen any change in attitude between the WASP and the black?

Mr. Drummond: WASP is a word I don't use any more. I keep up with the times, sir, but I won't use the other word.

The only change I have seen in this province is that we have a Human Rights Commission, of which I am a member, I am one of the commissioners. There have always been people who we can convert but unfortunately they are in the minorities always. Attitudes don't change and I don't think that I or anyone else should be in the business of trying to change attitudes because you cannot pass legislation to change what is in a man's mind. No, attitudes have not changed that much to me.

Senator Hastings: With respect to the education system, can you give me the percentage or the number that have gone through university?

Mr. Drummond: We have had, I figure, roughly about six who went through. I am speaking of our own blacks who are native-born here who went to U.N.B. and St. Thomas.

Senator Hastings: And high school?

Mr. Drummond: High school is quite a bit more than that. I would not say Saint John High School. Our kids are usually streamed to the vocational school. You have heard the brief from the Home and School Association. They are taught trades which are filled up already or are of no use to most of them. I heard somebody speak of the barber course. A lot of our kids are taught this trade and

there is no black barber shop here, not even a black barber in the city now. We used to have two. Some of them are taught the peripheral trade such as beauty culture and they can't get a job in a beauty parlour. Maybe one or two get a job, but for all the people taught the trade or profession, whatever you want to call it, the representation in the beauty shops is horrible. They are being taught your old trades of cook and domestic that sort of thing.

Senator Hastings: Are there a sizable number in the Manpower retraining program?

Mr. Drummond: In the Technical Institute there was a sizable number last year.

Senator Hastings: I am saying "retraining" not "training".

Mr. Drummond: No, not with Manpower. You hear most of the complaints from the young blacks around here that there is no us going to Manpower, all they do is give you song and a dance. I have seen the song and dance the counsellors give, and if I was in the employment field hunting a job of an description that would be the last place I would go.

The Chairman: You do know they place many people through Manpower. They have record of many, many placements wherever they operate and being far from perfect the nevertheless do a very presentable job across the country. I don't know why it should be condemned so much here. We have heard criticism, but that is not generally the case.

Senator McGrand: Mr. Drummond is referring to the blacks?

The Chairman: No, he is generally covering Manpower for everybody.

Mr. Drummond: No, I am not, sir. I am just talking about the black people, if I may be excused to say that, sir. Black people are black youth and middle-aged, and of course the elderly blacks, it is no use of them going. I have gone myself with them trying to take these counsellors to send people who know have been qualified either in the commercial field or the secretarial field or the typing field, and some who could be trained in banks as tellers. They say "We would like to send you. You know there is no discrimination here. The employer just told me the job is filled." As far as I am concerned it is +

horrible record this Manpower has right here. You can go to Fredericton and you can see black clerks in Fredericton. I don't know why it is impossible to do it here. They have not made any effort as far as I am concerned.

The Chairman: Who has not made any effort?

Mr. Drummond: The Manpower people.

The Chairman: Why would they make it in Fredericton, and not here?

Mr. Drummond: I can't answer that, sir. Perhaps my colleague, my brother Fred Hodges could answer that.

Mr. Fred Hodges: I don't stand for Manpower.

Senator Quart: Mr. Drummond, you mentioned that a number of coloured folks leave for lack of opportunity here. Do you hear from them that they are being better treated in the other parts of Canada to which they go?

Mr. Drummond: Well, far away fields always look greener. Even though there is the same discrimination, as far as I am concerned, that exists in Montreal and Toronto, at least you can get paid a little bit better for undergoing it. The dollar bill always helps. I have even met some in Atlanta when I was down there in the spring, two blacks from New Brunswick in of all the unlikely places—Atlanta, Georgia. They were there.

Senator Quart: The discrimination is dreadful. Do many of the coloured folks return here after they have been to greener pastures?

Mr. Drummond: Some return for visits and some don't return at all. Some come back having been unable to cope with the larger city life, the environment, and various things.

Senator Quart: I was very, very interested in what you said regarding the money that you give for scholarships. I don't know how you get it. How do you succeed in raising money? Is it through your own group?

Mr. Drummond: We have angels and also some of our own black people who do have a few cents and they all chip in and try and do it. Some people say the money comes from a communist source. I fail to see any coming from Russia, although I would accept it.

Senator Quart: You would accept communist angels?

Mr. Drummond: Yes.

Senator Quart: I think it is very regrettable that things are as they are.

Senator McGrand: Going back to the question of migration that Senator Hastings asked you about. He wanted to know if the migration rate among blacks was greater than the migration rate among whites. You gave the impression it was the same. If the black population of Saint John was 4,500 people some 50 years ago and is down now to 1,000, then the migration rate among blacks must have been higher than among whites.

Mr. Drummond: I realize I did give him that impression. Thank you, senator. It has been greater than whites.

We used to have a saying here in the black community of Saint John, and I think you almost used it yesterday. Every time over in Digby the boat blew all the people came on the underground railway and stayed here six months and when they heard the train blow that was the other part of the underground railway and they went to greener pastures and it was always full. In the days of the old Boston boat, that is when you really saw migration. The black people from here are going every day.

Senator McGrand: You were asked why they go to the larger cities. Of course, the larger the city the greater the turnover of opportunities and jobs, and naturally anybody who comes from here will perhaps do better in a large city. On the other hand, in Toronto and places like that we heard about so many people from the Maritimes, and that meant mostly the white people, who went to Toronto or to Montreal and they ended up on welfare. In no case was a black person mentioned as having gone on welfare.

In Montreal I asked the question as to the number who were on relief in Montreal and I asked "What about the Caribbean population?" I had heard there were people from the Caribbean there. The man who spoke said they only had one or two on relief. The impression I got from it was the black community in Montreal or in Toronto makes an effort to look after its people and not let them go on relief.

Mr. Drummond: This is what we call a soul concept, although I would have to disagree with part because there are a couple on welfare of our community who live in Toronto, but very small. I think it is very small in

regard to the numbers, in relationship to the numbers. It is true that the Caribbean community does help and it is true that some parts of the Canadian black community try to help each other from going on to welfare. That is why we call it the soul concept. It goes back to the thing of all for one and one for all.

Senator McGrand: You mentioned there were more people in Manpower in Fredericton than Saint John. You have that impression. I think you are perhaps a little optimistic. I would like to know how many blacks are employed there before I will agree they are getting any better treatment up there than they are getting here.

Senator Hastings: Were you not saying more employed in the Manpower office?

Mr. Drummond: That is the office of Manpower. They have two typists who are employed in the office in Fredericton, I saw them two weeks ago myself. There is one girl in the office of the Department of Justice. Again in Saint John we lag behind, yet we have an organization that goes out and tries to confront them.

Senator McGrand: There was a black girl working for the Department of Health 25 years ago and she got married and went to Boston.

Mr. Drummond: I have a good idea who you mean. I won't quote any name.

Senator Fergusson: There was a black stenographer that worked in the office of which I was in charge in Fredericton in the late forties. I suppose that would be about the same time. She did a wonderful job and we thought she was a wonderful employee.

I am interested in what Senator McGrand says about Fredericton. Do you feel there is any more consideration for the black people in Fredericton than there is in Saint John?

Mr. Drummond: I cannot speak for the white community in any place because I don't know their values. They are hard to keep tabs on, to tell you the truth, as far as I am concerned, and I believe in speaking my mind.

If there seems to be this attitude in Fredericton and the government offices, both federally and provincially, I think it should be carried all through the province wherever you find black people.

In our own welfare office I heard them speak of the task force in great glowing terms for two days now. I would like to take exception to these glowing terms because even though the task force is needed and the White Paper on Social Reform is needed, they neglected to have the black community or the Indian community as members of the task force. I don't mean the bourgeois blacks, but the blacks who know what it is like to stretch out a meal of Kraft dinner and bologna.

On the Welfare Appeal Board they do not have any blacks or Indians. I am not speaking for the Indians because I don't have that honour, but what does another man from Mount Pleasant know of the condition of the black man or woman who is down in the nitty-gritty when they come to appeal? They do not have the articulation to appeal and they are afraid of the red tape and officialdom. That is why I take great exception. Until they get people on there who represent the two communities then it is useless to us black people.

Senator McGrand: Are you a member of the Human Rights Commission?

Mr. Drummond: Yes.

The Chairman: As a matter of fact you have just brought in a report which the Council endorsed recommending that the matter of human rights be really enforced in this community rather than just tolerated.

Mr. Drummond: That is the Volunteer Committee. It is called the Mayors' Committee on Human Rights. I am vice chairman of that. My appointment is a provincial appointment. I am a Human Rights Commissioner.

The Chairman: I am talking about the Mayors' Committee.

Mr. Drummond: Yes. We just brought this in.

The Chairman: You said you don't understand the white man.

Mr. Drummond: The white community.

The Chairman: Now seven generations in Saint John of Drummonds and almost 15 years in the navy or in the forces, what don't you understand about your fellow man?

Mr. Drummond: I cannot understand some of their hypocritical ways, some of their two-faced manners. I have been here for many generations but you never know how to take

them. One day they are your friend and the next day there is a knife in your back and this has happened consistently, sir.

The Chairman: It happens to us whites, too.

Mr. Drummond: Yes. I can't understand their ways. Even though we think we know them I just don't understand them.

Senator Inman: What principally do you black people work at in this town? What do you really make a living at when you are working?

Mr. Drummond: In this community most people here work either at the CPR on the docks or over in the pulp and paper company, and the sugar refinery has been the principal employer ever since its erection. All you have to be is black and go there and you can almost get a job like that. There have been a few who broke through into the skilled fields, very, very few. Some who have have forgotten their roots in the black community and they become what we call black men in a white mask. They have completely forgotten their brothers and sisters who have not been able to break through.

Senator Inman: You find no discrimination in those industries you speak of?

Mr. Drummond: I will ask brother Hodges, town there. Perhaps he can answer.

Senator McGrand: You don't get the skilled trade at the sugar refinery. You get the manual labour.

Mr. Hodges: In the textile refinery since the Fair Employment Practices Act in the province they have been elevated to supervisory staff. In other places where the agreement does not have a seniority clause we have to battle for the supervisory staff. All companies have their prejudiced supervisors, after all they haven't been trained to recognize the fact that there are others in the community that have the right to certain jobs because of their ability and not because of their race or religious principles. We have yet to break them all down.

The Chairman: Mr. Hodges, as a labour man you would be the first to insist on seniority over colour or anything else, would you not?

Mr. Hodges: It is advantageous.

The Chairman: This is what you would say—you would insist upon seniority.

Mr. Hodges: As long as it is advantageous, yes, I would.

The Chairman: The contract would call for it.

Mr. Hodges: Well, seniority and all these things...

The Chairman: You mean they don't mean anything?

Mr. Hodges: As a lawyer, do they?

The Chairman: Of course they do. To me they do.

Mr. Hodges: I may say, senator, that we have lost quite a few arbitration cases on seniority.

The Chairman: I don't understand this view at all. It puzzles me to learn that there are people who enter into contracts and have no respect for them the minute they enter into them.

Mr. Hodges: Honourable people.

The Chairman: All people as I find them are honourable people. I find very few dishonourable ones.

Senator Hastings: Does this subtle discrimination or racism, as you have described it to us and as it exists in Saint John, exist only against the black people, or are there other groups suffering the same?

Mr. Drummond: We are the largest minority group who are non-white. I would assume that it would exist between, shall we say, the native peoples if they were here. I shall assume it would exist between the metis if they were here. It does exist against some other groups who accept it so long as it is not a physical thing. Saint John is not the only place it exists, it exists all through Canada.

Senator Hastings: I can only conclude by trying to answer your question. You asked the committee if we have any views or desires to change the system. I think the chairman of this committee has said many times in his report to the Senate that our purpose in being here is to change the system and eradicate poverty and anything that has contributed to poverty.

Mr. Drummond: We used to ask in a little song, sir, an old slavery spiritual: How long, oh lord, how long?

Senator Hastings: Did you hear me saying this morning we haven't got the time?

Mr. Drummond: I know that.

Senator Fergusson: I was interested in Mr. Drummond's talking about scholarships to help his students. Do you raise the money amongst yourselves or does anyone else contribute it? It seems to me that many people would be interested in helping if they knew about it.

Mr. Drummond: As a matter of confidence I am not allowed to say any names, but we do raise a little bit ourselves and I respect this person's confidence. They help us and they are not black.

A Miss Annette Hill, who died in Boston a number of years ago, has left to the black people who reside in the Maritimes and Ontario—you have to be black, male and Protestant—a scholarship worth \$1 million. It will be given to black males from all of the provinces except Newfoundland, the Prairies and British Columbia. This money was discovered by a new employee of student tuition who I guess was trained as a lawyer on the side. It is called the Annette S. Hill Scholarship and we are trying to get all the mechanics of trying to get at this money. It is tied up.

Senator Fergusson: You will probably have plenty of applicants for this.

Mr. Drummond: We have them already and we haven't even got the money yet.

Senator Fergusson: That is very interesting. I don't see why just males. I think that the women need an education too.

Mr. Drummond: Yes. It is only black Protestant males, and I am a Catholic one!

Senator Inman: Do you have many of your young people interested in furthering their education with these scholarships?

Mr. Drummond: Yes, they all are. Every young black around here realizes that in order to beat the system he has to get educated and even though it is their kind of education he must have that in order to get in to where he or she wants to get in and then he can develop his own intelligence after.

Senator Inman: Do you find among your young people the same generation gap?

Mr. Drummond: No, I don't find it. I am not hung up with the generation gap at all. My

grandmother when she said something that was it. Yes, there was a gap all right! I don't find the generation gap. I am not hung up on that.

Senator Inman: I think you people are very family conscious.

Mr. Drummond: We have to be in order to survive. This is how we have survived on the continent for 400 years by being family conscious. We haven't lived but we have survived 400 years.

Senator Inman: The white people could take a lesson from that.

Senator Quart: I come from the Province of Quebec. I am not French but I respect my co-citizens and I understand them very much. I have been across Canada many times and think there is great discrimination against them in many cases, much more formerly than now. Don't be too discouraged, it may work out just as well.

You talk about Manpower and that there is not any communication between you and Manpower. Would it be better if Manpower had a coloured field worker who would go into the areas and talk with your people and give them confidence to come to Manpower? Would that be desirable?

Mr. Drummond: Thank you very much. Was wondering how I could shoot this one in. They did a pilot project in Halifax about two years ago and Manpower put an office on Gottingen Street and they took two black men from the community to work in the office. The black men were not trained social workers. The oldest one was my cousin. They were around and gathered up the applicants for jobs and took them to their jobs and they interceded with the managers. It was a whole successful operation.

A report was written on it for the federal Government and that report has not been released to any black organization in Canada since it went to Ottawa. We would like to know where it is at. The Human Rights Commissions have asked for it and the National Black Coalition asked for it and the Black United Front has asked for it. We get nothing but pious platitudes.

Senator Quart: Don't accept the pious platitude. Use a bit of non-parliamentary language in your letters.

Senator Fournier: Was the report favourable?

Mr. Drummond: It was very favourable. So favourable it was only supposed to be a pilot project and it is still going and that is two years.

The Chairman: What report are you referring to?

Mr. Drummond: It is called the Manpower Centre on Gottingen Street in Halifax. It is situated in the heart of the black and white community there. There is an influx of new immigrants and stores and businesses on that street. We have never been able to get a copy of this report.

Senator Hastings: I have one supplementary question to ask. Are the French in this area discriminated against?

Mr. Drummond: I would like to answer your question, but I don't have the right to speak for another group. I am not speaking for all black people. I am only speaking for the NBAACP blacks.

The Chairman: And he has made it clear he is speaking for the people in this city because he does not speak for the blacks across the country.

Senator Hastings: He indicated at the time that discrimination did exist against the Métis.

The Chairman: If they were here there would be discrimination against them, I think he said.

Senator Hastings: The French are here.

Mr. Drummond: I couldn't say.

The Chairman: Let me say to you, Mr. Drummond, that this committee has had a very sad and uncomfortable hour, something that will trouble our conscience for a great deal of time. Discrimination in any form is reprehensible and it is more so in its present context. You can believe that, because most of us have had dealings with it a very long time.

I do not want to leave you without saying that if you have read the record of the Senate Committee on Poverty on July 25 you will know that I said on behalf of the committee: That there had been no change in the distribution of income in Canada for 20 years. That comes from the Economic Council. That means, in plain, ordinary English, that the rich got richer and the poor got poorer. That is just what it means. So the income distribu-

tion must be changed in order to correct the poverty situation. That is the crux of the whole business. How you do it is not the easiest thing in the world because somebody has got to give up something for somebody else. You have been through that all your life, and you know how easy it is to get people to give up things. It is the kind of approaches that you can make.

We are not here to tear down the system, but the system needs changes and modifications, and that is the purpose of our visit here; otherwise we would not have come. We could have learned all there was to learn sitting at home. We have heard here talk about a change in attitude that is necessary from the bottom and from the top. There are two changes that must come about, and that is not very easy either.

We have had responsible people come before us here who said that a man has a right to certain things, and one of his rights is a job, and if he has not got a job then the responsibility is upon the state or community to provide an alternative.

These are things that have to be weighed. We try to listen to the people and we have had a very good response in this city. We are trying to talk to them about their problem and we want them to talk to us about their problem. We can learn from them and we can get our message across to them, that they have got to get into the ball game in order to get some decent results. It is part of their problem. They are not the problem. They must help in the solution and without them we cannot solve it. We have to consider what we can afford and when we can afford it and how soon we can reach those goals. Those are our problems.

In 20 minutes you have given us a great big headache. Thank you.

We shall now hear the Family Services of Saint John. On my right is Miss Florence Christie, the Executive Director; and next to her is Mrs. W. R. Forsythe, a board member. Mrs. Christie will present the brief.

Miss Florence Christie, Executive Director, Family Services, Saint John: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman. I am delighted to have this opportunity to present the views and recommendations of the Family Services. We are a private and non-sectarian family agency and our purpose is to do anything appropriate in the way of social service that will help to strengthen the family and family life generally.

Now from our experience over the years in trying to serve families and help them we know that poverty, particularly if it exists over a period of time, has a very adverse affect on family life. We realize that one cannot minimize the economic deprivation that the poor suffer, but we would like to stress in particular cultural deprivation and some of the psychological effects of poverty. We believe that these do more to handicap a person in improving his own situation and in being able to compete on fairly equitable terms with other people.

When it is not profitable for a person to decide to subscribe for a magazine or a newspaper, when it is not possible to supply hockey equipment for children, when it is not possible to go to a concert or a movie, or it may not be possible to let the children have some advantages that others more fortunate than they have; or if they do attempt to provide it it must be at a sacrifice of some of the basic needs; then parents really begin to know and experience the meaning of poverty and get that sense of having failed somehow that makes for people being disheartened and discouraged.

We tend too much in our society to group the poor together in a lump and we label them and we view them with some mistrust and we tend to alienate them. This kind of alienation is compounded by our housing situation. This tends to force people into living in certain areas of the city, or certain parts of the housing projects, and there it is very difficult for a family to maintain the privacy that is necessary to them, to maintain good standard, to maintain human dignity. To make matters even more difficult society places such a premium on material possessions and this contrast between the haves and have-nots is always emphasized day after day by the kind of TV and radio advertising that goes on all the time, along with the constant and seductive kind of pressures that come from finance companies, that come from firms. If parents cannot stand up to this then they slip into all kinds of difficulties and pressures by either having to keep up payment on possessions they have purchased, or the almost uneven struggle of trying to keep up payments on loans and if they miss a payment the interest mounts up.

They are also discriminated against in being the group that is hardest hit by the housing shortage and being the group that is hardest hit when prices rise and inflation

occurs, and when neither welfare benefits nor wages keep pace with the rising cost of living.

Now we have certain recommendations that we would like to discuss with you today that apply to the poor as a group. There are certain services and assistance that we feel would be beneficial to this whole group if this can be provided. Some of these you have heard before and we will have to re-emphasize them.

First of all, I would like to mention the great need for a system of organized legal aid that should be available. This group of poor, more than anyone else, do need this kind of protection. They are pretty ignorant of the law, fearful of the law, and they haven't any idea about their legal rights and the remedies and actions that are available to them.

In this regard too we see Family Courts, which is a resource for even a broader group, being especially needed for these families. The poor feel more comfortable in the more informal atmosphere of a Family Court. Many times the difficulties that they are going about are of a domestic nature or around support and here they do get the assistance that they need in a way that is not available through other courts.

We think too that Family Planning Clinics are very much needed and should be part of our general public health program, and that there should be public education with regard to this. We know of many families with a large number of children who really did not wish to have that size of family and they, along with others, should be able to avail themselves of facilities that would help them to space and be able to regulate the number of their children.

One need that gets overlooked sometimes is when the poor own property there should be some sort of plan that would make aid available to them for repairs so they could if at all possible remain in their own home.

We believe that day nurseries, day care or day facilities is a great need. I know this has been stressed by many groups. There are so many working mothers these days, many in this group we are talking about of necessity, who needs this kind of service and protection for their children. We feel from efforts to try to get this kind of facility established that it can only be established if there is government aid.

Perhaps here we come into the problem about the Canada Assistance Plan and the fact that this is a matching kind of arrange-

ment with 50 per cent having to come from the provinces, so we don't always succeed in getting the aid that has been made available because of the fact the province is not in a position to be able to put into effect these provisions.

We see Manpower training and retraining programs needing to be increased and we also hope that some lowering of the academic requirement can be achieved for some of the courses.

One need that we feel presents itself as a possible step in the near future is the increasing of family and youth allowances to help this group. This would help the larger families and is very much needed.

There are special services for the aged such as Meals on Wheels, homemaker services, day centres, that would make life much more bearable and secure and healthy for these older people. Again many private groups can only do it if there was some subsidization by the Government.

We feel very strongly that supplementary assistance should be made available to the working poor. Many of them through lack of education and no particular skills find it impossible to get employment that yields enough income to meet the needs of the larger families. We believe that minimum wages should be reviewed and revised upward and this, too, would help the working poor, and coming to the group who are ready on welfare we urge that the benefits be increased. At the present the level of assistance is inadequate and this particularly applies to food, and we would like to see it wanted in relation to the size of family and a maximum put on as is sometimes done on the total amount available to a family or on certain items of assistance.

We think that medicines and drugs subscribed by doctors should be provided free. In our own province the small participatory fee that recipients have to pay, even though it applies to just a few prescriptions, and there can be a waiver of it as well, it prevents hardship. It depends on the time of the month. If they have to get medicine after the first of the month, or after the family allowance day it is not too bad, but let it fall between and it presents all kinds of difficulties.

We feel too very strongly that if the incentive to work is going to be maintained at all there has to be a change that allows welfare recipients to keep some of their part-time earnings and be able to meet some of the real

needs they have and have a hope of improving their situation.

We also think benefits should be continued for a period when a welfare recipient does get employment, and that it should not be cut off before he has a chance to adjust to his situation.

We are concerned about the children of the poor. We feel somehow that many efforts should be focused on helping them. Somehow they have to be given a start in life that is much better than their parents enjoyed and therefore we very much advocate programs that would enrich the lives of these children and would foster their continuance at school and with their education.

We feel that until there is better communication and better attitudes between a number of groups that we won't be able to achieve the kind of situation that we want and we urge this between government and the poor and between the government and the general public. We feel a special effort needs to be made to educate the middle class so that they have some idea of what poverty means, and some of the indignities and discrimination that are being directed towards the poor. We single them out because any benefits or changes that are to be brought about can only be brought about if the majority has an understanding and really cares and is prepared to support it.

We think that some changes are needed very much in the kind of investigation procedure that goes on in welfare. Much of this is insincere, it is very demeaning and the thing that the poor object to most. We believe that some sort of self-declaration procedure would work very satisfactorily, particularly on the basis of establishing the continuing eligibility. If this were done time would be released to the personnel of the welfare department that could be very much better employed in having good communication with people and time to give more services which are needed very urgently.

Then our next point we feel very strongly about too, and that is that government aid should be made available for the appointment of community development workers in areas where there is a concentration of the poor. I am sure, Mr. Chairman, that you and the others have heard about some of the efforts that are being made in Saint John in the Crescent Valley area and in the south end. It seems to me this is one of the most hopeful aspects to get the low income families, including the poor, involved in self-help projects,

and in helping to get their own community developed to provide a more satisfactory and satisfying life for the residents.

Then we go on to commend you and the members of your committee upon the very fine job you are doing and we know that there will be some very important recommendations coming out. We did want to draw to your attention that we hope there will be correlation of the findings of your committee and a study of the White Paper on Taxation and on social welfare.

The Chairman: Thank you. Before we go on with our meeting I want to recognize a very distinguished member of the House of Commons with whom Senator Fournier and I served, and who is sitting in the back here. Thank you very much for coming, Mr. Bell.

Senator Fergusson: I would like to congratulate you and the Family Services for the excellent and comprehensive brief and the useful recommendations that they have presented to the group this afternoon. I would also like to congratulate the Family Services for having on their staff Miss Florence Christie, who is recognized as one of the outstanding social workers in Canada. I think it is most fortunate for Saint John to have her in this position. Certainly the brief shows that she has had a hand in preparing it and I think a great deal of the credit must go to Miss Christie, although I am sure Mrs. Forsythe and the members of the board have also made their contributions.

I am very glad they have specially stressed the psychological effect of poverty, while not overlooking how much the people are demoralized by economic deprivation. I think perhaps we have not had enough said to the committee about the psychological effect, and I think it is well to have this brought to our attention.

I would like to ask about your recommendation number seven. You speak of services to the aged, such as Meals on Wheels, the homemaker service, and day centres. I specially want to ask about the Meals on Wheels. Do you have that at all in Saint John?

Miss Christie: We do in a very limited way. One church has been providing it and the YWCA has until fairly recently also been doing it. We advocated it a lot and we do hope the groups will pick up on this because it is, as you know, a service that is very much needed and appreciated.

Senator Fergusson: It is one I am very much interested in. When you say they are doing it, are they doing it on a weekly or bi-weekly basis?

Miss Christie: A bi-weekly basis, Senator Fergusson.

Senator Fergusson: You say it should be subsidized by the Government. In many places they first start with volunteers, and in some other countries I have seen this done. The volunteers have so impressed the government that eventually the meals themselves have been paid for by the government and they still use the volunteers to do the delivery of the service, and things like that. Would you see that as something possible in New Brunswick?

Miss Christie: I would very much because the volunteers I think could handle that end of it very well. I think the service could be extended if they did have some financial help and might even start in some other places. It seems to have responded to certain individuals that have been thoroughly convinced of the need, and we have noticed sometimes when they move that there is a dropping-off of some of the interest of the others. It seems to need somebody that really sparks it and gives the others the incentive to carry it on. I does require, as you know, a good deal of organization and time on the part of key volunteers.

Senator Fergusson: I was very impressed in New Zealand with the people who were making the deliveries. They were the wives of doctors in the locality, and all of them were people who did no social work and had no interest in social work. This was something that appealed to them a great deal and they organized themselves. They were people who would mostly spend their spare time playing bridge or golf. Providing the Meals on Wheels and the contacts they made with the people to whom they were giving the service meant so much to them that if they were ill they did not want to give up their day for fear they would lose it, and they even coaxed their husbands to deliver that day for them.

I was wondering if this would work here and bring in many people who have not up to now shown an interest in that type of work. Senator McGrand mentioned young people looking for some way to make a contribution

Miss Christie: I think there would be many ways young people could be brought into the plans for helping older people.

Senator Inman: I would like to endorse everything that Senator Fergusson said about the brief. I thought it was a most interesting brief and we are all interested in anything that concerns the family and children. On page 2 of the brief you mention:

Today's society has put such a premium on materialistic values that human values seem of secondary importance.

Thinking of TV's and advertising, do you consider that this is responsible for the unrest today in the people?

Miss Christie: Yes, I do.

Senator Inman: The pressures?

Miss Christie: The pressures of this kind of advertising. You see it so clearly if you are just in the shopping market. You see the youngsters wanting to have a certain type of car because it has certain premiums in it, and so on. As you talk with families you realize that this constant day-after-day presentation of how easy it is to get a car, a TV, or a trip that you pay for in four months—this is going on all the time. I think it causes a great deal of unrest and unease generally among families because the youngsters see it as being so easily possible and the parents are confronted with this.

Senator Inman: And this perhaps causes poverty because perhaps the parents go ahead.

Miss Christie: They go ahead and are in even more serious difficulties than contending with not having these various items.

The Chairman: May I ask a question? What you say is, of course, very true, but on the other hand does not that very same thing bring a sort of discipline into the home—the discipline of the child sitting around the table and seeing this, with the result is that the father feels he has an obligation and he cannot lie around and do nothing; he has to get out and dig.

Miss Christie: I think it does if the parents have enough strength and intelligence to be able to deal with it well. If they yield of course they get into trouble. What sometimes happens is parents tell the youngsters to keep quiet and the communication is gone. They

don't feel equal to coping with it and presenting it to their children. With others I think it can be a constructive thing and is handled that way.

I stress this very much, we do have a large number of poor families that are coping in quite a remarkable way on a very limited income and showing all sorts of ingenuity and helping their children so much with this kind of situation that has to be resolved for the better.

Senator Inman: In your recommendation number 11 you say that medicines and drugs prescribed by doctors should be provided free. I thought welfare people got them free.

Miss Christie: In this province they are given free, but they still have to pay a \$2 fee if it is an adult and a \$1 fee for each prescription if it is a child. If the family has more than two regular prescriptions a month from the same doctor there is a waiver of this fee. This seems a small amount but it is not small when things are so tight for families. Then when you get the situation of the low income family the only assistance there is the limited amount that they can secure through the out-patients department of the hospital.

Senator Inman: The reason I am asking you the question is that in several briefs it has been mentioned that the welfare people have the privilege of getting free drugs and medicines whereas the working poor, as we call them, do not.

Miss Christie: You know the cost of drugs. The prescription is paid but they have to pay in turn a small fee for each prescription.

Senator Inman: On page 5 of the brief under the heading "The Family Services' Groups for Children" you say:

The Family Services believes that much effort should be made to help the children of the poor to prevent the cycle of poverty and to give them a better start in life than their parents had. We recognize the importance of education for these children and the provision of some enriching influences which their parents cannot provide. We have begun experimenting of various approaches to help these children.

What approaches have you made and what results have you found?

Miss Christie: I have cited a few in the brief itself. This group of girls from 10 to 13,

which has now been meeting for over a year, are showing some results. I might say for all of these we don't anticipate we will see great results until it is for a period of some years.

When they first went to the home of our staff member who is the leader of the group they participated very little, they didn't know how to participate even in elections, and setting up meetings, and getting lunch, and clearing up after lunch, or any of those things. There has been a great change there and they are a much more responsible group already. If a member is sick they now automatically send a note and one member had to move out of the city and they were the ones that suggested a party. You see it in various small ways. We are hoping we will see it in the fact of our main goal, which is to help them continue on with their education and to respond to some of the chances that they have had that are not available to everybody. This will be revealed in a period of a few years. With the boys, who are younger, we see this in groups and the possibility of getting to know the male worker on our staff and relate to him. I don't think we will see much in the way of results for a matter of a few years.

Senator Inman: I was interested in the project you speak of at the top of page 6. I think you have answered the question by explaining this.

Miss Christie: Yes.

Senator Inman: More ambition towards getting more education. This is the group you are speaking of?

Miss Christie: It is hard to say. We hope it is there but we don't know.

Senator Fournier: Miss Christie, like the others I approve of your brief very much but for the next few minutes I want to be the black sheep of this committee. I understand your committee is the Family Services and you look after poor people, the children and the women, poor families. I congratulate you.

Miss Christie: We do a broader group than that, but we are particularly concerned with poor families.

Senator Fournier: What do you do to alleviate poverty in these homes? Do you do anything in regard to that, or do you keep on bringing the basket of food and money?

Miss Christie: No. We give some assistance. We help them with planning. We have

courses planned around cooking and that sort of thing to try and help them cope better with some of the problems of everyday living. Cooking classes or budgeting, it might be something of this kind. We work with them on an individual basis and then sometimes through special groups that we have set up to be helpful to them. We try to make them aware of various resources in the community, they could use to their advantage. We try to keep abreast of all possible chances. We have various groups, as you know, that are referred to here, and we have volunteers who are very helpful possibly in providing transportation when they need to get to clinics providing outings.

Senator Fournier: This is services. What do you do to eliminate poverty?

Miss Christie: No. You are quite right. We don't do anything, I am afraid, except try to change attitudes and take advantage of opportunities like this.

Senator Fournier: There is always a reason why certain families are poor. It could be lack of employment; it could be something by heritage; it could be due to environment or due to alcohol; it could be due to mismanagement and poor budgeting, which I understand you are doing something about. For every poor person there is some reason. What are you doing to eliminate some of these reasons?

Miss Christie: This is where we are trying to do it through individual counselling and help and support and encouragement with families. One of the reasons we have put the stress on children is we feel certain families who have been disadvantaged as a child are still disadvantaged may not be able to respond and make some of the basic changes that are necessary. We therefore feel that may be more useful to have a concentrated program on helping their children.

Senator Fournier: I understand what you are doing. I am not being critical, don't get me wrong. We often talk about the aged people and hear everybody has sympathy for the aged people. I agree with that. What would you do with the old drunk who has been drinking all his life and made a martyr of his wife and family who have no respect for him. He has drunk every penny, and then he ends up on public relief and he is still drinking. He gets paid \$75 or \$100 and then or four days later he is broke again. Are you going to give him \$100 every week to keep him like that?

I want to say this. Some of the members of the committee don't agree. There are more of these people than we think there are. It is not just one or two. There are a lot in Saint John and a lot in Fredericton, and a few in Edmundston. There are thousands in Montreal and Toronto. I sympathize with these people but what can we do with them?

Miss Christie: We turn to groups like A.A., Alcoholics Anonymous, if it is possible to have this person with the drinking problem get to the point where he will go. If he won't, we concentrate more on trying to help the family and do anything we can, but with a person who has been drinking for a long time unless there is some recognition on his part we are not very successful at all with alcoholics.

Senator Quart: Miss Christie, you mention here on page 5 of your brief: "For some years now our volunteers—" Am I to conclude from that "our" that you have a type of auxiliary of volunteers working with you, or do you just have individual volunteers to come and help you out?

Miss Christie: We have a group and Mrs. Forsythe was the one who started our volunteer committee, the services committee. We have quite a large group that have provided a whole range of services in different aspects of our work and we have found them very ready. As a matter of fact, they would like to be able to do more. One of our problems is that we don't have the time to give them any service training they need to go and to be of even greater help. They help in our pre-school and they help in some of the communities out in Crescent Valley. They help with driving and they help provide the special needs of families. There is a long list.

Senator Quart: You say "Our volunteers have conducted a headstart kindergarten and a second one is planned for the fall."

Miss Christie: Mrs. Forsythe could give you some idea of the number of volunteers that are involved.

Mrs. Forsythe: We are really excited about the headstart project, and we are very fortunate that the teacher is a trained teacher who is a volunteer. We had it open for three days a week and it is for children who are to be prepared for school in the fall. We operate from October until May. She operates and she is there every day and she has three volunteers with her every day as helpers. These

children are sent to us from the various agencies and they are culturally deprived. They do need this badly. Many children have never had crayons before.

Senator Quart: Would you mention the age?

Mrs. Forsythe: They are all five years old, all to enter school in the fall. We have a prescribed curriculum they are to follow. There is some school work involved to prepare them for school. It is not just play. They also have play along with it and we provide a lunch of milk and crackers and give them cod liver oil. Mainly it is cultural.

Senator Quart: Is the luncheon free?

Mrs. Forsythe: Oh, yes. We charged in the beginning. We told them it would be 25 cents a week. We put a little box and told the mothers. We have volunteers who call on the families first and explain the whole project to them. We have a long list, a waiting list. We had 26 children last year and we really couldn't handle any more. We use the facilities of a church and we really couldn't handle any more.

Senator Quart: I suppose this group of girls of average intelligence might have been drop-outs, the ones from 10 to 13 years of age, and this group was formed with the hope of helping them to remain in school. You mentioned in your answer to Senator Inman that it was one of your staff that was a leader.

Miss Christie: Yes.

Senator Quart: Is it over and above her time? It would be almost on a volunteer basis?

Miss Christie: Yes. There is some compensation but not full compensation for her time. These youngsters are chosen from families where the older children that we have become interested in and felt had a potential to go on had dropped out of school in spite of what we have been trying to do. We thought this would be more effective way of trying to encourage them. This group meets on Saturday usually.

Senator Quart: And what young girl is not interested in fashions, models, and hairdressing, and all this. You have nurses, stenographers and lab technicians. I think it is wonderful. You have people from these particular jobs who come and talk to them, and they have contact. How many would you have?

Miss Christie: How many girls would we have?

Senator Quart: Yes.

Miss Christie: It varies. I think it is about ten in this group.

Senator Quart: Did it ever occur to your leader to form them into a Girl Guide company where they would benefit from leadership training, and camping, and working for the various badges.

Miss Christie: No; because we felt this was designed to meet a special purpose. These were girls who had not gone into Guide work. We felt this sort of thing should be tried out to see if it would meet the need.

Senator Quart: With your group of boys between six and 13 without a father in the home, did it ever occur to you to try and get them interested in Cubs or Scouts?

Miss Christie: Yes, but again we find among the most disadvantaged or poor that they are not comfortable in the regular established groups.

Senator Quart: Uniforms would not be a problem.

Miss Christie: I know. We have gone into this. It may be partly because their whole life is really not organized enough. They are not gotten off by their mothers to meetings. We found with both these groups in the beginning when they have to be picked up they have forgotten the date. There is certain disorganization. I think it makes it harder to fit into established groups. Also they feel sometimes that the groups are really designed more for the more fortunate level of boys and girls.

Senator Quart: Not always.

Miss Christie: I know. This is their feeling.

Senator Quart: Once they get into a uniform there is a sameness about it which works very well in many companies.

I want to congratulate you on this. This is one of my pet theories. This is under "Welfare Recipients", and you say:

When a welfare recipient does secure regular employment, benefits should continue for a period, possibly a month, to enable him to make some adjustment of his financial obligations.

I am sure someone else will pick this up.

Senator Fournier: Do you operate under a budget?

Miss Christie: Yes.

Senator Fournier: Is your budget sometime a problem? Do you need more money to extend your services?

Miss Christie: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: Some of the things thought of asking have been asked by other people. In your recommendation number 1 you say that welfare recipients should be allowed more part-time earnings. You elaborate on that in your brief, and you also say:

Present regulations must be changed to provide the incentive to work and to allow recipients to earn more from part-time employment.

Would you tell us what they are allowed to earn now?

Miss Christie: Twenty dollars a month, but if they earn \$20.01 it is not the one cent that is deducted, it is the \$20.01 that is deducted. Twenty dollars is the maximum they can get without any deductions, and these families find it very difficult to get along.

Senator Fergusson: That extra \$20 is not necessarily made by the wage earner? Is anybody in the family? Suppose one of the children goes out?

Miss Christie: It is the wage earner.

Senator Fergusson: There would not be an objection to a child having a newspaper route?

Miss Christie: Oh, no.

Senator Fergusson: You speak of the middle class and in your recommendation number 15 you say:

Effort should be made to encourage more communication and changed attitudes.

Under (c) you say:

Education of the middle class to the situation of the poor.

Now do we really have a middle class in Canada? I presume I would belong to the middle class if there is a middle class.

Mrs. Forsythe: I feel strongly that there are people who are not at the poverty level and they don't really understand at all what the

people are going through and I do think they make great indignities, people at the poverty level. It is because other people honestly don't understand and I think there should be more education for the general public to know what their problems are.

Now we mentioned here that if a child wants to bring another child home for supper it is a real problem to that family. Nobody else realizes this. It seems to me there are so many ways that the rest of the world doesn't understand at all.

Miss Christie: They don't know that the families don't have enough to sit down, let alone the dishes, let alone the food. You just can't bring a youngster in. It presents a real crisis for the family.

Senator Fergusson: I can see this, but it seems to me from the things that we have heard that the people who have been really deprived and who have eventually got beyond what you call the middle class, have less sympathy than the people who have never gone through that experience. They think, "I was able to do this, why can't they?"

Miss Christie: Yes, I think that does happen.

Mrs. Forsythe: I grew up during the depression and we had a very difficult time at home but everybody else was in it, everybody was going through it, and you didn't have these pressures they are talking about, the affluent society and TV. We didn't see it. Nobody else had it.

The Chairman: It was not there and that is why you did not see it during the depression.

Mrs. Forsythe: We were all poor.

The Chairman: We were all poor, but today we are not all poor. This is what we are here to talk. Do you say that you do not understand the poverty-stricken people?

Mrs. Forsythe: No, I don't, except that I am on the Board of Family Services and hear these things and I am at Headstart and I see the children come. I am with the community camps where we send these children to camp and I see the children. I see the children come and the doctors are amazed and the nurses. Their teeth are all gone and they have to be filled before they can go to camp. There is only one dentist in town. I see all these things and I don't think lots of people do and I don't think they understand. I feel fortunate that I

have been on the Board of Family Services and I am able to see it.

The Chairman: What can we do to get them into it? How do we get the message across?

Mrs. Forsythe: I don't know. I think it has to be really on a big scale. Maybe instead of some of the money going—I want it go to the poor too—but I think maybe if other people understand their problems they could put up with more. When we were poor we had hope. Everybody was poor and everybody was going through the depression but we had hope. This was only going to last a little while. I don't think the poor now have any hope.

The Chairman: How do we give them hope?

Mrs. Forsythe: I don't know. I don't know.

Senator Fergusson: Do you not think with the movement now amongst deprived people that they are coming to have hope of a better future?

Mrs. Forsythe: Yes. Now the Crescent Valley group, this is exciting, this is just great, and they need the encouragement. I think this is something all of us can learn from. Yes, I think they do.

Senator Fergusson: In your recommendation number 6 you say that substantial increases should be made in family and youth allowances. I would like you to say a little more about that. How much do you think it should be increased? I would like to introduce the subject by asking if you think that would be a better way of helping the deprived people than a guaranteed annual income, which is discussed so often and brought before us on so many occasions?

Miss Christie: May this be a personal opinion? To begin with I personally think the guaranteed annual income would be better and would distribute funds more evenly and get away from some of this patched and really inadequate and inefficient kind of system that we have.

We mentioned family allowances because we all agreed this is something that might be achieved much more quickly and might be more agreement about it. How much it should be raised I don't really have any idea at all. This is beyond me. Personally I would like to see the guaranteed annual income come in. I would like to see in the interim something

done about making much greater amounts available.

Senator Fergusson: I am sorry. I did not mean to embarrass you. I am glad to have your personal opinion.

The Chairman: We are delighted to have your personal opinion. I am going to follow it up. As a matter of fact, Senator Fergusson, both questions that you asked were on my list. I have another question: can you think of any good reason why I should be receiving the old age pension?

Miss Christie: You are getting down to universality.

The Chairman: You know that I have some income; that I am not on the poverty line. Why should I be drawing the old age pension?

Miss Christie: I can't answer it for you but if you are referring to why it should be given to everybody else regardless of need...

The Chairman: That is my question, in effect.

Miss Christie: Well, I would say from experience with friends and clients and so on that there are certain people that are poor and proud and who would not apply for old age.

The Chairman: Everybody has to apply, whether he has a million dollars or one dollar.

Miss Christie: I know that is the case. I think this was the reason why I felt the old age pension or security should be universal. There was a group of older people who felt very proud and very keenly. If it came to everybody it was acceptable in a way. It would not be if they had to apply individually.

The Chairman: They did apply individually. Let me give you the background on this. Originally when we passed this act there was a group in the country, my father included, who said "We are not going to take charity". There were thousands. So how could we deal with it? You couldn't tell them this was not charity. We convinced the Prime Minister, Mr. St. Laurent, to publicly apply for it, and we made it a news item. He made application publicly for the old age pension to show he wanted it the same as anybody else. That was

the end of our difficulties. As soon as he did, it was accepted, it was fair and just.

What I am trying to get from you is this: Originally when we put it into effect, we did it for administrative purposes. It was easier to do. Today we have a computer, so that is not the problem. We also worked on the theory there was retrieval. That is nonsense and you know it. We don't get it back. We get back very little of it. In the light of that, when we spend \$1.6 billion are we justified in spending that kind of money in that kind of way, or should we limit it to people with incomes under \$10,000 or \$7,500?

Miss Christie: I am forced to agree with you.

The Chairman: You are an authority, you know.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, I wish to explore for a moment the subject of alcoholism which was opened up by my colleague. He glanced over it fairly quickly. There seems to be a direct relationship between rampant alcoholism and poverty wherever we have gone. I wonder if you would care to tell me whether you think it is the cause of, or a symptom of, poverty?

Miss Christie: I don't think I think either. I don't know it is the cause of poverty. It results from poverty in families.

Senator Hastings: Or is it a symptom of poverty?

Miss Christie: No. I would not say it was a symptom of poverty. I am not really answering you one way or the other. I don't see it either as the cause or a symptom. I see it as a factor that contributes, a very serious factor that contributes to poverty, but not the cause of poverty.

Senator Hastings: One of the causes?

Miss Christie: Yes, I will go along with that.

Senator Hastings: I think it is a symptom of poverty. An individual, having been thrown into his role in poverty, his only outlook becomes alcohol. It becomes to him a symphony concert, a release. That is a symptom of poverty. With the rich it is a symptom of poverty of a different kind. You say you work with A.A. Is there any other work being done in New Brunswick? Is there any division of alcoholism in the Department of Health?

Miss Christie: Yes. Mrs. Perkins could probably answer better than I. I know they do what they can. They usually use A.A.

Senator Hastings: Are there alcoholic rehabilitation centres or hospitals operated here?

Mrs. Perkins: I thought nobody would trot out the sacred cow. Nobody is allowed to touch on that subject of alcohol because it affects all of us too deeply. There is not anyone who has not seen the tragedy of alcoholism somewhere close in his family or in a friend, but we are reluctant to discuss it because of pride and how it will reflect on our own drinking. We found people in high places who themselves have a drinking problem are the ones who are most reluctant to co-operate with us in trying to bring it into the open how serious the problem of alcoholism is. It is very difficult to combat this public apathy, the stigma that is attached to alcoholism. The people in higher positions would prefer that this remain a problem of the poor when actually it affects all the levels of society.

The question you asked was as to what facilities are available in the area?

Senator Hastings: First of all, I asked is there an alcoholic foundation or division of the Department of Health?

Mrs. Perkins: Yes. We have an alcoholic addiction division. There are only two representatives in this area. Our main function is to give out information about alcoholism, provide information and counsel families and go to schools. There is a professed interest in drug addiction, but we don't get this support from the schools or the parents. They're not clamouring for any information about alcoholism.

Senator Hastings: My other question was: Is there an alcoholic hospital?

Mrs. Perkins: Yes, there is a clinic at the Provincial Hospital which will accommodate about 20 people.

Senator Hastings: Is that all in the Province of New Brunswick?

Mrs. Perkins: No, this is in Saint John. They come from Fredericton and some from Moncton, but these are mainly the people who are, of course, very very sick and require hospitalization.

We need so many things for alcoholics. We need a centre where people could go. They are hidden away where alcoholism belongs in the basement That is where we are relegated. We need a centre that people can go to freely to ask for information and there will be no stigma attached to it. It is an illness like something else that people are afflicted with high and low and the sooner we get that out in the open the more will be done. We should have a Senate committee on alcoholism to find out this. This would bring out why there are so many marriage breakdowns and juvenile delinquents, and divorces, and crimes, and mental breakdowns and suicides. You name it and alcoholism is the back of it. But no, we skirt around it and pretend it doesn't exist, and it makes me mad.

Senator Hastings: Thank you very much. I think we are all aware that 40 per cent of welfare costs can be attributed to alcoholism. I agree with you when you mention a sick man, and I think that perhaps would answer Senator Fournier's question: What do you do with the old drunk? What do we do with a man when he is mentally, emotionally, and physically sick? You look after him and treat him that way, and hope that you can motivate him to arrest his illness. You do not cut him off welfare. We do all we can through his relatives.

The Chairman: No-one suggested that.

Miss Christie, to you and Mrs. Forsythe I express our deep appreciation for the excellent brief. It is a humane understanding and appreciation of the problems that face these people. It has been most valuable to us and I assure you that the recommendations that you put forward will receive very serious consideration from us. On behalf of the committee, I thank you.

The Chairman: We have a brief from the New Brunswick Forest Extension Service. On my right is Mr. J. B. Kelly, from the Faculty of Forestry at the University of New Brunswick. Next to him is Mr. Bastin, an independent forestry consultant. Next to him is Mr. Torunski, who has been in the employ of the Forest Extension Service since May 1957. Mr. Kelly will speak on behalf of the group.

Mr. J. B. Kelly, Faculty of Forestry, University of New Brunswick: Thank you, Mr. Chairman. I must say it is a pleasure for us to have been afforded this opportunity to present a brief on the segment of poverty which

we think does concern this province. Now I am not going to read the brief, but I will take excerpts from it or discuss it as we go along.

There is no doubt in our mind at all that the woodlot in New Brunswick is a very important affair. Now we have not taken excerpts from previous or prior reports put out by other agencies. There are numbers and numbers of them. We are trying to present to you something factual and something that might be useful to all of us.

As we outlined to you, in the Forest Extension Service we have been in operation since about 1939 and under the present circumstances since about 1956. Our men, of course, are in constant contact with interested woodland owners within the province. They are in a position that they can assess both the incomes and standards of living of many owners of lands within this Province of New Brunswick.

Now our prime concern is, of course, to assist the woodlot owners to manage his asset and develop their property so it is going to be a continuing asset to him. This particular group of people own within this province some 4,500,000 acres. This is productive forest ground which, as your brief will tell you, is about 29 per cent of all the forested area within the province. The number of individual owners, as close as we can ascertain, is about 30,000 people. Together with their families this represents quite a proportion of the population of the province.

Now for us in forestry it is very well known (maybe some of you are not as well aware) the economy of the Province of New Brunswick is dependent to a very large degree on the wise use of its forest. Of all the provinces in Canada we have more ground-growing trees than any other province. As a matter of fact it is approximately 85 per cent in trees.

When we discussed the 29 per cent consisting of small woodlots this may be various types of ownership. You have your farm woodlot, which was recognized years ago. You also have lots which were formerly farms and they are no longer under cultivation. These two types of small woodlot ownership constitute really two separate and distinct problems and they are both, of course, related to the economic development of your province.

In the first case where your small woodlot is part of the overall farm operation, in the old days it was used probably sometimes as a bank, sometimes as a source of cash; but in

today's type of farming this is not possible. In many cases it is an uneconomic unit so the farmer has to decide whether he is going to use that particular ground or whether he is going to concentrate on something else. The old farm, which was not very large, is not the unit that can make a living for the man today either. He has very difficult problems.

In the second case where it was a woodlot which was formerly a part of a farm but is no longer operated as we understand farming the ownerships here are many and varied. It is a real major problem within the province to get the woodlands into proper use.

Then we have another extreme, the owner who sells trees on the property, sells them probably to someone who is in the business of supplying one of our industries and the sales are made frequently at depressed prices. There is a historical background on this.

You have another class of ownership and that is acquisition of small woodlots by large industries. In most cases these enterprises have already large expensive holdings, some in the form of Crown lands and in most cases large reserved holdings of freehold. They are at the same time still buying and have bought considerable acreage of small freehold woodlands. This we feel is really to establish a reserve for themselves and it also helps to control the price that they pay for the raw product. We feel also it is not good business for the people of the province.

Now I am sure the committee is much more aware of the DBS statistics than I am, but within the agricultural statistics of 1966 Table 36, it showed that in 1931 34,025 census farms containing 2,432,570 acres. In 1966 this had decreased to 8,706 census farms and 973,888 acres. This means that 1,458,682 re-classified farm woodlots to small woodlots. A substantial part of this is now taken up by forest industries, owned by forest industries.

Now we did mention that within the classification of small woodlots there is some 4,500,000 acres. If we assume this land worth \$30 an acre then you would have a capital amount of \$135 million. It is quite natural, I think, that the people who are residents of this province should expect some return from this very substantial investment. Unfortunately this is not really the case and we feel it is in most cases due to the low prices paid for the product. What happens really is by the time he finances cutting the wood and gets it to its destination he must make a reasonable wage, but the rest of it

money is spent and he is getting no return on his investment. Some parts of the province really are adversely affected, more so than others.

It has been estimated in 1968 the net annual returns in the form of wages on a 112 acre woodlot was \$162. This dollar figure is based on owner cutting and selling spruce, fir, pulpwood at the roadside at \$16 a cord for rough pulp. These figures were compiled from records within the province, the Department of Natural Resources, the Federal Forestry Service, the Dominion Bureau of Statistics.

Surprisingly enough the quantity of wood cut was necessarily limited by both demand and price. These two factors are affected by marketing which in our instance is under the direct control of the pulp and paper companies. When I say "our instance" I mean in this particular province. Supposing the demand had been stronger, we estimate the income would have been \$437.40. This would represent a substantial increase but it certainly is not an income on which a person could expect to maintain a family. If the owner received \$2 a cord more for his wood his income would have gone up to \$519.20. Again not much, but the comparisons would help you to see that both quantity and price have a very direct bearing on income from the farm woodlot.

We have outlined the problems as we see them and we think they appear to be as follows:

1. Lack of control of marketing of farm and forest products. This applies to both quantity and price as well as diversification of products.
2. Lack of the development of more sophisticated machinery and equipment to bring about cost reductions in wood harvesting operations.
3. Insufficient areas of forest under control to enable him to obtain and maintain a decent standard of living.
4. We have no organized custom cutting crews who would be available to harvest wood for the owners who have not the necessary facilities.
5. Business and trade schools to train woodworkers and youths in application of mechanized equipment and proper harvesting techniques.
6. The need for increased assistance in the development and improvement of forest land under his control.

We have listed some solutions, or what we think are possible solutions. They are in summary form only because it is not the time nor the place to go into them in depth.

We think it is imperative that the Government sponsor a system of marketing controls for primary forest products and it must be instituted without delay. It should have incorporated in it provisions ensuring maximum sustained growth for small forest properties. Much has been accomplished by the forest industries and the machinery manufacturers in the development and production of sophisticated wood harvesting equipment to up-date operating methods. However, within the area of the small operator very little, if anything, has been done. We suggest here there should be an encouragement of some sort and expansion of effort to facilitate the operations.

Provision already exists in New Brunswick to assist the small woodlot buyer to increase his holdings in order to make a living from his wood operation. This plan is very much in the initial stages. An appropriate arrangement should be made for its further development and expansion.

Successful consolidation of farm woodlots would constitute a big step in contributing to the lessening of poverty in the Province of New Brunswick.

A natural outgrowth of forest land consolidation is custom-cutting of woodlots. In many instances the owners are unable, for one reason or another, to do the work themselves. Quite a large percentage of our woodlands are in the possession of absentee owners. These lands could be managed to advantage if the harvesting operations were performed by capable custom-cutting crews. We also envisage the personnel of the custom-cutting crews would be recruited from men who had received special training in the trade schools. It seems paradoxical that a province whose economy is oriented to the forest there are no facilities for the training of forest workers. The trade schools provide courses for all sorts of trades except the one that should be of first importance to the province. By contrast the country of Sweden has recently extended its training for woodworkers from one year to a two-year course. It is also endeavouring to raise the status of the woodworker to that of other trades. A similar movement is long overdue in this province. It is our contention it would do much to raise many of the woodworkers above the poverty level.

Forest Extension Service has been doing a great amount of work with woodlands owners

to the limitation of our finances. We work in co-operation with the agricultural representatives, the natural resources personnel, and we attempt to provide assistance to a number of woodlot owners. However, with a greater emphasis and importance being placed on the role of the small woodlot proprietors, we feel the work of Forest Extension will have to be augmented.

As a member of Forest Extension Service I would like to say we are appreciative of this opportunity of presenting our views to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty.

Senator McGrand: I am very glad to have this opportunity to speak to these men who have done so much. For two days we have been discussing poverty in the City of Saint John, and we have been around the city, and we have seen these areas of blight that have crept up blocks by blocks, year by year, in certain parts of the city. In the Province of New Brunswick we have had a rural blight that has been going on for two generations. I am glad you are here because your brief covers every nook and cranny of the 15 counties of New Brunswick, and that is very important.

Now, there are a few questions I want to ask you before the others start. I was going to quote Professor Sultz' report on Primary Forest Products published in 1964. In one place he says:

However, if the woodlot is not improved it will remain a dedication to poverty.

That is rather strong language and it actively describes to me a very acute situation in rural New Brunswick.

Now from 1951 to 1961 I understand that 10,000 acres of farmland were abandoned yearly. That is in his report. I cannot understand why the abandoning of 10,000 acres a year in a province the size of New Brunswick means that there is something going on in the province. I can understand that some of the small farms were taken over to make large areas. I would like to know just what becomes of that farmland that becomes abandoned year by year.

I will call your attention to the statement in your brief which has something to do with it, perhaps. You say another class of ownership involves the acquisition of small woodlots by large forest industries. You go on to say: "In most cases they already have extensive interests in Crown lands." You say: "Small woodlots are bought to augment their reserves of

standing lumber." You go on: "In either case the influence is detrimental to the economy of the province."

Now, when these large companies buy up this land it goes out of the hands of the small owner into the hands of the larger corporation. In your opinion would you tell us what becomes of this land as those 10,000 acres a year pass out of cultivation into bush, and so on. Talk a little bit about that.

Mr. Kelly: Senator McGrand, would you allow Mr. Bastin to answer the question? He has recently been doing some work along these lines.

Mr. V. C. Bastin, Independent Forestry Consultant: I think that is a very sensible question, Senator McGrand.

The Chairman: Somewhere along the line I lost the question.

Mr. Bastin: The question refers to approximately 10,000 acres of farmland a year being abandoned and the percentage of this that is being acquired by the large industries. I think the senator's question was: What are the large industries doing with this land?

Now I would like to digress just for a minute and say the forest industries of New Brunswick have under their control, either through the licensing of Crown land or through ownership of large areas of freehold lands, large and small areas, approximately 61 per cent of the forest land of New Brunswick. Now tie this percentage of ownership in with the percentage of usage that is being made of the forest of New Brunswick and the figures are just about identical. Now this means that there is in effect some 39 per cent of the forest land of New Brunswick which is not being utilized to its full capacity. Now when the companies acquire this land it goes into their general holdings and this then, I think, aggravates the situation whereby the companies control enough land to supply wood fibre for their own industries, for their own use. As a consequence of this extent of ownership they don't really need to buy a stick of pulpwood anywhere. They have enough under their control. This is just aggravating the situation and it doesn't help the economy of the province.

Senator McGrand: It means they can offer a price on pulpwood to the farmer and if he says "I don't want to sell at that price", they say "We will get it off our own lands"?

Mr. Bastin: That is it.

Senator McGrand: The more of this 10,000 acres a year of land that passes into the hands of the large corporation, the less that stays in the hands of the small operator. You can see how the land resources of this province can end up in the hands of a monopoly. I do not know what is the cost of producing pulpwood. What does it cost to produce pulpwood at Fraser's, off their own ground? I have been told, but I have forgotten.

Mr. Bastin: Honestly I cannot answer that question. I will tell you why I can't answer it. I worked for many years for the company you named. It is natural to expect me to be able to answer the question.

Senator McGrand: Times have changed.

Mr. Bastin: Indeed. Each company has its own way of compiling its cost on wood. To attempt to compare the cost of one company's wood and the cost of another company's wood is just about impossible. The system of accounting is sufficiently flexible—I use the word “flexible” advisedly—so a company can present legally almost any picture it wants to of its wood cost.

I would like to say, senator, that my concern for the return that a small woodlot owner will get from his woodlot is that he will be paid at the same rate as organized labour is paid on the company lands plus the fringe benefit for his effort in cutting his wood, plus a reasonable stumpage return. This is what he has to get and this is what he is not getting now.

Senator McGrand: I was told the price of that it cost by a man who knows the business. I shall not mention his name. He gave me the impression that if they cut from their own Crown land it would cost them quite a bit, and if they could get it from the small woodlot owner at their price it is cheaper to do it that way. The small woodlot owner who has a farm with 110 or 115 acres of woodland and cuts his cord pulpwood every year gets about \$16 at the roadside, does he not?

Mr. Bastin: That was the price in 1968. In some parts of the province it is a little more and in others it is \$1 or \$2 less.

Senator McGrand: It is less now?

Mr. Bastin: I believe it is, yes.

Senator McGrand: It is going down instead up?

Mr. Bastin: In the County of Kent pulpwood sold today at \$14 and \$15 a cord at the roadside.

Senator McGrand: That is worse than I thought. Now what is this fellow doing when he gets such a small price for his pulpwood? He is doing one of two things. He is either getting a day's pay and cutting his own wood for his stumpage, or he is selling his stumpage and doing the work or practically nothing.

Mr. Bastin: You have the situation assessed entirely correctly. I think it is mentioned in the brief.

Senator McGrand: I have been a long time studying this problem. Now, there is something I am interested in and I think you mentioned it. We were down in Halifax, Nova Scotia, and there was a wonderful report put out by the Dalhousie University on Poverty in Nova Scotia. They broke it down into two categories—Urban Poor, and what they called the Village of “Fringeville”. They called it the farm poor and the non-farm rural poor. The casual workers who cut pulpwood and maybe help the farmer and work on the highway and are unemployed the rest of the time,—those below the poverty line—comprise 85 per cent of the people in Guysboro County, and 85 per cent in Inverness County. Even in the best counties in Nova Scotia it ran to about 72 per cent. I do not think conditions are any better in rural New Brunswick than Nova Scotia.

A lot of these people who are casual workers may own five acres of land where they live. They are not landowners. If a piece of land was up for sale, say 150 acres or 50 acres of wood, and one of these men wanted to buy it, then if a fund was set up by the government by which he could make a loan and buy this land he would have something to work at. It might be improved land but the chances are if he buys it that it is not improved land. He has the years of growth ahead of him, and it has got the possibility.

I would be prepared to pay that man for the work he does to improve that woodlot for himself because when he is doing that he is not only being occupied doing a useful task and it is better than being on welfare, but at the same time he is building up a national asset for the province with an improved woodlot.

I have often thought about that but you said something there that was rather new, the

acquisition of woodland. What is it that you have in mind there?

Mr. Bastin: Possibly you are referring to the program of the Fine Adjustment Board.

Senator McGrand: You just mentioned it.

Mr. Bastin: There is a program of land consolidation which comes under the Farm Adjustment Board and this program makes provisions for an individual to consolidate the control of woodland at actually very reasonable cost to him and the Government will buy the land and rent it to the individual. He will cut the wood on it and the wood he cuts he pays Crown stumpage. This, of course, is improving the forest of the province. This would have to be done under management, of course.

Senator McGrand: This is what they do in Holland when they clear a piece of the sea away. They do not sell it to the farmer; he rents it from them.

In his report Professor Sultz refers to the small woodlot owner as being in possession of 29 per cent of the forest area. He said that if this woodlot was given proper care, and if proper work was done on it to improve it, it would employ 300,000 man-days a year. I guess that is accurate; it is his estimate anyway. Someone else may estimate it at less, and maybe more, but the thing is this: Three hundred thousand man-days is a lot of employment, and if all the forest lands in New Brunswick were under proper development it would mean about a million man-days. If it were practical, we would have very little unemployment or poverty in New Brunswick.

Mr. Bastin: That is right. I agree with your figuring.

The Chairman: Why do we not do it?

Mr. Bastin: In all fairness the government of New Brunswick is doing whatever it can to foster expansion of the existing forest industries and also to bring in new forest industries. They are doing this and they are to be commended for it. They are not doing it fast enough. I am not critical of the government of New Brunswick because it is not being done fast enough. The very fact we are not utilizing all the forest that is going means there is room for more industry.

Senator McGrand: When you talk about the output of forest products, Sweden has 148,000

square miles and New Brunswick 28,000 square miles. It has three and a half times the acreage of forest land, but from that it produces ten times as much forest products as we do from the Province of New Brunswick. They must have a very extensive care of their forest; is that right?

Mr. Bastin: Yes, indeed they do have. Mind you when you are talking about Sweden I would like to make one point. I agree with what you said, this is so, but we have a more favourable cost of wood in New Brunswick than they do in Sweden. They practise all this forestry and they have been for generations and they are doing an excellent job growing trees, but it costs them more for their wood than it costs us.

Senator McGrand: Can you explain why that is?

Mr. Bastin: I think the reason is because of the fact they do practise forestry and forest management and treat the forest as a continuing crop. Maybe they have intensified their efforts too much and are spending too much.

Senator McGrand: I have been told they were spending a lot of money, gambling a lot of money, on this thing, but when you understand that three and a half times our forest area produces ten times the amount of product, it shows that we have a great potential in this province.

Mr. Bastin: We have. There is no doubt about that.

Senator McGrand: This province with Nova Scotia and the Gaspé could become the Sweden of North America.

Mr. Bastin: I agree.

Senator McGrand: And we would not be sitting around here talking about poverty in New Brunswick.

Mr. Bastin: We certainly would be better off.

Senator Inman: You say on page 6: "The effect of small woodlot operators is a contributing factor to poverty." What percentage would you say it does contribute to the poverty of New Brunswick?

Mr. Bastin: If I understand your question correctly, senator, it is to what extent or what percentage...

Senator Inman: You say it is a major factor in contributing to poverty. Would you give me some idea of the percentage it does contribute to poverty?

Mr. Bastin: I am sure I would not know to give an exact figure.

Senator Inman: You mentioned Manpower, and that there is no training in woodcutting. Has there been an effort for that to be put in the curriculum?

Senator McGrand: A rural vocational school.

Mr. Kelly: To some degree some training through Canada Manpower. It is industry oriented. It does not tie in with the owners of the woodlands that we have within the province and of course we feel that because it has such a potential there should be a more formal approach to it. It should be in some of the vocational or technical schools, but it isn't at the present time.

Senator Inman: Has any effort been made to have it put in?

Mr. Kelly: Again through industry some effort has been made but no real strong effort has been made to benefit the woodlot owner.

Senator Inman: I belong to Prince Edward Island and they do a bit of lumbering there. Sometimes I am concerned to see so much wood taken off, and I doubt if there is much of a program of reforestation taking place. I see a little, but not too much. How long does it take a woodlot that has been indiscriminately cut over to recover and be brought into production again? I presume, of course, that there had been some reforestation taking place. How long would it take that woodlot?

Mr. Kelly: Senator Inman, if you will permit I will ask Mr. Torunski to answer that. He is very much involved in that.

Mr. J. Torunski, Forest Extension Service: Senator Inman, might I ask if you are referring to New Brunswick or Prince Edward Island?

The Chairman: Does it make a difference?

Mr. Torunski: To some degree, yes.

The Chairman: Give both, then.

Mr. Torunski: I will refer to some conditions in Prince Edward Island. The first thing that must be understood is that what might

be called under some circumstances indiscriminate cutting is not necessarily indiscriminate cutting. Certain forest conditions lend themselves to clear cutting and the Maritime provinces as a whole are quite fortunate in comparison to other parts of Canada in that we do get natural regeneration. I would say under normal circumstances on the average farm woodlot that a forest cover is usually established within a period of five years. Now it may not be the exact type of forest cover that is wanted, or by certain European standards the finesse might not be there, but there is a forest cover usually established. There are exceptions. You get certain soil conditions under which planting is required.

Senator Inman: And in certain areas this would have a bearing?

Mr. Torunski: Yes. It also has a great bearing on your cutting pattern. I think one of the things that happened on Prince Edward Island in the late 1930s was they advocated a lot of thinning. This led to a lot of trees being blown down, which led to a lot of disheartenment with practising forestry. The same thing here in the province in the coastal areas where high winds are a contributing factor to the type of forestry being practised.

Senator Inman: I see. What about New Brunswick then?

Mr. Torunski: I would say about the same. I was referring to the Maritime provinces. Usually within a period of five years you have a forest cover established, but not on all conditions. There are exceptions to this.

Senator McGrand: You mentioned the price of pulpwood was about \$16, and in Kent it would sell for \$14. It seems to me that at about the close of the war pulpwood was about \$20 a cord to the farmer on the roadside.

Mr. Bastin: I think that is a bit of a high figure—\$20 a cord roadside. Maybe on the cars.

Senator McGrand: Yes, on the cars. The price of newsprint at that time was how much a ton? Was it \$65 a ton or something like that? Now it is up to what?

Mr. Bastin: \$110 or \$130, something like that.

Senator McGrand: It has doubled in that period and yet the primary producer is not

getting any more than he got then in spite of the fact that the cost of living and taxation and everything else has increased.

Now I want to go back to page 8, where you say:

In the intervening years the proprietors of small woodlots have been exploited first by the lumber industry and in more recent times by the pulp and paper companies.

I agree with this, but what can we do? This all adds up to poverty. It may not be actual dire poverty, but it is low income rather than poverty. These are the people who get fed up with rural New Brunswick and go to Toronto or other places looking for something better. Some come to Saint John and end up on welfare.

What are the first two or three major steps that you would take to rescue these people from something that is going to become worse as years go by?

Mr. Bastin: Doctor, I agree with everything you said. I think it is 100 per cent accurate. The question is: what is going to be done with it; or, what first steps should be taken to rectify the situation? I would say the first thing that has to be done is that all of the forest land in New Brunswick, whether Crown land or large freehold ownership or small freehold ownership, has got to be considered as one supply for our forest industries and that to take one particular forest industry and say the land that is in this area will be considered as land to supply wood for this industry whether or not it is Crown land or freehold land. I think that is the first step.

We have to have controlled marketing of the product of the wood fibre. Now hopefully this might be done as an off-shoot of having consolidation of the different kinds of wood-land ownerships.

There has got to be more co-operation amongst industry, provincial government and the primary producer.

I think I have gone far enough. If we did that then the price situation would certainly be improved.

Senator McGrand: It seems to me that if we keep on abandoning the land, and allowing the little people to own less of the land and the larger companies to own more, that if this goes on for the next 10 or 20 years, we shall end up as a province of landless people.

Mr. Bastin: That is exactly right. You may question this, but I think we will be reverting to the feudal system that prevailed so many years ago.

Senator McGrand: That is just what I had in mind, but I did not say it. I would like to talk about the relationships between the price of a cord of pulpwood, now and at the end of the war, and the price of newsprint, which has doubled. What has been done at the different levels to try and adjust that and to try to do something about it? Every time the pulp and paper workers demand more money or they are going to go on strike, the paper companies get the price of newsprint up a little bit—a dollar or two a ton—but the price of pulpwood does not go up to the men doing the work.

Mr. Bastin: I think the reason we don't hear as much about it as we should is lack of organization on the part of the small producers. I should qualify that by saying there does exist in New Brunswick a Federation of Woodlot Owners.

Senator McGrand: How many members do they have?

Mr. Bastin: I couldn't answer that.

Senator McGrand: There are several. There is one in Charlotte County and one they call "The Southern".

Mr. Bastin: The southern New Brunswick group.

Senator McGrand: And Madawaska.

Mr. Bastin: That is a marketing board. And in Kent County there is also a marketing board.

Senator McGrand: Who set up this board?

Mr. Bastin: It is actually established under the Natural Products Control Act, the Department of Agriculture. If there is a request of substantial majority of small woodlot owners for the establishment of a marketing board then a marketing board is set up.

Senator McGrand: That is why that is done?

Mr. Bastin: Yes.

Senator Inman: Why do the owners stay on these woodlots?

Mr. Bastin: Many of them do not. That is why we have abandoned farm woodlots the

we have today. In New Brunswick we are an independent group and we want to stay, many of us do want to stay on the land even though we stay there and slowly starve to death. It is a fact of life.

Senator Fergusson: It is one that the chair-man finds hard to understand.

The Chairman: It is a little difficult, yes. That last statement shook me a little.

Senator McGrand: This is a very interesting subject to me and I appreciate very much the fact they have come down here. It is hard to separate the working poor from the welfare recipient and the people we are talking about in rural New Brunswick are working poor.

The Chairman: That is right.

Senator McGrand: It is only going to be a matter of time. They are now on the border of poverty, and they will sink below it, and now is the time to help.

The Chairman: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: I too appreciate the fact that the gentlemen have come down from Fredericton. I was interested in the suggestion about trade schools and training woodworkers. If we had such trade schools as they obviously have in Sweden to train forest workers, and graduated people from those schools, would this provide the organized custom-cutting crews, the lack of which is one of our problems according to your statement on page 7 of the brief? If it did provide these organized custom-cutting crews would there be enough work to keep them busy? We hear about trade schools, and then we have too many people to do the jobs that are available. Would there be plenty of opportunity for such people to get work if they could attend such a school?

Mr. Kelly: We feel that there would be, yes. It is a long, involved process, and takes time. It takes time to train a man, to hand pick a few as leaders of the custom-cutting crews. We feel there is a lot of sympathy to a nature such as this.

Senator Fergusson: Do you think that there are a lot of people who would want to take these courses?

Mr. Kelly: This would take a little bit of education and publicity because at the present time your woodworker is in the northern

part of the province and we have to take the stigma away and it has to become a recognized trade.

Senator McGrand: In Newfoundland they have this.

The Chairman: It is a different sort of cutting.

Senator Inman: Would it pay the small woodlot owner to hire them? Would they be expensive?

Mr. Kelly: Well, if the holdings were enlarged to the point that we have suggested...

Senator Fergusson: I saw them in operation at the International Paper Company in the Laurentians.

Senator McGrand: You can have the trained cutting crew working for the large company but the majority of the small woodlot owners who have 150 acres of woodland will be doing their own cutting for the most part.

Mr. Kelly: We have such a large percentage of absentee owners though.

Senator McGrand: Oh, yes, but I was not thinking of them.

Mr. Kelly: I am thinking of myself, if I own a woodlot.

The Chairman: Let me just say this to you, Mr. Kelly, Mr. Bastin, and Mr. Torunski: You are experts, and you have been very helpful in presenting the brief. We thank the doctor for interesting you in it, and for your accommodation to the committee in coming forward with something that is comparatively new to us, except to those who come from New Brunswick. We have three members of the committee who are very much interested and concerned.

You have given us something to look at in the record, and we will have to make some inquiries to find out why that situation exists. I am satisfied we shall have a better understanding of it when we do. On behalf of the committee I thank you for coming down. You came some distance, but it is all for a good cause. We appreciate it very much. Thank you.

Last night Mrs. Mary Jane Whipple presented a brief on behalf of the Crescent Valley Tenants Association. I do not think it was

clear that she presented it personally and not necessarily on behalf of the Crescent Valley Tenants Association. It may not be their views, and I wish to make that clear.

Let me just say we owe a special vote of thanks to Henry Stagnmeyer and Catherine Gale, both of whom are here, for their help in organizing our visit and assisting Mr. Lord in contacting many groups which appeared before the committee.

We have received a great deal of useful and helpful assistance, and we have met many

strong personalities, and responsible administrators. The leadership is here and it is my view that the situation will improve in this area, and improve very quickly.

It has been a very pleasant visit for us, and a very useful one indeed, we thank all of those who co-operated to make this possible.

Mr. Stagnmeyer: Mr. Chairman, thank you very much for coming, and for your very kind remarks. We only wish you could come every month.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

Brief

To

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON
POVERTY

May 1970

THE ASSOCIATION OF PROFESSIONAL
ENGINEERS

OF THE PROVINCE OF NEW BRUNSWICK

123 York St., Fredericton, N.B.

THE ASSOCIATION OF PROFESSIONAL
ENGINEERS

OF THE PROVINCE OF NEW BRUNSWICK

1. Summary of Conclusions and Recommendations

1.1 This Association shares the belief that all Canadians have a right to a healthy life in this prosperous and developing country. However, we also believe that, in return for that right, it is the duty and obligation of every citizen to contribute his efforts, within the limits of his abilities, to the maintenance and promotion of that prosperity.

1.2 Physically and mentally handicapped persons must be recognized as having the right to appropriate publicly financed training to allow them to make a useful contribution to society.

1.3 Personal assistance schemes should recognize human nature and provide positive incentives for personal betterment. The administration of such schemes on a national scale could be through a joint effort of the Income Tax Department and Canada Manpower.

1.4 Regional and Industrial assistance should be more carefully related to utilization of local human resources, and should be combined with simultaneous investment in training programs to ensure the success of that utilization.

1.5 Local individually owned businesses could be more effectively promoted by simplified application of existing industrial assistance programs, and by the provision of professional guidance to assist in obtaining such benefits.

1.6 This Association stands ready to assist in any way possible with the development of programs for which its members may be specially qualified.

22429-5

Some areas of such possible assistance are:

(a) Distribution of details of capital assistance schemes to the membership combined with talks by administering personnel to ensure the understanding and success of the schemes.

(b) Utilization of statistics on manpower availability to encourage design of new industrial facilities to provide the maximum opportunity to available manpower.

(c) Advice on the content of technical training programs to best serve prospective industries.

The Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick, its branches and its national affiliates are at the disposal of Governments for such assistance in the promotion of effective programs.

2. Preface

2.1 The Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick is the licensing and regulatory body of professional engineering in the Province, whose members include employees of industry and governments, corporate executives, and private consultants. It is a participating member of the Canadian Council of Professional Engineers in cooperation with ten similar professional engineering associations of other Canadian provinces and territories. Through the Canadian Council of Professional Engineers mailing contact is available to all of the approximately 60,000 registered professional engineers in Canada. A number of local branches of The Association of Professional Engineers of the Province of New Brunswick operate in cooperation with local branches of the Engineering Institute of Canada to conduct periodic meetings and discussions on topics of local interest.

2.2 As a profession directly involved in the application of capital assistance programs, and as a representative group of Canadian citizens, we wish to address certain brief remarks to this learned Committee for its consideration.

3. Definitions

3.1 The Webster's New World Dictionary states "poverty" as the broadest term "implies

a lack of the resources for reasonably comfortable living".

3.2 We would define "poverty", as it applies to the family supporter, as "the lack of resources to provide the basic necessities for a healthy and reasonably comfortable life for one's dependents and oneself".

3.3 Such lack of resources usually includes one or more of the following:

(a) Lack of suitable education or training

(b) Lack of employment opportunities utilizing available training and experience

(c) Lack of mental initiative

(d) Lack of physical capacity (physically handicapped)

(e) Lack of mental capacity (mentally handicapped or mentally ill).

3.4 It is suggested that lack of income is one of the immediate symptoms of such lack of resources but lack of income by itself is a very inadequate definition of poverty. Through present assistance programs and education systems, education and training are rapidly becoming available to all, but the forms do not always create sufficient incentives to induce the mental initiative for persons to take advantage of training opportunities.

3.5 Abnormal deficiencies in physical and mental capacities can only be overcome to a limited degree, so it is suggested that such conditions will always require and deserve direct and continuing assistance from the rest of the population. Government participation in the training and care of mentally and physically handicapped persons seems to have been callously minimal to date.

4. Criteria for Assistance Programs

4.1 For discussion purposes we would divide assistance programs into two broad categories: "personal" (to individuals or families), and "regional" (industrial incentives, low cost housing, etc.).

4.2 (a) It is observed that present *personal* assistance schemes all seem to discourage a recipient from attempting to achieve personal income unless it is significantly above the level provided by the assistance. He can therefore become "locked in" to a situation where his income earning ability falls steadily farther below the assistance allowance available.

(b) The Association suggests that such assistance should instead foster personal initiative with "income incentives" which would reward and subsidize personal income on a diminishing scale which would phase out at some acceptable minimum income level. The terms "negative income tax" or "guaranteed annual wage" for such assistance seem as inappropriate as would be the terms "negative corporation tax" or "guaranteed annual profit" for industrial assistance; however, it does seem appropriate that such a scheme be administered under the Income Tax Act to minimize administrative costs.

(c) It is suggested that a program could be arranged to provide a fund for current monthly personal income assistance based on a formula similar to that used for installment tax payments by self-employed persons (i.e. based on the previous year's reported income). Such a fund could be readily incorporated into personal income tax returns for the current year.

(d) Effective administration of such a program under the Income Tax Act would most likely require coordination through local Canada Manpower Centres for individual personal assistance in obtaining benefits.

4.3 (a) *Regional* assistance programs, based on specific planned objectives, tend to be more constructively coordinated. However, unless followed up with appropriate training programs, some industries so attracted result only in an influx of higher paid personnel most of whom were already employed. This causes a statistical improvement in average income with little or no effect for the man "locked in" to the personal poverty situation except a higher cost of living and an even lower community status.

(b) Avoidance of such situation requires the simultaneous analysis of manpower availability and trainability to ensure the maximum initial use of low skilled labour combined with on-the-job training, and facilities for more advanced education and training for the succeeding generations. These considerations should be primary criteria for the selection of industries to receive government incentive assistance.

4.4 It is considered that training programs cannot be overstressed as the most effective means of alleviating poverty. Engineers of the Atlantic Area well know the frustration of suffering trained manpower shortages during general unemployment rates of over 10 per cent. No better utilization of assistance funds can be suggested than to provide training programs designed to upgrade unemployed persons to fill jobs being created by industrial development.

4.5 Encouragement of individual "entrepreneurship" should not be lost in the race for "showplace" industries. Talented individuals, given minimum incentives and profes-

sional assistance, can often develop local industries which are not attractive to large corporations, but which provide relatively immediate returns to the community involved. The effect of such developments on community and individual spirit is obvious.

Respectfully submitted,

The Association of Professional Engineers
of the Province of New Brunswick

W. L. McNamara, P. Eng.,
Chairman, Briefs Committee

R. D. Neill, P. Eng.,
President

APPENDIX "B"

Tuesday, Aug. 4, 1970.

BRIEF TO THE SENATE COMMISSION ON
POVERTY

From: *The Department of General Practise,*
Saint John General Hospital

I have been asked to report to you concerning poverty as seen through the eyes of a practising physician in this City. You will have had briefs in great detail concerning Education, Guidance, Intelligence, Disabilities and Calamities as they affect the picture of poverty in our country. However, the aspect beyond all others with which a general practitioner is daily confronted is Environment for we are called to see people in the very poorest of surroundings where the resulting depression, apathy and loss of human dignity are as much a part of the medical picture as the patient's illness.

People in poor housing feel lost, with nowhere to go but down. Recently I have seen

families moved to new housing development and can bear personal witness to the change in their appearance, attitude and self-determination. It has been remarkable. Their incentive to break the poverty cycle has been restored, and the re-establishment of their human dignity has reclaimed the individual as an integral part of his community.

All of the things listed in the first paragraph play a part, but the single factor which stands out over all others is that a change in environment—if only better housing, at least—will restore their self-respect and their faith that they can cope with their lot. I believe the Declaration of Human Rights states that everyone is entitled to live his life with dignity. Give them this chance, and you have wiped out the worst aspect of poverty anywhere in the World.

H. BRUCE PARLEE, M.D., C.M., Chief
Department of General Practise.

APPENDIX "C"

BRIEF TO THE SPECIAL SENATE
COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

Submitted by the
Saint John Community Workers Association
August 1970

Introduction

The name of our organization is the Saint John Community Workers Association. The purpose of our organization is to promote fellowship and understanding among the workers in the health, welfare, educational, justice and recreational fields; we present programmes or projects of interest in these separate fields.

We feel it is most difficult to define the term poverty in the 20th Century due to the numerous connotations that are applicable to such a term. The connotation we wish to expand upon is that of "deprivation". We feel that an individual who can not participate fully and totally in our Canadian Society because of economic inadequacies is in a form of poverty. To us poverty means substandards of health, work efficiency, education, justice, child rearing, recreation, and it usually promotes a general deterioration of self esteem and respect of others, and thereby blocks an individual from reaching his potential and becoming a productive member of our society.

It is our opinion that there is a definite need of reform within our present day system and society. We believe that all Canadians want to be a part of this change, and that all persons have a right to a full and normal existence. Therefore, our efforts must be directed with the utmost speed to re-integrating poverty stricken individuals into the normal experiences of community living. We feel we can no longer afford to allow individuals in our community to be isolated and segregated within the community setting. As an organization involved in community services we feel there is a drastic need of change in the following areas:

(1) A definite need of attitudinal change among professionals as well as non-professional persons within the community setting.

(2) A complete re-examination of the community's working poor class.

(3) A more concentrated attack on the problems of and experienced by today's youth.

(4) More assistance offered to our elderly citizens in the realization of happiness and contentment.

(5) A more thorough intergration of all community services, federal, provincial and private agencies.

(6) A complete revamping of the present cost sharing systems in health and welfare.

(1) Attitude change will need to be brought about in three phases:

(a) Change in the attitude of the professional

(b) Change in the attitude of the public in general, with focus on the business community

(c) Change in the attitude of the recipient

(a) The professional must be willing to attack the whole problem, not just the segments of a problem. He must no longer limit himself to the specific area of an individual problem that is served by his organization, but rather he must strive for comprehensiveness of service to the whole individual in relationship to the community.

(b) The attitude of the non-professional appears generally to be of a negative nature. This attitude is perhaps a direct result of his being inadequately informed of the poverty within his community and he therefore does not have a total awareness of the situation. This lack of awareness is perhaps an outgrowth of the apathetic attitude of non interested professionals and possibly even his own willingness to perceive isolated incidents as being the rule rather than the exception. Due to the lack of education and public awareness the non professional feels his money is being squandered on those too lazy to work and is unable or unwilling to understand how his taxes are being used, that is to reintegrate these individuals back into a productive role within the community thus in the long run relieving these monetary pressures on the remaining community.

(c) The attitude of the recipient, which is one that varies from that of demand to that of apathy and personal defeat, can be looked upon as the product of his environment. This is to say these attitudes stem from lack of those services which form the positive growth of an individual within his environment. The prime service lacking is that of educational training, both academic and technical. These in turn limit the parents' financial income, thus affecting his family's cultural development by stagnating their aspirations to achieve those goals which would allow them and their families to aspire to a higher level of living within the community.

(2) *The Working Poor*: It is our contention that the plight of the working poor is as it exists, perhaps the most disheartening of all the elements within our society. We feel this because it is this group, who although they have the desire to raise their self esteem and improve their conditions of living, are however unable to do so due to lack of educational and technical training. They find it difficult to maintain their existence due to the numerous frustrations they encounter in the matters of low wages, lack of proper medical attention, poor and inadequate housing and sporadic employment. It is this group of individuals who are most inclined to surrender in despair and turn to rely solely on government organized assistance programs such as Social Assistance or Unemployment. To counteract this lack of work incentive we must take immediate studies in the following areas:

(a) To have the minimum wage increased.

(b) We must devise a new and more comprehensive system of service in the welfare program which will meet the needs of the working poor.

(c) Provide adult education and technical training.

(d) Provide a reasonable guarantee of medical care for all.

(e) Improve the housing situation in both quality and quantity.

(f) Devise a complete and comprehensive scheme to provide counselling by professionals in the areas of budgeting, family planning, and family living which would be readily available to all persons.

We feel that in attacking the problems in this area, we are waging the war on poverty

on two fronts. First by upgrading the individuals in this area, we dispel any thoughts of relying on government service by creating an incentive to work and gain prosperity. Secondly by increasing the employment quota we also invariably increase the tax dollars needed for more intensive programing in the more impoverished areas of the community.

(3) *Our Youth*: Another area of vital concern in our present day society is that of today's youth, who in the majority of cases, are in some type of poverty when the term is taken in the context of our definition. In order to guarantee the continuation of our society we must assist these young persons to assume a productive and meaningful role within our society. To accomplish this a more concentrated approach must be taken in the following areas:—

(a) Educational facilities

(b) Counselling and guidance

(c) Living accommodations for youth who cannot adapt to living in their own homes as well as transient youth.

(d) We must offer more assistance to the parents of our youth in helping to bridge the "generation gap" which often exhibits itself in family frustrations and family crisis situations. We feel that more active and concerned work in this area will help to alleviate some of the potential poverty cases in future years.

(4) *The Elderly*: In today's urban society we no longer find the strong large family unit that existed at the turn of the century. Today with people living in small homes or apartments the elderly person often finds themselves without true companionship when they need it most. Due to insufficient fixed income their position in the community has become endangered. They encounter problems with housing, budgeting for vital necessities not take into consideration entertainment or relaxation. The elderly citizen often finds himself alone and unable to make an adequate social adjustment to the new community role he must play. The senior citizens have bonded together to offer themselves some protection from the perils of the age. However, those who are active and over quite frequently refuse to accept their position and drift further away from their peers as their friends die thus finding themselves alone in a society foreign to them.

(5) *Service*: To provide the proper types of service to everyone we must discontinue

categorize these persons and their problems into little compartments, each of which is handled by a variety of agencies or organizations, but rather we must view our society and its problems as a whole. Our present day system allows us to freely shift the responsibilities of these persons from one agency to another, with no one agency willing to assist the family in all respects of their problems. We can no longer afford to tolerate the compounding of problems because we are too busy to provide the assistance needed immediately when the problem originates. We must attempt to locate the source of the problem, and not just patch it up.

If our goals are to be realized we must begin by integrating our services and coordinating our efforts at each of the various levels of government, and between the public and voluntary agencies within the community. A complete and thorough revamping of our outdated assistance service program is needed to meet the requirements of our modern society. We must strive for more comprehensive service with the emphasis on prevention and promote the ideal of a better and just society for all.

(6) *Cost Sharing*: We feel the present system of federal assistance in the areas of Health and Welfare, known as the Cost Sharing Program, does have inequalities for economically deprived areas of this country. The present cost sharing program is not realistic to those areas where unemployment is in excess of the national average. Unemployment can be controlled to some degree by the Federal Government and those areas where unemployment is higher than the national level will use community agencies to a greater degree, thus increasing the provincial cost of these agencies and increasing provincial expenditures. By increasing Provincial expenditures the tax payer feels the burden thus effecting those on limited or fixed incomes.

RECOMMENDATIONS

We realize of course that there are no immediate or spontaneous solutions to the existing problem of poverty. However, we feel that through long range planning and the continuous revision of our present systems we can alleviate many of the pressures caused by our inadequate services. We would suggest that the six major components of the poverty problem as we view it can be attacked in the following manners:-

1) *Attitudes*: The professional's attitude must change if he hopes to solicit acceptable

responses from his clientele. The individual professional must endorse the "battle on poverty" from a community standpoint and not that of an individual agency or person. He must learn to use his imagination in utilizing the community resources.

The negative attitude of the non professional or lay man within the community should be combated by helping him to understand the poverty situation and those who are in it through the use of the news media and public relations, and thus by informing him of the use of his tax dollars and educating him in the long range benefits of such expenditures we might gain his support and assistance.

The recipient, for his part must be made fully aware of his right to assistance, of his ability to rise above his present situation through the services offered by the community resources. It is only through this awareness can be motivated to appreciate his own capabilities thus breaking the endless poverty cycle.

(2) *The Working Poor*: To alleviate the pressures on the working poor and curtail any desire to give up in despair we must initiate immediate changes in the areas of training, income, and housing. By raising the minimum wage standards we place these individuals above the income level of welfare recipients thus creating a work incentive. Through utilization of subsidized social assistance programs we can encourage individuals to strive towards self efficiency, and becoming productive citizens within our community. As stated in the New Brunswick White Paper on Social Development, "There is evidence to indicate that some wage earners and their families would improve their conditions should they leave the work force and become recipients of social assistance." This factor alone should be reason enough for us to re-examine our system of service.

There must be steps taken to improve the crisis caused by lack of proper housing and provisions made to curtail abuse of the situation by landlords who take advantage of the opportunity to request ridiculous rates of rent for slum dwellings.

Our agencies must begin offering extensive service through group and individual counselling, including household budgeting. The basic unit of our society is the family and we must therefore strive to offer intensive counselling in the areas of family planning and assist in overcoming the complex problems which develop within the family setting.

We must strive to provide increased adult education and technical training to assist these individuals in the development of their skills and thus becoming self supporting in obtaining the goods and services needed by them to maintain themselves and their families.

(3) *Youth*: The problems encountered in attempting to deal with today's youth are, to say the least, complex and varied. The difficulty found in attempting to meet their needs is multiplied by the lack of adequate and proper facilities. We find that our educational facilities are inadequate to meet their needs and would strongly recommend a complete revamping of the present educational system with an emphasis placed on counselling and guidance to assist the "drop-out" as well as the participating student.

We must attempt to understand the "problem adolescent" and "hippie groups" and to assist them in finding solutions to their problems whether they be behavioral, emotional, or an inability to cope with the pressures of modern day society. We are obligated to at least try and understand the drug problem, keeping in mind that while a number make use of drugs in an attempt to expand his intellectual and emotional horizons there are also a great number who use them to escape from reality.

The term "generation gap" is more than just words, but rather it is indeed a fact. Increasingly more parents are experiencing this problem and are absolutely unable to cope with the complex problems arising from it. We must offer extensive counselling services to both the youth and parents in an attempt to bridge this gap and maintain a reasonable standard of family living. For those who are unable to adjust to family living we must attempt to provide adequate housing facilities to meet their needs.

Due to lack of employment we are finding an increasing number of transient youths wandering aimlessly throughout the country. We must provide adequate housing for them. We must initiate programs of training for future employment of these individuals as a means to help alleviate potential poverty cases in future years.

The magnitudes of the problems of our youth are demonstrated in the use of drugs, protest, and in the attempts of our young people to alienate themselves from society which seemingly ignores their needs. Unless we act immediately to their obvious request

for help we will find the situation completely beyond our control.

(4) *Old Age*: We are of the opinion that greater consideration should be given to the elderly citizens of our community. Greater emphasis should be placed on the provision of low cost housing for these persons. The old age pension programs should be reviewed and if necessary revised periodically to insure that at least a reasonable existence can be maintained on the amounts allotted. A government sponsored agency should be formed to promote the social aspects of the senior citizen's life and encourage membership to such activities. We should attempt to lessen the stigma of these old age activities and promote the use of voluntary agencies to assist our elderly citizens to continue in a productive role within the community setting.

(5) *Service*: In dealing with the problem of delivery of service we must keep utmost in our thinking that these services are a universal right of every citizen and in no way should take away from his dignity.

We feel that there must be a co-ordination of efforts of all persons in an attempt to eliminate duplication of services among the various community agencies.

We would suggest that the concept of a team approach would be most beneficial to the clientele and enable us to provide a more comprehensive service with an emphasis on the prevention.

We must co-ordinate the services offered by government agencies and community services to provide the maximum service to those in need. To accomplish this we must develop a feeling of partnership and above all respect between the various professions.

(6) *Cost Sharing*: To provide more equality in the cost sharing program we feel that if the government were to introduce a cost sharing program based upon the unemployment averages for specific regions or zones, that all Canadians would benefit, particularly, the more economically deprived areas. We would suggest that in those areas where unemployment is greater than the national average that assistance be allotted in a similar ratio. Likewise in areas where unemployment is less than the national average the assistance should correspond. We realize this suggestion fails to take into consideration those individuals in our Society who are employed, but in need of subsidized assistance. We would suggest that these individuals be included in the fixed differential scale.

SUMMARY

As a group concerned with the betterment and development of the whole community we feel we cannot tolerate the continuance of the present situation. We would ask that the recommendations of the report be given serious consideration by this Committee. We realize that the implementation of these changes and reforms cannot come overnight. However, we feel these changes cannot come too soon; but to ignore them further will only create more serious problems in the future. It is our

desire to see that every individual in our Canadian society is insured of his rights of equality.

Respectfully submitted,

Saint John Community Workers Association

Archibald Smith
Social Services Worker
Department of Health and Welfare
Douglas Pitts
Probation Officer
Department of Justice

APPENDIX "D"

Brief on Poverty
as submitted to
THE SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY
by
THE NEW BRUNSWICK ASSOCIATION
FOR THE ADVANCEMENT OF COLOURED
PEOPLE

Honourable Chairman and Members:

The New Brunswick Association for the Advancement of Coloured People in Saint John, New Brunswick, are concerned with poverty as it effects the Black Minority in this particular area.

For the purpose of this brief we are not considering poverty brought on by a protracted illness, or the death of a supporting spouse, but rather we are concerned with the able-bodied workers who are willing to perform gainful employment at a decent wage and with the same chance of vertical mobility as their White co-workers. We are confronted with the man or woman who is prepaid to perform useful work and can find no work available.

We believe that there are two main factors to the poverty problem—One is economic poverty; the other social poverty, both of which are dehumanizing. Combined at one and the same time they are fatal physically and psychologically. Black people in this area suffer from both.

The economic poverty is based on the function of the education system to train people to become useful members of society. Secondly, the resistance of employers to employ minority persons (in this case Black) capable of performing all types of work. A brief on the educational system is being presented to you by the Council of Saint John Home and School Association. Thirdly economic poverty is portrayed in this area by employers hiring Blacks mostly in semi-skilled or unskilled positions causing the female partner to seek employment to compliment her husbands wages or in some cases, because of the seasonal nature of his job she must support the family for a number of months. In other cases, the Black male is denied a job because of race. Although this is done in the most subtle manner imaginable, it happens. The family then becomes a Matriarchy, not a

Patriarchy, as should be expected when the male is in the home. This in turn causes family disruption which signifies again poverty of the highest level.

This type of poverty manifests itself in many ways. Most would be classed as negative in this society, which uses western concepts for its value measurement, but since they involve non-Whites nobody worries about it.

The most significant signs are alcoholism, drug use (both hard and soft), and violence against each other. This type of poverty was written about in the famous Monahan Report which only made one person rich and he was White. Black people are still poor as a result of this report.

Further, we feel that in the economic portion of this brief we should add the plain and bitter facts about Saint John. A list of Saint John metro-area Board of Trade lists a total of 58 firms employing 100 or more employees. Twenty-four of the listed firms do employ Blacks, 34 have never employed Blacks in any capacity. In a total of 18,960 employees shown in January 1966 for the 58 employers, 8 were Black people.

Looking a bit further again, we find that a total of 264 employers shown in the area of industry, transportation, trade and services in the Municipality of the County of Saint John are employing from 10-100 employees, 36 do employ or have employed Black people; 2 do not employ and have never employed Blacks in any capacity.

We Black people understandably have expressed our plain unvarnished views and deep concern in numerous surveys and interviews about the limited areas of employment all seemingly to no avail. This society which educates its members to the "Protestant Ethic" with the exclusion of other ethnic, notably Afro-Canadians or Afro-Americans, find it hard to give gainful and meaningful employment to the products of this educational system. This exclusion, both socially and economically signifies to us a form of "Cultural Genocide", which is a primary cause of poverty in our society as a whole, because it denies vertical mobility on the basis of individual ability because of race.

Some of the areas in which the absence or underrepresentation of Black people is particularly conspicuous are as follows:

1. Public Transportation (1)
2. Banking, Trust and Finance Companies (0)
3. Real Estate (0)
4. Public Accounting (0)
5. Insurance (0)
6. Newspaper Publishing (0)
7. Telephone Communications (1)
8. Retail Sales (3)
9. Delivery Sales—Dairies, Bakeries (0)
10. Broadcasting—TV and Radio (0)

It is not unreasonable for one to expect that all levels of government should provide leadership in equal opportunity in employment. We have not found this to be the case.

In looking first to the City of Saint John, there appears to be more or less token acceptance of Black people. We find one Black stenographer, 2 policemen in a force of 175 policemen and 3 policewomen, and 4 labourers (plus two part-time) under the umbrella of the Corporation. It is particularly conspicuous that there has never been a Black fireman or salvage corp man in a force of 196 employees.

Provincially, we find an appreciable number of Blacks as male and female attendants at the Provincial Hospital. With the exception of the New Brunswick Liquor Commission (one sales clerk) there are no Black people employed in any other branches or departments of the Provincial Government in Saint John. This includes all the agencies with the exception of the New Brunswick Institute of Technology.

The Federal Government has only given token acceptance to Black people in the Department of Veteran's Affairs, Public Works and Transport. It is incomprehensible and inexcusable that the Manpower and Immigration Office (employs 38) and the Department of National revenue and the Canada Post Office do not employ any Black people on a full-time basis. Only two men are employed by the Department of Transport here in Saint John. It is a sad testimonial for Saint John when we find only 4 Blackwomen in all this city employed as stenographers. Not one other stenographer, secretary or typist, bank clerk or teller, (and they are

available), has been able to find an open door in Saint John's business world. Young Black men and women have been passing through the educational system and moving on to Toronto, Montreal, Boston and New York because of the prevailing negative attitudes about employment in this area as it concerns the Black Minority.

The question or statement we then make, and it is to the point: How can we of the Black Minority expect economic justice when the "elite" of this City practise social injustice; i.e., golf clubs, curling clubs, various lodges such as the Elk, R.A.O.B., Masonic Order, Shriners, etc. Social poverty or social and cultural deprivation, call it what you may, it is there. Even our government pays lip service to this in holding social functions at clubs or lodges which exclude Black people everyday, either blatantly or subtly; i.e., "gentlemen's agreement".

We Black people, in our quest for economic and social justice in Saint John are climbing a molasses mountain dressed in snow shoes while Whites are riding the ski lift to the top. But we are on the march demanding a share in all that this country and city has to offer to its citizens. A social and economic system that denies us less Can, Must and Is to be challenged.

Poverty in itself can only be eliminated to a degree, by a different method of distribution. At the present time, the masses, unaware of it that they maybe, produce a high standard of living for the "elite", who are in essence the ruling class of our society. If this is so, we can envisage the resistance by this minority group that the "status quo" remain. Therefore co-operation will be needed in order that there be a more equitable distribution of goods produced by one society. We ask the Commission if they have any views or desires to change this system?

Thank You.

Joseph S. Drummond
Executive Advisor & Past President
N.B.A.A.C.P.

Vice-Chairman
National Black Coalition of Canada
Chairman of Welfare Committee
N.B.A.A.C.P.

5 Phillips Court
Saint John, N.B.

APPENDIX "E"

BRIEF
to
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
on
POVERTY
Submitted
by

FAMILY SERVICES, SAINT JOHN, INC.
11 Canterbury Street, Saint John, N.B.
August 4, 1970.

SUMMARY OF RECOMMENDATIONS

The Family Services, Saint John, Inc. recommends that:

1. A system of legal aid should be available to the poor and the establishment of Family Courts should be encouraged.

2. Family planning clinics should become a recognized part of the public health programme.

3. Some plan for assistance should be available to home owners for necessary repairs.

4. Government aid should be made available towards the establishment and support of Day Care facilities for children.

5. Manpower training and retraining programmes should be increased.

6. Substantial increases should be made in Family and Youth Allowances.

7. Special services for the aged, such as meals-on-wheels, homemaker service and day centres should be subsidized by the government.

8. Supplementary assistance should be provided for the working poor.

9. Minimum wages should be reviewed and revised upward.

10. Benefits to welfare recipients should be increased and given according to size of family rather than according to set maximums.

11. Medicines and drugs prescribed by doctors should be provided free.

12. Welfare recipients should be allowed more part-time earnings.

13. Benefits should be continued for a period when a welfare recipient secures regular employment.

14. Programmes for enriching the lives of the children of the poor and fostering the

continuance of their education, should be developed and supported.

15. Efforts should be made to encourage more communication and changed attitudes

(a) between the poor and government

(b) government and the general public

(c) education of the middle class to the situation of the poor

d) changes should be made to reduce the present costly investigation procedure to effect better communication, attitudes and service

16. Government aid should be available for the appointment of community development workers in areas where there is a concentration of the poor.

17. Correlation should be made of the findings coming out of the White Papers on Taxation and on Social Welfare with those of the Senate Committee on Poverty.

Submission to the Special
Senate Committee on Poverty

by

Family Services, Saint John, Inc.

The Family Services, Saint John, Inc., is a private, non-sectarian family service agency, established in 1967 by the amalgamation of the Catholic Welfare Bureau and the Family Service Association. Its purpose is to carry out appropriate services which will contribute to the preservation and strengthening of family life; services, wherever possible, which are of a preventive nature.

The Poor—Deprivation and Discrimination

From our experience with families we know that poverty of a prolonged duration has very adverse effects on family life. While no one can minimize the impact of economic deprivation resulting from the inability to provide for basic needs, we wish to speak about cultural deprivation and some of the psychological effects of poverty. For the poor going to a concert or movie, being able to let a child take guitar lessons, subscribing to a newspaper or magazine, buying a scout uniform or hockey equipment, or just letting a child have a friend in for supper, presents a dilemma. Frequently such desires have to be denied or some basic need sacrificed to meet

them. Cultural deprivation has a greater impact upon the individual's ability to improve his circumstances and to compete successfully than almost anything else.

The poor, and particularly the welfare recipients, tend to be lumped together in a group, labelled, viewed with mistrust and alienated. This alienation is compounded by the housing shortage and high rents which result in concentration of poor people in certain areas of the community and in public housing projects. This situation promotes a climate of poverty where privacy, good standards and human dignity are difficult to maintain and where poverty produces more poverty.

Today's society has put such a premium on materialistic values that human values seem of secondary importance. The gulf that exists between the haves and have-nots is constantly brought home to the poor who are daily confronted by advertising over T.V. and radio and by the seductive pressures of finance companies and business firms. Parents are subject to further pressures from the pleas of their children. Social workers are familiar with the predicaments of families who cannot resist and who get caught up in the difficulties of unwise installment buying or the repayment of loans.

Certain inequities also contribute to the poor's sense of alienation. They are the ones who are hardest hit by the present housing situation. The provision for drugs and prescribed medicines presents serious problems for welfare recipients and, except for limited help through hospital clinics, those on low income have no assistance at all.

Services and Assistance to Alleviate the Position of the Poor:

In this and most other provinces, there is no organized system of legal aid and consequently it is very difficult to secure legal counsel in civil and domestic matters. This need is particularly urgent, as there is great ignorance on the part of the poor as to their legal rights and of the remedies and action available to them. Family courts, which represent a most important resource for this group in particular, are still lacking in the great majority of cities in this country. Until governments take steps to provide this kind of protection for the poor, their rights as citizens are being denied.

There is a great need for family planning and we believe clinics for this purpose should

be part of the public health programme. At present few clinics have been established and little public education undertaken. Facilities should be developed to give all couples freedom of choice in the number and spacing of their children.

One need which is often overlooked is a plan for making available some assistance for necessary repairs to the poor who own their own homes. Neglect of repairs can result in serious deterioration of the property and may eventually necessitate the family moving out against their wishes, with a subsequent higher expenditure for rent.

Day care facilities should be available for the care of the children of working mothers and government must subsidize such enterprises. We have no public day care centres in this community and mothers who cannot afford to use private day nurseries often have to rely on make-shift arrangements they know are not satisfactory and which may break down unexpectedly. Adequate day care resources are a great aid to families, particularly one-parent families who wish to achieve independence.

Manpower training and retraining courses should be increased and efforts should be made to lower the academic qualifications for some of the courses.

As an immediate measure to alleviate the economic position of the poor we would recommend the upward revision of Family and Youth Allowances.

Programmes for the aged, such as meals-on-wheels, homemaker service, day centres, etc., are needed and would make life more enjoyable and secure for our older citizens. Like day care for children, these services could be provided under private auspices, if government grants and/or subsidies were available.

We in the Family Services, like many other voluntary agencies are concerned that there seems to be a retrenchment on the part of governments with regard to grants and other aid at a time when the partnership between government and private agencies is being stressed.

The Working Poor:

The Family Services has a special interest in the working poor who constitute almost 60 per cent of those we serve. The heads of these families are unable to earn an income adequate to the basic needs of their families because of low education and lack of any

skill, or because of the size of family or both. Frequently their income is less than welfare benefits and they have no provision for medical care or for any contingency.

They strive at great odds to maintain their dignity and independence rather than accept "welfare" because of the stigma that the public has attached to those on public aid. Most of the working poor only manage to exist by going into debt and the struggle to keep up their payments to their creditors adds to their general sense of insecurity and of being trapped permanently.

We believe that immediate steps should be taken to provide for supplementary assistance, and that minimum wages should be reviewed and revised upward.

Welfare Recipients:

Higher benefits must be paid to welfare recipients as present assistance levels, particularly for food, are inadequate. Maximums placed either on the total benefits a family may receive, or on such items as clothing, personal needs and household supplies, regardless of the size of family, discriminates against large families. Medicine and drugs prescribed by doctors should be provided free.

Present regulations must be changed to provide the incentive to work and to allow recipients to earn more from part-time employment. The poor need money for self-improvement and for emergencies. Recognition should also be given to the special needs of children, taking into consideration their age, the season of the year and their social development.

When a welfare recipient does secure regular employment, benefits should continue for a period, possibly a month, to enable him to make some adjustment of his financial obligations such as his rent or the claims of his creditors.

The Children of the Poor:

The worst effects of poverty, particularly prolonged poverty, are on children. Poor housing and over-crowding does not allow for privacy, or a place for one's own belongings and private possessions. There is no place to do homework undisturbed. Children are frequently handicapped or prevented from taking part in activities enjoyed by those who are more fortunate. The need of adolescents to be able to be one with their peer group in such important matters as dress or participation in their activities must often be denied.

Parents harrassed with worries and problems and aware of their inability to meet their children's needs, tend to avoid real communication with them since they see little hope of providing ameliorating influences in the lives of their children.

The Family Services' Groups for Children:

The Family Services believes that much effort should be made to help the children of the poor to prevent the cycle of poverty and to give them a better start in life than their parents had. We recognize the importance of education for these children and the provision of some enriching influences which their parents cannot provide. We have begun experimenting with various approaches to help these children.

For some years now our volunteers have conducted a headstart kindergarten and a second one is planned for the fall. This project has been helpful in preparing disadvantaged children for their adjustment to school life.

A group of girls of average intelligence and from 10 to 13 years of age was formed with the hope of helping them to remain in school, by introducing them to persons in various occupations which were within their scope, such as nurses, stenographers, hairdressers, lab technicians, etc. The "models" met with the girls, told them about their work, the pay and working conditions, what education and preparation were required and how they lived and so on. The group has become a club with officers who carry out their responsibilities. They have gone to plays, concerts and the opera and they have been introduced to the public library. The club meets in the home of the leader and have learned how to make inexpensive decorations and to serve lunch attractively and recently entertained their mothers at tea.

This experience has introduced them to a different kind of family living in a comfortable middle class home where life is more ordered and where they have had some relationship with the other members of the family.

Two groups of boys from 6 to 13, mostly boys without a father in the home, have been formed to provide them with a male figure with whom they can identify and to help develop constructive interests. There are outings and hikes and other activities. These youngsters are ones who are not yet ready to participate in the regular community organized groups.

In keeping with our concern to see that children get as much education as possible, we recognized the need for special help for children who are experiencing difficulties with certain subjects at school. We know that unless they get special assistance at this point, either at school or through tutorial service, the child is a potential drop-out. As we have pointed out before, there are children who need a place to do their homework and someone to supervise and assist and encourage them. Some programme to provide this type of service is required.

Need for More Communication and Changed Attitudes:

More communication between the poor, and particular welfare recipients and the government, is needed, as well as between the government and the public. This is beginning to come about as welfare recipients are organizing and as they are being invited to press their views about their needs and about the welfare system, through their involvement in welfare conferences and meetings. They should be represented on Welfare Appeals and Advisory Boards where their participation would contribute to needed social change. Such involvement will help to reduce their feelings of being powerless to do anything about their situation and can lead to their participation in community affairs.

Government has an obligation to communicate with recipients of welfare assistance about welfare programmes, the benefits available, the conditions for eligibility and of their right of appeal, and to do so in simple, understandable language. This should be done both through the printed form and verbally.

A needed beginning is also being made to facilitate communication between government and the general public through the white paper procedure. The public is entitled to more and regular information from the government, statistics, a breakdown of categories of recipients and expenditures, needs and problems. This would establish the fact that the vast majority receiving assistance cannot work because of age, disability, illness, death or desertion of the breadwinner or because of child care responsibilities. This would dispel many common misconceptions.

It is difficult for the middle class to have a real conception of poverty. They hear of welfare abuses, of able-bodied men who are content to sit back and accept welfare, of unwisely expenditure of benefits. They

know little of the indignities and stigma of being on welfare and of the feeling of being trapped and having little or no hope for the future.

While they are more sympathetic to the working poor, they tend to be critical of signs of comfort and amenities in the homes of the poor and put great stress on "worthiness". They have little knowledge of the poor who have strengths and capacities that have enabled them to face odds which would have crushed most people, manage their small incomes with great skill and ingenuity and give their children hope for the future.

Some educational programme is needed to help the middle class understand what poverty means and how it affects people. It is the majority that set limits and until the people of Canada care enough about eradicating poverty little will be done to efface it.

Closely related to the question of both attitudes and communication is the present investigation procedure for eligibility which is demeaning to the recipients. This procedure is costly and consumes the greater part of the time of the welfare personnel which could better be used for meaningful communication and services for clients. Studies have shown that only a small percentage of recipients falsify information. Regular self-declaration procedures have worked satisfactorily in other programmes such as D.V.A. This latter programme also affords a good example of communication with and attitudes towards clients.

Need for Community Development Workers:

The Family Services urges that government funds be made available for the appointment of community development workers in areas where there is a concentration of poor people to help them organize needed activities and projects.

We have had some successful experience in the Crescent Valley housing project during the past year during which we made a worker available and lent support and resource people to the residents. A teaching homemaker service, making use of resident women on welfare, had already been established by the local Housing Authority and this had given impetus to the formation of a head start kindergarten, and a number of community services such as tutoring for children and a grooming course for girls. Since the community worker has been working in the area, there has been a surge of activities, resulting in the securing of an additional

playground, weekend camping for children, a community news bulletin, a sewing class, a drama group and the formation of a tenants association. The loan of a building for a community centre has been made by the United Church. Through the full cooperation of the Recreation Department and the appointment of a supervisor for the area, recreational activities have been developed, a winter carnival held, a mini park prepared by the children of the area and drop-in centres established for youth and for adults. All this has led to a feeling of community and a beginning sense of pride on the part of residents of the Valley.

Other communities are ready to organize but need a resource person with know-how

and a knowledge of community resources and where to turn for special help.

Conclusion:

The Family Services wishes to commend the Senate Committee on Poverty for the valiant undertaking you have carried out so thoroughly and well. We are sure your findings regarding poverty in this community will be of the greatest value and your recommendations will indicate many needed major changes. In the light of the White Papers on Taxation and on Social Welfare, which are an essentially part of the approach to poverty, it is hoped that there will be a correlation of the findings of these committees with your own.

APPENDIX "F"

BRIEF

to the

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON
POVERTYNew Brunswick Forest Extension Service,
Fredericton, N.B..

Introduction

The importance of small woodlots to the economy of New Brunswick has prompted the Forest Extension Service to prepare a brief dealing only with this particular aspect of the problem. The approach taken is entirely local and no attempt has been made to include other factors contributing to poverty either provincially or on a country-wide basis. The submission was prepared without collaboration with other departments of the provincial government.

An attempt has been made to deal with generalities rather than specifics. For this reason statistical data were avoided for the most part as well as details which are available in published reports dealing with New Brunswick forests. It is our conviction that the problems stated herein are very real and contribute in no small measure to the level of poverty which exists in New Brunswick today. It is not our intention to criticize what has taken place in the past or conditions which exist at the present time. The solutions suggested herein have been formulated with the hope that a new and more prosperous chapter will be written for the small woodlot owner. The personnel of the Forest Extension Service are in constant contact with small woodlot owners throughout the Province. Consequently, they are in a position to assess both the incomes and standards of living of the small proprietors of forest land.

The prime concern of the Forest Extension Service relates to assisting the small woodlot owners in the proper management and development of their property. This group owns some 4,500,000 acres of forest land in the province and this constitutes approximately twenty-nine per cent of the total forested area of the province. The number of individual owners is in the vicinity of 30,000 who, together with their families, represent an appreciable proportion of the province's population.

It is a well known and accepted fact that the economy of the Province of New Brunswick is dependent to a very large degree on the wise use of its forests. Of all the provinces of Canada, New Brunswick has the greatest proportion of forest land in relation to its total area.

Early in its history New Brunswick was settled under a system of government land grants. Each grantee was given approximately one hundred acres of land from which he was expected to eke out a living. He was able to do this by the combined operation of a farm and a woodlot. The products of the woodlot were sold in the early days to the lumber barons and in more recent times to the pulp and paper companies. Due to a superfluity of forest land under their control these buyers were able to purchase primary forest products from the woodlot owners at starvation prices. In effect a sort of feudal system in this regard has prevailed in New Brunswick, even to the present day. It is this situation which contributes in no small measure to the poverty of our province.

The aforementioned twenty-nine per cent of forest land which consists of small woodlots comprises both farm woodlots and also lots which were formerly farms but which are no longer under cultivation. These two types of small woodlot ownership constitute two separate and distinct problems related to the economic development of the province.

In the first instance the small woodlot is part of the overall farm operation. As such it represents a portion of what, in most cases, is an uneconomic unit. The problem of the owner making a living is compounded by the fact that the combined revenue derived from the operation of both the farm and the woodlot is insufficient to provide a decent standard of living.

The second case involves woodlots which were formerly part of the farm and are no longer operated in conjunction with an agricultural enterprise. These presently are under various types of ownership which unfortunately includes individuals who are making no use whatsoever of the forest land. At the other extreme are owners who sell their cutting privileges to opportunists who have no regard for the future of the forest. Such sales are frequently made at depressed prices.

Another class of ownership involves the acquisition of small woodlots by large forest industries. In most instances these enterprises have extensive holdings of Crown Land Licenses and in many cases they own large areas of freehold forest land. The small woodlots are bought to augment their reserve of standing timber or to provide a measure of control on the amount of money which will have to be paid for purchased wood fibre. In their case the influence is detrimental to the economy of the province.

Changes in the ownership of farm woodlots are chronicled in "Agricultural Statistics 1969", published by the New Brunswick Department of Agriculture and Rural Development. Table No. 36 lists the number of census farms and, amongst other things, the area of woodland connected with the census farms. In 1931 there were 34,025 census farms containing 2,432,570 acres of woodland. By 1966 the corresponding figures were 8,706 census farms and 973,888 acres of woodland. In that period some 1,458,682 acres were reclassified from farm woodlots to small woodlots. A substantial portion of this last figure constitutes some of the ownership listed in the previous paragraphs.

As mentioned earlier in this brief the small woodlots of the province comprise some 4,500,000 acres. With an assumed value of \$30.00 an acre they represent a capital amount of \$135,000,000. It is natural to expect that such an amount of principal should provide a very substantial income. Unfortunately, such is not the case due to the low prices which are paid for pulpwood. In most instances these prices are totally used to pay the costs of landing the wood at delivery points. Consequently, there is nothing remaining to pay a normal return on the investment. In other words there is an asset in New Brunswick valued at \$135,000,000 which is producing no returns. Such a situation must be a major factor in contributing towards poverty in our province.

It is a fact that some sections of the province are more adversely affected than others. This is due principally to their geographical location with regard to existing mills but such is not always the case. The Forest Extension Service is doing excellent work in assisting woodlot owners in the management of their property. However, the situation with regard to pulpwood marketing is beyond its field of endeavour. It can do nothing to influence the prices paid for primary forest products.

It has been estimated that, in 1968, the net annual returns in the form of wages from the average 112 acre woodlot were \$162.00. This dollar figure is based on the owner cutting and selling spruce and fir pulpwood at a delivered roadside price of \$16.00 per round cord. The amount of wood cut was computed from figures compiled by the New Brunswick Department of Natural Resources in co-operation with the Federal Forestry Service and the Dominion Bureau of Statistics. The quantity of wood cut was necessarily limited by both demand and price. These two factors are, of course, a function of marketing which is under the direct control of the pulp and paper companies.

If market conditions had been such that the owner of an average woodlot could have sold all of the wood that the ground was capable of producing in 1968 his net income would have been \$437.40. While this represents a substantial increase over the \$162.00 figure it nevertheless falls far short of providing an adequate income. As a matter of interest if the owner had also received a price increase of \$2.00 per cord his net income would have been \$519.40. The comparisons serve to illustrate the appreciable bearing which both quantity and price have on the net return from a farm woodlot.

The content of the foregoing shows clearly (1) the impracticability of an individual attempting to derive an appreciable portion of his living costs from a farm woodlot under present circumstances and, (2) the effect of small woodlot operation on the economy of the province. Unfortunately it has been a major factor in contributing to poverty.

Despite the work of the New Brunswick Forest Development Commission, the Royal Commission on Primary Forest Products and the Atlantic Development Board the situation remains the same and there is no improvement in the status of the small woodlot owner. In fact, if the proposed Capital Gains Tax is instituted it can only result in the deterioration of the position of the proprietor of a small woodlot.

Problems

The principal problems confronting the small woodlot owner appear to be as follows:

1. The inadequate control of the marketing of primary forest products. This applies to both quantity and price as well as the diversification of products.
2. Lack of the development of more sophisticated machinery and equipment.

to bring about cost reductions in wood harvesting operations.

3. Insufficient areas of forest land under his control to enable him to obtain and maintain a decent standard of living.

4. No organized custom cutting crews who would be available to harvest wood for owners who have not the necessary facilities.

5. The absence of trade school courses to train woods workers in the use and application of mechanized equipment and proper harvesting techniques.

6. The need for increased assistance in the development and improvement of forest land under his control.

Suggested Solutions

In suggesting solutions for the six problems stated above cognizance is taken of the fact that they will not be solved overnight by some ready-made formulae. The unsatisfactory situation of the small woodlot owners has prevailed since the days of early settlement in the province. In fact, restrictions on the small woodlot owner date back to the "Broad Arrow" policy of 1729 when the large white pine trees were reserved for the use of His Majesty's navy. In the intervening years the proprietors of small woodlots have been exploited first by the lumber industry and in more recent times by the pulp and paper companies. Some owners have given up trying to wrest a living from their small forest holdings and have sold out. Others retain ownership of the land but earn their livelihood by some other means. Those who continue to operate their woodlots are, for the most part, independent individualists. Their thinking is not geared either to government controls or forest co-operatives. They are not organized and consequently cannot speak with one voice. If they are to continue in their role of proprietors of small woodlots they must receive assistance. Any aid given to them will be well justified since, in the very near future, New Brunswick will have need of all its forest resources, small woodlots present twenty-nine per cent of the forested area of the Province.

The following suggested solutions are presented in summary form only. Their enlargement and development are not appropriate in this submission but can be provided as required.

It is imperative that a government sponsored system of marketing controls for pri-

mary forest products be instituted without delay. It should have incorporated in it provisions ensuring maximum sustained growth on the small forest properties.

2. Much has been accomplished by both the Forest Industries and the machinery manufacturers in the development and production of sophisticated wood harvesting equipment to up date operating methods. However, very little has been done in this regard to make available similar equipment which can be adapted to the requirements of the small operator. Consequently, it is suggested that there should be an expansion of effort in the development of machinery for the small operator so that he can produce wood in competition with the large companies.

3. Provision already exists in New Brunswick to assist the small woodlot proprietor to increase his holdings in order to make a living from his woods operations. This plan is very much in the embryo stage and appropriate arrangements should be made for its further development expansion. The successful consolidation of farm woodlots will constitute a big step in contributing to the lessening of poverty in New Brunswick.

4. A natural outgrowth of forest land consolidation is the custom cutting of woodlots. In many instances their owners are unable, for one reason or another, to do the work themselves. A relatively large percentage of small woodlots are in the hands of absentee owners. Their lands could be managed to advantage if the harvesting operations were performed by capable custom cutting crews. Such crews could be organized by the consolidated woodlot owner who would use them on his own operations as well as to harvest wood for others.

5. It is envisaged that the personnel in these custom cutting crews would be recruited from men who had received special training at a trade school. It seems paradoxical that, in a province whose economy is oriented to the forests, there are no facilities for the training of forest workers. Our trade schools provide courses for all sorts of trades except the one which should be of first importance to the province. By contrast the country of Sweden has recently extended its training of woods workers from a one year to a two year course. It is also endeavouring to raise the status of the woods worker to that of the other trades. A similar movement is long overdue in this province. It is our conviction that it would do much to raise many of our woods workers above the poverty level.

6. The Forest Extension Service is doing excellent work up to the limitation of its finances. In co-operation with Agriculture Representatives and Natural Resources personnel it is able to provide much appreciated assistance to a number of woodlot owners. However, with greater emphasis and importance being placed on the role of the small woodlot proprietors the work of the Forest Extension Service will be substantially increased. Consequently, provision will have

to be made to permit the necessary expansion of services.

The Forest Extension Service is appreciative of the opportunity of presenting its views to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty. We trust that some of the thoughts expressed herein will contribute to the alleviation of poverty in New Brunswick and possibly in other parts of our country. We wish the members of the Committee and associated personnel every success in the worthwhile assignment they have undertaken.

APPENDIX "G"

BIOGRAPHY

William E. Hart,
President

New Brunswick Federation of Woodlot
Owners

I should introduce myself to the Members of the Senate Committee. I am known to Senators F. A. McGrand and Muriel Ferguson, both from New Brunswick, and to Senator Chesley Carter, my Roommate at King's College, Halifax, but not to the other fifteen Members of the Committee on Poverty. I am a Priest of the Anglican Church of Canada. My Ministry has been served in rural New Brunswick, first for three and a half years at Doaktown on the Miramichi in the central part of the Province, and since January, 1937, as Rector of the Parishes of Norton and Springfield in King's County in Southern New Brunswick. It is my strong conviction that the Church, and I as an official of the Church, should have an active concern for the welfare of the people. This concern should include the economic sphere, that the people should have a good income so that they can live above the poverty level.

RURAL POVERTY AND FOREST
UNDERDEVELOPMENT

in

NEW BRUNSWICK

(Prepared for the Special Senate Committee
on Poverty)

According to a recent revelation, about 100,000 people in our small Province, that is, almost one tenth of our population were receiving Welfare Assistance and others are living off Unemployment Insurance.

That there is poverty in rural New Brunswick no one will deny. That this poverty can be alleviated by the full development of our forest resources will be the main argument of this brief.

God has given us, who live in the Province of New Brunswick, a valuable renewable natural resource in our forests. Our Province is better suited to the growing of trees than any other crop. The world demand for forest products is increasing at an amazing rate (if the present trend continues, the world demand by the year 2000 will be about four

times the present world demand). We are located near the large market in the north-eastern part of the United States and on the Atlantic Seaboard we are across the Ocean from another large market in Western Europe.

When the white man first came to our Province, it was practically 100 per cent forest covered. It is still 85 per cent forest covered. Our economy is to a great extent based on our forests. I have been advocating that we should proclaim to all of Canada that New Brunswick is the Forest Province but no one seems interested.

Anyone familiar with rural New Brunswick will agree with these statements, that nearly every farm has its wood lot, that often the acreage in the woodlot exceeds that of the cleared land, that throughout this Province pulp wood brings into farm homes more income than any other product. In this Province, many men have left farming, and not a few are engaged in the year round cutting of pulp wood. I do not know anything that would so lift our rural economy as to raise the price of pulpwood to a fair and adequate level, with the benefit being shared between the woodlot owners, the pulp wood cutters and the truckdrivers who transport it to the mills.

That which led me to take up the woodlot owners' cause was the fact that my two older sons who were then lumbering on their own, received the starvation price of \$15.00 per cord of unpeeled wood delivered to the mill. Fortunately for them, their operation was within twenty miles of the mill.

I have been active in the formation of the Southern New Brunswick Woodlot Owners Association organized in February 1962, and the New Brunswick Federation of Woodlot Owners organized in September 1965, and composed of seven regional associations one of which seems to have ceased to function.

I think that, perhaps, we have been making some progress. The Provincial Government has given a grant of \$15,000 to the Southern New Brunswick Woodlot Owners Association and with this we employ the part time services of a professional forester. At the request of the provincial federation to the Cabinet, a special committee has been set up to try to work out a fair and orderly system for the

marketing of the products of the wood lot and this committee has made its report. It is being urgently brought to the attention of the Provincial Government that wood lot owners have not been getting a fair deal.

In the course of my activities on behalf of the Woodlot Owners, I have been in correspondence with Senator F. A. McGrand. He suggested to me that if I had a legitimate beef with solid recommendations that I present a brief to the Senate Committee on Poverty. As I thought about this, I began to realize more and more that to write this brief was the logical and necessary thing for me to do.

First, I would like to direct our attention to the following sentence in the 1964 Royal Commission Report on Primary Forest Products in New Brunswick (Professor L. R. Seheult). "However if the woodlot is not improved, it will remain a dedication to poverty".

I ask that the section under the title "Increasing the Productivity of Small Holdings" on pages 75 to 78 of this report including recommendation 11 be circulated as supporting material to my brief and I suggest that it be read at this point before continuing with the balance of my brief. There is other material in this 1964 Royal Commission Report that is of value to those who would decrease rural poverty in New Brunswick through increasing the total value of our forest industry by an overall plan involving all sectors.

On the small holdings in this Province the average volume of cubic feet of wood per acre, is 874, that is about ten cords. They are heavily overcut. On the other hand, the average volume on the large holdings and crown lands is about half as much again 1368 and 1340 cubic feet. "of 6.95 million acres of productive crown forest land in New Brunswick, pulp and paper companies lease 5.7 million acres, 82 per cent. Of a reported annual cut of 2.16 million cunits, these same companies in 1965 cut an estimated 1.07 million cunits, about 50 per cent of the allowable cut". What an appalling waste!

The last quotation is from a report recently sent me by R. E. G. Fairweather, M.P. for Fundy Royal, "Forestry in the Atlantic Provinces" the first report of a series initiated by the Atlantic Development Board to examine important aspects of the economy of the Atlantic Region. This forestry report seems to me to be a true, factual, independent, and

unbiased statement of the situation as it exists.

For the sake of brevity, I intend to base the balance of this brief largely on the following two paragraphs from this report. Nova Scotia and New Brunswick are here considered together. (From page 1.68)

"The basic problem is well known. The size and condition of most woodlots and their shifting ownership are such that, in general, they do not constitute economic units; as a result, the woodlots and their owners tend to be locked into reciprocal states of mismanagement and poverty. In general they have fallen outside the orbit of progress and have little force in the market place. In contrast, the woodlot owners in Québec, with supporting legislation have been able to secure much higher prices for their wood—about 25 to 35 per cent higher than the prices prevailing prior to the establishment of marketing associations. (Pulpwood Producers Marketing Associations have been established under the Québec Agricultural Marketing Act, C.34 Statutes of Québec 1963).

"There are forest extension services in both New Brunswick and Nova Scotia, but they have not been supported adequately and probably cannot cope with such a deep-seated problem. This view is reinforced by the fact that there is no adequate or convincing policy in either province which defines the desirable objectives and means of obtaining them. The result is a multiplicity of forces acting on the situation, some federal, some provincial, some of them effective. As a result progress is slow, perhaps too slow for the forces which are overtaking uneconomic woodlots: The inability to achieve adequate gains in productivity to keep competitive and to prevent the transfer of ownership to large corporations."

That the woodlots and their owners in our province tend to be locked into reciprocal states of mismanagement and poverty is a harsh true statement. The objective of good forest management is to produce on a given lot of land in a given time as large a volume as possible of high quality wood. This takes desire, knowledge, time and money. But if a man is hard pressed to make a day by day livelihood from his impoverished woodlot while he may have desire and the knowledge he does not have the time or the money to expend on forest management for increased returns from his woodlot to be realized many years later. Another cause of poverty for the woodlot operator is the low price he receives

for his pulp wood delivered to the mill. The woodlot operators all together, may supply a large part of the wood going to any mill, yet he has no say in the price he is to receive, in the words of the report "he has little force in the market place."

He is weak because he is unorganized. At the McMillan Rothsay Newsprint Mill in East Saint John, the minimum wage in the mill is \$2.68 per hour and there are various fringe benefits and the assurance of year round employment. This mill is unionized and if it is felt that one member of the union is not getting a fair deal according to the terms of the contract all the members refuse to work until the dispute is settled. This company also operates a saw mill at Penobsquis about fifty miles from Saint John. This mill has no union and the wage for many of the workmen is 1.40 per hour. If one man does not want to work for this wage, another man will take the job. Likewise, with the men who supply pulpwood to the mill, if he does not want to take the price the mill offers, he does not sell to that mill. In union, and in unions, there is strength. Free enterprise works best when the two parties in any transaction are of somewhat equal strength; if one is much stronger than the other the probability is that the weaker will be exploited.

I am a firm believer in a fair price, that is a price sufficient for the man who has something to sell to receive a fair remuneration for his investment and his labor. For pulp the price for the wood itself should not be less than \$5.00 a cord and I have it from an experienced woodman that to hire the workman, to cut a cord, forward it to a truck yard, truck it to a mill (this cost varies with distance) and to pay unemployment insurance and workmen's compensation comes to \$18 a cord. This adds up to \$24.00 for a cord of peeled wood delivered to the mill. The price being paid at one Saint John mill is \$21 and at the other \$20.50. The highest price being paid in this province is \$22.50 at the mill at Edmundston. The same company at its Newcastle Mill was paying \$20.00. The difference of \$2.50 a cord is not because the wood delivered to the Edmundston mill is that much better but that the woodlot owners there have a stronger bargaining through their Madawaska Forest Products Marketing Board.

I have it on good authority that the average price paid to woodlot owners in the Province of Quebec is \$27.60 which is \$5.10 above the highest price in our province, and over \$7

higher than our average price. The Report of the Atlantic Development Board as quoted earlier attributes the higher prices in Quebec to recent legislation. Quoting this again "In contrast (to the poverty stricken state of woodlot owners in New Brunswick and Nova Scotia) the woodlot owners in Quebec with supporting legislation, the Quebec Agricultural Marketing Act, have been able to secure much higher prices for their wood—about 25 to 35 per cent higher than the prices prevailing prior to the establishment of marketing boards."

I have this Quebec Agricultural Marketing Act before me and will briefly sum up its main provisions. Farm products includes forest products. Under this act an organization to supervise, coordinate and improve the marketing of farm products is established under the name of Quebec Agricultural Marketing Board. It shall consist of not more than seven members all appointed by the Lieutenant-Governor in Council. The general functions of the Board include (a) to assist in coordinating the various operations involved in the marketing of farm products in a manner as advantageous as possible to the producers, but with due regard for the legitimate interests of the consumers. Ten or more interested producers may apply to the Board for the approval of a joint plan for the marketing in the Province of a farm product derived from a designated area or intended for a specific purpose or a particular purchaser. When the draft of the joint plan has been approved by two thirds of the voters after at least one half of the interested producers have voted, the Board shall cause to be published in the Quebec Official Gazette every plan so approved. Thereafter, every person engaged in the marketing of such product shall then be bound to negotiate with the producers' board for the fixing of a selling price or a minimum selling price for such product and for the carrying out of any other conditions or provisions of such plan. Failing agreement between producers and purchasers, the Board at the request of one of the parties shall appoint a conciliator who shall confer with each of the parties with a view to reaching an agreement. The conciliator shall report to the Board within fourteen days. If the report establishes that agreement has not been possible the Board shall order the dispute to be arbitrated. Arbitration decisions shall be final and obligatory.

I have no first hand knowledge of how all this works out in the Province of Quebec. I have heard it severely criticized. According to the report of the Atlantic Development which I have been quoting it is this legislation which makes for the sharp contrast between the woodlot owners in Quebec and their counterparts in New Brunswick and Nova Scotia.

Quebec also has the controversial Bill 41, an Act respecting the price of pulpwood sold by farmers and settlers. The Minister of Lands and Forests may order that a study be made by an official appointed by him, on the conditions of sale of pulpwood cut by farmers and settlers on wooded lands which they are exploiting.

The Lieutenant-Governor in Council may make regulations, (a) to govern the purchase by any trader of pulpwood cut by farmers or settlers or on their land; (b) to fix the kinds and quantities of such pulpwood that a trader shall purchase within a stated period, having regard to the supplies required for the normal operation of his business during such period; (c) to determine the methods of measuring such pulpwood, and to ensure that they are carried out; (d) to fix the price that a trader who purchases such pulpwood shall pay.

In both acts provision is made for provincial authorities to have legal access to all books and records.

It seems to me that in Quebec the government is much more on the side of the woodlot owners than in our province, that thereby the price they receive for the pulpwood is consequently higher than in our province. I do not know the cost to the companies of wood from land under their own control (these figures are hard to come by) but if there is too great a disparity between the cost to the companies of wood bought from woodlot owners and wood from their own holdings or crown land then the small, poor, weak, unorganized woodlot owners are being exploited. It seems to me that in Quebec the provincial government has intervened on behalf of the people whom they were elected to serve.

There is a way in which pulp and paper companies on the one hand, and woodlot owners on the other, can cooperate to their mutual advantage. Green wood with the sap still in it is of much more value to the pulp and paper industry than dried out old wood. The green wood will turn out more of a better product at a smaller cost. It is much to the advantage of the mills to have as much as

possible an even year round flow of green wood delivered to the mills as required. Woodlot owner associations could help regulate this even flow. Pulpwood is cut and left piled for perhaps two years or even more and with the present high rate of interest this must add considerably to its cost. With better organization and under the conditions prevalent in southern New Brunswick perhaps 75 per cent of the wood could go through the mills as sap-filled wood; this would be a good goal to aim at. Green wood is much heavier than dry wood and the costs of trucking it are higher. Under a system providing for an even year round delivery of green wood the companies should and could (and would?) pay a considerably higher price per cord than they are now paying.

The discussion has been largely centered on pulpwood. Spruce and fir as pulpwood is by far our largest market for forest products. But it is not the only market and we should reach out for markets that will utilize every species of tree growing in our forests, spruce, fir, pine, hemlock, cedar, tamarack, maple, birch, white and yellow birch, and poplar, to name the principal species.

I ask you to turn with me to a consideration of the second paragraph of the Atlantic Development Board Report under review. That "there is no adequate and convincing policy in either province (N.B. and N.S. which defines the desirable objectives and means of obtaining them" is a strong bias condemning the lack of leadership in this matter of the governments of these two provinces. I put it up to the government of New Brunswick (and the same could be done with preceding governments): You know the poverty problem facing many hard-working people who look to the woodlots for their living have you a sound, adequate, comprehensive program to help lift them out of their distressing situation?

In fairness to the government it should be mentioned that there has been recent legislation setting up the Farm Adjustment Board to enable farmers to borrow money at a low rate of interest to enable them to have a movable unit of operation. This money may be used for buildings, machinery, livestock, and land including woodland. Before the loan approved the Board must be assured that the proposed project is sound and the applicant responsible person. Very little use has as yet been made of this provision for the purchase of woodland.

I have in mind a three-fold goal:

- (1) The maximum development of our forest potential.
- (2) The maximum utilization of our forest resources.
- (3) For the maximum benefit of the people of our province.

1) Our objective should be to seek to grow on all the forest lands of our province on a sustained yield basis as much wood of a high quality as possible. Steps towards fulfilling this objective are as follows: The planting of spruce trees on the estimated 300,000 acres of abandoned old fields many of them now growing up in alders; if with time to recuperate and good management the annual cut on arm woodlots can be increased from 14 cubic feet to 40 cubic feet per year (85 cubic feet equals one cord) then by all means let us get on with the job; the government should urge the large companies to practice good long term silviculture; the government must have and enforce a firm policy for the good management of the Crown lands it holds in trust for the people (Crown land comprises 45 per cent of the area of our province).

2) The situation has been that we had so much more wood than we were using that there was felt little need for practicing good forest management. It was cheaper, with greater profits for shareholders, to exploit untouched virgin forests, than to spend money on forest management. But the situation is rapidly changing. In recent years we have seen new pulp and paper mills erected at Newcastle, South Nelson, East Saint John with expansions to existing mills and there is now under construction a mill at Nackawic, St. George an expansion at East Saint John and very recently the doubling of the capacity of the large pulp mill at the mouth of the Saint John River has been announced. Our provincial government has done much to encourage and help the establishment of these wood using mills. One of the best features is that some of the new mills are set up to utilize low grade hardwoods of which we have an oversupply and for which we have had very little demand. This over all increased demand should result in increased prices for the products of our woodlots.

3) In the Province of Quebec company officials feel that the government is too far on the side of the woodlot owners. In our province the feeling among woodlot owners is that our government is on the side of the companies against the people. One contentious issue

concerns the Crown lands, which belong to the people; there is abroad a suspicion that the government is making to the companies too great concessions in the terms concerning the use of Crown lands. For example, if the Crown land stumpage for hard wood to the new mill at Nackawic, remains at \$1.00 a cord, this so low stumpage will depress the price to the woodlot owners who help supply this mill will receive.

There are two groups of people involved when a new mill comes into operation, those who work in the mill and those who supply the wood to the mill. The mill workers, if they have a union, can well look after their own interests. There is not question in anyone's mind that the mill workers get a better deal from the companies than the woodlot owners. The woodlot owners do not control the supply of wood to the mills, for the companies can get their requirements from their own holdings or from the Crown land on which they operate. Is it unreasonable to ask that our government take necessary steps to ensure the price per cord received by the woodlot owners is closely related to the cost of wood the companies cut from Crown lands?

The relation of all this to the Senate Committee on Poverty may be summed up in the contrast in the figures below:

Present. 14 cords at \$21.00 per cord gives an income of \$294.00.

Future. If (1) with good management the 14 cords is increased to 40 cords and if (2) with increased demand and (3) some government support the price is increased to \$30.00 per cord the income to the woodlot owner will be increased from \$294.00 to \$1,200.00 with a four fold increase in income a man could live comfortably and be able to spend money on the building up of his woodlot.

Let us return again to the Atlantic Development Board report. The woodlots and their owners tend to be locked into reciprocal states of mismanagement and poverty in spite of the multiplicity of forces acting on the situation some federal, some provincial, some arising within the group of woodlot owners—but none of them effective. I will agree that these various forces have been weak and ineffective. But I will not agree that they must remain so. It could be that this brief for the Senate Committee on Poverty, which Dr. McGrand, suggested that I write, could provide the impetus to start a concerted, sustained and effective attack on the twin prob-

lems, rural poverty and forestry underdevelopment in New Brunswick.

I think that the woodlot owners' movement in Nova Scotia is stronger than in our province. There, as in our province, there had been dissatisfaction over the price of pulp wood. the (MacSween) Royal Commission on Pulpwood Prices was set up to enquire into this question. Its principle recommendations was that the woodlot owners should be organized and they are being organized. With government funds and under the direction of the Extension Department of St. Francis Xavier University three field men have been at work for over three years. Seventeen County or regional associations have been formed and in late 1969 a provincial organization has been organized. Over one hundred men from all parts of the province attended the first annual meeting January 31st, 1970. Organized they can do much more for themselves than 49,500 individual unorganized woodlot owners.

By man's greed and cruelty, carelessness and stupidity many species of birds and animals have become extinct; have disappeared forever from the face of the earth. It would be a sad day if we should wake up some morning and find the woodlot owner is no longer in our midst. If all the woodlots should be sold to large corporations then we would have no woodlot owners left. The lower the price the companies pay for wood the lower also the price at which they can buy the land on which the wood grows. As I see it, the report of the Atlantic Development Board is altogether too pessimistic. According to the report the forces trying to preserve woodlot owners are too slow for the forces which are overtaking uneconomic woodlots; the inability to achieve adequate gains in productivity to keep competitive and to prevent the transfer of ownership to large corporations. (These woodlots are not all equally uneconomic).

It would not be wise to try to save uneconomic woodlots as such. But they can be made economic. There are good managers among the woodlot owners. So that they might have more viable units of operation the Farm Adjustment Board, as mentioned earlier, is willing to help them buy more woodland. The board is looking for a professional forester to look after this part of its work.

The companies have bought much of our freehold land and most of this was at one time farm land. The value of an old farm lies not in buildings or cleared land but in the neglected woodlot and the wood growing on it. Every 100 acre lot bought by the compa-

nies makes their position that much stronger and that of the woodlot owners that much weaker. We have the feeling that when a big corporation buys a block of forest land that it is lost to the woodlot owners forever. In the area comprised in the Southern New Brunswick Woodlot Owners' Association, King's County east of the St. John River, and in Queen's County, the adjoining parishes of Wickham, Cambridge and Johnston and in St. John County; the parishes of Simmonds and St. Martins, the 2,800 woodlot owners still hold 66% of the private forest land.

We would like to slow down the transfer of forest land from the woodlot owners to the large companies. It would have been better for us if we had started taking preventive measures twenty years ago. The owner who operates his own woodlot and who is not too hard pressed in trying to keep the wolf from the door can manage his woodland better than a company which must depend on hired hands. The hired men have no attachment to the land where they may be working, (probably they will never see it again) but the woodlot owner operator looks to his own land for a continuing income. Too many of our woodlots are owned by non-residents or have passed into the hands of widows; good management must have good managers and there should be a system whereby ownership of forest land is directed towards efficient operators from among our own people. The corporations that have come in have no particular interest for the welfare of our people—their primary concern is the profits they take out. There is nothing wrong with this, the business world is based on the profit motive. But it would be better for the people of our province if they kept the control of our forest lands in their own hands and put the profit in their own pockets.

In New Brunswick vast sums are being spent for the building and operation of various trade and technical schools. But it seems strange indeed to me that in our Forest Province, so far as I know, there is no provision in all this program, for the training and education of woods workers or woodlot owners.

The following sentence is an extract from the Atlantic Development Board Report, "The lack of training in woods operations and woodlot management in the Atlantic Province stands in sharp contrast to the practice in such countries as Sweden where instruction and training in all aspects of forest work is the rule."

And the longer like quotation following is from the Seheult Report (page 73):

"If the situation in New Brunswick is compared to that in Sweden where the management of forests and the development of industries dependent to them is more advanced, there is a striking contrast in the range and depth of the educational and training effort. At the professional and technical levels one finds there the Royal College of Forestry, the State Master Ranger School and 8 "Schools of Forestry". At the level of the skilled workman, the main technical forestry training is organized by the 24 Provincial Boards of Private Forestry which have a number of schools, at least one in each province. These schools provide a basic one-year apprenticeship course for potential forest workers; woodlot owners and those who intend to go on to ranger school. A second course, giving more advanced work in forest management and logging techniques has also recently been started. The basic course is given to about 300 youths each year. There are, in addition, a large number of short courses on a variety of subjects, silvaculture, scaling practice, machine operation and so on, lasting from a few days to five or six weeks. The forestry education given simultaneously at many agricultural schools also provides opportunities for the training of woodlot owners. Many companies also have regular training courses for their woodmen for training in logging techniques and machine operation."

"It is thus evident that the Swedish tradition of good forest management and their competitive ability in forestry is the result of massive educational and training effort and the support of a variety of organizations for creating interest and promoting development."

In the Seheult Report there were many favorable references to the prosperous situation of the woodlot owners of Sweden. I wanted to see for myself what they had that we might have. I visited Sweden in October 1966 and was back again in wonderful Sweden in August 1969 and this time my wife came with me.

Sweden is more like New Brunswick than any other country in Europe. Both are northern areas, both are heavily forested. But there is a sharp striking contrast between the prosperity of Sweden, the most prosperous country in Europe, and the lack of prosperity in New Brunswick, certainly not the most prosperous province in Canada.

Sweden was not always rich. Out of a population of five million, one million left Sweden between 1850 and 1930 to make a better living in other countries. Here is a graphic picture of the bad old days for the peasant in rural Sweden; "His half-starved cattle with their ribs, so tragically sticking out; his wooden presence with shoulders always hunched as if beneath the weight of an oppressive existence to which their reply is evasion, ambiguity, cunning; his shivering, thin youths, stripped to the bone before the bewhiskered sergeant who is to weigh and measure them for military service; the helpless moment of bewildered despair before the coffin, which ends it all—from such a dire vision of poverty the whole of modern Sweden's in headlong flight."

The particular area described above is in the Province of Smaland which I visited on both trips. Smaland is now one of the most prosperous parts of prosperous Sweden. Smaland has the largest and most highly industrialized of their forest owners' associations. The members of this association, the S.S.S.F., have a highly diversified forest industry, pulp and paper mills, saw mills, prefabricated houses, paper bags. I think that their capital investment is over \$500,000,000 and this is under expert business management. The forest owners in Sweden have part of their income from their woodlot and another part from the processing plants which they own through their associations.

The forest owners' movement began in Sweden in the 1930s and I believe it has played a large part in the change over from distressing poverty to buoyant prosperity.

The following is a quotation from the introduction of "Our Forests" a brochure published in Sweden in May, 1964 by the National Federation of Swedish Forest Owners. (Over three hundred copies of "Our Forests" have been circulated in our province in English and French. The reaction is something like this. All this is amazing, and no doubt it is true in Sweden, but New Brunswick is not Sweden.) This is the quotation, "the Forest Owners' Associations consist of free entrepreneurs who through co-operative efforts have created resources for making effective use of their forest land. Our desire is to provide scope for both energetic personal initiative and for rational solution to mutual problems, and we are convinced that co-operative private forestry is a highly efficient form of enterprise."

Sweden has three and a half times the area in productive forest and ten times the annual cut. Their experts believe that the annual cut should be considerably increased to keep up the annual increment. The amount of wood cut per acre in Sweden is about three times that from New Brunswick. Why the contrast? The natural conditions such as climate and soil fertility are similar in their country and our province. The difference is in management and for a long time the Swedes have been practicing good forest managements and they are reaping the harvest.

For good management the place to start is with the seed. Good seeds come from good tress and in turn reproduce good trees. In New Brunswick the best trees are cut out and the repropagation comes from the poorer trees left. In Sweden one practice is to cut everything except the best trees which are left as seed trees. And when the ground is well seeded the seed trees are also harvested.

Another practice now more favored is the planting of good nursery stock from superior seed within a year after clear cutting. This produces an even age stand and with periodic thinnings trees of a high quality, tall and clean and straight, are grown. The result of starting a forest from good trees, periodic thinning, and other good forest management practices is more and better trees and more money left in the pockets of those who practice good forestry in their wood lands.

A recent significant development among the Swedish Forest Owners' Associations is the organization of what are called "Forestry Areas" and all the forest land of those in the area willing to co-operate is dealt with as one economic unit. This form of collaboration began in 1955 in the northern Province of Jamtland and my friend, Karl-Einar Bjorkhem, was the leading spirit in it. By 1965, this way of unified management with a unified labor pool had grown to comprise 3,750,000 acres and it is still growing. Suitable sizes for these Forestry Areas in the south of Sweden are from 10,000 to 20,000 acres.

"A Forestry Area is an organizationally united area, in which the owners have resolved to rationalize their operations by means of a more intensive co-operation. The Forest Owners' Association employs a person trained in forestry, a forest ranger who coordinates, plans and directs work within the area. In addition, essential servicing resources are made available to the area. Forestry workers can be employed on an annual

basis—a proceeding that is otherwise generally beyond the resources of an individual owner, since the area of his property is too small."

Two concepts which underlie the new Swedish prosperity are co-operation and rationalization. If those who have some mutual interest band together in co-operation, they can attempt projects and accomplish results which they could only dream about as separate individuals. To rationalize in New Sweden has a particular significance which I will try to explain, as follows: there may be a better way of doing what you have always been doing in the old way—look for this new and better way and when you find it, use it.

I have not attempted to describe how they have been able to amass enough capital to launch their industrial enterprises and I will not go into this now. I have not told the full story of the Forest Owners' Associations in Sweden but, I think, sufficient has been written above to substantiate this affirmation membership in these associations have brought great financial benefits to the forest owners there. Does this follow, somewhat similar organizations adapted to the New Brunswick scene could bring somewhat similar financial benefits to the woodlot owner here. Let us rationalize on this in the Swedish manner. Perhaps the old ways we have been following are not the best ways; let us look for better ways, and when we find them, let us follow the new and better ways. And if someone has gone before and blazed a way, before us and are ready to help us it is certainly easier and probably wiser wherever we can to follow in the trail they have blazed.

Before we leave amazing Sweden, I would have you consider briefly with me the industrial peace which they have built up since 1938. I do not think that it oversimplifies the situation to assert these straight forward facts; prosperity depends on productivity and productivity depends on work. Therefore, the which keeps people from working the common cold and too common strike, lesser productivity and lowers the general level of prosperity. One of the strengths in Sweden is that the workmen on the one hand and the employers on the other each has its own strong overall organization.

The short table, following illuminates the stark contrast in labor relations between Sweden on the one hand and Canada and the United States on the other.

Man days lost to Labor Conflicts in 1964

	Number in 1000s	Per 1000 population
Sweden	34	4.4
Canada	1,581	81.7
U.S.A.	22,900	119.2

Based on the last set of figures the number of man days lost per 1,000 population in Canada is 18.8 times that of Sweden and in the U.S.A. 27.1 times that of Sweden.

I am not a forester by profession nor am I an economist, and perhaps in some of my hopeful assumptions I could be caught out away off base. But in this part of my argument I have the support of a leading authority on union-management relations, professor Ray Brookbank of Dalhousie University. One of the most valuable newspaper items in my collection is under the heading "Urges Development of Swedish System in Labour Relations." Professor Brookbank's speech seems to be well reported in the Telegraph Journal of Saint John and a copy is enclosed as part of this brief, Appendix "B". I refer to the conclusion of his address that we send people to Sweden to see for themselves. "Don't talk about it—send people."

I have been advocating for some time that we send people to see what we can learn from the Forest Owners' Movement in Sweden which, in time, can be adapted to New Brunswick. It would be, in my opinion, government money well spent to send knowledgeable observers to spend some time in that enlightened country so that we might transplant this Swedish development, or a large part of it, to our shores. I know it works against my argument but still it should be emphasized that in Sweden the forest owners have worked out a solution to their problems themselves not looking to the government for assistance, or special favors. But in our country, we know that individual enterprises ask for and receive valuable concessions, which is an effect, taking money out of the pockets of taxpayers and putting it into the pockets of shareholders. So, I think, it is quite fair for woodlot owners to ask the government to help make them stronger so that they can stand up to the big corporations and demand a larger piece of the pie. And, of course, it would be good to have a larger pie to divide.

In Canada, the present trend in government policy is the encouragement of growth centers. I think the idea is industry should be built up where the people are and then more people will locate here the new industry is.

Throughout the world the problems of the 1970s will very largely be the problems of oversized cities. Is it wise, is it natural to try to compact too many people into too tight a mass? Megalopolis, big city sickness, increases the problems of crime, of pollution and of traffic congestion. Neighbourliness is much more a part of life in the small city community than in the big city. Is not the country or the small town, when a good school is made accessible, a better place to bring up children, than the big city?

Dr. McGrand spent many years of his life as a country Doctor in Queens and Sunbury Counties, New Brunswick. (Doctor, were they not the best years?) He and I agree that the country life is the better life. Of course, it is nice to live near the city, to have close at hand the advantages the city offers, I am fortunate that I live twenty-five miles and on the new highway 35 minutes away from Saint John. For over 30 years I have lived in Christ Church Rectory with trees and space around me and overlooking the Kennebecasis River. I would not trade this for any of the rectories in Saint John.

But I am not advocating that people live in the country in abject poverty. A man should live near where his work is, where he can make a good living for himself and his family. oh, how fortunate are (or rather should be) the rural people of our Forest Province! If, as prognosticated the world demand for forest products will soon increase fourfold, and if with good management the annual cut from our 85 per cent forest covered province could in time be increased say threefold how much of the financial blessing will flow into the pockets of the rural people among whom I have been serving?

What I am here advocating to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty and to anyone else who may read this brief is a positive approach to the problem. In rural New Brunswick prosperity can be built up and poverty thereby banished, (A) by the full development of our forest potential, (B) by the full utilization of our forest resources and, (C) whatever we may do in a revitalized program let us do it with this as our primary objective the fullest possible benefit of the people of the Province of New Brunswick.

Christ Church Rectory, Bloomfield Station, New Brunswick.

William E. Hart, President, Southern New Brunswick, Woodlot Owners' Association, President, N.B. Federation of Woodlot Owners. April 10, 1970.



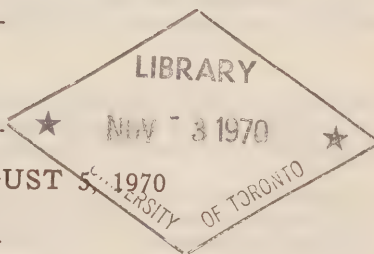
Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament
1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA
PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON

POVERTY

The Honourable **DAVID A. CROLL**, *Chairman*

No. 62



WEDNESDAY, AUGUST 5, 1970

WITNESSES:

MONCTON AND EAST END BOYS' CLUB. Moncton Lions Club
(Senior Citizens' Association).

(See the **MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS** for the names of the
witnesses who were heard by the committee.)

APPENDICES:

"A"—Brief submitted by the Boys' Club of Canada.

"B"—Brief submitted by the Moncton Lions Club.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle
Carter
Connolly (*Halifax North*)
Cook
Croll
Eudes
Everett

Fergusson
Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*,
Deputy Chairman)
Hastings
Inman
Lefrançois

MacDonald (*Queens*)
McGrand
Pearson
Quart
Roebuck
Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

Moncton, New Brunswick,
Lions Senior Citizens' Centre,
Wednesday, August 5, 1970.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 7.00 p.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*); Fergusson; Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*); Inman, McGrand and Quart. (6)

Also present: The Honourable Senator Hervé J. Michaud.

In attendance: Mr. Frederick J. Joyce, Director.

The following witnesses were heard:

MONCTON AND EAST END BOYS' CLUB:

Mr. E. A. Cotton, Regional Director, Boys' Clubs of Canada;
Mr. Ronald Johnson, Executive Director, East End Boys' Club;
Mr. René Landry, Assistant Director;
Mr. K. H. Benne, Director of Training and Personnel;
Mr. L. Gorber;
Mr. Sylvio Savoie;
The Rev. Yvan Arsenault;
Mr. Adolphe Cormier;
Mrs. Helen Crocker.

MONCTON LIONS CLUB

SENIOR CITIZENS' ASSOCIATION):

Mr. Hugh Reardon, President, Lions Club;
Miss Leola McKay, President, Senior Citizens' Centre;
Mr. John Gayne, President, New Brunswick Senior Citizens' Federation.

FROM THE FLOOR:

Mr. Hans Durstling;
Mrs. Ida Eagle;
Miss Helen Steeve;
Mrs. Nathan Fielder, President, Local Council of Women.

The brief presented by the Boys' Club of Canada and that of the Moncton Lions Club have been ordered to be printed as Appendix "A" and "B" respectively to these proceedings.

At 9.30 p.m. the Committee adjourned until Thursday, August 6, 1970, at 9.00 a.m.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

**Wednesday, August 5, 1970,
Moncton, New Brunswick.**

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 7 p.m.

Senator David Croll (*Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Chairman: I will call the meeting to order. This is a meeting of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty which was established about a year and a half ago. We have been visiting all the provinces. We began this week at visiting the Province of New Brunswick. We have two more provinces yet to visit, and, strange as it may seem to you, this is the way we are using our summer holidays and we are enjoying it.

We are very fortunate to have with us, sitting to the far left, a man who is very well known to you, Senator Edward Fournier, who is the Vice-Chairman and who has been in the public life of this province for many years. Next to him is Senator Josie Quart from Quebec. On the far end is a very young friend, Senator Brian Fergusson, and then really a friend of many years from New Brunswick and a former cabinet minister, Dr. McGrand, whom I am sure you remember.

Then Senator Inman of Prince Edward Island, and on my right is Mr. Fred Joyce, who is the director and does the co-ordinating and a great deal of work in order to be able to make our report at a later date. My name is David Croll.

We have spent a couple of days in New Brunswick, starting at Saint John. We had some very valuable presentations, which were constructive. There was a great deal of interest. The media covered it like a blanket and it was very clear that there was leadership in the community and there was concern and there was understanding of the problems, which is vital to all of us.

Now, in making a study on poverty, I should like to tell you good people that this is the first time it has ever been attempted in the Dominion of Canada. We are not alone in that respect. It was not until a few years ago that they attempted it in the United States.

We are reaching out to the people. Some come to us for hearings in Ottawa. We come to those who cannot come to us. That is why we are here today. The participation that we are receiving is very heartening for the future for, whatever else may come,—and we think much will come—no one will ever be able to sweep the question of poverty under the rug. We have got across the message that this sears the nation and it is issue number one in this country, and it will so remain until such time as there is alleviation. Our worst sin, of course, is that we are indifferent to these people. That must for us come to an end.

We are looking forward to very valuable contributions being made in Moncton from the briefs we have already before us. We feel that we will benefit, the people of Moncton and the area will benefit, and the country will benefit.

I cannot close what I have to say without saying how gratified we are to know that the Lions Club of this city has made this building possible for the elderly. It is a great example, and we could not possibly come here without offering our congratulations.

Our first brief is to be presented by the Moncton Boys' Club. On my right is Mr. Ernie Cotton, Atlantic Regional Director, Boys' Clubs of Canada, and a former director of the Moncton Boys' Club. He will present his brief.

Before Mr. Cotton presents his brief, I should have mentioned that in coming here today from Saint John we stopped along the way at Hamilton to see the Reverend William E. Hart, who is the President of the New Brunswick Federation of Woodlot Owners. I think he is commonly referred to as the "plywood padre."

The special problem for consideration was the wood wealth of New Brunswick and its use for the benefit of the people of New Brunswick particularly; and the significant part of it was that in addition to the members of the Senate who were there, Mr. Gordon Fairweather, one of the Members of Parliament for this province, was there, and Mrs. Cyril Sherwood, MLA, was there, and it was an occasion to find the three levels of government represented in this little church along the way.

As usual, the ladies were more than good with the coffee and what goes with it, and I would like you to know it was one of the most pleasant visits that we have had in the last couple of days.

Mr. E. Cotton, Atlantic Regional Director, Boys' Clubs of Canada: Mr. Chairman, honourable senators, I should mention at the outset that this brief is being presented by our national organization, the Boys' Clubs of Canada, in cooperation with the Moncton Boys' Club. There is also another boy's club in this city known as the East End Boys' Club, who unfortunately—it was not anybody's fault—were not notified until the end of last week that they would have an opportunity to present a brief. We have accepted this with regret.

I am pleased to have with me this evening Mr. Rene Landry, who is here, and is the Assistant Director of the Moncton Boys' Club. Mr. Ron Johnson, who is here as Secretary of the Boys' Club Professional Association, and Mr. Len Thorbury, who is the Vice-President of the Moncton Boys' Club, and who was very much involved with the Moncton Boys' Club when it was built by the Kinsmen Club of this city.

Also present is Mr. Silvio Savoie, Vice-President of the East End Boys' Club, and visiting with us at this opportune time, sir, Mr. Karl Benny, Director of Training and Personnel for our national movement.

You may be asked the question: "What is the relationship between Boys' Clubs and poverty?" But there is, we feel, a very direct relationship as boys' clubs are unavoidably found in an area of cities or towns where there is.

Before any boys' club is established anywhere a community survey is carried out to determine the area in the city of greatest need. We have a motto in our organization, which is "Meeting the unmet needs of youth," and these needs are most often found in a slum or depressed area of a city or town.

The boys' club personnel we believe are very familiar with poverty and its many ramifications. Maybe we might highlight one or two points and follow with local observations.

On page 1 of the Boys' Club of Canada brief—I think there were 20 copies made available—I would like to draw attention to the paragraph towards the bottom of the page which states:

It is well recognized that poverty from whatever source it springs is the disruptive force that weakens and eventually destroys the basic family unit.

We would suggest the following recommendations: the first point is, too much welfare or

government assistance creates a lack of incentive, a lack of motivation. Two, this recommendation stresses the importance of voluntary and personal services in the involvement and operation of organizations for the well-being of society.

Three, business should be encouraged to assist welfare organizations through tax incentives.

Recommendations 4 and 5 recommend government action in the establishing of a committee on youth, with which we are familiar and which is now in operation, I understand and a task force on sports. We encourage the co-operation of public and private programs having to do with youth.

In recommendation No. 6, we stress the importance of effective leadership of youth.

We urge this committee to set aside a section of its report to deal specifically with leadership, its recruitment and training and its place in our society and certainly we commend the work of the Fitness Council in supporting so generously the Boys' Club Training Seminars. Individual clubs and staff expend considerable time and expense attending these seminars with the resultant benefits obtained. These remarks highlight the brief of our national organization. Probably it might be in order to make a few remarks on the Moncton Boys' Club, its operation and the effect on the area of Moncton where it is situated.

It is highly unlikely that poverty will cease to exist in our time. If this statement is true then we must concern ourselves with helping those who will require help. This, we believe, where the Boys' Clubs come into the picture. The boys' clubs work with youth from the age of seven to nineteen and sometimes beyond. The organization works with all youth, boys and girls. Girls' programs are led by female staff. This has to be.

The boys' clubs in Moncton, we believe it is safe to say, are well accepted by the community and derive considerable financial support from the Community Chest and the City of Moncton. The role of the boys' club is to create a home away from home. In many cases the environment is probably better than the home environment of 12 children and two adults living in three or four rooms.

It has been stated that to some degree poverty is a state of mind. The boys' clubs, through their recreational activities, which is but a part of the program, of course, attempt to overcome this state, and through their guidance activity attempt to guide our youth.

To illustrate the area of Moncton in which the boys' club is located—and I personally happen to be associated with this—conduct

survey some few years ago and it showed that ninety-seven or ninety-eight per cent of the total membership did not belong to any other youth organization, and we assume because of lack of funds.

The fee at the Moncton Boys' Club for a year varies from 50 cents to \$1.50. The members of the club illustrate the many aspects of poverty, such as lack of proper dental and medical care, lack of a proper diet. Many of the youngsters quit school at Grade 6 or 8, lacking motivation and incentive to continue further.

An interesting sidelight at two local boys' clubs is the formation of parents' auxiliaries. Parents of members work together to help the boys' clubs and indirectly help themselves by being of service to others.

What then is the main purpose of our brief and what do we seek locally? We should say that poverty is relative and there will always be people in need of assistance. The boys' clubs do work with youth during its most receptive age when minds can be most strongly influenced, and we do feel very strongly that there will always be a need for our type of organization.

The operations locally are as effective as finances, facilities and personnel permit. With further assistance we could do more.

Our appeal is for increased assistance in their capital or operating expenses or leadership training along with the recommendations stated previously. We do thank you for permitting us to make our views known.

The Chairman: Senator Fergusson, Senator Fournier, and Senator Inman.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, I would like to say how pleased we are to be here and how much we appreciate this presentation from the Boys' Clubs of Canada. They certainly are doing a tremendous amount of work and very good work, too.

One of the things that particularly interested me was the recommendation for a committee on youth to be created. You refer to this on page 2 of the brief, which I had, and again on page 5.

When I first read the brief I was not sure what you meant when you said "a committee on youth to be created to further research and co-ordinate the efforts and activate legislation." I did not know at what level you expected this to be done. On page 5 you say:

Proposed or elected members of government and City Services and representatives of national youth.

Would you expect this to be at the national level? Would it be at the provincial or municipal level?

Mr. Cotton: This brief was submitted to our national office in Montreal, I think, in October of last year. At that time I do not think there was a committee on youth but since that date it certainly has been formed and has been operating or working across the country.

Senator Fergusson: This was written before that.

Mr. Cotton: This brief, as I say, was last October.

Senator Fergusson: I am sorry; I did not realize that. Anyway, there is another question I wanted to ask you about the girls' clubs. I did not know there were girls' clubs also in your association.

Mr. Cotton: Girls involved in boys' clubs' programs.

Senator Fergusson: Well, are there many of these clubs in which there are girls involved?

Mr. Cotton: A goodly number.

Senator Fergusson: Are they in Moncton?

Mr. Cotton: Two clubs in Moncton do have girls' programs in local boys' clubs.

Senator Fergusson: In how many other places in New Brunswick do you have boys' clubs?

Mr. Cotton: Saint John, New Brunswick; Bathurst, where last week a new club was opened; Newcastle, and the possibility of clubs where a request is made for assistance that are not fully activated.

Senator Fergusson: Do you get financial assistance from the United Appeal? How do you raise the money to carry on?

Mr. Cotton: Many clubs get assistance from the United Appeal. Some get assistance through organizations in the community.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Chairman, I would like to know more about these boys' and girls' clubs. How many members do you have in Moncton, roughly speaking?

Mr. Len Thorbury, Vice-President, Moncton Boys' Clubs: We probably have 800 members.

Senator Fournier: I understand you have two groups; boys and girls?

Mr. Thorbury: We have roughly half and half; boys and girls.

Senator Fournier: From what ages?

Mr. Thorbury: Seven to eighteen. The girls operate a program one day, the boys on two days. We have guided programs for teens, for boys' and girls' programs together.

Senator Fournier: Who makes the programs? Is that a national program or do you make your own?

Mr. Thorbury: Every individual club makes its own program for the needs of its community.

Senator Fournier: Do you accept everybody of every religion or race? There is no limitation?

Mr. Cotton: All boys' clubs are strictly non-sectarian.

Senator Fournier: Are there any local clubs here sponsoring any of your group like the Rotary of Kinsmen or some of these clubs?

Mr. Thorbury: The Kinsmen help us. They built the centre and our camp has been through the Kiwanis Boys' Club.

Senator Fournier: What do you mean by "camp"?

Mr. Thorbury: Our summer residential camp. We have camping all summer long.

Senator Fournier: Do you have any building of your own?

Mr. Thorbury: Yes. There is the camp building.

Senator Fournier: But in the city?

Mr. Thorbury: In the city we have built a building.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Chairman, I would like to follow up one statement in the brief at page 3 which was read by one of the witnesses:

Poverty from whatever source it springs is the disruptive force that weakens and eventually destroys the basic family unit.

I do not think you are quite true when you say that, sir, but could you elaborate on some of the sources? The reason I ask that is, if we are going to eliminate poverty, we have got to go to the source. You say "from whatever source." Would you mention some of the sources that cause poverty?

Mr. Cotton: May I direct that one to Mr. Benny?

Senator Fournier: I also want to say here, s'il y avait quelqu'un qui ne comprend pas l'anglais, vous pouvez vous exprimer en français, parce qu'on a pas d'objection.

Mr. Karl Benny, Director of Training and Personnel, Boys' Clubs of Canada: Poverty probably is

in economic terms, in social-cultural terms, in educational terms, and I think we have found deficiencies in most boys' club members in one or most instances in all of these areas.

Senator Fournier: Sir, that was not my question. I would like to know from what source springs. Can you point out something; is it a lack of education, a lack of employment, heritage or environment?

Mr. Benny: I feel it is a combination of all of these. It is lack of education. It is a lack of financial support in the family. And it is probably environmental, passed on from the parents to boys' club members.

Senator Fournier: I am still not satisfied with your answer. I want to know something more specific because we are trying to find the facts. For every poor family there must be a reason; and none of the reasons are the same. If you have a group of 25 poor people in an area they are not all poor for the same reason. One may be disability in the family. One may be lack of employment. One may be lack of education. One could be mismanagement on the part of the parents. They are not all the same.

Well, since I am not from the local situation perhaps the two gentlemen who are here representing the two boys' clubs could comment.

Senator Fournier: The same thing is all across Canada. If you come from Montreal, we have the same situation in Montreal, Quebec, Winnipeg, or wherever you go.

Mr. Benny: Well, I do feel in our boys' club membership we have members that have all these problems, and I cannot say it is economically exclusively or it is culturally exclusively.

Senator Fournier: I will pass to somebody else but I will come back later.

Senator Inman: Like Senator Fergusson found this brief most interesting, and fill with a lot of good thoughts. I would like speak first about the committee on youth. There would be a continuing committee, I presume.

Mr. Cotton: I understand the Secretary of State's Department is studying the need for youth across the country.

Senator Inman: On page 5 you say:

The home no longer fills the human need met even a decade or so ago, the influence of the church has waned, the school has increased in importance but has it fully answered the question—"education what?"

To what do you attribute this change in need

Mr. Cotton: The change?

Senator Inman: Well, the home no longer fills human needs, the influence of the church has waned and the school has increased in importance but it really has not taken the place of the home or church in the life of young people. To what do you attribute this?

Mr. Cotton: That is a hard question to answer.

Senator Inman: I know it is, but I do not know the answer.

Mr. Cotton: Maybe Mr. Thorbury might answer.

Mr. Silvio Savio, East End Boys' Club: If I might make a comment?

The Chairman: Would you like to answer the question?

Mr. Savio: I would like to have the question answered.

The Chairman: It is really difficult to read. Where are you, Senator Inman?

Senator Inman: I am on page 5, where it says:

The home no longer fills the human needs it met even a decade or so ago, the influence of the church has waned, the school has increased in importance but has it fully answered the question—'education for what?'

Now, even though education has been stepped up apparently it is not taking the place of the influence of the home or the church but neither the home nor the church has the influence it used to have on young people. I am asking: has anybody any thoughts on why this is occurred?

Mr. Savio: Well, if I may say, I think our society has evolved to such a stage where there is a greater need for social development, and I think the church does not have this social development as one of its prime priorities, and I think to answer this need of society the only club who can give to youth, or answer this need, is an institution such as the boys' club at the age, as mentioned in the brief, where the hands of the little boys and little girls are easily influenced.

I think socially they can achieve fulfilment which they will not achieve through channels such as the school because schools also have programs which are very specialized, and no longer have the same interest in the child as a boys' club would have.

Besides, a lot of these boys do not go to school because of lack of intelligence sometimes, sometimes a physical or mental disability,

and for a whole lot of reasons, and I think that perhaps the boys' club will in the future be called upon to fulfill the need which all children and juveniles have, which they did not have in the past.

I think that if boys' clubs are given the necessary tools to fulfill their various projects, they will be able to reach the minds of the small children in a way that no one else can.

Senator Inman: I am concerned about the home and church losing its influence. Now, you work with young people and have you ever heard them express why this is, why they do not feel the home influence as we used to when we were young?

What I am concerned about is where the home and church have lost this influence on young people. Do they ever talk about that?

Mr. Savio: I think it is a fact that the church is losing some of its grasp on youth perhaps, and the home also, because it simply cannot fulfill the need that is required.

The social need of a young child cannot be fulfilled by the church institution. They have programs but I do not think it is their primary duty and concern to reach the individuals about whom we are concerned, not at the same level or the same way.

It is the same with the home. All the parents are not adequately suited to fill all the needs of their children, social and everything else. I think there is a basic need for the work the boys' clubs are doing and only they can provide some of the answers.

I do not know if I have answered your question.

Senator Inman: Well, I guess you have answered as well as any of us could probably.

Mr. Savio: I think perhaps to get to the source of the cause of poverty that the Honourable Senator Fournier was trying to get at is a most difficult question to answer and probably one of the issues with which your commission is faced; that is, to find the root or the cause of poverty.

There are many sources and they can vary from place to place. They can be social reasons; they can be economic; they can be reasons of family or mental deficiencies, physical infirmities. They can be widespread. But to define poverty or the source of poverty with one word is a difficult thing.

Senator Fournier: We know that.

Senator Inman: One more question, Mr. Chairman.

The Chairman: Was it something else on that point?

Mr. Cotton: I was just wondering. We have one of the boys' clubs' leaders here, Father Arsenault. I do not know if he would care to comment.

The Chairman: Would you like to comment on the question, Father Arsenault?

Father Arsenault, Boys' Clubs' of Canada: Yes, Mr. Chairman. With regard to the question being asked as to whether or not the church as well as the home is losing its influence, I think that most of all there used to be institutions such as these were quite independent from one another and they exercised their authority separately, independently and quite satisfactorily.

I think today we have to have as much co-operation as possible between the church, school and the home, otherwise we are wasting our time. Discovering that the aim of education is to develop a mature and responsible human being, people who are responsible to themselves and also to the community, and inasmuch as the home can give value to the child or to the people who live there and inasmuch as the church can give value to the people who are members of this church, and inasmuch as the school is able to give values, then we have an institution which is worthwhile, which is being of service to the individual as well as to the community.

I wonder up to what point the church and the home are really fulfilling this educational and this value role today again especially with young people.

The reason I say this is that when you think of a church, you think mostly of the building or institution. When you think of the home, I think we are getting to a point where we think more or less the same thing. We spend very little time at home and when we do, often enough it is either to sleep or to read or to watch TV and not to meet the people who live with us, not to exercise a human value. I think the school is instrumental in giving out quite a bit of information but only secondary information, and this, to me, is unfortunate. Perhaps we have the same problem in the church.

I appreciate the value of clubs such as the boys' clubs, having been a part of it first-hand. I realize to what point they can be of help to our young people and precisely because they work with people in the community and accept them as they are.

Now, a final point, and this is the question as to monetary values. I wonder if we are not limiting poverty to a question of money, and I think there is poverty in a far more demanding

state, and that is poverty of the human being poverty of the individual, and we know of people who are in dire need today of help and understanding on the human level much more than on the financial level.

The Chairman: Father, I think I should make it clear, now you have raised the point, that this committee is not limiting poverty to the economic level but thinks that the economic level is very, very important.

You have another question, Senator Inman?

Senator Inman: Along with that question...

Senator Fergusson: I am sorry to interrupt but as long as we are on this, I have a further question. On page 4, where Senator Inman was quoting, the last words are "education for what?" which is in the brief.

I would like to ask you if you think we are giving the students today the wrong kind of education.

We have had this brought before us on other occasions. We are placing too much stress on academic education and not enough on educating people for the life they are going to have to live, and could somebody comment on that? When you ask a question "education for what?" are we giving them the right kind of education?

Mr. Benny: I do feel very definitely, as you have said, that there is relatively little learning for life but I would like to add one more point and that is that the methodology of teaching is relatively unmotivated to young people. It is a matter of memorizing facts but it is not a matter of a desire to want to find out and search and seek for themselves.

I think in some of these areas a number of boys' clubs have been rather successful.

Senator Inman: In connection with that question I asked, Mr. Cotton mentioned about parents' auxiliaries. Now, will having parents' auxiliaries involved with these young people bring them closer together?

Mr. Cotton: The president of one of the parents' auxiliaries of the local club is here. Maybe he could answer that.

The Chairman: Your name, please?

Mr. Adolphe Fournier, Member, Parents' Auxiliary, Boys' Clubs of Canada: Adolphe Fournier. The parents' auxiliary is composed of a group of men that got together. Our sons are going to the boys' clubs and we got organized and we started having bingos every Sunday from September to May. We put all the money in the bank. We bought stuff for the children.

le sweaters and hockey equipment, and stuff for the winter and the summertime.

We took the boys to camp. We have about 30 couples in our group. The children really liked it. We took them to the bingo and showed them what to do. They help us quite a bit and they sell cards. We show them what to do and they do a lot for us, too.

We started making lists and they helped us. They do a lot of work for us and we pay for their camp, the bus and all that, and really they are doing a very good job.

Senator Fournier: Why could you not work with the boys' association without having a parents' club?

Senator Inman: On the top of page 5, the first paragraph, you say:

In the firm belief that most 'welfare' plans have originated through the interest and support of voluntary effort, we urge that this great force for good be encouraged, recognized and capitalized upon for the ongoing benefit of society.

Are you suggesting perhaps less government involvement and more voluntary involvement would be more satisfactory? Would it be more personal?

Mr. Benny: One of the boys' clubs' mottoes is "to help boys help themselves," and we find in this area we are more successful than if we don't do it to the boys, and this point is based on that principle. We would rather teach a boy and motivate a boy to do it himself than to give it to him, whether it might be learning or material things, and so that is what we refer to, to try not to foster a hand-out society but to develop the pride and skill to do it for himself.

The Chairman: Remember, Senator Inman, the motto that they used for giving help to under-developed countries: "Teach a man to fish, don't give him a fish."

Senator Inman: Yes.

Senator Quart: Well, Mr. Chairman, and gentlemen of the boys' club, I am very interested in the boys' club, and I have been at some of the boys' clubs' camps sponsored by the Y, and I have been a Divisional Commissioner of the Girl Guides for many years, and on the National Executive.

Referring to your programs, you say that the club arranges for its own programs, but usually your national council establishes some set of guidelines for you to follow, do they

Mr. Cotton: The national organization offers program ideas but we believe that the ongoing

daily program of a boys' club must be geared to the needs of boys. If the boys do not want all baseball or all hockey, why should these be the only programs in operation? So very often interest finders are sent out or distributed to find out what the boys actually want to do in their club.

Senator Quart: Have you trouble finding leaders? How do you group your boys? How many in a group, about; thirty-five or forty? Do you separate them into groups?

Mr. Cotton: What do you mean by that?

Senator Quart: Well, something like the patrol system of the scouts.

Mr. Cotton: No, we do not follow the scouts at all. We divide them among age groups. They are midgets, juniors, intermediate and seniors.

Senator Quart: By age. You have not any special proficiency badges, for instance, for a nature study or things of this type, or is it purely sports?

Mr. Len Johnson, Secretary, Moncton Boys' Club: Sports and recreation are the only things we use to guide the boys. We have what we call a boys' council for both clubs. There are a number of clubs that have boys' councils and they themselves have their executive and their president and so on, and they meet with the staff and they make the programs.

A boy is chosen, if he is an outstanding boy, as boy of the year. I believe the Boys of Canada do have badges (I stand to be corrected); there are some of them in town that do. A boy would be recognized and could be chosen as boy of the month or boy of the year at the end of the year.

If I might I would like to answer Senator Fournier's question a while ago. At the East End Boys' Club we have 423 members (that is, boys and girls).

Senator Quart: And your leaders, like everyone else, sometimes need a refresher course. Do you ever exchange leaders with leaders of other cities, or have others come to your groups?

Mr. René Landry, Assistant Director, Moncton Boys' Club: We have one boy right now who is in Vancouver at a camp course. We have another at a boys' camp club in Vancouver. He is doing part of their program as a leader. Hopefully he will come into our program next year and bring out new ideas which he has had an opportunity to learn this year.

Senator Quart: You have not any special uniform?

Mr. Landry: No.

Senator Quart: You recommend certain things for a camp but you have not any special uniform?

Mr. Landry: No.

Senator Quart: Do you encourage or recommend names for inter-provincial visits of your group to exchange visits with other provinces?

Mr. Landry: Oh, yes, very much, senator. This year the East End Boys' Club went to Montreal to visit approximately three boys' camps in Montreal and finances were received from the Secretary of State's office and the parents' auxiliaries of the East End Boys' Club in Moncton, and I understand at the same time there was a group from the Moncton Boys' Club.

I believe in this evening's paper there were four girls and boys, and they are going to Camp Chicbucto, which is 300 miles from Montreal, to take a major study course which has been sponsored by citizens.

Senator Quart: Because I think this is really the only hope for national unity, if our young people visit each other's provinces.

One last question because I am sure I could go on with this ad infinitum. Have you ever applied to the Income Tax Department for exemption for grants, or for any tax exemption?

Mr. Savoie: Yes, we have. I personally made an application on behalf of the East End Boys' Club. The East End Boys' Club was established three years ago.

Mr. Johnson: It was incorporated in 1966 in the east end.

Mr. Savoie: Incorporation took place in 1966.

Mr. Johnson: At the beginning of 1967.

Mr. Savoie: This application was made and it has gone through and has been accepted. Donations from various firms in town, for instance, are exempt for income tax purposes.

Senator Quart: You see, I am very interested in youth. In fact, I have almost a boys' club of grandsons. I have 23 grandchildren.

The Chairman: Mr. Savoie, you are a young man; you are active. You are in a position to answer this question. What has changed more, the home or the child, since you were a boy—and that cannot be very long ago?

Mr. Savoie: I think a change in the child will bring a change in the home and vice versa. I think both have changed since I was a child. I

think our whole society has changed, and I feel it will probably change some more.

I think society is constantly changing and we have to be able to meet the demands that these changes bring about. I think society is always in a state of evolution.

The Chairman: Mr. Savoie, the change in society, as you know and we know, is that the boy is somewhat more alienated than he was from the home. That is the point we are getting at. Tell me, how has that happened?

Mr. Savoie: Well, urbanization for one thing, I think. I was born and brought up in the country, and since then I have moved to the city. My profession demands it. And my children therefore will not have the same needs I had when I was a child. These are changes which...

The Chairman: Mr. Savoie, let us talk about that as applicable to the urban areas. Let us leave the rural areas alone. I will admit what you say. Let us talk about the urban areas. You have been around urban areas long enough. How does this alienation apply to the urban areas between the home and the child as you know it in your daily practice of law?

Mr. Savoie: I think there are more demands on children today than there were years ago even speaking strictly of urban society. I think everybody, as far as that is concerned, is being called upon to get more involved in society as a whole and not to find all the answers inside the home.

I think there has been an involvement of the individual outside of the home because the home itself cannot give to a man his complete fulfilment. He has to be involved with mankind as a whole. I think that is a need that has been brought about more in the last decade. Have I answered your question?

The Chairman: Mr. Savoie, you have been very helpful.

There is a lady in the back who wished to speak. Give us your name, madam.

Mrs. Helen Crocker: I say greetings to Senator Fergusson and Senator Quart. I know of the involvement in the Girl Guide movement.

Mr. Savoie has mentioned the working mother. I think this has had a great deal to do with the change in the home and the change in the child and in the life of the child in the home. For this reason, since this is a boys' club presentation, I would like to stress more use of our boys' clubs for day nurseries for the working mothers; that we get the child at an early age, the three-year-old age at least, and that would help fill the gap where many mothers

have to work in order to get a little bit above the poverty level.

The Chairman: I can tell you this. You said you were a friend of Senator Fergusson. Well, Senator Fergusson, Senator Inman and Senator Quart have made a special point to study that very important problem of the female head of a family. That is what you are talking about?

Mrs. Crocker: That is right.

The Chairman: There are 165,000 of them in this country, and 350,000 children of various ages. That is half-a-million people, and that is causing us a great deal of concern. We are striving desperately to see what we can do for that particular family who need help far beyond what is needed by a man in a house. Do not worry about our groping. We have been puzzled enough and we are all concerned about that.

Mrs. Crocker: I realize this is a boys' club presentation but I believe we could be making more use of our boys' club during the daytime having day nurseries or kindergartens for the working mothers' children since business is not going to provide it for them and since the government is not going to provide it for them.

I know the East End Boys' Club does support and give room for a welfare kindergarten. I think we should be using our facilities to our advantage in this respect.

Senator Quart: Mrs. Crocker is a good Guider.

Mrs. Crocker: Yes, I am.

Senator McGrand: Besides camping and sports, what sort of programs do you carry on a continuous thing towards developing the cultural side of people?

Now, about ten years ago Mrs. Hugh Johnson founded the Kindness Club. That I think has spread around the world. It is well-established on five continents. I know there is a Kindness Club in Moncton. I wonder if it still here.

Mr. Cotton: I do not know.

Senator Fergusson: There is just one other question I would like to ask. There is great stress put on the subject of leadership and the necessity for getting leaders and training and equipping them. Then on page 6 you ask the question:

How do we enhance the profession of youth leadership and where do we find the facilities for adequately training?

And then at the bottom you say:

We strongly urge the Senate Committee on Poverty to set aside a section of its report to deal specifically with 'leadership,' its recruitment, training and its place in our society.

Have you any suggestions to give us as to what we should do for that? We would like some ideas?

Mr. Benny: I might be able to make a few comments relative to this. I can do this very briefly. In an historical sense many boys' clubs in their inception are based on athletic activities but times have changed and the evolution of boys' clubs in various cities come along and the typical leader who says; "I like to play ping-pong" or "I like to play basketball" is no longer adequately prepared to be a leader in a boys' club.

So we are gradually getting away in our training with our leaders from the skill areas and placing almost exclusively our emphasis on human relations, group work and working with people. The skills will come easy if a person has the aptitude and the motivation to want to work with people.

Also the backbone of the leadership of every boys' club is the volunteer leader. Although we have a core of professional part-time paid staff working in boys' club work, the backbone is the volunteer leader; so we are stressing with our full-time professional staff again the human relations aspect because the skill people are easily obtainable in every community in volunteer leadership.

Perhaps this will shed a little bit of light on what we are trying to get at.

Senator Fergusson: I heard you say that skill people are easily available. I thought there might be difficulty in finding them.

Mr. Benny: I find that most boys' clubs that are engaged in the crafts or in art activities or sport activities do find some parents and do find some leaders in the community who are willing to help them. We need the leadership that in turn works with the volunteer leaders to train them for their jobs.

Senator Fergusson: They must be trained for that.

Mr. Benny: Yes; and so we are trying to get away, and we are getting away, from the area where boys' clubs strictly hire a person as a staff member because he is a basketball player or because he is a good athlete. We need a lot more than that in today's boys' club.

The Chairman: With that, let me say to you and to all the members—I could not say it

perhaps any better than Mr. Benny said it—that you have made a most valuable contribution to the committee. Your emphasis on the young in this day and age is very useful and very necessary, and good for the community and good for the young.

For your most valuable services in preparing the brief and bringing these very competent witnesses before us, and some of your other people, we thank you sincerely.

Mr. Cotton: Thank you, Mr. Chairman.

The Chairman: I have neglected to call attention to a very distinguished gentleman who joined us by invitation, which I extended to him, Senator Michaud who is sitting next to Senator Fournier. We welcome him and I asked him to come and sit with us and participate and I am glad to see him here.

Sitting on my right is Mr. Hugh Reardon, President of the Lions Club. We have your brief on the Senior Citizens Federation and also from the Moncton Lions Club Incorporated. I will ask him to speak to the briefs and introduce those persons who are with him to speak on some of the problems we will be hearing from time to time.

Mr. Hugh Reardon, President of the Lions Club, Moncton: Mr. Chairman, Honourable Senators of this Committee on Poverty, it is my pleasure to be here this evening and, as president of the Moncton Lions Club, to say that our membership feels it is a privilege for us to speak out on occasions such as this on behalf of the Senior Citizens and the elderly of our community.

Before proceeding to read the brief that we have presented as a club on this subject, I would like to introduce to you the president of the Senior Citizens Club that operates in this centre, Miss Leola Mackay. She'll be reading a brief from the Senior Citizens themselves later and I also would like to introduce the executive director of this centre, who is also a Lion, by the way, Lion Jack Gayne.

At this time I would like to proceed to read the brief that the Moncton Lions Club would like to present today.

This is a submission of the Moncton Lions Club on poverty as it affects the senior citizens:

A very sincere welcome to Moncton and to the Lions Senior Citizens' Centre.

In my capacity as President of the Moncton Lions Club, the sponsors of the Senior Citizens' Club in Moncton and the operators of this centre, I am pleased to appear before this Senate Committee on behalf of our Club membership and to express our views on poverty as it affects the Senior Citizen.

As a Club, we are very much aware of the many aspects of Poverty and have seen, in company with many other organizations in our city, the devastating effect poverty can have on the Senior Citizen. It has been with deep concern that we along with others have noted the struggle some of our elderly must make to eke out an existence while the rest of society passes them by.

There is no doubt that you will be receiving Briefs from Social Workers and other groups covering in depth the plight of the totally poor which includes a high percentage of our elderly citizens.

However, it is not that particular aspect of poverty on which we will dwell today but rather we wish to stress the needs of the elderly, brought on by poverty, namely—The need to our elder citizen living on low income, to remain in the main stream of society, to remain a part of their community, or as an alternative they will, without assistance retreat into personal seclusion of no use to themselves or society and we will all be poorer for it.

THE PAST:

Over the past few years we have heard a lot about the elderly and their needs. A special Committee of the Senate on Aging held hearings—There was a Canadian Conference on Aging held on a National level. Hundreds of Reports have been presented and thousands of words have been written.

This is all to the good, but surely by now, we must have an understanding of the needs of the Senior Citizen. It seems that what we need now, above all else is action.

The Moncton Lions Club, although limited what it can do, recognized the need of the elderly to get together—some people would refer to it as "social belonging". We organized a Senior Citizens Club which from a very humble beginning (15 members initially) has grown to 600 and to the point that a Recreation or Activity Centre, such as the one in which we now are was required. The Moncton Lions Club built this Centre, at the cost of some \$400,000., when finished and totally furnished and dedicated it to the use and enjoyment of the Senior Citizens of the Greater Moncton Area. The Centre is in an ideal location as shown in attached EXHIBIT.

It is most important that here I make the point that, although we knocked on many doors, financial assistance from either Provincial or Federal Governments was not available. The stock answer in all cases was the same "no existing legislation that would permit such assistance".

As a Senate Committee, we would urge that this omission be noted.

I would also like to state, on behalf of the Moncton Lions Club, that it has only been through the generous assistance and hard work of the Senior Citizens themselves that we have been able to operate this Centre, while at the same time, attempt to reduce significantly the large mortgage that is carried on the Building.

Our Club considered that by building this Centre many things could be accomplished. For example:

Boredom could be replaced by activity.

New friends could be found to replace those who had passed away.

Uncommitted time could be turned into more meaningful activity.

New interests and new skills could be developed to replace trades of the past.

A lifetime of experience could be shared with others.

Senior citizens could help themselves instead of relying on others.

A good example of how Senior Citizens can and will help themselves, if given the means, is the formation of the New Brunswick Federation of Senior Citizens, a group which today will present a Brief to your Committee. This Federation had its beginning in this Centre. Senior Citizens from this Centre set out to form other Senior Citizens Clubs throughout the Province with a great degree of success. The Federation came into being as a natural result of these efforts. It has been our experience that if given a chance the Senior Citizen will not just sit around but will become very active in the area of self help.

We consider that the health of elderly people is most likely to be improved as a result of engaging in activities and in social contact with others.

We also consider that social contact and the activities that result from it will have the effect of postponing the time when some elderly people will be in need of institutional care.

Therefore, the emphasis in programs at this Centre has been both Preventive and Rehabilitative.

To this end the Centre was built and has been in operation just over one year.

2. To focus on and encourage the healthy and maximum utilization of whatever strengths and resources the Centre participants can bring to the situation.

3. To sustain participants at the highest level of social and physical activity possible in view of progressively diminishing potentials.

4. To provide a place where Senior Citizens may find companionship, an opportunity to pursue their interests in educational, craft and recreation activities, and promote the good and welfare of the community.

5. To serve as a Demonstration Centre sharing the knowledge, skills and experience gained with other organizations, agencies and communities interested in developing services for older people.

6. To serve as one vital force to educate and alert the community to action on changing attitudes towards older people, and to creating appropriate services to meet their needs.

In addition to erecting this Centre, the Moncton Lions Club has been active in other areas of interest to Senior Citizens. Through our initiative and efforts a new \$2,000,000. 10 storey high rise apartment complex containing 166 living units is to be built immediately across the street from this Centre.

We, as a Club, foresaw the need, spearheaded the program, conducted a survey and pressed for action. Our objective was twofold—FIRSTLY—Obtain a Senior Citizen Apartment Building for Moncton and—SECONDLY—to locate the Building in close proximity to this Centre.

The result of our efforts, supported at all times by the Senior Citizens themselves, is that the first sod for the apartment building will be turned within the next month and it will be in use within a year.

In appreciation for our efforts in obtaining such a building for Moncton, a first for the Province, the new high rise building will be named Lions Manor.

If you would like to know if poverty affects the senior citizen you would do well to read the message running through the hundreds of applications sent in by the elderly of Moncton. The existence of this new low rental apartment complex will be a godsend to many.

THE FUTURE:

What has been said up until now is of the past, but, what of the future? We say, that the surface has only been scratched. Yes, we have helped a few, made many a little happier, provided 500 to 600 elderly a place to go when things get rough. But what of the future and

THE STATED OBJECTIVES OF THE CENTRE ARE:

1. To help elderly persons to rediscover their own capacities, and to learn to use them so that in turn they may give service to others.

what of the hundreds of elderly we cannot reach due to lack of funds?

We submit that they will suffer poverty of mind and soul if not of body, if contact is not made with them.

A Centre such as this, if provided with Government Grants, could meet a lot of needs. The potential of service is unlimited. However, under our present budget our capabilities are limited indeed. But I can assure you that the need for service is great as can be determined from the following population figures based on a 1961 survey of the City of Moncton.

POPULATION OF MONCTON SHOWING OLDER AGE GROUPS:

Age Group	Total					
55-64	65-69	70-74	75-79	80-84	85+	65+
3,140	1,220	985	682	355	212	3,454

The older population for the Greater Moncton Area reaches approximately 8,000, and it has been suggested that the number of Senior Citizens requiring the services offered by our Centre would reach 2,500. If poverty is to be tackled, this is a good place to start.

The "Meals on Wheels Program", presently operating through this Centre two days a week, could be expanded to reach the many elderly confined to their homes. If we did nothing else but answer this pressing need among our elderly, we could feel some satisfaction in our efforts to relieve the effects of poverty.

We consider that Aging should be the concern of all and that many citizens will give freely of their time and experience to assist the Senior Citizen if given the opportunity.

We consider that the Moncton Lions Club has shown the way in this community. However, we can only do so much for the Senior Citizens because in addition to senior citizens we have several other projects, Sea Cadets, Little League, Blind Bowling to name a few. Help of a major nature is required.

We urge you as members of a Committee bent on hearing the voice of the poor, to listen to the voice of our elderly as they call for assistance.

We urge you to press for financial assistance for centres such as this. Press for easy access to grants such as those offered under National Welfare and Physical Fitness programs but which appear to be non-existent when applied for by the elderly.

Grants are required to pay the salaries of competent personnel to operate a centre and establish programs that would benefit the elderly in the many areas that they need help. A Senior Citizens Centre should be the focal point for all programs and services.

In summary, we hear a lot about rights these days but not too much about the rights of the elderly, who have given the best part of their lives to society.

We consider that the elderly have a Social Right to the many benefits that the rest of society enjoys, but in particular to the benefit of companionship that a centre of this type can give. Assistance such as requested should, in our opinion, be high on the list of the social policies for Canada.

We concede that we owe something to our youth, who as yet have contributed little to society, but to the elderly who have contributed their lifetime, we owe a great debt.

The Moncton Lions Club considers that the time for repayment of that debt is now.

As a Senate Committee, you are capable of putting the wheels of government in motion to eliminate the kind of poverty we have spoken about today.

We ask for your concern, your support, and your continued pressure for action at all levels of government. Lack of action will breed further poverty.—May your efforts breed success.

Respectfully submitted, Hugh Reardon, President, Moncton Lions Club.

The Chairman: I will ask Miss Leola McKay to present her brief.

Miss Leola McKay, President, Senior Citizens Federation: Thank you, Mr. Chairman and other members of the Senate Committee would like to extend a hearty, hopeful welcome to the members of the Senate from our senior citizens of Moncton.

Your assignment for hearings on poverty is not an easy one and I am sure is very depressing, but we are most grateful that this time being taken and only hope that with your return to Ottawa, you will have the determination to bend the ear of the leaders of our Country, to listen and do something for the benefit of our seniors.

As asked the Good Lord to send us a sunny day today to welcome the Senators and they listened and sent us a perfect day—we ask you our Senators to ask our Government to do something for our seniors—will they listen and send help?

On behalf of the senior citizens of Moncton and especially those of our Centre—a very warm welcome.

Now, I have an appeal here. As you know this is a session on poverty and I could not afford to have enough copies made for everyone but a wealthy friend of mine has offered if you wish to have my remarks, to make copies.

The Chairman: We would have made copies for you, if you had asked us. We have done it for others.

Miss McKay: Mr. Chairman and Members of the Senate, ladies and gentlemen, before presenting my brief, I would like first to take this opportunity, on behalf of the Senior Citizens of Moncton and especially those of the Lions Senior Citizens Centre, to express our thanks for the opportunity to bring to your attention, at least some of the hardships being faced today by our over growing number of senior citizens and with the hope that these comments will be placed in the proper hands to receive consideration and action to alleviate a condition which should not exist in our great country of Canada.

As we all realize, our senior citizens of today are a people almost forgotten, a senior is, in the minds of our younger generation, a person ready for a nursing home or a wheel chair, many of our seniors have met this fate long before anything like this should have taken place.

As you, Members of the Senate, can observe from your surroundings, the seniors of our Moncton Lions Senior Citizen Centre are an active group, busy in various activities to which they are talented. If it were not for our Moncton Lions our Centre would not be in existence today, this group of men, although small in number, have given our seniors a place to meet, work at their hobbies, form friendships, keep active, enjoy recreation within their means and bring some pleasure to seniors confined to nursing homes, through visits and little entertainments, and through our TV Down Memory Lane Programmes.

May I ask Senators—how much has our Government done to help our seniors? A small monthly pension, at the most a little over one hundred dollars a month (under four thousand a year is considered poverty).

How many of our representatives in Ottawa have sat down and figured how much they could do with this small pension to pay their rent, telephone (which is a necessity), food, rent soaring in price, in many cases heat and light, drugs (which most all seniors require), and many other demands of the present day needs.

Many of our seniors could exist (not live), on a small pension if other concessions were made available to them such as low rental housing (which has been in the offing here since last March and which rumors keep seeping through that it will be started each month or so then), one is lead to wonder if this is being held up for an election bait promise.

We need this housing now, many of our seniors are paying the highest of rents for miserable, cold in winter housing, some in small rooms with only four walls and little friendship. Many smaller towns and larger cities can obtain assistance to build low rental senior citizen homes, why cannot Moncton get some assistance from the government to build our high-rise apartments?

We, the seniors of Moncton, would ask the government to give conscientious thought and study to granting to the senior citizens a decent living pension, free or at least reduced prices on drugs, low rental housing; higher exemptions on taxes, at least an exemption of two thousand dollars; eliminate entirely the educational tax for seniors, they have already educated a family by paying for such education from their own pocket; a reduction in taxes for those owning and trying to hold their own homes, reduced bus fares; hearing aids and equipment necessary for same such as batteries, etc.; dentures (many seniors cannot afford these, with the result food is not properly masticated resulting in stomach disorders).

Moncton is in dire need of a nursing home for our seniors of this district. It has been my privilege to visit beautiful nursing homes in many smaller villages and towns in the province, why, with a population of over fifty thousand, is Moncton deprived of such a needed facility?

This is a necessity, not only for the older senior citizen, many of our younger seniors could be deprived of their health overnight and there is not a place in the city to accommodate them.

Granted we have private homes where some of our seniors are housed but they are unsupervised, no doctor in residence and no nurse on duty twenty-four hours.

Should a patient die during the night this would not be detected until morning, perhaps during their last hour they could have wanted some small favour, even if just not to be alone.

Why, Senators, cannot something be done for the seniors, we hear these days of the generation gap, in our days, as you no doubt can well recall, there was no such thing as a generation gap, we lived in happy homes, where children and parents were family.

Our seniors of today are the people who put the foundation under our city with sweat and toil of long hours, no forty hour a week was heard of, it was from dawn to dark, they were a proud people, happy to be in a good country, loved by all and carried their heads high to be one of a community growing for a future.

Why now should they be deprived of their right—a decent living pension, special concessions and a place in the sun. The majority of our seniors worked before pensions were thought of and anything they could have saved then would soon be devoured in today's ever sky rocketing prices, others who received pensions were on small wages thus receiving very small pensions. Our seniors of the future will not have these worries with the high wages of today, various pension plans now in effect and yet to come—these will be the fortunate seniors.

Senators—I would ask that you present this brief to the proper authorities, so that within a short time we will receive word that at last our present day seniors are being considered and something definite is taking place to assist them.

Do not place this aside for the next election promises, only to be again forgotten when the election is over.

Believe me, Senators, when you obtain definite help for our present day seniors, I guarantee when your prayers are said and you rest your head on your pillow at night, your dreams will be more peaceful.

Respectfully submitted, Miss L. McKay."

Mr. Reardon: Mr. Jack Gayne, who is a director of the Lions Club.

Mr. Jack Gayne, Director of The Moncton Lions Club: Mr. Chairman, Members of the Senate Committee, ladies and gentlemen. First, as Director of this Centre, I would like to add my welcome to the ones by our King Lion and our President. I extend a special welcome to Senator Fergusson who is very interested in our Centre and who, in the past six years, has made every effort to assist me and the Senior Citizens of New Brunswick.

Through her kindness, I had the privilege of being hosted by her to a dinner in the House of Commons and I received the thrill of my life to be seated in the Senate while the House was in session. May I again say thank you. My sincere wish is that she will enjoy her stay and find it very productive.

Mr. Chairman, though I have never had the honour of meeting you before, I feel I have known you for quite some time, as I have quoted you many times in saying that "The Senior Citizens are the most unorganized group in Canada and the ones who need it the most."

We, in New Brunswick, are trying to do something about this and in August, 1969, we organized the New Brunswick Senior Citizens Federation. I have had the honour of being the

first President of this Federation which consists of Senior Citizens from Petitcodiac, Sussex, Saint John, Fredericton, and Moncton.

We are affiliated with the National Pensioners and Senior Citizens Federation who I am pleased to say will be holding their 1970 Convention in this auditorium, September 25th and 26th.

The Brief being presented to you tonight is a copy of our Brief from the New Brunswick Federation Convention held in Saint John on June 24th and forwarded to our Provincial Government.

It is in turn a copy of some of the resolution and recommendations from the 1967 New Brunswick Conference on Senior Citizens.

At that time, Senator Fergusson was Honorary Chairman and I was one of the resource people and it was felt that the resolutions had merit. I am sure that it was through the kind assistance of Senator Fergusson that these were printed.

As our convention still believes that they have merit we are again presenting some of the recommendations to our Government and to your committee and we hope that this time some action will be taken.

In the past few years it is seldom you see a picture in the paper of grandparents and the families featuring the grandparent as kind of a resource person. Personally, I feel that if there was a return to some of this thinking maybe our teenagers could hold their Rock Festival because we would all be there. THIS IS POVERTY?

Exchange groups are able to share their knowledge with other parts of our country and I feel the labor class should be given the opportunity to share their knowledge with their class of people in other parts of our country. THIS IS POVERTY!

Our Provincial Government through the equal opportunity program have centralized their school system and supplied transportation to and from, for those attending. The Moncton Lions Club, with the assistance of the Senior Citizens, have centralized a Senior Citizens' Centre, second to none in New Brunswick, for the purpose of educating our Senior Citizens in a better life. There is no transportation for them. In fact, transportation for senior citizens is the problem all across Canada. THIS IS POVERTY!

Through the skills of many and the speed of outer space we have found out that the world is not made of green cheese, but of rock. Y millions of people all over the world are starving and not only for food. IT SEEMS TO ME THIS IS POVERTY!

I retired from the Railroad at the age of 63 and at that time they presented me with the Golden Pass which represented fifty years of service with the company. With all the retired business men and women in New Brunswick the senior citizens depend on me as their spokesman. THIS IS POVERTY!

The National Pensioners and Senior Citizens Federation are trying to speak with one voice or the Senior Citizens of Canada, but we are something like our churches, we have many voices all trying to say the same thing.

As stated before, we require an organization to speak with one voice. First we should have some assistance to speed the process. THIS IS POVERTY!

Our Lord spoke with one voice many years ago. Some people are still listening and for those who listen there IS NO POVERTY.

The Chairman: Before I call on the senators to ask questions, I think I should set the record straight. Senator Fergusson, Senator McGrand, Senator Inman and myself sat for 70 years as members of the Special Senate Committee on Aging. Senator Fournier was not a member of the Senate when the committee was appointed.

Senator Fergusson: Senator Croll was the chairman.

The Chairman: And I am a little bit perplexed. My feathers are a little ruffled when I hear people say "We want action. We want action now," as though we were sitting here doing nothing.

If you will remember the recommendation made by that Committee was for a guaranteed income for all aged people—\$75.00, which the government raised to \$105.00 and subsequently now to \$111.00.

Now, that was the most vast, most far reaching recommendation, that had been made within any one's recollection and no one since has accepted the guaranteed income in the way that we recommended here at that time.

Everybody forgets about that. That is quite right, but on the other hand it is well remembered that we here are not through now, if you take a look at us. I do not know whether they saw the old age security but I do and I do not think I make any secret about it. But we applied ourselves to that task, we made recommendations for nursing homes that are acceptable in the Province of British Columbia and acceptable in the Province of Ontario but they are very expensive, and that is why the Province of New Brunswick cannot accept it as yet.

Some of the other provinces have not. We made recommendations to do these things.

The point I would like to make is that we took our task at that time very seriously and our report was considered to be one of the most progressive, or so it was declared by the Geriatric Society of America and in Canada, and many honours were given to us because of that report; so that I really say that to these groups who are here that we are serious about the task that we are undertaking.

We are experienced and we have a problem. We are listening and when we deal with poverty we have to deal with all the people in the country. We cannot say "do this for that group and do that for that group" and the worst mistake we can make is to say "we would like you to do something for the youth. We would like to do something for the female heads of families and something for the aged".

What we wanted to do is look at poverty in its entirety. We want them to do something that takes them all out of poverty and not here and there. This is our task and I think I should make that clear. With that in mind we will start the questioning. I have Senator Fergusson, Senator Fournier.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, it is hard for me to find words to express adequately my admiration for the vision and the hard work that has been done by the Lions Club of Moncton which has resulted in this very wonderful Lions Senior Citizens' Centre. I wish there were more of these in New Brunswick and throughout Canada because they are serving a very great need.

I would like to thank Mr. Gayne for this very kind reference to me and if the Chairman has not already told you I was going to say that certainly I was interested in this area and so have most of the other senators sitting in this Committee and most of them sat on the Committee on the Aged and gave a great deal of time and thought to these problems.

But, through your centres here, you have made it possible for us older citizens to get together which, I think, is awfully important at any age, but perhaps it is even more important when you get older and many of your family have either left your home or have died. I cannot think of any greater service that can be done in a community than what you have done by providing this wonderful centre. I am sure you all realize how much of the leadership and hard work was done by Mr. Gayne, whom, I gather, from my association with the club has given a tremendous amount to bring this about.

There are a number of things that I would like to bring up as questions, but I know the others have probably a list of their own. One of my special interests is the "Meals on

Wheels," to which you referred, Mr. Reardon. I wonder if you would tell us a little bit about how it operates in Moncton, how long it has been opened and how many people you serve and what support you get for it.

Mr. Reardon: I would like to say that possibly I should refer this question to Mr. Gayne, who is our director and who is a little closer in contact with the problem than myself but may I preface these remarks by saying it is done mostly by church groups.

They come in here and use the Centre as a point from which to go out and help the needy. The reference in the Brief to this is just to point out that we are helping a very, very few people, maybe a dozen and a half or so at a time in one day. The need is so great, you know, we are just not doing anything.

It is a start. It is that first step and this is the message throughout this brief that all we have ever done here is just one step towards an end, and we need assistance. The senior citizens need assistance to help themselves.

I would like to refer back to the Chairman's remarks that we want action now. We do not mean to infer in any way that any committee or any conference—and we have sat in on quite a few conferences and offered our efforts towards having something good come out of them—we are not inferring in any way these conferences have been idle time or anything like this.

There has been a lot of effort put in them but I can see a lot of people out here, senior citizens, and I think they can vouch for it—who have been waiting seventy years for actions and it has been slow and what we are saying is that we would like to see action fast—maybe not as fast as some of the youth today. They want it now.

Everything is speeding up in this day and age but the services to the senior citizens is such—it likely applies to other segments of society—is slow and I would say this because of our dealings with senior citizens. We hear this story day after day, day after day.

With respect to your other question for "Meals On Wheels", I would ask Jack Gayne to briefly tell you about that.

Mr. Gayne: Well, I attended the first meeting of the "Meals On Wheels" and, as our president said, this was a church organization. All of the churches in Moncton took part. They started by serving about sixteen meals. Right now they are serving about twenty-four meals on Tuesdays and Thursdays from our Centre. Each church takes it for a month. One church will take it on a Tuesday and the next church will take it on a Thursday.

From The Floor: The I.O.D.E. also helps.

Mr. Gayne: Yes, the I.O.D.E. Chapters are very active in this. This is the way we work. They are trying to build it up so if they get the help they will run it every day.

Senator Fergusson: They could not have started at all if you had not provided a place from which they could serve.

Mr. Gayne: No, I would say they were working from the churches but they got so big they needed to centralize and it was an awful job to move all this paraphernalia to serve the meals so we made provision for them to have the use of our kitchens and were very pleased to have the opportunity to do so.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Chairman, I want to join Senator Fergusson in congratulating the Lions Club for what they are doing in Moncton for the senior citizens and naturally this subject has interested a lot of people including everybody on this Committee, and I am not prepared to make a speech but I could speak long time about the retiring age of people, but I would rather ask questions.

I may say one of the problems that retiring people face today is that they do not prepare for retirement and all of a sudden they find themselves out of a job, in a completely new world. They think they have lost contact with the world. They have lost all their friends. They have been working thirty-five or forty years in the same job with the same people and this is taken away all of a sudden. They are not prepared for that.

They drop into idleness and idleness will destroy physically and mentally any human being faster than anything else you can think of. That is all I will say for the moment. Now will ask some questions on your recommendations.

There is one that strikes me a little bit. On page three of your recommendations you say:

New interests and new skills should be developed to replace those of the past.

Now, I would assume here that you are dealing with retired people of about sixty-five fully retired from a trade, pensioners and so on.

Why should they develop new skills to replace an old trade or in a new trade which they will never use? Why could they not add a hobby which they will use as something to play with, something that will take care of their physical and mental desires but not tie them up? If they want to go out for a walk after so many hours, they are not tied up on any project. They are not tied to a motor or grinding wheel. Why learn a new trade which they will never use?

Mr. Reardon: I would like to say in answer to that question you will notice it starts out with new interests". I would hope this would include the suggestion of new hobbies.

We have a few here in the Centre but again we are limited to what we can do here and they need volunteers to come in and give their time and learn crafts to the senior citizens for those that want it. We have taken surveys among the senior citizens and have developed a number of crafts and hobbies they would be interested in.

We would like volunteers from the city to come in and make them resource leaders in these particular crafts and help the senior citizens. This would come in under "new interests".

Under new skills, we just say this in the sense that I do not believe—I do not think I am wrong here—that anyone from the age he starts to get interested in life until the day he dies does not want to learn something new.

Now, I work for the railway now and when I retire I hope the first thing I do is go out and learn something else that I never had a chance to do during my lifetime as a railroader. I believe many other people are this way. I do not infer here that they are going to go out and work at this to raise money or to increase their income.

I would suggest though that a person is required—and they are retiring earlier all the time—even in my own company they are suggesting now that you get out fairly early. They are giving you incentives to get out at an early age. I might like to go out and take a course during the winter time on mechanics, to fool around with a car engine or something like that. I am sure other people would do the same thing. Women would get into something else.

This is a new skill, not as a means of earning livelihood, but as a means of keeping a mind active because if we do not, then we go back to the boredom about which we spoke.

Mr. Chairman: I can see you are going to be very active in that Lion Manor. You will have your time fully occupied.

Senator Inman: Mr. Chairman, I would like to pay tribute to Senator Fergusson and Senator Fournier for their contribution to the Lions Club, Mr. Gayne and others associated with them in making this beautiful centre available to the senior citizens. I am sure it must give them great happiness and help to make life easier for them.

I have two or three questions here. On page 1, group one of your recommendations you talk of the day-care. Is this a new concept of day-care or—I have not heard of it being done

this way before—and do many of the senior citizens take advantage of this program?

Mr. Reardon: I believe that is a brief presented by Mr. Gayne's of the Federation of Senior Citizens.

Mr. Gayne: This was a resolution that came from the Conference on Aging and this is a suggestion. As far as I know this is as far as it has gone. It is a suggestion that it never got any further.

Senator Inman: It has not.

Mr. Gayne: No, and this is a good suggestion but this is as far as it has gone.

Senator Inman: Well, I think it is an excellent suggestion.

Mr. Gayne: It certainly was.

Senator Inman: You were speaking of these high-rise apartment houses. Have you any idea, what the rent will be for those apartments?

Mr. Reardon: I will answer that in that the rental here is going to be based on income and any deficit in operation will be subsidized by the three levels of government.

As I understand it, the major portion of the rentals charged here will be around \$32.50 a month and as I said earlier, this is going to be a godsend to many in the city.

We are starting with one and once this is started and into operation, we will immediately press for a second one because we have enough applications now for a second and a third one.

My hesitation in asking for or even mentioning a second one at this moment would be that we may lose the first one. At this point I think it is pretty safe to say that as soon as this is completed, we will ask for a second.

Senator Inman: At this point, could you tell me something about the facilities that will be in these apartments?

Mr. Reardon: In these apartments there are 166 living units. Every one of them are identical except the corner ones on the building. This is a large building. It is going to be situated right immediately across the street from here.

They have four rooms. There almost twenty by twenty, which is approximate. The whole area could be twenty-four and it is divided into an entrance hall with a clothes closet. Immediately right as you come in there is a bathroom. Just off the entrance way as you come in there is one bedroom and then there is a combined

living-room and kitchen with a small sort of divider inbetween. These are just four rooms.

As I understand it, there are various services that will be in there. All lights in the room will be down. There will be no ceiling lights. They will all be on the wall so no older person will have to be climbing up on a chair to replace a light bulb and fall.

There will be sockets to put in the electrical unit for your vacuum cleaner. It will all be waist-high so they will not have to bend over. The sockets or outlets are near the floor.

Each floor will have a Committee of senior citizens to look after that particular floor and they will call on their neighbours every day to see everything is going all right, to organize card parties and the like and we hope that there will be a large influx of these people right to the centre and use the facilities here.

Senator Inman: What about laundry facilities?

Mr. Reardon: There will be laundry facilities in the basement.

The Chairman: I will raise a point that is perhaps more important than laundry. Will it be gross income? Will it be net income? Will it be the income of the head of the family or will the children's income be included in fixing the rent?

Mr. Reardon: There will be no children.

The Chairman: No one thinks of the elderly.

Mr. Reardon: No family. I think this is why they deliberately make them small with one bedroom so that some of the wayward children do not come back and camp in with the father and mother.

The Chairman: What about gross or net income?

Mr. Reardon: I will assume that they will go towards the gross income which possibly could work to the detriment of some of the senior citizens if they happen to have a bank account or something else.

The Chairman: The Central Mortgage policy is to net income, not including the children. This is what have been told recently, so keep it in mind because this is the Central Mortgage policy anyway.

Mr. Reardon: Yes, they will be . . .

Senator Fergusson: I would like to know if these apartments are for couples or for a single person?

Mr. Reardon: Well, I believe that, as I understand it, at this time a lot of these things have

not got down to the basics yet although we have only got a matter of a month to do this. Again the Lions are only one part of this. We spearheaded the drive and we will also hope to be on the Board of Management that control the Centre and have a say in the operating of it so it will not revert into a low income thing.

We would like to see it spread to different levels of income. So you get a real broad section of the city of the senior citizens.

On your question about couples or singles, I think this will go back to where the great need is. If there is one single person living in a big house in the city all alone I think that person will receive preference over another couple who could get along for another little while.

Senator Fergusson: What made me ask the question was in connection with one project of senior citizens housing the requirement has been to have only couples and when it turned out that one died, the other one had to leave and this caused great unhappiness.

That same group made arrangements subsequently to provide for some single apartments so the person, who is used to living there would not necessarily have to leave when the spouse died.

Mr. Reardon: Well, we are aware of the senior citizen housing within this vicinity that it has its rules and I believe again it was one that worked to the detriment of the remaining party.

I think in this particular case—again if we are on the Board of Management, this will be one thing we will fight for very strongly.

The Chairman: Central Mortgage and Housing again will assist you because their recommendations provide that some of these be kept for single person residences. So we have no such problems.

Senator McGrand: What about the age limit. Can a person go in there at age sixty?

Mr. Reardon: I think they set the age at fifty-seven, over fifty-seven.

The Chairman: Over sixty-seven?

Mr. Reardon: Fifty-seven. Here again a permit will be given to the older person.

Senator Inman: I have one more question. On page three of this Federation Brief I am interested in this. On page three, group two at the very top of the page:

That all benefits and services available to senior citizens in New Brunswick provided by the Department of Health and Welfare be publicized and an information office

apart from the Provincial office now established . . .

and so on.

Do you suggest a personal counselling service and also by pamphlets? Do senior citizens generally not know what benefits are available?

Mr. Reardon: Well, I would say they do not and I think one of the other recommendations from the New Brunswick Conference on Senior Citizens was that all existing legislation but what now existed would come in later would be brought under one Senior Citizens Act. And, printed as such so that all people in organizations working with Senior Citizens would have a knowledge that was altogether.

If you start out to—and we found this in presenting briefs to the government before, it is a hard thing to find, information on the elderly. It is scattered everywhere and you have to go and search for it.

The Chairman: We covered this in Saint John pretty thoroughly. The Government of Newfoundland and Labrador issued a directory of services provided by the Department of Social Services and Rehabilitation. Everything is covered there; all allowances and every possible social measurement are covered there.

We recommend they do the same thing. They have done it in Alberta and other places. We think every citizen is entitled to the booklet. As a matter of fact we were of the impression that the people with whom we discussed it in Saint John were of that view so that will be covered to that extent.

Senator Fergusson: You will have to persuade the government to publish a column, Mr. chairman.

The Chairman: No, persuade the government to publish this?

Senator Fergusson: Yes, I think so. I say it is not that easy to get a pamphlet published, you know. You have to put on quite a lot of pressure.

Mr. Gayne: My impression was—and I was speaking to Senator Fergusson—at the discussion at the conference on Aging this was brought up, and this was one of the ideas of these pamphlets but they were not published. I could receive one of these. It did not mean anything to me because I would read it and then put it in the drawer the same as we do with all the rest of the things so that the idea is we should centralize it and if we had census like this, this is where the centre of information would be and you would not have to be finding it but you would get it by word of mouth. This is what we want.

Senator Inman: Personal contact.

Mr. Gayne: Yes.

The Chairman: It just occurs to me there are some young people in the audience who perhaps have views on what we oldsters here have been talking about. I see some here and I see some there. Do any of you young people have any ideas or views that you would like to express?

Mr. Hans Durstland: The focal point seems to be geriatrics but I would like to point out that there are more poor people than people on welfare. And old people. There are a lot of young people who have no money at all, who do not know where their next meal is coming from. They do not know where they are going to sleep, and this sort of thing. We would like to know whether you people are aware of that at all and whether you are aware of the magnitude of the problem, whether you have heard any representations already and whether you intend to make any sort of submission to the government about this.

For example, as far as I know, some high level cabinet minister made a snap decision to provide unemployed students with a job. As a result of their make-work project in it employs three hundred students cutting down three trees a day.

Now, if the government is going to go into some kind of work project, they might at least provide something a bit more highly useful than that.

Senator Fournier mentioned idleness as a most destructive vice but panhandling and hitch-hiking around and being dependent upon other people for your living is also not a very edifying occupation.

We would like to know whether you have heard anything from the government of what they plan to do about the large number of young people who are in effect living on the streets and so on and so forth, and whether the government is even aware of that problem.

I think Senator Fournier again mentioned hobbies and that is all very nice but a hobby is only a hobby. The fact that there are so many young people voluntarily unemployed, voluntarily poor, voluntarily transient, travelling around the country, sleeping in parks and benches and bus stops and so on, points out the fact that the jobs that are available are not very satisfying. There is either something wrong with the young people themselves or if there is something wrong with the nature of the jobs that compels young people to refuse to accept that sort of nine to five job.

For example, Paul Goodman in a drawing pointed out in 1954 if the organized system of

North America and Western European life continued unchanged, the result would almost be inevitably an entire generation of beatniks. We are the first representation of that generation of beatniks and does the government know this and will the government do anything about it.

The Chairman: Mr. Durstland, thank you very much for a very reasonable and logical presentation. I think you have got a point about the jobs. We are suffering from a lack of jobs in our country this year. We have had some bad luck in connection with our economy. We have been trying to solve, as you know, our problem with inflation. We have got ourselves into somewhat of a bind but the government is aware of the problem and trying desperately to do something about it.

Mr. McEachen, whose name should be well known to you, has been very active in attempting to define jobs for young people and help them by having available some accommodation across the country. As you know, a great number of our young people, because there are no jobs, are saying "I will see the land." That is not a bad idea, but they get a little hungry sometimes when doing it. However, these are some of the things that youth can do that we cannot do as well. But when you talk about jobs, there are jobs that are not available for older people too. This is unfortunate at this particular time, particularly in New Brunswick, but we think that situation will change and will change pretty quickly. I cannot say anymore than that to you.

Mr. Durstland: I am not interested in the number of jobs but in the quality.

The Chairman: Quality of jobs is a difficult thing to define, and skills are required for quality jobs. I do not know what skills a person has until such time as he proves it with his employer. That is what is in the man in this day and age and that is what you have to contend with. We on this committee are fully aware of it. This has been drummed into us time and time and time again. Believe me, we know what the problem is. It is going to be the solution that is going to be difficult.

Are there any other young people's groups who would like to speak?

Senator Fournier: Mr. Chairman, I would be very interested in talking with this group after this meeting is over.

Senator McGrand: What does he mean by quality of job. He mentioned cutting down three trees. What sort of job do you think would be suitable.

Mr. Durstland: I don't know whether I can speak as a representative here. I will speak personally, only for myself. I had a job for quite some time with a local radio station which was an incredible insult to my intelligence.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, may I point out that this Committee is not only interested in the elderly people. It just so happened that tonight the briefs have been presented to us have been really to do with older citizens, but we have had a great many briefs that speak about the problems of youth and we have as many people make presentations to us that have impressed us more than I can say.

I would assure you that your problems are very much in our minds and it is just because you happened to hear us on the subject of geriatrics or older people, it does not mean that we have our minds closed to your problems because you are very much in our mind and we are trying to find some solution.

The Chairman: I think I should tell you now for your information, that one of the first things we did when we started on this committee a year and a half ago was to send people to the universities.

We thought to ourselves, "Here we are going to get some new ideas and new concepts." We sent them across the country to the universities and we found when they came back they said "There is no interest." Why was there no interest? They said, "There is no sex appeal in poverty so there is no interest at all."

We did get some young people to appear before us in Vancouver. Yesterday in Saint John a couple of young people appeared and asked our views on the drop-in centre. We have had some young people from time to time but in the main it has not been of very great interest, but because they are not interested does not mean that we are not interested.

We are interested in them whether they are two years old or one year old or have had the education right up to the time they are able to look after themselves. So it is not without interest, but all things must come to an end.

Senator Fournier and some of the others will have a nice fatherly heart-to-heart talk with you right after this session is completed.

Senator Quart: May I just ask one question but first I must echo—although time is of the essence, I know, the complimentary remarks and well meant remarks of my colleague regarding the initiative taken by the Lions Club as well as all the wonderful volunteers who stood behind you, to get the building done.

Now, as regards the "Meals on Wheels" in other places, not particularly before our Committee, it has been mentioned that there are many occasions where elderly people, who could afford to pay for their meals and would pay for their meals while they are ill or for a certain period of time during the cold weather or something like this are not served. Do you cater to that type of person as well?

Mr. Reardon: Yes, we do.

Senator Quart: This is the I.O.D.E.?

Mrs. Crocker: In all the groups. The person who requests a meal will pay any amount they like to pay, a dollar. If they cannot afford anything they get it free. If they can afford a quarter, they take it. If they want to give a dollar, that is fine.

Senator Quart: Thank you very much.

Mrs. Helen Steeves: Excuse me. I happen to be one of those people who gets "Meals on Wheels" twice a week and I happen to have two of the worst things that could happen to anybody but they know I am able to get around they bring me "Meals on Wheels" and helps my appetite.

Senator Quart: Maybe that is why you look so well.

The Chairman: Have you any objection to giving your name?

Mrs. Steeves: No, Helen Steeves. I am one of the Steeves clan and I get it there from the Earl I.O.D.E. and the different churches.

Senator Quart: Do you have the Victorian Order of Nurses?

Mrs. Steeves: Yes, supervised by the V.O.N.

Female Speaker: The Council of Local Women are very much interested and involved "Meals on Wheels".

Senator Fournier: In your brief on page six you have a table and I would like to review the figures. You have age group 55-64, 3140 and then from 65 to 69 you have a drop there of 20 and then it follows on. It seems to me that drop between the first two groups is very high compared to the rest of the group. Are these two figures correct? There is a big drop there.

Mr. Reardon: These figures are exact but at the implication there is I couldn't tell. We just take them from the yearbook.

The Chairman: I think you said they were from 1961. This is 1970. I think at that time you will find it was but the trend is somewhat changed. We have the exact figures.

Mr. Durstland: May I make one more point, Mr. Chairman?

The Chairman: Yes, go ahead.

Mr. Durstland: Somebody earlier mentioned a relatively direct quote: the young people feel that the senior citizens are ready for the wheelchair and old age homes.

We do not put our grandparents into the old age homes. It is our parents who do that.

The Chairman: Thank you very much, Mr. Durstland. That is a figure of speech, you know, but I am delighted to know that you say we don't. But not all people are like you.

Miss McKay: I think that remark was made—I made that remark and I did not refer to the teenage group. It is more the young senior citizen because when people had been invited to come down to our centre when they retire they say "oh, I am not old enough". I do not know where they are going to go because they cannot stay with the teenagers.

The Chairman: May I thank you people for coming because this is "people talking to people." That is what we have been doing across the country and finding out what is in their minds and what can we do. They have been so helpful to us and they have been very understanding. They have made our task not as difficult as some one here said it is. It has been a delight and a pleasure in doing the kind of work we are. The only worry we have is about the solution, but then everybody else has worries too.

On behalf of the committee I thank you. First, I congratulate you. I thanked you before we started. I do not know if you were here when we let you know how we felt about this building and what you are doing.

Our thanks to you, Mr. Reardon, Miss McKay and Mr. Gaynes.

Mr. Reardon: May I say one word here. In our Brief, and possibly through our talks at all times, I would like to make this statement: that always behind us we have the support of the Senior Citizens and then beyond that we have the support of many, many other groups or people belonging to other organizations. It would be impossible to list all the various organizations. One was brought out, the VON and the IODE.

Without those people, we could do nothing but we could not just list them all in here. We may forget somebody and we thought it would be better to leave them out. We appreciate everything that you have done.

The Chairman: This meeting is adjourned until nine o'clock tomorrow morning. Thank you.

The meeting adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

BRIEF TO THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY
SUBMITTED BY BOYS' CLUBS OF CANADA

Preamble

Boys' Clubs of Canada is a national youth-serving organization incorporated by Federal Charter for the purpose of initiating the establishment and the programming of local autonomous Boys' Clubs to meet the unmet needs of disadvantaged youth. Presently there are 93 Boys' Clubs operating in 64 different Canadian communities, some in buildings created for the purpose and others in borrowed, leased or remodelled facilities. The annual operating budget of these clubs last year was \$1,900,000 provided mainly through United Appeal grants and Service Club support. Boys' Clubs of Canada is directed by a representative National Board and an Advisory Council comprised of outstanding citizens. The National President is Mr. J. C. Cushing, Montreal, Past Presidents are Alan D. McCall, Montreal, Trevor F. Moore, Toronto and Roger J. Hager of Vancouver, the National Director is Vernon F. McAdam. The headquarters of Boys' Clubs of Canada is located in Montreal with Regional Offices in Toronto, Vancouver, Calgary and Moncton.

Boys' Clubs of Canada appreciates the invitation of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty to present a Brief and, in doing so, it recognizes its limitations in attempting to scan the broad spectrum of poverty and in presenting a lengthy dissertation on its cause and cure. It will, however, address itself briefly to the facet of "poverty" as related to its work with the disadvantaged youth of our country, and that is the great need for adequate recognition of the simple but important factor of "Character Building for Citizenship" in the training, and the important part played by effective leadership.

It is well recognized that illness, unemployment, inadequate housing and illiteracy are major contributing causes of poverty and that, for the same token, much poverty and hardship is the end result of personal weakness, ignorance, lack of ambition and sense of responsibility.

To this end this Brief will recommend that:

(1) Actions planned or taken in assessing the problem of poverty and its cure be based upon the fundamental principles of free enterprise under which our economy operates.

(2) The interest and support of the voluntary effort be encouraged, recognized and capitalized upon for the benefit of society.

(3) Due consideration be given to the incentive for "tax relief" as opposed to "taxation" for some forms of welfare planning.

(4) A committee on youth be created to further the research, correlate the effort and activate legislation for the protection of the health and welfare of youth.

(5) The Committee recognize the important part played by leadership and set aside a section of its report to deal specifically with "leadership", its recruitment, training and its place in our society.

Our fledgling country's first major depression of its "industrial era" in the 1930's accentuated a need for "buying power" which resulted in somewhat hastily conceived welfare programmes, some with political implications, in succession: family allowances, unemployment insurance, old age pension and now medicare, with some thought on the "guaranteed annual income". Unquestionably some of these major welfare programmes have contributed immeasurably to the well-being of the citizens of our country. In addition to providing "purchasing power" more people have enjoyed a higher standard of living; the lot of the aged and opportunities for the young have been enhanced. Combined with the general raising of the school leaving age, increased opportunity for higher education, more adequate hospitalization for the sick, and a general recognition on the part of municipal and provincial governments of their responsibility in meeting many well-established welfare needs through tax funds, the lot of the poor, the needy and the less fortunate has improved.

The fact remains, however, that "poverty" is still a major problem not only for those so enmeshed but also for the concerned citizen and his elected leaders.

To eliminate poverty at the expense of the freedom of the individual, as is so apparent under the communistic form of government, is a travesty unacceptable to freedom loving citizens. In a free viable society, however, it is reasonable to assume that the non-productive citizen is a heavy load and when this comes about through poverty attributable to personal

shortcomings, weaknesses and indiscretions, it should be cause for concern calling for serious consideration and action.

By tradition in our country, measures of protection for its citizens through law and order have been the responsibility of the state; at the same time, plans and programmes for the well-being of the sick, the aged, the unfortunate and the destitute have originated primarily through the interest and the private support of the individual responding to the inherent desire to be "my brother's keeper". As programmes broadened and needs were recognized, state support by varying levels of government became the accepted practice. Particularly in the last half century have tremendous strides been made. We have travelled the road in this short period from private to state (tax) support of playgrounds, the indigent, the ill, the homeless child, the care of the delinquent minor and the handicapped, to mention only a few, with a multiplicity of federal protective programmes to prevent or to alleviate poverty. As the accepted standard of living has increased the state's acceptance or recognition of a "need" has led to the discovery of "new needs" and this has been good.

Possibly we have now reached the stage where it is wise and expedient to leave the hit and miss evolution of meeting welfare needs of the people to a planned programme of action, a "Charter for Change" for the advancement of the democratic ideal.

In the immediate future the needs of youth, the involvement of youth, the influencing of youth should be of major concern. The short term need is to recognize promptly and to set in motion programmes to counteract the work of the "activist" and his influence on our uncommitted youth. The long term needs involve the recognition by government at all levels of its "stake in and responsibility for" its young citizens who, as they grow into adulthood, become either productive or unproductive units in our society. Where the balance is on the plus side we have prosperity and contentment; however, when it veers to the minus side, the result is discontent which eventually leads to chaos. The young citizen should be taught at an early age that the price of democratic freedom is the acceptance of responsibility which will grow in importance as he grows in stature and in competence. We accept the family unit as the basis of our society. We encourage and protect this unit in a multiplicity of ways. Poverty, from whatever source it springs, is the main disruptive force that weakens and eventually destroys this basic family unit. To repeat an earlier observation, where this disruptive force is caused by human weakness the answer seems to us to be apparent.

The only power on earth that can change an individual is his personal desire to make that change. The answer then is to aid that individual, particularly during his formative years, to desire to make of his Godgiven power of life the best possible use as a productive unit of the society in which he lives. The power, of example, the influence of leadership that provides the incentive to succeed, the desire to help, the will to live a full life may be intangible forces. We recognize, however, that where these are "good" they produce good results and where they are "bad" they work to the detriment of the individual and of society.

The well-known environmental factors that affect the growing individual are the home, the church, the school, industry and leisure. Gradually we have broadened the influence of government in all these areas. Today probably as never before in history has the "speed of change" accentuated the need for planned action. The home no longer fills the human needs it met even a decade or so ago, the influence of the church has waned, the school has increased in importance but has it fully answered the question—"Education for what?" The great industrial strides give strength to our economy and, at the same time, give to man greater leisure. How will he use it? Constructively only if he has acquired the desires and the rudimentary skills in his youth. To this point much of the training for leisure for all ages has stemmed from private initiative and through private support. Unquestionably it has been of a hit or miss nature and accepted for tax support mainly through expediency. In our opinion, if our form of society is to prevail, the lot of the individual must become the first concern of government and to this end Boys' Clubs of Canada humbly submit these recommendations for consideration.

(1) As a democracy with an economy based upon the general principles of free enterprise, in assessing the problem of "poverty" and its cure, we urge that actions planned or taken be based upon these fundamental principles of free enterprise. We deplore the growing trend toward a "welfare state" as we believe it has effect, particularly upon the young, to be debilitating. Although we recognize on the simple basis of common decency that some human needs should, for both equality and economy, be met through state support plans, we believe that the citizen during his productive years should be encouraged to recognize that individual rights are based upon the acceptance of corresponding individual responsibilities.

(2) In the firm belief that most "welfare" plans have originated through the interest and support of voluntary effort, we urge that this great force for good be encouraged, recognized and capitalized upon for the ongoing benefit of society. The basic principles of free enterprise; initiative, efficiency and economy, with their productive results, are equally important in "welfare" as in business or in government. The years of voluntary, dedicated, interested personal service and support that go into the evolution and operation of organizations created for the well-being of society should not be lost when their value is recognized to the extent that tax support accepts the responsibility. We urge the adoption of the principle of "joint acceptance" whereby the tax dollar be used in part with the voluntary dollar on a co-operative basis, thereby recognizing and encouraging the continuance of the volunteer effort which in many instances is beyond price.

(3) We believe in the principle of "tax relief incentives" as opposed to "taxation" for the creation and operation of some welfare plans. Wider acceptance of "charitable donations" deductions and added incentives for more generous "giving" would broaden the effectiveness of private welfare.

(4) We commend the government for its actions in recognizing hazards in the growing use or abuse of health destroying or morale weakening substances or influences and the protective measures being planned or taken with particular concern for the young. As an organization interested in youth we know that bad habits are much easier to prevent than they are to cure, we therefore urge the establishment of a permanent "Committee on Youth" composed of elected members of government, the civil service and representatives of national youth serving organizations to research, correlate effort and activate legislation for the protection of the health and welfare of our most valuable asset—our youth.

(5) We commend the action of the government in establishing the "Task Force on Sport", praise the content of its findings and recommendations and urge serious consideration of the section on "Facilities". The growing importance of leisure makes it imperative that every child has the opportunity, the physical facilities and the leadership required to develop in him the desire "to increase in wisdom and stature and in favour with God and man". Although we recognize the overriding

interest in spectator sport and the national desire for being amongst the winners when the flags are raised and the medals presented, recreation should cover the whole gamut from sport to cultural pursuits, each having its important place. These individual needs cannot be met by mass programmes. They call for a specialized approach and will be best met through the combined effort of the voluntary agency and the government.

(6) While recognizing that there are many approaches necessary in providing for the well-being of society, particularly for the less fortunate, i.e. proving the need, acquiring facilities, activating programmes and financing the effort, the most important factor is the recruiting, training and dedication of the leadership. We have already stressed the need for and importance of top-level policy-making leadership. Here we desire to emphasize the place of the professional worker with youth. The questions of particular concern to youth-serving organizations are:

(a) How do we enhance the profession of youth leadership to give it the prestige it warrants, the working conditions and remuneration it requires?

(b) Where do we find the facilities for adequately training and inspiring the individual who wants to dedicate his life to the service of youth?

(c) How do we set up safeguards to protect youth from the influence of leaderships that are destructive to the individual or to the society in which he lives?

If we are to face up to the problems of poverty that confront us, we believe that the most important single factor is the question of professional leadership—the contact between society that wants to aid and those who need it, the force that through its training, dedication and desire helps to mold the actions of others.

We commend the work of the Fitness and Amateur Sport Directorate Department of National Health and Welfare for its start on assistance for the training of workers in their field of endeavour and recommend that the effort be increased and broadened in its scope.

We strongly urge the Senate Committee on Poverty to set aside a section of its Report to deal specifically with "Leadership", its recruitment, training and its place in our society.

We also hope that out of this important study the Committee will present a plan broad enough to meet the needs, practical enough for implementation and interesting enough to catch the vision of all the people.

Special Senate Committee

As an organization whose primary concern is for youth, we look for the day in this great country of ours when our children to the best of our ability will be assured of healthy bodies and educated minds and will have the desire to use both for their personal advancement and for the well-being of the society in which they live.

Respectfully submitted,
BOYS' CLUBS OF CANADA

J. C. Cushing
National President

Vernon F. McAdam
National Director

6 Weredale Park,
Montreal 215, Que.
October 30th, 1969.

"APPENDIX "B"

A SUBMISSION
OF THE
MONCTON LIONS CLUB
ON
POVERTY — AS IT AFFECTS THE SENIOR CITIZEN

SUBMITTED BY
THE MONCTON LIONS CLUB
To
THE SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

August 5, 1970

INDEX

Items
The Past
The Stated Objectives of the Centre
The Future
Population Statistics
Appeal
Summary
Chairman, Honourable Members of the
Senate Committee on Poverty:
A very sincere welcome to Moncton and to
the Lions Senior Citizens' Centre.
In my capacity as President of the Moncton
Lions Club, the sponsors of the Senior Citizens'
Club in Moncton and the operators of this
centre, I am pleased to appear before this
Senate Committee on behalf of our club membership
and to express our views on poverty as it affects
the senior citizen.
As a club, we are very much aware of the
many aspects of poverty and have seen, in
company with many other organizations in our
city, the devastating affect poverty can have
on the senior citizen. It has been with deep
concern that we along with others, have noted
the struggle some of our elderly must make to
maintain an existence while the rest of society
passes them by.
There is no doubt that you will be receiving
reports from social workers and other groups
dealing in depth the plight of the totally poor
which includes a high percentage of our elderly
citizens.
However, it is not that particular aspect of
poverty on which we will dwell today but

rather we wish to stress the needs of the elderly,
brought on by poverty, namely—the need of
our elder citizen, living on low income, to
remain in the mainstream of society, to remain
a part of their community, or as an alternative
they will, without assistance, retreat into personal
seclusion of no use to themselves or
society and we will all be poorer for it.

The Past:

Over the past few years we have heard a lot
about the elderly and their needs. A Special
Committee of the Senate on Aging held hearings—
there was a Canadian Conference on Aging held
on a national level. A New Brunswick Conference
on Senior Citizens was also held, besides the many
meetings and conferences held on a local level.
Hundreds of reports have been presented and
thousands of words have been written.

This is all to the good, but surely by now,
we must have an understanding of the needs of
the senior citizen. It seems that what we need
now, above all else, is action.

The Moncton Lions Club, although limited in
what it can do, recognized the need of the elderly
to get together—some would refer to it as
"social belonging". We organized a Senior
Citizens Club which from a very humble
beginning (15 members initially) has grown to
600 and to the point that a recreation or activity
centre, such as the one in which we now
stand, was required. The Moncton Lions Club
built this centre, at the cost of some \$400,000.,
when finished and totally furnished and dedicated
it to the use and enjoyment of the Senior
Citizens of the Greater Moncton Area. The
centre is in an ideal location as shown in
attached Exhibit.

It is most important that here I make the point that, although we knocked on many doors, financial assistance from either provincial or federal governments was not available. The stock answer in all cases was the same "no existing legislation that would permit such assistance".

As a Senate Committee, we would urge that this omission be noted.

I would also like to state, on behalf of the Moncton Lions Club, that it has only been through the generous assistance and hard work of the senior citizens themselves that we have been able to operate this centre, while at the same time, attempt to reduce significantly the large mortgage that is carried on the building.

Our club considered that by building this centre many things could be accomplished. For example:

- *Boredom could be replaced by activity.
- *New friends could be found to replace those who had passed away.
- *Uncommitted time could be turned into more meaningful activity.
- *New interests and new skills could be developed to replace trades of the past.
- *A lifetime of experience could be shared with others.
- *Senior citizens could help themselves instead of relying on others.

A good example of how senior citizens can and will help themselves, if given the means, is the formation of the New Brunswick Federation of Senior Citizens, a group which today will present a brief to your committee. This federation had its beginning in this centre. Senior citizens from this centre set out to form other senior citizens clubs throughout the province with a great degree of success. The federation came into being as a natural result of these efforts. It has been our experience that if given a chance, the senior citizen will not just sit around but will become very active in the area of self help.

We consider that the health of elderly people is most likely to be improved as a result of engaging in activities and in social contact with others.

We also consider that social contact and the activities that result from it will have the effect of postponing the time when some elderly people will be in need of institutional care.

Therefore, the emphasis in programs at this Centre has been both preventive and rehabilitative.

To this end the centre was built and has been in operation just over one year.

The Stated Objectives of the Centre are:

1. To help elderly persons to rediscover their own capacities, and to learn to use them so that, in turn they may give service to others.
2. To focus on and encourage the health and maximum utilization of whatever strengths and resources the Centre participants can bring to the situation.
3. To sustain participants at the highest level of social and physical activity possible in view of progressively diminishing potentials.
4. To provide a place where senior citizens may find companionship and opportunity to pursue their interests in educational craft and recreation activities, and promote the good and welfare of the community.
5. To serve as a demonstration centre sharing the knowledge, skills and experience gained with other organizations, agencies and communities interested in developing services for older people.
6. To serve as one vital force to educate and alert the community to action on changing attitudes towards older people, and to create appropriate services to meet their needs.

In addition to erecting this centre, the Moncton Lions Club has been active in other areas of interest to senior citizens. Through our initiative and efforts a new \$2,000,000. 1 storey high rise apartment complex, containing 166 living units is to be built immediately across the street from this centre.

We, as a club, foresaw the need, spearheaded the program, conducted a survey and pressed for action. Our objective was twofold:

Firstly—Obtain a senior citizen apartment building for Moncton and—

Secondly—To locate the building in close proximity to this centre.

The result of our efforts, supported at all times by the senior citizens themselves, is that the first sod for the apartment building will be turned within the next month and it will be in use within a year.

In appreciation for our efforts in obtaining such a building for Moncton, a first for the province, the new high rise building will be named Lions Manor.

If you would like to know if poverty affects the senior citizen you would do well to read the message running through the hundreds of applications sent in by the elderly of Moncton. The existence of this new low rental apartment complex will be a godsend to many.

The Future:

What has been said up until now is of the past—what of the future? We say, that the surface has only been scratched. Yes, we have helped a few, made many a little happier, provided 500 to 600 elderly a place to go when things get rough. But what of the future and what of the hundreds of elderly we cannot reach due to lack of funds.

We submit that they will suffer poverty of mind and soul if not of body, if contact is not made with them.

A centre such as this, if provided with government grants, could meet a lot of needs. The potential of service is unlimited, however, under our present budget our capabilities are limited indeed. But I can assure you that the need for service is great as can be determined from the following population figures based on a 1961 survey of the City of Moncton.

POPULATION OF MONCTON SHOWING OLDER AGE GROUPS

Age Group						Total
<u>55-64</u>	<u>65-69</u>	<u>70-74</u>	<u>75-79</u>	<u>80-84</u>	<u>85+</u>	<u>65+</u>
3,140	1,220	985	682	355	212	3,454

The older population for the Greater Moncton area reaches approximately 8,000, and it has been suggested that the number of senior citizens requiring the services offered by our Centre would reach 2,500. If poverty is to be tackled this is a good place to start.

The "Meals On Wheels Program" presently operating through this centre two days a week, could be expanded to reach the many elderly confined to their homes. If we did nothing else but answer this pressing need among our elderly, we could feel some satisfaction in our efforts to relieve the effects of poverty.

We consider that aging should be the concern of all and that many citizens will give freely of their time and experience to assist the senior citizen if given the opportunity.

We consider that the Moncton Lions Club as shown the way in this community. However, we can only do so much for the Senior Citizen because in addition to Senior Citizens we have several other projects, Sea Cadets, Little League, Blind Bowling to name a few. Help of major nature is required.

AN APPEAL

We urge you as members of a committee bent on hearing the voice of the poor, to listen to the voice of our elderly as they call for assistance.

We urge you to press for financial assistance for Centres such as this. Press for easy access to grants such as those offered under national welfare and physical fitness programs but which appear to be non-existent when applied for by the elderly.

Grants are required to pay the salaries of competent personnel to operate a Centre and establish Programs that would benefit the elderly in the many areas that they need help. A senior citizens centre should be the focal point for all programs and services.

SUMMARY

We hear a lot about rights these days but not too much about the rights of the elderly, who have given the best part of their lives to society.

We consider that the elderly have a Social Right to the many benefits that the rest of society enjoys, but in particular to the benefits of companionship that a centre of this type can give. Assistance such as requested should, in our opinion, be high on the list of the social policies for Canada.

We concede that we owe something to our youth, who as yet have contributed little to society, but to the elderly who have contributed their lifetime, we owe a great debt.

The Moncton Lions Club considers that the time for repayment of that debt is now.

As a Senate Committee, you are capable of putting the wheels of government in motion to eliminate the kind of poverty we have spoken about today.

We ask for your concern, your support, and your continued pressure for action at all levels of government. Lack of action will breed further poverty.—May your efforts breed success.

Respectfully submitted,
H. T. Reardon, President
Moncton Lions Club



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament
1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE

ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 63

THURSDAY, AUGUST 6, 1970

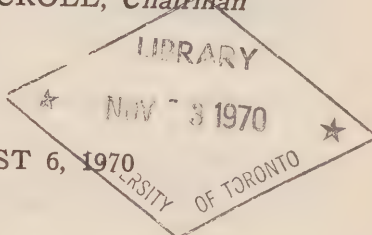
WITNESSES:

New Brunswick Federation of Labour. The Canadian Civil Liberties Association (Fredericton, N.B. Chapter). The Mysterious East. Greater Moncton Community Chest Inc. Conseil Régional d'Aménagement du Nord-Est (CRAN).

(See the MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS for the names of the witnesses who were heard by the committee.)

APPENDICES:

- "A"—Brief submitted by The New Brunswick Federation of Labour (C.L.C.).
- "B"—Brief submitted by The Canadian Civil Liberties Association, Fredericton, New Brunswick Chapter.
- "C"—Brief submitted by the Editors of *The Mysterious East*.
- "D"—Brief submitted by Greater Moncton Community Chest Inc.
- "E"—Brief submitted by Le Conseil Régional d'Aménagement du Nord-Est (CRAN).



MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche,</i> <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Mada-waska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—

Resolved in the affirmative."

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

Moncton, New Brunswick,
Lions Senior Citizens' Centre,
THURSDAY, August 6, 1970.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators Croll (*Chairman*), Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Inman, McGrand and Quart—(6).

In attendance: Mr. Frederick J. Joyce, Director.

The following witnesses were heard:

New Brunswick Federation of Labour: Mr. Gregory Murphy, Secretary-Treasurer; Mr. Frederick D. Hodges, Vice-President; Mr. Ed. Johnston, Director of Organization, Canadian Labour Congress.

The Canadian Civil Liberties Association (Fredericton, N.B. Chapter): Mr. Richard Bryan McDaniel.

The Mysterious East: Mr. Russell A. Hunt; Mr. Robert Campbell.

The Committee adjourned at 12 noon.

At 1.30 p.m. the Committee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators Croll (*Chairman*), Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Inman, McGrand and Quart—(6).

In attendance: Mr. Frederick J. Joyce, Director.

The following witnesses were heard:

Greater Moncton Community Chest Inc.: Mrs. M. H. MacKee, Executive Director; Mr. E. K. Robb, Chairman, Budget and Admission Committee; Mr. R. S. Dickie, President and Campaign Chairman; Mr. E. A. Cotton, Regional Director, Boys' Clubs of Canada; Mr. Ronald Johnson, Executive Director, East End Boys' Club.

Conseil régional d'aménagement du Nord-Est (CRAN): Mr. André Boudreau.

A Sub-Committee made a visit to the Northeast coast of New Brunswick August 6-7, 1970. A report of this visit immediately follows these proceedings.

The following briefs were presented and ordered to be printed as appendices to these proceedings.

"A"—Brief submitted by The New Brunswick Federation of Labour (C.L.C.).

"B"—Brief submitted by The Canadian Civil Liberties Association, Fredericton, New Brunswick Chapter.

"C"—Brief submitted by the Editors of *The Mysterious East*.

"D"—Brief submitted by Greater Moncton Community Chest Inc.

"E"—Brief submitted by Le Conseil Régional d'Aménagement du Nord-Est (CRAN).

The Committee adjourned at 4.00 p.m.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

VISIT TO EAST COAST NEW BRUNSWICK, AUGUST 7, 1970

A group of Senators and staff visited a number of locations in N.E. New Brunswick, talking with a large number of poor people in their own environment. Senators Fergusson, Quart and McGrand of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty, as well as Senator H. J. Michaud, Fred Joyce, Richard Lord and Robert McKenzie, the messenger, attended the tour. The tour was arranged by the staff of the Department of Health and Welfare in the Province of New Brunswick under the direction of Mr. Georgio Gaudet. The group left Moncton at 8:30 a.m. and returned that night at 11:15. In my opinion, it was an extremely valuable day, and probably the best tour that members of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty have participated in.

The group that I was with visited the following areas:

Buctouche—The home of K. C. Irving.

Senator Quart visited with a citizens group which outlined to her the problems of the fishermen in that area. The River Canaan is closed on their side to clam fishermen. It is open on the other side. The people in the area, 35 families, either fish for clams or commute to Moncton to work as labourers—with unemployment running at about 12 percent, most of them are unemployed and living on welfare. They cannot fish in the river, and another river where they fish lobsters has been converted to a conservation area where lobster fishing is not allowed. At the same time, in the same river, private lobster beds were granted to the Richard family. I am going to check with the Department of Fisheries to determine the reasons for the river being closed to clam fishermen. It is still open to swimming.

The second place we visited was a lumber camp operated on crown lands leased by Senator G. P. Burchill. The jobber who is cutting timber leases the rights to do this from Senator Burchill.

The camp is 25 miles northwest of Newcastle. It has in it, 35 cutters and stackers. The living accommodation is deplorable. There are 8 men to each hut which measure approximately 10'×18'. There is no electricity, no running water. The men arrive early Monday morning, and stay until Friday night in these conditions. The only water supply they have is a stream of questionable purity across the road from their camp. A good wood cutter can cut 3 cords of wood per day, at \$7.00 per cord for \$21.00 a day for an 8 hour day. He supplies his own chain-saw which costs about \$400.00 with financing included. A chain-saw lasts one year and on the average, uses one chain per month at \$16.00 and \$1.00 worth of fuel per day. Doing some basic arithmetic, the following is what comes out:

Weekly Earnings	\$101.00		
Less Income Tax, Unemployment Insurance, etc.	21.00	=	\$ 80.00
Less Room and Board	12.00	=	68.00
Less Cost of Saw	24.00	=	44.00
Less Cost of Chain	4.00	=	40.00
Less Fuel for Saw	6.00	=	34.00
Less Transportation to and from home	4.00	=	\$ 30.00
			=====

The net of \$30.00 per week for these small businessmen means that they are working for .75 an hour, living under conditions where prisoners would revolt.

The interesting part of the visit to the lumber camp was that many of the men spoken to had been there many years. They all knew they would be better off on welfare, and yet continue to work and live under what I would consider medieval conditions in 1970.

The conditions under which they live and work could easily be rectified through Provincial legislation. Some assistance could be rendered to make it easy for these men to get small business loans to finance the purchase of their chain-saws.

An ecological comment.

The method they use to cut and the waste that results virtually ensures that no trees of any size will grow where they cut for about 15 years.

Tracadie

The group moved to the Tracadie area to meet with the families of the wood workers. In general, I have personally never seen any worse living accommodation on the North American Continent. They are in about the same category as the accommodation in Whitehorse for the Indians in the marsh.

For example:

A family with 11 children and a male and female live in a one-room home which was no bigger than 14×20'. There was no water, no heat, and no electricity. Light was provided by a coal-oil lamp. The house has finally been condemned and the family is moving into better accommodation.

In the 11 years in which the family resided in this home, a Social Worker visited only twice. The home was immaculate; the children very well dressed and apparently in good health. Their only wish was better accommodation and a decent wage for cutting wood.

We visited a widow about 35 years of age with 6 children. Her husband was killed four years ago in a freak accident. She has been living for the 4 years under the most incredible conditions. She is living in a two-storey frame house with no windows upstairs, no beds upstairs for the children to sleep on. The downstairs consists of a very small living room, a very small bedroom, and a fire-trap for a kitchen. The floor in the kitchen had holes in it about 2 sq. ft. in area in two separate places. To note the condition of the home, one of the children fell through the floor from the second-storey to the first-storey onto the stove. The hole is still there.

Water was provided by a pump. The home was an absolute disaster. The woman in my opinion, was completely beaten, completely incapable of coping with her problem. The Welfare department wants her to stay there because they only have to pay \$10.00 a month rent. I personally would not be surprised if I read in the newspaper—Widow of 6 children commits suicide—She is obviously getting no rehabilitative help from anyone and lives in conditions that the society for the prevention of cruelty to animals would not allow. The woman is about 50 per cent better off now than she was 3 years ago. Three years ago the Provincial Government took over the responsibility for the ad-

ministration of welfare. There were, in this area, a number of relatively new and well-kept homes. Enquiring as to who lived there and what they did, it was determined that the husbands were working in Ontario while the families remained behind.

The last place the group visited was to the home of the president of the poor peoples association. She had basically only one desire. She wanted only that people be paid a decent wage for the work they did. She felt that it was immoral and unjust in a society such as Canada that there should be so many people who are working full time and still unable to provide themselves with a decent standard of living.

She suggested that the wages earned must be significantly increased and that legislation be changed to improve the working conditions of those who worked in the woods. She sounded a word-of-warning that time is running out, that the poor's needs must be recognized and action taken to work with them to help solve their problem.

In my opinion, the tour was exceptionally well organized. The people with whom the group talked with were humble, decent, and only wanted what they felt had been denied them. They did not want much.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY EVIDENCE

August 6, 1970,

Moncton, New Brunswick.

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Senator David A. Croll (*Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Chairman: I will call the meeting to order. We have a submission today by the New Brunswick Federation of Labour, represented by Mr. Frederick D. Hodges, vice-president, and Mr. Gregory Murphy, secretary-treasurer. With them is Mr. Ed Johnston, director of the organization for the Atlantic Provinces, Canadian Labour Congress.

Mr. Hodges will present his brief and the others will be ready to answer questions.

Mr. Frederick D. Hodges, Vice-President, New Brunswick Federation of Labour: Mr. Chairman, honourable senators, I am here again.

Our President, Brother Paul LePage is on a well deserved holiday and the VP of this area is on a holiday and unable to be found. Therefore I am what is known as a pinch-hitter. The last time I was before you I didn't have the resources I have today. We have Brother Johnston from Cape Breton and Brother Murphy, the secretary-treasurer, who belongs to the area.

We would like to bring to your attention on page 1 a little bit about the formation of the Federation. The Federation has been existent since February 25, 1914, and it is composed of different unions with 163 locals and roughly 25,000 members. Also affiliated are seven labour councils representing major communities in our province. It is estimated we represent 112,500 union members and their families out of an estimated New Brunswick population of 625,000.

We will start at page 13:
New Brunswick Federation of Labour's Views

Our Federation seriously respect the task you have undertaken and we fully realize that there is no simple solution to poverty.

We feel it will take the efforts of many people, groups, organizations and various government departments and agencies.

We sincerely hope that your recommendations will lead to a dedicated effort to make Canada a better place to live in for all Canadians.

In line with what we have just said, we would like to offer our views in those areas where we feel it would be of most benefit for the plight of the poor.

1. Encourage Collective Bargaining—Mr. William Mahoney, National Director of the United Steelworkers of America in an article that appeared in the *Toronto Daily Star* on February 6th said:

"...actually free collective bargaining and the growth of democratic trade unionism has been something that has been tolerated in this country rather than encouraged."

Trade unionism found its start in the ranks of the poor. Legislation, employers and Labour relations boards are continuously placing roadblocks in the way of workers seeking their universal human right 'to form and to join trade unions for the protection of their interest'. Canada, through its eleven jurisdictions of labour must revamp their thinking in this area and think of the people, in line with the conventions and recommendations of the I.L.O. as a minimum standard. A country such as ours should be setting the example rather than trying to catch up. It should be borne in mind that only 21 per cent of the work force in New Brunswick is organized as compared with 30 per cent in Canada.

2. Minimum Wage-Fixing—We are of the firm belief that people as human beings still take pride in themselves and their families. Minimum wage legislation must provide workers with an incentive to work. Minimum wage rates should be established at a level that would maintain a suitable standard of living for a family unit of husband, wife and two children. They should be adjusted upwards with the cost-of-living. Once a worker begins to make a contribution to the economy he will want to seek ways and

means to improve his status to purchase those goods and services that will make living more enjoyable for his family.

3. Economic Development—We have focused some of our concern earlier on this question. The continuing out-migration of our people which was 35,127 between 1961-1966 (Second Annual Review, Atlantic Provinces Economic Council) represented over 80 per cent under 29 years of age. Thus, due to the tendency to migrate in the more productive age groups, there is an excess of those in the age groups who are unable to work because they are either too old or too young. This relatively larger number of dependents lowers the per capita income. With an expenditure over \$30 million planned for the caring of the province's 50,000 poor in 1970, we must make it our task to provide good paying jobs to keep our young people here and attract new immigrants to our region.

The expansion of existing industry coupled with the new industry we are able to attract to our province under the Regional Development Incentives Act will determine for us and our children whether or not, we are really a true partner of Confederation or an economic unit expected to fend for oneself.

4. Education—Our Federation respect the efforts being made by the New Brunswick Government to upgrade our school facilities, our teachers and finally our children. We are very much concerned though with the opportunities of those students that must venture to university under government loans and who have borrowed their maximum and are not able to continue their education. Also the handicap of leaving university and having to repay the loan, at a time when the individual is contemplating marriage or had married and is committed to further responsibilities of a young married couple. Realizing education is a provincial responsibility, we see no reason why the federal Government in co-operation with the provinces cannot undertake a program that will not deny to a student an opportunity to complete his education to the maximum of his ability without financial obstacles over his or her head.

We are concerned about adult education especially in the area under Manpower programs, where unemployed persons can have educational upgrading in order to give an individual an educational level that will allow him to pursue a trade or course at a trade school. It is our feeling that such programs should also include leadership training so that the unemployed person can assist himself in

other areas. Such programs are provided for management personnel under a heading such as supervisory training.

We are concerned about the use of the Memramcook Institute of Continuous Learning. The Institute, a new venture in adult education in New Brunswick is not being fully utilized for the role for which it was designed. We find the institution being used more and more by management for the training of their supervisory staffs while those in dire need of adult education are being neglected.

We are concerned about our New Brunswick universities and our New Brunswick professors in the role of leadership and adult education. Very little is being done in this area in comparison with what has taken place in our sister province, Nova Scotia at St Francis Xavier University and Dalhousie University. Universities should not be regarded as monuments of stone and places of learning for our children. They must become involved in the total community about them.

5. Housing—Realizing that the family unit is the basic unit in our society, we must change our attitudes in making available housing to our citizenry. A task force and housing conferences have discussed this problem. It is said a person must earn \$8,500 in order to qualify for a NHA loan. Where does this leave those people in poverty? If people in poverty could acquire a home, the pride of such ownership will encourage them to improve their well-being to an even greater extent. More efforts must be made by governments to eliminate land speculation by land assembly. Moneys should be made available from the Canada Pension Plan and private pension plans at a better rate of interest for home mortgages. Mortgages could be extended for a longer period of time, e.g. up to 5 years, as in Australia. The setting of rents for low rental housing should be changed to give low-income workers some incentive to increase their incomes. Changes in the building code, new products and methods in building homes and the provision of services should be studied by government agencies and private industry. Municipalities should be encouraged to provide more residences for senior citizens.

6. Credit Unions and Co-operatives—The organizations founded among poor people are playing their role to some extent yet. It appears that such self-help groups are tolerated by government but not encouraged. We encourage our Eskimo people to do this

co-operatively but wherever there may be a conflict with 'free enterprise', nothing is done to encourage the development of co-operatives. Sometimes we feel the leaders of such social movements have lost sight of their real purpose. Governments should encourage the development of the credit union and co-operative movements by having specific government departments to encourage people with low incomes to organize and become members of such groups. Credit unions and co-operatives already established should be required to educate their members on consumer affairs and to make a sincere effort to help people on low incomes become members of their movement. The defenders of our free enterprise system should not oppose this type of self-help for those in poverty as they will soon become an asset to all in our society.

7. Present Social Security Programs—There are some responsible people that consider present social welfare legislation as 'free stuff'. Over 50 per cent of said moneys is raised by special taxes while another 30 per cent is from employee-employer contributions. Moneys raised for workmen's compensation, unemployment insurance, Canada Pension Plan, provincial hospitalization, provincial medical care and old age security are a form of prepaid insurance that places an unwarranted burden on the low income groups.

We support a complete review of our present social security programs with a view of greater co-ordination between all programs. It is hoped that said programs will be geared to the cost-of-living to assure those people on fixed incomes will not move further down economic scales. All private pension plans should have clauses to give retirees increases as the cost-of-living rises.

A greater liaison should be established between administrators of manpower, unemployment insurance and welfare agencies to assure each citizen that the most is being done when he or she is in distress.

8. Taxation—We urge a complete revamping of our taxation systems based on the Carter Commission Report. People should be allowed enough income to maintain oneself and family prior to being required to pay taxes. Serious consideration should be given to the negative income tax as suggested by Mr. Reuben Baetz, Executive Director of the Canadian Welfare Council.

Conclusion

Senators, your task is not an easy one. We do hope our submission will be of some value in your final conclusions.

May we leave with you the motto of the International Labour Organization which was founded in 1919 with Canada as a founding member, 'Poverty anywhere constitutes a danger to prosperity everywhere.'

The Chairman: Thank you, Mr. Hodges.

Senator Fournier: This is a union brief and it shows evidence of difference of opinion between management and employees. I would like to ask a few questions here. On page 12 you say:

That increased wages to employees will make management become more efficient either by new production techniques or better management.

At this point I will stop and say I think we are all aware that new production technique includes usually more push buttons and lay-offs.

Then you go on to say:

Workers cannot be expected to subsidize a weak management or an industry that is not viable by being paid inadequate wages or having poor working conditions.

Now again you mention weak management and inadequate wages. I don't disagree with that. What about management, even if we call it weak management, subsidizing a poor worker, a man who does not earn his money, whether it is \$2 or \$3? Do you think management should keep him? You have an employee who doesn't earn his money, for many reasons.

Mr. Ed Johnston, Director for the Atlantic Provinces, Canadian Labour Congress: First of all, if I might comment on that question. Number one, I don't think I would agree that efficient new technology in industry means more unemployment. I think one of the things we have to face is if our country is going to survive we have to introduce new technology and we have to introduce automation into industry.

To give you an example, in the Sydney steel industry—and I think this is a prime example of inefficient management in absentee ownership—where this industry, because of the situation that they have, was going right down the drain. This meant that the workers in the industry were not going to

have a job, the whole community was going to be dislocated and it had a definite effect not only in the city of Sydney where the industry was located, but in the whole general area that was providing services. Now good competent management has put industry back on its feet and it means the industry is going to survive and it means there are jobs there for the workers.

This is what we say when we are talking about good management. This is what good management can do. We think that good management, if they accept their responsibility, will not only be interested in that particular industry, but interested in extending the industry because the people who work there have an equity in it and have a responsibility to the community.

In so far as the question of a poor employee, we have run into this problem, this complaint from management on many occasions. When we are negotiating, for example, for garage mechanics we hear the employer saying "This guy is no good. He can't do his work. He is inefficient." The fact of the matter is the way the garage mechanic comes into his trade is through a training program that management has had some control over. We have continuously said to management "When you are selecting an employee to do a certain job he has a probationary period and if he is not going to make a good employee the time to weed him out is in the initial stages and not take advantage of cheap labour for one, two, three or five years, and then when you have to pay wages say he is not a good employee."

This is the kind of example of management just not being aware of the consequences of these kinds of actions.

Senator Fournier: I don't disagree with you. There are always two sides to the coin. In your first answer about management and the steel industry I am quite aware of what you said and I agree with you. On the other hand, I can tell you of a case in the Province of New Brunswick where some \$40 million will be used to expand an industry. Management has been changed; management is perfect as far as I am concerned. When the whole thing is completed it is going to lay off about 400 people. There is no use of us arguing, but I am still convinced that push button is a menace to labour. New technique is going to be more push buttons. In the pulp mills and in the sawmills where you have 40 men you

have five or six men pushing buttons and the whole mill is in operation.

Mr. Johnston: May I make a comment? I think too you have to recognize the fact that as the pulp mills become more automated, push buttons, if you will, as they push more products through the mill it means there are more people working in the woods operation and there are more people trucking to the mills more gas being burned and more tires being worn. It is in the ancillary areas where extra work may be generated. It is a build-up in the community. On that specific job it is true there may be some people dislocated.

I think when you were talking about the pulp industry that your committee should take into consideration the red book on *Automation Worker Displacement*, which was produced by the Dalhousie Institute of Public Affairs and which was inaugurated in the collective agreements in the Mersey Bowate pulp operations at Liverpool. They took care of the workers that might be displaced within the industry by automation worker displacement. I think it is something that should be spread or encouraged amongst other companies.

Senator Fournier: I will say there are a lot of theories in this situation that are not applicable. Sometimes what you read in the book and what takes place are different.

On page 14 you say:

It should be borne in mind that only 2 per cent of the work force in New Brunswick is organized as compared with 2 per cent in Canada.

I don't disagree with you, but there is a problem that young people are facing here. A man comes out of a trade school and he has a trade and he goes to industry and says "I want a job." Industry says "Yes, we would like to take you but we can't take you because you don't belong to the union." Then he goes to the union and the union says "We can't take you because John Joe is ahead of you. He had that job before so we can't take you. Industry has to take John Joe before it takes you."

This is taking place all over Canada. Now what do you do in a case like that? Are you setting a barrier in front of the young people looking for a job?

Mr. Johnston: I think if you were talking those terms you would have to relate it to a specific industry. I don't think this is a general thing as far as industry is concerned in a

province in Canada. I think you will find in most collective agreements there may be a union shop provision where workers must belong to the union, but you would find very few sectors of industry where you must accept a unionized worker before you accept someone from the outside. You must be thinking of a particular sector rather than industry in general.

The Chairman: He is thinking of the building trade particularly.

Mr. Johnston: I think that in the building trade you have a different situation. You have a situation where it is very, very difficult. I think that most of you people who know anything about the buildup of organized labour in the construction industry will recognize that for many, many years it was quite impossible in many parts of Canada for workers in the construction industry to organize. This was probably one of the most abused groups of workers that we have worked with. Now that they have been able to organize to a fairly substantial degree they are attempting to protect their job security. I think that people in the construction industry are different entirely from people in normal manufacturing plants because they expect to travel from job to job and contractor to contractor. They are going to maintain their job security in the industry they have to have a closed shop provision. I don't see anything wrong with the closed shop provision where an employer must hire a union man.

The Chairman: That is not the point. There is no thought about the closed shop provision. What you say is imminently true. What we have in mind is the boy who wants to be a carpenter or bricklayer or plumber and he finds that in making his application he is not accepted as part of the union—perhaps even less so than he was in another day.

Mr. Johnston: I don't think that would apply in the Atlantic region. The employer in most cases, practically in all cases I know of, in charge of the apprenticeship program will if he takes an apprentice that is it.

Senator Fournier: I have one more question. I am going to talk about the plumbers and the electricians, who are a highly paid organization today, and when you have your reports and your deliberations and your bargaining periods. I have attended a lot of them. I used to fight you people most of the time. You have not approached this subject,

this apparently has been let behind and I think you are making a mistake.

When you are talking to the people and saying to the fellows "You get \$4.50 an hour and we are going to get you \$5" you should add "We are going to get you \$5 but you have to work, you have to put a little more push in it because the poor fellow has to pay."

Try to build them up a little bit. You are talking about incentive to work and the incentive to create something. I think in all the labour assemblies which I have attended that this concept has never been brought in by the union leaders. Tell the boys "O.K., we are going to give you the money but you have to produce a little more." This is completely taken out of the matter.

Mr. Hodges: I think, senator, that people produce just as much for \$1 an hour as for \$4 an hour. It is not the amount of money you get that makes you work harder. You cannot work any harder than your full capacity. It doesn't make any difference. I would work just as hard for one buck an hour as I do now.

Mr. Johnston: I think it is a two-way street. I think that management have a great deal of responsibility in this area. I know in one particular industry where we negotiate with an employer there has always been a demand for an operation on a piece work basis, a performance basis. In the last collective agreement that we signed with them we put in a provision for this type of operation where the worker would be paid extra the more work he would do. After we had it in the collective agreement, after management insisted on this through a number of collective agreements, when they finally had the opportunity to do something about it and where the workers had agreed if this is the type of thing that is going to make more money for workers and is better for management to go along with it, then the management said "Our operation is really not prepared for that yet. We have to do a lot of things before we can get into it." In many ways these are arguments or obstacles put out in opposition to labour demands.

I think if you have management on top of their operation that know what they are doing and people who have good relations with the workers they can get good production out of an employee.

One of the things we are concerned about is these people who go to university and take over on a construction job and all through their school activity they have never had any

amount of information given to them in respect to personnel relations and how unions operate and what is expected of them when they manage people on a job. I think this is a big mistake. This should be a prime instruction of people going through university.

Senator Inman: I find that this brief had a lot of material for thought and I want to congratulate those who compiled it. I think it is well worth thinking about.

On page 16 I notice you say you are concerned about adult education especially in the area under manpower. What change would you like to see in manpower apart from the leadership training that you speak of in the manpower programs? What other type of training do you think most important to upgrade the working man?

We hear that the people are trained in skills and when they are through there is no work of that kind in the area they live. What is your thinking on it?

Mr. Johnston: One of the areas that we were concerned about is the fact in the manpower training program it seems more or less of a filler in between jobs, or a place to put people to get them off the market for a limited period of time. We have had many cases where a worker might have the educational background to, say, go in for a provincial land surveyor, but the manpower program would not give him that kind of training although he might very well have the ability to go through it if it were limited to six or eight months. This is two years and he can't manage it.

The Chairman: Mr. Johnston, that was always a university program and it has never been given in the manner that you suggest. A surveyor usually requires about the same qualifications as the dental profession or some of the other professions.

Senator Inman: Engineering.

The Chairman: Engineering, yes.

Mr. Johnston: I think you will find in Lawrencetown, Nova Scotia, they had a provincial land surveying course and the people who had not finished university were able to qualify as provincial land surveyors. I think another thing you will find in studying the labour force, and I am only talking about the Atlantic region area that I know best, you will find that many people work at menial jobs in industry who have one or two years of university and who need very little additional

training or university education to qualify them to take some of the top jobs and leave the way open for other people to assume the jobs they are holding down.

The Chairman: You are not suggesting that Manpower go into university courses?

Mr. Johnston: I don't think this is a university course.

Senator Inman: Do you think that the curriculum in vocational schools in specific localities should be changed and that there should not be the same program all over Canada but it should be changed to take things particular to that area? For instance, vocational school in an agricultural country might mean a lot different training than or in an industrial area.

Mr. Johnston: I think the training should be geared to the type of work the individual feels qualified to do or capable of doing. Getting back to the Manpower thing, you will find in studying this question that people have been put into barber schools who are 40 to 50 years old and who would never make barbers and there is really no reason for the being there. There are many people who are slotted into courses.

Senator McGrand: They are requesting go there.

Mr. Johnston: They are requesting upgrading and training, but when they go to Manpower they say "This is all that we have. We don't have the facilities to give you what you are looking for." It is like going into the army and wanting to be a truck driver and they tell you there is no opening for a truck driver and you will have to be an infantry man. In this kind of operation. We feel the facilities have to be expanded.

Senator Quart: I am all in favour of labour federations and trade unions. I think you perform a very useful function. When you prepare briefs like this brief do you consult your branches by questionnaire or meetings in order to have the opinion of the majority of your members?

Mr. Johnston: The situation that we have is that there are monthly meetings at least in local unions where these things are discussed. You have labour councils in every region where they are discussed and you have provincial federations and the resolutions passed and adopted. In most of the cases there is a history of demands by organ-

labour for improvements in the type of things we talk about. Now in the cases of the type of thing we are doing today, all of the labour councils would be consulted and would be in support of the type of offering that is being made.

Senator Quart: This is a question that has interested me for many years. In this postal strike some postmen in some areas don't agree with it and some of the wives don't always agree with strikes. When you call a strike for your union, or another union calls for strike action, do you have a silent vote, a show of hands, or what method do you finally arrive at that you are really calling a strike with the consent or the approval of the majority of your members?

Mr. Johnston: I think you will find . .

Senator Quart: Have they a secret ballot?

Mr. Johnston: In the situation we have it is compulsory to have a secret ballot vote.

Senator Quart: How long since that has been compulsory?

Mr. Johnston: As long as I have been associated with the movement.

The Chairman: For many years in all provinces—Ontario, Quebec, in this province and in most of the other provinces.

Mr. Johnston: In the Province of Prince Edward Island, for example, the government inducts the vote.

The Chairman: The government is supervising.

Senator Fergusson: They have a right to vote.

Mr. Hodges: Yes. They have the right to vote.

Senator Quart: You mention a health chart for all Canadians. What do you mean exactly?

The Chairman: You know, Medicare will be here until the first of the year. That is what they are aiming for, I am sure.

Senator Quart: You mention that you have an article on poverty in your August publication.

Mr. Gregory Murphy, Secretary-Treasurer, New Brunswick Federation of Labour: August last year.

Senator McGrand: Is there any way that the employee can participate more in the management of a particular company? Now I am not arguing that this could happen where international finance is buying up an industry, but there are small industries where they employ 100 or 200 people and there are men who have worked there for 20 years and they probably know as much about how to run the business as new management does. They are familiar with the problem. I cannot understand why there is not more participation in the management of that industry by the employees who have been there on the job a long time and can see danger ahead of them.

Mr. Johnston: Well, I think in this region there is a definite push by the labour people to try to get better labour-management co-operation. We try to arrange for labour-management consultation meetings where the problems in the industry can be discussed. This is something we attempt to program but the objection to getting involved in this doesn't come from union, the objection comes from management.

Senator McGrand: I talked to management about this and they said the objection comes from labour.

Mr. Johnston: I think the answer might come from the federal Department of Labour. They are trying to arrange labour-management consultation committee and if you talk to these people you would probably get the truth of it. They are dealing with both sides and they could steer you right on where the problems are coming from.

Senator McGrand: I will take the case of a small shoe factory that has been in existence for a long time and the men have worked there all their lives. They are more interested in the future of that company than somebody who inherited a few shares in the company from his father and decides he is going to sell out. This is what I am talking about. I think there are cases where the employee could save an industry from going to the wall.

Mr. Johnston: We could take you back to at least two situations in this country where labour tried to get involved, where it could see industry going down. The management stubbornly refused to admit that the work force knew anything about operating an enterprise. Now I am not saying that all union people are lily white. You are going to find some union people who would be obstinate about the situation, but as a general rule

I think you would find the labour people would be co-operative.

Senator McGrand: When we were in Montreal and in Toronto with this committee we ran across several men who were on welfare. They had the skills but there had been an injury or something and they were out of a job. A job had been found for them, maybe by a social worker or something like that, but the worker could not go back on the job because his dues were not paid. He told us it would cost \$350 to pay his dues. He said it is not a question of "join now and pay later". It is "pay before you join". Does this go on?

The Chairman: He was a member of the union. It was arrears of dues.

Senator McGrand: He had not worked. He couldn't get a job unless he joined the union. He couldn't join the union.

The Chairman: He was a member of the union but had fallen behind in his arrears. He was not a new member.

Senator McGrand: We heard two or three different cases.

Mr. Johnston: I think this falls back to your initial remarks about the good worker versus the bad worker. This may be one of the situations where the union was attempting to maintain good workers in the industry. If you have a person who lets his dues go to \$350, what type of person is he? Is he a man that you would want employed in industry? It may be that this individual is better off out of the industry than in.

We have had situations where we have sat down with management and we have tried to provide them with good employees because they were objecting to the type of employees being sent out on the job. They don't want this fellow... this fellow is drunk and this fellow is something else. We investigate each case and if we find that the facts are true we tell the individual he has to pull up his socks or he is not going to be sent out on a job. If he doesn't do that then he is stopped from going on a job because management don't want him.

The problem you find is that social workers, clergymen and even employers themselves when the individual starts to complain will say "Send him back in". As soon as he is back on the job he is causing problems again. I don't think there is any answer to it as far as the unions are concerned. I think if management finds he is not a good worker they

are going to have to make a case against him and make the case stick. That is management's responsibility. If he is a good worker and he is put off the job the union will have to fight for him.

I think there are some individuals who are going to get themselves into this kind of problem and the answer to who is going to straighten them out I don't know.

Senator Fergusson: Couldn't a man go back in dues due to illness and because he thought it was not worth while and he was so pressed for money he couldn't pay them. It seems to me that was the case.

Senator Quart: I think it was a sailor who was engaged to sail on a ship. They must have thought he was all right when they engaged him. If I remember correctly, the social worker approached the trade union to allow him to go on the ship and he would pay back. He was refused and he had to remain on welfare.

Mr. Johnston: It is a particular case I would not have any information on, but I know there are many people from the province and from the Province of Nova Scotia and the Province of Newfoundland who have never been union members and never paid into the Seamen's Union and who go up there and go to work, start in there as new members. If there is work for the individual I cannot see why he cannot go back as a new member. I understand this is the procedure.

Senator Quart: Would they cancel his previous debt? In this case the man had been a member, I guess it was of the Sailors' Union but he was not working. He ran into arrears for his payments and that was it.

Mr. Johnston: I must admit I don't have the answer.

Senator Fergusson: I would like to say that I am glad to see Mr. Hodges back. He was really very helpful to us in Saint John and we got the feeling he was quite a friend of our committee because he attended a great many of the meetings.

The Chairman: He attended all the meetings.

Senator Fergusson: And he was prepared to answer questions when we asked him. I think it is really wonderful that the New Brunswick Federation of Labour is making a presentation as well as the Saint John Council

did in Saint John. I would like to say that we appreciate it very much.

I would like to speak about some other things. On page 17 there is reference to the New Brunswick universities:

We are concerned about our New Brunswick universities and our New Brunswick professors in the role of leadership and adult education.

Then you compare them with the professors in St. Francis Xavier University and Dalhousie University in Nova Scotia. Would you tell the committee what the professors at St. Francis Xavier University and Dalhousie University are doing that our professors are not doing?

Mr. Hodges: They talk to us, they talk to the worker.

Senator Fergusson: How do you mean? Do they talk to you individually?

Mr. Johnston: The labour movement has a very good relationship with the professors at both St. Xavier and Dalhousie University and the Dalhousie Institute of Public Affairs at Dalhousie University has taken a special interest in labour programs and promoting labour education for the workers, which is a very good thing, as well as the hosting of the joint labour movement study committee, which is a committee comprised of labour and management attempting to work out the difficulties between labour and management in the Province of Nova Scotia.

St. Xavier University has been a real friend to labour in that they have provided the People's School Program, a TV radio program over the years on labour problems and community development. They have conducted classes for workers and they have had in the past and are now conducting a four year program of social leadership for as many trade unionists as they can get in. They have good participation by the trade union people.

I am not as familiar with New Brunswick as I am with the other provinces but I don't know of any movement in New Brunswick in comparison to what they are doing at Nova Scotia in Dalhousie and St. Xavier.

Senator Fergusson: I am wondering how it started and I am wondering if it was the individual professors who had that interest or if it was the labour organizations who approached them. However it started couldn't it be started in New Brunswick too?

Mr. Johnston: The initiative in Nova Scotia came from leadership in the universities.

Mr. Murphy: It happened in Moncton in 1960 when Dr. Alexander Boudreau came to Moncton. It was through his leadership that this happened. We had labour leadership courses throughout the winter.

Senator Fergusson: Are those continuing?

Mr. Murphy: No, none of this is going on at the University of New Brunswick or Mount Allison University.

Senator Fergusson: What is going on at Memramcook?

Mr. Murphy: Our president is a member of the board of directors. When they first instituted the Memramcook Institute of Continuous Learning it was thought of as an adult education centre and primarily for the working people. As we have seen it develop over the last few years (maybe labour is partly at fault, I am not sure) it is being utilized more by the upper echelon of the co-operatives who are training their people selling insurance, or top level management. The smaller worker in the co-operative and the new employee coming in is not trained in co-operative principles. The New Brunswick Electric Power Commission are utilizing the facilities to a large extent. The Canadian National Railways as well. It is for upper management these facilities are being utilized in supervisory training. I presume the reason the Institute is having these people come in is they have the money. They have to make it a paying proposition as much as possible, or get money from government grants.

Senator McGrand: The labour movement has money.

Mr. Murphy: To a certain degree.

Senator McGrand: The co-operatives are not very wealthy.

Mr. Murphy: The Canadian National Railways and the Power Commission and the co-operative are getting money under Manpower Training Program.

Senator Fergusson: It is not their own money.

The Chairman: I do not follow it. I have not followed your argument, your presentation, as to how this Institute is receiving money. Would you explain it to me?

Mr. Murphy: The Institute was instituted through Dr. Boudreau's initiative, really, and it was established with financial resources by

the provincial government through leaderships push. We contacted the Minister of Education on a number of occasions. The Department of Education were reluctant to have the centre start down there because it was not going to be under the direct wing of the Department of Education. Once the Institute got established they had to have programs going on down there and the ones most lucrative to them were the ones where they could get moneys from Manpower to conduct programs. After the end of the year's operation if they go into the red the government underwrites the operation.

The Chairman: They are acting as a training institution for Manpower?

Mr. Murphy: That is right.

The Chairman: You cannot get rich doing that. The amount of money you are getting from Manpower in other parts of the country is no different from here, and they pay for training. There is not any great profit in that.

Mr. Murphy: No, but it is paying to keep the facilities going.

Senator Fergusson: That used to be another university, senator. It was St. Joseph's University.

The Chairman: They converted it?

Senator Fergusson: Yes.

The Chairman: For all purposes this should be doing good Manpower work.

Mr. Murphy: They are doing some work in upgrading a worker. Also they are doing some work in other areas. People with only grade 6 or grade 7 education they are upgrading to grade 9 or grade 10 to get into some technical school program.

The Chairman: What are the bulk of the things they are doing?

Mr. Murphy: Management.

The Chairman: How does management get in with Manpower?

Mr. Johnston: The situation is that management joined together as a group to set up management training programs and under some branch of government they got a grant for the training of management in the area. I believe it is under Jean Marchand's program they got some money for training of management people.

Senator Fergusson: You say that this institute, which is a new venture in adult education, is not being fully utilized for the role for which it was designed. Some of those things must be part of the role for which it was designed. What other things do you think it should be doing? What kind of programs do you want them to put on?

Mr. Johnston: We feel that there should be a program of training in union leadership and social leadership, whatever you want to call it. We want good strong management but at the same time we want the Institute to be used for the training of union people as well.

Senator Fergusson: You want both sides.

Mr. Johnston: Yes, that is right. If you are going to have labour peace here, if you are going to bring about realistic bargaining between labour and management, both sides have to have some kind of training.

The Chairman: If you have a course there, any kind of course that appeals particularly to management, will management send two or three people there from some industry and pay them a fee?

Mr. Johnston: Yes, that is right.

The Chairman: Do they pay a fee?

Mr. Johnston: Yes.

The Chairman: How much is the fee?

Mr. Johnston: I couldn't say.

Mr. Murphy: Usually the initiative starts from the company. Say the Maritime Co-operative Services wants to put on a supervisory training course they get together with the people from the Institute as well as from Manpower and present their kind of program that they want and they work out the details as to cost among the three. The initiative usually comes from the employer.

The unions cannot get involved in this because we just don't have the money. To take a man off the job and send him for a one week course or a two week course down there we would have to pay his wages and expenses when he is there.

Senator McGrand: What do you do to person to upgrade him? Does he sit in a class and listen to lectures and go back to school? Is that what he does?

Mr. Murphy: It depends on what kind of program you are talking about. If you are

talking about upgrading an individual from grade 5 or grade 6 to grade 9 that is one thing. At the same time this Institute has embarked on another role of leadership training in ideas and responsibilities in the community involvement, things like this.

The Chairman: This brief talks about leadership. Why doesn't it pay the union to take a man like you and upgrade you and give you further instructions? Why can't the union afford to pay your salary for a week, a month, two months, when you could be so useful to them in leadership at a later date? Why should you want it free? Why can't they afford to do the same thing, to some extent, as management does?

Mr. Murphy: We are prepared to do this if Manpower would do something as well. They are helping management, why shouldn't they help the union?

The Chairman: If management helps the co-operative do it, what makes you think they will not help the union do it? Mr. Marchand is one of the leading union leaders in this country. He understands this problem as well as anyone.

Mr. Johnston: I think the answer to the question is you will find that people in management can approach the government or government departments a lot more readily than the trade union.

The Chairman: You are mistaken. You can reach the Minister of Labour or your own minister in this area. You can approach Mr. MacEachen or Mr. Marchand as easily as any management can.

Mr. Murphy: Senator Croll, I want to point out here that the leadership training given these management people is called a supervisory training course. They get their money from Manpower. Ours would be called leadership training but it would not be doing the same thing, not upgrading somebody's education so he could do a better job.

The Chairman: You would be supervising other people. It is the same thing.

Mr. Murphy: We are inclined to think so; tell that to Manpower.

Senator Fournier: There is one paragraph I want to take some exception to unless I don't understand what you are trying to say. It is on page 18 under the heading "Credit Unions and Co-operatives". I will read the last three paragraphs:

Government should encourage the development of the credit union and co-operative movements by having specific government departments to encourage people with low incomes to organize and become members of such groups.

Don't we have that in New Brunswick, a branch of the Department of Agriculture and an office and promoters trying to organize co-operatives across the province?

Mr. Murphy: To supervise it but not to promote it.

Senator Fournier: Oh, yes, to promote it. They have had it for 30 years.

Mr. Hodges: I don't think they did anything in 30 years.

Senator Fournier: Yes. You went to the wrong school, I am afraid, on that subject.

The Chairman: It depends what you mean by "promotion". Senator Fournier promotes very well.

Senator Fournier: They go to an area and organize the credit unions right from scratch and they have night classes and go from parish to parish giving lectures. It is a matter of sometimes a year to organize a credit union. Some of them fail, I agree, but it is not due to the government. It is the members themselves that can keep the co-operative and build it, not the government. The government can only assist.

If I read the whole paragraph you are even talking about Eskimos. Now we have no Eskimos in New Brunswick. I think I know what you are aiming at. You are trying to promote a co-operative for the Eskimos to bring down what they are building and what they are creating and put it on the market. I don't disagree with that.

Locally here I believe that the government has done extremely well, both governments I have lived through, trying to promote the co-operatives. I don't know what else they could do. It is up to the people themselves.

Mr. Johnston: One area, for example, that I think we have been weak on in this province is co-op housing. It is just now that legislation has been enacted that is going to permit some limited development in this area. It is not at all in the realm of what was accomplished in the Province of Nova Scotia through co-operative housing. Personally I am kind of surprised that housing has not been a more

important aspect here today than union business.

The Chairman: Mr. Johnston, how long have you been in this area in the Maritimes?

Mr. Johnston: How long?

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Johnston: Coming on 29 years.

The Chairman: Most of your life. The best leadership in Canada on co-operative housing came from Nova Scotia from that little group that we talked about at Dalhousie University. There was a little group in the early years here. You were next door to it here and you could see the benefit of it. How come they did not pick up a little quicker some of these outstanding views that you had next door?

Mr. Johnston: The real problem is legislation that will allow you to operate. This is the real problem. You try to change the laws. You talk, for example, of the problems of organization. Management is opposing organization and government is not encouraging the use of the legislation that they have at the present time. This is part of the problem.

Just to get off that for a minute, we feel that the situation today in housing is so serious that it should be the number one, the prime consideration. Part of the problem of housing is the way that housing is handled. You take, for example, the real estate brokers and the lawyers. The cut that the lawyers want every time they handle a housing transfer is a scandalous situation.

The Chairman: Don't everybody start picking on me!

Mr. Johnston: This is a bad situation. You talk about the high cost of housing... if a house in this area transferred two or three times and you start adding on 10 or 12 or 16 per cent because nobody wants to lose his equity you can see what is happening in the way of housing.

The federal Government program of public housing or subsidized low rental is a very costly program but if you could encourage co-operative housing in the Province of New Brunswick and use the same amount of money that would be used in subsidizing public housing as a starter fund for providing a down payment, or even land for individuals who wish to build in the Province of New Brunswick, you would be going a long way

towards solving some of the problems in housing.

I think what should happen is the government should develop a housing bank and it should be taken away from the real estate brokers. The government itself should take over all available housing and sell it to individuals at a reasonable price.

The Chairman: I remember the Prime Minister referring to that sort of speech as becoming the landlord of the nation. Do you think that is a good idea?

Mr. Johnston: I think that housing is so important to our people we have to have some control. We can't leave it to the type of exploitation we are experiencing at the present time.

Senator Fournier: I read in the paper this morning about more millions of dollars going to housing. We are still not removing the stumbling block which stopped you and I maybe not the chairman, but myself and you from building out in the country. We have no access to the facilities in the Central Mortgage and Housing Corporation because we are out in the country. The reason they object is because we haven't got the water and the facilities. I know it is a problem. Some year ago you were talking about co-operative buildings and in Baker Brook we built several homes and they are still there. But today under the new regulations we couldn't do this because Baker Brook hasn't got the water and facilities. Yet there were ways and means. There are the modern wells and septic tanks and nobody has suffered. Outside of Moncton you cannot build a house outside the limit because there is no water and there are no sewers. You can build it at your own expense but you cannot have the privilege of the money put out by the government through Central Mortgage.

That is something I have been condemning all my life and I will continue as long as I live. I think it is an injustice to people who want to build a home.

Senator Quart: It is the same for the veterans under the Veterans' Land Act.

Senator Fergusson: What kind of housing would you suggest should be built? High rise housing, several apartments together, single houses?

Mr. Johnston: I would suggest, first of all, that the type of subsidized housing that is being built at the present time, the architect

should be banned from designing any more of them because they are right back to the old slum days in St. John's, Newfoundland, and Saint John, New Brunswick. There is no imagination. They just cram people in like you would put them back in caves.

I will say this as well, as far as I am personally concerned the municipal administration will always try to stick them in an area...

Senator Fergusson: That nobody else wants?

Mr. Johnston: That is right; that no one else wants. There is no respect at all for the dignity of the individual when the things were designed and the places they were put in.

Senator Fergusson: That is a matter of finance, it is cheaper, I suppose.

Mr. Johnston: It is not a matter of finance. I think the promoters are taking advantage of the situation. They put up 50 units of low rental housing in Sydney, Nova Scotia, and they designed them in that manner. We objected at the time and they said one of the things they were doing was trying to cheapen the project by getting in central heating. When the political pressures came on they had 50 individual furnaces installed in that unit. We are saying it is the political pressure and patronage, and what-have-you, rather than a realistic program of housing for the people. I think it should be individual housing and nothing larger than duplexes because we have the land. It is not like we are living in Montreal or some other area where we are crowded.

Senator Fergusson: You think it should not be more than duplexes?

Mr. Johnston: I think they should be of such a nature that there would be no stigma of no people coming into the area and pointing out and saying "There is the poverty area of the city. They are the people we are subsidizing."

Again I say that if the money that is now used for public housing was used to give individuals a starter these people could develop their own homes at a reasonable cost and they would be better off all the way around.

Mr. Hodges: We didn't tell you about the Saint John public housing. You know those houses were built wrong. The plans had them to be built the other way and the people who built them had to straighten it up.

Senator Fergusson: They were facing the wrong way?

Mr. Hodges: Yes. The back door was close to the front door.

Senator Fergusson: Isn't there someone who would be checking on that while it was being built?

Mr. Hodges: Let's not say any more.

The Chairman: Mr. Johnston, you are the Director of Organization. How do you explain the fact that only 21 per cent of the labour force is organized in New Brunswick as against the national average, which is at least about 10 per cent higher?

Mr. Johnston: There are a number of explanations. I think that number one is we don't have the high degree of industrialization in the Province of New Brunswick that you would have in Ontario or British Columbia. British Columbia and Ontario probably bring up the average. The other side of the coin is that until very recently there has been outright hostility towards organization in the Province of New Brunswick. Even at the present time the lawyers in the province love to find loopholes and what-have-you in order to stymie or prevent organization. We have a real problem here in New Brunswick to overcome the difficulties in getting certification of trade unions.

If the government is really interested in giving workers a chance to bargain for themselves, even if the laws are bad and the department is run that they do want to do something for the workers, this could be accomplished. It doesn't matter if you have good laws with bad administration or bad laws with good administration, you can accomplish your objective. Here in New Brunswick this is a very, very difficult job.

I would like to add one parting shot. I think the other side of the coin is with the newspapers and one of the problems we find with the newspapers is when we get into these difficulties the reporting of the news in these cases where we are being hard fought for organization means that they might lose an advertiser and we know where their sympathy lies. This is a problem. We don't get our problem across in the newspaper.

The Chairman: That question came up in Saint John and we asked for some facts with respect to it but none came forward. It was merely an assertion.

Mr. Hodges: There was an editorial in the paper a few months ago and the paper told the advertiser they would not stand for that kind of blackmail.

The Chairman: You will remember that the question was asked during the hearing in Saint John but no one came forward with any concrete evidence.

Mr. Hodges: We misunderstood the question.

The Chairman: Gentlemen, thank you for coming and for preparing a brief. It shows what we always knew, or should have known, that you are concerned. Organized labour has raised the living standards of the workers over the years. The pity of it is that there are not more people organized to take advantage of the strength which organization gives you. It has been our experience that you do not find union members in poverty. The people who join the picket line don't usually have to join the poverty line. There is a great contribution that can be made by labour in organizing, and I hope that more attention is paid to that particular task because it can do much good for people who are unable to help themselves. We do need the help of such people as yourself.

The Chairman: I have a brief here from the Canadian Civil Liberties Association of Fredericton, represented by Mr. Richard Bryan McDaniel. Also present is Mr. Russell Hunt, the editor of the *Mysterious East* who had been advised that he could present a brief to the Senate Committee on Poverty.

These briefs were just placed in our hands now, which is contrary to our procedure, and so I presume that when the witnesses are finished presenting their briefs there will be little time or opportunity for questioning.

Mr. Richard Bryan McDaniel, Canadian Civil Liberties Association, Fredericton: Submission to Special Senate Committee on Poverty by The Canadian Civil Liberties Association, Fredericton, New Brunswick Chapter.

The Fredericton, New Brunswick Chapter of the Canadian Civil Liberties Association appreciates the invitation to appear before this Special Senate Committee on Poverty.

The Canadian Civil Liberties Association has submitted an elegant and comprehensive brief to this committee in April of this year. We in the Fredericton Chapter are here today

to restate the recommendations of the brief and to take this opportunity to draw those points to the attention of the public of New Brunswick.

Summary of Recommendations

The Canadian Civil Liberties Association requests the Special Senate Committee on Poverty to recommend the following:

1. a system of federal grants to promote all over Canada a more equal and substantial level of legal aid service in civil and criminal matters.
2. a federal-provincial investigation of legal problems of indigent areas under an all-service legal aid scheme and, in the meantime, some federally-funded store-front legal clinics on a demonstration project basis.
3. the reform of our bail laws to provide that all accused persons are entitled to their freedom pending trial, unless the Crown can satisfy the court that the accused is not likely to appear for his trial, or that his freedom will endanger public safety.
4. a mandatory system of reasonable instalments for the payment of criminal fines.
5. more effective federal review of the requirement for welfare appeal procedures in those provinces receiving federal welfare funds.
6. an effective federal initiative to promote in those provinces receiving federal welfare funds, the following additional minimum standards of procedural fairness:
 - (a) the payment of a welfare allowance will not enable welfare officers without a proper warrant to compel access to the homes of welfare recipients.
 - (b) no one will suffer a denial, adverse variation, suspension or cancellation of a welfare benefit unless he has a reasonable opportunity to present his case before the decision is made.
 - (c) welfare appeal boards will be composed predominantly of people from outside the present and former ranks of welfare administrations.
 - (d) welfare appeal boards and welfare departments will be structurally separate and have separate legal counsel.
 - (e) welfare appeal boards will publish their judgments with names deleted.
 - (f) a major educational program will be undertaken to more adequately inform welfare recipients, welfare administrators

and the public regarding the rights and duties in the welfare law.

7. a federal-provincial investigation of the legal right of effective non-violent dissent in Canada.

8. the development of a formula to extend tax-deductible status to pressure activities and organizations for and of the poor.

9. consideration of independent grant-giving machinery to provide public funds for organizational activity aimed at the relief of poverty.

We wish to make two specific comments. Firstly, we wish to draw your attention to the following paragraph which appeared on page 6 of the CCLA brief:

Although the province of New Brunswick has committed itself to the principle of enacting a legal aid plan, at present it does little more than pay the defence of poor prisoners who are indicted or committed for trial in a restricted number of serious offences.

We believe that the actions of both the government and the legal profession have been less than constructive in implementing some form of legal aid. The present foolish position of both parties indicates less of an interest in serving the public than in maintaining an intransigent public posture. The situation in New Brunswick is as deplorable as the brief implies.

Secondly, we believe that the idea of legal aid clinics is essential to social justice in Canada as a whole and New Brunswick in particular. We are presently investigating the provision of a legal aid clinic in Fredericton. We have been able to secure the active support of several young lawyers in the city to provide the necessary expertise. The clinic could perform the type of demonstration outlined in the CCLA brief.

"The poor must get equal treatment under existing laws and equal access to the processes which change the law".

Mr. Russell Hunt, (Editor, The Mysterious East): Because time is at a premium I will do this reasonably quickly. I apologize that I cannot distribute copies so everybody will be able to follow it. I will be as clear as I can.

Brief to The Special Senate Committee on Poverty by the editors of *The Mysterious East*.

"I'm lookin' for a job with honest pay, And I ain't gonna be treated this way."
—Woody Guthrie"

I. What we are not talking about.

The Mysterious East has always maintained a strong interest in civil liberties, and it strongly supports both the brief of the national executive of the Canadian Civil Liberties Association presented to you some time ago, and that of the Fredericton chapter, which you have just heard. The rubric of civil liberties, however, has reasonably obvious limits, and we wish to address ourselves this morning to some wider topics.

Our emphasis on wider topics, however, does not imply that we are not concerned about particular aspects of Canadian society which operate to the detriment of the poor. Quite the contrary. On the topic of housing, for instance, we would cheerfully argue that private ownership of land and uncontrolled speculation in it are probably no longer defensible. In the City of Fredericton, for example, a developed lot costs something in the neighbourhood of \$8,000 to \$10,000; with a \$15,000 house the payments on a 90 per cent mortgage at prevailing rates of interest would be over \$200 per month—a price few working men can pay. It is time we recognized that urban land, at least, is a public resource. Public ownership of urban land would also have implications for the provision of parks and other recreational facilities, which in turn would have an obviously beneficial effect on the quality of life of the urban poor.

Again, since most of the people who produce *The Mysterious East* are involved directly in education, we relinquish with reluctance the opportunity to make some sharp comments about the class bias of the educational system across the country. It is clear, for instance, that universities by and large serve Canadian elite groups, and that they represent a large expenditure of public funds in a fashion which by no means represents value for money so far as the working-class public is concerned, or indeed so far as the public at large is concerned. "Check any university catalogue," says John Holt in *The Under-achieving School*, "and see how many courses you can find on such questions as peace, poverty, race, environmental pollution and so on." Though formal courses may not be the best approach to such topics, we contend it is clear that in such areas lie our greatest needs as a society. The universities do little to satisfy those needs.

We might talk about the law, and the fact that our antiquated bail procedures and pay-the-fine-or-go-to-jail statutes seem almost to

be a deliberate attempt to see that criminal convictions won't, in most cases, hurt the well-to-do very much—though we note with pleasure the prospect of some reforms in these matters. And we find it impossible to resist the temptation to speak now, just for a moment, about public transportation, particularly in the Atlantic Provinces, where the attitudes of railway management and government policy seem to be at their very worst. In Atlantic Canada, a family without a car is practically immobilized—and of course the poor can't afford much in the line of a car. Nor do we believe that car ownership and use should be encouraged—for reasons of ecology and urban planning, among others.

For example, consider the man who wants to travel from Fredericton to Halifax. If he goes by Canadian National, he must take a bus leaving at 10:10 a.m. for Newcastle, over a hundred miles away. Arriving in Newcastle at 2:30, he catches the train, which arrives in Halifax at 9:30. For a trip of less than 300 miles, he has spent nearly 12 hours. The cost is \$10.50 to \$12.20, depending on the day of the week on which he travels. To transact a day's business—looking, let us say, for employment—he must spend two nights in a hotel and two days on the road. A round trip is going to cost the best part of \$60—for one man.

By Canadian Pacific he leaves at 7:40 a.m. by bus, transfers to the train an hour later for the hour-long trip to Saint John; transfers from the train to the ferry by taxi (included in the fare); transfers from the ferry to the train in Digby at 2:00; and reaches Halifax at 6:15. This safari costs him \$14.65. The considerations about hotels and the like still apply.

By bus, he leaves Fredericton at 11:00 p.m. waits in the bus terminal in Saint John from 12:45 to 3:15 a.m.—an experience few members of this Senate Committee, we suspect, would willingly undergo—and arrives in Amherst at 6:25, where he waits for his connecting bus until 7:35; he reaches Halifax at 11:15 the morning after he started. It has taken him over 12 hours—and the cost is a cool \$15.85, not to mention a night's sleep.

By Air Canada he can leave at 6:35 a.m., arriving in Halifax, after stops in Saint John and Moncton, at 8:40. (There is one direct flight daily, at 5:25 p.m.) Though the fare is \$19.00, with another \$3.50 for limousines, the saving on hotels and meals makes flying competitive economically with surface transport—and it is certainly much less exhausting and unpleasant.

There is one other option: he can rent a car. Avis charges \$13.00 a day and 13 cents a mile, plus a drop-off charge of \$15.00 if the car doesn't come from Halifax and you don't return it. The cost is \$52.00 without the drop-off charge, and \$67.00 with it, taking 30 miles as a round figure to work with.

One is reminded of the carload of tourists hopelessly lost, asking a midwestern farmer how to get to Chicago. After a long pause, the farmer replied, "I don't think there's any way you can get to Chicago from here."

These conditions in the matter of transportation are scandalous. It is almost literally true that the Maritimer who doesn't own a car stays home. For the man who can't afford a car, there is really only one way to get to Halifax: to hitch-hike, which is, after all, a form of begging.

One could go on indefinitely with particular issues such as these. But many other competent groups will be calling your attention to them, and we have already discussed many of them in back issues of the *Mysterious East*. A complete file of the magazine is being deposited with the committee as an appendix to this brief.

II. What we are talking about.

Maritime poverty is closely related to Maritime unemployment, characteristically severe: percentage points higher than elsewhere in Canada—and to Maritime underemployment as in the case of marginal farms and subsistence fishing. The usual response to Maritime economic conditions is to suggest rapid and intensive industrialization of the region, consolidation of population into a few urban centres, and a general pattern of development similar to that of, say, southern Ontario.

In our judgment, such a model is almost criminally foolish.

In the first place, it is inhumane. Maritime life centres around a few basic activities such as farming, fishing and woodcutting. Maritime social life lays heavy emphasis on the family, the small community, the values of a relaxed life close to nature. And though family incomes are often low, many Maritimers of the past have been able to grow some vegetables, raise some animals, do the work around their homes themselves, and in general live decent, self-respecting lives on incomes which in an urban context would be a sick joke. In our view, to disrupt such established and many ways satisfying life-styles without a clearly preferable alternative is irresponsible. We are not convinced that better alternatives have in fact been offered.

In the second place, the rationale for industrial development, particularly on the part of provincial governments, seems leaky on even a cursory examination. In order to attract industries, our governments have offered lavish tax and cash incentives, among other things. These incentives must be paid for by the tax money of the already-impoorished Maritime citizen. If the industries succeed, they do not carry their share of the tax load nor do they plough their profits into the Maritime community. And if they fail, the provincial government normally bails them out. The heavy-water plant in Nova Scotia is a classic case in point. Our calculation is that if the Nova Scotia government had paid the plant's potential 190 employees \$60,000 per annum each, just as a handout, the consequences for the provincial treasury would have been less catastrophic than going ahead with the plant. The scheme's New York promoter, however, carried off about \$4 million from the venture.

In the third place, the "industrialization" model is based on the premise that Maritimers want to live in a down-east version of Ontario. An alternative way of looking at it would be to say that most proposals to eradicate poverty tacitly assume that the goal of such proposals must be to integrate the poor into the mainstream of North American life.

We must ask, however, whether the disadvantaged do wish, or should wish, to be integrated into a society whose chief flowers seem to be the tacky-tacky boxes and chrome-plated monsters which cover the continent from Halifax to Los Angeles; whose goals can apparently only be formulated in economic terms; whose idea of entertainment is "I Love Lucy", and whose idea of art is a K-Mart reproduction of Norman Rockwell. How many of us are really happy with a society whose gross national product is one-third garbage, a society which views as human necessities such products as electric shoe polishers, flower-patterned toilet paper and vaginal deodorants, a society whose economic system apparently depends for its health on war and waste? What have the poor ever done to us that we should wish to inflict such things on them?

In our view, it is a gross irony that governments continue to try to convert the Maritimes into another extension of the North American neon jungle at just the point in time at which that jungle is under attack from a wide variety of its citizens who have come to recognize that it serves only the

needs of power-hungry politicians and corporate bondholders. The affluent society, it seems clear, does not speak to human needs; and the young it produces are often inclined to enter a kind of voluntary poverty as hippies and drop-outs. Refugees from central Canada and the United States are moving into the Maritimes in considerable numbers not because they believe it will become another New Jersey or Ontario, but because they hope it won't; they hope it will remain a decentralized region in which individual people relate to one another as individuals.

Does this mean we believe it is good to be poor?

Certainly not: that view is both callous and patronizing. What we do believe, however, is that a proper distribution of existing wealth would more than adequately care for the aspirations of the existing population of Canada. We therefore feel that the most urgent need in regard to poverty is a guaranteed annual income based on the principle of the negative income tax and financed through much heavier taxation of corporations and upper income individuals. We see no reason to think that under existing conditions any Canadian requires for his needs more than, say, \$30,000 per year, and we see no reason for the rate of taxation not to reach 100 per cent at that level of income.

III. What we are all going to have to talk about.

In our opinion, any plan for the future social development of Canada—and any serious attempt to eradicate the miseries of poverty requires nothing less than a revision of the structure of our society, which makes us skeptical that a Senate committee can have any very significant results—must take into account the following influences.

1. The traditions and culture of the community. In New Brunswick, for instance, the community in part defines its identity by reference to a live cultural tradition most clearly preserved in such events as the Miramichi Folk Song Festival. In our view, the replacement of such cultural values by Don Messer and Ed Sullivan is not adequately compensated by mere material wealth. The music of the Miramichi is an outgrowth and a constant reminder of the experience of the people who live there. By that experience one measures the significance of one's own life, guided by the values earlier generations have evolved in coming to grips with that particular environment. To be cast adrift in the twentieth-century wasteland without such a sense of one's

origins is to substitute spiritual poverty for material poverty.

2. Automation. Increasingly, few people are required to sustain and even expand production; it follows therefore that large numbers of people can expect to be more or less permanently unemployed in the future. Since unemployment normally runs significantly higher in our region than elsewhere, we are obliged to contemplate future rates of unemployment of truly staggering dimensions.

3. The ecological crisis. In the future, we will have to ask some hard questions about our attitude to nature, our prodigal approach to non-renewable resources, our general willingness recklessly to tamper with delicate ecological processes. Once again, the effect of any serious attempt to deal with pollution is bound to be a drop in the gross national product. Population will have to be stabilized, thus ending the constant expansion of markets. More profits will have to go into effluent control; property taxes may well be forced up to pay for sewage treatment and recycling of garbage. Some marginal industrial operations may well have to close, and indefinite economic growth will no longer be a reasonable objective, since much of the production on which growth is based squanders the finite resources of our small and crowded planet.

4. The erosion of Canadian independence. We see no reason to believe that American capitalism will ever place people before profits; and even if it does it is unlikely to place Canadian people before American profits. An economy largely owned by American-based multi-national corporations is therefore almost certainly an insuperable barrier to Canadian social development of any serious kind. More simply, one cannot improve the economic condition of Canadians unless one controls the Canadian economy. Without economic independence there is little point in formulating social policy.

5. Finally, we wish to draw the committee's attention to the total failure of our social system to provide significant incentives for service to the public good. A strictly volunteer operation like *The Mysterious East*, for instance, cannot even survive on a long-term basis unless it can be made economically profitable. Yet it was not set up to serve economic needs; it was set up to serve human needs. The sage of Social Credit, R  al Caouette, once commented that when we need a bridge in one of our towns, we do not ask whether we have the men and the materials and the social need: we ask whether we have

the money. Though we are hardly willing to give the time of day to Social Credit, we do believe Mr. Caouette's example does indicate the way human and community needs are constantly subordinated to economic considerations; and we do believe a society based on such a scale of priorities is fundamentally incapable of dealing with the issues which now confront us.

In the Atlantic region, there is all kinds of work to be done. Who will restore some of the graceful buildings of our colonial past? Who will organize the tenants' associations, the legal aid clinics, the anti-pollution groups, the educational alternatives, the human rights organizations? Who will run newspapers and radio stations oriented towards people and their needs rather than towards business and advertising? Who will foster the small enterprises—specialized boatbuilding, for instance—at which Maritimers can excel? Our social system offers no incentives for this kind of work, just as our economic system has totally failed to provide housing for working people.

"I'm looking for a job with honest pay," sang Woody Guthrie. Yet in Tomorrow's Canada, jobs in the traditional sense are going to be increasingly difficult to find; in any case Guthrie's cry is really for a role in the world which offers him reasonable security and self respect. In our view, the time has come to make some dramatic moves towards a new kind of society. One of the most obviously valuable innovations would be to break the iron connection between employment and income; to provide an income for every Canadian and thus to free each of us, if we are prepared to live on a relatively low guaranteed income, to do what we think it is valuable to do. Those who argue that a guaranteed annual income will produce a generation of bums are no democrats; in the last analysis they do not trust their fellow-citizens to make wise choices about how to spend their time. Those who value economic rewards will no doubt wish to continue pursuing them. But others who have different priorities will be able to do what they think it valuable to do—community organizing, anti-pollution work, poetry or pottery.

And for the poor, the guaranteed annual income has two major advantages. In the first place it supplies—obviously—an income or which they can live with at least a modicum of dignity. More important, it leaves their fates and their futures largely under their own control as individuals. If they wish to take on the characteristics of the middle class

they can. But if they reject that style of life—as it seems to us they very reasonably might—they are at liberty to do so without paying the terrible penalties of overcrowding, malnutrition, disease and despair.

For Canadian society as a whole, the advantages of the guaranteed annual income are self-evident. In the first place, the moral health of the nation would be greatly enhanced. Costly and cumbersome welfare programs could be eliminated. Much of the potentially violent frustration in our social fabric could be alleviated, and a great deal of personal and social creativity could be released. We have seen in the United States that in relation to issues such as those of peace and racism unsatisfied aspirations can result in internal conflicts which threaten to rip the society apart. The refusal of English-Canadians to extend true equality to their francophone brothers threatens the unity of our own country. Over the long term it is reasonable to expect any deprived minority to act violently to the denial of its dignity. As Guthrie goes on to say, "I ain't gonna be treated this way."

IV. Why we shouldn't be saying anything at all.

We are not convinced, however, that we have any business at all appearing before this committee. You ought to be hearing from people in poverty, not from middle-class academics, however concerned the academics may be. But no unemployed man who has been systematically made to feel worthless and incompetent—which is what the spiritual aspect of poverty principally consists in—is going to come here before so august a body as the Senate committee and tell you what he thinks, why no one will hire him, how his family is suffering, and how inadequate he feels.

We must confess as well to some doubts about the attitudes of certain members of the committee itself. On April 22, 1969, in one of our hearings, Senator Fournier had this to say to Dr. David McQueen, Director of the Economic Council of Canada:

I...believe that our easy access to social assistance has increased the numbers of so-called poor in Canada by thousands... I know as a fact that a great number of so-called poor today are drawing much more money than you stated in your report... To me, welfare assistance has become the curse of the country... It will be wasted effort to throw more money to people who cannot control their

expenses...there is a class of people across Canada now abusing all these things... people who refuse to work but have the ability to do so... They have it made so fat and nice that they say they cannot afford to work. By staying home they can draw \$50 to \$60 a week whereas by working they only draw \$70 or \$75. We have thousands of these people across the country, and the situation is getting bad. This is really chewing up the country.

Senator Fournier's moralizing and superior tone does not mark him as a man listening carefully in an attempt to understand the problems. And there is a sequel to this episode. When a New Brunswicker of our acquaintance wrote to a member of Parliament whom we respected in order to obtain a transcript of the Senator's remarks—it is significant that he did not choose to expose his interest to Senator Fournier—the letter was passed on to the senator, whose reply reads, in part, as follows:

May I suggest that before your reply both factual and penetrating, you take a sharp look at the abuses and waste of social welfare money in your own and mine, the Province of New Brunswick. If you have an answer to justify such abuses, you as a responsible man—will have enough respect to sign your own comment and will not have it done by some irresponsible radical who is probably now abusing the taxpayer's money under the pretext of welfare.

Mr. Chairman, how can we take seriously a committee on poverty which contains members with prejudices as extravagant as these? Or is our suspicion of Senator Fournier's frame of mind simply a consequence of irresponsible radicalism?

Finally, since it is our impression that the chief criticism of this committee has been, from the start, that it was not getting out and meeting the people about whom it was ostensibly concerned, we have one final recommendation. It is that each member of the committee put on a set of old clothes, take a five dollar bill, and disappear for a week into a city with which he is not particularly familiar and if possible a city in which the majority language is not his own; or, alternatively, that he travel six or eight hundred miles on his five dollars. Then come back and listen to the Boards of Trade, the Home and School Associations, the well-intentioned middle-class academics. After living poor for a

week you may know—as they don't—which parts of their presentations should be taken with a grain of salt.

The Chairman: I enjoyed your brief.

Senator Fournier: So did I.

The Chairman: I wish we had had it sooner. It was very interesting and very far-reaching.

Mr. Hunt: I would like to tender our apologies for not having it sooner.

The Chairman: I know you came from Fredericton. However, the representatives of CRAN have travelled many miles and we will have to hear them now. We can question you at three o'clock. Could you come back at three o'clock and we will question you then? We will have a chance to look at the brief in the meantime.

(Recess)

[Translation]

Senator Fournier: Mr. Chairman, members of the committee, ladies and gentlemen. The next brief will be submitted in French because our friend André Boudreau does not speak English very well. As the committee is bilingual to some extent—we have one or two other members who speak French—we shall conduct the discussion in French. If you have questions to ask, you can do so in English and we shall be able to answer them in your language as well as in French; what Mr. Boudreau has to tell us will be translated.

Mr. Boudreau has submitted his brief to us. He works for "CRAN", which is CRAN in English as well, is it not?

Mr. Boudreau: Yes.

Senator Fournier: And the initials stand for Conseil Régional d'Aménagement du Nord-Est, or northeastern regional development council.

Now, if I understand Mr. Boudreau's problems correctly, he experiences great difficulties in running his organization, which works with people in the north, most of them poor people, and I may be in an embarrassing position, as a member of the Opposition, in questioning Mr. Boudreau, because in his brief, he seems to disagree on some points with the present provincial government; although we did not write the brief, we shall be asking Mr. Boudreau to give us some idea of what

his organization is doing, what it claims to do, what its problems are, and what it plans to do if we will help it, and we will help it.

Briefly, then, Mr. Boudreau, we have been able to follow your brief, even though not all our members speak French; we have come up with a translation thanks to one of our colleagues.

Mr. André Boudreau: Thank you Mr. Chairman, Mr. Vice-Chairman, ladies and gentlemen.

If you have read the brief, you will have learned something of our little experiments in participation. We are convinced that one solution is to get the poor people themselves to participate.

So we think it is a valid solution, one of the first ones to apply, and we have been trying to do so with two or three years of intensive social activation work. No one could say that we have come a long way. We have only begun to inform the poor and get them interested in their own problems.

Senator Fournier: Mr. Boudreau, might I...

[English]

Would it be advantageous to the committee if we don't go too far and I give you three or four words of what he said?

Hon. Senators: Yes.

Senator Fournier: At the moment Mr. Boudreau is telling us in his language and in language also, that one of the aims of his organization is to get the poor to participate in their movement—you know in a sense that is what he said before—that is the subject now and I think we all agree, the participation of the poor.

[Translation]

The committee has received your brief and the effect that the participation of the poor is essential to the project.

Mr. Boudreau: Now, when we have managed to get the poor to participate, there is a problem we face immediately: they have no personal stake, they have practically nothing to lose; yet despite what people think they can be much more rational and much more logical. Not at first, but they can after intensive and persistent activation.

[English]

Senator Fournier: One of the problems they are facing now in this participation of the

poor, is that they usually have no personal interest, which is the subject now. That's it.

[Translation]

Mr. Boudreau: Now, Senator Fournier mentioned just now that he was in the Opposition. This is a problem because, as I was saying just now, in places like Gloucester, which has been Liberal for at least ninety years; the kind of dictatorship we have cannot afford to have the poor saying what they think, because there are places in Acadia where thirty-nine per cent of the population in a village was on welfare.

Senator Fournier: What percentage did you say?

Mr. Boudreau: Thirty-nine per cent. A senior government official in Fredericton gave me those figures.

[English]

Senator Fournier: Could I explain this a little bit—in just a few words so that they can follow the trend.

He said for example, in Gloucester County, they have been under the influence of the Liberal Party for how many years?

[Translation]

Mr. Boudreau: Ninety, ninety-nine years.

[English]

Senator Fournier: Ninety-nine years and the poor people, thirty-nine per cent of the population is on welfare and the poor people are not free to talk as they would like to on account of the political pressure—that is what I said in short terms. Could we carry on?

Hon. Senators: Yes.

[Translation]

Senator Fournier: OK, you can go on.

Mr. Boudreau: This is why, if you want to go on until you manage to get the poor to participate, if you can just manage to inform them, they will be able to make their own decisions, they will be able to become independent and ask for their rights, and when our people began to ask for their rights and their independence, that was when they got us off.

We received a letter from the Premier on July 31 saying that we would receive nothing from the Government after July 1, so I spent most of what was left, so naturally I do not have much left to go on with, but I must say that it is certain that the committee will go on and so will the activators. They will need a little help, and we are in the process of trying to find some.

[English]

Senator Fournier: Well I would like to tell the committee this; and I am a little embarrassed in my position. I think what you mean—because the brief is really critical of the Government and he does not mind saying so openly.

[Translation]

As I said at the start, my position was perhaps rather embarrassing because it is a criticism of the Government, and as a member of the committee, I am in a way a member of the Opposition; although I may agree with what you say, to say so officially is a little embarrassing in my position. Can you understand me when I speak English?

[English]

Can you follow me. I am asking him if he can follow me so that he can correct me if I make a mistake.

[Translation]

Mr. Boudreau: Not very much.

[English]

Senator Fournier: Not very much.

Senator Quart: I will correct you.

Senator Fournier: He is telling the committee, you know what I said about the Liberal pressure which is stopping them from work when they want to educate or inform the people of the north shore, of the region which is covered by ARDA, actually are the facts that he believes that the Government officials, the Government as a whole objects to that because it is better to keep the people under certain—I would not say ignorance, but lack of knowledge—it is easier to control them when they don't know anything and the Government is also aware that his work was bringing light to the region, to the poor making them recognize their situation, as they were and by this action it would reflect on the Government administration and the Government is afraid of that with the result that as of the 31st of July, their grant has been cut off and there is no more money to offer...

Senator Quart: It has been cut off?

Senator Fournier: Completely cut off—how much?

[Translation]

Mr. Boudreau: Eighty-nine thousand dollars. This was announced on July 31.

[English]

Senator Fournier: Just at the end—it is their intention to find money somewhere, that people are really dissatisfied, they are going to carry on on their own.

[Translation]

I told them that your members had decided to carry on with your own resources, and whatever resources you could gather.

So I have just about covered what you have said so far. So now back to you.

I stressed here that our Government, our professional welfare people, are slow to respond to the needs of the poor—on that I agree with you.

[English]

He mentioned the Government, our professionals have been slow to answer to the request of the welfare, of the needs of the welfare, the poor. What you mean, the professionals I think generally because they are not directly concerned.

[Translation]

I think it is more or less to be expected, what you say, because the professionals are not directly involved in this brief.

[English]

And then I would understand in this paragraph there is a warning they should not undertake new projects unless they are scrutinized. Is that correct?

[Translation]

Is that what you just said?

Mr. Boudreau: That they are not obliged to adopt the new approach. What they want...

Senator Fournier: That would be page 1—page 2, they would be...

Mr. Boudreau: Page 1—2. "That experts consider the possibility of adopting new approaches".

Social workers, instead of refusing to come to our meetings and discuss things with the poor people—what we mean by "new approaches" is for them to come and discuss things, and it seems to me that they could then be much more realistic and above all, more efficient, in their work.

At the last poor people's seminar we had in Fredericton, we had Mr. Hubert Préfontaine, Provincial Director of the Social Centre, who was very well received; we had a discussion with him, but it was noticeable that no social workers from lower Gloucester County were present.

[English]

Senator Fournier: Mr. Boudreau is telling us that he fears there is a lack of communication between the social worker and the organization. He mentioned where there was a

meeting in Fredericton, while there was one representative there, it would have been quite useful while he was there to answer many questions, the welfare workers seemed to be very reluctant to attend meetings and if there was a way he would recommend, he believes if they would be attending the meeting because there would be questions to answer.

Senator Quatt: What meeting?

Senator Fournier: The CRAN meeting, you know the Centre Régional.

Senator Quatt: Oh, their meeting.

Senator Fournier: Their meeting, Conseil Régional d'Aménagement du Nord-Est.

Now, we got to another page—which page?

Senator Quatt: Page 3.

Senator Fournier: Page 2—now page 3.

"The CRAN local committees have many people who would like to take part..." which means and you can check me because it is hard to translate this correctly.

He finds under the local committees, the organization, that the CRAN has a long list of people who would like to work, taking active part in the organization and help themselves; but under the actual situation, it is impossible to do so because they are not free to participate on account of, I would say political pressures or menace and the constant pressure on the budget. It means that—the last line of the paragraph means quite simply "that this is simply not allowed them".

It means in simple words, they are not free to choose between the social assistance or the participation in the CRAN. In other words they would be under political pressure.

[Translation]

In other words, political factors prevent people from taking an active part in your organization.

Mr. Boudreau: Yes. At that seminar, number of people stood up and said that many people from their neighbourhood would have liked to come, but could not because they got telephone calls saying that would not help them, that it would serve no purpose, that they had a welfare cheque to lose; so people are not free to take part. Even if we had been able to continue or even speed up the work, the freer we were, we could have become strong enough because there would have been enough people taking part to provide them with a measure of security.

Senator Fournier: I think I would like to—he says that at the last meeting—when did your last meeting take place?

Mr. Boudreau: The groups, in June.

Senator Fournier: The last meeting was in June.

Mr. Boudreau: No, it was a poor people's seminar.

[English]

Senator Fournier: A seminar for the poor in June. The CRAN was told that many people would have liked to come but many called and said they had received phone calls that if they appeared at this meeting, that they would be losing their welfare cheque and they are always under a constant menace which is the problem they are facing.

Now I am just translating and I hope that you will correct me because I am not quite...

Senator Quart: I am not French but I can translate.

[Translation]

Senator Fournier: Yes, I know that. If you could continue...

Mr. Boudreau: We had the last meeting, after the budget calculations, last Friday; on Monday, we had a meeting of both areas of Lower Gloucester County.

Senator Fournier: Yes, go on.

Mr. Boudreau: Everyone wanted to go on participating in what they were doing, and they also felt they were entitled to the money that the provincial Government was no longer willing to give, the eighty thousand dollars; twenty-five thousand comes from the federal government and twenty-five thousand comes from the province. The province gives twenty-five per cent. They said they were entitled to the money, but on the other hand, they said they would rather do without the money than lose their autonomy and freedom; that was one of the conditions. They instructed me to take further steps to obtain the money, but they set one condition—that they should remain free. Yesterday evening we had a meeting for the Dalhousie-Carleton areas, and the same thing happened.

There is no doubt that the members will continue to take part; they want to have a budget, but on condition that they remain free.

[English]

Senator Fournier: He is telling us that at a meeting Sunday of lower Gloucester and last night at the upper part of Gloucester...

Mr. Boudreau: Restigouche.

Senator Fournier: Yes, part of Restigouche and the people they got at those meetings expressed dissatisfaction they are losing their grant of eighty-nine thousand dollars of which seventy-five thousand is paid by the federal Government and twenty-five thousand is paid by the province. They expressed their feeling they are entitled to that money but nevertheless, if that is the case, they are prepared to lose it rather than lose their freedom and they would be on their own and keep the organization going, keep on their own without the assistance of the province rather than being penalized.

Senator McGrand: Could I ask...

Senator Fournier: It is all the same now because we are not covering everything now you know.

[Translation]

Is that correct?

Mr. Boudreau: Yes—the experiments—if you have read that too?

Senator Fournier: I would like to talk... I wish also to mention the things you want to do. What have you done?

Mr. Boudreau: That we have done...

[English]

Senator Fournier: I want also to say that I think we are all aware of the work they have done, and there has been a lot of good work, there is no question about it. They have done a lot of good work in the organization.

Senator McGrand: Would you outline these? I don't know them.

Senator Fournier: Yes.

The Chairman: Yes, on page 6. Would you look at page 6?

Mr. Boudreau: We have a summary at the end.

The Chairman: That is not on page 6, the last pages.

Senator Fournier: Doctor, I think I can read them all. I will try to go over them, after page 6, the realizations—the achievements—it

is the same thing. The Ouellet inquiry. Would you tell us something about the Ouellet inquiry? Would you say a few words on that?

[Translation]

Mr. Boudreau: It was carried out to get more precise data on the situation in the northeast, particularly in eastern and north-eastern Restigouche.

Senator Fournier: The Ouellet inquiry was an investigation made in the area of the poor and there was—the socioeconomic inquiry?

Mr. Boudreau: That was an inquiry that the provincial Government—because an inquiry had been carried out before, but southern Restigouche had not been covered, so there was a fact-finding inquiry by members of the Department of Natural Resources and Agriculture, and others, with official approval, because we had a full-time CRAN activator.

Senator Fournier: This is about the same as the first one but with the assistance of the Government. Then you have another inquiry by the Ministry of Manpower, the Department of Manpower, the same thing?

Mr. Boudreau: Yes.

Senator Fournier: Then you have the revision—revision of the federal-provincial agreement?

Mr. Boudreau: Yes, it was revised, because there was an existing ten-year agreement for the northeast, so it had to be revised, and we took part in the revision of that agreement.

[English]

Senator Fournier: This was to revise the agreement, the ten-year agreement, the federal agreement and ARDA agreement of the north and the hundred million dollars which we know about.

The No. 6, retraining course for adults. What is that?

Mr. Boudreau: It is a course for—previously, there were practically no courses for adults who wanted to learn a trade.

Senator Fournier: These are adult courses, professional school to promote more, additional training. Then we have the road to resources—I think Rotary Resources, what does that mean?

Mr. Boudreau: The road to resources to facilitate mining development.

Senator Fournier: 8—CROP report—on the CROP report and then 9, adult education training courses—the courses for the formation of adult education and 10, courses for the farmers and kindergartens—how do you say that in English?

Senator Quart: Kindergarten schools.

Senator Fournier: Then 12, what is that “business leadership courses”—leadership business courses?

Senator Quart: Yes.

Senator Fournier: 13—courses for adults with the possibility of 550 inscriptions—

Senator Quart: Registrations.

Senator Fournier: 550 registrations.

Mr. Boudreau: That is just in Restigouche too.

Senator Fournier: Just in Restigouche?

Mr. Boudreau: Yes.

[Translation]

Senator Fournier: That is for Restigouche only. For group organization, the citizens—that's all—how do you explain that, the positional study?

Mr. Boudreau: To bring out—for example, those who have become slaves to welfare payments, have lost their human pride, to try to give them confidence.

[English]

Senator Fournier: This is to train the individuals who have lost—their pride, their confidence—

Senator Quart: Their self-confidence, would say.

Senator Fournier: Yes, their self-confidence you know certain people who have lost their self-confidence within themselves.

Senator Fergusson: More or less a sensitivity course.

Senator Fournier: Yes—yes and the agriculture of maple syrup and blueberries then the Eel River Park, then the Professional Fishermen's Association.

Then 18, the Francophone Association of the Northeast.

19 is the co-operation between the Chamber of Commerce in two localities, Bathurst Shippegan—

Senator Quart: Three localities.

Senator Fournier: Yes and then the syndicate in forestry service and 21 the tourist project with CRANO-CREASE-NRDC and in Chaleur beach, this must be a beach pound Bathurst.

[translation]

Mr. Boudreau: Yes, that's right.

Senator Fournier: Natural rights—natural sources and 23, regional development committee—what is that?

Mr. Boudreau: That is civil servants in the thurst area who are involved in development.

[English]

Senator Fournier: Then 24, you have Committee of the Poor and 25 it is an exchange between Restigouche and Gloucester and is the meeting with, we will call it, with civil servants.

I would like to read on more than that, I think we are going to read it through and would like to read this too. To summarize the whole brief which would be embarrassing in terms for anybody but I think I have tried

the conclusions, in the last paragraph—I read it—"En conclusions" and I want you check me very carefully Senator Quart—

the Chairman: Go right ahead and do it. I trust both of you, and besides I have the English translation. So go right ahead.

Senator Fournier: Then I am going to read

It is strange the Government cuts CRAN's budget—that's this organization—thus proving that the government will not accept participation outside of its political party. Now, however, especially when there are numerous signs that we are approaching an economic crisis, with more unemployment and more hard times for the poor.

What is the conclusion. Now this is all I have to say.

Senator McGrand: This organization CRAN in English, what would it be, not ARDA, are they called?

Mr. Boudreau: NRDC.

Senator Fournier: The Northern Region-

Mr. Boudreau: The Northern Regional Development Council.

Senator McGrand: That's what they called in Newfoundland DREAN.

Senator Fournier: They have it in Quebec, in the Gaspé region.

Mr. Boudreau: CRD—regional development.

Senator McGrand: Regional consultants but something like ARDA beside having social animators who work with the people but of course it is not ARDA.

Senator Fournier: Is it the baby of ARDA? Are you a descendant of ARDA?

[Translation]

Mr. Boudreau: It was formed before, but it must have benefitted. In 1964, a request was made to the Government, which had not yet begun to finance them, so they began with 25 cents per head, and after the federal-provincial agreement, it was one dollar.

[English]

Senator McGrand: Yes, twenty-five provincial and seventy-five federal but this has not been cancelled, wiped out, but has been reduced, is that it?

Senator Fournier: No, no, cut off as of July 31st.

Senator Quart: It is not here in the report.

Senator McGrand: Who cancelled that? The provincial Government could not cancel it. It must have been by the department—regional expenses—

[Translation]

Senator Fournier: Who cut off your grant; where does it come from?

Mr. Boudreau: To begin with—it would just take a minute to give you the story—

Senator Fournier: Yes, make it brief.

Mr. Boudreau: They asked the provincial Government to release an activator, and after that the people rehired him, and immediately after that there was a committee formed, consisting of Bernard Jean, Ernest Richard and André Richard, and they suggested to the provincial Cabinet that the budget be cut off.

Senator Fournier: First—you have an activator—what do you call it?

Mr. Boudreau: A social activator.

Senator Fournier: First they had a social animator, a social officer and he has been dismissed—when was that—when was it?

Mr. Boudreau: He was dismissed on March 10.

Senator McGrand: By the federal Government?

Senator Fournier: No, the provincial.

Mr. Boudreau: He was dismissed on March 10, but that is not official, on March 10 he was dismissed and on April 5 the people rehired him.

[English]

Senator McGrand: It does not seem logical to me that the provincial Government would dismiss and dissolve a program of which they were paying only 25 per cent and the federal Government was paying 75 per cent.

Senator Fournier: Now I am going to tell him what you said.

[Translation]

He said that it is not logical to him that the provincial Government should have eliminated a project like that in which it has only a 25 per cent participation, while the federal contribution is 75 thousand dollars.

Mr. Boudreau: It is because in the Premier's letter, when he cuts us off, he does not say that he is cutting us off, but talks of the way we are structured and represented. In one paragraph, he says that perhaps regional structures should be attached to the Government.

Senator Fournier: I am going to ask a question which Senator Croll has asked me.

How long have you been receiving the grant?

Mr. Boudreau: The grant?

Senator Fournier: Yes.

Mr. Boudreau: Four or five years.

Senator Fournier: Ninety thousand?

Mr. Boudreau: No, eighty-nine thousand.

Senator Fournier: They had this grant for four years.

Senator Quart: Four or five years. Four or five years.

Senator Fournier: Yes, I think—the contract was with the provincial Government and not with the federal Government.

Your contract agreements were with the provincial Government and not the federal. That's it?

Mr. Boudreau: Yes.

[English]

Senator McGrand: You have not told me what it was I wanted to know. I want to know why the provincial Government, when they are only paying 25 per cent and the federal Government is paying 75 per cent, one can say this is dissolved without the consent of the other, that this is terminated.

[Translation]

Senator Fournier: Everyone would like to know how it is that the provincial Government cut off your grant without asking the federal Government for its approval?

Mr. Boudreau: The Maritimes region council reportedly said that the Minister Jean Marchand, had asked us for explanations, but the provincial authorities formed another council which changed the structure. They call it an improved formula.

[English]

Senator Fournier: He said this was cut off by the provincial Government and that the Minister, the Honourable Jean Marchand was going to ask them for explanations, was going to ask the provincial Government what the provincial Government had done and the answer was that they will reorganize under a different structure.

[Translation]

Is that it.

Mr. Boudreau: An improved formula that are using.

Senator Fournier: An improved structure.

Senator McGrand: But Mr. Marchand was there about two weeks ago?

Senator Fournier: Mr. Marchand was there or thereabouts not long ago.

Mr. Boudreau: We met him on the 27th.

The Chairman: How much money was they getting the first time?

Senator Fournier: How much was it when you first received your grant, when began?

Mr. Boudreau: It was 25 cents per twenty-five thousand.

Senator Fournier: So the first year it was twenty-five thousand?

Mr. Boudreau: Yes.

Senator Fournier: And after that?

Mr. Boudreau: It went up to a hundred thousand dollars.

[English]

Senator Fournier: The first year the grant was based on twenty-five cents per capita and then they went up to one dollar so for the first year they had about twenty-five thousand dollars and then it went up—the grant jumped from twenty-five cents per capita to one dollar.

Senator McGrand: Who are the people that are calling these people up and telling them to participate in these programs?

[Translation]

Senator Fournier: He is asking you about something you answered earlier. He is asking who are the people who, when you have your meeting, telephone and say “if you go, you will lose your welfare money”; who says it? Who are these people?

Mr. Boudreau: It is simple; it is the Gloucester County Liberal organization, which is very, very strong.

[English]

Senator Fournier: The Liberal organization in Gloucester, which is very, very strong and powerful.

Senator McGrand: But why should they be exposed to this program, ask him that?

[Translation]

Senator Fournier: Why would they be exposed to the program?

Mr. Boudreau: Well, I will give you an example...

Senator Fournier: I will give you an example...

Mr. Boudreau: In the Tracadie zone...

Senator Fournier: In the Tracadie zone...

Mr. Boudreau: There are between twenty and thirty-one polls for...

Senator Fournier: There are thirty or thirty-one voting polls...

Mr. Boudreau: And it is supposed that...

Senator Fournier: And it is supposed that...

Mr. Boudreau: At election time they create an atmosphere—

Senator Fournier: At the elections, they create an atmosphere—

Mr. Boudreau: So that when you come to vote, if you close the curtain—

Senator Fournier: When you come to vote, if you close the voting curtain—

Mr. Boudreau: You are not voting with a clear conscience you are voting against the Government.

Senator Fournier: Your mind is not at peace, you are voting against the Government.

Mr. Boudreau: If you vote with the curtain open, that means you are in agreement with the Government.

[English]

Senator Fournier: If you leave the voting curtain open, this means you are in agreement with the Government.

Senator McGrand: But there has not been a provincial election for three years and it is three years since they have been able to do something—anything about this curtain?

Senator Fournier: Well this is about an old ticket you know. Ask me another question—we could spend a lot of time on that.

The Chairman: I have no more questions.

[Translation]

Senator Fournier: Mr. Boudreau, I think we have exchanged a lot of ideas, and we very much appreciate your coming here this morning, even agreeing to a change of timetable and your brief being translated into English.

I realize, perhaps more than others, the problems you have where you are, because I am in a county where conditions are roughly similar to your own; I think I can say I have been through the same thing, and I thank you.

The Chairman: There is another organization similar to this one which was heard.

Senator Fournier: The Chairman was telling me that another organization similar to yours has already made a submission.

Mr. Boudreau: Yes, IDC, which represents the English population.

Senator Fournier: The group which represents the English population.

The Chairman: And they both said they were going to reorganize.

Senator Fournier: He says that both groups were going to reorganize.

Mr. Boudreau: Oh no, that is not what was said.

Senator Fournier: Well, in thanking you once more, we appreciate all you have done and we sympathize with your problems. Once again, it is a good contribution, you have brought things into the open without hesitation, and I congratulate you on your courage and energy.

Mr. Boudreau: Are you going to come and visit Gloucester County?

Senator Fournier: We decided not to go.

The Chairman: It is just not possible.

Mr. Boudreau: Because the people, the participants, would have been interested in meeting you.

The Chairman: Another time.

Senator Fournier: Perhaps another time. I will tell him why. We, the members of the committee, thought that a hasty visit to you would not be what we wanted; we will give it more thought, and perhaps we will arrange to see you.

Mr. Boudreau: Gloucester County is the poorest in the province.

Senator Fournier: That is what we are interested in. The question interests us too. OK, thank you very much.

[English]

The Chairman: Unfortunately we did not have translation facilities for conducting our hearing in our two official languages, but I want to thank Senator Fournier and Senator Quart for looking after our proceedings in the way they did. I particularly want to thank Senator Fournier. His services were very useful indeed.

At 1.30 this afternoon the Greater Moncton Community Chest Inc. will present a brief.

The committee adjourned.

—Upon resuming at 1.30 p.m.

The Chairman: We will call the meeting to order. We have the brief of the Greater Moncton Community Chest Inc.

On my immediate right is Mrs. M. H. MacKee, who is the Executive Director. Next is Mr. Edward K. Robb, Chairman of the Budget Committee and Director and Member of the Executive Committee. Mr. R. S. Dickie is the President and Campaign Chairman of the Community Chest. Mrs. MacKee will present the brief.

Mrs. M. H. MacKee, Executive Director, Greater Moncton Community Chest Inc. Ladies and gentlemen, there are four ways to solve social problems in this country. They are through the federal Government, provincial and local governments. The free enterprise system and the "whole field of voluntarism".

Citizen leaders are seeking ways to increase the effectiveness of health and welfare programs in dealing with human problems.

They recognize that the solution of these problems is essential to the well-being of the nation.

The problems of people are found in the local community and must be dealt with in the local community. Both governmental and voluntary resources must be mobilized for co-operative attack upon these problems. This requires planning and action by local community leaders and governments, and to people directly affected.

Past efforts have been inadequate, despite the vast sums expended and an extensive proliferation of both voluntary and governmental agencies. New concepts of removing the causes must replace old concepts relieving the results of social ills, particularly poverty.

The Greater Moncton Community Chest recommends a "mobilization program of resources, both public and private, involving citizens both young and old."

This mobilization program to be named "Human Resources Corporation" which would be the principal anti-poverty agency, serving as consultant and auditor, to work with guidance, group recreation, counselling work programs and job assistance.

It would be composed of: (1) governmental and private agencies and representing grass roots involvement of volunteers of agencies with particular emphasis upon young people, and retired men and women.

(2) Organized labour could be a success factor.

(3) Representatives of the poor (the recipients) and low income families.

The whole concept of participation by those on the receiving end of welfare is, of course, a new one.

The Aims and Objectives

(1) To extend government services more intensively to residents of blighted areas, in co-operation with area residents;

(2) To strengthen existing programs and develop new approaches to the reduction of drug addiction and other anti-social behaviour manifestations;

(3) To support financially essential voluntary services that build character, promote health, and preserve individual dignity and family solidarity;

(4) To support new and innovated services aimed at breaking the poverty cycle;

(5) To enable established agencies—government and private—to achieve more nearly their full service potential by special government grants recommended by the United Fund;

(6) To provide an effective coalition of citizen planning and decision-making, to bring maximum community influence to bear on the adequacy, efficiency, co-ordination and economy of both voluntary and governmental social welfare programs;

(7) To enable agencies with programs more relevant to current human needs to immediately achieve their service potential—including more intensive extension of services to people in greatest need—by closing the gap between valid requirements and present levels of United Fund and other support;

(8) To maintain an effective level of services which build character and self-reliance, promote physical and mental health, offset despair, tragedy, disaster, and preserve individual dignity and family solidarity.

This could be an exciting package of special services, which demonstrates what can be accomplished when governmental and private agencies and the recipients co-operate in a team effort.

The proposed Accomplishments

1. Motivating complacent, uninterested and unproductive people.

2. Participation in moves to form broader coalition of concerns.

3. Community involvement—including individual citizens helping others face to face.

4. Realizing all savings possible through increased management efficiency and shifting funds from outdated programs.

Nothing can dissolve an individual human problem more effectively than the willingness of one person to involve himself voluntarily, persistently and sensitively in helping someone else to help himself, and the life of the person who helps can be enriched as much as the lives of those to whom he extends the hand of brotherhood.

No person can develop his own ability fully if he tries to live for himself alone. No one can realize his full potential unless he joins in voluntary co-operative effort for the common good.

Government, private agencies and citizens can help to give every Canadian that opportunity by working as team leaders in resolving the greatest crisis this nation has ever faced.

It is recognized that there will never be a 100 per cent solution to the breaking of the poverty cycle, but the foregoing suggestions, if implemented, would have a distinct bearing on reducing the number affected by poverty.

The Chairman: Senator Fergusson?

Senator Fergusson: Sorry, I am not prepared for any questions right now.

The Chairman: Senator Quatt?

Senator Quatt: How many groups have you in your council?

Mrs. MacKee: Sixteen participating agencies in the United Fund, and we have a list of them.

Senator Quatt: I notice that you have the Boy Scouts of Canada. Where are the Girl Guides?

Mrs. MacKee: They have not applied for permission.

Senator Quatt: I see. Now, your group has acted somewhat as a co-ordinating council?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, but there is no planning council as such. The Chest does not actually operate 100 per cent as a planning council, but we serve in that capacity.

Senator Quatt: Where you hear of overlapping services do you try to direct them to other channels?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, madam. This is the responsibility of the Budget and Administra-

tion Committee and I am sure that Mr. Robb, who is here as chairman of that committee, will be able to speak on that subject.

Mr. Robb: Certainly in our committee work we have an objective that is struck. We have instructions from our director as to how much money they feel can be raised as an objective. Therefore, with the funds available, we certainly do try to see there are no over-lapping services, as we cannot afford to have over-lapping services.

Senator Quart: You do not have to answer me if you do not want to. The administrative cost of your campaign for funds—what percentage does it represent?

Mrs. MacKee: Around ten percent. We are about the lowest operating united fund in Canada.

The Chairman: Careful—that's what they told us, around...

Senator Quart: Seven per cent.

The Chairman: Yes, 7 per cent in the last two places.

Mrs. MacKee: Perhaps some of the funds from administration are separated from the campaign, but we group them together and it is around 10 per cent.

Senator Quart: That is wonderful because in some of the large centres, in particular, the administration cost is the reason why some people object to subscribing. I know that one group in Montreal certainly did have an investigation regarding the organizational cost of the campaign, for one thing, which left very little for the fund to administer, as a matter of fact.

Mrs. MacKee: For years Moncton was around 5 to 7 per cent until we moved to new quarters, a new building, a few years ago. Perhaps Mr. Dickie would like to speak on this.

Mr. R. S. Dickie, President, Greater Moncton Community Chest Inc.: Well, actually we have been very fortunate as far as the news media is concerned. Both radio and TV have given us all free advertising for what we asked. They are very generous.

Senator Quart: That is wonderful. You are very fortunate. Among your group do you have anything like a Good Neighbourhood Service where people send furniture, clothes and all that sort of thing? That, in itself, is

like subscribing. I am thinking of one where they employ handicapped people to repair furniture and do painting and whatever they can. In that way it helps them, and they sell very, very cheaply to the poor people who want to profit by the Neighbourhood Service. Do you have anything like that here?

Mrs. MacKee: We do not have an organization as such, but we do have the Institute for the Blind who repair furniture and what not. We also have a Cerebral Palsy work shop for adults and children, which I understand is making certain types of equipment and supplies and selling them at a profit. The Salvation Army, which Mr. Robb has mentioned, is another member of the United Fund. I believe they have a centre.

Senator Quart: I know the Salvation Army in Ottawa is doing a very fine job, not only in clothing but with furniture. They discourage second-hand dealers from going there to buy them all up, like sometimes they do at the Neighbourhood Service, which is operated in Ottawa. After these things, have been repaired by the handicapped, the dealers go in and buy them up before the poor have a chance. But at the Salvation Army they discourage that.

Well, thank you very much. I have run out of questions.

The Chairman: On page 1 you say, "New concepts of removing the causes must replace old concepts of relieving the results of social ills, particularly poverty." What do you have in mind there?

Mrs. MacKee: Well, I am thinking of the Boys' Club in this city which is probably drawing card for the United Fund because it appeals to the contributor. A few years ago they involved the parents in this organization which is called the "Parent Auxiliary" and they became active among the programs. They participated and had a parents' program, and this is a new concept of bringing the old and the young together and seeing what the needs are. By the parents being with the children and working in the community, it certainly helps the Judge of our Juvenile Court who said "The Boys' Club have reduced juvenile delinquency by a very large percentage, something like 50 to 70 per cent".

The Chairman: Are all the boys in the Boys' club in the poverty syndrome?

Mrs. MacKee: Not all.

The Chairman: What percentage, would you think?

Mrs. MacKee: Well, do you mean in the low income bracket?

The Chairman: Yes.

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, I would say that the majority are in the low income bracket.

The Chairman: By low income, I am talking about poverty.

Mrs. MacKee: There are probably 25 per cent in poverty; 60 per cent to 70 per cent in the low income bracket. I see Mr. Cotton here representing the Maritime region of the Boys' Club and also Mr. Johnson...

The Chairman: He was here yesterday.

Mr. Cotton: I would say the percentage would be 80 per cent; it is somewhat lower in the Moncton Boys' Club at the present time.

Mrs. MacKee: Eighty per cent in low income or poverty?

Mr. Cotton: Low income.

The Chairman: What about the other clubs?

Mr. Johnson: I would say in the East End Boys' Club about 50 per cent are poverty. We made a survey a few years ago on two streets in the lowest area and we found that 85 per cent of the town was on social assistance.

The Chairman: You were talking about the concept of participation by welfare recipients and you said the concept is a new one, not as new as all that, but still new. Are there any welfare people on your board at all?

Mrs. MacKee: No.

The Chairman: Then how can they participate in this?

Mrs. MacKee: They participate within the agency, through local agencies.

The Chairman: Would they be on the board?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, the Boys' Club have participants on their Board.

The Chairman: What about the Red Cross Society, do they have a large one there?

Mrs. MacKee: No.

The Chairman: And the Moncton Family "Y"?

Mr. Dickie: Yes.

Mrs. MacKee: The "Y", yes. The Foyer Alcoholic centre has participation.

The Chairman: Item 5, "To enable established agencies—government and private—to achieve more nearly their full service potential by special government grants recommended by the United Fund". What have you in mind?

Mrs. MacKee: The Boys' Club was able to secure a \$20,000 grant from the federal Government to work with the cause of juvenile delinquency and why there are so many drop-outs at an early age and why the desire is not there for boys and girls to continue their education. With that they have been able to do a tremendous amount of research and to find out for not only the Boys' Club but for the Government and other agencies, the city. A good deal of this information was not available before because there was not that kind of money. The federal Government has this type of money, but we were never able to find out, as a Maritime region, through the United Funds, what funds are available for such programs.

The Chairman: Well, the \$20,000 they received, they did that on their own, as I understand it?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, Moncton was chosen as one of two centres in Canada. There are three centres in Canada, and Moncton is one of them, which was chosen for this project. I understand this will probably take two years.

The Chairman: Yes, but this special grant which was recommended by United Funds, assuming there is such a special fund, what area would it be covering?

Mrs. MacKee: I have just noticed in Kansas City, the Federal Government donated to the Y.M.C.A. almost half a million dollars for guidance in group recreation, such as I have mentioned. This is to be used as seed money which the fund is not able to supply and with that money they can not only work with the poor, but with the labour federations and other agencies. It is a research program and is helping the agencies, not this year but in the second, third or fourth year to change their programs to meet current needs. We know the needs. We don't have all the money that is required to meet those needs, but the fed-

eral Government puts money into many projects and we feel that if they directed some through the United Fund agencies which are qualified to carry on their programs, they are best suited to implement such programs.

The Chairman: But the United Fund agencies have no relationship with the government. They are on their own.

Mrs. MacKee: No, they are not. Many United Fund agencies receive grants.

The Chairman: From the federal government?

Mrs. MacKee: From the provincial government.

The Chairman: From the federal government and the provincial government?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes. The Boys' Club is an example and the Cancer Society...

The Chairman: No, the Boys' Club was a special project for drop-outs and what-not. This was in the form of a grant. They do that all over the country for special projects, but the Cancer Society, I think that they...

Mrs. MacKee: I believe they get a grant from the federal government for research.

The Chairman: This is of national interest. I think the mental institutions get a federal grant for research. I am talking about these United Funds. I am talking about localized groups. I know of no localized groups that receive anything from the federal Government.

Mrs. MacKee: There is the Cerebral Palsy and Mentally Retarded Children.

The Chairman: From the federal Government?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, on their project.

The Chairman: That is a project again.

Mrs. MacKee: It is a continuing project, part of their operation which the Chest helps to subsidize.

The Chairman: For how long?

Mrs. MacKee: We expect forever.

Mr. Dickie: No. I beg your pardon, but this is done through, I believe, the federal Government.

The Chairman: They are both separate and apart on that. The federal Government, if you

notice, insist that their contributions be made known but never through the provincial Government, except for loans.

Mr. Edward K. Robb, Chairman, Budget Committee, Moncton Community Chest: I am working with a committee on cerebral palsy. There has been a meeting of the federal and provincial governments and Community Chest to see if it is not feasible to put these organizations together, to work job-wise work-wise, on various forms of handicaps. Now, there will be, if it comes to pass, direct federal assistance. That is one of the objectives of the Community Chest—you can meet with these people and this is forthcoming, not for this year and possibly not for two years.

The Chairman: Yes, what they get is grant. I know they are not too pleased. The way the federal Government gives money to community fund is they have a special project for a year, or two years, which the subsidize a little bit, but never directly.

Mrs. MacKee: We are not asking that it go to the Community Fund but that the Community Fund recommend who should receive these grants.

Senator Quart: I would like to ask you a question regarding the retarded children. I happen to know they get this grant, but would not the National Executive Council of the Retarded Children arrange to give you local a certain amount of their grant rather than the federal Government giving a certain amount of money to the local Community Chest organization?

Mrs. MacKee: This is a special project that started in Moncton. They have these homes where probably 8 to 12 residents are living in this new house and the seed money comes from the federal Government.

Senator Quart: Directly through the federal Government?

Mrs. MacKee: Well, probably through the National Organization of the Cerebral Palsy but as pressure through the Moncton group.

Senator Quart: I think the Centennial Fund must be part of their fund because it has been going on for a very, very long time while.

Mrs. MacKee: We have two agencies in Moncton, for Cerebral Palsy and retarded children, and most centers in Canada are separated.

The Chairman: You speak of motivations—"motivating complacent, uninterested and unproductive people". How do you do that?

Mrs. MacKee: Well, the Foyer Alcoholic Centre is a fine example of what can be done. They have a budget of six thousand dollars and with that they were able to return to work four hundred alcoholics, they retained jobs for thirty-five and they got new jobs for three. They work with these people, they give them an incentive to work, to live and to become sober and productive people and they must be motivated to become productive and the motivation came from the volunteers within the Alcoholic Centre.

The Chairman: Well, let us apply that to other people, to people who are in poverty regions. How do you motivate them?

Mrs. MacKee: Are you speaking of disabled people or just people who are normal with no incentive to work?

The Chairman: The disadvantaged.

Mrs. MacKee: Well, first of all, we make them feel they are individuals and every individual and each individual has something to offer whether it be in a working capacity or helping somebody.

I have been associated with the welfare people for over twenty some years, and I have seen what can be done when working individually with a person and he can be made to feel he is someone and has something to offer and the only way you can do it is with time and with patience and desire on the part of the individual.

And we feel in Moncton we have many volunteers who are able and willing to work with these people but we haven't got the funds; we haven't got a centre.

The Chairman: But when you are speaking of volunteers, people working voluntarily, when no fund is involved.

Mrs. MacKee: You have volunteer organizations. All the agencies within the United Fund are volunteers, all sixteen of them are volunteers but they have to be subsidized by funds.

The Chairman: Yes, but when you are speaking of volunteers or volunteer agencies, it is not the same thing.

Mrs. MacKee: Well, volunteer agencies are composed of volunteer workers and probably paid executive director and a small staff but

I feel that any agency that is willing should be tapped for their resources because the resources are there and the Government is not really using those resources.

The Chairman: The resources of the volunteers?

Mrs. MacKee: I think so. Take the Red Cross, for instance, the number of volunteers there associated with the Blood Donors Clinic and the value that is given for that pint or quart of blood.

Senator Fergusson: Do you mean there are expenses besides all the services the volunteers give, and this has to be provided by some fund, and that we are wasting these volunteer services of which we could be making use just because of lack of money to carry on the essentials, such as having equipment and a place to meet, a centre and probably one executive director?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, even a registration centre. I know, even with United Fund, we have over one thousand volunteers.

Senator Fergusson: You have to have someone keep a record of them.

Mrs. MacKee: Yes.

The Chairman: You mean at the time when you make your campaign appeal?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, and throughout the year when we need volunteers negotiating with the agencies. Mr. Dickie and Mr. Robb are volunteers. They are both businessmen. We could not pay them for their time.

The Chairman: Well, that is normal in a community.

Mrs. MacKee: It might be normal in a community but we are not reaching the people because the potential is there, and we are not using that potential.

The Chairman: I do not think any community uses them fully. There are thousands of Community Chests across the country.

Mrs. MacKee: No, not thousands, there are only one hundred and twenty-three.

The Chairman: Well, hundreds then, one hundred and twenty-three. How many cities are there?

Senator Fergusson: But that is not the point. There are probably thousands of volunteers everywhere in Canada, but we are wast-

ing the service of volunteers which perhaps not too large an amount of money would make useful.

The Chairman: Try to get volunteers for any big drive like the Red Cross with a lot of publicity and you will know whether they wish to or not—you will get them.

Senator Fergusson: But, Mr. Chairman, volunteers don't only go out and raise money. There are many, many things a volunteer can do besides that.

The Chairman: Well, then, the one very important job is once or twice a year to go out and raise money. That is very difficult but it is better perhaps in a small city than in a large city.

Senator Fergusson: In a small city you have the same people doing the same thing over and over.

Mr. Dickie: That is right. We are losing sight of the fact that all this is not cracked up to be what we expected. I think the idea was that the volunteers work for the agency year round, not only volunteers for the Community Chest but for other agencies. But we can see more work being done with perhaps a little encouragement and help than we can give them.

The Chairman: Does your United Appeal objective go up every year?

Mr. Dickie: We try to hold it to a point that we expect to raise. We have doubled our objective in ten years from \$102,000 to \$210,000.

Senator Fergusson: Among the aims and objectives in your brief, Mrs. MacKee, is No. 7: "To enable agencies with programs more relevant to current human needs to immediately achieve their service potential—including more intensive extension of services to people in greatest need—by closing the gap between valid requirements and present levels of United Fund and other support."

What are the things that they do? What is "more extensive extension of services to people in greatest need"? What would you consider the greatest need? Do you think it is money? "Closing the gap between valid requirements and present levels". Do you feel that is not as urgent?

Mrs. MacKee: I was thinking of the Boys' Club. Excuse me if I seem to continually refer to them, but there seems to be a great need

there to work with delinquents. The gap there seems to be facilities and money.

Senator Fergusson: You think that the one thing which should have priority is money?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, if you have a good boy or a good girl, you are going to have a good worker and a good future citizen and that person will be more interested in working rather than welfare.

Senator Fergusson: I, of course, agree with you but we have had evidence before this committee that it is not when a boy gets to that age, but when they are perhaps children of two, or three or four, that we should be reaching them and give services. Otherwise if we don't have such services, when they reach school age, they are disadvantaged children and perhaps that is the most urgent service to which we should turn our attention.

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, a child is trained before he is five, that's true. Then, are you suggesting day-care centres?

Senator Fergusson: Yes.

Mrs. MacKee: We also feel in Moncton there is a great need for day-care centres. This is one of the needs in addition to the Boys' Club. Mr. Robb would like to say something.

Mr. Robb: I think there is probably a little more to it than that as apparently our problem with drugs is not and does not come from the teenage children in the poverty areas—they cannot afford it—but comes from children of the more affluent family who were trained, who have been trained and who know better but go ahead anyway.

Senator Fergusson: Yes, that is a point.

The Chairman: As a matter of fact, Senator Fergusson, he is quite right. We hear that from every place. It does not come from the poverty stricken.

Mrs. MacKee: We mention here "drug addict".

Senator Fergusson: Yes. I was going to ask you if you would elaborate on that.

Mrs. MacKee: Mr. Robb has done a survey on this question and perhaps he would tell you some of his findings.

Mr. Robb: We have one agency now who would like to go into this program. It is, if I may say so, Foyer, who now works with the

alcoholic people with problems, who feel they can also equip themselves to work with the drug problem. But there are certainly no funds available to start this program.

This is a much needed program. It is getting worse year by year in this community. They cannot mix alcoholics and drugs. The problems are not related and they feel they cannot mix them. Therefore, it takes new facilities and these will have to be provided. This is a problem certainly the Community Chest has to look at and prepare for, but it is also a problem of the country and we would hope that funds would be forthcoming to start something like this.

The problem can be met head on and can be beaten. There are very excellent centres in Canada that are working and there are some that have not worked. They have folded. But again with drugs as with alcohol, the addicts themselves with guidance have to do it. Nobody knows the problem of an alcoholic except another alcoholic and nobody knows the problem of a drug addict except another drug addict.

The Chairman: Go ahead. I quite understand, nobody knows the problem of the poverty stricken except one in poverty and nobody knows an alcoholic better than another alcoholic, and I don't believe this. I think I am a better judge of an egg than the chicken is.

Mr. Robb: No, sir. You can go through facts and figures. I am not an alcoholic but I certainly agree with the two major alcoholic programs in the city of Moncton. One is Alcoholics Anonymous and the other is the Foyer. I am more familiar with Foyer because for the last two or three years I have been on this budget committee and working with them. The program is an unqualified success and it is run by alcoholics, no one else.

The Chairman: Last week we were in Edmonton and we encountered this same business of alcoholics, run by people who were intelligent and who had money. They were anything but a success. They had tremendous troubles. It got to the point where the Government of Alberta tried to build an agency to get them off the hot seat.

Mr. Robb: Sure, the alcoholics run it.

The Chairman: No, no—not the alcoholics. They were trying to look for a private agency. They tried everything and they were not successful.

Mr. Robb: I think, ladies and gentlemen, if you have 20 minutes this evening you should get in a taxi and go and visit this place—it is not a palace—

The Chairman: No, we are not saying that. You say it is successful, fine, but you are one of the few successful ones.

Mr. Robb: But Alcoholics Anonymous is successful—

The Chairman: Oh, yes, you bet they are, but it is different.

Mr. Robb: But it is not different. They are both run by alcoholics.

Senator Quart: Don't you remember the other group in Edmonton, Mr. Chairman? They were going to bid for the hospital run by the provincial—

The Chairman: They were a different group of people.

Senator Quart: But some of them had been alcoholics—

The Chairman: But not the top people.

Senator Quart: No, not the top people, but quite a number of them. May I ask you something? You were talking about the Foyer. Do they make arrangements for the alcoholics to remain at night?

Mr. Robb: They have a clinic which is run by the provincial Government. These people come in in drastic shape. They have a clinic there and they stay there in bed with the proper medication until they are able to move from the clinic to the rehabilitation part of the building. Now from there they are talking to people and working with people twenty-four hours a day who had been in the same boat and gone through the same problem.

Senator Fergusson: How many beds do you have? How many can be taken care of?

Mr. Robb: Unfortunately not that many, eight beds.

Senator Fergusson: And what about the rehabilitation building?

Mr. Robb: Well, it is an old army building left over from World War II. It is not that large; it is not that grand. The work they have done on it, they have done themselves with materials which have been donated by businessmen in the city. Men have done it themselves but the program includes families.

Senator Fergusson: That is very important, but doesn't Alcoholics Anonymous bring the family together?

Mr. Robb: Yes.

Mrs. MacKee: The Foyer Alcoholics in Moncton is unique in Canada in that they operate as a clinic in conjunction with a rehabilitation centre. Some of these people are just derelicts and nobody wants them. Now they have bought a farm outside the city. They grow their own vegetables, tend to their own cattle and hope they will be more productive.

Senator Fergusson: And when was that?

Mrs. MacKee: It was started by a former priest.

Mr. Robb: He decided his vocation was with these people rather than within the church.

The Chairman: How long ago?

Mrs. MacKee: Oh, actually, I would say six or seven years ago but they have expanded and it is clean and spotless and they have a canteen instead of a bar. They have a dancing area. They have dances where they bring the family, the children. There is a recreation room, a board room and all types of facilities.

Senator Quart: One last question. If an alcoholic is picked up by the police and he does not want to go to jail, can he go to the Foyer?

Mrs. MacKee: They have an arrangement with the police whereby the police will call and say, "We have an alcoholic. Will you look after him?" This is a very wonderful arrangement because the alcoholic is not stored in jail. He is treated like a human being.

Senator Quart: I am not an alcoholic, but I am all for trying to protect them.

Mrs. MacKee: As a matter of fact, I was talking to the executive director's wife the other day, she was telling me that she is now going out picking up the men, that some men will come to a woman quicker than to another man, that they will call and put the man in a car at three or four o'clock in the morning and—

Senator Quart: That is wonderful.

Senator Fournier: No questions, Mr. Chairman.

The Chairman: Gentlemen, is there anything else that we have not already discussed?

Mr. Robb: Well, sir, I think, in my opinion, that these programs cannot be run from Ottawa, nor from Fredericton, nor from Saint John. The programs will have to be run locally, with volunteers and with agencies. A policy for a community cannot be directed or run from outside that community. It has to be done within that community. Unless the community takes hold there is no hope and the only thing you can get from Ottawa or Fredericton is money—there is no question about that.

The Chairman: Well, I know but I don't think anyone ever had any other view.

Mr. Robb: I am afraid through the years we get centralized for that type of program.

Senator Fergusson: How do you really think you can be successful in getting the community to help poverty stricken people? We so often on this committee have found that many people are still not sympathetic. They believe in the Horatio Alger theory that if you work hard enough you will get ahead, and if you are poor it is your own fault. This feeling still exists in many places. Right here in our own province I have had people ask me what we are doing, why there is such a need in this community anyhow. How are you going to sell this idea to the community, that there is a need for people to be removed from this deprived situation?

Mrs. MacKee: You mean involved in poverty?

Senator Fergusson: How are you going to involve the community?

Mrs. MacKee: Well I don't think this is difficult. I think you have to have an effervescent person, who is sold on himself or herself, who is going to go out in the community and sell a package deal. We have been able to sell the United Fund—and we have 1,000 volunteers—but only because I am able through Mr. Dickie and the board of directors who are all sold on this and who are very interested, and it means a great deal to us. Another person could be involved in another organization. During the war we wanted volunteers, we had a volunteer bureau, we had thousands of volunteers—it can be done—but it is the person at the top who is going to do it.

The Chairman: I think the question Senator Fergusson asked was: How are you going to involve the community? That is not easy but, as you say, if it can be done that easily, why then is it not being done across the country up to now instead of having 20 per cent of our people in poverty?

Mrs. MacKee: I don't think we have sat around the table and not realized what the need is. It seems to me we have all done a lot of talking but not too much action.

The Chairman: Surely the Canadian people and governments in Canada at all levels have not only thought about poverty but have taken action. We are spending eight billion dollars a year with voluntary work being done everywhere and there is still 20 per cent poverty. Is that not taking some action?

Mrs. MacKee: They have been taking action but apparently it has not been effective.

The Chairman: Well, then, what action could be taken?

Mrs. MacKee: I have recommended some are in this report.

The Chairman: Let us see one that could be helpful immediately.

Mrs. MacKee: Local volunteer—Ottawa has programs. They gear them to Ottawa and across the country, not all centres are adequate to our apparent needs within our community.

The Chairman: Well you've got a good welfare load in this community, a good unemployment load according to the statistics. What about the people who are receiving welfare, and receiving just enough to get by on? What is being done by your group or the other groups to help these particular groups?

Mrs. MacKee: Well, I have quoted the Ever Alcoholic Centre. They have retained jobs for 400 people and the budget is \$5,000 and those 400 could have been on welfare.

The Chairman: Yes, but you are dealing with 400—you don't mean 400 a year?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes. Last year they retained jobs for 400.

The Chairman: But the 20 per cent who are on welfare now. We are talking about people

who are on welfare which is what concerns us particularly.

Mrs. MacKee: That is my point, if you can keep jobs for 400 on a budget of \$5,000 when the Government is spending millions —

The Chairman: Billions.

Mrs. MacKee: —billions and still increasing the load on welfare. So obviously a voluntary agency is doing a much better job than the Government is doing.

The Chairman: What you suggest then is that the voluntary organizations are doing a much better job than the Government?

Mrs. MacKee: In many aspects, yes.

Senator McGrand: You have 16 volunteer agencies in the Community Chest?

Mr. Robb: That is right.

Senator McGrand: And how much money do you raise annually?

Mr. Robb: \$209,000.

Senator McGrand: You get about that every year?

Mr. Robb: Yes.

Senator McGrand: Then does that include all your groups or are there people working outside that?

Mr. Robb: No. The other agencies work on their own. They have their own drive like the Salvation Army. Mr. Chairman, the Boys' Club will not cure poverty among the parents today, but the children are certainly going to be more responsible people ten years from now and poverty cannot be cured overnight.

The Chairman: The work which has been done by the Boys' Club seems to be outstanding, from what we heard yesterday.

Senator Fergusson: Do you always meet your objective?

Mrs. MacKee: Last year we were able to pay the agencies their requirements, but we did not quite meet our objective. We have been in operation for 15 years. For five years we led Canada, being the first United Fund to meet their quota and we have met our quota for the last 14 years.

Senator Fergusson: That is quite a record.

Mrs. MacKee: We are quite proud of it.

Senator Fergusson: I would think you would be.

Mrs. MacKee: But we still have not been able to give the agencies all they need.

The Chairman: I was just remembering something the gentleman said. The East End Boys' Club, you said, is the poorest of the two clubs, is that right?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, it is the poorer of the two.

The Chairman: And I notice that they receive less money than the other club. Is there some reason for that?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes. The other club has new facilities and the East End Boys' Club is operating from an older and smaller building.

The Chairman: The Moncton Boys' Club have new facilities and they have more money?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes, because their facilities are probably five times to size of the East End Club.

The Chairman: What about membership?

Mrs. MacKee: The membership of the Moncton Club is around 800 and Mr. Johnston is here to speak about the East End, about 500?

Mr. Johnston: 422.

Senator McGrand: The East End gets half the money?

Mr. Johnston: About half.

Mr. Robb: While we are talking about the Boys' Club, I would like to mention the Y.M.C.A. too. You can't leave out that organization because they do a great deal in the same vein, so I am lumping the Boys' Club and the Y.M.C.A. together.

The Chairman: Senator Fergusson?

Senator Fergusson: This morning we had some of the labour people before us and in Saint John too and I noticed when they are referring to an organization program with all resources that figures are to be composed of several groups, one is organized labour which could be a success factor. Does organized labour take any active part now?

Mrs. MacKee: Yes. We have two directors on our Board representing labour, a woman as well as a man. They are on our campaign

cabinet. They are on our Board of Directors and on our Executive Committee, and I think you will find that each agency in the Ches will have a representative on its board and this perhaps Mr. Dickie can speak to you about.

Mr. Dickie: They are a very important part of our whole community effort, all our community efforts and we rate their help very highly and their co-operation.

Senator Fergusson: That's fine when you said "could be". I wondered if that meant they are not taking part?

Mrs. MacKee: I meant in our new program

Senator Fournier: I have no questions.

The Chairman: Mrs. MacKee, Mr. Robb and Mr. Dickie, thank you very much for making the presentation. We realize the problems you have and we realize how the problems are being handled. Your answers have been helping us on many of the questions which were not too clear to us.

On behalf of the committee I thank you ladies and gentlemen, for presenting the brief. Thank you for coming along and helping us.

Upon resuming at 3 p.m.

The Chairman: Mr. Hunt presented a brief this morning to the Special Senate Committee by the editors of the *Mysterious East*. We asked him to come back later in the day for questioning, and he is not back here. With him is Mr. Cameron and Mr. Daniels.

Senator Fournier: I think I have a few remarks to make on this brief. I will be short because there is nothing in the brief that means anything, as far as I am concerned. It starts by saying "I'm looking for a job with honest pay, and I ain't gonna be treated that way." I would add to that another line: "How am I going to treat the hand that feeds me?"

I will not answer for you because there are always two sides to the story. I do not want now. You mention in your brief that you will cheerfully argue. I am going to adopt your attitude and I will cheerfully argue with you.

I understand that some of you are university professors, two or three, and you are teaching at the University of New Brunswick or where?

Mr. Hunt: I am teaching at St. Thomas University.

Senator Fournier: Who else is with you?

Mr. Hunt: Donald Cameron teaches at the University of New Brunswick, and Bob Daniels is a graduate student.

Senator Fournier: That is three university professors.

Mr. Hunt: No; two, and a graduate student.

Senator Fournier: You are university professors; not lacking in education. You saw fit this morning to walk in and disturb this meeting that had an agenda. You took an hour of our time. You presented a brief which we had not seen. We asked you not to read the brief but you read the brief. You were asked not to distribute your pamphlet and you did. So you cannot blame this type of conduct on a lack of education or ignorance. It is just the attitude that you people have.

You came in with an attitude that you are going to do it your own way, the way you want to do it, regardless of other people. You proved it this morning.

We, the ignorant group as you may call me or the rest of us, have to worry about what is going on in our universities. God bless the universities when you have professors of your calibre teaching our young people. No wonder we have revolutions, terrorists and rebel movements. You may laugh, but we do not laugh. We find this very serious.

What can you expect from our university people or our young generation with the type of leadership that you are giving them, sometimes?

I am not going to go to your brief because, as I said, it is meaningless. I just want to point out a few things. You have made a great contribution to transportation because you have brought all the problems of transportation in. You end by saying that the only way you can go from Halifax to Fredericton is by hitch-hiking and by begging. I will tell you gentlemen that there are thousands of people that are trying to go between Fredericton and Halifax not by hitch-hiking and not by begging. Maybe it is the only type of transportation that you people can afford. I feel sorry for you.

You have mentioned some dissatisfaction about the heavy-water plant in Nova Scotia if you were experts in the matter. Let me tell you also that you have a lot to learn. There are two sides to the coin on this story. Maybe your side is right up to a point but in the meantime all this money has been spent

in the Maritimes and it would not have been spent in the Maritimes; it would have been spent somewhere else in Canada. It has produced employment for thousands of people and it will give Canada, when it is completed, even with all the problems there have been to build it, one of the best heavy-water plants in the world.

One of the reasons why it is slow is because of techniques and new developments in the processing of heavy water is causing some problems.

You mention—well, I will skip the rest of it—about the jungle of America. Believe me, I do not agree with you. I have travelled all over America a great deal, perhaps as you have, and I do not feel that there is any jungle. I know they have their complications and their problems. Let me remind you that with an attitude like that you are not going to get very far nor will your paper, which is a radical paper, that you produce, ridiculing everybody.

I may not agree with Premier Robichaud in many things but today he is my premier and I respect him as the Honourable Louis Robichaud, premier of my province, as a Canadian citizen. Many dictators have the respect I give my premier.

It is the same thing with the Prime Minister of Canada; he is the Prime Minister of Canada and I have no right to ridicule him. Nothing is going to destroy our society faster than people like you ridiculing the leaders of our country.

I want to tell you, Mr. Chairman, I will cherish this brief because it has made great contributions. You have put back in the record some of the statements I have made previously about the waste and extravagance in welfare.

You produced one letter received by somebody else, not me, because the man who sent that letter sent it unsigned but he put his address on. I want to tell you and anybody else here that anybody who sends a letter and forgets to put his name on it, it usually goes in the wastepaper basket.

In this case I was polite enough to pass it on to another senator because this same man had written another letter to another senator giving his name, who sent me a copy of my speech, of which I was not ashamed.

In the meantime I have received hundreds of letter of congratulation because I had nerve enough to speak with an open mind about the abuses and extravagance that is

going on around the country in welfare, and you fellows know it, too.

I will cherish this brief because it is the cheapest and meaningless brief that we have seen since we started across the country. We have received hundreds of briefs. Some of them were rather really rough but there are always two sides to the coin. There is always the constructive side.

It is nice to criticize. It is the easiest thing in the world, but when you do criticize you want to learn at your young age, you must offer some constructive criticism, if you want to do what you think you are doing.

I said I will cherish this brief. I will frame it and keep it as a souvenir. As I said, in my opinion, it is the most meaningless brief that this committee has received. It is just a series of platitudes, a perfect image of the quality of the sponsoring group. There is nothing constructive in this brief. All the world is wrong. The only useful thing is the Mysterious East, which is already ready to disappear like the rest of the literature of this nature. You will not survive very long. You have made a great contribution, as I said a while ago, by putting back into the record some of the statements I made.

This morning—you are an educated man—you were asked not to read the brief in its full length but just to comment on it. Of all the hundreds of briefs we have received in Canada by people from all levels of society, educated and uneducated, you, as university professors, felt you were not able to comment on your brief but you wanted to read it word for word, which showed weakness—that you are not sure of yourselves because you have to depend upon something you have written behind dark walls.

Now, Mr. Chairman, having made my comments, I am here to listen. I have nothing against these boys. They are trying to do good. I feel sometimes they are doing the wrong thing. I feel sorry that people with that ability, that capacity, that education, would not be working on the right track and changing their attitude so as to be constructive for the young generation.

They are in the field; they have the opportunity. They are within the walls of the universities and they should try to do something constructive with the young generation instead of something destructive.

That is all I will say now, Mr. Chairman, and I thank you.

Mr. Hunt: I do not think Senator Fournier with his goodwill and charity—I suggest...

Senator Fournier: It works on both sides, my friend.

Mr. Hunt: Sure. It seems to me irrelevant at this point to go into the question of what caused the disturbance when we came in and how long the brief took and that sort of thing, whether or not that is a question of bad manners.

What I would like to suggest with respect to that problem is that one of the points our brief makes is that poor people, because of the nature of their position in our society, often do not share the norms of the dominant level of society; and that poor people who came to a meeting like this would be presumably a good deal more beyond the pale than a couple of middle-class academics.

The response we got to the minor disturbance involved in acceding to the requests of three people for copies of our magazine and in appearing up here to read the brief would have, it seems to me, totally intimidated anyone who might come up here genuinely as a poor person, as a person who has been consistently kicked around the society.

He would see it, it seems to me, as more of the same and perhaps is one of the reasons why we expressed the skepticism that we did about the conceivable long-range effects of such an inquiry as this which is in fact that the poor people cannot be heard for precisely these kinds of reasons.

Poor people tend to be sometimes, by middle-class standards, rude, and that is one of the things that one has to tolerate if one is going to find out what it means to be poor in this society. That seems to me to be one point.

Another one is the question of whether or not I can afford to fly to Halifax, if I understand Senator Fournier correctly. Our point there is that in order to go from Fredericton to Halifax in our society you have to be a member of the middle-class or hitch-hike. If you are poor, it costs you a lot. It costs three days. In fact, poor people do not fly. Now, it is not a question of economics. It is a question of social style. They are uncomfortable on airplanes. They think if they fly they might just be middle-class, so poor people are used to the train, which does not go there; or a bus which goes there in its own time. So for a poor person to go to Halifax, as we suggested in the brief, to look for a job, means to give up two days and quite probably three hours from something like midnight to 3 a.m. in the bus terminal in Saint John.

The question of whether we have the right to ridicule elected officials seems somewhat

important to me from a couple of points of view. One of them is that I think as anyone who read the Mysterious East article, to which Senator Fournier referred, on Louis Robichaud will agree, the magazine was far short of ridiculing. In fact, it seems to me that the magazine pointed out he is the best that New Brunswick could have done. I am not sure how I feel about that comment but I will let it stand.

The question of whether we have the right to criticize and whether we have to criticize with what the people we are criticizing invariably recognize as impeccable politeness, it seems to me rather doubtful. It seems to me we have the right to listen to people who are not polite, who are a lot less polite than I am and a lot less polite than the Mysterious East has been.

Senator Fournier: Are you going to use my picture on the cover of your next edition?

Mr. Hunt: I have not thought of it.

Senator Fournier: That is an idea for you.

Mr. Hunt: I think we also had something to say about the problem of the heavy-water plant which basically we used as an example of the sort of things which the Atlantic provinces sacrifice in order to attract industries which do not pay their way and which do not pay off in terms of the economy of the area but which do pay off in terms of destruction of the life styles of people in the area.

Very early on in the course of the Mysterious East we published an interview with Patrick O'Brien, who was talking about the economic problems of Ireland. He said that for a long time they thought their salvation was in German industry, apparently on the grounds that anyone who was an enemy of the Germans must be a friend of Ireland.

They thought they could bring in German industry and that would be a way of solving Ireland's counterpart to the problems of the Atlantic provinces. What Patrick O'Brien said was that the German industrialists wanted to change the people of Ireland into the iron workers of Dusseldorf as quickly as possible. They did not consider the way people, indigenous to Ireland, wanted to live. They did not care about the life styles of the people and they did not care about the culture that was already there. What they cared about was getting out their money and sending it back to Germany.

That essentially is our attitude to the heavy water, and I think also to a lesser extent our attitude towards the Westmoreland chemical factory which you went out and looked at this morning.

I cannot remember—is the figure \$15 million or \$50 million?—\$15 million. It doesn't look like \$15 million-worth to me.

The Chairman: Senator Fergusson, do you want to ask a question?

Senator Fergusson: Well, there are a few things I would like to say. In the first place I would like to say there are many things in this brief with which I agree thoroughly, and I may say I am a subscriber to the Mysterious East, and I have not been moved to write to them complaining. I may, but I have not as yet.

However, I do feel that I really resent your attack on Senator Fournier on this occasion because although his ideas may be very different from yours I can assure you that he is sincerely interested in the problem of poverty in Canada and has given much time and effort.

Now, he may not see it the same way as you do. You do not see it the way he does. I can quite see that, but I think we are all entitled to our opinions. I do not really think he should have been the subject of quite so much criticism. However, that is by the way. I just felt I would like to say that.

One thing I would like to say is that in your brief you stress, and again you stressed just now, Mr. Hunt, that people who are the recipients of welfare would not come before us, or that we have not seen them. If you had read our reports you would have known that people in that category came before this committee in Toronto, in Winnipeg, in Vancouver, in Pointe St. Charles and Saint John. We have also had quite a number of deserted wives who were on welfare, who certainly are as needy as anyone in Canada, and there are a great many of them, too; and they have appeared before us.

I do not think any of them were intimidated and we were glad to hear them and we have visited some of their places. We have visited public housing; we have visited these people in their own homes. I really think if you had studied a little more what we have done you would not say, as you have said, that no unemployed man who has been systematically made to feel worthless and incompetent is going to come before such an august body

as the Senate Committee. We have had a lot of them. I just wanted to mention that to you.

There are two other things I would like to bring up. One is that I live in Fredericton too, you know, although I am sorry to say I am not there very much, but what are you doing in connection with the poor in Fredericton? Have you done any organization with them? Have you done any work with them? Have you visited them? That is one of the things I would like to ask.

Another is one, with which I agree with you thoroughly, and that is that it is better to live in the culture we do and in the environment that we do if we have a pleasanter life than if we live somewhere where it is just nothing but a rat race. You say that you are not convinced that better alternatives have been offered.

Well, I do not know about that, but what I would like to ask is, can you suggest how in New Brunswick we can regain our culture and our life that we enjoy very much and avoid being absorbed into the American neon jungle? Can you tell us how we can do this other than what we have been trying to do?

I am sorry I have so many questions but I thought I had better ask them all at once.

Mr. Hunt: If we forget any, remind me, senator. I think I would like to suggest something about the last one first. It seems to me that this is the most difficult problem with which we are faced, and one of the things we have to do is to start tracing the problems the way you have traced them rather than the way it has been traditionally traced.

In doing research for an article in the last ten years on the Liberal Government in New Brunswick, one of the things that struck me was that no one had faced the question that way, that everyone had in fact been traditionally tracing the question as to the industrial availability. How can we encourage industrial development without considering the other part of the coin.

The question is a difficult one. We have, I think, in the brief attempted to begin formulating an answer to it. I am certain it is not a complete answer. I am certain the question is much too complicated for a middle-class academic to solve but the basic thing, I think, that we are arguing is that if we can break the iron chain of connection between employment and poverty, between employment and money, we can begin to change the situation in such a way it will improve New

Brunswick and the Maritime provinces generally and preserve their way of life.

It is the chain which says we have to be employed in order to survive; that, it seems to us, causes the logical consequence of industrial development which then has the further logical consequence of spiritual poverty. I think we can watch that happening in large cities all over North America. It seems to me there is no way we can break the connection between industrial development and spiritual impoverishment. There is no way we can break the connection between the need to have money and industrial development.

Therefore, we have got to attack the problem back further than that and we have got to attack the problem at the beginning and look at the way in which our society, particularly in economic terms, is set up. That seems to be our basic suggestion at this point.

Our criticism of Senator Fournier, I think has been misunderstood. I would not like to think that we had engaged in what I would consider to be a personal attack. I would think that we were doing was suggesting that from our point of view or from the point of view of people who are outside this arena, the opinions that have been voiced by Senator Fournier in that letter we quoted, in particular the citation from the hearing, suggested that his opinions on the subject are already very, very definite; I think very much more definite, for instance, than my opinions are. I do not know that. It certainly seems to me to give that impression, and the fact that this impression has been created interferes possibly with the use of this committee.

These people are not aware, perhaps, that Senator Fournier is listening because I seems to have already made up his mind, seems to me, on crucial issues. I think it is perfectly right to have made up his mind. I do not want to attack him for that.

The Chairman: As a newspaper man, you think it is fair to take one statement out of ten and quote it and say "That is his opinion"?

Mr. Hunt: No. I think we are using that as an example.

The Chairman: No; but Senator Fournier made many statements, other than that statement, from time to time as we went along. You took one statement that was made almost at the beginning, as I recall it, and then from time to time he made other statements. So varied and some supported it, but you quoted

that and that alone. Now, is that a fair approach?

Mr. Hunt: It may not be, but I think that the essence of journalism is being able to pick a characteristic instance and be able to say, "This is the sort of thing that happens." And it seems quite clear—in fact, from Senator Fournier's response this morning that that is at the centre of his beliefs. I think that is perfectly legitimate. I would differ with him about that.

The Chairman: I do not think you know what the senator's beliefs are anywhere near as well as we do, or he does himself. They were not expressed here. I asked you that question and you said, "I suppose it is the licence of an editor" as you are using it. All right. I will not argue with you. Go ahead.

Senator Fergusson: I have other questions. What were they doing?

Mr. Donald Cameron, Editor, The Mysterious East: You asked a question, Senator Fergusson. We, of course, are people working on the magazine and it is a voluntary project, and most of our time, of course, is devoted to the magazine. However, we have tried to help in a number of ways. We have published a number of articles on housing in the Maritimes, housing in Saint John, Summerside and Newfoundland, and various centres around the Maritimes, particularly dealing with the below-standard housing, slum landlords, and so on, in order to publicize these problems for many people who are not perhaps fully aware of the problem. We have formed several tenants' associations in Fredericton.

Senator Fergusson: In what area? Where is the tenants' association?

Mr. Cameron: On George Street. We have published in the magazine agreements that tenants could use as a standard contract form, which I am sure you are aware, with their landlords, in the form of an association of this sort. We are in the process right now of establishing a Legal Aid Centre in Fredericton. The New Brunswick Government and the Traders' Society seem to be, I hesitate to say, reluctant, but they seem to be somewhat reluctant about initiating legal aid programs in the province, so we have started a pilot project, if you like, in Fredericton in order to help people who may not be able otherwise to afford a lawyer and to provide some sort of

instruction to people who might otherwise be unaware of what their legal rights are.

We hope to hold most of these clinics in such areas of Fredericton as Bishop Road, Upper Road, Indian Reserve.

The Chairman: Legal aid is provided here up to a point.

Mr. Cameron: Not very substantially, that I am aware of.

The Chairman: It is provided in criminal matters freely.

Mr. Cameron: What about civil matters?

The Chairman: I said criminal matters.

Mr. Cameron: Yes, okay.

The Chairman: Is there any provision in civil matters? You are a lawyer.

Mr. Robert Daniels, Editor, The Mysterious East: The matters for which it provides I think are like murder, piracy. Piracy is one of the things they provide for but it does not provide for civil matters.

The Chairman: There is nothing done for civil matters at all?

Mr. Daniels: Not that we have any indication of.

The Chairman: You would know because there is only one other province that has not done it.

Mr. Daniels: The only things that I know specifically that comes to my mind immediately for legal aid are murder and piracy.

The Chairman: Why do you term it "piracy"?

Mr. Daniels: That is the way it is termed in the Act.

The Chairman: The Act says "criminal matters." There is nothing in the civil code at all?

Mr. Daniels: No, sir.

Mr. Hunt: There was one question that Senator Fergusson asked, or one point she made, on which I would like to comment. She was talking about the number of impoverished people who appeared before the committee. It is more than I was aware of, and I am sorry I had not heard of it.

In a sense, as a defence on our point, it seems to me that one of the things that

we find is that people who are poverty-stricken, in the extremist sense of the word, tend to be invisible. The people with whom we have been in contact in the impoverished areas have had a reasonable sense of control of their own destiny. That is why they come and talk to us, for instance, when we are doing research on housing.

People who have been systematically made to feel inadequate tend not to be around when we go there. They tend not to answer the door. In fact, those are the people we are speaking of.

I suspect there have not been any of those around. There certainly are more poor people than I was aware of.

The Chairman: We had last night in Saint John a full house up at the Y of people who came from tenants' associations and other associations. Senator Fergusson and Senator McGrand took a walk with them in the evening. I said to one young lady, "You do not have to give me your name. We do not want to put it on the record." But she insisted twice that she was one of the poor people who had been active and yet came and gave evidence.

Mr. Hunt: I think that is the point I am making; maybe a very minor point. But it seems to me in some ways it is the whole question of finding out about poor people is part of the question of style; that the poor people who are active in the tenants' association are also active enough to come down to the Senate hearings, for instance, are already in some measure making steps out of the well of poverty.

The Chairman: That is right.

Mr. Hunt: Whereas the people that I am most concerned with are the people who have been rendered incapable of making such a step.

The Chairman: You are perfectly right that there are such people. Do you mind taking a minute and tell me how we reach them? We have been trying very hard for quite some time.

Mr. Hunt: One of the ways, it seems to me, is to do what was done in Saint John.

The Chairman: What was that?

Mr. Hunt: Walk out with them.

The Chairman: Yes, but there are only a certain number of us. How much walking can

you do and how much talking can you do to get the facts? This is a big country. No matter where you go they say, "You have not been here long enough. You are getting away too soon." There are only so many days in a week.

Mr. Hunt: Well, it seems to me that it would make—granted, the amount of time is minuscule compared to the task at hand. The amount of for listening to academics is even more minuscule. It would make more sense to be out walking around the various sections of Moncton presumably than listening to me.

I will tell you how to contact these people because we had a hard time.

The Chairman: Before you get out of here you may be more valuable than you think.

Senator McGrand: I have a lot of questions but I do not want to take up too much time. I agree with many of your points in the brief in this way: that I think that New Brunswickers can live a rather productive life on the resources of New Brunswick, if they were properly developed.

If you had been with us yesterday when we stopped at Bloomfield and saw the Reverend Mr. Hart and the group of people who were doing their best to develop the farm woodlands, you would realize what is perhaps already now to be done.

I do not like this North American way of waste. Our economy seems to be built on "use and throw away." I do not like that. Now, I want to go back. You mentioned transportation and the cost of getting to Halifax. Now to a person who did not want to take the train to go by train or by bus and he had not the money to go by plane, how do you propose that the government or society should get him there; give him free transportation?

Mr. Cameron: The buses and trains. Subsidize the buses and trains. Pay the salaries the people who run them.

Mr. Hunt: We are working towards that with things like the Maritime Transportation Commission.

Senator McGrand: Now, you mentioned the fact that there is no way of getting to Fredericton by train. We realize that. I lived in Fredericton for a good many years. The C.P. used to run a train three or four times a week from Fredericton Junction to Fredericton. They used to run in and out with about 100 passengers because the people were not going

by train. They run a bus service now and I have travelled on that a good many times, and the man who runs that bus tells me that there are some days he makes two trips in and out without a passenger. Now, if you go to the airport in Fredericton you will find different booths where they rent a car and they are all doing business because the people are travelling by plane.

Would you expect the CPR to run a train from Fredericton Junction to Fredericton for perhaps one passenger a day?

Mr. Hunt: I think if they ran it free they would not be running it for one passenger a day.

Senator McGrand: Ran it free. You want them to run it free?

Mr. Hunt: One of the points we have made is...

Senator McGrand: The CPR is being asked to run it free. We should get everything free. We should get our meals free. We should get our shoes free.

Mr. Hunt: We are talking about a guaranteed annual income.

Senator Fournier: We want a train for the nappies.

Senator McGrand: If you were under the impression that Senator Fournier's attitude was such that poor people would be afraid to resent themselves to this august seminar, you would not have made that statement if you knew Senator Fournier as I know him.

Hundreds of poor people, all the way from Vancouver to St. John's, Newfoundland, appeared before our committee and felt perfectly at home and told their story and we have walked the streets of St. John's, Winnipeg and Vancouver with these people.

You must be interested in this sort of thing if you would not have come all the way from Fredericton to tell this story. To me, you did not give a very satisfactory answer to the question that Senator Fergusson asked you about what you participated in. You were very busy with your magazine. You did do some investigation about the housing problem so you could write an article on it; but what did you do for these groups of poor people?

Let me give you an idea. We have had a number of appearances from the Moncton East End Boys' Club, the Senior Citizens' Association, in which building we were in, the New Brunswick Federation of Labour, the

Greater Moncton Community Chest, and we had a great many delegations before us in the three days we were in Saint John.

The Moncton Community Chest represents 16 voluntary societies and it includes a thousand voluntary workers. Altogether their budget is \$209,000 and a thousand workers give their time free for these people. Fredericton has a correspondingly sizeable group. What groups in Fredericton do you associate with?

Mr. Hunt: Well, we associate ourselves with all sorts of groups.

Senator McGrand: Name them.

Mr. Hunt: The Canadian Civil Liberties Association. I think that is in fact particularly important since the Civil Liberties Association runs a 24-hours phone-answering service for people who are in trouble with the law, and people who are in trouble with the law tend to be poor people.

Senator McGrand: That is all right. That is a group. That is very important.

Mr. Hunt: Okay; but it seems to me that more than this, what is in fact happening is that here you are saying, "Well, you are only in this part-time. You are only in this for other reasons than you are committed to the cause of the poor," which may well be true, I suppose; one can never know about one's own mother.

We are interested not in treating symptoms but in treating causes, so I feel that the work of groups such as you have named is perfectly laudable. I partake in it. I support it.

Through the magazine we supported the Give for Good Neighbours Week but ultimately that is not where my interest is. That is dealing with a problem that is going to continue unless we do something about the cause of the problem. We can help individual poor people all we want. I will bet you could go out and make a poor person rich very easily, but if you are going to stop the production of poor people you have to work with more general things.

The Mysterious East is one of the ways in which I do that.

Senator McGrand: I agree with you, but at the same time you have to reach people at the level. You cannot breach them.

We ran across an ex-convict in Edmonton who is out working with fellows who have just come out of penitentiary. He is working

with them. We have met women who were on welfare and have worked themselves off welfare and are holding now responsible positions.

In Vancouver we met a group of deserted wives. Some of them have not had high school graduation. They have worked their way with stimulation through these voluntary societies. Some of them are getting help through the universities. Now, these were worthwhile things. These things have been done by people who have got down to the level of those people and worked with them rather than preach to them.

Mr. Hunt: That is fair criticism except we are not writing the magazine at this point for these people. If I were writing a pamphlet, for instance, as we have done, to be distributed to the very poor, I think it would have a very different theme. But, I am not writing for them. I am writing to you and to all the people who are here and to people in fact who have already a voice in the way our society exists.

Senator McGrand: You are not writing to me because I shared these views probably long before you were born.

Mr. Hunt: When I am writing to people I am using you as an example as people who have some voice in society already.

The Chairman: Well, let us discuss a few things. What do you mean by "a proper distribution of existing wealth"? What do you suggest? What should we do; and do you know exactly how improper it has been to date statistically?

Mr. Hunt: How improper statistically the wealth has been?

The Chairman: Statistically.

Mr. Hunt: I have no statistics. I have read them but I do not remember them.

The Chairman: Then let us talk about the proper distribution of existing wealth. You used those words; what do you mean?

Mr. Hunt: I think the brief will indicate something like we do not see any reason why in Canada as it is situated today and with the value of the dollar as it is today anybody needs more than, say—and this is negotiable—\$30,000 a year, and I do not see any reason why taxation should not reach 100 per cent above that level.

What is brought in by this minimal increase in taxation at the higher level is then put into a guaranteed annual income so that, as we argued, we have then separated the necessity for employment from economic causes. It is no longer necessary to be employed simply to survive. People can be employed at things at which they want to be employed.

Our technology has reached—or it certainly is rapidly approaching—the point at which we can afford that.

The Chairman: Well, you should know that if you limited income to \$30,000 and taxed everybody above that you would not get a great deal of tax money, because your levels are well below that. The great volume of tax money is well below that. When you get above that you are getting into smaller numbers of people.

Mr. Hunt: In terms of the number of people.

The Chairman: In terms of money.

Mr. Hunt: We are also talking about corporate laws. What we are saying—and it may be statistically be we can be proven wrong, because none of us are economists—but I do not think so because I think there are economists who believe this also, that there is no circulation in Canada now enough welfare to support its poor people without the necessity of making them go out and get a job. That is intolerable.

Those are two reasons why we have connected jobs to economic motives. One of them is that we need to have incentive to get people to do undesirable jobs. We are increasingly getting machines to do such jobs. The other is that we feel a kind of moral abhorrence for someone who doesn't want to work. He is lazy. What is the matter with him? Why doesn't he want to work? That is understandable, but it is institutionalized.

The Chairman: Wait a minute. We will deal with that little by little. I was going to ask you about that too. We will get down to the work. You say we now have the guaranteed income and they can either write poetry or pottery or whatever they want to do. How would you fix the guaranteed income? Do you know the Economic Council's recommendation? Have you any ideas on a reasonable basis for people?

Mr. Hunt: One can look around of which subsistence applies in various areas and take

it at that. I think it would probably vary from area to area. It seems to me the way Canada is constituted now somewhere between \$3,500 and possibly more.

The Chairman: For what?

Mr. Hunt: For a family.

The Chairman: For a family how big?

Mr. Hunt: Take it to the size of the family. I think a family of four and then increase it with more children. Perhaps we are going to have to be careful about increasing it with the children since we are beginning to become worried about the number of children.

The Chairman: Who is worried?

Mr. Hunt: It seems to me that anybody who is looking around at the number of people who are building cottages on any given lake have got to be a little worried about it.

The Chairman: You are talking about \$3,500 for a family of four and something additional for children?

Mr. Hunt: That is a guess.

The Chairman: In speaking of the guaranteed income and the redistribution of wealth, redistribution of wealth would mean redistributing from the rich to the poor and thus letting it around to everybody. How, then, do you reconcile that with the suggestion that the allowance may have to vary from section to section in Canada?

Mr. Hunt: I had not thought that out. It seems to me reasonable, however,—one of the things that the brief says is that it is possible to exist in a respectable life in New Brunswick, in rural New Brunswick, where you can in fact do some of your own gardening or may prefer to do some of your own gardening and probably less cash money per year than it could take to exist respectably in Toronto.

The Chairman: Is that not the reason why you have not had redistribution of wealth, that they have taken less when they should not have? For instance, you do not vary when it comes to family allowances whether you live on a New Brunswick farm or in Toronto on Bay Street. You do not vary with the Canada Pension Plan. You do not vary on employment insurance. If it is \$70 here it is \$70 there. You do not vary on old-age security. It is the same for the man in New Bruns-

wick as the man in British Columbia. Why would you vary the guaranteed income?

Mr. Hunt: I would argue on principle if we are going to try to be perfectly just that the other things ought to be varied on such criteria also. I think in fact in political terms it would probably be impractical because you have a lot of areas fighting and saying we need more money for that area so you would probably wind up in practical political terms as with the family allowances; you know, the same amount.

The Chairman: You do not do it on political terms. Let us do it on human and economic terms. If you have a few more dollars coming into a distressed area in New Brunswick, are you not likely to raise the standard of living in that community?

Mr. Hunt: Yes.

The Chairman: Well, have we not been crying for that for almost 100 years? We do not see anybody supporting the idea; at least, you did not when you started.

Mr. Hunt: I think the idea of the variation of this thing from area to area is perhaps to be taken more profoundly than we ever did. It seems that might assist in creating a more just distribution but I see no reason to insist on it. It may well be. The arguments, for instance, for giving more money to an impoverished family on Keswick Bridge than to a Toronto slum-dweller—there may well be an argument the other way; I do not know. It seems the probability is that the same amount is not worth the same in both places.

The Chairman: As a matter of fact, the cost of living here in New Brunswick is not lower. Do not ever believe that.

Now, you touched on something that has been bothering this committee, the work habit. Let us take a few moments and discuss that. You know what I am talking about. Go ahead.

Mr. Hunt: Well, the work ethic, it seems to me, or it seems to a lot of people, arises from the necessity at some point or the other in history to get people to do the really unpleasant jobs, and at that time you always said we will give you more money for doing an unpleasant job and you will get less money for a more pleasant job, and it is true of a number of other things; but that certainly does not apply any more. We can do most of our unpleasant jobs with automation and

with the redistribution of our technological resources and this is solving those kinds of problems.

From that point of view the work ethic is not functional as an economic operator any more. What is functional, I think, is the desire of the human being to work, and I think you will find really few poor people who do not want to work and not only so that they will get money to subsist on but because work is one of the things that people do. It is one of the things that defines what we are and gives us the kind of gratification that allows us to be a human being.

It seems to me if we break the chain of connection between work and money that people can then find work and will find work which is gratifying.

People are infinitely various. Infinitely various jobs will be done. We will be able to see that jobs get done which are now not economically viable. It is very, very hard to be a potter and survive. You can only do it part-time. It is very, very hard to be a painter and perhaps more importantly also it is very, very hard to be a community organizer. It is very, very hard to spend your time working with a poor family if you are also working, you know, 40 hours a week on something else from which you are not getting that kind of gratification.

That is why by and large benefactors in North American society have been wealthy people, people who have been free from that chain, and who then can go out and work with groups of poor people.

The Chairman: We have got your views on that. How do we motivate these people to do these things about which we are talking? What process do we use for motivation?

Mr. Hunt: It seems to me that motivation is something that comes partially in forced idleness. There is going to be a period—if we, tomorrow, said, "There will be a guaranteed annual income in Canada of \$4,500 a year," an awful lot of poor people would stop working just as in fact some people go on welfare. They would say, "No, I do not want anything to do with it," but at the same time...

Senator McGrand: I do not follow that. You say if the guaranteed annual income were to come in the poor people would stop working?

The Chairman: And he added "as some do now under welfare."

Mr. Hunt: Yes. They would rather not work and get \$60 a week, as Senator Fournier pointed out, than go to work and get \$75.

The Chairman: Mr. Hunt, you make that statement and glibly run over it. When we were in Toronto it was brought to our attention very forcibly that there were 30,000 people in Toronto—that is not because it is Toronto; in fact it could be in any place—who were working and earning less than they could get on welfare.

Mr. Hunt: That is the point I am trying to get to. I think in the short run there are people who will quit. In the long run people will work because that is what makes them people. People will find things to do which are satisfying and things to do which are satisfying run, as anybody knows, from cabinet-making to aircraft design, to corporation management and to writing poetry.

The Chairman: That, you say, will be the motivation?

Mr. Hunt: I think so. We have no dearth in Canada of heroes who are doing things because they need to be done and doing things in spite of the fact there is no money involved or less money than they could make doing something else.

The Chairman: Then what do you mean by the words "social development"?

Mr. Hunt: It depends on the context in which I am using it.

The Chairman: On page 6 you use the words "social development." Would you like to look at it?

Mr. Hunt: Social development involves a whole lot of things. One of them, it seems to me, involves the creation of society in which it is possible for the vast majority of the members of society to be reasonably satisfied with their position in the society and the relationship to it.

This involves eliminating, first of all, the problems of really grinding poverty. It involves the recreation of cultural involvement which, in a large measure, it seems to me we are losing.

The Miramichi Folk Centre Festival referred to in here, seems to be very important in this regard. I went to the Miramichi Folk Festival last year and wrote an article about it in which I argued that this is a tradition which seems to be dying. The people

who participate in it, the people who sing, are all older people. The younger people who were there sang Peter, Paul and Mary. They sang pop songs. They were not interested in the Miramichi Folk Festival.

Part of the reason for that, it seems to me, is our industrialization, our connection of values with profit, our creation of a society in which the list of things we have mentioned as human necessities have become human necessities.

Senator McGrand: Imported from Hollywood.

Mr. Hunt: Imported from all over; so in some way what we are calling for is a recreation of a set of traditional values. That is a very conservative sort of attitude.

The Chairman: What you are talking about is alternatives. You use the term "preferable alternatives." What are they?

Mr. Hunt: To what we are doing now?

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Hunt: The train that was cancelled between Fredericton Junction and Fredericton was cancelled because it was not economically viable.

The Chairman: What was that?

Mr. Hunt: The train was cancelled because it was not economically viable. As the Argo record has suggested, when we look at whether or not we need something in our society we do not say, "Do we need it?" "Have we the resources to build it?"

We say, "Can we make it economically viable?" That has nothing to do with whether or not the thing is necessary and whether or not it would be a good thing for all of us to have and whether or not we can create it.

The Maritimes is full of such projects that have been abandoned.

Senator McGrand: You were talking about the guaranteed annual income. Most of the people with whom we have discussed this—and we have discussed it with a great number of people—a large number of these well-meaning people who are working with the poor every day have said that the guaranteed annual income is not the answer. Many of the working poor prefer to improve their productivity and earn more money by increasing their productivity than by having a guaranteed annual income; but you think the gua-

ranteed annual income is the answer. Just give me a short answer because I am going to ask you another question.

Mr. Hunt: No. I think it is not the answer. I think it is a large part of the answer.

Senator McGrand: Now, did you say—and I think you did—because I remember I asked you to repeat it, and I think this is what you said in essence; that there are a number of people who, if they got \$60 a week as a guaranteed annual income, would stop working rather than work for \$75 a week; did you say that?

Mr. Hunt: No. When I said that I was quoting—I do not know if I was quoting accurately or not—Senator Fournier's comment which he quoted. He was saying in fact now under existing welfare system, people quit work.

Senator McGrand: But I asked you that question and you repeated it, and that is what you told me; that you thought there were a lot of people who, if they got the guaranteed annual income, would stop work. You said "just as they do now on welfare."

Senator Fournier: Yes, he agreed with me.

Mr. Hunt: Yes, but may I distinguish it? I said there are some now—although as Senator Croll has pointed out...

Senator McGrand: Just answer my question. I am the one that is asking the question. Did you say that there would be some people, if they got the guaranteed annual income of \$60 a week, would not work, or would quit work as they do now on welfare?

Mr. Hunt: No. Can I explain what I did say?

Senator McGrand: All right.

Mr. Hunt: What I said was that in the short run some people will quit under such a system. The guaranteed annual wage I am proposing, I think, would come out to more than \$60 a week.

Senator Croll pointed out, and I think it is a very good point, that in fact most poor people under the present system do not quit. I think in the long run under a guaranteed annual income people would work. An awful lot of them would work. I think in general you can say that people would work.

Senator McGrand: But you will admit that a lot of people would, if they got \$60 a week

now by way of a guaranteed annual income, would quit temporarily the same as they do now on welfare? You said that; whether or not you want to take it back or retract it, all right, but you said that.

Mr. Hunt: Well, it doesn't sound quite like what I said. I will stay with my modification.

Senator McGrand: It seems to me a lot like what Senator Fournier said to you and you are repeating now.

Mr. Hunt: No, in fact...

Senator McGrand: All right, you have answered the question, and I got the answer.

The Chairman: Do you want to add anything?

Mr. Hunt: One thing: I think on that point I do agree with Senator Fournier except I think that what Senator Fournier is saying is that, one, it is bad for them to quit, and, two, they will stay quit. I disagree with both of these points. I do not think it is bad to quit and I do not think they will stay quit.

Senator Quart: Mr. Chairman and gentlemen of the Mysterious East, I find it rather funny to think of the word "mysterious" when it comes to the Maritimes. However, it is with a feeling of sadness that I venture a few remarks in this debate; not in any way to defend Senator Fournier, because he does not need me or anybody else to defend him, nor his remarks. For those of us who know him, we know he is well known for his justice and fair play and very frank attitude about things. He does not hedge in dealing with people, and especially with under-privileged and unemployed.

Now, for your information, gentlemen, maybe you would not have made the sacrifice he made this week, and I am sure I am going to shock him because he is bashful. There was a family reunion for his family which I believe was organized quite a while ago.

Senator Fournier: Once a year.

Senator Quart: Once a year they have this reunion, and he gave it up in order to be here with us for these meetings for the poor, for the young, for the old, and for the middle-aged and what-have-you.

He gave up all these days and is going home for just two days to be with his family. Now, that is pretty noble.

Also, last evening, when a group of very polite young people were taking notes, our Chairman invited them to participate, but as time was running out Senator Fournier again volunteered to talk to them in order to try to find a bridge, let us say, for this so-called generation gap. I really do not feel strongly about this generation gap but he did. He took time off when he was tired, as we are all tired after going through a day of travelling and several days into the night of meetings, to sit and chat with these young people and try to explain, I suppose, the parent versus teenager to them. I do not know what he said. I know whatever he said I would go along with, I am quite sure, but that was from the kindness of his heart.

Again it shows his heart is in the right place. He could have said goodnight to these people and away he would go.

There is an old saying that the way to a man's heart is through his stomach, and I suppose it gets there twice as quickly with the teenagers now. He sent out one of the staff for sandwiches, soft drinks, or something like that, for them, and I did hear the amount that he spent, and it was quite considerable anyway, which I am sure he could very well have used for his family reunion this week. This was all done in order to have a little chat with these people and this shows his heart is in the right place.

I want to go just one step further. This is my reaction. I have grandsons maybe just your age. I feel sorry that you have this attitude, and I sat through the Committee on Mass Media where they had these underground radical newspapers, left, right, pink, blue, what-have-you, come before us, but I do not think I have ever had quite the feeling. I was not brought home to me nearly so much as in listening to some of your remarks.

I have always believed in freedom of the press. I hope I do not become disillusioned in my old age. Sometimes freedom of the press can be abused of freedom and when you tear down respect for all authority and ridicule the leaders of our political parties, no matter who they are, I think in spite of all your Ph.D.'s or whatever it is, what you are doing to our young people is dreadful. What are they going to become? They will not have respect for anybody, and please think it over each time you take up your pen, or whenever you take up your sword, and cut down and ridicule everybody. Somebody must be right.

The Chairman: Assuming for a moment that the important problems in Canada today are poverty, pollution and peace, what are your priorities?

Mr. Hunt: You mean between these three?

The Chairman: Yes; add to them if you like.

Mr. Hunt: It seems to me that pollution goes with poverty. Both of those are due to the economic organizations which have served us well for a thousand years in western civilization and is not serving us so well any more.

It seems to me peace goes with them, too. If you solve that problem the other problems probably will be solved. If there is something else that comes first, those three are about equal.

The Chairman: So you have run out on me?

Mr. Hunt: Yes. Put poverty first because that is what we are here today to talk about.

The Chairman: Yes?

From The Floor: Senator Croll, I am an official of the Department of Health and Welfare, and I am the one who was requested by the minister of that department to arrange our visit to northeastern New Brunswick. We put considerable effort into arranging for this, but I was informed by Mr. Lord that this visit has been cancelled.

The Chairman: Yes, it has been cancelled. I am sorry.

From The Floor: I was informed only when I walked in this door.

The Chairman: I am sorry. We have been attempting for two days to communicate with someone who ought to have been available to us and was not available, and did not make themselves known. So we had to cancel it.

From The Floor: Mr. Lord knew I was the one to contact.

The Chairman: Well, he tried.

From The Floor: The difficulty is, those people are expecting this visit.

The Chairman: We told him that.

From The Floor: Well, on behalf of those people who were expecting the visit, who will tell them you are not coming?

The Chairman: There is nothing we can do now. We are sorry. We cancelled that part of the visit. We have had four days. That is all we can do.

Now, if there are no more questions, may I say to you, Mr. Hunt and your fellow editors, that you have your views and you have presented them. They are interesting. But I think I should make one thing clear. The brief was put together on short notice and you really did not have the time nor the facilities to reproduce the brief as you might have done under ordinary circumstances. I was not aware that there was a brief from the *Mysterious East*. Any time you see something as mysterious as that you want to know what is in it. However, you have come along and you have had your say. You feel better for it and so do we.

Now that we have Mr. Hunt agreeing with Senator Fournier in the extreme, something of value has been gained.

Before I close I want to say that there is a young lady by the name of Lynn Cohen of the Secretary of State's office, who has worked hard, even on her holidays, typing and reproducing the briefs for the committee. On behalf of the committee, I thank her most profusely.

From The Floor: Senator Croll, again on behalf of the people that you were to visit, which are the poor people of New Brunswick, I would like it to be known that you will inform them of why you are not going. I think it would be just a polite gesture for you people to inform them why you cannot make it, because they are expecting you. I think they should have a message communicated by the Senate Committee.

The Chairman: We informed the gentleman this morning who was here before the committee, and we have been trying to inform him for two days by telephone, including you, whom we have not been able to reach.

As a matter of fact, I should have thought that someone would have come forward the

minute we landed here in Moncton and said, "These are the arrangements." No one has come forward and we have been trying by telephone to reach somebody and they were not available.

From The Floor: Pardon me, sir. I was in contact with Mr. Lord and I assured him

everything would be ready, and that I would meet him here this afternoon.

The Chairman: That was not conveyed to me or to the committee. This concludes our hearings in Moncton, and the committee hearing is now adjourned. Thank you very much.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

BRIEF

to

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE

on

POVERTY

by

THE NEW BRUNSWICK FEDERATION OF
LABOUR
(C.L.C.)

Honourable David A. Croll, Q.C., Chairman
and Members of the Special Senate Committee
on Poverty:

*Background on the New Brunswick Federation
of Labour*

The New Brunswick Federation of Labour
has been in existence since February 25, 1914
when it obtained a charter from the Trades
and Labour Congress of Canada. In 1956, the
Canadian Labour Congress came into being
with the merger of the Trades and Labour
Congress of Canada and the Canadian Con-
gress of Labour. The C.L.C. granted the New
Brunswick Federation of Labour its new
charter on August 27, 1957.

Our Federation is composed of forty-one
different unions with 163 locals and 25,000
members. Also affiliated are seven Labour
Councils representing major communities in
our province. It is estimated we represent
2,500 union members and their families out
of an estimated N.B. population of 625,000.

Statement by the Canadian Welfare Council

In January, 1969, the Canadian Welfare
Council issued a statement entitled "Social
Policies for Canada, Part I".

We would like to quote from the statement,
some of their comments:

"Continuing poverty in rich urban and
industrialized countries means exclusion
from the expanding comforts, opportuni-
ties, and self-respect accorded to the
majority. Physical hardship is not pov-
erty's only characteristic. A person is pov-
erty stricken when he is full of a deep

sense of inequality and feels chronic
exclusion and alienation from the wider
society in which he lives."

The Council noted different causes of pov-
erty by categorizing them but added further
that "in real life different types of poverty
and their causes intermingle, sometimes in an
inextricable manner."

Life-Cycle Poverty—is liable to press
in on people during predictable periods in
their lives: in childhood, later when they
have children of their own to support and
again in old age.

Depressed Area Poverty—At any point
in time some regions will depend more
heavily than others on declining forms
of production.

Crisis Poverty—Some people suffer
from sharp but temporary set-backs to
their living standards arising from unem-
ployment, illness, injury, desertion or
death of the breadwinner.

**Poverty Due to Long-term Dependen-
cy**—Many people are physically or men-
tally handicapped from birth, and have
never earned a living.

Inner-city Poverty—There tends to be
some segregation of richer and poorer
households in every town or city. In
larger towns the concentration of poor
people in particular areas may impose an
accumulation of mutually reinforcing
social handicaps upon all who live in
these neighbourhoods.

The Canadian Welfare Council has called
for a complete review and revision of current

social policies to plug gaps in existing social welfare programs and to improve existing programs. The Council calls for provision of a guaranteed annual income for all Canadians as a needed first step.

Statement by the Economic Council of Canada

In their *Fifth Annual Review* the Economic Council of Canada said:

"Poverty in Canada is real. Its numbers are not in the thousands but in the millions. There is more of it than our society can tolerate, more than our economy can afford, and far more than existing measures and efforts can cope with. Its persistence, at a time when the bulk of Canadians enjoy one of the highest standards of living in the world, is a disgrace."

In their *Sixth Annual Review* entitled "Perspective 1975", the Economic Council of Canada spoke of the costs and economic implications of poverty. These were best described as:

Lost Output—the additional production of goods and services that the poor would have created had their productive potential been better developed and effectively used.

Diverted Output—consists of the goods and services not produced because productive resources are diverted from other potential uses into activities made necessary by the failure to eliminate remediable poverty.

On welfare assistance the Council said:

"Welfare assistance is provided in a manner and amount that all too frequently undermines, rather than reinforces, the abilities and the aspirations of recipients to participate productively in the economic system."... "The majority of the poor contribute more to general tax revenues than they receive in the form of government welfare expenditures."

Canadian Labour Congress' Concern

Our Federation is aware that the parent spokesman for labour in Canada, the Canadian Labour Congress will be appearing before your Committee at a later date. We would be remiss in our duties if we did not mention in our brief the concern of the C.L.C. for the millions of Canadians in every part of the country who are forced to exist on incomes and in circumstances which deny them a proper standard of living.

The C.L.C. is represented on the Economic Council of Canada and has representation on

the Board of Directors of the Canadian Welfare Council.

During the last seven years, the Canadian Labour Congress has urged its affiliates to turn their attention to a particular problem affecting Canadian society in what has become known as labour's Citizenship Month Program. This year we focussed attention on A Guaranteed Annual Income as a social right for every Canadian. Some of the other Citizenship Month Projects were: Canada Pension Plan, A Health Charter for Canadians, Taxation—Carter Commission Report and Housing. All of these programs play some role in the matter that has become a concern of your Special Senate Committee.

Canadian Labour, the official monthly publication of labour devoted a whole issue in August, 1969 to the question of poverty. Other publications of the C.L.C. have had articles on the subject and almost every trade union publication in Canada has had articles on poverty in order to inform their members of the problems of the poor.

Before embarking upon the views of our own Federation, we would like to quote excerpts from the Memorandum to the Government of Canada by the C.L.C. on March 23, 1970 and from the Policy Statement on Poverty as adopted by the 1,500 delegates at the 8th Constitutional Convention of the C.L.C. in Edmonton in May of this year.

In the Memorandum, the C.L.C. said:

"The allegation has been made that in insisting on high wages, the trade union are somehow doing an injustice to those who cannot bargain for their own incomes: the aged, the unorganized, and those with low incomes generally. We cannot accept this proposition. Trade unions do not create poverty. On the contrary, they have tended to eliminate for that portion of the working population which is to be found in their ranks. Trade unions have furthermore a proud record of action on behalf of those who do not directly enjoy the benefits of union efforts, as witness campaigns for improved old age security legislation, medicare and other social measures. We do not for a moment believe that voluntary restraints on our part would contribute in any way to improving the lot of the poor. We doubt that Canadian corporations will respond to more modest wage demands by keeping prices down and giving consumers any other benefit than

such restraints might justify. The rules of the game do not work that way."

"The solution for poverty lies in your hands since government alone has sovereign powers to effect a more just redistribution of the national product as well as to equalize opportunity. We do not think that the way to accomplish this is by imposing restraints on trade unions whether in the name of preventing inflation or otherwise. Indeed, as we indicate below, your anti-inflationary efforts are likely to lead to an increase in poverty since you seem so readily disposed to accept an increase in unemployment with every indication of equanimity."

The Policy Statement on Poverty said:

"The Canadian Labour Congress in convention declares that the elimination of poverty must be a major goal for Canada. The continued development of natural resources, the introduction of new technological devices, the growth of industry and the increases in productivity must be directed not only at providing greater corporate wealth or improving the incomes of those who are already well off, but must contribute effectively to raising the living standards of those who are segregated, by their lack of means, from the main stream of Canadian life. A major redistribution of the national income is essential with a larger proportion going to those who are classified as being poor."

"Basically, every Canadian, regardless of the causes of his need, should be assured of an income and services which together will provide him with a satisfactory minimum standard of living. Such a guaranteed annual income, progressing with each improvement in the living standards generally, is a proper goal for the government and the people of Canada."

"The provision of a minimum income, however adequate, is not enough. Before large numbers of the poor, the answer lies not in such a minimum but in opportunities to provide for themselves. This requires a policy of full employment, supplemented by adequate minimum wage legislation, strong labour market and manpower policies and by improved programs for regional development and rehabilitation."

22433-5

New Brunswick Government's action

The New Brunswick Government in 1962 established a Royal Commission on Finance and Municipal Taxation in New Brunswick. The Report was completed in November, 1963 and the Government proceeded with its Program of Equal Opportunity in 1967. The program transferred many of the financial municipalities and fifteen county councils to relating to people directly, were health, welfare, justice and education.

The quality of services varied from community to community as did the taxation system. The poor areas of the province had an inadequate school system, the highest welfare costs with taxes being assessed on almost everything. The larger municipalities had the better quality of services.

The area that the Government has been concentrating their efforts in since the program was implemented has been in the education system. Regional schools have been developed as well as new university campuses, teachers' colleges, technical and trade schools.

The Government has recently received a report from its Consultants on the delivery of hospital services and some steps have been implemented to improve the administration of justice.

In March of this year the Premier, Honourable Louis J. Robichaud, tabled in the Legislative Assembly a White Paper on Social Development and Social Welfare.

Quoting from the White Paper:

"The program for Equal Opportunity has given New Brunswick the capacity to guarantee to every citizen the right to full participation in social and economic change."

"As in the rest of the world poverty still exists in New Brunswick. An unacceptable large portion of our population has found it beyond their capacity to adjust to new demands for educated, healthy, skilled and mobile workers."

"Some, with proper kinds of assistance, can be returned to self-sufficiency. Others have permanently lost their earning capacities and must rely on society for sustenance."

The White Paper further said:

"Three principles will be the foundation of New Brunswick's social development policies of the seventies. There are:

1. The Government of New Brunswick has accepted as a fundamental philosophy the right of every citizen to participate in economic growth and to share in its benefits.
2. The Government believes the people of New Brunswick must be equipped with the skills and resources to take full advantage of new opportunities resulting from economic growth.
3. It is the policy of this Government that these skills and resources must be provided without regard to constitutional jurisdictions or traditional administrative forms to enable the citizens of New Brunswick to lead productive, healthy, rewarding and happy lives."

Since the introduction of the White Paper, the Premier has established a Task Force to be co-chaired by Mr. Emery LeBlanc and Very Rev. H.L. Nutter to perform a two-fold task:

1. To stimulate discussion on the White Paper and on the objectives and approaches proposed in the White Paper.
2. To recommend broad guidelines to the government to assist in the development of future priorities and programs in the fields of social development and social welfare.

New Brunswick Federation of Labour's Concern

Our Federation is as much concerned about a better way of life for New Brunswickers and all Canadians, as is our parent body, the Canadian Labour Congress. Limited in manpower and resources, we will attempt to give to your Committee our views on this vital question with which you have charged yourselves, that of the responsibility of finding some answers.

This concern has been shown down through the years when we sought new legislation or asked for improvements to existing legislation.

In early March of this year we submitted our annual legislative brief to the New Brunswick Government. The brief was centered around four main items of concern as well as

a number of resolutions aimed at specific government departments.

We questioned the high level of unemployment as well as incomes below the national average. We indicated support for the Regional Development Incentives Act and the proposed growth centres. We suggested to the Government that the next step was to establish industrial estates around these centres. We offered suggestions as to when tax incentives should be used; we referred to methods employed in other countries in financing the industrial development of their lagging regions; we mentioned initial government financing of the infrastructure government the construction of industrial plants which are subsequently sold to private industrial firms; we stressed that firms locating in the province under the Regional Development Incentives Act must be prepared to allow their employees to organize into unions and that industrial development be related to human existence...people do not exist to serve industry.

Our brief raised the question of the delay in the implementation of the Medical Services Act. We noted the federal government's share of the total cost would be 70 per cent and that over 40 per cent of the population are without private pre-payment coverage. We suggested further that we supported the government on its decision that there would be no premiums, and we urged that the additional revenues required be obtained on the basis of "ability" to pay. In the delivery of quality health services we suggested the establishment of group practice in community health centres where consumers can play a role.

The brief called on the provincial government to exercise its influence with the federal government to overhaul Canada's entire social security system, and the implementation of a guaranteed annual income for all Canadians.

On May 8 of this year, we made our annual submission to the Minimum Wage Board requesting that there be one minimum wage order and that it be \$1.50 per hour.

(Since the presentation, our Federation held our annual convention and a resolution was adopted calling for a minimum wage of \$2.00 per hour. This will be sought in our next presentation.) The brief further requested that the provisions of the Canada Labour (Standards) Code be implemented in New Brunswick to cover all workers under provincial jurisdiction. The brief noted a number of Conventions and Recommendations of the

International Labour Organization, and suggested that the Board should seriously consider these, as the Conventions are minimum labour standards which all member countries (including Canada) are obligated to put into effect, while the Recommendations provide guidance as to policy, legislation and practice.

Our brief suggested to the Board that it consider another important point in reference to minimum wages: "That increased wages to employees will make management become more efficient either by new production techniques or better management. Workers cannot be expected to subsidize a weak management or an industry that is not viable by being paid inadequate wages or having poor working conditions."

We included in our brief a number of exhibits. One exhibit noted the high unemployment rate of 7.7% in December, 1969 with only 21% or 44,293 workers organized out of a labour force of 207,000. We posed the following question to the Board—To what degree does the low percentage of unionization of the working population and the high degree of unemployment help in keeping the minimum wage and minimum standards of employment down? To date, we have not received an answer.

In June of 1969, our Federation presented a brief to certain New Brunswick Cabinet Ministers requesting legislation that would encourage co-operative housing—During the last sitting of the Legislature the Government passed legislation for co-operative housing. Meetings have been going on between members of the Atlantic Co-Op Council and the four Federations of Labour of the Atlantic provinces to establish a full-time organizer-technician to act as a Third Force to interest groups in co-op housing. This would be similar to the good work that St. Francis Xavier Extension Department has done in Nova Scotia.

At our recent annual convention a Political Education Conference was held with representatives from the three political parties in New Brunswick and a representative from the labour movement to discuss the White Paper on Social Development and Social Welfare with questions from the delegates. This dialogue gave our members an opportunity to hear some of the problems relating to this vital question.

New Brunswick Federation of Labour's Views

Our Federation seriously respect the task you have undertaken and we fully realize that there is no simple solution to poverty.

We feel it will take the efforts of many people, groups, organizations and various government departments and agencies.

We sincerely hope that your recommendations will lead to a dedicated effort to make Canada a better place to live in for all Canadians.

In line with what we have just said, we would like to offer our views in those areas where we feel it would be of most benefit for the plight of the poor.

1. Encourage Collective Bargaining—Mr. William Mahoney, National Director of the United Steelworkers of America in an article that appeared in the Toronto Daily Star on February 6th said

"actually free collective bargaining and the growth of democratic trade unionism has been something that has been tolerated in this country rather than encouraged."

Trade unionism found its start in the ranks of the poor. Legislation, employers and Labour Relations Boards are continuously placing roadblocks in the way of workers seeking their universal human right "to form and to join trade unions for the protection of their interest". Canada, through its eleven jurisdictions of labour must revamp their thinking in this area and think of people, in line with the Conventions and Recommendations of the I.L.O. as a minimum standard. A country such as ours should be setting the example rather than trying to catch up. It should be borne in mind that only 21 per cent of the work force in New Brunswick is organized as compared with 30 per cent in Canada.

2. Minimum Wage-Fixing—We are of the firm belief that people as human beings still take pride in themselves and their families. Minimum wage legislation must provide workers with an incentive to work. Minimum wage rates should be established at a level that would maintain a suitable standard of living for a family unit of husband, wife and two children. They should be adjusted upwards with the cost-of-living. Once a worker begins to make a contribution to the economy he will want to seek ways and means to improve his status to purchase those

goods and services that will make living more enjoyable for his family.

3. Economic Development—We have focused some of our concern earlier on this question. The continuing out-migration of our people which was 35,127 between 1961-1966 (Second Annual Review, Atlantic Provinces Economic Council) represented over 80 per cent under 29 years of age. Thus, due to the tendency to migrate in the more productive age groups, there is an excess of those in the age groups who are unable to work because they are either too old or too young. This relatively larger number of dependents lowers the per capita income. With an expenditure over 30 million dollars planned for the caring of the province's 50,000 poor in 1970, we must make it our task to provide good paying jobs to keep our young people here and attract new immigrants to our region.

The expansion of existing industry coupled with the new industry we are able to attract to our province under the Regional Development Incentives Act will determine for us and our children whether or not, we are really a true partner of Confederation or an economic unit expected to fend for oneself.

4. Education—Our Federation respect the efforts being made by the N.B. Government to upgrade our school facilities, our teachers and finally our children. We are very much concerned though with the opportunities of those students that must venture to university under government loans and who have borrowed their maximum and are not able to continue their education. Also the handicap of leaving university and having to repay the loan, at a time when the individual is contemplating marriage or had married and is committed to further responsibilities of a young married couple. Realizing education is a provincial responsibility, we see no reason why the federal government in co-operation with the provinces cannot undertake a program that will not deny to a student an opportunity to complete his education to the maximum of his ability without financial obstacles over his or her head.

We are concerned about adult education especially in the area under manpower programs, where unemployed persons can have educational upgrading in order to give an individual an educational level that will allow him to pursue a trade or course at a trade school. It is our feeling that such programs should also include leadership training so that

the unemployed person can assist himself in other areas. Such programs are provided for management personnel under a heading such as supervisory training.

We are concerned about the use of the Memramcook Institute of Continuous Learning. The Institute, a new venture in adult education in New Brunswick is not being fully utilized for the role for which it was designed. We find the institution being used more and more by management for the training of their supervisory staffs while those in dire need of adult education are being neglected.

We are concerned about our New Brunswick universities and our New Brunswick professors in the role of leadership and adult education. Very little is being done in this area in comparison with what has taken place in our sister province, Nova Scotia at St. Francis Xavier University and Dalhousie University. Universities should not be regarded as monuments of stone and places of learning for our children. They must become involved in the total community about them.

5. Housing—Realizing that the family unit is the basic unit in our society, we must change our attitudes in making available housing to our citizenry. A Task Force and housing conferences have discussed this problem. It is said a person must earn \$8,500 in order to qualify for a N.H.A. loan. Where does this leave those people in Poverty? If people in poverty could acquire a home, the pride of such ownership will encourage them to improve their well-being to an even greater extent. More efforts must be made by governments to eliminate land speculation and land assembly. Monies should be made available from the Canada Pension Plan and private pension plans at a better rate of interest for home mortgages. Mortgages could be extended for a longer period of time, e.g. up to fifty years, as in Australia. The setting of rents for low rental housing should be changed to give low-income workers some incentive to increase their incomes. Changes in the building code, new products and methods in building homes and the provision of services should be studied by government agencies and private industry. Municipalities should be encouraged to provide more residences for senior citizens.

6. Credit Unions and Co-operatives—The organizations founded among poor people are playing their role to some extent yet.

appears that such self-help groups are tolerated by government but not encouraged. We encourage our Eskimo people to do things co-operatively but wherever there may be a conflict with "free enterprise", nothing is done to encourage the development of co-operatives. Sometimes we feel the leaders of such social movements have lost sight of their real purpose. Governments should encourage the development of the credit union and co-operative movements by having specific government departments to encourage people with low incomes to organize and become members of such groups. Credit unions and co-operatives already established should be required to educate their members on consumer affairs and to make a sincere effort to help people on low-incomes become members of their movement. The defenders of our free enterprise system should not oppose this type of self-help for those in poverty as they will become an asset to all in our society.

7. Present Social Security Programs—There are some responsible people that consider present Social Welfare legislation as "free stuff". Over 50% of said monies is raised by special taxes while another 30% is from employee-employer contributions. Monies raised for workmen's compensation, unemployment insurance, Canada pension plan, provincial hospitalization, provincial medical care and old age security are a form of prepaid insurance that places an unwarranted burden on the low income groups.

We support a complete review of our present social security programs with a view of greater co-ordination between all programs. It is hoped that said programs will be geared to the cost-of-living to assure those people on fixed incomes will not move further down the economic scales. All private pension plans should have clauses to give retirees increases in the cost-of-living rises.

A greater liaison should be established between administrators of manpower, unemployment insurance and welfare agencies to assure each citizen that the most is being done when he or she is in distress.

8. Taxation—We urge a complete revamping of our taxation systems based on the Carter Commission Report. People should be allowed enough income to maintain oneself and family prior to being required to pay taxes. Serious consideration should be given to the negative income tax as suggested by Mr. Reuben Baetz, Executive Director of the Canadian Welfare Council.

Conclusion

Senator, your task is not an easy one. We do hope our submission will be of some value in your final conclusions.

May we leave with you the motto of the International Labour Organization which was founded in 1919 with Canada as a founding member, "Poverty anywhere constitutes a danger to prosperity everywhere."

Respectively submitted

New Brunswick Federation of Labour

Paul LePage
President

Gregory Murphy
Secretary-Treasurer

1st Vice-President
Roland Blanchette—Edmundston
Vice-President—

Phillip D. Booker—Fredericton
J. Eric Pitre—Bathurst
Frederick D. Hodges—Saint John
Timothy McCarthy—Newcastle
Chester McNair—Dalhousie
Alvin Blakely—Moncton

APPENDIX "B"

SUBMISSION TO
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON
POVERTY
by
THE CANADIAN CIVIL LIBERTIES
ASSOCIATION
FREDERICTON, NEW BRUNSWICK
CHAPTER

The Fredericton, New Brunswick Chapter of the Canadian Civil Liberties Association appreciates the invitation to appear before this Special Senate Committee on Poverty. The Canadian Civil Liberties Association has submitted an elegant and comprehensive brief to this Committee in April of this year. We in the Fredericton Chapter are here today to restate the recommendations of the brief and to take this opportunity to draw those points to the attention of the public of New Brunswick.

SUMMARY OF RECOMMENDATIONS

The Canadian Civil Liberties Association requests the Special Senate Committee on Poverty to recommend the following:

- 1) a system of federal grants to promote all over Canada a more equal and substantial level of legal aid service in civil and criminal matters.
- 2) a federal-provincial investigation of legal problems of indigent areas under an all-service legal aid scheme and, in the meantime, some federally-funded storefront legal clinics on a demonstration project basis.
- 3) the reform of our bail laws to provide that all accused persons are entitled to their freedom pending trial, unless the Crown can satisfy the court that the accused is not likely to appear for his trial, or that his freedom will endanger public safety.
- 4) a mandatory system of reasonable instalments for the payment of criminal fines.
- 5) more effective federal review of the requirement for welfare appeal procedures in those provinces receiving federal welfare funds.

6) an effective federal initiative to promote in those provinces receiving federal welfare funds, the following additional minimum standards of procedural fairness:

- a) the payment of a welfare allowance will not enable welfare officers without a proper warrant to compel access to the homes of welfare recipients.
- b) no one will suffer a denial, adverse variation, suspension or cancellation of a welfare benefit unless he has a reasonable opportunity to present his case before the decision is made.
- c) welfare appeal boards will be composed predominantly of people from outside the present and former ranks of welfare administrations.
- d) welfare appeal boards and welfare departments will be structurally separate and have separate legal counsel.
- e) welfare appeal boards will publish their judgments with names deleted.
- f) a major educational programme will be undertaken to more adequately inform welfare recipients, welfare administrators and the public regarding the rights and duties in the welfare law.

7) a federal-provincial investigation of the legal right of effective non-violent dissent in Canada.

8) the development of a formula to extend tax-deductible status to pressure activities and organizations for and of the poor.

9) consideration of independent grant-giving machinery to provide public funds for organizational activity aimed at the relief of poverty.

We wish to make two specific comments. Firstly, we wish to draw your attention to the following paragraph which appeared on page four of the CCLA Brief:

'Although the province of New Brunswick has committed itself to the principle of enacting a legal aid plan, at present it does little more than pay the defence of poor prisoners who are indicted or committed for trial in a restricted number of serious offences.'

We believe that the actions of both the government and the legal profession have been less than constructive in implementing some form of legal aid. The present foolish position of both parties indicates less of an interest in serving the public than in maintaining an intransigent public posture. The situation in New Brunswick is as deplorable as the brief implies.

Secondly, we believe that the idea of legal aid clinics is essential to social justice in Canada

as a whole and New Brunswick in particular. We are presently investigating the provision of a legal aid clinic in Fredericton. We have been able to secure the active support of several young lawyers in the city to provide the necessary expertise. The clinic could perform the type of demonstration outlined in the CCLA Brief.

'The poor must get equal treatment under existing laws and equal access to the processes which change the law'.

APPENDIX "C"

BRIEF TO
THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON
POVERTY
SENATOR DAVID CROLL, CHAIRMAN
BY
THE EDITORS OF *THE MYSTERIOUS
EAST*

August 6, 1970

Moncton, New Brunswick

I'm lookin' for a job with honest pay,
And I ain't gonna be treated this way.

—Woody Guthrie

I. What we are not talking about

The Mysterious East has always maintained a strong interest in civil liberties, and it strongly supports both the brief of the national executive of the Canadian Civil Liberties Association presented to you some time ago, and that of the Fredericton chapter, which you have just heard. The rubric of civil liberties, however, has reasonably obvious limits, and we wish to address ourselves this morning to some wider topics.

Our emphasis on wider topics, however, does not imply that we are not concerned about particular aspects of Canadian society which operate to the detriment of the poor. Quite the contrary. On the topic of housing, for instance, we would cheerfully argue that private ownership of land and uncontrolled speculation in it are probably no longer defensible. In the city of Fredericton, for example, a developed lot costs something in the neighbourhood of \$8,000 to \$10,000; with a \$15,000 house the payments on a 90 per cent mortgage at prevailing rates of interest would be over \$200.00 per month—a price few working men can pay. It is time we recognized that urban land, at least, is a public resource. Public ownership of urban land would also have implications for the provision of parks and other recreational facilities, which in turn would have an obviously beneficial effect on the quality of life of the urban poor.

Again, since most of the people who produce *The Mysterious East* are involved directly in education, we relinquish with reluctance the opportunity to make some sharp comments about the class bias of the educa-

tional system across the country. It is clear, for instance, that universities by and large serve Canadian elite groups, and that they represent a large expenditure of public funds in a fashion which by no means represents value for money so far as the working-class public is concerned, or indeed so far as the public at large is concerned. "Check any university catalog," says John Holt in *The Underachieving School*, "and see how many courses you can find on such questions as Peace, Poverty, Race, Environmental Pollution and so on." Though formal courses may not be the best approach to such topics, we contend it is clear that in such areas lie our greatest needs as a society. The universities do little to satisfy those needs.

We might talk about the law, and the fact that our antiquated bail procedures and pay-the-fine-or-go-to-jail statutes seem almost to be a deliberate attempt to see that criminal convictions won't, in most cases, hurt the well-to-do very much—though we note with pleasure the prospect of some reforms in these matters. And we find it impossible to resist the temptation to speak now, just for a moment, about public transportation, particularly in the Atlantic Provinces, where the attitudes of railway management and government policy seem to be at their very worst. In Atlantic Canada, a family without a car is practically immobilized—and of course the poor can't afford much in the line of a car. Nor do we believe that car ownership and use should be encouraged—for reasons of ecology and urban planning, among others.

For example, consider the man who wants to travel from Fredericton to Halifax. If he goes by Canadian National, he must take a bus leaving at 10:10 a.m. for Newcastle, over a hundred miles away. Arriving in Newcastle at 2:30, he catches the train, which arrives in Halifax at 9:30. For a trip of less than three hundred miles, he has spent nearly twelve hours. The cost is \$10.50 to \$12.20 depending on the day of the week on which he travels. To transact a day's business—looking, let us say, for employment—he must spend two nights in a hotel and two days on the road. A round trip is going to cost the best part of sixty dollars—for one man.

By Canadian Pacific he leaves at 7:40 a.m. by bus, transfers to the train an hour later for the hour-long trip to Saint John; transfers from the train to the ferry by taxi (included in the fare); transfers from the ferry to the train in Digby at 2:00; and reaches Halifax at 3:15. This safari costs him \$14.65. The considerations about hotels and the like still apply.

By bus, he leaves Fredericton at 11:00 p.m., waits in the bus terminal in Saint John from 2:45 to 3:15 a.m.—an experience few members of this Senate Committee, we suspect, would willingly undergo—and arrives in Amherst at 6:25, where he waits for his connecting bus until 7:35; he reaches Halifax at 1:15 the morning after he started. It has taken him over twelve hours—and the cost is cool \$15.85, not to mention a night's sleep.

By Air Canada he can leave at 6:35 a.m., arriving in Halifax, after stops in Saint John and Moncton, at 8:40 (There is one direct flight daily, at 5:25 p.m.) Though the fare is \$19.00, with another \$3.50 for limousines, the saving on hotels and meals makes flying competitive economically with surface transport—and it is certainly much less exhausting and unpleasant.

There is one other option: he can rent a car. Avis charges \$13.00 a day and 13¢ a mile, plus a drop-off charge of \$15.00 if the car doesn't come from Halifax and you don't return it. The cost is \$52.00 without the drop-off charge, and \$67.00 with it, taking 300 miles as a round figure to work with.

One is reminded of the carload of tourists, helplessly lost, asking a Midwestern farmer how to get to Chicago. After a long pause, the farmer replied, "I don't think there's any way you can get to Chicago from here."

These conditions in the matter of transportation are scandalous. It is almost literally true that the Maritimer who doesn't own a car stays home. For the man who can't afford a car, there is really only one way to get to Halifax: to hitch-hike, which is, after all, a form of begging.

One could go on indefinitely with particular examples such as these. But many other competent groups will be calling your attention to them, and we have already discussed many of them in back issues of *The Mysterious East*. A complete file of the magazine is being deposited with the Committee as an appendix to this report.

II. What we are talking about

Maritime poverty is closely related to Maritime unemployment, characteristically several percentage points higher than elsewhere in Canada—and to Maritime underemployment as in the case of marginal farms and subsistence fishing. The usual response to Maritime economic conditions is to suggest rapid and intensive industrialization of the region, consolidation of population into a few urban centres, and a general pattern of development similar to that of, say, southern Ontario.

In our judgment, such a model is almost criminally foolish.

In the first place, it is inhumane. Maritime life centres around a few basic activities such as farming, fishing and woodcutting. Maritime social life lays heavy emphasis on the family, the small community, the values of a relaxed life close to nature. And though family cash incomes are often low, many Maritimers in the past have been able to grow some vegetables, raise some animals, do the work around their homes themselves, and in general live decent, self-respecting lives on incomes which in an urban context would be a sick joke. In our view, to disrupt such established and in many ways satisfying life-styles without a clearly preferable alternative is irresponsible. We are not convinced that better alternatives have in fact been offered.

In the second place, the rationale for industrial development, particularly on the part of provincial governments seems leaky on even a cursory examination. In order to attract industries, our governments have offered lavish tax and cash incentives, among other things. These incentives must be paid for by the tax money of the already-improverished Maritime citizen. If the industries succeed, they do not carry their share of the tax load nor do they plow their profits into the Maritime community. And if they fail, the provincial government normally bails them out. The heavy-water plant in Nova Scotia is a classic case in point. Our calculation is that if the Nova Scotia government had paid the plant's potential 190 employees \$60,000 per annum each, just as a handout, the consequences for the provincial treasury would have been less catastrophic than going ahead with the plant. The scheme's New York promotor, however, carried off about four million dollars from the venture.

In the third place, the "industrialization" model is based on the premise that Maritimers want to live in a down-east version of

Ontario. An alternative way of looking at it would be to say that most proposals to eradicate poverty tacitly assume that the goal of such proposals must be to integrate the poor into the mainstream of North American life.

We must ask, however, whether the disadvantaged do wish, or should wish, to be integrated into a society whose chief flowers seem to be the tacky-tacky boxes and chrome-plated monsters which cover the continent from Halifax to Los Angeles; whose goals can apparently only be formulated in economic terms; whose idea of entertainment is *I Love Lucy*, and whose idea of art is a K-Mart reproduction of Norman Rockwell. How many of us are really happy with a society whose gross national product is one-third garbage, a society which views as human necessities such products as electric shoe polishers, floral-patterned toilet paper and vaginal deodorants, a society whose economic system apparently depends for its health on war and waste? What have the poor ever done to us that we should wish to inflict such things on them?

In our view, it is a gross irony that governments continue to try to convert the Maritimes into another extension of the North American neon jungle at just the point in time at which that jungle is under attack from a wide variety of its citizens who have come to recognize that it serves only the needs of power-hungry politicians and corporate bondholders. The affluent society, it seems clear, does not speak to human needs; and the young it produces are often inclined to enter a kind of voluntary poverty as hippies and drop-outs. Refugees from Central Canada and the United States are moving into the Maritimes in considerable numbers not because they believe it will become another New Jersey or Ontario, but because they hope it won't; they hope it will remain a decentralized region in which individual people relate to one another as individuals.

Does this mean we believe it is *good* to be poor?

Certainly not; that view is both callous and patronizing. What we do believe, however, is that a proper distribution of existing wealth would more than adequately care for the aspirations of the existing population of Canada. We therefore feel that the most urgent need in regard to poverty is a guaranteed annual income based on the principle of the negative income tax and financed through much heavier taxation of corporations and

upper-income individuals. We see no reason to think that under existing conditions any Canadian requires for his needs more than, say, \$30,000 per year, and we see no reason for the rate of taxation not to reach 100 per cent at that level of income.

III. What we are all going to have to talk about

In our opinion, any plan for the future social development of Canada—and any serious attempt to eradicate the miseries of poverty requires nothing less than a revision of the structure of our society, which makes us skeptical that a Senate Committee can have any very significant results—must take into account the following influences.

1. The traditions and culture of the community. In New Brunswick, for instance, the community in part defines its identity by reference to a live cultural tradition most clearly preserved in such events as the Miramichi Folk Song Festival. In our view, the replacement of such cultural values by Don Messer and Ed Sullivan is not adequately compensated by mere material wealth. The music of the Miramichi is an outgrowth and a constant reminder of the experience of the people who live there. By that experience one measures the significance of one's own life, guided by the values earlier generations have evolved in coming to grips with that particular environment. To be cast adrift in the twentieth-century wasteland without such a sense of one's origins is to substitute spiritual poverty for material poverty.

2. Automation. Increasingly few people are required to sustain and expand production; it follows therefore that large numbers of people can expect to be more or less permanently unemployed in the future. Since unemployment normally runs significantly higher in our region than elsewhere, we are obliged to contemplate future rates of unemployment of truly staggering dimensions.

3. The ecological crisis. In the future, we will have to ask some hard questions about our attitude to nature, our prodigal approach to non-renewable resources, our general willingness recklessly to tamper with delicate ecological processes. Once again, the effect of any serious attempt to deal with pollution is bound to be a drop in the gross national product. Population will have to be stabilized, thus ending the constant expansion of markets. More profits will have to go into effluent control; property taxes may well be forced

to pay for sewage treatment and recycling of garbage. Some marginal industrial operations may well have to close, and indefinite economic growth will no longer be a reasonable objective, since much of the production on which growth is based squanders the finite resources of our small and crowded planet.

4. The erosion of Canadian independence. We see no reason to believe that American capitalism will ever place people before profits; and even if it does it is unlikely to place Canadian people before American profits. An economy largely owned by American-based multi-national corporations is therefore most certainly an insuperable barrier to Canadian social development of any serious kind. More simply, one cannot improve the economic condition of Canadians unless one controls the Canadian economy. Without economic independence there is little point in formulating social policy.

5. Finally, we wish to draw the Committee's attention to the total failure of our social system to provide significant incentives for service to the public good. A strictly volunteer operation like *The Mysterious East*, for instance, cannot even survive on a long-term basis unless it can be made economically profitable. Yet it was not set up to serve economic needs; it was set up to serve human needs. The sage of Social Credit, R  al Caouette, once commented that when we need a bridge in one of our towns, we do not ask whether we have the men and the materials for the social need: we ask whether we have the money. Though we are hardly willing to devote the time of day to Social Credit, we do have Mr. Caouette's example does indicate the way human and community needs are constantly subordinated to economic considerations; and we do believe a society based on a scale of priorities is fundamentally incapable of dealing with the issues which confront us.

In the Atlantic region, there is all kinds of work to be done. Who will restore some of the graceful buildings of our colonial past? Legal aid clinics, the anti-pollution groups, educational alternatives, the human rights organizations? Who will run newspapers and radio stations oriented towards people and their needs rather than towards business and advertising? Who will foster the small enterprises—specialized boatbuilding, for instance in which Maritimes can excel? Our social system offers no incentives for this kind of work, just as our economic system has

totally failed to provide housing for working people.

"I'm looking for a job with honest pay," sang Woody Guthrie. Yet in tomorrow's Canada, jobs in the traditional sense are going to be increasingly difficult to find; in any case Guthrie's cry is really for a role in the world which offers him reasonable security and self-respect. In our view, the time has come to make some dramatic moves towards a new kind of society. One of the most obviously valuable innovations would be to break the iron connection between employment and income; to provide an income for every Canadian and thus to free each of us, if we are prepared to live on a relatively low guaranteed income, to do what we think it is valuable to do. Those who argue that a guaranteed annual income will produce a generation of bums are no democrats; in the last analysis they do not trust their fellow-citizens to make wise choices about how to spend their time. Those who value economic rewards will no doubt wish to continue pursuing them. But others who have different priorities will be able to do what they think it valuable to do—community organizing, anti-pollution work, poetry or pottery.

And for the poor, the guaranteed annual income has two major advantages. In the first place it supplies—obviously—an income on which they can live with at least a modicum of dignity. More important, it leaves their fates and their futures largely under their own control as individuals. If they wish to take on the characteristics of the middle class, they can. But if they reject that style of life—as it seems to us they very reasonably might—they are at liberty to do so without paying the terrible penalties of overcrowding, malnutrition, disease and despair.

For Canadian society as a whole, the advantages of the guaranteed annual income are self-evident. In the first place, the moral health of the nation would be greatly enhanced. Costly and cumbersome welfare programmes could be eliminated. Much of the potentially violent frustration in our social fabric could be alleviated, and a great deal of personal and social creativity could be released. We have seen, in the United States, that in relation to issues such as those of peace and racism, unsatisfied aspirations can result in internal conflicts which threaten to rip the society apart. The refusal of English-Canadians to extend true equality to their cophone brothers threatens the unity of our own country. Over the long term it is

reasonable to expect any deprived minority to react violently to the denial of its dignity. As Guthrie goes on to say, "I ain't gonna be treated this way."

IV. *Why we shouldn't be saying anything at all.*

We are not convinced, however, that we have any business at all appearing before this Committee. You ought to be hearing from people in poverty, not from middle-class academics, however concerned the academics may be. But no unemployed man who has been systematically made to feel worthless and incompetent—which is what the spiritual aspect of poverty principally consists in—is going to come here before so august a body as a Senate Committee and tell you what he thinks, why no one will hire him, how his family is suffering, and how inadequate he feels.

We must confess as well to some doubts about the attitudes of certain members of the Committee itself. On April 22, 1969, in one of your hearings, Senator Fournier had this to say to Dr. David McQueen, Director of the Economic Council of Canada:

I...believe that our easy access to social assistance has increased the numbers of so-called poor in Canada by thousands...I know as a fact that a great number of so-called poor today are drawing much more money than you stated in your report...To me, welfare assistance has become the curse of the country...It will be wasted effort to throw more money to people who cannot control their expenses...there is a class of people across Canada now abusing all these things...people who refuse to work but have the ability to do so...they have it made so fat and nice that they say they cannot afford to work. By staying home they can draw \$50 to \$60 a week whereas by working they only draw \$70 or \$75. We have thousands of these people across the country, and the situation is getting bad. This is really chewing up the country.

Senator Fournier's moralizing and superior tone does not mark him as a man listening carefully in an attempt to understand the problems. And there is a sequel to this epi-

sode. When a New Brunswicker of our acquaintance wrote a Member of Parliament whom he respected in order to obtain a transcript of the Senator's remarks—it is significant that he did not choose to expose his interest to Senator Fournier—the latter was passed on to the Senator, whose reply reads, in part, as follows:

May I suggest that before your reply both factual and penetrating, you take a sharp look at the abuses and waste of social welfare money in your own and mine the Province of New Brunswick. If you have an answer to justify such abuses you as a responsible man...will have enough respect to sign your own comment and will not have it done by some irresponsible radical who is probably now abusing the tax payer's money under the pretext of welfare.

Mr. Chairman, how can we take seriously a Committee on Poverty which contains members with prejudices as extravagant as these? Or is our suspicion of Senator Fournier's frame of mind simply a consequence of our irresponsible radicalism?

Finally, since it is our impression that the chief criticism of this Committee has been from the start, that it was not getting out and meeting the people about whom it was ostensibly concerned, we have one final recommendation. It is that each member of the Committee put on a set of old clothes, take a five-dollar bill, and disappear for a week into a city with which he is not particularly familiar and if possible a city in which the majority language is not his own; or, alternatively, that he travel six or eight hundred miles on his five dollars. Then come back and listen to the Boards of Trade, the Home and School Associations, the well-intentioned middle-class academics. After living poor for a week you may know—as they *don't*—which parts of their presentations should be taken with a grain of salt.

Respectfully submitted,

The Mysterious East
Robert Campbell
Russel Hunt
Donald Cameron
Contributing Editors

APPENDIX "D"

BRIEF PRESENTED TO:

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON
POVERTY

BY:

GREATER MONCTON COMMUNITY CHEST
INC.

523 ST. GEORGE STREET, MONCTON, N.B.

AUGUST 6, 1970

Ladies and Gentlemen:

There are four ways to solve social problems in this country. They are through the: federal government, provincial and local governments, the free enterprise system and the "whole field of voluntarism".

Citizen leaders are seeking ways to increase the effectiveness of health and welfare programs in dealing with human problems.

They recognize that the solution of these problems is essential to the well-being of the nation.

The problems of people are found in the local community and must be dealt with in the local community. Both governmental and voluntary resources must be mobilized for a cooperative attack upon these problems. This requires planning and action by local community leaders and governments, and the people directly affected.

Past efforts have been inadequate despite the vast sums expended and an extensive proliferation of both voluntary and governmental agencies. New concepts of removing the causes must replace old concepts of relieving the results of social ill, particularly poverty.

The G.M.C.C. recommends a "mobilization program of all resources, both public and private involving citizens both young and old".

This mobilization program to be named "Human resources corporation" which would be the principal anti-poverty agency, serving as consultant and auditor, to work with guidance, group recreation, counselling, work programs and job assistance.

COMPOSED OF—

(1) Government and private agencies and representing the grass roots involvement of

volunteers of all agencies with particular emphasis upon young people, and retired men and women.

(2) Organized labour could be a success factor.

(3) Representatives of the poor (the recipients) and low income families.

The Whole concept of participation by those on the receiving end of welfare is, of course, a new one.

AIMS AND OBJECTIVES

(1) To extend government services more intensively to resident of blighted areas, in cooperation with area residents;

(2) To strengthen existing programs and develop new approaches to the reduction of drug addiction and other anti-social behaviour manifestations;

(3) To support financially essential voluntary services that build character, promote health, and preserve individual dignity and family solidarity;

(4) To support new and innovated services aimed at breaking the poverty cycle;

(5) To enable established agencies—government and private—to achieve more nearly their full service potential by special government grants recommended by the united fund;

(6) To provide an effective coalition of citizen planning and decision-making to bring maximum community influence to bear on the adequacy, efficiency, coordination and economy of both voluntary and governmental social welfare programs;

(7) To enable agencies with programs more relevant to current human needs to immediately achieve their service potential—including more intensive extension of services to people in greatest need—by closing the gap between valid requirements and present levels of united fund and other support;

(8) To maintain an effective level of services which build character and self-reliance, promote physical and mental health, offset despair, tragedy disaster, and preserve individual dignity and family solidarity.

This could be an exciting package of special services, which demonstrates what can be accomplished when governmental and private agencies and recipients cooperate in a team effort.

PROPOSED ACCOMPLISHMENTS

1. Motivating complacent, uninterested and unproductive people.

2. Participating in moves to form broader coalition of concerns.

3. Community involvement—individual citizens helping others face to face.

4. Realizing all savings possible through increased management efficiency and shifting funds from outdated programs.

Nothing can dissolve an individual human problem more effectively than the willingness of one person to involve himself voluntarily, persistently and sensitively in helping someone else to help himself, and the life of the person who helps can be enriched as much as the lives of those to whom he extends the hand of brotherhood.

No person can develop his own ability fully if he tries to live for himself alone. No one can realize his full potential unless he joins in voluntary cooperative effort for the common good.

Governments, private agencies and citizens can help to give every Canadian that opportunity by working as team leaders in resolving the greatest crisis this nation has ever faced.

It is recognized that there will never be a 100 per cent solution to breaking the poverty cycle, but the foregoing suggestions, if implemented, would have a distinct bearing on reducing the number affected by poverty.

PRESENTED BY:

GREATER MONCTON COMMUNITY CHEST
INC.

R. S. Dickie, President

E. K. Robb, Chairman budget
and Admissions Committee

Mrs. M. H. McKie, Executive
Director

APPENDIX "E"

EXPERIMENTS
IN

PARTICIPATION

by

NICOLE MAILHOT

RODRIGUE PELLETIER

ANDRÉ BOUDREAU

SOCIAL ANTHROPOLOGIST

GROUP INSTRUCTOR

PRESIDENT

CONSEIL RÉGIONAL D'AMÉNAGEMENT
DU NORD-EST

(CRAN)

Regional Northeast Development Council)

BATHURST, N.B.

1970

Senators:

The numerous briefs you have received to date have undoubtedly informed you better than we can on the situation of the poor in Canada. The report that CRAN is submitting to you today probably cannot be defined as a brief in the same sense as the others; the context in which CRAN is presently developing prevents it from devoting its energies to official publications.

We want to stress one theme here; namely, "Participation by the less fortunate in the solution of their own problems". With this end in view, we are submitting a document on CRAN and its experience in the past 5 years.

The background of the CRAN movement bears witness of the government's negative attitude; our provincial government looks askance when the poor try to organize. (Remember from the Premier). Even before the provincial government took an official stand, pressure was brought to bear on us not to commence our work among the less fortunate masses. It is much easier to manipulate people who are not informed, who are not aware of their problems. Such manipulations is being exercised on the people in many ways, for example, the written press.

We would like to make a recommendation to you; after you have completed your search, give the real experts on poverty, the

poor themselves, an opportunity to be informed, to be activated, to participate in the decisions which concern them. In practice, this would mean, in our opinion; if you are sincere in your task, help us find funds to continue informing, activating, and encouraging the people of northeastern N.B. to participate.

André Boudreau

President and General

Director of CRAN

What CRAN has done so far

Until just recently the people of New Brunswick were not aware or were uninterested in the major problem that CRAN calls "*The Utter Poverty*" in our rich society, and have neglected to establish programs to checkmate this scourge which affects us all. The latest report of the Economic Council of Canada (41 p. 100) lays bare the situation of the poor in the country. How many of those people are from N.B. If the poverty line is drawn at the unbelievable income of \$3000 per year per family of 3, for Canada, how many \$\$ per year per family would it be in N.B. What can we affirm for N.B.? CRAN is certain that the poor will no longer passively accept their condition. They are going to ask for a more equitable distribution of goods and services among all groups of society. Our governments, our welfare professionals, have been slow in meeting the needs of the poor, or even the needs of all the fringe groups, but in CRAN's opinion this situation is without a doubt already in the process of change.

Our local committees, our social activators, the chairman of our local committees, our directors, as well as our regional executive now demand that welfare experts reflect on the possibility of becoming committed to new avenues and of adopting new concepts which may overcome the wide discrepancy between the needs of the less fortunate and the availability of services.

Several poor people participating in CRAN want to work personally in improving their situation. The persons in charge of CRAN are aware of these facts but social activation must spur the people on so that a portion will acquire a social conscience.

CRAN's service covers a wide population; it is responsible for 89,000 persons and it is dealing with 10,500 people at present, 6,127 of whom come from the lower socio-economic classes, in addition to various fringe groups. Approximately ten per cent (4,200) of our participants should get immediate attention from the Welfare Department. Our local committees have long lists of people who would like to participate in CRAN's activities in order to help themselves. But in their present circumstances they cannot join, owing to a lack of free participation, constant uncertainty about an ever threatened budget, a shortage of activators, and a feeling of dependence too often demonstrated by participants with regard to the government bar them from joining CRAN. But there is still a fairly substantial number of participants who need immediate assistance and activation. It simply is not offered to them because they have to choose between losing their social assistance or participating in CRAN.

Step 1: Overcoming the inertia and fear in the community.

To solve the problem, CRAN has already expressed its view.

1. Overcome the community's inertia by means of a social activation service.
2. See to the development of socio-economic committees by making them responsible and committed.
3. Animate overall community participation activities in socio-economic development.

CRAN's experience since its inception enables it to point out that the means adopted to help people depend on local needs, resources put at our disposal, the interest shown by various groups of participants and the acceptance of change by the latter. To make the people's participation in the socio-economic development plan effective, the regional council of northern N.B. maintains that it is absolutely essential to recognize the energies of the community, to see how that can be used to motivate people into action and to ensure that the people have participated and have wanted this change. In other words, those who do not have power express their anxieties and those who govern are at present attempting to stifle those concerns for fear that recognizing a problem for which they would be responsible will become an implicit criticism of their method of administration. The problems of the people in northern N.B. stem from a number of causes: exploitation

and intimidation of political patronage for too long, family problems, lack of adequate income, cost of living that is out of line, unemployment, injustice in the administration of social assistance, lack of suitable and constructive means in socio-economic, and cultural activity and lack of organization in the recreational sector. Instead of criticizing others, blaming them for the emergence of problems, CRAN has called on volunteers for joint action in exploring means whereby these problems can be solved.

CRAN's action has resulted in participation in the northern N.B. development plan in 1964, retraining courses in 1965, the creation of a fisherman's association in 1965-66 and a federal-provincial agreement in 1966, social activation among the poor in 1967-68, a regional committee of the less fortunate since 1968. This latter committee has received no money for its activities; its mandate is to analyse the problem of poverty in all its aspects and to take the appropriate measures, when necessary. Furthermore we point out the work done by CRAN for the road to resources and also the road from Allardville to the mines. The most recent steps taken by CRAN have been to ask for the establishment of an association for French-speaking people in the northeast, a foresters association, the setting up of nursery schools for 3 to 5 year-olds and adult up-grading courses.

Step 2—The development of social and economic committees

These committees were developed after an analysis had been made of their own structures in order to achieve unanimity and to give direction to the action. CRAN's social activation service wants to foster a spirit of self-government among the people. This is why our activation service widened its field of action by stimulating intermediate bodies into assuming more responsibilities with respect to their milieu, and to become committed to the society surrounding them. We have made an effort to get our professionals our establishment more involved in the socio-economic development program. Where CRAN's work has had the greatest impact is among the less fortunate classes, the youth, the unemployed, those on social assistance, bushworkers, fishermen and farmers. As for the objectives of our local committees, right from the outset, the participants have asked for an educational system that is more attentive to needs. They have also brought to the fore shortcomings in the social and economic

sectors where all the problems of the less fortunate are solved with social assistance. This warranted criticism has been echoed among the poor: "The best way to prevent poverty is for the poor to prevent it themselves".

The poor have asked that our governments have confidence in the participants in CRAN and encourage their autonomy instead of attempting to integrate them into ready-made structures. The poor want definite action; but they alone cannot change the situation. They have been able to crystallize an awareness of their situation, through social activation; they are preparing to set up a housing co-operative, nursery schools in less fortunate areas, consumers co-operatives. As for the youth, they are dealing with recreational aspects and an employment co-operative, as well as an association of unemployed young people. As the members of the group become better informed on the problems concerning them, they endeavour to pass this information on to the whole community, through the CRAN newspaper, correspondence, circulars, radio and TV. CRAN's liaison work program has become one of the main information and education channels for these committees because of its social activation function. In turn, the participants are convinced that a liaison work program was one of the best ways of channeling the energies of a community towards solution of their problems. Another major objective of CRAN is to change the attitudes of the community as a whole by holding meetings, seminars, discussions, lectures, etc.

Step 3: Collective action

In view of the situation in northern N.B. and of our own interest in social activation, our action has centred where the area participants have felt the need for it in order to be faster and more effective.

Social activation is pursuing the following goals:

- (a) meeting all the participants in order to inform, activate and have them participate in social, cultural and economic changes.
- (b) activating them to make them responsible and involved in their own changes.
- (c) assessing their situation, problems and solution with them.
- (d) drawing up solutions which will permit them to take various courses of action.

It is our intention to work with the participants by taking anticipated preparatory (education) and intervention (activation) measures. To this effect, we have a multi-professional service which assists CRAN and the committees in their work. We have a number of projects in progress:

1. Co-operation and participation of the committees in an overall tourist development plan;
2. up-grading less fortunate families;
3. review of the federal-provincial agreement;
4. training leaders;
5. research on the labour force;
6. socio-economic research;
7. youth services;
8. governed, governing services;
9. collective consultation;
10. information service (CRAN newspaper);
11. trouble-shooting service in the CRAN office at Bathurst.

CONCLUSION

The setting up of our committees in a community of 89,000 people belonging to the middle and less fortunate classes has proved a powerful way of influencing and promoting action and community attitudes among the participants in socio-economic change. It is better that the people, the poor themselves, undertake changes in their way of life through their own organization rather than working through elected representatives who sometimes feel embarrassed or even threatened by the emergence of a grass-roots unanimity endeavouring to create a new commitment with regard to growth and development.

The proposed improvement factors are new avenues for dialogue between the people and the means for engendering collective participation on the part of those already concerned, without being involved to the same extent.

In conclusion, is CRAN going to prosper and grow in strength and in wisdom? No one can actually predict what will befall it. It is strange that the government cuts CRAN's budget, thus proving that it does not accept participation outside the political framework of their party. Now, however, increasingly numerous signs seem to tell us that an economic crisis is approaching, with higher unemployment and even harder times for the

poor. It is possible that the CRAN will be the way to activate the citizens into activities and programs for meeting local, regional and provincial needs.

Co-operative Work
Rodrigue Pelletier
Mrs. Nicole Mailhot
André Boudreau

Summary of CRAN achievements since its inception

Achievement, and in co-operation with:

1. Ouellet inquiry, regional intermediate bodies
2. Socio-economic inquiry, provincial government
3. Manpower inquiry, Department of Manpower
4. Review of federal-provincial agreement, provincial government and consulting agency
5. Brief on radio and TV in the northeast, S.A.R.
6. Adult retraining courses, regional intermediate bodies
7. Road to resources, regional intermediate bodies NRDC, SAR
8. CROP report, SAR and NRDC
9. Adult education training courses, Bathurst college

10. Course for farmers, provincial government, Manpower office
11. Nursery schools, SAR
12. Leadership course, provincial government
13. Adult courses, possible enrolment of 550, request at Manpower office
14. Individual up-grading in group, citizens
15. Blueberries, N.D. des Erables, Department of Agriculture and Natural Resources
16. Eel River Park, Bathurst Shippagan, Val Comeau, Ressources
17. Fishermen's professional Association, Fisheries Department
18. Association of French-speaking people in the northeast, CRAN's local committees
19. Chambers of Commerce of three localities, CRAN activators
20. Northeast foresters union, NRDC
21. Tourist project, CRANO-CRASE-NRDC
22. Chaleur beach, Bathurst college Natural Resources
23. Regional Development Committee departments concerned in the region
24. Committees of the poor, social assistance recipients
25. Restigouche and lower Gloucester travel exchanges, Department of the Secretary of State
26. C.A.R., provincial government officials



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament
1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA PROCEEDINGS

OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 64

MONDAY, AUGUST 17, 1970

WITNESSES:

The Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society: Mr. Grant Mitchell, Executive Director, Saskatchewan Water Resources; The Rev. Daniel Lucey, Parish Priest, Balgonie, Saskatchewan; Mr. Theodore Préfontaine, Executive Secretary, Conseil de la Coopération de Saskatchewan; Mr. Eldon Anderson, Secretary, Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society; Mr. Wylie Simond, Student (Social Science), Executive Director, Poverty Committee.

Mr. Elmer Laird, a farmer from Davidson.

Regina Renters Council: Mr. W. Joe McKeown, Chairman.

Seekers of Security Welfare Rights Group: Mrs. Margery Heath, President; Mrs. Shirley Campbell, Chairman, Publicity Committee; Mrs. Ruth A. McGill; Miss Reta Moran, Provincial Council of Women; Mr. Ray Moore; The Rev. Daniel Lucey, P.P.

APPENDICES:

Appendix "A"—Brief submitted by The Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society.

Appendix "B"—Brief submitted by Mr. Elmer Laird, Davidson, Saskatchewan.

Appendix "C"—Brief submitted by Regina Renters Council.

Appendix "D"—Brief submitted by Seekers of Security Welfare Rights Group, Regina, Saskatchewan.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche,</i> <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Mada-waska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate,
The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

Regina, Sask.,
MONDAY, August 17, 1970.
Regina Public Library.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.30 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators Croll (*Chairman*), Carter, Fergusson, Hastings, Inman, Pearson, Quart and Sparrow—(8).

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society: Mr. Grant Mitchell, Executive Director, Saskatchewan Water Resources; The Rev. Daniel Lucey, Parish Priest, Balgonie, Saskatchewan; Mr. Theodore Prefontaine, Executive Secretary, Conseil de la Coopération de Saskatchewan; Mr. Eldon Anderson, Secretary, Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society; Mr. Wylie Simond, Student (Social Science), Executive Director, Poverty Committee.

Mr. Elmer Laird, a farmer from Davidson, Saskatchewan.

Regina Renters Council: Mr. W. Joe McKeown, Chairman.

At 12.20 p.m. the Committee adjourned until 1.45 p.m.

At 1.45 p.m. the Committee resumed.

Present: The Honourable Senators Croll (*Chairman*), Carter, Fergusson, Hastings, Inman, Pearson, Quart and Sparrow—(8).

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

Seekers of Security (A Regina Welfare Group): Mrs. Margery Heath, President; Mrs. Shirley Campbell, Chairman, Publicity Committee; Mrs. Ruth A. McGill; Miss Reta Moran, Provincial Council of Women; Mr. Ray Moore; The Rev. Daniel Lucey, P.P. One person who did not wish to be named.

The following briefs were ordered to be printed as appendices to these proceedings:

Appendix "A"—Brief submitted by The Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society.

Appendix "B"—Brief submitted by Mr. Elmer Laird, Davidson, Saskatchewan.

Appendix "C"—Brief submitted by Regina Renters Council.

Appendix "D"—Brief submitted by Seekers of Security Welfare Rights Group, Regina, Saskatchewan.

At 2.30 p.m. the Committee adjourned until 9.00 a.m. Tuesday, August 18, 1970, in Prince Albert, Saskatchewan.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

August 17, 1970,
Regina, Saskatchewan.

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.30 a.m.

Senator David A. Croll (*Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Chairman: In calling the meeting to order I think I should introduce the senators in the committee. They are Senators Quart, Hastings, Sparrow, Pearson, Carter, Ferguson, and Inman.

Senators Pearson and Sparrow are native sons and are very useful members of our committee, as is Senator Hastings, who was born and educated in Regina but made his success in Calgary.

Both Senators Pearson and Sparrow are additionally oriented to the rural concepts and have a wide understanding of the problems involved. Their talents will be very useful to us when we start on our report.

Now, as far as Saskatchewan is concerned, we have already heard the Minister of Welfare for the province, the Honourable Cy McDonald. We heard him in May of this year in which time he made a formidable presentation.

In Ottawa we heard the head of the Metis organization and we also heard from the Indian Brotherhood. With the exception of the co-operative Group who are here today, our response from community organizations has not been overwhelming; in fact, it is more accurate to say it has been disappointing. That is not our fault. They were invited to appear and we gave ample notice in the press.

We have an awareness of Saskatchewan. Our own research people have been here a couple of times. We are aware of the fact that the province takes a hard look at the welfare about once a year. It should be commendable for hiring natives in the public service, for insisting that a percentage of the native as well as other poor be locally hired.

We are also aware of the inadequate allowances, the differential between the north and the south, and the problems of finance which sometimes make those allowances necessary.

Let me just put you in the picture a little. A year and a half ago we began our odyssey for the poor, to study poverty in its totality—not just housing, education, medical requirements, welfare, but all matters and things which affect people in poverty. That study had not been previously undertaken in Canada. There are no textbooks on this and no precedents, and as a result of our study the public generally, and we particularly, will understand more fully the implications of poverty.

As I said, we began our study a year and a half ago. We held hearings in Ottawa and then travelled across the country. We are now visiting the ninth province. We have only one more visit to make provincially and that will be in Quebec in two weeks' time.

When Parliament adjourned in June, instead of taking our holidays we decided to go out and visit with the poor and the poverty stricken during the months of July, August and September. We have been taking a week more or less in each province and then knocking off for a week to collect and assess the information that came to us.

We started in the Province of Nova Scotia, when we went there and told people that we were the Special Senate Committee on Poverty, the immediate response was, "What committee?" Well, that has changed. On our last visit we were asked to stay longer and see more of the province. We are in the home stretch now and time is our enemy. We want to complete our hearings by October. We have yet to hear from some national organizations which have recently asked to be heard. We will then have the very difficult and onerous task of preparing a meaningful, useful and an acceptable report which will contain a blue print for the eradication of poverty.

In the course of our visits we have met a quiet, resentful minority who have been

entrapped in the system called "welfare" with its blood brother, poverty. That welfare system I speak of was made for another time, to serve in another day when we were all poor and conditions of living were different. Our national concept was more of an agricultural one than an industrial one.

It was assembled hurriedly to meet the emergency of the great depression of the thirties and the best authorities here on that are Senator Pearson and myself because we were there.

That system came to us in the thirties and is now 40 years old. At that time we were suffering from scarcity. Today, we have the same system but now have problems of surpluses, the poor are still suffering from scarcity.

The Province of Saskatchewan has a surplus of wheat and is a bit hard up for cash, but that problem will be straightened out in time. It is a different sort of problem, but it is a very potent one.

Before our very eyes four generations have been ensnared within the welfare folds, and today 20 per cent of Canada's population, some four million people, are below the poverty line as defined by the Economic Council of Canada. Saskatchewan is not at the top of the list as far as the percentage on poverty is concerned. Quebec has 30 per cent, Ontario 25 per cent, and the Prairie Provinces 20 per cent.

These people who are ensnared in welfare poverty are without hope and dignity. We have had four unproductive generations by persons who have not shared in the bounties of our economic, cultural and social lives. Welfare has become part of the bureaucratic establishment. It will be hard to dislodge because it has grown in size, in standing, in manpower and in importance. Some people like it that way. They have a vested interest to protect and they will protect it to the best of their ability.

The redistribution of wealth which we thought would come about in these many years as a result of social services have not come about. There has been no redistribution of wealth in our country for 20 years.

Those who were rich 20 years ago are rich now, and those who were poor 20 years ago are still poor. There has not been much change, and the working poor are a much under-utilized human resource because we have failed to expend on their behalf the necessary investment for training and educa-

tion. The working poor are poor because they have not received the human investment that has long been available to other segments of society. It costs us \$25,000 to graduate a boy or girl at university level. That is a human investment and we do that gladly, but this is not at the level of the poor.

Many things have come across to us very loud and clear in the course of our hearings. One is that a minimum standard of income is needed for the disadvantaged and for the working poor. They need services and opportunity and working incentives. It becomes rather important that we take a look at this now because we are getting to the end of our hearings, and those in the board rooms of our financial institutions and chambers of commerce, and others who are not overly concerned with the plight of the poor and who shudder at the thought of a minimum income for the poor, should be told—and I think this is the proper time—that thousands of Canadians now under our welfare system receive minimum income on an annual basis. This applies to every province, and it is called long-term welfare assistance. However, there are thousands in the Canadian welfare system known as the working poor who earn less by working full-time at minimum wages than those in the welfare system.

This is the minimum income concept and it is being introduced into the welfare system through the back door, which is the worst possible way it could be handled. If we are to permit that sort of thing we will have unplanned, unorganized, haphazard and costly systems, far more costly than the present ones. We shall be compounding folly upon folly because it is not enough to send a cheque. These people need services, they need opportunity and they need incentives to work. If we continue to do what we are doing at the present time we will have the worst of both worlds.

If the minimum standard of income is good and I think it is, it has got to come through the front door for all to see and approve. For those who think that this is something new and something very revolutionary, all I can say to them in the light of what we know at the present time is: "What else is new?"

We are faced with problems here. Let me indicate a few of them. Do we scrap the welfare system? If we do what do we replace it with? Do we replace it with an income system and, if so, at what level do we start? Do we take the recommendation that h

been made up to the present time by the Economic Council on Incomes?

In the minimum income concept, what programs can be scrapped and what programs need to be maintained? If we decide that there should be a minimum income, is it to be on a uniform basis across the country? What should be the work incentives and what role can manpower play for the working poor? If there is a minimum income basis, how can that be financed and does it need to be put into effect immediately or can it be phased in? Do we have the means and do we have the will to do it?

These are some of the questions that we shall have to answer when we sit down and make up our report. This much we can say. Poverty will remain on the country's agenda for the next meeting, the next meeting and the next meeting, and moreover its position will be the very top.

We have seen many faces of poverty and we find them ugly and intolerable. What began in our country as something benign, through neglect, is becoming malignant and we must deal with it right away.

One of the briefs we have here today is from the Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society represented by Mr. Grant Mitchell. He will speak to the brief and then introduce some other members who are with him.

Mr. Grant Mitchell, Executive Director, Saskatchewan Water Resources Commission: Thank you, Senator Croll, and members of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty. If you will bear with me I have spent some time making notes and the introduction of my colleagues comes in the middle of them rather than at the first.

May I begin this submission by thanking the committee for giving the Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society the opportunity to present this brief. We have been following with great interest the press reports on the work of your committee and of the views of the various groups who have appeared before you. Our Credit Society is the central service and financial organization for Saskatchewan Credit Unions and we also act as the financial centre for cooperatives.

As Credit Union Members ourselves, we are very conscious, Senator Croll, of your long standing interest in and support of Credit Unionism. We are most appreciative of your efforts, Senator Croll, on behalf of ordinary people as consumers of credit. We hope that

your key role in the achievement of interest rates disclosure legislation is widely recognized.

We were not surprised therefore when we learned that you had been chosen to head this Special Senate Committee on Poverty in view of your past interest in people, their problems and their ways of attacking these problems.

Similarly, it should not be a great surprise to you that Credit Union people and their organizations have an interest in the poor. The very first interest in Credit Unions in Saskatchewan arose during the 1930s. At that time we were all uniformly poor. Our predecessors were looking for ways out of their difficulties and accepted this new concept of self-help, member-owned financial co-operatives and from very modest beginnings at that time, Saskatchewan Credit Unions have become a major financial force in this province.

Credit Unions we believe help many Saskatchewan people to escape from poverty by providing low cost credit for productive purposes but there has been a fairly constant concern among many of us that our very success might lead us to forget our original objectives.

We were concerned, and in 1969 as an indication of this concern and as a way of doing something tangible about this concern, our research council was asked to look into poverty in three ways.

First to define poverty; to tabulate and analyse the extent of poverty in Canada and Saskatchewan in particular and finally to establish whether credit unions have a role to play in combatting poverty. A copy of this study has been attached to the brief provided to the Senate Committee.

Later in 1969 the society board established a poverty committee and this committee was established for the purpose of advising our board on the ways and means by which co-operatives financial institutions could make a more significant contribution towards the elimination of poverty in Canada.

This committee was empowered to discuss approaches with private co-operatives and government agencies that have responsibilities in the poverty field.

The first few meetings of the committee were devoted to trying to identify existing poverty programs and their inter-relationships. We all found this rather frustrating since the individual programs did not appear

to be co-ordinated into any meaningful total attack on poverty.

I think it is fair to say that those on the committee who actually worked directly with the poor were the most pessimistic about our chances of developing fresh new approaches and getting them accepted by the people we were responsible to. In any event, we decided that we might best be able to clarify the issue in our own minds if we undertook to prepare a brief for this Senate Committee.

This job has commanded most of our attention recently but it is interesting to note that the society board recognizes that the committee has a continuing job.

After approving this brief for presentation and hereby accepting the basic philosophy expressed in the brief, the board has asked us to continue our work towards development of specific programs for the poor working through the co-operatives and credit union framework. This then is the background of our society's interest in poverty and background to the brief itself.

I would like to introduce the people with me because they each played key roles in our work to date. I think you might be interested in a sketch of their background and their everyday work since our approach to poverty problems undoubtedly reflects our combination of interest and experience.

First if I may introduce Father Lucey sitting behind me. Father Lucey is at present a Parish Priest at Balgonie. Balgonie is just out of Regina. He has, over the years, demonstrated his understanding and concern about the total welfare of his parishioners and the broader community.

He has been active in projects designed to assist people to improve themselves to live a better and fuller life both socially and economically as well as spiritually.

Father Lucey was closely involved in an AROA World Development project of the Federal Government when he was a priest at Broadview. He served as an executive member of the Broadview Chamber of Commerce and was a member of the Saskatchewan Medical Care Insurance Commission. He has served as a Credit Union volunteer in various offices. We think his understanding and sincerity concerning the problems of mankind are a valuable resource to our committee.

Mr. Michael Lopez, who unfortunately, was unable to be here this morning, also served on the committee. He is director of the

Marian Centre here in Regina. This centre administers to the physical and spiritual needs of the destitute.

Mr. Lopez has had a long experience in dealing with the problems of the underprivileged and his devotion to his present task is indicative of his concern and his sincerity. Before coming to Canada some years ago, he worked among the poor in South America. Mr. Lopez's understanding of poverty and his daily contact with it also provided a valuable and relevant resource to our organization and to the poverty committee.

Ted Prefontaine who is here, is executive secretary of the Conseil de la Co-Operation de Saskatchewan. I must point out at this point that you can see by my pronunciation that bi-culturalism is not a complete success as yet in Saskatchewan! It is a co-ordinating body consisting of co-operatives and credit unions with French speaking membership to work together more effectively towards mutual benefit.

He has had many years experience grappling with the practical problems of co-operatives and their members, particularly during the difficult 1930's and 40's. Mr. Prefontaine recently instigated a project designed to help the poor of Saskatoon which is now being assisted by the Roman Catholic Church and other denominations.

He is a former member of our organizations Board of Directors and of the International Credit Union Central.

Mrs. Evelyn Walker, who unfortunately could not be here this morning either, is a member of our committee. She is executive secretary of the friendship centre here in Regina that provides for the social, recreational and educational needs of both natives and other people.

Now we come to the people that did the work. Eldon Anderson, who is here at the far end, is secretary of the Credit Society and he is also secretary of our Poverty Committee. Mr. Anderson is active in a number of co-operative projects including a day care centre for children of single parents and low income parent families here in Regina.

Mr. Wylie Simmonds is a social science student at the Regina Campus of the University of Saskatchewan. He has worked on a number of other studies including the National Indian Metis Research Project. Mr. Anderson and Mr. Simmonds were mainly responsible for the actual drafting of our brief.

If I may take the liberty, I will introduce myself. I earn my living as an executive director of the Saskatchewan Water Resources Commission. I had some 20 years experience as a credit union and co-operative volunteer and I must say I have enjoyed every minute of it.

Presently I am a member of the Board and executive committee of the society and chairman of this Poverty Committee.

Turning to the brief itself, we recognize that it is anything but brief but we felt a need to explore certain key issues in some depth. We have tried to be practical but if we seem to have theorized too much or if we tended to overstate, we do not do so with any intent to mislead but rather to help point out some of the poorly defined concepts so that we could look at them more closely.

In approaching this problem, we believe there must first be an honest concern. The next step must be one of gaining understanding of the problem. We have the concern and this brief represents a part of our attempt to understand the problem.

I think we agree fully with your remarks, Senator Croll that you made at the beginning of this Session. We feel that the problems relating to poverty in Canada and the solutions which have been tried to date, have combined to form one of the most colossal and expensive frustrations facing our society.

As an example, four hundred years of grossly interfering with the lives of Indians as not converted Indian people to middle-class values. Better housing has not resulted in the elimination of behavior patterns found among poor people. Welfare has become a trap. Education has helped some but too often is found in its lowest quality in poverty stricken areas.

People who want to co-operate with programs are often frustrated by delays, limitations and time limits. The basis for most current government and private programs are the values, concepts of action which are attractive to the current thinking of opinion leaders and the general public.

We devise programs and we spend great sums of money on them. We hire experts and administrators and we do other things to help other people but as can be seen by experience of such programs over the years, we somehow don't get the message across to the people who are supposed to be helped. Either they don't want the program, they don't understand it or they are frustrated by the limits of

it or they are simply not interested in being "helped".

As frustrating as this is to us, it is even more frustrating to the people who are the recipients of these well-meaning programs. It is out of the failure of such programs that many of the myths, negative attitudes and bad feelings arise.

When poor people don't respond to the programs that we think are right, we get angry. The fact that we almost never respond to programs that they want, creates a similar feeling.

Generally programs are devised that attack symptoms rather than causes and to complicate things even more, most programs are based on myths, misconceptions and prejudices and perceptions of reality that are not shared by the recipients of the program.

In short, the approach to poverty in Canada is one of using bilge pumps to keep the ship afloat rather than repairing the leaks. In this brief the Saskatchewan Co-Operative Credit Society hopes to transmit some ideas which may be helpful in getting the necessary repair work done. What we are suggesting is the dismissal of negative attitudes to be replaced with positive and human considerations of the problems of the people whom we call the poor.

Co-Operatives of all types provide an opportunity for people to practise the principle of democracy in a real life situation.

We believe that co-operatives can help people develop an understanding of the social system in which we live and it can help them develop a leadership skill and skills for working effectively in groups.

However, we believe that co-operatives can be most helpful as part of a total attack on the problems of poverty. Therefore, this brief deals first with a definition of poverty, its causes and symptoms, current approaches and possible overall approaches, before going into the potential co-operative role.

The conclusion of our brief are based on a number of underlying premises which are discussed in some detail within the brief but I think they can be summarized as follows.

First, poverty is a condition of dependence. Second the dynamic of poverty involves decision makers, the general public and the poor. The poor can be probably divided into three separate value holding groups. That is the culture of poverty group, poor people and those who share the values of the middle class but who are handicapped in some way.

We must overcome negative attitudes about poverty and replace them with positive knowledge. We believe we must stop treating the symptoms of poverty and start treating the causes. For example, the lack of power and resources in the hands of the poor. We also believe that poverty can only be attacked through a total approach to the problems.

We think it is very important that on working on poverty programs, that we take a non-judge mental approach in dealing with these problems. We think that research and communication are essential aspects of any total approach.

Co-operatives principles, when put in practice, can be effective solutions and we believe that Co-Operatives can be most helpful given current structures in dealing with the third group of poor people—this is the group that shares the same values of most of us but who are handicapped in some way in turns of resources or knowledge.

We think that the initial problem is to overcome immediate hardship and from that point onward we must eliminate the dependency and create inter-dependency.

I think our recommendations follow logically from our discussions of these points and these premises and our recommendations include first the introduction of some form of guaranteed annual income combined with the greater protection of the consumer.

Secondly, that poor people become directly involved in decisions which affect them and at the same time the general public receive factual information about poverty and new programs to combat the problems.

Third, that an effort be made in the total program to replace dependency with resources and power over these resources.

Fourth, that the Co-Operatives and Credit unions in economical disadvantaged areas have access to continuing government support as part of a total program to overcome the problems of the area.

Finally that all Canadians become involved in social and economic planning for a more equalitarian type of society.

Many of the ideas included in this brief are relatively new and unexplored. Social scientists have dealt with all of these concepts in different situations but to our knowledge they have never been brought together in a specific examination of poverty. We hope our efforts in dealing with this subject will be

helpful to the honourable senators in their consideration.

Thank you very much.

The Chairman: Thank you, Mr. Mitchell.

Senator Pearson: Mr. Mitchell, this brief here is a very complicated one in a sense to read. You have put a tremendous amount of work into the brief and it has taken you time to figure this out because you divide the poor into three classes. I was just wondering how you got those divisions. Why did you divide them that way?

Mr. Mitchell: I will try to answer part of the question, then I will get some help. I think that there has been social scientists that have looked at the poor and tried to identify some groups within the general category of the poor and the first group that we classified as living in a culture of poverty. These are people whose forefathers for some reason or other sort of spun off from the economic and social benefits of the larger society and succeeding generations in the same situation, they sort of become entrapped in poverty conditions and they develop a sort of certain ways of relating to the world around them.

It has made it very difficult for these families ever to relate to the values that most of us hold. The second group—the poor people and these include our native people, the Metis people and other groups who subscribe to value systems that, over a period of time, have worked for those societies but because of the—one way to put it is the imposition from a larger and more powerful society, these cultures have become almost non-viable in Canada today.

However, we suggest that there is a great deal of evidence that some, if not all of the values of these cultures, should persist and this is contrary to the popular belief.

Then as I say that the third group that were identified are people who subscribe wholly to the value systems of the decision makers in our society and the general public subscribe but they were unable to meet the standards of the larger society because of a great variety of handicaps. It might be education or it might be a lack of basic resources.

Senator Pearson: Yes. And that brings me to another point. Do you think that our educational system—well, I should say first that I think it is surprising to me to hear that you co-operative and credit unions have taken such an interest in poverty as it is in the Province of Saskatchewan here and I suppose

over the whole of the Dominion—you have been working at it.

Not being a member of a co-operative, I have never got into the idea of what you were doing and I thought you were just merchandising but as a matter of fact you are delving right into society itself to find out what the problems are.

Now, one of the things that strikes me all the way through is the lack of education for the poor. That is a proper type of education.

Now, have you any idea as to why or is there any other type of education that we can have for the poor that would lift them out of that position or this position that they are in rather than just academic training?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, Senator, I am not an expert in education in any sense—

Senator Pearson: But you may have discussed it somewhat.

Mr. Mitchell: We all have our own sort of views on the virtues and shortcomings of the educational system. I would like a little help on this one but I would just make the one comment that I think, here again, as far as the educational program for groups that are in the poverty classifications, I think we have tried to provide them with what we think is the right education for them. It may not be but perhaps Wylie Simmonds or Father Lucey might wish to answer this one.

Mr. Wylie Simmonds, Executive Director of Poverty Committee, Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society: It seems to me that the important thing is that education relate to the actual experience of people. Frequently education today is related more to values, perceptions, experiences of the middle class as it were. Education should in fact be related to the person who is receiving it because it is growing experience.

Senator Pearson: Is there any type of revolution in the educational system yet or is it still staying with the old system of academic training only?

Mr. Simmonds: I think there are a few minor revolutions occurring but nothing significant that I can determine at any rate.

The Chairman: You say education relating to the poor. What do you mean by that?

Mr. Simmonds: What I mean by that, Senator, is that all of us have different experiences in life. Just as an example, take

the folk group that we have mentioned, the Indian people. They are brought up in a very closely knitted family kind of relationship, speaking in many cases, particularly in the North, a different language and they live in an environment which is not the same as an urban environment.

When they go into a school where the text books are in a foreign language, or different language, and where the illustrations in the text books are of skyscrapers and trolley buses and where there is an actual physical—well, where there is an actual alienation from their families in terms of the values that are presented in these schools, it becomes a very confusing and discouraging situation for them.

The Chairman: The Metis people through Mr. Adams and others have made that very clear and we are fully aware of it. Relate it to other than the native poor will you?

Mr. Simmonds: I think the same applies to the people who are in the first category, the culture of poverty group. They do not live in an environment which is as rich shall we say. They don't normally have books in the home, their travel limitations are great, the people that they have met are generally limited to the neighbourhood or small district and their home values are such generally that they are in a situation in which there has been poverty for generations and the values at home are not those of expecting progress as we understand it.

I think the notions of achievement which are expected in the schools and so on are initially confusing to the children in this category. As a result you know you have an initial contact that is bad and it has a lasting kind of reflection.

Senator Pearson: Yes. That sort of bears along the point I want to make. Do you think that academic training is the only solution—I mean, everybody talks about education but do you think the academic training is the only solution for these people who are in what you call cultural poverty?

Mr. Simmonds: No, not at all.

Senator Pearson: Do you think that there is another type of education need?

Mr. Simmonds: Well, Senator, I am not an expert on education.

Senator Pearson: No, I realize that, but I just wanted your point of view.

Mr. Simmonds: I would say that there needs to be for these people a broadening of horizons generally speaking. In other words, that sitting in the classroom is not the kind of experience they require. They require getting out and seeing things and the children should be allowed to visit. They should be allowed to go to the store to determine what is a good value and what is not. It is a very difficult question for me to answer because as I say I am not an expert.

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Mr. Simmonds: But certainly pure academic education is not the answer. Experimental education it seems to me would be of more value.

Senator Pearson: Do you think they should be educated rather than on a position of being able to read, write and have arithmetic and then go on in their trades or whatever it is—something to earn a living?

Mr. Simmonds: My own personal view on that is that it is an individual situation.

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Mr. Simmonds: Simply because a person is poor doesn't mean he is not capable of getting an education.

Senator Pearson: Quite right.

Mr. Mitchell: May I respond to that last question?

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Mr. Mitchell: In the process of developing the brief, I had a chance to do a little bit of reading about some of the programs elsewhere and relating specifically to your indication that perhaps trade training and so on might be a good thing, I think it may be but again, unfortunately, most of these kinds of courses train people for jobs that may disappear in the not too distant future and therefore if it is a government program the government leaders are likely to become a little frustrated when they spend a fair bit of money on training people for a trade and find out that they have to retrain them all over again in four, five or ten years.

The Chairman: But while you are speaking of that, jobs are disappearing today due to technology—these are the unskilled jobs. Machines are taking the place of the unskilled people. That is what we are suffering from, isn't it?

Mr. Mitchell: Partly I think.

The Chairman: I thought that was what our greatest problem was—that the machines are taking the place of the unskilled.

Mr. Mitchell: I think I would be inclined to agree that this is probably the major problem but there are other occupations...

The Chairman: That is true but what is wrong with learning a trade to make a living?

The Chairman: But people keep shying

Mr. Mitchell: Nothing.

away from it. The young man here shied away from it in answering the question, suggesting that because he is a native or because he is a poor boy we impose on him when we say that he should learn a trade to make a living. I thought that was the purpose of our system and was good for people. Has that changed any?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, if I just might respond to that I think I would agree with you that there is nothing wrong at all with a person learning a trade to make a living, but somehow or other over the years, it hasn't been given the importance that it should have been given, and somehow people feel that if there is somebody that is doing an excellent job at a trade they are somehow less perfect than somebody doing an inadequate job at a more scholarly occupation.

Senator Pearson: This may be so in your position as a middle class citizen but for a man who is down at the bottom there, learning a trade among his group doesn't put him down below because he learns a trade—it puts him up because he knows what he is doing. Isn't this so?

Mr. Mitchell: I would certainly think so.

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Senator Carter: Mr. Chairman, I would like to congratulate the witnesses on this brief. I think it is, if not the most, one of the most thought-provoking briefs that we have had.

I was very interested in the way you analysed the problems and getting down to a basic definition of dependency and the causes of dependency and your cures. Your remedy for it was a better distribution of resources and a better distribution of power and a better attitude or a positive attitude on the part of the general public without which the

redistribution of power and the redistribution of resources can't take place.

I was very much impressed with what you yourself have been doing to try and bring about this change in attitude. The little short broadcasts that you have had and the pamphlets that you have had printed and distributed. But the more I think about it the more I wonder if just a change in attitude is enough and I wonder as well if you can achieve a change of attitude just by giving more and better information.

My first question is I would like to know what kind of response you have received to the efforts that you have made—your own personal efforts?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, I think that Eldon Anderson could answer most of this but I can say myself that when we established the Poverty Committee, I wasn't quite sure myself what kind of response we would get from our own Board of Directors.

I was interested in Senator Pearson's comment of someone from outside looking at the co-operative movement and thinking of it in terms of purely retailers of credit and retailers of goods. There are a lot of people and I found surprisingly a great number of people in the co-operative movement who when we did a little bit of work on this brief and started looking at sort of the background of the problem, I found that they were interested in a great deal more than just selling money and selling goods. So I think that the response we had from our own Board of Directors, who were as diverse a group as you can find anywhere, was excellent.

The next step is to translate this into a program that acquaints our membership generally with what we are thinking.

Senator Carter: Well, you have tried some of that. You have distributed pamphlets and you have a little broadcast?

Mr. Mitchell: Right.

Senator Carter: What has been the response to that?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, I would like Eldon Anderson to comment on that.

Mr. Eldon Anderson, Secretary, Co-Operative Credit Society: The response to the efforts so far, which you will recognize are fairly recent—the serious attempt towards dealing at this problem and seeking out some solutions are not long standing so the

response to date has not been overwhelming. We can't say this but we have, I feel quite safe in saying, struck a surprisingly responsive chord in a number of individuals both among our membership but primarily perhaps among leadership and by that I mean managers or directors of credit unions and certainly in a large number of other organizations.

The Saskatchewan welfare people for instance. We have had requests for our Research Council's initial study on the subject of poverty from all across Canada and from the United States.

Actually a lot of what we have done with the pamphlets you saw you might also term in the area of advertising. As you well know in the area of advertising or anywhere you look for response, it takes some time and we feel we must do much more before we really do anything near changing an attitude.

We did try one thing though in connection with this which I think is rather indicative.

We put on a contest hinging on some of the radio broadcasts and some of the pamphlets you saw, and we asked people to respond either by way of a painting, drawing, poetry or prose dealing with roughly six subjects; among them being pollution, poverty and some other subjects like this.

The response was really overwhelming. We had 650 entries, many of them very, very good which again, I think indicates the concern and the willingness really to grapple with this problem.

Senator Carter: Well, that is fine. As you say I agree with you that the key to this whole thing is the changing of public attitudes and you have made a very fine start. I would like to get your ideas of just how we could expand this. I mean, it has to be done all across Canada and not just in Saskatchewan. What is your program? How are you going to attempt to motivate people?

Mr. Anderson: Well, I am not a motivational expert at all. I think we have stated and certainly implied in various ways in the brief that we feel we must work with a number of other organizations to really achieve the kind of general change in attitudes that will allow new and different approaches to the curing of the problem of poverty.

We feel in the co-operative movement we have a rather potent base in the three or four or five thousand co-operative leaders, the Boards of Directors of Credit Unions and the additional ones of co-operatives across the

Province and I think this gives us a springboard.

I believe there are other organizations too who first of all have to bone up themselves before they can expect other people to follow on. We are really in this process now.

Senator Carter: Yes, but you have started with a pre-conditioned group because they wouldn't be co-operatives if they didn't have certain basic generally good attitudes to start with, but to get out in the hard boiled public who are not in the co-operative movement and they are not in it because they don't share those attitudes, and just how do you mobilize this? How do you mobilize this program to gather in these people?

Mr. Anderson: I am afraid there are others here more able to answer that question—perhaps Father Lucey.

Father Daniel Lucey, Parish Priest, Balgonie, Saskatchewan: Senator, I don't have an answer either, I am afraid, but I do believe in seizing moments of crisis as a time when things can be done and perhaps this is where we are now.

I cannot imagine people discussing poverty as we are discussing it let us say in the forties or even in the fifties but for some reason we feel threatened at the moment in the matter of economics and in fact in all other phases of our lives.

A concern arises from the people it seems to me to protect themselves as individuals and even to protect their rights and so we have a crisis situation and a time of opportunity.

I think all the values that are achieved among human beings are done at such times and I cannot see any blue prints ahead except to work in it as it arises and to be prepared to take advantage of what occurs.

That is not too definite; it is quite obscure in fact but to go back to the thirties for instance there was a basis for the credit union movement established back into the 19th century in industrial areas in Europe but when it came to our own country, it took an economic crisis to make it possible for people to develop credit union movements and co-operative movements in Eastern Canada and then to the Northern United States where conditions were even worse.

Senator Carter: Do I understand you to say that there is in Canada today an awareness of a state of crisis with respect to poverty?

Father Lucey: I think, Senator, there is a total crisis. There is a total crisis of life itself.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Father Lucey: That poverty perhaps is a part of it and we have from my own point of view where the religious crisis which involves two areas; the collapse of faith and the collapse of morality. Although some people may say there is not a collapse of morality at all that we have a new morality but in any event my point of view there is a change and the change is not a good one let us say. I think I have drifted away from your question at the moment.

Senator Carter: Well, do you think there is a sense of awareness that we have to reconsider our whole values and that there is a state of anxiety developing across the nation where we must bring ourselves up with a short stop and reassess where we are and where we are going?

Father Lucey: I think so, Senator. I think this is quite true and it is a consequence of other parts of our lives—culture, religion down to the social attitudes not keeping pace with the industrial man. We suddenly find ourselves as fully industrially developed man and a very inadequate human being.

The Chairman: Father Lucey, which do the Canadian people fear more, pollution or poverty?

Father Lucey: I can't say that I could answer that, Senator. I think that it is most a mass media thing that has been thrown at them.

The Chairman: You mean pollution?

Father Lucey: Pollution is and poverty for most people, if they could just postpone payment for another month or another year they might accept the things without too much worry. I can't quite figure where the level of concern is, whether it is among the poor or among the conservative people.

The Chairman: Father, you shake me a little this morning. When I asked you—well of course, I didn't ask you personally—when I asked you which was more important, pollution of the elements or pollution of the human being, you did not seem to be sure which it is.

Father Lucey: I am sure which it is for me

The Chairman: I know you—I don't worry about you at all. I asked you about the Canadian people.

Father Lucey: Well, in trying to answer you, Senator, all I said was that I wasn't sure or I am not sure that the Canadian people are aware of a pollution of their lives in either the physical or the moral field.

We have been so conditioned materially to satisfying our pleasures and our desires that if they are satisfied there is a rather minimum concern for the morality involved. I think that comes from the commercial world and the advertising.

Senator Carter: You speak about this total program. You say that we must have a total program which will attack the causes and not attack the symptoms. How do you see this sort of program as being initiated? Do you see the government initiating this sort of program or do you see groups such as the co-operative movements initiating this type of program? Do you think governments can initiate this type of program?

Mr. Mitchell: Yes, I still have—perhaps it is because of where I work—but I am perhaps not as pessimistic about governments as many people are. I think government obviously have a major role to play here. We didn't get far enough in our examination of the problem to be able to come up with specific solutions or what the total approach should be. We suggested certain things which should be built into a total approach but obviously in any total approach it involves some hard work, I think, at some of the things in our educational system.

Are we conveying to our young people any sense of alarm or responsibility for things like poverty. I am not sure that we are.

Senator Carter: There is one other question which intrigues me. You talk about the impact of cultures on each other. The superposition of the culture of society at large on the native cultures and on the sub-cultures.

Now, a couple of weeks ago we were up in the Yukon and the Indians were very concerned about their culture and what the white man's society was doing to it and I didn't get a clear answer to this question but I did try to get from them their vision of what they saw as the end result of the impact of their culture.

On the assumption that the white man's culture, the technological society is not going

to bring that back and somehow the Indians in their culture must come to terms with that and I didn't get a clear idea from them as to how they saw this happening and what they wanted to see come. I was talking to university students as well, but can you give us any answer to that?

Mr. Mitchell: I don't think we can give any definite answers and with due respect, Mr. Senator, I don't believe any of us in any kind of short talk to Indian people or anybody else can find out really what they want or how they relate to us.

I think this has been part of our problem in various programs that we have not been prepared to take the time and we have not been prepared to listen enough. I have a tendency like that myself. I like to talk rather than listen and I remember the old story about the fact that the good Lord gave us two ears and only one mouth and he must have had something in mind when he did this but I do think this is the first approach.

Let's start really taking the time and let's be prepared to really listen to what the people are saying to us. They don't have everything sorted out and we don't have things sorted out ourselves and we are part of the main culture.

It is a very complex thing and I would hope somehow or other in any total approach on this problem that somehow we can find the time to really know what the other groups are thinking because from my little exposure to it I think they have some things in their culture that I wouldn't mind in our culture.

Senator Carter: I agree with you. I think they have many things. Their lack of emphasis on material things is something that our society really needs and if we could only become less materialistic our attitudes would change and our solutions would certainly be much simpler.

That is one great value that they have and think we could certainly learn from them. However, there are other values that they have that we can't adopt. I mean, they like to go to work when they feel like it and leave work when they feel like it and take a day off when they feel like it and in a technological society you just can't do that.

Mr. Simmonds: May I speak to that for just a moment?

The Chairman: Yes, go right ahead.

Mr. Simmonds: In different situations where native people have been allowed—not allowed—but have in fact developed their own work situations, they have not had any problems with deadlines.

An example is on, I believe it is Manitoulin Island in Northern Ontario where a group of Indians who were being fired from a lumbering operation because of the problems that you describe, got together and formed a community sort of business and contracted with the lumbering firm which gave them a contract to cut wood and deliver it to the mill. This would have kept a white crew of equivalent size busy for a year and the Indians completed it in five months.

There is a electronic components factory in technology operating in Greenwood, Missouri by a group called the Yankon Soo which is operating on the profit system but profits go to the tribe, not to individuals.

They have the most peculiar type of working arrangements, no time clocks, no schedules et cetera and yet they are always on time with the product and what this relates back to is their notions of organization which is quite different than ours.

The native notion of organization revolves around the family and the extended family and the tribe in the group rather than around the category or position on the job.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, I would like to join the other senators in commending Mr. Mitchell on the brief. It is a very comprehensive brief you have presented and it is even more meaningful I think when I consider that the very grass roots nature of your organization in the Province of Saskatchewan.

This leads me to my question. In your observations and your remarks you were very critical as I am of the programs that you have been instituted by government in dealing with the poor and the great sums of money we spend simply to create myths and negative attitudes and rejection and I would like to ask you if I could to just deal with two or three specific programs.

I want you to tell me why it has failed or where it is failing but more important what you think should be done. What changes should be made or where are we failing.

Let me just take the manpower retraining program. We spent over a million and a half dollars constructing vocational schools in Canada and right now we are spending over six hundred million a year on manpower

retraining and mobility programs. Where is that program failing?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, I am afraid I can't really answer you. I think I wouldn't be quite so pessimistic about those programs because from my own experience with them I think they have done a lot of good work in the technical training programs in particular.

I did mention that in vocational programs for instance some of us think that it isn't too well planned in terms of forecasting what the needs are in our society. In other words, you might end up training people for a vocation that disappears or is in less demand.

Senator Hastings: Do you believe that is true? Are we doing that?

Mr. Mitchell: I think we are and I hesitate to make any great pronouncements on it because I am not all that close to it.

Senator Hastings: Well, let us move on to the family allowance and student assistance programs. How have we failed there?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, in family allowance I don't think we have failed because I have six children.

Senator Hastings: Well, how can that program be improved?

Mr. Mitchell: Well I suppose—and again it is just my personal view—we didn't look at these specific programs in any detail at all. Many people are asking questions why some body like myself on the one hand receives a family allowance and on the other hand pay it back in the form of taxes and it seems little ridiculous to go to all that trouble but for administration reasons it may be simple to do it that way than other ways.

Senator Hastings: That leads me to my next question. With respect to family allowance or old age assistance do you have any views with respect to the universality of the payments or selected payments?

Mr. Mitchell: I have a bias in favour of universality.

The Chairman: And you with six children.

Senator Hastings: And finally Father Luce I was interested with respect to your art project at Broadview. Could you tell me how much money on that specific project you spent?

Father Lucey: Senator, the project at Broadview got under way at the very beginning of the art program and at the time I was personally on the Saskatchewan Rural Development Council and in order to be specific and to do something rather than talk generalities, I urged the development of the Broadview area in which I lived because it had all the features which could be used.

It had the recreational, the industrial potential, a skilled work force from the C.P.R. Centre there, we had a poor economy in farming with a good potential for capital—we had many things going for us all of which would be very well taken care of in an art program and the thing was accepted.

Now, in the first three years of the art program, we received from the art outlet in Saskatchewan a total of \$1,000 to conduct a survey which we did ourselves and that was through the Ag Rep Department of Saskatchewan Agriculture.

In the years following that, at that point I had been separated from the program, they sent an anthropologist to the area who spent two years studying the people and I expect his expenses were fairly considerable. That was the amount of the expenditures that were involved in the first five years.

The area involved four Indian reserves with a population of some two thousand and early in our program we were able to influence the Indian leadership to accept a community pasture under PFRA with the thought that under the art development we should have a pasture of about 45,000 acres available as the local art development area for cattle. It was as it turned out of course the thing did not get off the ground and the cattle came in from all across the countryside, from hundreds of miles around and our own people do not have very many cattle in it.

Apart from that there has been a ski slope developed in the recreational aspect and I can't give you any figures because I have been out of the area for years to the actual expenditure at that point.

It also involved an 18-hole golf course which adjoins the Trans Canada Highway, 92 miles from Regina and it has two lakes in the valley which are good recreational facilities and I have heard the sum of one million dollars being spoken of a figure which might be spent or is being spent in this recreational development.

We also had a survey conducted for irrigation production of vegetables in the valley with a total acreage potentially of 1,000 acres

which would be usable. There are, in use at the moment, some 50 acres of the most advantageous land in the valley for irrigation purposes and I believe also this program is meeting with some success.

Senator Hastings: Well, we have spent say 15 or \$20,000 and you took two surveys and studied the people and I am surprised you didn't have a human resources inventory. That is always the first item. Did it succeed?

Father Lucey: I think it succeeded in keeping the community together and making a lot of the people aware of what might be done. It was educational to that extent but it did not succeed in solving the problem.

I have to take a long term view of it. I think that the work done was so very basic that the integration of the Indian people's efforts with the white people's efforts in the community—and these would be the farmers and the C.P.R. workers—and by the way, that situation is lost because the C.P.R. have closed out in Broadview in the meantime and the people have moved out—but the people are still working together and they have learned a great deal from it. That is the one big value that I can say has come out of it.

Senator Hastings: Just one short question getting back to universality, Mr. Mitchell. Do you believe universality should be applied on a Canadian basis or should there be a discrepancy between North and South Saskatchewan and Newfoundland and Saskatchewan with respect to government programs and assistance?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, I was thinking about your question and I didn't answer it very adequately the first time but going to our recommendations, we recommended that the first step would be some kind of guaranteed annual income and part of the reason we made this recommendation is that we think the present method of various pieces of financial assistance for people is overly complicated, and overly expensive to administer. This is why I think basically we are in favour of a guaranteed annual income proposal.

I don't know how to respond to your question about whether it should be at the same level all over the country? Obviously people trying to live in an urban environment say in Toronto, the poor have problems that perhaps people in Newfoundland or Northern Saskatchewan do not have. There are certainly higher costs in some ways but whether the

difference is great enough to justify a variation between the levels of assistance, I am not really in a position to answer that.

Senator Sparrow: On your concept of the universal programs, is that your opinion? You believe in universal programs or is that the stand of your society—your credit society? I ask this in the context that you believe that family allowances should go to all families and that old age assistance should go to all people of a certain age and that a guaranteed annual income should go to all people. This concept you believe in?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, I think by what we have accepted as a society is the concept of the guaranteed annual income. I think it follows logically from that that you can do away with many of these other programs provided it comes into a annual guaranteed income.

I don't think you really need a separate old age pension program or separate family allowance program if you have this sort of basic security.

Senator Sparrow: Under the system today, everyone over the age of 65 has a guaranteed annual income as such, an old age pension and you are suggesting that everyone should get that regardless of whether they are a millionaire or poor or have income or don't have income. That type of universal program you believe in?

Mr. Mitchell: I personally do.

Senator Sparrow: The same with family allowances?

Mr. Mitchell: I personally do but I am not sure whether I can project this to say that I am speaking on behalf of the total society because I don't know.

Senator Quart: You mentioned both verbally and in your brief that the poor should become more involved. Would you mean that they organize as a group to present their viewpoints to government or special committees or should some of the representatives of these groups be appointed by government to sit on various committees and another question: when you were preparing your brief did one of the members of your group or several of them go out and interview the poor people in order that their views could be incorporated in your brief?

Mr. Mitchell: Senator, with respect to the first question about organizing into groups—

of course I believe, and I am sure the society believes, that this is the way that these people are going to advance most quickly.

This is in effect what we did ourselves in credit unions and co-operatives. When I said that we had become the financial force in Saskatchewan as credit unions, we also had something else going for us because we are a group that have got together and ironed out our differences and when we present something to government, they listen.

I think that the greatest single thing that the poor can do would be to—and I think we should help them once they decide how they are going to do it—get themselves organized, so they can both relate to each other and also to society as a whole.

Senator Quart: How are you going to establish the contact between these groups and yourselves? I am quite sure you have proved that you are an influential group.

Mr. Mitchell: Well, your second question was a very good one because it pointed out the weakness I think in our approach so far. We did not make a direct contact with the poor in drafting this brief.

We had an indirect contact because, as indicated the background of the people who worked on the brief, particularly all of them are working in a day to day situation with the poor and ours would have been a better brief, I am sure, if we had taken the time to have had the time to canvass the views of the people who we were trying to divide programs for.

Senator Quart: You mentioned that you had a campaign on pollution or poverty and you received 650 sketches? Would you have had more on pollution than on poverty?

Mr. Anderson: Yes. The contest you speak of which was a follow-on from our advertising program which dealt with some of the rather serious subjects brought out 60 entries by way of prose, poetry or painting, you see, and I can say yes, there was a preponderance on pollution. In other words, that was uppermost apparently in the minds of the majority of the people who participated.

Senator Quart: Because from the individual standpoint pollution is more of a concern and pollution, there is no doubt about it, has created also a poverty situation especially in the areas where the fishing rights are restricted because of pollution of the lakes and rivers.

Regarding the friendship centre, I am very interested to know about that. Have you volunteer groups who operate with you?

Mr. Anderson: Yes. As I understand it, the friendship centre operates primarily on government grants from at least two levels, and in addition to this I can say that a number of organizations, churches, one of our own staff people was chairman of their Board of Directors for a couple or three years.

This sort of thing. They do work a great deal with a number of organizations to attempt to assist them.

Senator Quart: And one of you mentioned the native people and others. You mentioned native people and others would attend your recreational centre. What percentage would be others?

Mr. Anderson: Well, I am assuming it would be very small but perhaps Mr. Simmonds would have more information in that area. You are referring to the Friendship Centre?

Senator Quart: Yes. Is it used more by the Indians or Metis or others. What would be others?

Mr. Anderson: Primarily certainly Indians and Metis. The others I really wouldn't know. I don't believe I said that but perhaps someone else did.

Senator Quart: Well, thank you very much. In regards to Father Lucey, I think your comments were wonderful regarding the crisis situation and the morality of poverty and all the rest of it.

Senator Sparrow: Father Lucey, it seems to me that the churches have not continued their program of help for people that they did at one time in the community. The church at one time was the closest to the people and they seemed to look after the needs and the requirements of the people. Now we see people, such as yourself, becoming involved in community organization outside the church such as the credit society.

Do you feel that the churches are failing in their original concept of assistance to people where it is necessary for men of the cloth to become active and find a greater satisfaction in helping and assisting society such as this?

Father Lucey: Senator, the whole point I would like to make regarding this is that need would be the guide to action, and when

nobody else was filling the need in the eyes of the people, the church because of its advantageous position did fill it, but in recent years all kinds of elements of government have entered the field and specialization which is beyond our capacity has entered so we now have to refer people to specialists which are usually at government levels and I think this is fine.

You know I don't believe in just serving the needs of people just to keep our people active or to justify the churches existence if a need can be served more effectively at a government level.

As far as the justification for the church is concerned, it still is valid in its own right and work towards society which would among all the people accept ideas of justice and charity out of which a good society would grow. I think it is very, very bad when the church enters into the management of people's lives.

Personally as far as I am concerned, I would like everybody to be as free as possible to make decisions for themselves in conscience and to make a personal contribution as great as they are able to make to the community and to the good of those around them.

We do not succeed of course in developing this idea because of our human weaknesses and our lack of willpower and a whole bunch of psychological reasons which are only recently appearing on the scene.

We are not able really to evaluate these at all but we are in a difficult position because the church today largely has not developed skills along psychological lines. For instance for social studies. These have proceeded largely in the civil and governmental levels. I am not sorry for that; I think it is fine if they fulfill the need.

Senator Hastings: Is there not a credibility gap with respect to the work of the church?

Father Lucey: Oh, definitely.

Senator Sparrow: Mr. Mitchell, on page 6 you refer to the poor and you say:

Either they don't want the program, don't understand it, are frustrated by the limits of it, or simply aren't interested in being helped."

What people are not usually interested in being helped? Can you be specific and why not?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, I think either of those two groups of the poor which we identified could fall into this category. The poor people or native people or other cultural groups that sort of have different values than we do plus the fairly large group where there has been sort of a poverty culture built up because families have been in situations for generations.

I think this reflects itself in the fact—well, when we were looking at how they respond to different kinds of programs, we say they are an ungrateful bunch of people because they don't really take advantage of the things we do and we think the reason they don't is because somehow or other they can't think in these same terms because they don't have the same amount of objectives and the same goals that we have or the great bulk of society has.

I can't really be more specific than that and again I come back to the point that we tried to make about the fact that if we are going to be successful in programs with these groups of people, we have to spend a lot more time talking to them and perhaps even living with them to determine just what they do want and we have got to take a lot of time.

Senator Sparrow: If these people—and you make reference to these three different groups—and if they are caught in cycle of poverty—as an example the Indians, Metis or other groups—but if they are satisfied with this way of life and are simply not interested in being helped, should society impose our system on them and say that our system is better and we are prepared to go in and impose our system on them, or should we leave them alone?

Mr. Mitchell: I would certainly agree with you on the first point. I don't think we should impose something on them that they obviously don't want. I hope that the gulf isn't so great that the only thing we can do is just say leave them alone and let them do what they can without any resources.

Perhaps there is some middle ground here and this is what we are talking about when we talk about some guaranteed income or a basic income so that you know that they have their material wants provided for at least in some minimum fashion.

This would help them start thinking in different ways about how they could get into a group and relate to the total society and to improve themselves even further.

Senator Sparrow: One more question. On page 8 you mention number 4 and it says:

That co-operatives and credit unions in economically disadvantaged areas have access to continuing government support as part of a total program to overcome the problems of that area.

Why is that particularly in there? Are you concerned that the co-operatives and credit unions are not going to be continuing to receive government support? Is that why you threw that in?

Mr. Mitchell: No. We have no indication that the support will be withdrawn. I think maybe we put it in because we think there are opportunities perhaps for more programs.

Senator Sparrow: Oh, you didn't say that?

Mr. Mitchell: Well, perhaps Eldon is in the best position to answer this question because he is more aware of the ways we have been involved with governments in programs in special areas.

Mr. Anderson: Well, perhaps I could refer to one specific example that I think is relevant here.

I was active a year or two ago in connection with some co-operatives in town in the organization of a day care centre and the idea behind the day care centre was two-fold perhaps.

One was to provide a service where preschool children could get something more than just baby sitting care and secondly we were quite honest in our attempt to involve people, very often one-parent homes and so after a great deal of struggling, organized that but the only way we could get it going was a few of us signed a note to have the initial capital money we required and salaries for some of the professional staff we required and our thought is that there is a real need in this area which provides not only better education for these young people, preparing them for the society they now live in but also involving the parents in working their way out of their poverty cycle.

There is a great need for a sizable development grant to hold it while the problems of staffing and equipping these day care centres are taken care of.

Now, this may appear to be slightly off the point, Senator, and if it is I will try to correct it again but I think it is one tangible indication of an effort where government assistance would have been a great help.

The Chairman: Mr. Anderson, while you are on your feet let me assure you that the Canada Assistance Act makes special provisions for day care centres. Money is available at the request of either the municipality through the provincial government or the provincial government if they pay 50 per cent. It is a part of the Act.

Mr. Anderson: I can assure you, Senator, that I am aware of this and we have been working at securing some funds from them for just over a year and to date we have not been successful.

The Chairman: You should have had Mr. Mitchell on your side. Mr. Prefontaine, could you tell us what is happening in Saskatoon?

Mr. Theodore Prefontaine, Executive Secretary, Conseil de la Co-Operation de Saskatchewan: I presume you are referring, Senator Croll, to the credit union for low income people that we speak about here in the introduction to the different committee members.

Now, I don't know if it would be of value to you, honourable senators, if I just said what resolutions were brought forward at a diocesan institute for poverty in 1969. It says:

Whereas low income people are in the class of the poor and we should therefore be concerned with their plight.

And whereas low income people are often in dire need of financial assistance in emergencies and they are also in need of low interest loans to consolidate debts and still preserve their human dignity.

And whereas low income people do not qualify for social aid or qualify for loans from existing financial institutions.

And whereas they have to turn to lenders who charge exorbitant rates of interest, plus aggravating further their financial plight.

Be it therefore resolved that this institute recommend, as a first priority, the establishment of an organization that will obtain investments at an interest not higher than 2 per cent to enable it to make loans at an interest rate of approximately not higher than 7 per cent.

Now, some criteria had to be established and the first one is:

No. 1—Greatest emphasis has to be placed on the counselling aspect of financial help.

No. 2—Opportunity for maximum participation, co-operation and development of loyalties, and self-help, must be given to those people being helped.

No. 3—Opportunity for participation, co-operation and development of loyalties, must be given to those people giving help.

No. 4—The institution must be self-supporting and must not rely on grants.

No. 5—Initial funding of the Institution must come from sources other than the people being helped, to get it going.

No. 6—The Institution must be incorporated under an Act which will give it maximum opportunity to develop.

No. 7—The institution is not meant for paupers, but for people who, given good counselling and financial assistance, could get themselves out of trouble and stay out of it.

No. 8—The institution is not to be a money-making organization, nor be in competition with other financial institutions. Its strength will be in the loyalties developed and in the social conscience of participants.

No. 9—The institution is meant for people who cannot obtain short-term family credit elsewhere, or if they could, would pay such an exorbitant rate for it that they would eventually be in trouble.

The Saskatoon Credit Union has pledged \$1,000, an investment of \$1,000. We are not looking for grants; we are looking for investments at low interest rates.

The Chairman: Mr. Mitchell, when you opened the program you were kind in praising me for some action that we took. The truth-in-lending legislation emanated from the Senate and every member sitting here, from one end to the other, who was a member at that time, and I think we all were, supported it initially. We were responsible for it and good results did come from it.

In the early days when the going was rough we co-operated, and the credit unions were a tower of strength in reaching the various Members of Parliament. You were responsible as much for that legislation as anyone else.

This is an excellent brief and was well presented. You showed considerable knowledge of what the problem involves, although you said you did not have too much time. You paid us a compliment by going to the

trouble of presenting a good brief, one that said something of significance.

This is not an easy study at all, and we are very thankful for the brief and for your attendance here. We are also thankful to the other members of your group who have worked on the brief. It will be very helpful to us.

The Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, I have on my right Mr. Elmer Laird, who lives in Saskatchewan. He has presented a brief to our committee, I will now ask him to speak to it.

Mr. Elmer Laird: Thank you very much. I am a farmer in Saskatchewan...

Senator Pearson: How many sections?

Mr. Laird: 740, about 1,100 acres. I was also involved in the lift program in a minimum way and I have prepared a brief which has some international aspects to it. However, I will not dwell on the international aspects because, as the Chairman has pointed out, we want to think of poverty as it is related to some of our needs in Saskatchewan.

I think you will probably realize that my remarks will be biased towards farmers and farm communities and our rural community and some of the problems we have there. I am not too familiar with urban society except at some distance and so my main concentration over the years has been with rural people, their training and the environment they live in.

I attempted to define poverty but I gave up. I think it is a result of your attitudes developed by the environment in which you live in and you are confined to a particular environment over a period of time.

That is the fact that you are fenced in and you feel you are in a hopeless situation and you can't get out of it, you are truly in a state of poverty. However, this is a very broad definition and I am not sure it will hold up in all cases.

Perhaps I should mention something that is happening in rural Saskatchewan right in the environment I am living in now. I find in rural Saskatchewan over the last 20 years we had a lot of people leave the farm for many and various reasons. We have government policies that are encouraging people to leave the farms and have been for several years.

Now we have a task force that says two-thirds of the farmers must go. Personally, I

feel that we need more farmers on the land, not only to service agriculture but rural Saskatchewan is now a pleasant place to live where you can enjoy all the amenities that you can have in a city.

The average age of farmers in rural Saskatchewan is somewhere between 52 to 55 years old. Various sources say 52 and others say 55 and I know that I am among the younger of the rural community.

When these people leave the farms and go to the cities to obviously find new occupations, they will not be able to find employment and very likely will end up on welfare or very low income work. This will contribute to an already terrific problem that I understand the city administrators are faced with. They are trying to find out how they can institute projects where they can house people and the cost of providing facilities is getting terrific and they don't know where the money is coming from.

The taxes are going up in the city and this is what the daily paper tells me—and many people are selling their homes just because the cost of the taxes alone is getting exorbitant and it is much cheaper to live in an apartment.

The policies of the government are compounding the problems in the cities, in rural living and over the last 60 or 70 years the pioneers in the rural areas have spent a lot of time and a lot of effort and a lot of money developing roads, schools, power, telephones and all these services that you can have in almost any farm in Saskatchewan today. And if you take two-thirds of the farmers out, well then, these facilities will be wasted.

This is the situation that is happening today and the policies we now have are going to really add to compounding the problems of the city and also the rural areas.

Now, the one big thing and hindsight is always better than foresight—that we have neglected through the years, we have never had a rural housing program. I don't think the size of the farm is such a significant thing in terms of providing an income for the farmer. I think the significant thing is what are the physical conditions of the house in which you live. This is a big part of whether you are faced with poverty or whether you are not.

The physical conditions of this house; we have never had a rural housing program and this has created great pressure to get large farms so you could then make enough money

so you could afford to buy or build a house like you have in the city with power and water and in many cases people spend their whole lifetime getting a larger farm and they have never been able to enjoy their house.

Another thing I would like to talk about is food surpluses. Now, due to weather and climatic conditions and political factors, and many other things, in every given part of the country in every given year, we are going to have either a surplus or a shortage of food.

Very rarely will there ever be a complete balance. I think everyone knows that in Saskatchewan we have had terrific surpluses of grain in particular in the last number of years.

Now we have the lift program which is putting terrific pressures on farmers to take in and out of production for many various reasons of international consequences which I won't go into.

However, last winter, the national farm union started a food aid program and over a period of a few months they received one hundred thousand bushels of grain, mostly wheat and it was to be set aside for food for anybody who wanted it.

The Metis Indian Society of Saskatchewan applied for 10,000 bushels. The reason for 10,000 bushels is that you have to have a unit to start out with—how are you going to handle this unit—so this 10,000 bushels—I should say first of all, I was asked to be manager of the project and my job was to help the Indian-Metis people get the wheat from the farms into the communities where they needed it and also get it made into flour.

The people on the executive level of the Indian-Metis Society didn't understand about grinding and wheat and flour mills and so forth and so I was asked to help them get this project started and get the wheat made into flour where it was needed.

Well, first of all, we approached the mills to see if it could be ground. They said "Yes" they would be quite pleased to grind the wheat into flour but they would have to have a permit.

The individual farmers can get so many bushels made into flour and there is a limit, otherwise any large amount of wheat has to be—has to have a special permit from the Wheat Board to be made into flour. So they applied to the Wheat Board for a permit and up to this date, they have never received a permit. That was the end of the project for all practical purposes.

There was one load of wheat ground—it was a mixture of wheat, flax, and rye which was ground on Grant Millers farm who lives at Perdue and it was distributed to some of the Indian-Metis families in the Meadowlake area. However, it was impossible to handle any amount of wheat in this way so that you could really cope with the needs of the people who could make use of this wheat.

Incidentally, the combination of the wheat, the rye and the flax is a similar product to Sonny Boy Cereal if you have ever had Sonny Boy for breakfast any time. Well anyway this was an attempt to bring about the distribution of food surpluses and it was a failure. We didn't get anywhere with it so that was the end of that and up until now no other agency has ever said anything about it. The whole thing was dropped and that was the end of it. I have no further solutions to offer until the red tape can be cut to get a permit available and then after that there are two other problems.

The one other problem is transportation. Now, the farmers are quite prepared to donate the wheat because in many cases they have surpluses. The wheat was piled up on the ground and it may spoil anyway. They were pressed for cash and they didn't want to grow any more grain and they were quite prepared to donate the wheat to these people and some of the farmers pledged as much as 1,000 bushels.

I don't know what happened to this wheat. I suppose it has been taken off the ground or some of it may have spoiled and some may not have spoiled. Nevertheless, it did not get to the Indian families in the North and I understand in Northern Saskatchewan transportation costs are high and they tell me the flour that you would buy in Regina at around \$10 a hundred pounds would cost you \$18 to \$20 a hundred pounds. I have never really seen the receipts but this is what the people in the executive of the Federation of Saskatchewan Indians tell me and I think they are quite competent people.

The other thing that I had been involved with for quite some time—not too much with the Indian people here but as a result of a study in West Africa I discovered that very little was being done about training people there in a practical way to know about our agricultural technology which produces great surpluses here, so after studying the situation for some time—we did have a training program at Davidson with an African and in two years—and he also made it very plain that he

had never run a car, combine or tractor but at the end of two years time on the farm he was a very competent fellow and the farmer he was working for said that he believed he had the ability to start farming.

However, he went back to Africa to train. However, the same kind of training program would work for our Indian people.

I am not saying that everybody wants to be a farmer. Maybe only one in 40 and maybe the way economic conditions are maybe nobody wants to become a farmer, I don't know. But in any event the Federation of Saskatchewan Indians tells me that some of their people would like to farm on the reserves.

They also tell me that in the age of horsepower they did farm the reserves but very few of them made the transition to tractor power.

The reserves in the main were rented out to white people who farmed the land and now they would like to farm their own land. I know that unless they are taught some of the basic skills of farming that any farming venture they go into will not be successful.

The Chairman: Thank you very much.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Laird, I am very interested in your brief and I am even more interested in you as an individual. You are a grain farmer at Davidson, Saskatchewan with 1,100 acres?

Mr. Laird: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Do you have employees?

Mr. Laird: Not full-time, no.

Senator Hastings: Not full-time?

Mr. Laird: No.

Senator Hastings: How did you become involved, interested in the poor? Are you an elected official?

Mr. Laird: Right now I am presenting this brief on my own but at one time for about 10 years I was a director of the Saskatchewan Farmers Union.

Senator Hastings: I see.

Mr. Laird: And since that time I have been very interested in the farming situation.

Senator Hastings: What contact have you had, Mr. Laird, or firsthand knowledge or

exposure or involvement with respect to the poor people in the Town of Davidson?

Mr. Laird: Well, I know practically everybody in the Town of Davidson and so I have some idea of their circumstances.

Senator Hastings: I would really like to know what motivated you to present this brief?

Mr. Laird: Well, one of the main reasons is the distribution of these food surpluses. The fact that we have failed in finding ways and means to distribute these food surpluses to the people in Northern Saskatchewan. I don't have the resources to do the research so I thought maybe you could do this.

Senator Hastings: I appreciate your idea but I would like to know—we are continually talking about a change in attitude and involvement by the haves and I am going to place you in the category of the haves and would like to know why you took the trouble to prepare a brief and take the time to come here to present it?

Mr. Laird: Well, I would have to think about that one.

Senator Hastings: What motivated you to come to us and tell us about this and present this brief?

Mr. Laird: Well, over a period of time, this has become somewhat of a personal challenge maybe. Let us put it that way. How do you get people thinking about producing food? I run our external aid office for instance—I must apologize, Mr. Chairman, I was going to step away from the international aspects but when I go there as a farmer I feel like a window. I mean everyone looks right through you and they don't even see that you are there.

There is no recognition for the skills of the farmer. There is only one person who has ever gone to a developing nation or been sent there by the external aid office as a farmer and it seems to me that there is no recognition for the skills of the farmers and until we apply this technology that we have to the developing nations, this certainly won't succeed.

There is a lot of things to consider, the culture and climate and ecological conditions and so forth but at the same time—again what motivates me is the fact I wonder just why this approach.

I have heard of great discussions continually in the paper about birth control programs and so on. I am not opposed to this but it seems to me it is all very negative. You have got so many people and it wouldn't be very easy to do away with them but the thing is how do you feed them and how are you going to feed more? I don't know. It is a pretty vague answer—

Senator Hastings: The problem we face continually is that we have got to involve the have and have nots and I was very interested in why you personally have taken the time and the trouble because that is the answer we have to find. We have to take the time to educate the givers as well as the receivers and I was just interested as to why you as an individual prepared this brief.

Senator Pearson: I agree with you that the exodus now is away from the farms to the bigger centres. Have you given any thought as to what the government should do to make farming more attractive to young people and to enable them to get on the farm?

Mr. Laird: Well, the first thing I think—again, this is hindsight but I think the one big factor is the housing. The young couple got married, perhaps their parents lived in a house that wasn't a modern house and they look at the possibility of maybe starting farming with a quarter section and in five years increasing this and increasing this and in 20 or 25 years they would have a house which would be modernized.

They could go to the city and get a home which is a modern home with a small down payment and probably they could see their way clear to have it in three or four years so this is the one big factor.

There are many people who want to farm and many people who have expressed the desire to farm. There was a survey here—I have a copy of it which was published in the Star Weekly about two weeks ago that indicated 21 per cent of the people in Canada would like to live on a farm. Seven per cent are living there now.

Senator Pearson: Have you any idea about the marketing of grain at all? Have you any idea or given any thought on how they could improve the marketing system on getting the grain into the world channels instead of just sitting on the farms?

Mr. Laird: Not really. I mean, there is possibilities. I think trade. Now, I apologize again

for getting into the international things but along the Gulf Coast of Ghana they grow beautiful big pineapples like that and the land there was very hilly and very sandy and the pineapples were the best crop they could grow to prevent erosion otherwise the sand was just going down the hill.

Now, I would certainly like to eat those pineapples but they are not organized and mechanized in such a way that they could ship us a boat load or half a boat load in trade for our wheat.

They like bread too. This is the kind of thing we are faced with. The third world, as you talk about it, cannot trade with us until they are developed to a certain extent. I mean, that is a very short answer to your question but this is the kind of thing I think has to be done. If they can bring their standards up or we can help them bring their standards up...

Senator Pearson: Or we can have people going out there and help them to get their pineapples over here and our wheat over there.

Mr. Laird: Well, the marketing problem in the sense is over there. The technology thing is to help them get organized so we can trade with them.

Senator Inman: Mr. Laird, I was very interested in your brief. You speak about farmers and I come from a farming province though the farms there are very little but you are speaking on page 2 about housing, and just what action would you suggest should be taken in regard to rural housing? How can we go about doing that because the problem is the same in my province as it is here in Saskatchewan.

Mr. Laird: Well, you have urban housing programs where the individual pays small down payments and for some peculiar reason we have an attitude here—I don't know if they think we are not going to live very long or the country isn't going to survive very long or what it is but we seem to think that a house should be paid for in 20 years.

A guest visited my home in Davidson from England and I was getting ready to build a new house and I said this old house isn't much good and he said "How old is it?" And I said, "60 years, I think," and he said "Well, the one my mother lives in was built in 1619 and we are not ready to discard that yet." Now, why do we think that a house should be paid for in 20 years?

The Chairman: We don't really, Mr. Laird. Our mortgages extend anywhere up to 45 years under Central Mortgage and Housing. We have changed our minds recently on that.

Mr. Laird: Well, we have built a Senior Citizen's Home in Davidson where we are going to pay for it over a period of 50 years.

Senator Inman: Do you think it is the interest rates that the young people find too high?

Mr. Laird: Certainly, but going back again we had interest rates—farmers built homes at five per cent. I think many farmers if they could have built a house at five per cent would have built one in the last 15 years or more. Farm improvement loans have gone up to 8.5 per cent.

Senator Inman: My second question is this; and I come from Prince Edward Island and a lot of young couples would like to go back to farming, at least in my province and I gather it is the same here.

Mr. Laird: I believe so.

Senator Inman: If they could be subsidized in some way. Now, it takes a lot of money today to establish a farm. What do you think about this? Do you think they should be subsidized for a number of years?

Mr. Laird: Well, I don't know how much money it takes now. The economic conditions have changed in the last few years but if you had of asked me that question two years ago I would have said it cost 60 to \$100,000 to establish a farm.

Farm land is selling so nobody knows what it really is worth. We are in depressed conditions and I don't know really what it is worth. The other thing is I know some income tax people who are helping farmers do their income tax and so I asked them what size of farm was paying the most income tax and they tell me the people—this is through an area from Regina to north of Saskatoon and in that area anyone who has less than a section of land is paying the most income tax—less than a section.

Senator Inman: Yes.

Mr. Laird: And a half a section farm that has some livestock on it is paying the most income tax. So things have been changed very rapidly and maybe they can start out with a much smaller unit today than they did before.

Senator Inman: Well, they can start with much less money than that in my province because a big farm there is 300 acres—that is a big farm. The equipment wouldn't perhaps be as much money but I do feel that there should be some way that young people could be induced to stay on the farm.

I know a lot of them would like to go back to the farms but if they could be subsidized in some way. You have no thoughts on that?

Mr. Laird: Not really, no.

Senator Carter: I just have two questions, Mr. Chairman. The first one is about this permit that you didn't get from the Wheat Board. Did you ever find out any reason why you didn't get it?

Mr. Laird: Well, if I could just forget about the brief for a minute and think as a farmer. One of the problems that we are faced with as farmers in the marketing of our grain was the fact that there wasn't much support behind the Wheat Board about a year and a half ago. In my opinion this was because of certain things that the Prime Minister said.

Now, there has been some great pressure by the private grain trade to eliminate the Wheat Board and the Farm Union has been putting pressure on the Wheat Board to bring back the old system of marketing.

Senator Carter: I can see the picture now.

Mr. Laird: If I were wearing my farmer's hat I would say bring back the old system of marketing but in support of my own brief I would have to say—

Senator Carter: In your brief you put your finger on a very important problem; the exodus of farmers to the cities and the building up of city monstrosities which economist forecast is the trend to the future and I personally think it is a bad thing.

I think some arrangements should be found to offset this trend but as a practical farmer I want to get your idea on an article that I read two days ago.

This article was in favour of small farms and we should have more of them and get back to small farms and the rational behind that was that forced fed crops on a large scale has resulted in sick soil and the whole survival of the human race depends on about six inches of soil and the natural elements of the soil have been taken out and haven't been replaced by the artificial additives that the farmers use and the only way to correct

this—and because you have a sick soil, you produce food that doesn't have the nutrition qualities required for good health. It is tied in with the National Health Program as well and this article went on to say that the only answer to this is to start on a small scale, get a small farm going where people use natural fertilizer, get back to the old fashioned natural fertilizer and restore the soil.

If this is done we will then produce food that is good and this in turn will have an impact on our health and God only knows that one of our biggest items on expenditure is health and I would like to get your idea on that line of reasoning and that type of solution.

Mr. Laird: Well, I certainly have no doubts about the fact that organic farming is certainly the best thing because it would improve the hydrogen and put it back in the soil but the other thing is, and I have been concerned about this for some time, and it hinges on pollution and I don't believe that we can raise livestock in large concentrations, totally for example where they never see the sun. They are loaded with drugs and in poultry over a period of time a resistance builds up to drugs and then you have to go and see the doctor and he prescribes some more drugs and they just don't respond the way they should. This is the thing we are doing and I think that livestock must be raised in a natural environment. That is out in the sunshine where the chickens can scratch in the dirt and so forth.

I am certainly all for this but again with agricultural policies, what type of farms do you encourage? Now, the agricultural economist has been saying larger, more economic units and they are still saying larger, more economic units in spite of the fact that the half section farmer is paying the most income tax.

I have a neighbour, two miles away. He farms 3,000 acres of land and he cut down last year. He had 2,000 acres of wheat in last year—or grain I should say and he cut back to 1,000. Now, he is paying out \$1,100 a month interest on his farm because the debt on his farm is somewhere around \$100,000. The poor guy can't sleep at nights but this is the kind of farm that our agricultural economist has been encouraging. He works until he is played out. He works until 12 or one o'clock every night and he gets to bed and then he is up at five and away he goes again. He has to pay off his debt.

This is our policy to encourage this type of thing.

Senator Fergusson: I would like to say to Mr. Laird that I don't know what motivated him to make the presentation to this committee but I think he has told us a lot of things that we didn't know and are very interested.

Many of the presentations made to us—I think a large majority has dealt with poverty in cities but very few have dealt with rural poverty and some of the subjects which you have brought up which are most interesting.

Amongst the ones that I wasn't aware of—I think it is on page 4—you refer to importing powdered milk from Ireland. Well, if we have surpluses of powdered milk which apparently we have, can't that be sold at a price that would make people buy that rather than imported milk from Ireland?

Mr. Laird: Yes, I can't see why not. It was a company, Borden's of Canada—were importing powdered milk because the Minister of Agriculture was reducing the subsidy on milk to try and get Canadian producers—they were producing too much milk and he was trying to get them to cut back at the same time a company is importing powdered milk from Ireland so obviously that is the milk that is going on the market.

In connection with using this surplus of powdered milk, we have, mainly produced by Eastern Canada, a surplus of milk. There are fruits that fall on the ground and rot in the Province of Quebec or Ontario or British Columbia. In the fall you will find apples to no end lying and rotting on the ground and it seems to me that in the low income areas one of the logical places to start is the school dinner program. I don't use the word lunch, because lunch to me indicates a snack—I mean the school dinner program. I think we should use our surpluses of food to start these dinner programs and I can't think of a better way to teach home economics than by starting in this way.

Senator Fergusson: Well, in this dinner program would the costs actually be born by the educational system?

Mr. Laird: I would think so.

Senator Fergusson: Or could it be done under health and welfare for instance?

Mr. Laird: Well, I would prefer not to get into these types of arguments but to me it really doesn't make much difference.

Senator Fergusson: The idea is excellent but who would be responsible for doing it I am just wondering. On page 2 you say:

Medicine is contributing to longer physical life but many of our older citizens are faced with the problem on senility and very little is being accomplished to cope with senility.

What could be done to cope with senility?

Mr. Laird: Well, I don't know. I raised the question because science is finding out ways and means that physically we can live longer. I could take you to homes here in the City of Regina and show you people who are 90 years old who are, in what appears to be excellent condition but their mind is gone completely.

Now, is this what we are going to be faced with in old age? Are we going to look forward at the age of 70 of the possibility of being senile? Are we going to look forward to being senile for the last 20 years of our lives?

Senator Fergusson: And is it worthwhile to prolong life if you are going to be senile?

Mr. Laird: Yes, exactly. It is a matter of just exactly what we are going to do.

The Chairman: Well, what do you have to say about it? What do you think we should do about senility?

Mr. Laird: I don't think there is enough research being done into it.

The Chairman: Even at the present time?

Mr. Laird: No.

The Chairman: Have you any idea on the amount of research that is going on by the geriatrics society across the United States, and across Canada by the Departments of Health and Welfare?

Mr. Laird: No, not really.

The Chairman: I can assure you that they are making expenditures of vast sums of money in looking into these various things. The trouble is, Senator Fergusson asked you the question to lead you into this. She is really an expert on this particular problem. She knows exactly what is being done for the aging.

Mr. Laird: You mean it was a loaded question?

The Chairman: Well, you fell for it.

Senator Fergusson: Senator Croll and I were both on the committee. He was chairman, and we did have a lot of study on this.

Mr. Laird: I am Chairman of the Farmers Housing Corporation which operates a senior citizen home at Davidson and we are faced with it every day.

Senator Fergusson: I was interested in the work you have done in going to Ghana and Nigeria and I am also very much interested in the recommendations in the brief of the National Farmers Union under the two years which says they would offer to assist the ICDA to recruit and organize continuance of farmers to go to these countries to assist families, but are you sure that that is right that only one farmer has been sent?

Mr. Laird: Certainly for the purposes of farming. I organized and manipulated to get this man to Northern Ghana.

The Chairman: You are talking about Ghana, but there are other places. We have been sending farmers all over.

Mr. Laird: You have been sending agricultural experts, not farmers.

Senator Fergusson: Well, you may be right because you are on a more practical level. If that is true I would certainly like the proper people to see this. I would like to find out why they are not sending more people on that level and I am glad it was brought to our attention.

The Chairman: Let me just say this, and Senator Fergusson touched on it—we are not very much concerned with what is your purpose or what is your motive but we thank you highly for coming no matter what it might have been. You have given us a slant on something that is happening and with which not too many of us are familiar. Senators Sparrow and Pearson are, but the rest of us aren't quite the farmers they are even though we might look like it. We have really profited as a result of your presentation. On behalf of the Senate I thank you very much for taking the trouble and going to the expense of presenting this brief.

Mr. Laird: Thank you, Senator Croll.

The Chairman: We now have the Chairman of the Regina Renters Council, Mr. Joseph McKeown. Mr. McKeown has an opening statement that he would like to make.

Mr. W. J. McKeown, Chairman, Regina Renters Council: Mr. Chairman, Committee Members, this brief was put together and written in extreme haste. I had no time to re-read the text of my brief let alone be able to edit it. For this reason I extend an apology, and extend many thanks for the utmost of co-operation on the part of a Mr. Holman, for my being able to be here at all.

You will further note that I have submitted under the name of the Regina Renters Council. The comments and views expressed are totally my own and in no way can they be created as the views of the Regina Renters Council.

I was notified Thursday of the past week that I could appear, the brief just had to be virtually an impromptu effort on my part as I had no time for consultation whatsoever.

With your indulgence, I shall sum up my presentation by referring to what I feel are the more salient points. In order to achieve the most meaningful understanding and discussion of this topic, I have taken the liberty of providing what I feel has to be a desirable starting point, which may not be mutually agreeable to all.

In order to understand the concept of poverty, as I have presented it, one must begin by applying it to our society and specifically in relation to how we pursue our livelihood, that is our economic base. This I hope I was able to achieve in the brief.

I somewhat question the seriousness of the attempts of our private enterprise system to really lay bare the hard cold facts of poverty. I respectfully submit that an exercise in sheer utility could result.

It can be said that no amount of hand-outs and lip-service will ever come close to solving the rather complex nature of poverty. One most encouraging fact, however, will be that the Senate Poverty Committee will be able to continuously oversee and prod the conscience of the government, in the hopes of focusing public attention and what's more important, prompt public action for solutions.

What the people don't want this poverty exercise to be is a stalling tactic, which will only temporarily focus attention away from poverty, by building up false hopes that the system is now about to radically change.

I submit, on the other hand, that the people don't want the institutionalizing of poverty in our society. In the final analysis, only policies aimed providing full employment and the

development of the country and its resources for the benefit of our people will we be able to bring about an adequate and growing income for all for the benefit of our people.

Toying and juggling with the present system in the hopes that some magical formula will evolve is sheer hypocrisy.

Poverty, I submit, shows up in many not so obvious forms in our way of life. To the most naive, poverty must be being on welfare, being unemployed, being on inadequate pensions. However, poverty does go beyond the obvious.

Poverty is—living under a system where the spirit of working together in the interests of the benefit of all, in preference to private gain, is permitted only on a charity basis.

United Appeals et cetera or such programs as these, tend to buffer and disguise the more greedy and ugly side of the system by presenting the inadequacy of the system in a supposedly more respectable light, which once again the ordinary people are called upon to pay the lion's share of the tab.

Such programs tend to help the system to evade certain responsibilities like making it possible for all to benefit from the success of the system.

Poverty is—being programmed and educated by ominous propaganda promotion in defense of the private profit system into accepting what will be, will be, such as, work hard, take chances, don't question the inadequacies of the system, be out for yourself and you win.

Poverty is—having the affluent and the wealthy planning and programming for the many who suffer the sortcomings of the system and this I cite as the many service clubs et cetera.

Poverty is—living under a system where the obvious financial success of a few is gained by employing the many.

I don't say that in a derogatory way. I submit to you also that poverty is making a loan to feel free, to do as you wish, really making possible the faking of really being able to do your thing without worry.

Poverty is—experiencing drugs to enable people to escape the ugly realities of life.

Poverty is—living under a system where underprivileged and the poor and having no avenues for open expressions.

Poverty is—being working people who seek to organize and who are subsequently tabbed

with a stigmatized person. We are here caught-up in a double standard. The affluent and the rich can organize and it is considered highly respectable to do so—such as, associations, chambers, societies, councils and the like.

Working people are treated with a measure of derogatory scandal accompanied by the use of naive forms of intimidation.

Poverty is—living under a system where general electoral minorities and apathy is the rule rather than the electoral majorities.

Poverty is—living under a system that produces in a publicly unplanned fashion, building in planned obsolescence in the name of making a dollar.

I respectfully submit, that the economic solutions for the poverty problem are within the comprehension of all. It is the will or desire to solve the poverty problem which is beyond the wishes of all.

The course is clear, investments should be for the benefit of the people rather than to swell and to further enrich the profits of private corporations.

Encouragement must be given to the public sector through crown corporations. The present programs of literally subsidizing the private sector at the expense of the Canadian taxpayer must be ended.

Consideration must be given to amending legislation prohibiting special tax privileges and land grants to private corporations in Canada, by all levels of government.

While the complicated domestic problems in life leads to value breakdown and family failure, and can be looked upon as an individual responsibility, societies provision for jobs and security, through private enterprise just is not there.

Poverty originates with and develops its peculiarities in the context of a specific social-economic formation. The system of relations of production constitutes the basis for a society, which then envelopes itself into the various legal, political, social, educational and a cultural thought defending its mode of production.

The problem of poverty, therefore, can be solved. Since the problem originated and developed from our way of life, it must be right here that we begin to apply solutions.

However, as I said above, it is the will to solve the poverty problem which is beyond the wishes of all.

The Chairman: Mr. McKeown, when you submitted the brief, you indicated that you

were the Chairman of the Regina Renters Council. Did they have an opportunity to submit a brief?

Mr. McKeown: I wrote for permission to appear today and a month ago I was informed that the program was filled up and I could not be heard and on Thursday of this past week I was informed that I could appear and I let it in abeyance to submit it to Ottawa and this prompted me to sit down and make a virtually impromptu effort.

The Chairman: On your own, but you have information of the Regina Renters Council?

Mr. McKeown: Yes. I was informed that was desirable to be associated with an organization. I did request to be heard as an individual and I put the organization down since I am Chairman of the organization.

The Chairman: You have made contribution.

Senator Carter: I was just wondering about the same question we asked Mr. Laird earlier. I was wondering what motivated you to present this brief?

Mr. McKeown: Well, I suppose what motivated me would be the fact that I have taken an interest I suppose in society and I actively involve myself with running in the local political scene, trying to pursue politics which I think are in the interest of the people.

Senator Hastings: What is your occupation?

Mr. McKeown: Clothing salesman.

Senator Carter: Do you have any contact with the poor?

Mr. McKeown: I feel I have considerable contact with the poor through the Regina Renters Council. You run across all types of occupations but primarily you run across the poor segments of our society where they are placed in inadequate facilities and charged with respect, exorbitant rents for such facilities and they have no choice. They cannot move out and they are stuck there and think this is one sure contact.

When I campaign, I visit all the homes or as many as I can and talk to the people.

The Chairman: Just a moment. You are now carrying out a campaign right here, are you?

Mr. McKeown: No.

The Chairman: Because that is one thing that we do not encourage.

Mr. McKeown: No, I realize that.

Senator Carter: Campaign for what?

The Chairman: Well, he is campaigning for something.

Mr. McKeown: To get more of us involved in society, actively involved in oneself and I suppose it is kind of a campaign.

I think some of the issues which I have attempted to cover, and I do apologize for not including the material but I do have this material which I could forward to Ottawa in support of almost every argument that I have presented. I apologize once again for not submitting it but due to time I just haven't been able to.

The Chairman: You are asking for a complete change in the system. You have forwarded your brief and I have read it. This is what you are asking for. Is there any place that we can look for a model of the system that you want?

Mr. McKeown: I am suggesting that the only way to attack poverty originates in the way we derive our way of living, our economic base and if that is what generates poverty, that is where we have to look and if it means involving the public sector to the point of such as providing houses for the people who can't afford them...

The Chairman: You are not answering my question. You say change the system. The question I asked you is "Where in the world is the system that you like?"

Mr. McKeown: I am not suggesting that there is one. I am suggesting a crown corporation operation where the profits will derive to the benefits of the people where it can be looked at very positively in our society and be specific in its provisions. I am suggesting that we need a public housing corporation.

The Chairman: We have a public housing corporation at the moment.

Mr. McKeown: To provide housing for the people.

The Chairman: It is providing housing for some people now. It does not reach all the people but it has from time to time reached the senior citizen, and other citizens. It does not reach everyone but what is it that you want?

Mr. McKeown: I am suggesting, for example, when you rent in this city, you are

paying one-third of your yearly rent into servicing the debt contracted by the property owner and I am suggesting that when a person pays that kind of money virtually as long as he is going to live, he should have a choice of either renting or owning a home and most people are disqualified because of the economic qualifications for the present housing. I am suggesting that we do need, one specific example, would be publicly run housing corporations where the houses would be provided for the people who do not have the means and do not qualify under the present programs so that they can have their needs met.

Housing is a business and businessmen make money out of it and there is no way that private interest will want to look after the people who can't afford housing because they don't have the income. This has been shown many times and I can cite you many instances of this.

Senator Pearson: Why did you bring in the question of Albert Street?

Mr. McKeown: I was suggesting that Albert Street and the rail line relocation were part of a program that is really brought in by the municipal government, specifically of Regina, and I suggested that tends to put people, the homeowners virtually in debt to perpetuity to pay for this type of program and I am suggesting that means have to be sought whereby the policies of the Provincial Government have to be changed so that certain main arterial arteries can be supported by provincial money offers and not the rate payers.

Rail line relocations is being brought into Regina and I think that is another way of putting the ratepayers in debt forever to pay for this.

The Chairman: I was just going to say that Senator Hastings comes from Calgary, I am in favour of them paying the taxes in Regina. You are too, aren't you?

Mr. McKeown: In favour of?

The Chairman: Of the people in Calgary paying taxes for Regina. I don't know whether Senator Hastings is or not but that is what you are saying.

Senator Pearson: I just don't quite see that at all because the people in the city get as much use out of the highway, in fact more use than the country people do.

Mr. McKeown: I am suggesting that...

Senator Pearson: The country people have the highways to get into town and the city people have the highway to get out of town.

Mr. McKeown: I appreciate this but at the municipal level there has to be—the main highways are not even at the city border and particularly in Regina we have five or six main arterial streets which are used, not by the majority of people in the city but by the travelling people and businesses and railway companies and this is where the money should come from. The money should come from these places to help pay for these programs.

The Chairman: Mr. McKeown, thank you very much. You will have to try out the theory on the people in Regina.

Mr. McKeown: I appreciate the fact that it is most difficult to suggest alternatives to the poverty problems and it is hard to communicate.

The Chairman: If you are suggesting that we don't understand the problems because some of us are affluent, you are very badly mistaken.

Mr. McKeown: No, I am not suggesting that. I am suggesting that as a working man.

The Chairman: If you are suggesting that we don't understand the working people because we are affluent, you are badly mistaken.

Mr. McKeown: I am not suggesting that at all. It is more difficult to establish a dialogue between those who haven't and those who have because primarily those who have can organize and it is commendable to do so when those who don't have it is very difficult for them to organize and find lines of expression to communicate and therefore there is a real risk.

The Chairman: I think what you are saying is correct but I just want you to know this—and I have repeated it on other occasions—that the members of this committee in the main have known poorness personally. I am not sure if they have known poverty in the sense we look at it, but the senators know poverty and as a result of their own experiences and what they have heard, there is no one in Canada who knows as much about poverty as this group of senators who are here today, and they are most sympathetic.

Mr. McKeown: Well, senator, I appreciate that and I just might add that I probably consider myself a successful working man.

The Chairman: We are for you. On behalf of the committee, Mr. McKeown, we thank you as a working man for coming forward, whatever your motive was. We appreciate it very much.

The committee adjourned. On resuming at 1.35 p.m.

The Chairman: Ladies and gentlemen, I will call the session to order. We have a brief here from the Seekers of Security Welfare Rights Group and on my right is Mrs. Margery Heath, and Mrs. Shirley Campbell and Mrs. Heath. Mrs. Heath will speak to the brief first.

Mrs. Margery Heath, President, Seekers of Security Welfare Rights Group Organization: Thank you for asking our organization, Seekers of Security, to present a brief to your Commission.

As a group living under welfare and poverty conditions, we are in a position to possibly suggest some solutions to the problems. Our group is made up of mostly young mothers. We are on welfare because our husbands deserted us, a broken marriage or lack of enough education to seek employment. Many of us have too many responsibilities at home to seek employment.

Welfare provides us with the basic necessities of life. A roof, food, clothing and medical care. If we care to just sit, this could be sufficient but we want to be allowed to live a normal productive life.

We want our children to have a chance to develop emotionally as well as physically. There is a curiosity here as to why welfare recipients do not accept and use the opportunities that agencies offer. Many times these agencies or groups do not realize that even a nominal fee or cost of transportation are deterrents to their use.

Many facilities are set up for only welfare recipients such as used toy depots at Christmas. We do not enjoy being a class set apart. The stigma of being a welfare recipient is a real thing and we avoid advertising the fact whenever possible.

The guaranteed annual income is one solution to the financial crisis as long as there is incentive to improve one's way of living and not cluttered.

At present we are guaranteed a minimum income on welfare, but the incentive to earn is killed by the reduction from our allowance by whatever we earn. It is a dead end existence.

The deserted wives act provides that a deserting husband must provide for his family. In actuality, it is one of the most time and money consuming adventures ever proposed. The penalty is not a deterrent because very few judges commit a man to prison for a misdemeanor.

We submit that a separate legal or government department be established to collect support payments. As others we do not have the emotional or physical stamina to cope with law officers and court appearances.

We have taken on the job of raising the children. We don't need or want the responsibility of collecting our support.

We suggest that government must come to grips very shortly with the problems of the welfare recipient. Governments must provide with the wherewithall to give our children normal life.

In the cities our children go to school with children, holidays, trips, music lessons and fun. The lack of these opportunities has a very real effect on our children's abilities in school as well as on their future chances to become well-rounded persons in their own right.

Poverty of being eventually leads to poverty of the mind and soul. As mothers we cannot sit idly by and see this happen. We want to do as good a job as possible and this requires a lot of outside help.

Lastly, we need some hope for our own future. We need to continue our education so we will be equipped to step back into the employment market. We need access to the divorce courts so if the possibility of re-marriage comes along we can avail ourselves and our families of the opportunity. Our personal ability and our happiness will insure the same traits in our children.

Thank you for listening to this presentation, I will try to answer to the best of my ability some of your questions.

Senator Pearson: Just two short questions. One was—you say there are 800 mothers in Regina here that are deserted or divorced. The problem of financing—you are not able to buy large amounts of food at one time because you have to buy at the local stores?

Mrs. Heath: Right.

Senator Pearson: Would it be possible for your organization to work out a scheme where you could have bulk sales to your organization and then distribute from there?

Mrs. Heath: Right as long as transportation isn't involved.

Senator Pearson: But you would be satisfied with something like that?

Mrs. Heath: We have no means of transportation except bus service because we have no cars.

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Mrs. Heath: So we do shop at the corner stores which as you know is rather expensive.

Senator Pearson: This is quite a problem. Another question I have is on the question of divorce and getting maintenance from your former husband. It is right that if the husband moves over to say British Columbia you can't collect from him or you have to go through the courts in B.C.?

Mrs. Heath: You have to go through the courts in each province that he decides to reside in and usually when you get as far as the court in the province he is residing in, he will find out that you are after him and he will immediately move his domicile to another province.

Senator Pearson: I see.

Mrs. Heath: This is the way it is.

Senator Pearson: What is needed then is a national court to handle divorce cases like this?

Mrs. Heath: Yes or support cases.

Senator Pearson: And support cases—a national organization or through the courts?

Mrs. Heath: Right.

Senator Pearson: One law right across Canada to handle this thing?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Senator Pearson: There is no escape now?

Mrs. Heath: Right. I think they should take some responsibility for it.

Senator Pearson: Yes.

Senator Carter: Is this group, Seekers of Security, is this just a local group here in Regina?

Mrs. Heath: Yes, it is.

Senator Carter: There must be other groups similarly composed of people like yourselves. Is there any contact between you?

Mrs. Heath: No. Although I know there are groups in Calgary and in Edmonton.

Senator Carter: We have run across them everywhere we have gone and it seems strange that you are operating all alone. You are not even province-wide, are you?

Mrs. Heath: No. We have only just organized in Regina last December.

Senator Carter: Now, you say there are 800 mothers and you only have 200 members. Where are the other 600?

Mrs. Heath: Well, when we call meetings we have the same problems that mothers do everywhere else. The problem with transportation, paying baby sitters to attend these meetings and a great number of them are hopeless and they can't do anything. A lot of them are quite hopeless and we can't do anything for them unless we have the laws changed in regards to welfare.

Senator Carter: And you have only been organized since when?

Mrs. Heath: Since December. Since December of '69.

Senator Carter: Only about eight months?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Senator Carter: At the bottom of your first page there you quote statistics that shows that 90 per cent of the children of one-parent families on welfare become delinquent and drop-outs. Where did you get those statistics?

Mrs. Heath: I got that from a brief that was presented by the New Welfare Rights Committee to the Government of Alberta and they don't say where they got it.

Senator Carter: I have never seen that figure before.

Mrs. Heath: Well, if I can just find it—I will read it to you:

Studies done in Eastern Canada showing that a child growing up in a family headed by one-parent plus growing up in

a very old social-economic environment faces a 90 per cent better chance of becoming delinquent than a child who comes from a two-parent family.

I was mislead on this. They carry it further to what it costs to keep a delinquent who becomes a delinquent adult, a delinquent child who becomes a delinquent adult in jail and then it goes on from there.

Senator Carter: You speak about these outdoor projects, camping et cetera sponsored by businessmen here. How does that sort of thing work? Has that made much of a dint in the problem at all?

Mrs. Heath: No, hardly at all. We have—I don't know how many children were sponsored for camp but the first problem that arose was how were we going to finance them to get to camp. There was transportation costs, sleeping bags, and other different items.

It is fine to present a fee but you have also got to round up the fee.

Senator Carter: Well, what are you doing as a group. You mentioned that you are giving each other moral support and trying to stabilize the one-parent families and educate the public and that sort of thing. What programs have you worked out to solve your problems. Have you got to that point as yet?

Mrs. Heath: Well, we have had lawyers speak to our meetings to tell us about our rights, our rights on welfare. We had doctors speak on psychiatric and psychological aspects of raising children from a broken marriage and we have had nutritionists speak on how to better use the income we have for food in buying and preparing it.

It is pretty hard when you have no money to operate on to really get into organizing and carrying out programs.

Senator Sparrow: Do you get any assistance or grants from any source?

Mrs. Heath: No.

Senator Fergusson: Did you say no?

Mrs. Heath: No.

Senator Fergusson: Well, that was one of the things that I wanted to know. Senator Carter said that we ran across this type of thing quite often but I don't think we have run across it very often. I think it is only the ones that have a great deal of initiative that organize these groups.

I do know a few that we have come across and one of them was in Vancouver. You just mentioned that you had some lawyers talk to you. Have you had any ideas of developing a program under which you might train people to do some part-time work and make some money?

Mrs. Heath: These programs are available as far as education is concerned as long as you have no more than high school. You have got to obtain high school if you are up against it or if a mother has a young family she is able to take evening classes at the university but that is only if she has someone to babysit but as far as the fees for university classes for just taking one or two subjects, there is no help that I know about.

Senator Fergusson: Well, I am not thinking of university classes. I am thinking of classes through your own organization. I was thinking of the one I spoke of in Vancouver where the mothers were being trained and they were being trained in some community work that would not be the sort of thing that you could not get through manpower retraining and I was just wondering if you had any thought of things like this?

Mrs. Shirley Campbell, Head of Publicity, Seekers of Security Welfare Rights Group: Not me.

Mrs. Heath: No.

Senator Fergusson: I wanted to ask you as well a little bit about housing and the places where you live. Would some of you be in public housing?

Mrs. Campbell: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: And how do you feel about that. Do you feel that this is a prejudice to your children having to live in public housing?

Mrs. Heath: Well, the girls that I have talked to that live in it don't like it for the reasons that they find it difficult to control their children in public housing. There are so many children that they really get out of hand but the public housing units themselves are quite nice.

Senator Fergusson: Quite nice?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: Well, do they feel any stigma because they are living in public housing?

Mrs. Heath: No, I don't think so.

Senator Fergusson: Do you feel that way?

Mrs. Campbell: I think one of the things is that it doesn't matter which neighbourhood you live in—whether it is public housing or just a house down the street, as soon as the neighbours find out you are on welfare you may as well move to the middle of the Sahara because they aren't coming across to you or they are going to work darn hard to find out what you are doing. You can't even so much as take the garbage out in the back without somebody accusing you of having been running around. It really doesn't make much difference where you live. It is the general public attitude towards people who are receiving welfare.

Senator Inman: With regards to public housing, do you mind telling us what your rents are?

Mrs. Heath: In the public housing?

Senator Inman: Yes.

Mrs. Heath: Well, I don't know what the rents are. I don't live in public housing myself.

Mrs. Campbell: I have no idea at all. It all depends I believe on the amount of their income. It all depends on the amount of their total income through the department and they are allowed a percentage of that for their rent and I believe it does depend too on the number of rooms in these houses. But it doesn't really matter whether you are paying \$100 or \$50 a month for rent because this is all you are allowed.

Senator Inman: For rent?

Mrs. Campbell: Yes.

Senator Inman: Based on your income?

Mrs. Campbell: Yes.

Senator Inman: On page 2, the fourth paragraph, counselling and guidance. You seem to think that it is difficult for you to get proper counselling. Is that because of the lack of welfare workers or is it the quality of the welfare workers?

Mrs. Heath: No, I think it is the lack of welfare workers in numbers.

Senator Inman: You find them willing do you if they had the time?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Senator Inman: Do you find it difficult to arrange divorces?

Mrs. Heath: Well, you need anywhere from three to eight hundred dollars to even start.

Senator Inman: So you feel that divorces should be definitely cheaper then?

Mrs. Heath: Yes, I think it should be.

Senator Fergusson: Legal aid should provide for this?

The Chairman: If you remember we raised it in Manitoba, we raised it in Ontario and it was raised in other provinces as well.

It is surprising that it isn't available here under legal aid.

Mrs. Heath: No, it is not. The legal aid we get is to obtain a court order for support and that is about the extent of it.

Senator Inman: I have just one other question, Mr. Chairman. On page one you say:

All medical and dental services are covered for children, but adults must absorb 50 per cent of drug costs themselves.

Does that just apply to this province?

Mrs. Heath: I don't really know but it does apply here.

The Chairman: This is the charge-back for the drugs, isn't it?

Senator Sparrow: No. Under the legal aid system for drugs the department pays 50 per cent of the cost.

Mrs. Heath: And they also pay 100 per cent for the children.

Senator Fergusson: Did you say that they paid 100 per cent for the children?

Mrs. Heath: Yes, and for dental costs. They also pay for glasses with the exception of any type of frames and in that case they would pay only \$2.50 towards the cost of frames for children's glasses.

There is one area they don't pay for and that is hearing aids for children.

The Chairman: For children?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

The Chairman: It is for adults?

Mrs. Heath: I don't know.

Senator Quart: Mr. Chairman, on top of page 2 it says:

If a mother is capable of earning, the incentive to do so is stifled. The Welfare Department deducts 50 per cent of the earnings after expenses for a mother with four children. Surely it would be better for a person to earn a new appliance if she wishes than to accept a used one from the Welfare Department? Or provide her children with a few advantages rather than having them running the streets with nothing to do?

I agree 100 per cent. What would be your suggestion—I have often thought about this and I don't know if you would agree but if a person like a mother you are talking about would go to the welfare worker and show some bills, unpaid bills and say, "Here, I owe this much and I am able to take a position could I pay these bills before they are deducted at all?" And then when they are paid off of course she would have to show the receipts and then when the unpaid bills had been paid and she still has a position, they could probably deduct.

However, maybe by that time the party would have succeeded in being a very good worker in whatever job she has taken part of full-time and then she would eventually get off welfare.

Mrs. Heath: Right.

Senator Quart: Would that be a solution?

Mrs. Heath: I work part-time myself and it is very frustrating to owe bills and yet you only get a certain amount of your wages. It takes years and years to settle some of these accounts.

Senator Quart: So don't you think that would be a good system?

Mrs. Heath: Well, I haven't really thought of any other.

Senator Quart: Well, another thing is let us suppose that you are moonlighting, which we know goes on, do you teach your children to say, "Well, you musn't let it be known that I am working," and you are in effect teaching them to be, well, to say the least thieves and liars and let's face it they have to hide all of this and you have to hide all of this so it is very dishonest is it not, and you of course would feel that society drove you to that

Mrs. Campbell: The work is the same even if you have a teenage child who can go out and get a job during the summer—I believe the first \$40 is untouchable but if they earn more than that then a percentage of the mother's cheque is deducted for room and board for said child.

So if a 16 year old can get part-time work after school and on Saturdays, there is no incentive for them to go out and work because they feel that because they are working and mom's cheque is cut down, they don't want to do it.

It doesn't really matter whether it is only a sole parent in the home who is working or whether it is the oldest children. Their incentive is cut down right immediately because of this deduction as soon as they get part-time work.

Senator Quart: Has your group ever suggested that to any group other than ours that that should be done as a means of eliminating some of this poverty situation?

Mrs. Heath: Well, we haven't presented a brief to the Provincial Government but this would be one thing that would be in the brief. We will be doing that for the next session but we are in discussion with the welfare department and their workers almost on a once a month basis.

Senator Quart: When you go and apply for welfare, do you have to declare the amount of money you have in the bank or other assets?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Senator Quart: And are you forced to sell these assets and use up this money in the bank?

Mrs. Heath: If it is an amount over \$500 I believe it is—I don't know the exact amount but they say if you own a life insurance policy, you are asked to borrow on your life insurance policy if there is a cash value in it and different assets of this nature.

The Chairman: What are some of the 800 women doing to educate the children? In your discussions what has been the attitude? What are the results? What is happening to the education of the children—I am thinking of education in the broad sense?

Mrs. Heath: I think most of us feel rather because any cultural advantages that are available cost money. We would like to see our children taking music, be involved in the

Y's, especially the boys from one-parent families where he is under the influence of the mother at home as well as the school teacher and no father from any angle except through the Y or the Boy Scouts, but any of these things involve money and it is sort of a dead end street as far as our children are concerned right now.

The Chairman: Well, what happens to them when they drop out? What do they do, assuming of course that they take Grade 12, or do they?

Mrs. Heath: No, a lot of them drop out earlier than that.

Mrs. Campbell: Grade 9 or 10.

The Chairman: What are you doing?

Mrs. Heath: Well, they work for awhile and then go back to welfare and get their hand-outs. They can't hold onto jobs very long because they don't have the proper training to hold down a job. The wheel is still turning, the poverty wheel.

The Chairman: The youngsters go back again to welfare? Do they go out and get a job and then go back again to welfare?

Mrs. Heath: Yes, and this is why we want desperately to give our children enough incentive and enough help to keep them in school and get the education as much as possible.

The Chairman: Well, up to Grade 13 there are no fees in school for books and other things like that?

Mrs. Campbell: How about a car to go to school.

The Chairman: A car—I don't remember having any car when I went to school.

Mrs. Heath: I don't remember that either.

Mrs. Campbell: There is a lot of social stigma to a child on welfare as they grow older because they haven't got the accessibility of going out and finding their own friends in high school so they drop out and get in groups of have-nots like they are.

The Chairman: That is what you are finding?

Mrs. Heath: Right. I know of one case right now where this is happening.

Senator Carter: These 200 members that you have—are you located in a neighbourhood so that you can get together easily or are you all over the city?

Mrs. Heath: We are all over the city. We try to hold meetings at a central point downtown.

Senator Carter: You can't group yourselves into any sort of a geographical basis and work out solutions say to day care centres and things like that?

Mrs. Heath: No, not too easily unless other organizations are going to step forward and help us or we can make contact with organizations that will help us. We can't even contact the 800 mothers who are on welfare because of the cost of stamps and mailings et cetera.

The Chairman: The department would not do it for you if you asked them to mail the letters?

Mrs. Campbell: They want the stamps.

The Chairman: Or if you showed them the letter?

Mrs. Campbell: We wrote out a questionnaire for these mothers and we had it all made up and they wouldn't mail it for us. We can't even reach most of these 800 mothers.

The Chairman: How do you know you have 800?

Mrs. Heath: The welfare worker told us.

Mrs. Campbell: This is how we know how many copies to make up but unless we get the stamps and the envelopes, they won't mail it out for us.

The Chairman: Of the 200 members that you talk about, how many of them have both of you seen? Are there 200?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

The Chairman: You have met them?

Mrs. Campbell: I have a phone list of 65 that I know of.

The Chairman: So there are 200?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

The Chairman: In dealing with them you have the same problems that you had with the others, that you cannot reach them

because of the postage difficulties or unless it is by telephone?

Mrs. Campbell: Right.

The Chairman: Have most of them got telephones?

Mrs. Campbell: Well, what we did was this. There was about five or six of us who would give our name to the department so that when the workers were talking to their recipients, they could give them our name and phone numbers and there is only one worker that I know of who did contact the whole case load saying that if you wanted information to phone Mrs. so and so.

There are other workers, who, if they happen to think about it while they are speaking with their clients, will tell them about it but it is amazing enough the number of women who say well, I just found out about it from Mrs. so and so down the street and this is the first time I have ever heard about it.

Senator Carter: Of these 200 members, single-parent members of heads of families, how many of these are deserted?

Mrs. Heath: Oh, I would say 60 or 70 percent.

Senator Carter: There must be an awful lot of transient ex-husbands walking around!

Mrs. Campbell: Yes, that is right.

The Chairman: They are not transient. They have three or four children they are leaving behind. That is the very point.

Senator Carter: Well, these fellows are always on the run.

The Chairman: These fellows are not that much on the run, because they are leaving home with three or four children.

Mrs. Campbell: They just migrate like birds!

The Chairman: As I say, they usually stay at home until they have three or four children and then run. This is one of the big problems.

Senator Sparrow: A mother in the Province of Saskatchewan with four children, what does she receive?

Mrs. Heath: Well, my children are 11, 9, and 5 and I receive \$277 a month from welfare and I earn \$62.50.

Senator Carter: Is that \$62.50 net after what they deduct?

Mrs. Heath: Right and that is half of what I actually earn. I receive a little more than the average mother for my accommodation since I am buying my home and the taxes are included in the rent or the payments so I would get \$30 a month less a month if I was renting.

Senator Sparrow: How much can a working mother earn before there is any deduction?

Mrs. Campbell: \$10 for the older child and \$5 for each succeeding child.

Senator Sparrow: So four would be?

Mrs. Heath: Approximately \$35.

Mrs. Campbell: \$35.

Mrs. Heath: But the thing is there is two or three different sets of schedules. They don't allow me to earn \$35 and then take half of the balance. They take half across the board. There is an A, B and C set-up.

Senator Sparrow: You are establishing some rapport with the social workers and in turn you hope to be recognized by the Department of Social Welfare themselves, but you are not in fact recognized now, is that right?

Mrs. Heath: Oh, I think we are.

Senator Sparrow: You feel that you are getting some cooperation?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Senator Sparrow: And the future should hold for more cooperation?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Senator Sparrow: In the aspect of husbands, you charge I think a husband with their desertion or failure for support. Which is it?

The Chairman: Failure for support.

Senator Sparrow: Is it?

The Chairman: Failure for support and then onto desertion.

Senator Sparrow: You are asking in this case that there be a difference in this system. Would you suggest that that concept be just continued where they would try and find a husband and try to sue a husband for support. I would say the batting average for finding these husbands and ever collecting any money is so small anyway...

Mrs. Campbell: Yes.

Senator Sparrow: Then would not your suggestion be better to say to forget that concept entirely if the husband has deserted so all of a sudden there is two families instead of one—a single family with him and you with your family. Wouldn't it be better to ask for that?

Mrs. Heath: Well, I have always felt personally that it is costing the taxpayer an awful lot of money to support us when it could be cut down by a certain percentage if the husband also supported even if it was on a minimum amount, say \$100 a month. Even if it was \$100 a month even for a family of four children. This is not asking a heck of a lot.

Senator Sparrow: So you feel that society should recognize that the husband has that responsibility?

Mrs. Heath: Right.

Mrs. Campbell: It is amazing the number of husbands, although they haven't lived at home for the past few years, claim three or four children on their income tax too.

Senator Sparrow: Well, that is a new angle or maybe an old one, I don't know.

Senator Pearson: Are there other families that that husband may have too?

Mrs. Campbell: Definitely.

Senator Sparrow: The partial answer to mothers on welfare—first of all, I would gather from your brief that the income that you receive is insufficient to give the adequate requirements for music lessons and so on and I certainly see, all of us with children, the schools organize a bus load to go somewhere and they send home a note that says send \$7.50 for this trip. There is no provision of course for that kind of money under welfare and it is a very poor system.

Now, to change that on the basis in which you are living today, how much more money per month would you require to give you these added benefits that you feel are necessary to raise your children on the basis of the average citizen. How much money would you require?

Mrs. Heath: I think \$50 to \$60 a month. In fact, I know from my own experience that with what I earn just keeps me above the poverty level. It means my kids have a chance to partake in a few things that I would never be able to afford otherwise.

Senator Sparrow: Which would amount then to 15 or 20 per cent additional funds on each welfare system?

Mrs. Heath: I also would submit that the welfare rates should go up with the cost of living.

Senator Sparrow: Yes. Now, if those additional funds were forthcoming, in that percentage that I am referring to, do you still require then the additional social services. Would you find it still beneficial, with this additional income, to still have the social worker visiting you and giving you assistance in some areas?

Mrs. Heath: I think that in a one-parent family the mother does need some agency help at one point or another.

Senator Sparrow: Do you find that the social worker is spending too much time on the financial aspects rather than the human aspect?

Mrs. Heath: Right.

Senator Sparrow: And if he or she were relieved without having to worry about the income aspect then they could be doing a much better job...

Mrs. Heath: Right.

Senator Sparrow: And you still want them there?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

The Chairman: Senator Sparrow, she said particularly a one-member family.

Senator Sparrow: Yes.

The Chairman: You indicated that you were receiving approximately \$360 a month.

Mrs. Heath: \$339.50 is what I get.

The Chairman: Well, \$340.

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

The Chairman: You said this was a little better than you would normally receive—than the average family with four children would normally receive?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Mrs. Campbell: I have four children but they are in a different age group.

The Chairman: But you receive \$300 a month?

Mrs. Campbell: \$305.

The Chairman: Well, \$305 is approximately \$3,600 a year.

Mrs. Campbell: Yes.

The Chairman: What I wanted to point out to you was that the Economic Council of Canada has laid down what it considers to be a minimum standard brought up to 1970 taking into account the increase in the cost of living, which is about 8 per cent since the report was made in 1968. Both of you have the same number of children and it should be \$4,600.

Mrs. Heath: And we receive what?

The Chairman: Well, you know what you receive—you receive \$340 by 12.

Senator Sparrow: Plus \$600.

The Chairman: I think you mentioned the poverty line or something, I gathered you meant as compared with other girls?

Mr. Heath: Well, the difference between just having enough to get by in a month and a little bit extra to give my kids a few things.

The Chairman: This was the difference that you were getting because you were working?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Senator Sparrow: How does your present income compare with the family income when your husband was with you?

Mrs. Heath: It would be about \$4,800 \$5,000 a year.

Mrs. Campbell: It is lower but I just couldn't state how much. It would be easily 25 to \$3,000 lower.

The Chairman: Lower?

Mrs. Campbell: Per year, yes.

Senator Sparrow: If there was a job for mother on welfare with any number of children—if a job is available are you forced to take employment?

Mrs. Heath: No.

Senator Sparrow: You are not forced to?

Mrs. Heath: No.

Senator Sparrow: It is your choice?

Mrs. Heath: It is considered better in a one-parent family if the mother spends the bulk of her time at home.

The Chairman: Well, that is the way you would want it, isn't it?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

The Chairman: It is your choice rather than the government's?

Mrs. Heath: Yes.

Senator Carter: If your money problems were taken care of and you had the money according to the scale for a family of your size, what would be your next most suppressing problem?

Mrs. Heath: Divorce.

The Chairman: That is not really a problem.

Senator Pearson: It is money problems.

The Chairman: Well, yes, it just so happens.

Mrs. Heath: Separation isn't a status of any sort. You are either married or you are divorced.

Senator Pearson: It ties you to a dead tree?

Mrs. Heath: Right. If we have enough money for our children we would like to do something for ourselves and I think divorce would be the answer in a lot of cases. Mind you, some are divorced in this group.

The Chairman: Well, I really do not think divorce should be a problem. In every other province for people who are on welfare divorce is made available with no cost. Certainly one thing we will do is bring this to the attention of the Attorney General, whom I know very well, and show him that in that respect he ought to do something. We will look into it, so do not worry about that.

Mrs. Heath: Fine.

The Chairman: Let me say this to you girls. We understand this problem and we have had a great deal of concern with it. We know that on this day and age it is not easy for a husband and wife to bring up young children let alone a woman by herself. You are entitled to a great deal of admiration for delving into it and doing a good job under very difficult

circumstances. We know that you are under difficult circumstances. I can assure you of one thing. The ladies on this Senate Committee have made it their prerogative, almost, to see that something is done for the female heads of the family. We join with them, I indicated to you there are 165,000 in this country with 350,000 children. That is half a million people in that position. So, we have a problem and we are devoting ourselves to it.

This is a good brief, very nicely presented and very easy to read and understand. We know the problems, and I think that this was a worthwhile trip for both of you.

Mrs. Heath: Thank you very much.

Senator Sparrow: May I ask just one more question?

The Chairman: Yes.

Senator Sparrow: You say mothers of single-parent families. Have you any male single-parent members in your organization?

Mrs. Heath: No.

Senator Sparrow: Are there many in the City of Regina?

Mrs. Heath: There are some but I wouldn't have any idea of how many. I did an open line show on the radio here in March and I had one or two men phone and ask if they could join this group and I suggested that they would be better off to organize their own groups because their problems would be slightly different. I don't want their problems too.

The Chairman: Well, you could join the problems and share them.

Mrs. Heath: Well, I don't think there are too many here because as I said I only received the one or two calls.

The Chairman: Thank you very much.

Before we complete this session, are there any questions from the audience?

Mrs. Ruth A. McGill: I had many questions or things that I wanted to say while this was going on but I don't know if I have that much right now.

The Chairman: What is it you would like to say?

Mrs. McGill: I hardly know where to start. There was so many things that came across my mind when you were speaking. For one

thing, it seems to me that so much emphasis is put on "If we can only have more money"—you know, that this is going to solve this, that and the other thing.

I think, at least in my own situation, that I have come to realize that how I feel and what I project to my children, the frame of mind I have, the way I feel with my problems and how emotionally stable I am, affects my children to a great degree.

I can't say that everything has been perfect in our home, because it hasn't. I have that many problems to deal with but because I refused to think of us as a poor, decrepit family, that there are so many things that we can't do and so many things we have to do without, I made a point of finding out how many things I could get for my family.

I have gotten help through agencies. My children do have music lessons and they have them through the public school Board. Three of my children have gone to camp this year and that is because I haven't sat around waiting for somebody to come and do something for me. I darn well got out and found out where I could get this help. I just don't have any false pride.

My children come first and I refuse to feel that we need to be pitied and I think they have the same idea of what I feel about our situation.

I have one boy that is married, he is self-supporting and he is in a normal home unit now. He has only just become married in May and the next child in my family is self-supporting. He lives at home.

I fully expect that the ones I have left are going to go through to Grade 12 and I don't expect that they are going to drop out along the wayside.

I think it is partly because of my attitude that my children—I know they have a lot to put up with, they are experiencing discrimination against them in school and it is not an outward thing; it is not an obvious thing. I just happened to come across it by mistake when they said that one little girl—a 14 year old—she was so happy now because she could be included with such and such a girl and I said, "Well, why couldn't you before?" And she said, "Oh well, we are a separated family."

Now, whether being on welfare or being a separated family, it is looked down upon. Whether it is the parents of other children that cause this discrimination, I don't know. I think it is just perhaps a natural thing in all

human beings or maybe part of our culture but my children have had to deal with it. They have had to do without many things but not everything.

I don't feel that we are at the bottom of the rung and that we don't have a hope in you know what. We are going some place, we do have a purpose in life and I shall continue to look for all the avenues that I can find that will do the best for my children and we are not walking around with our heads hanging down.

Now, mind you, everything that was said—I can do with more money. I don't need social workers' help. They are no help to me whatsoever because they are not at all tuned in to my problems as long as I have been on welfare and I have been on welfare for over four years now along with my children.

I don't speak for everyone. I speak for myself but I just would like you all to know that we aren't on the bottom rung. I am not just sitting around doing nothing. My children do hold their heads up and they are going to become self-sufficient citizens.

That is all I have to say, thank you.

The Chairman: Was there anyone else who wished to say anything?

Mr. Ray Moore: I have a few things here that I would like to say. I am wondering whether there is not a poor person on the committee?

The Chairman: A what?

Mr. Ray Moore: Why there is not a poor person on your committee.

The Chairman: Well, I spoke about that earlier in the day and you heard me.

Mr. Moore: I see. As I look around I do see a representative here from the Salvation Army or the Marion Centre, and these people are supposed to help the poor.

The Chairman: The Salvation Army or the Marion Centre?

Mr. Ray Moore: Yes.

The Chairman: Well, the Salvation Army helps in every community and they appear before this committee in Ottawa. The national group in Ottawa represented all of Canada. They made that very point that they do not appear in every city but they do nationally.

The Marion Group were with us as well in Ottawa.

Senator Carter: And in Edmonton as well.

Miss R. Moran: Senator, may I explain that the Commissioner for the Salvation Army died a very short time ago and a new one has just taken over.

The Chairman: The new Commissioner was there.

Miss Moran: I mean in the province.

The Chairman: They were there. The Salvation Army—don't fault them on it because they are right up on the top of the heap with the Marion Society.

Mr. Moore: Most poor are stymied right from the start. They have a poor upbringing and most of them cannot voice well their opinions and this in turn stops them from coming to places, well, like this and telling you just what is on their minds and what their problems are.

I look around here and I can see that most people can verbalize quite well and can state well their opinions but most people—or most of the poor people, they cannot speak this well. They are hung up in so many different ways and the reason why they are hung up is because from the age 1 they have been poor and they have been knocked down, down and down.

When they get to the age of 30 or 40 or 50 they just give up and this in turn gets into the question of the mental attitude of the poor. This is one question which you people haven't gone into and that is the mental attitude of the poor.

Poor people have all kinds of mental attitudes and I wish you people could do a survey of psychiatrists in Canada and ask them about poor people and what is happening to poor people in regard to how their mental attitude is being ruined. Their spirit is, well, kind of being killed.

The Chairman: I must tell you that one of the top psychiatrists in the whole of Canada, Dr. Capon, came before our committee in Ottawa. We had a worthwhile day with him and he gave us many of the answers that you are suggesting we obtain.

Mr. Moore: That is fine.

The Chairman: Well, you have not hit gold yet!

Mr. Moore: Well, I am glad. This means that you people are doing something and

doing something which I suppose you are supposed to be doing. This thing of the lack of opportunity for the poor. Most poor cannot express themselves when they go to the unemployment office and they are naturally looked down upon because they want a job, but what kind of a job and all they can say is, "I want a job so I can eat." They go to the local Manpower office and they have to speak to people there who have a lot of knowledge and they just can't put their things across to these people who are supposed to be helping them and this is the same thing with the poor when they go to the welfare centre.

They cannot put across to these people just what their problems are as much as they should.

I have often thought about hiring a committee of poor people to help the poor people.

Senator Sparrow: There is a number of areas in Canada where the Department of Manpower is in fact recruiting and employing people from within the ranks of the unemployed and within the ranks of what we consider the poverty level. This is in fact working in a number of areas in Canada and working rather effectively.

We have looked at this aspect and it is a very worthwhile special program. They are hiring unemployed people to work with unemployed people and they are hiring in some areas social workers—hiring from the ranks of the working or one-parent families and this aspect is working very well.

I am glad you brought that up because if it is not being done in Regina it is a good program.

Senator Carter: Well, I would like to supplement what Senator Sparrow said. In Edmonton, Alberta we had witnesses before us and they gave us a wonderful example of where they had taken people right from the very bottom of the heap and had got them to the point where they were using them as a committee to help the poor in a special project there in Edmonton, Alberta.

Senator Quart: Even the ex-convicts.

Senator Carter: 100 of them.

Mr. Moore: Well, I am very glad to hear this. I have been poor for the past three years and I didn't know of this and perhaps it is because I have been poor here in Regina.

I would like to mention also about this thing this morning from the—well, I figured this morning was just a waste of time.

The Chairman: Your time may have been wasted, not ours. Our time this morning was not wasted with the briefs.

Mr. Moore: I am not being paid for this; you are.

The Chairman: Not very much, I don't mind telling you.

Mr. Moore: I have lots of time.

The Chairman: That's fine. Ours was not wasted this morning.

Mr. Moore: And you are telling me that mine is being wasted...

The Chairman: No, you said it was.

Senator Sparrow: You said your time was wasted this morning and the Senator said that ours wasn't because we thought some of these presentations this morning were rather good.

Mr. Moore: Well, I believe that some of it was worthwhile.

The Chairman: Father Lucey, did you have something to say?

Father Lucey: Yes, senator. Regarding the Marion Centre, I believe they are closed for holidays because of some sort of staff problems, shortage of staff and they had to close up, that is the reason why Mr. Lopez was not with our group this morning.

The Chairman: Thank you. Are there any other questions?

From the Floor: I cut your ad out the other day about the Committee on Poverty where it says all committee hearings are open to the public. I would like to ask why are they open to the public?

The Chairman: How else can you have a hearing unless it is open to the public?

Senator Carter: It would not be a public hearing.

From the Floor: Okay, maybe we can be a little more specific. They are open to the public for what purpose specifically? Do you want to listen to the public?

The Chairman: Yes.

From the Floor: Well, it didn't sound to me like you were listening—for instance to that gentleman. It sounded to me like you were contesting him.

The Chairman: I was listening very intensely but setting him right. Your answer about hearing the public—we advertised in the press and asked them to come. How much more public could you want?

From the Floor: That wasn't the attitude that I deciphered from your attitude. I would also like to say that if you expect the poor public to attend something like this, you ain't going to make it.

The Chairman: Don't you worry about us fellow, we will make it before you do.

From the Floor: Well, you ain't going to make it as far as relating to the poor public. Number one, you have walked in here and everybody is dressed to the hilt and the poor public doesn't want to come in here. They are scared to. He has a point there. They don't know how to verbalize.

Senator Quart: May I just give one answer to this gentleman. We don't only have hearings of this kind. Do you realize that last week and many weeks that members of this committee have gone right into the poor area and talked with these people.

From the Floor: I was making a specific reference to this hearing and especially—

The Chairman: Well, we have heard your presentation.

From the Floor: I come from a poor family and I know damned well that my parent have been screwed at just about every blood turn they ever made and the only reason they made it—like that lady there said—they held their heads up high and they worked like hell and that is the only reason I am here. I have more or less made it and it has taken me all that courage to stand up here and say this but you are not going to get the poor public in here, sitting in here with a bunch of people who are probably well educated and wealthy and well up there in the financial scale.

That is all I have to say.

The Chairman: The briefs that were presented here today were well thought out and

considered. We now move on to Prince we will be able to do something for the poor
Albert. Thank you very much for coming people of this country. Thank you very much.
here today and for your attention. We hope The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

BRIEF

SUBMITTED BY
THE SASKATCHEWAN CO-OPERATIVE
CREDIT SOCIETY
ON BEHALF OF ITS MEMBERS

Regina, Saskatchewan.

August, 1970.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

SECTION

I PREFACE

Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society
Objectives
General Services
Representation and Control
Board of Directors
Management
Persons submitting brief

II INTRODUCTION AND SUMMARY OF
RECOMMENDATIONS AND CONCLUSIONS

III TOWARD A DEFINITION OF POVERTY

The Present Lack of Consensus
Definitions Are Dependent on Values
The Existence of Other Values
Some Differences in Values of "The Poor"
The Problem of "Ethno-Centrism"
"Objective" and "Subjective" Approaches
A Working Definition
Summary

IV THE CAUSES OF POVERTY

Distribution of Resources
Distribution of Power
The Creation of Dependency
How Dependency Affects the Three Sub-groups of "Poor" People
Summary

V THE SYMPTOMS AND EXTENT OF
POVERTY

We Measure Poverty by Symptoms
Universal Characteristics of Poverty
The Apparent Increase of Poverty
Summary

VI THE EFFECT OF CURRENT PROGRAMS

The Need to Examine the Basic Concepts of Programs
The Importance of Research
The Importance of Communication
Summary

VII POSSIBLE APPROACHES FOR REMEDIES TO POVERTY

The Need to Destroy Harmful Myths
The need for a New Reality
The Need for a "Total" Approach
The Need to Recognize Difference as Valid
The "Culture of Poverty" Quandary
The Non-Judgmental Approach
Summary

VIII THE ACTUAL AND POTENTIAL ROLE
OF CO-OPERATIVES AND CREDIT UNIONS

A Review of Principles—and Practice
The Third Sub-group May Be Served Best

The here and now distress situations
Intermittent unemployment
Chronic unemployment
Minimum and low wage situations
Voluntary Poverty

What Is Now Being Done

The Potential of Housing Co-operatives
How Co-operatives and Credit Unions May Help the First and Second Sub-groups
We Must Work With Our Own Members
How Our Practice Fits Suggestions In This Brief
A Future Possibility
Summary

IX SPECIFIC RECOMMENDATIONS

X CONCLUSIONS

XI APPENDICES

"A"—The Changing Poor, by Cohnstaedt
"B"—Poverty—Is There a Role for Credit Unions, by Bromberger
"C"—Poverty In Canada, by Simmonds
"D"—Humanizing the City, by Robinson
"E"—Your Neighbor In Need of a Credit Union
"F"—Can Anything Be Done About The Poor? by Adams
"G"—We Can't Afford To Let People Be Poor

SECTION 1

PREFACE

The Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society is pleased, on behalf of its members, to make this submission to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty.

The Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society Limited is the provincial central service and financial organization of Saskatchewan credit unions, and financial central of other co-operatives.

The present organization is the product of the amalgamation of the Credit Society, which originally served largely as a financial central, with the Credit Union League of Saskatchewan, which was the credit union service and representational organization.

Amalgamation was effected in 1969-70, following several years of study and discussion, in order to increase the efficiency and strength of credit union centralized functions.

The Credit Union League—Credit unions were first formed in Saskatchewan during the latter part of 1937, following legislation that year (The Credit Union Act) providing for their organization. In the spring of 1938 representatives of the 14 existing credit unions met in Regina to form The Credit Union Federation of Saskatchewan. Legal basis for the organization was provided by amendments to The Credit Union Act in 1941, and several years later the name was changed to The Credit Union League of Saskatchewan.

The original functions of mutual consultation, education, assistance in formation of new credit unions, and joint legislative representation, were gradually extended and new services added as credit unions grew in number and size in the province.

The Credit Society—The Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society Limited was established under special legislation in 1941 in response to the desirability of centralizing surplus funds in credit unions and other co-operatives for productive use within the co-operative movement.

The Credit Society provided an institution in which credit unions and co-operatives could deposit temporarily surplus funds and invest reserves, and from which they could obtain loans when additional funds were required. This mobility of funds enabled credit unions to improve their services to members and met some of the needs of co-operatives for working and other capital.

In 1959 the Credit Society assumed another major function in providing central clearing

facilities for credit union negotiable orders and bank cheques passing between credit unions and other financial institutions. Various other financial services were added from time to time to enable credit unions to provide maximum services to their members.

Objectives

In general terms, the objectives of the Credit Society consist of (a) assisting credit unions achieve their goals by providing services which can best, or can only, be provided on a centralized basis, and (b) serving as a financial central for other Saskatchewan co-operatives.

Specific objectives may be categorized in the two broad areas of financial services and general services.

Financial Services—1. To act as a central repository for reserve and surplus funds of credit union and other co-operative members.

2. To use these funds to meet the short and intermediate term credit requirements of members.

3. To invest temporarily idle funds, and to liquidate or borrow against such investments to meet the credit needs of members.

4. To provide a central clearing service for negotiable orders passing from and to credit unions.

5. To assist in the operation of the guaranteed negotiable order system known as CU-CHEK.

6. To provide ancillary financial services to credit unions, such as cash, money orders and travellers cheques.

7. To assist members with their financial planning.

General Services—1. To provide a framework for the exchange of information and ideas among member organizations, and for the formulation of general policies.

2. To provide centralized representation in regard to legislation and regulation.

3. To maintain liaison with provincial, national and international credit union organizations and activities.

4. To provide education and training programs for credit union officials and employees.

5. To provide centralized services in such fields as stationery supply, bonding, group insurance, loan collection, member and public relations.

Special Senate Committee

THE BOARD OF DIRECTORS

Name	Board Position	Vocation	Address
Harold Braaten C. A. Robson	President Vice-President	Farmer Liaison Officer, Secretarial Div., Federated Co-operatives Credit Union	Abbey, Sask. 1611 Grosvenor Ave., Saskatoon, Sask.
Vic F. Keep	Executive	Assistant Manager Credit Union	Assiniboia, Sask.
H. Esson Gale	Executive	Manager Credit Union	Foam Lake, Sask.
Grant C. Mitchell	Executive	Executive Director Sask. Water Resources Commission	11th Floor, Sask. Power Bldg., Regina, Sask.
Art Allsen Ken Bingham	Director Director	Co-operative Manager Credit Union Manager	Cabri, Sask. 166 First Ave. E., Box 666, Swift Current, Sask.
Robert H. Cowan Larry Fast	Director Director	Farmer Credit Union Manager	Rosetown, Sask. 136 Brown Crescent, Saskatoon, Sask.
Ray J. Marcotte	Director	Citizenship Branch Secretary of State Regina	1620-9th Ave. N., Saskatoon, Sask.
Jim Morton	Director	Public Relations Officer	c/o Moose Jaw Credit Union, Box 297, Moose Jaw, Sask.
Phil D. Sampson C. P. Hansen	Director Director	Credit Union Manager Extension Div., Sask. Wheat Pool—Director	Birch Hills, Sask. Wheat Pool Bldg., Regina, Sask.
Leo J. Hayes Eldon D. Kimball A. V. Kipling E. Ross Lee Dan. B. Loehr	Director Director Director Director Director	Farmer Farmer Farmer Farmer Credit Union Manager	Spalding, Sask. Ceylon, Sask. Melfort, Sask. Lashburn, Sask. Watson, Sask.

SASKATCHEWAN CO-OPERATIVE CREDIT SOCIETY MANAGEMENT

Name	Position	Address
Leslie R. Tendler	General Manager	2625 Victoria Avenue
Eldon Anderson	Secretary	"
D. Ashley Pow	Treasurer	"
Dale Hillmer	Manager, Development and Technical Services	"
John A. Barr	Manager, Administrative Services	"

PERSONS SUBMITTING BRIEF

Poverty Committee of the Board of Directors of Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society

Name	Vocation	Address
Grant Mitchell	Executive Director, Sask. Water Resources Commission	c/o Water Resources Commission 11th Floor, Sask. Power Bldg., Regina, Sask.
Fr. Daniel Lucey	Parish Priest	Balgonie, Sask.
Theodore Prefontaine	Executive Secretary, Conseil de la Cooperation de Saskatchewan	327-4th Ave. N., Saskatoon, Sask.
Eldon Anderson	Secretary, Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society	2625 Victoria Ave., Regina, Sask.

OTHER

Wylie Simmonds	Student (Social Sciences). Employee (Writer) of J. A. C. Struthers and Associates (Public Relations Firm)	1975 Angus St., Regina, Sask.
----------------	--	----------------------------------

6. To assist credit unions in all phases of operations through a field staff and analytical service.

7. To aid in the development of existing credit unions and the origination of new ones.

8. To participate in research activities in regard to techniques, structure, and the social and economic environment of credit unions.

9. To represent credit unions in the administration of the Mutual Aid Fund.

10. To carry out programs, both singly and together with other organizations, to extend co-operative philosophy and ideals within society generally.

Representation and Control

Our membership consists of credit unions and other co-operative associations.

Control of Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society rests with 102 elected Delegates to the Annual Meeting.

82 Delegates are chosen by credit unions on the basis of representation by population of membership. The province is divided into 12 districts and 82 sub-districts, each having approximately the same number of credit union members, and each sub-district choosing a Delegate.

The 20 Delegates from other co-operative associations are chosen according to the wishes of the co-operative organization they represent.

Our 18 man Board of Directors is selected in two ways. There are 12 elected at Credit Union District Meetings, and six elected by the Annual Meeting of the Society.

SECTION II

INTRODUCTION AND SUMMARY OF RECOMMENDATIONS AND CONCLUSIONS

The problems related to poverty in Canada, and the solutions which have been tried to date, have combined to form one of the most colossal and expensive frustrations facing our society.

Four hundred years of grossly interfering with the lives of Indians has not converted Indian people to middle-class values; better housing has not resulted in an elimination of behavior patterns found among poor people; welfare has become a trap; education helps some, but is too often at its lowest quality in poverty-stricken areas; people who want to co-operate with programs are often frustrated by delays, limitations, and time limits.

The basis for most current government and private programs are values, concepts, and actions which are attractive to the current

thinking of opinion-leaders and the general public. We devise programs, and spend great sums of money on them; we hire "experts" and administrators; and we do many other things to "help" other people. But, as can be seen by the experience of such programs over the years, we somehow don't get the message across to the people who are supposed to be "helped". Either they don't want the program, don't understand it, are frustrated by the limits of it, or simply aren't interested in being "helped".

As frustrating as this is to the "middle-class", it is even more frustrating to the people who are the recipients of these well-meaning programs. It is out of the "failure" of such programs that many of the myths, negative attitudes and bad feelings arise. When "poor" people don't respond to the programs that we think are "right" we get angry. The fact that we almost never respond to programs which they want, creates similar feelings.

Generally, programs are devised which attack symptoms rather than causes. To complicate things even more, most programs are based on myths, misconceptions, prejudices, and perceptions of reality which are not shared by the recipients of the programs.

In short, the approach to poverty in Canada is one of using the bilge pumps to keep the ship afloat, rather than repairing the leak.

In this Brief, the Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society hopes to transmit some ideas which may be helpful in getting the necessary repair work done.

What we are suggesting is the dismissal of negative attitudes, to be replaced with positive and human consideration of the problems of the people whom we call "poor". We are calling for knowledge to replace ignorance; compassion to replace pity; understanding to replace fear; and thinking to complement action. Mainly, we are calling for a recognition of the validity of different ways of dealing with the world, and out of that, interdependency to replace dependency.

In particular, as an organization imbued with the philosophy of co-operation, we will deal with ways in which co-operatives of all types may be useful.

Co-operatives of all types provide an opportunity for people to practice the principles of democracy in a real life situation. We believe that co-operatives can help people develop an understanding of the social system

in which we live, and help them develop leadership skills, and skills for working effectively in groups.

However, we believe that co-operatives can be most helpful as part of a total attack on the problems of poverty. Therefore, this brief deals first with a definition of poverty, its causes and symptoms, current approaches and possible overall approaches, before going into detail on the actual and potential co-operative role.

The conclusions of our Brief are based on a number of underlying premises, which are discussed in some detail within, but which may be summarized as follows:

1. That poverty is a condition of dependence.
2. That the dynamics of poverty involve decision-makers, the general public and the poor.
3. That the poor can be broadly divided into three separate value-holding groups—that is, "the culture of poverty"; "folk" people; and those who share the values of the "middle-class", but who are handicapped in some way.
4. That we must overcome negative attitudes about poverty, and replace them with positive knowledge.
5. That we must stop treating the symptoms of poverty, and start treating the causes—i.e., lack of power and resources.
6. That this task really involves the changing of our society's rhetoric into reality. We must create new and positive paradoxes.
7. That poverty can only be tackled through a total approach to the problem.
8. That we must overcome our own "ethnocentrism", and take a non-judgemental approach when working with these problems.
9. That research and communication are essential aspects of any total approach.
10. That co-operative principles, when put into practice, can be effective solutions, and that co-operatives can be most helpful, given current structures, in dealing with the third group of poor people. However, we can also be effective with the other two groups, through simple structural changes.
11. That the initial problem is to overcome immediate hardships, and from that point onward, we must eliminate dependencies, and create interdependencies.

Our conclusions and recommendations which follow from our discussion of the above points include:

1. The introduction of some form of guaranteed annual income, and greater consumer protection.
2. That poor people become directly involved in decisions which affect them, and at the same time, the general public receive factual information about poverty and new programs to combat the problem.
3. That an effort be made to replace dependency with resources and power over those resources.
4. That co-operatives and credit unions in economically disadvantaged areas have access to continuing government support, as part of a total program to overcome the problems of that area.
5. That all Canadians become involved in social and economic planning for a more equalitarian type of society.

Many of the ideas included in this Brief are still relatively new and unexplored. Social scientists have dealt with all these concepts in different situations, but to our knowledge, they have never been brought together in a specific examination of poverty.

We hope that our efforts in dealing with this subject will be helpful to the Honourable Senators in their considerations.

SECTION III

TOWARD A DEFINITION OF POVERTY

The Present Lack of Consensus

The Honourable Senators of the Committee are, by now, surely aware of the difficulties in arriving at a consensus of the definition of "poverty". Yet, without a clear definition, it is difficult for government to communicate the scope of the problem to the general public, many of whom are not directly involved; it is difficult to develop programs which are viable, and to train people to work on the problems facing poor people; and it is difficult to bring about meaningful changes in the lives of those who are eventually classified under a broad definition of poverty.

This lack of a clear consensus of definition is a disadvantage to our group also, in that we have just recently started to concentrate efforts and resources on this specific problem. It has meant we must deal with many abstractions, many of which do not seem to have direct associations with reality. However, the lack of clarity about poverty has some advantages. One of these being that there is considerable scope for innovative thinkings, new and creative efforts and programs, and a chance to attack the problem

confronting poor people without also having to attack badly-defined "official" notions of what the problems are, and how they should be handled.

In recognizing this admitted lack of consensus, we hope nevertheless, to provide some basis for a definition; to identify some of the causes and problems of poverty; and to bring forth constructive suggestions for ways and means of co-operating with government and other agencies in overcoming poverty.

Definitions Are Dependent on Values

Any definition of poverty is necessarily culture-bound and value-laden. It is bound by the world-view of the person who defines the problem, and included in the definition are the values which comprise the basis of that person's or that culture's behavior and thinking.

Cohnstaedt (Appendix A), identifies three classifications of people who are involved in the dynamics of poverty: the poor; the decision-makers; and the general public. (p. 15). Briefly, the decision-makers have the power to institute change, the general public has the power to influence the decision-makers, and the poor "seemingly have the least power of the three groups". Yet, it is the poor who are the objects of the programs, devised by the other two groups, aimed at "defeating poverty". We will return to that problem later, but we should first of all examine values that influence the three groups.

"Middle-Class" Values

It is fairly safe to assume that the values of decision-makers and the general public are reasonably consistent, for it is the general public that directly and indirectly elects and appoints those who make decisions. It is also safe to assume that the current values of decision-makers and most of the general public in Canada are related to what is often called "the middle-class ethic".

Bromberger (Appendix B) lists some of the "symptoms" of the "larger" society's organization:

"A money economy, work for wages, capital development for profit, fairly high and regular unemployment for unskilled labor, and a fairly high degree of technological change and resulting skill obsolescence." (16)

In other words, we live in a market economy and the ethic which accompanies it includes, as Bromberger points out:

"—a strong and enduring orientation to the future. Planning, budgeting and

saving today, and in turn, doing without is set off against the achievement of some abstract good of the future. This kind of view will lead many families to deprive themselves of immediate goods and services to educate a son or a daughter or some other similar fairly abstract goal. This sort of ethic places a high value on self-discipline, work and planning for the future. It frequently also embodies the idea of obedience to law or authority and frequently a fairly uncritical acceptance of what 'is' ". (17)

We might also note that other "symptoms" of the "larger" society, which is best known by decision-makers and the general public include: vertical relationships; impersonal interactions; a competitive approach to people and environment alike; and a tendency to categorize and generalize people, problems, etc. Decision-makers and the general public tend to value "hard work", "getting ahead", "keeping up", "winning", etc. They also tend to value "helping your neighbor", (out of charity, not obligation), and proceed to do this, officially and unofficially, within the context of the values which they possess.

The Existence of Other Values

It seems to us, that the difficulty arises when the people who are being "helped" are not familiar with, or do not accept, the values of the decision-makers and the general public.

Therefore, let us briefly examine some of the values commonly found among some people who are considered "poor" by the first two groups. Again, we turn to Bromberger:

"In contrast, the culture of poverty ethic or value system stresses the here and now. The attitude can be summarized as being 'live for today, and let what may come'. This fatalism leads to a strong emphasis on today's needs with comparatively little planning for the future. The male of the family is required to demonstrate his virility and masculinity through physical violence, aggression and his sexual prowess. The female, on the other hand, quite frequently is the head of the family. This is in rather sharp contrast to the middle class ethic. The poverty ethic stresses a lack of emphasis on the future, apparent apathy, and no motivation for 'betterment'. This value system because of regular and repeated frustration of aspiration works against any chance of large-scale upward mobili-

ty although there is always likely to be some limited individual upward mobility". (17)

In this, Bromberger is accepting Oscar Lewis's "culture of poverty" thesis, found in the introduction to *"La Vida"*. However, he makes it clear that he is generalizing.

Some Differences in Values of "The Poor"

It is probably easier to comprehend the values of "poor" people, by sub-dividing them into three separate value-holding groups.

There is the group that Bromberger and Lewis describe. Such people are most frequently found in urban "slums".

The second group, Lewis is careful not to include in his "culture of poverty" description. This group includes, Indian, Metis and other "folk" groups which have a distinctive value-system that has become virtually non-viable in today's "larger" society, because of super-imposition of structures, values, economics, politics, and other forms of social and economic pressures from "outside" the group.

Wahrhaftig (*The Folk Society as Type*, 1968), using Robert Redfield's work as a basis, summarizes the characteristics of this second group:

"In form, the folk society is small; isolated; homogeneous. In content, the folk society relies on memory, lacking literacy; consists of people who are much alike; changes little; is strongly bounded; its members are "we" against all others who are "they"; exhibits little division of labour; is economically independent; is distinctive in the traditionality and coherence of its culture; is consistent in that varied activities express the same generalized meaning; defines given ends of living. Behavior in the folk society is traditional; spontaneous; uncritical; responsible to the particular people and conditions surrounding the individual; highly conventional, limited by custom; personal; patterned by kinship; familialistic, not individualistic. Members of the folk society see the world as sacred, personal and animate".

Although this description is clearly the "ideal", it is certain that there are many groups of people who are perceived as "poor" or "in poverty" by the larger society that cling to such life-styles, despite efforts of the "larger" society to bring them into the North American, and Canadian, mainstream. The work of such well-known anthropologists as

Hallowell, Redfield, Thomas, McNickle, Pope, etc., clearly shows that the popular belief that "folk" life-styles are disappearing, is far from reality. There is a definite persistence in the "folk" world-view, and anyone working on the problems of poverty must recognize the persistence of values which are polar-opposites in many cases, to the values of the "larger" society.

The third group of "poor" people, is much easier for the "larger" society to cope with. These are people who subscribe wholly to the value systems of the decision-makers and general public, but who are unable to "achieve" due to physical, mental, economic, political, or social handicaps. Lewis is also careful to point out that he does not include this group in his "culture of poverty".

At this point, it is appropriate to warn against over-generalizing, or categorizing people. Although we must categorize groups for the sake of clarity, we must remember that almost no living person fits into any one ideal group. In different situations an individual may actually be marginal to any one or all of the groups listed above.

Although we shall discuss the role of social workers and "resource people" at a later stage, it may be noted here that such persons must be prepared to deal with individuals on the basis of such dynamics, and avoid placing people in "slots". We suggest that the tendency to categorize living people within theoretical boundaries is a common phenomenon, and one which leads to many problems.

The Problem of "Ethno-centrism"

Because it is a standard phenomenon of all groups to believe that all people view the world, or should view the world, as the members of that group do, it is not surprising that decision-makers and the general public commonly believe that when they are dealing with "poor" people, they are dealing with members of the third group. Although there are no statistics on this subject, we may safely assume that a very large percentage of Canada's poor belong to the first two groups and must be dealt with differently than those in the third group who have aspirations which are normal for the "larger" society.

Part of the problem in dealing with poverty, has been the "ethno-centric" approach described above, which simply does not work with people who hold different values.

To complicate the problem even more there are individuals in each of these three sub-groups of "poor" people, who have "ma-

t" according to the standards of the general public and decision-makers, and who become readily accessible "spokesmen" for, what is really now, their former group. The anxiety of the "larger" society to "help" these groups leads it to listen to these "spokesmen", with the frequent result that programs are designed which do not really reflect the values of the group being "helped", and therefore are not accepted. It should be added, that the "spokesmen" truly believe they are speaking for the entire group, which, as we have pointed out, they have, in fact departed from by virtue of their having "succeeded", according to the values of the "larger" society.

We have briefly referred to the anxiety of the "larger" society to help other people, who are not regarded as being as fortunate as others in that society. It is unfortunate that these efforts, which are "humanitarian", and well-motivated", according to the standards of the decision-makers and the general public, are so frequently frustrated. Perhaps this is because people who live the "culture of poverty", and people in "folk" groups, so often regard such "help" as interference. Where the "larger" society thinks that it is "natural" to be your brother's keeper", people in the two groups mentioned feel that a person should only be helped when he asks for it, or if there is a personal obligation to help, (based on kinship).

Arising out of that observation is the problem that the values of the "larger" society below the decision-makers and the general public to objectify the problems and the people who they are trying honestly to help. Therefore, it is consistent with the "larger" society's values to objectively define and measure poverty, and go about attempting to solve the "problems" which, of course, are problems to the group that defines them, but not necessarily to the group which allegedly has the problems. In other words, the "larger" society cannot accurately determine by its own standards who is poor and who is not, by virtue of the fact that they do not live the situation.

Objective" and "Subjective" Approaches

We suggest to the Honourable Senators on the Committee, that the above stated facts severely complicate any effort to clearly define poverty. Yet, if we in the "larger" society are going to be effective in dealing with poverty, we should recognize the valid ways of perceiving and coping with any problem.

It has already been suggested that the "larger" society tends to deal with poverty as an objective thing. Through the use of economic measuring devices, such as incomes, type of housing, material possessions of people, types of conveniences they possess, etc., we arrive at an objective definition of poverty. Bromberger (Appendix B) outlines two such objective approaches: the "poverty-line" approach, and the "budget" approach. Anyone living below the standards set out by these approaches, is objectively considered to be "poor", and thus should be helped.

As Cohnstaedt points out (Appendix A), "Conventional definitions of the poor, or poverty, couple the lack of means with a condition of dependence. Dependence is viewed merely as a function of lacking means. The social and psychological consequences are minimized and the provision of adequate assistance is assumed to remove poverty".

Another way of defining poverty, is through subjective criteria. That is, if a person feels poor, he is poor. But, does this properly apply to people who make \$20,000.00 a year, but seem to be unable to acquire all the things they want?

A Working Definition

Cohnstaedt argues:

"No definition of poverty based upon subjective feelings or a governmental index of the cost of living will suffice. Rather it is the social fact of dependence which defines the status of poverty. When society through its government isolates from the "normal" cycle of interaction those people who are unproductive, it restricts behavior as well as consumption. Simmel points out that society defines its own need for assisting those who lack the means of survival as society sees it. It is not the needs of the poor, or their rights, but the need of society to provide assistance which determines that assistance. The result is a condition of dependence."
(4)

If that is correct, we must then agree that poverty cannot easily be identified by urban and rural, regional, ethnic, racial economic, psychological, social, or by any of the other common criteria.

Our definition of poverty, then, taking into consideration the entire discussion up to this point is:

Poverty is a condition of dependence. It is a condition of dependence upon the

resources and the mercies of decision-makers and the general public, and is a social reality which must be subjectively felt, and objectively realized.

We will attempt to deal with poverty from this definition, and attempt to show that any attempt to deal with poverty must take the factors of dependence, subjectivity, and the validity of other world-views, into consideration. We will also attempt to show how the principles of the co-operative movement are adaptable to coping with this concept, and how the co-operative movement may be useful in working with government and other agencies in the fight against poverty.

SUMMARY

In our definition of poverty, we have pointed out that it is a reality which must be subjectively felt and objectively realized. This means that a person or group of persons cannot be called poor, if they themselves do not have the perception of being poor, or disadvantaged, and if others do not simultaneously perceive them as being poor. This definition takes into account, and depends upon, the generally accepted values and perceptions of the "larger" society, which today is generally sensitive to those who do not share the goods and services which are normally "supposed" to be available to all Canadians, (as evidenced by the nature of this Committee). It also takes into account the fact that even though members of the "larger" society may think a person or group of persons is poor, poverty does not become a reality until the people who are allegedly poor also think of themselves in that way.

For example, people for religious or other reasons sometimes choose to live in objective poverty. Although they are, to a degree, dependent, they do not fit our definition of poverty.

SECTION IV

THE CAUSES OF POVERTY

It would be simple to say that dependency is the cause of poverty, and leave it at that—but there are obviously causes for dependency, and it is these causes which we feel must be dealt with in order to reach the roots of the problems associated with poverty.

One of the prime causes of dependency is the way in which the "larger" society distributes its resources.

Distribution of Resources

Robinson (Appendix D) suggests that the "larger" society operates on a "winner take

all" basis. When we combine this suggestion with the earlier mentioned money economy, capital development for profit, and the highly technological nature of our society, we can see how resources quite easily fall into the hands of a few people. The "larger" society is oriented to exploiting as many of the natural and human resources as can be utilized for the smooth operation of that society. It needs these resources to keep its technology operating efficiently, and the fact that it holds high the value of individual "progress" and "initiative", allows for a few people to gain control of great amounts of resources, and subsequently money.

Manpower is needed to exploit the resources, handle the technology, and manage the financial affairs of the people who have control of the resources. Thus, skills of various kinds are rewarded with a share of the resources, or, at least, money derived from the sale and use of the resources. There is, therefore, an inter-dependency between the people who control resources, and the people with the necessary skills, who emerge mainly from the "larger" society, to handle the resources.

A pure dependency arises when people have neither the resources, nor the skills to deal with the resources in the context of the uses defined by the controllers of those resources, and furthermore, are denied use of the resources.

A clear example of this is the case of some Indian and Metis people who are not owners of forest lands, nor are skilled bush workers. They are denied the use of the forest for traditional purposes, and have not developed the skills to participate in its new use. The same applies to the plains.

Distribution of Power

Another major cause of dependency is the way in which power is distributed by the "larger" society.

Power, in this case, can mean anything from the power to make decisions regarding resource use, to economic, social, religious and political forms of power. People who control the resources of a region also control the economy of that region, and to a large extent the political power of the region. Again, government and business engage skilled people (mainly from "larger" society) in interdependent situations to handle that power.

The Creation of dependency

Dependency arises when there are people in the region without the economic or political

cal power to influence the decisions of these people.

The social effect of this, is that the people with the resources and the power tend to make decisions which are compatible with their perceptions and values. If there are people surrounding them who do not share the power or resources, and who do not share the values and perceptions of these powerful people, the powerless become socially as well as economically dependent.

People who are socially and economically dependent, soon become psychologically dependent, in the face of the great powers of the people who are in control. They often develop religious, political, and cultural dependencies as well, being unable to resort to traditional means of relating to the world. They become afraid to "cross" people in power, and thus develop a series of dependencies which give the people with resources and power almost absolute control.

The people who have the resources and power, often fail, quite naturally, to see the effects of their power on the lives of the people who are being controlled, and fail to understand the subjective aspects of the dependencies from the dependent's point of view. Instead of viewing the reactions of the people as symptoms of dependency, members of the "larger" society frequently view these reactions as symptoms of "laziness", or "stupidity".

How Dependency Affects the Three Sub-groups of "Poor" People

If the dependency situation has persisted long enough, it could be that a "culture of poverty", or similar reactions to the world have developed among the powerless people.

This would be a group of people in our first sub-grouping of the "poor". If they regard their situation as "normal", and do not perceive themselves as being poor, then according to our definition, they are not poor. However, this is not to say that they should be ignored. Rather, we should see their situation for what it is—a lack of resources and power created by the people who control these resources and power. If they do perceive themselves as being poor, the cause remains the same, a dependency arising out of a lack of resources and power.

However, we suggest that even though the causes of the situation are the same, the people's own perceptions of their situation are vital in determining the type of action which

should be taken, although this will be discussed later.

In the case of people who have been superimposed upon, or our second sub-group, the dependency problems are different. However, the causes of the dependency are clearly the same. But whether or not the people perceive of themselves as being poor is also important in determining the type of thing that should be done in relation to the group.

If the people fall into our third sub-group, that is, if they share the values of the people in power, then they will undoubtedly consider themselves subjectively poor, and, as we shall see, the problems of caring for them are minimal in comparison with the problems of caring for the other two groups.

SUMMARY

If we are correct, then, poverty is caused by dependence, which in turn is caused by lack of control of resources and power. But, lack of control of resources and power does not necessarily mean that there is poverty. That is dependent on the perception of the people who are lacking resources and power.

It is evident that poverty is an outgrowth of the basically inequalitarian nature of the "larger" North American value system and culture.

SECTION V

THE SYMPTOMS AND EXTENT OF POVERTY

It was, perhaps, not until the issuing of the "Fifth Annual Review" of the Economic Council of Canada, that many Canadians became aware of the extent of poverty in our country.

"Poverty in Canada is real. Its members are not in the thousands but the millions. There is more of it than our society can tolerate, more than our economy can afford and far more than the existing measures and efforts can cope with. Its persistence at a time when the bulk of Canadians enjoy one of the highest standards of living in the world, is a disgrace."

Winnipeg Economist, and now Member of the Manitoba Legislature, Cy Gonick, says this about the extent of poverty:

"If poverty means the denial to some individuals and families of a reasonable share of what science, technology and the general economy have made possible—a middle class style of life in other words—then 80 per cent of the Canadian families are impoverished."

His definition is a departure from our own, but we would certainly suggest that people who are dependent and who lack resources and power in Canada, certainly do not share in abundance those things which are allegedly available to Canadians as a whole. However, we would treat the lack of goods and services as a symptom, rather than an initial causal factor in poverty. However, lack of goods and services may lead to the next generation being poor.

We Measure Poverty by Symptoms

It is symptoms of poverty which, unfortunately, are our only measuring stick for the extent of the problem.

One of the problems inherent in dealing with symptoms, is the frequently held belief that the symptoms are the disease, rather than the signs of the disease. That is why we felt it necessary to emphasize that dependency and its causes are the causes of poverty. How many Canadians are affected by the causes, we can only guess. How many Canadians display the symptoms is also largely guess-work, based on the perceptions, measuring devices, and values of the "larger" society, and ranging from Gonick's 80 per cent, to the Economic Council of Canada's 41 per cent of the population. In any case, by anyone's definition of poverty, it is obviously a massive problem... even when one excludes those who may *objectively* be perceived of as poor, but who *subjectively* do not consider themselves as such.

Bromberger (Appendix B) outlines some of the variables in the problem of perceiving poverty (from an objective viewpoint):

- family size
- the age of the individual or family
- relative aspects in the sense of the adequacy of income levels to meet individual or social needs and aspirations (i.e. a family in Toronto needs more than a family in India)
- purchasing power and price differentials
- clothing and housing styles
- advertised or "constructed" needs
- regional differences within Canada
- urban and rural differences
- the felt needs of people—or the revolution of rising expectations
- ecological factors
- psychological and social values
- so-called "culture of poverty"
- cycle of poverty from generation to generation

Universal Characteristics of Poverty

On top of these, Bromberger lists five characteristics which he calls Universal Characteristics of poverty. That is, if a family displays any one of these characteristics their chances of being poor, by objective standards are much greater than if they do not display them.

Simmonds (Appendix C) has summarized these five characteristics, or factors, and adds others:

The first factor is low education. This is confirmed by the Economic Council of Canada, which shows that 37 per cent of non-farm families are poor, when the breadwinner has no schooling or only elementary education.

A second factor in predicting the likelihood of poverty, is the sex of the individual. Statistics say that 43 per cent of non-farm families with only female breadwinners are poor.

Another thing that makes poverty likely is old age. Of all the non-farm families in Canada headed by people over 65 years of age, 44 per cent are in a state of poverty.

A fourth factor is where a family lives. Over 45 per cent of the people in the Maritimes are poor, but less than 19 per cent of Ontario residents are poor. Saskatchewan has a poverty rate of 35 per cent.

A fifth factor associated with poverty is residence in a rural area. Statistics indicate that 46 per cent of the heads of low-income, non-farm families live in rural areas. That is, centers where the population is less than 1,000. The problem of poverty on farm is a special case, but living on the farm is a sixth factor associated with poverty. From 36-50 per cent of all Saskatchewan farm families are listed as poor.

Another special case, is Indian, Eskimo and Metis families. As a group these are undoubtedly the most economically deprived people in Canada today. Minority groups are definitely a seventh factor in determining the likelihood of poverty. "So, although poverty is found everywhere in Canada, there are definite factors which can increase the likelihood of any given family being poor. If the head of the family has little education, or is female, or is over 65; if the head of the family lives in the Maritimes or Sas

katchewan; if the home is in a small town, or on a farm; or if the family belongs to a minority group, chances are much greater for that family to be poor than well-off.

Add to these factors the problems of the physically and mentally handicapped, add people who don't fit any other factor, but who nevertheless are unemployed or underemployed, add students and apprentices, and we can see that the list of factors associated with poverty is large indeed.

Canadian writer, Ian Adams, warns in the June, 1969 issue of *Chatelaine Magazine* that any two of these factors affecting one family will mean that family is likely to stay poor. There is also the probability that the children will in turn inherit the low standard of living of their parents, replenishing and multiplying the vicious cycle that is poverty."

The statistics are taken from Bromberger Appendix B), who notes that we should view the statistics from the perspective of the number of people who fall into each of the listed categories.

If Bromberger is correct that the universal factors and variables he lists contribute to the chances of a person being in poverty, it is evidence that we are correct in assuming that the cause of poverty is dependency arising from a lack of power and resources, for it is the people who fall into the five categories listed by Bromberger, and the additional groups listed by Simmonds, which most certainly have the least power and the fewest resources in Canada.

The Apparent Increase of Poverty

Using the symptoms we have discussed as measuring sticks, we contend that poverty is on the increase in Canada, both quantitatively and qualitatively.

Quantitatively, we refer back to the quote by Ian Adams which Simmonds used. We may also refer to the rapidly increasing population of Indian and Metis people across Canada, who most frequently are trapped in the cycle of poverty.. at least, as it is objectively measured. We may also refer to the rising cost of living in Canada, which is surely leaving more elderly people and other people on fixed incomes and pensions further behind every year. Other factors, such as increased unemployment are serving to aggravate the problem.

Qualitatively, poverty is increasing mainly due to what Bromberger calls the "revolution of rising expectations". Those items, which a few years ago, were considered luxuries, are today often considered necessities, at least by the people who subscribe to the values of the "larger" society. An inability to obtain these goods and services, which are admittedly often "constructed needs", nevertheless alienates people from resources which are considered essential in our current style of living, and thus, more dependencies are created when people who lack these things must depend on others to provide them.

As more and more people are "converted" to the values of the "larger" society, both the quantitative and qualitative aspects of poverty can be expected to increase, unless something is done about the causes.

SUMMARY

When we look at the symptoms of poverty, or try to measure the extent of the problem, we should be careful to note that we are doing it, and not the people who are allegedly living in poverty. It is important to realize that not all of the people who display the symptoms of poverty are in fact poverty-stricken. They may subjectively term their condition "normal", they may not be part of the "revolution of rising expectations", and they may consider themselves inter-dependent, within the context of their own social situation.

What we are attempting to warn against here, is the danger of taking the generally recognized symptoms of poverty and calling it the disease. We are also trying to warn against mere treatment of the symptoms, without also treating the causes, which were described earlier.

SECTION VI

THE EFFECT OF CURRENT PROGRAMS

The list of programs to "help" the poor is staggering, and in this section of our Brief, we will not attempt to deal specifically with any one of them. Rather, we will confine ourselves to a few general comments, and some specific concepts.

Ian Adams in the June 1969 Edition of *Chatelaine Magazine* (Appendix F) issues a strong attack against current programs, which, he claims, all have built-in devices for failure.

The Need to Examine the Basic Concepts of Programs

While we believe his analysis is excellent, it is not the intention of this Brief to issue strong criticism against existing programs. Rather, we would suggest that programs that are initiated by Federal, Provincial or Municipal governments, and programs which are jointly sponsored, have consistently had the best interests of the people for whom they were designed at their core. We further suggest that all the programs which are currently being proposed (as listed on instructions for preparing briefs to this Committee) have definite merit. What we also suggest, however, is that the underlying philosophy behind such programs results in the weaknesses which are most frequently criticized.

We suggested earlier in this Brief that it is the nature of the decision-makers and general public in the "larger" society to want to "help" people who do not share in the benefits of the "larger" society. We have also suggested that such help is usually predicated upon the values and culture of the "larger" society. Furthermore, the "problems" are perceived within the ability of the "larger" society to measure problems, and are thus attacked from that perception, without necessarily being perceived as problems by the people who allegedly have them. In the previous section of this Brief, we also suggested that symptoms are often attacked, rather than the actual problem or cause of the problem.

What we are trying to suggest here, is that the existing programs for combatting poverty are frequently misunderstood by the recipients of the assistance, and furthermore that such programs often create new dependencies, which, as we have suggested, are the causes of poverty.

The Importance of Research.

We do not suggest that governments are necessarily to blame for this situation. It is, after all, only in the past few years that serious consideration has been given to poverty as a whole problem. It is only in the past few years that significant research has been done on the problems of poverty and its effects in the modern world. Governments and private agencies can hardly be blamed for errors that were committed while working to overcome a serious problem without the benefit of very recent research by people in the social sciences.

The Importance of Communication

Another problem that confronts decision-makers, in the battle against poverty, is the

necessity for the general public to understand what the program is about. If neither group has a clear picture of the problem, and if the poor people are not able to understand the meaning of the program, it is clear that such programs are going to run into difficulty.

The result of all this, is that there is a plethora of programs, yet poverty continues to grow and be a problem. We are hopeful that the deliberations of the Honourable Senators on this Committee, will lead to a series of new approaches which will start to get at the roots of poverty, which can be communicated to the general public, and which will be understood by the people who want and need help.

SUMMARY

We are suggesting here that current programs to fight poverty are not having the desired effect for a number of reasons related to values, culture, economics, etc. We are suggesting that it is only in the past few years that enough information has been made available, and enough research done, to allow decision-makers to take new approaches to the problems, and that any effort to overcome the problems of poverty must necessarily have the co-operation of decision-makers, the general public, and the poor themselves.

SECTION VII

POSSIBLE APPROACHES FOR REMEDIES TO POVERTY

Earlier in this Brief, we noted that there are three groups of people who are involved in the dynamics of poverty: the decision-makers, the general public and the poor themselves. We also noted that there are three sub-groups of poor people; those who have developed a "culture of poverty" approach to the world, due to a constant condition of dependency; those who have had their culture superimposed upon by the "larger" society; and those who accept the value of the "larger" society, but are handicapped from sharing the benefits of that society.

The people in the first two sub-groups of the "poor" require special attention. First, however, we would like to deal with those in the third sub-group, because as we have suggested, their problems are probably in the majority, and there is less difficulty in coping with the values of these people.

The Need to Destroy Harmful Myths

We would suggest that one of the main jobs confronting this Committee, the media, our-

oneselves, and anyone else concerned about the facts of poverty, is the overcoming of misconceptions which surround the problem.

People who do not deal with the problems of poverty, (and some people who do), tend to make value-judgments based on the notion that people are poor because of their own doing. Robinson (Appendix D) helps to explode this myth, at least in connection with the third sub-group of poor people. While similar statistics are not available to us from Canada, here are some facts which she brings forth from American Statistics:

"Perhaps the most prevalent misconception is that slums are full of people on welfare who won't work. At latest report, there were 7,300,000 persons receiving public assistance. Of these, 2,100,000 were 65 years of age or over; 700,000 were blind or otherwise severely handicapped; 3,500,000 were children, 900,000 were mothers of dependent children; 150,000 were fathers, two-thirds of whom were incapacitated. Of the entire 7,300,000 persons, less than 1 percent were capable of acquiring job skills so as to become self-sufficient." (p 11)

It is obvious from this set of statistics that common "middle-class" attitudes are frequently ill-conceived, born of ignorance, and proliferated by people who do not have an adequate grasp of the facts.

If most of the people who are receiving public assistance are handicapped physically, educationally, socially, mentally or in some other way, it is certain that they must become dependent. If they are members of the third sub-group, they would also perceive of themselves as being in poverty and, by our definition, are therefore poor.

The Need For a New Reality

So, in dealing with this third sub-group, it behooves the "larger" society to seek ways of creating an entirely new paradox in the public assistance field. That paradox is one of people who are unable to deal with society on its own terms *being* dependent, without *being* dependent. This is necessary to overcome the psychological and social aspects of poverty. The economic aspects could be overcome simply enough with the mere introduction of greater assistance. But to eliminate the other aspects of poverty, and thus poverty itself, the paradox must be created.

In order to do this, decision-makers and the general public must be convinced that it is

the *right* of a person who is somehow handicapped to share in the benefits of the "larger" society. That means we must stop treating handicapped people as "burdens", or "social misfits", and start treating them as equal and full human beings, and share our resources with them as equals.

The above suggestion may not sound spectacular, because it is already the rhetoric of our society. It is, however, not the way things *in fact* happen. We must find ways and means of turning the rhetoric of society into the reality of society, if we are going to overcome the poverty problems of the third sub-group of poor people... that is, people who share the values of the "larger" society, but are handicapped through sex, age, lack of education, or any of the other characteristics listed by Simmonds (page 23).

The Need for a "Total" Approach

Having said that, let us also remember that not all people who display those characteristics share the values of the "larger" society. These are the people who we have categorized as being in the other two sub-groups of "poor" people, which we'll discuss very soon.

We would suggest, therefore, that a great deal of information be made available to decision-makers and opinion leaders about the facts surrounding the majority of poor people, and that these facts be used to help influence attitudes of the general public. Until there is a consensus about the validity of the existence of people who are in some way handicapped, we will continue to work at treating the symptoms, without removing the cause—dependency which is felt.

Another means of coping with this problem, is recognizing the many kinds of contributions which even the most severely handicapped people can make to society. This calls for a breakdown in the vertical kinds of relationships which have developed, particularly between the "haves" and the "have nots". Again, when all people involved in a situation feel that they are needed, there is a greater feeling of inter-dependency, and less of a feeling of dependency.

Although we have touched on several dimensions of the problems of poverty relating to the third, and largest, sub-group, we should realize that the whole is greater than any of the parts. If we concentrate our efforts on the economic, and ignore the social and psychological aspects, or vice-versa, we do not confront the whole problem. The problem will only be solved when all dimensions are effectively dealt with.

The above statement is particularly true when we consider the other two sub-groups. In the "culture of poverty" sub-group, and in the sub-group of "different" or "folk" cultures, we confront all the symptoms of the previous sub-group, plus cultural and value differences, which cannot be ignored.

Let us deal first with "folk" and "native" groups.

The Need to Recognize Difference as Valid

We stated earlier that all people have a tendency to believe that their way of dealing with the world is the "best" way. There is abundant evidence to show that when two cultures come into contact, many adjustments are necessary. However, when one of the cultures is super-ordinate due to advanced technology, greater numbers, etc., it generally has to make fewer adjustments than the culture which becomes subordinate, due to its greater power.

Another dimension of this culture-contact situation, is the means by which the two cultures respond to one another. In the case of Euro-American contact with Native or "folk" people, the reaction of the second group was mainly to withdraw from a confrontation of values. Native people did not (and there is sufficient evidence to show that, even today, they do not) think of the Euro-American means of dealing with the world as "valid". However as is typical of their culture, they have simply withdrawn as much as possible into their own culture, rather than try to spread it among the Euro-Americans.

The Euro-Americans, on the other hand, because of their predilection for exploitation of resources, and because they also feel that their way of coping with the world is the only "valid" way, have attempted to spread their culture to the "folk" people. Close to 400 years of attempting to bring the Native people into the culture and value system of the "larger" society have been a resounding failure, yet governments, churches, social agencies, and business people persist in the belief that this is possible. At the same time, the super-ordinate Euro-Americans have effectively gained control of all the resources formerly held by Native people, and have forced them into situations of dependency.

Therefore, Native people frequently display all the symptoms of poverty, arising from this dependence, and are treated by governments, etc., in the same way in which people in the previously discussed third sub-group are treated.

What must be realized is that, contrary to popular beliefs, native or "folk" people are trying to maintain the prime elements of their culture, and are succeeding in this attempt. In fact, recent years have shown that they are becoming more conscious of these valid differences, and are attempting to reinforce their cultures.

We suggest, therefore, that the current attempts to bring Natives into the "larger" society will only aggravate the situation. This is not to say that we must "close the doors" because, as we mentioned earlier, there are certainly some individuals who aspire to enter into the "larger" society, and who succeed in that aim when given the opportunity to do so. What we are suggesting is that decision-makers and the general public must recognize the *validity* of "folk" ways of dealing with the world. This means that we must recognize that "folk" people, and particularly aboriginal folk people, must be granted a fair share of the resources which are theirs by virtue of being human beings in Canada, and by further virtue of aboriginal right.

We must recognize that not all people want to be inter-dependent, and no one wants to be dependent. This leaves us the alternative of granting, as a *right*, enough resources to people of "folk" cultures to be relatively independent. It also means withdrawing forms of "interferences" in their lives which they do not wish to have.

We are suggesting here, that if the "larger" society does recognize the validity of "folk" groups, and does grant them the right to enough resources to survive on a relatively independent basis, that, eventually, some very productive inter-dependencies will arise.

In this respect, "*The New Indians*" by Steiner (1967) sums up the kind of thing that the "larger" society might gain from Indians who are regarded as equals:

"The love of life; the love of every thing the joys of nature; the harmony of man with the natural world; the communion brotherhood of tribe; the free spirit of the individual; the loving—not prohibitive—care of children; the larger love of the kinship family; the concept of justice not punishment; the wholeness of man the eternity of the present; the root and identity of the soul—these are some of the things that tribal (sic. "folk") societies might bring to the technological societies in spiritual payment for its material goods and services." (p. 156-7)

Steiner also quotes William Fire Thunder who says, "I believe that the Indian can master the techniques of the Whites, and still remain an Indian".

Thus, we are suggesting that only are Indian and other "folk" cultures persisting in their values, but that these values have some validity for the "larger" society which is currently seeking spiritual values of some kind. We are further suggesting that the overbalance to dependency, which has occurred over the years, can only be overcome by a swing of the pendulum to independency, before productive inter-dependencies can develop.

In order to bring this about, it means that there must be a fair re-distribution of resources. But even before that, there must be a significant change in attitudes about "folk" people in general, and Native people in particular. Again, this will only occur when the decision-makers and opinion leaders re-orient their attitudes, and begin to influence the general public in this regard.

We must learn to allow people to live their lives in the way they see fit under viable circumstances, and not allow our objective judgments to interfere with the subjective realities as perceived by people of other cultures. Again, we would remind the Honourable Senators of our definition of poverty—that poverty must be "subjectively felt" as well as "objectively realized". In brief, if we remove the dependencies that we have created for "folk" people, and replace them with resources, we must then refrain from further interfering in the ways in which they handle those resources. Only in this way will we overcome the problems of poverty in "folk" groups, and eventually gain productive inter-dependencies.

the "Culture of Poverty" Quandary

Finally, we shall deal briefly with the people who appear to live in a "culture of poverty". If the cause of poverty is dependency, we can assume that the cause of this "culture" or, more accurately, we believe, sub-culture, is dependency.

People who are to be identified in the sub-group of "poor" people, are those who have experienced dependency for more than one or two generations. The problem lies directly with resource and power distribution, from which these people have been left out, due to initial "handicaps" of parents or grandparents. In other words they have been caught in the vicious cycle of poverty, and have made it a life-style.

This leaves decision-makers and the general public in a quandry. Can we recognize the validity of this sub-culture or culture, in the same way we recognize the validity of "folk" cultures? If so, we allow the situation to continue. If not, we are going to end up interfering with these people's lives in the same way we did with "folk" people, with potentially disastrous results.

It would seem to us that the only way out of this problem is to concentrate on alternative ways of coping with the environment. That is, we must recognize initially that people in this sub-group feel their way of dealing with the world is the "best" way. Yet, we must present to them, in a *non-judgmental* way, viable alternatives. Robinson (Appendix D) outlines this procedure very well.

"In order to 'reach' these families, a neighborhood worker must become a sort of mediator ('almost like the old ward heelers', says one), a person to be trusted to act as a bridge between the family and the neighborhood service which they have not trusted or understood. Often the worker is accepted only when he has been able to help in a crisis—an unwed teen-age daughter becomes pregnant, a drug addict runs afoul the law, a marijuana party ends in a car crash. Reassured by his *non-judgmental* (emphasis ours) help, people come to him with other problems, and eventually may accept referrals for medical and social services." (p. 14)

What we are suggesting then, in dealing with this sub-group, is the building of bridges between the "larger" society and the "culture of poverty", which involves the utilization of resource people who *accept* the people with whom they are working, and who provide alternative ways of dealing with the world. Such programs should not have time limits, and the "larger" society should not set goals for the worker, or the poor people, to achieve. Instead, we should prepare for a long period of interaction with little or no "results" which can be measured by the "larger" society. It would seem that people in this third sub-group are going to take much longer to come to terms with the "larger" society than any of the sub-groups mentioned.

The Non-Judgmental Approach

It might be noted here, that the notion of a non-judgmental approach to all three sub-groups is particularly valuable in all contact

situations. If people feel they are being judged, or "put-down", their responses will be less than friendly to the worker from the "larger" society. It is clear that all three groups will require some contact with the "larger" society, even if the "folk" groups are given relative independence. If the people with whom they come in contact are non-judgmental, non-interfering, and accept and understand their clients, many of the problems of inter-relationships between the "haves" and "have nots" will disappear.

In a word, we must recognize the *validity* of other people, and *accept* their way of dealing with the world without interfering. This is a truly difficult task for those of us who are imbued with Euro-American standards. It means we must relinquish resources to people and encourage them as a matter of *right* to exercise power over these resources.

An excellent approach to what we are attempting to put forth here, is discussed in length by Cohnstaedt (Appendix A, pages 5-13).

It is obvious that care must be taken in the training of workers and resource people. Besides the normal professional skills, workers must be fully familiar with the attitudes, pressures, and values of both the group with which he is working, and the larger society.

SUMMARY

In discussing approaches to the "cure" of poverty, we have put forth some suggestions which require rather basic changes in our social and economic concepts. Simmonds, (Appendix C) sums it up this way.

"There's a common saying that 'The poor are always with us'. That oft-repeated myth need not be true. The fact of the matter is that poverty is not inevitable—at least not in Canada. It can be eliminated, and all we need is recognition of that fact.

"Another unbelievably common myth is that Canada is a land of scarcity, and more equal distribution of our resources would bring down the standard of living for the majority of people. That belief is about as far from reality as one could get!

We don't have a scarcity in Canada. We have almost unlimited potential for the development of both primary and secondary industries.

Right now, we have a situation in Canada in which the top 20 per cent of the population has a greater income than the

bottom 60 per cent. So, the fact is, that more equal distribution of income would not only benefit more than half the population, but would mean a better life for virtually all Canadians.

What is needed to bring this about is first of all, changes in attitude. We must educate Canadians to the facts, and destroy the myths about poverty and economics. We must develop programs aimed at curing, rather than patching poverty. We must expand educational facilities, and develop universal accessibility to education.

How do we go about making these changes? George Bernard Shaw once wrote, 'The solution to poverty is to eliminate the poor'. To do that in today's world means a major shake-up of the social and economic goals and structures in our society, to provide greater equality of income for Canadian residents. To eliminate the poor, we have to create a greater measure of equality. It's as simple as that.

That means that we must develop mature social and economic planning. It means that we have to stop unchecked exploitation of our resources and our people, and develop programs that meet human need above all else. It means that we have to get rid of a lot of myths, and start looking at realities.

"The Scandinavian countries, for instance, have virtually defeated poverty, and provided for a fair-share of the economic pie to all their citizens. They did so by devising sound economic planning and humanitarian social programs. And if you want the answer to how poverty can be eliminated, that's the only one.

If Canadians have the courage to do this, the rewards can be greater than almost anywhere else in the world. We have the resources to provide an excellent living for many times our present population. The results of needed changes in our economy would mean that almost every Canadian would enjoy a better standard of living. It would mean that welfare spending would turn into an investment rather than go down the drain, as it often does today."

We would add to that, by saying that the changes to be made will not be easy. Robinson (Appendix D) quotes a San Antonio settlement house worker who says, "The need

and demands of the hard core poor have been ignored or neglected for decades. Where earnest work is now going on with them it can be thought of as a sort of limited revolution. Criticism for this work can be expected because the very work points up the community's neglect". (p. 10)

In Canada, the experience of many C.Y.C. workers, who have begun to get close to the roots of the problems of the people they are working with, has been ample demonstration of the type of criticism that can be expected. It is the decision-makers and opinion leaders who must, first of all, accept the fact that poverty is going to be overcome, the boat is going to have to be rocked. (see page 22-23 Robinson). We must accept the fact that people are not about to change, unless they want to change, and unless they are full-fledged participants in the change.

We must bow to the overwhelming evidence that the dependency problems which add to poverty will only be defeated if the "larger" society stops creating the dependencies, and starts creating interdependencies, by encouraging people to have power over their own lives and their own resources, as equal partners in the fight against poverty.

This means that government, private agencies, the general public, and the poor people itself all co-operate in profound new ways of dealing with resources and power.

SECTION VIII

THE ACTUAL AND POTENTIAL ROLE OF CO-OPERATIVES AND CREDIT UNIONS

The excellent Brief to the Honourable Members of this Committee from the Co-operative Union of Canada, Ottawa, presented on February 12th, 1970, outlines much of the work which has been done, and may be done in the future, by co-operatives. However, as the brief suggested, the co-operative movement, like everyone else, has a great deal to learn about poverty. As indicated earlier in the Brief, the Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society is just now beginning to devote special attention to this problem.

Review of Principles—and Practice

The history of both the co-operative and credit union movements, span more than a century.

The first modern co-operative was started at Rochdale, England, by a group of working people in 1844. The principles of co-operatives are:

"one member, one vote, which means that control is spread equally among the membership; open membership, which means that all who can make use of the services are welcome to join; limited return on capital, which means that those who provide the necessary funds receive only a fair return on invested capital; and surplus (profit) returned to the members in the form of patronage dividends, which means that if the members are paying more than is needed to pay for the services performed, the resulting surplus will be returned to them in proportion to the use which each has made of the organization." (page 4, CUC Brief)

Freidrich Wilheml Raiffeisen, Mayor of the small German town of Flammersfeld, founded the first credit union in 1849. Like co-operative principles which have survived since 1844, credit unions have maintained the principles upon which Raiffeisen based the first credit union: First, that only people who belonged to the credit union may borrow from it. Second, that loans will only be made for provident and productive purposes, at low interest. Third, that a man's character is the only important security for his loan. Finally, that all the people in the credit union have a common bond of interest to hold them together.

Credit unions and co-operatives are designed to help people share in the responsibilities and benefits of their own organization, and to help people escape various forms of economic exploitation. However, co-operatives have had only limited success in attracting genuinely poor people.

The main reason for this, we believe, is that poor people have not got enough resources and frequently, not enough information on financial or consumer matters, to take full advantage of co-operative services.

Another reason which we are just beginning to consider, is the fact that the vast majority of people who are co-operators, share the broad range of values which we have earlier described as "the middle-class ethic". Therefore, there are social, cultural, and value barriers which may prevent some of the people in the first and second sub-groups of poverty from joining co-operative organizations, even though they may agree with the basic principles.

The Third Sub-group May Be Served Best

Because co-operatives and credit unions are now geared to serve people with "middle

class" values, it would seem to us that the third sub-group of poor people are those who could best be served by co-operative organizations at this time. This is because they share the same values, and are able to understand fully the current structures and forms of operations of credit unions.

The problems facing members of this sub-group, may be broken down into five main situations, which will be discussed separately. These situations can be helped best by credit unions, if at all.

1. The here and now distress situations: For example a person, or group of persons, who need money to purchase equipment, tools, work clothes, or travel expenses to a distant job.

Although there are no current programs to meet such situations, credit unions could be beneficial through the organization of a "special service fund". Such a fund could be available, in Saskatchewan, at the S.C.C.S., so that a credit union which makes a payment on behalf of the fund can be reimbursed almost immediately. The fund could be financed through contributions from all credit unions, perhaps on a "per-member" basis.

The importance of dealing with "here and now" situations is obvious. It has the advantage of helping a person out of a distressful situation in a hurry. Another advantage, particularly if the fund were in the form of a long-term, low-interest loan, is that it would help create an interdependency between the credit union and poor people. Even if it were an outright "donation", it would show the person in distress that someone cares about his immediate problem.

2. *Intermittent unemployment*: This is a problem which confronts many people who are in trades and skills which are seasonal, or "cyclical", in nature. Such jobs are generally high paying, but long layoffs sometimes exceed the term of unemployment insurance benefits.

Again, credit unions have no definite program to fit this, other than normal savings plans. Perhaps a vigorous money management and consumer education program among credit union members, and the public at large, may encourage high-wage "cyclical" workers to deposit a portion of their pay in a special plan, which would become available to them at the expiry of unemployment insurance benefits, or, at the resumption of work.

The group of people who fall within this second situation, vary greatly in terms of annual income. What we have suggested here,

would be helpful only when the total annual income, including unemployment insurance benefits, would provide an adequate standard of living for the family involved, if it were, more or less, "evenly" distributed throughout the course of a year.

3. *Chronic unemployment*: through disability, lack of education, or other handicaps such as regional problems, etc.

Unfortunately, this problem is beyond the scope of credit unions, as they are currently organized. However, we strongly support any move toward a form of guaranteed annual income. (See Recommendation 1, this Brief.) We also suggest stronger welfare measures which do not "punish" those who "move ahead"; strong fair-employment legislation; and more public education.

People who are chronically unemployed, and who fit into the third sub-group of the poor, that is, people who share "middle-class" values, must be helped as effectively as possible to escape the "trap" of poverty. Poverty is often passed on from generation to generation, and may lead to the "culture of poverty" situation.

Credit unions have been effective in parts of the United States, when they have been specifically designed for poor people. (Appendix F). Such a program, however, should be part of an overall approach to poverty, as we contend that poverty must be treated as a whole. In this connection, credit unions are prepared to work in concert with any government program which will deal with poverty on a whole basis. A program of credit unions for "the poor" would require seed capital and continuing funds or management, which may, in part at least, have to come from government sources, as in the United States. Credit unions could supply technical information, advice, training and consumer information. More affluent credit unions, and other organizations, may wish to invest in such "low income" credit unions, to supplement government resources.

4. *Minimum and Low Wage situations, and situations of adequate wages where money mismanagement and bad spending habits prevail.*

Again this is a situation where credit unions could be more useful in terms of consumer education and money management advice. However, this is not the only answer. We strongly support legislative restraint on credit sales; misleading and unethical advertising by financial institutions particularly finance companies; and restraints on other

forms of advertising and "trick" pricing. Because poor people frequently lack "sophistication", they are the people who are most often victimized, by outrageous prices, high interest rates, and shoddy merchandise.

In this connection, we wish to commend the Saskatchewan Government for taking measures to provide a "cooling-off" period for people who have been victimized by high-pressure salesmen. We would encourage much more legislation of the "consumer protection" type.

5. *Voluntary poverty for religious or personal reasons:* This is a situation in which a person gives up "worldly" goods for spiritual or other reasons.

People who are in this situation have usually made a *conscious choice* to remain poor. We only suggest that this is a right, and that such people should not be interfered with beyond the dependency arrangements upon which they currently subsist.

Included in this group of people is a large number of young people who are moving into communes, travelling, or working at subsistence jobs, as a matter of choice. Although such people challenge many of the standards of the "larger" community, and sometimes create "problems" in terms of shelter, health and food, it would appear to us that they, like others in voluntary poverty, should not be unduly interfered with.

It should be remembered that the five situations we have discussed have related primarily to people in the third sub-group of poverty—those who adhere to "middle-class" standards.

What is Now Being Done

While this is the group that could probably be helped the most by credit unions and co-operatives, because no value-barriers exist, we must frankly admit that we have not fully explored these potential means of helping. That is not to say, however, that the co-operative and credit union movements have not been helpful. Indeed, quite the contrary, particularly in the second and fourth situations described above.

Credit unions are engaged daily in counselling the intermittently unemployed, and those on a low wage and bad management situations. They are particularly helpful in budgeting matters, and in matters of providing loans to help people get out of financial "jams".

As part of this, credit unions frequently make members save, even small amounts of money, as a condition for a loan. We feel this

is a practice which encourages sound money management by the individual, while at the same time providing him with a reserve, in case of emergency.

Another thing that credit unions have done, is provide credit on the basis of character. Although, like all financial institutions, credit unions look for collateral, there are a large number of "unsecured" notes issued by most credit unions. In this way, credit unions have helped prevent many "marginally-poor" people from slipping over the brink into poverty.

As can be seen by the suggestions listed above, we must concede that there is much more that credit unions could do. We feel that all these suggestions would have a greater chance of succeeding, if they were part of an overall approach to poverty, rather than the efforts of a single organization. In this respect, we particularly need the help and co-operation of government agencies.

In terms of co-operatives, we will briefly mention that the recent founding of direct-chance consumer co-operatives, such as that in "Lower Town" Ottawa, described in the CUC brief, may be of some help. "Co-oprix", in Montreal, is another experiment which should be carefully considered. Again, however, there are people who are in such poverty that they are even unable to take advantage of these organizations, and something even more effective must be found.

The Potential of Housing Co-operatives

Co-operative housing has much to contribute to any comprehensive program directed to the elimination of poverty.

This form of home ownership is capable of providing far more than the mere four walls of a structural home. It can provide completely new communities, in which a sense of belonging prevails, and where neighbors set policy and control neighborhood environment.

Though in Canada they are few in number, there are many such communities in other countries. They often include such self-administered facilities as playgrounds, nursery schools, community meeting rooms, stores and credit unions. Within their communities they engage in many cultural and educational programs. Thus the residents are involved in an important exercise in personal development.

There are numerous instances in the Saskatchewan north where co-operatives have assisted the poverty-stricken to attain independence. These results were achieved by

other types of co-operative activity. Co-operative housing has equal capacity for contributing to the development of the individual.

Investment in housing is the largest single capital requirement of any family. Such investment by a landlord is made in his interests as an entrepreneur. It is suggested that the maximum effort should be made to direct housing investment to the best interests of the disadvantaged as consumers. Co-operative housing offers the maximum economic and social benefits for such investment, and should have a more prominent place in national housing programs and policy.

It is reported that under a federal housing program United States co-operatives solve housing problems of even the lowest-income groups within a framework of personal responsibility. The possible benefits of a similar program for Canadians warrant the most carefully considered and vigorously pursued government-co-operative collaboration.

To speak of co-operative housing without mention of its non-inflationary character does not do justice to its potential. Because co-operative housing is under the control of the residents, occupancy costs do not rise with interest rates or because of the desire of a landlord to maximize financial returns. Except for changes in taxes, insurance or other expenses beyond their control, the members of the Willow Park Housing Co-operative in Winnipeg have kept their monthly occupancy costs at the same level as when the housing was built five years ago. Their 200 units can have little influence on the Winnipeg housing market. In many European cities, where the consumer-owned housing is as much as a third of the total, the stabilizing influence on the individual's cost of shelter is substantial.

Earlier in this brief we said that through the application of sound economic planning and humanitarian social programs, the Scandinavian countries have virtually defeated poverty. Co-operative housing, developed under sound government programs, has made a tremendous contribution to this Scandinavian situation.

Co-operative housing can contribute much to the improvement of our environment. It warrants extensive government support.

How Co-operatives and Credit Unions May Help The First and Second Sub-groups

Up to this point, we have been concerning ourselves, mainly, with problems of the poor who share the values of the "larger" society,

although, many of the suggestions could well apply to the situation of people in the other two sub-groups of the poor—the "folk" poor and those who live the "culture of poverty".

In particular, we would like to refer to the need for help in the "here and now" distress situations. Because people in these two sub-groups have a general orientation to the "eternity of the present", they are frequently frustrated when they confront delays in the functioning or financing of projects. This frustration can lead to discouragement, and when people see delays arising, they may abandon a very viable self-help project in a surprisingly short period of time. Thus, when funds or equipment are finally made available, most of the people have either forgotten about, or are no longer enthusiastic about the project.

It would seem to us, then, that any "special service fund" which is established by credit unions, could also be geared to deal with financing projects by these groups, as well as projects of people in the third sub-group. Again, this is an area where co-operation with government agencies would be helpful.

The CUC Brief to this Committee, deals with work that has already been done with Native people, or members of the "folk" sub-group. However, they point out :

"Significant development has only taken place when the government, within whose jurisdiction the welfare of the group fell, established development programs, and made resources available to assist the people involved to set-up and operate co-operative activities." (page 7, CUC Brief)

This would seem to indicate support for the importance we have stressed on a total approach, in which co-operatives and credit unions would only be a part. The example of the Saskatchewan Fish Marketing Service and Saskatchewan Government Trading which are outlined in the CUC Brief, are examples of how such co-operation can succeed. We can safely state that co-operatives of various kinds have proved to be of immeasurable social, as well as economic, benefit to many Northern Saskatchewan Native communities.

The examples of the Saskatchewan Fish Marketing Service, and Saskatchewan Government Trading, being turned over to the people on a co-operative basis, is an example of the move from dependency to independence, which we have earlier suggested in con-

nection with "folk" groups. Over the years, the independency has developed into productive economic, and to a degree, social interdependencies.

We Must Work With Our Own Members

Besides the things which co-operatives and credit unions have done, and the things which we have already suggested as being possible, given current structures, we are aware that co-operative groups must explore further potentials.

For example, because most of our members are "middle class", and because of the misconceptions about poverty commonly found among people who adhere to those values, we should communicate more facts to our members about poverty.

A start in this direction was made earlier this year by our organization. A series of eight five-minute broadcasts on "Poverty in Canada", (Appendix C) was broadcast over fourteen Saskatchewan radio stations. The series has been reprinted, in the form you see in Appendix C, and over 10,000 copies have been distributed to Saskatchewan credit unions. The pamphlet is one of six, mainly about current social issues, which form the subject material of an essay contest being sponsored by our group. We hope, through this, to promote some thinking among credit union members and others, on this very important subject.

Other means should probably be explored, in order to inform not only our own members, but the general public, of the concern co-operatives and credit unions share with others about this question.

We further suggest that governments embark on similar programs of information about poverty.

Like all other "middle-class" organizations, co-operatives and credit unions must co-operate with governments in helping the rhetoric of our society become reality.

This means that we must not fall into the trap of making decisions for others. We, like others, must recognize the validity of different ways of dealing with situations, and refrain from interfering in programs which are being run by others—particularly in the case of "folk" and "culture of poverty" groups. It should be noted here, that the underlying philosophy of the co-operative and credit union movements fits well with this philosophy of lack of interference.

How Our Practice Fits Suggestions In This Brief

Each credit union and co-operative is free to operate according to local conditions and needs, and power lies in the hands of the people who are members. We realize, at least in our rhetoric, that people's own perceptions of how things should be handled is vital to the success of their own organizations.

This leads us to the "new" paradox, which as we suggested earlier, should arise. That is the paradox of being dependent, without feeling dependent.

In the current times of economic hardship in Saskatchewan, many credit unions have faced financial difficulty. However, all credit unions in the province belong to Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society, and are owners of and contributors to the Society. Therefore, there is an organization which is able to equitably distribute funds to those credit unions which need it most...an organization which is owned by those credit unions. Sort of a credit union for credit unions. Because of this situation, credit unions which have faced hardship have been able to gain necessary resources from fellow members on an interdependent, rather than dependent basis.

Another way of looking at this, is that we feel that all our members have a right to the resources which are available to us.

The extrapolation of this philosophy, and practice, in terms of our earlier discussion, is obvious.

A Future Possibility

Finally, it may become necessary for co-operatives and credit unions to become directly involved in the process of "social-animation", which has been the basis for so much successful community development work in recent years. We see particular value in this approach when working with the "folk" and "culture of poverty" sub-groups of the poor.

In this respect, it would be most helpful to have government programs with which such workers could associate on a complimentary, or supplementary, basis.

Like government organizations which use these techniques, in order to engage in such a program, co-operatives and credit unions would have to carefully select non-judgemental, non-interfering workers. Such workers, in our case, would be concerned about co-operation as one tool for coping with broader

issues. Like others, we would have to be prepared for long periods of time, with little, or no, visible results, and refrain from a "goal-orientation" for such workers.

Although we have not ourselves gone into detail on a potential program of this nature, we can see it as one way of helping people become aware of co-operative principles, and helping them overcome the misery of poverty.

SUMMARY

In our discussion, we have attempted to show how co-operatives of various kinds are able to practise the principles laid down in earlier chapters of this Brief.

The CUC Brief to this Committee, states in part:

"...perhaps the greatest contribution that co-operatives make is that they provide a basis for people to study their own problems, and involves them in decisions that affect them. It is essential that people be able to face their problems with dignity and confidence." (page 10, CUC Brief)

While we freely admit that co-operatives and credit unions have not done all the things they are capable of doing, even at this time, we suggest that the experience and philosophy of these two movements are instructive in tackling the problems of poverty.

We feel that the philosophies of these two movements lend themselves well to concepts we suggested earlier concerning resource distribution, validity of different approaches, and the removal of dependencies. On the other hand, we will be the first to concede that our practices have not always lived up to our philosophies, but we are seeking means of overcoming that problem.

In this respect, we believe that co-operatives and credit unions can be most effective as part of a total poverty program, in concert with government and other agencies. We feel that it is the causes, rather than the symptoms, of poverty which must be attacked.

To a large extent, what we are talking about, throughout this Brief, is "Applied Christianity"...putting into practices the principles upon which Canada is based.

SECTION IX

SPECIFIC RECOMMENDATIONS

1. We suggest to the Honourable Senators of the Committee that the first step in combating poverty is to assure that every individual in Canada is able to maintain a

decent standard of living. People cannot deal with other issues when they must worry from day to day about the essentials of staying alive. Although we do not feel that money alone will solve the problems of poor people, we believe that a guaranteed annual income is a starting point. Negative income tax (Appendix G) may be one means worth considering.

Therefore, WE RECOMMEND: That some form of guaranteed annual income be introduced as soon as possible, as a means of providing the necessary basic standard of living. We also suggest more stringent credit sales, interest rate, advertising and consumer protection laws, in order to help people protect their incomes.

2. After the essentials are taken care of, people can then spend time and effort on overcoming the problems which they perceive themselves as facing.

In principle, we support all the measures suggested on page five of The Guide for Submission of Briefs to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty. However, we are abundantly aware of the dangers of these programs creating further dependencies, and therefore further *de facto* poverty.

Therefore, WE RECOMMEND: That the various levels of government, private agencies, and others involved in working on the problems of poverty place first priority on simultaneously involving poor people in any and all decisions which are made, and at the same time educating the public about the facts of poverty, in order to gain acceptance for new programs.

3. Because the principle of co-operation assume that people are capable of controlling their own affairs, and because consumer co-operatives and credit unions are means by which people can control and have power over their own resources, we are willing to co-operate with any government agency or agencies in the process of attacking as a whole the problems of poverty.

That is, we feel that the concepts of co-operatives and credit unions are economic avenues which could be followed in concert with social, political, cultural, and other avenues of helping people escape the problems of poverty. We are therefore willing to offer manpower and educational resources to any total program of overcoming problems of poverty.

Therefore, WE RECOMMEND: That governments, co-operatives, credit unions, the general public, and poor people work in con-

cert to devise ways of overcoming poverty, and to devise means of getting resources and powers into the hands of people who currently lack these, and who now are caught in dependency syndromes.

4. In connection with the above recommendations, WE RECOMMEND: That those co-operatives and credit unions which are now being started in economically disadvantaged communities be provided with government seed-capital, and even continuing assistance with management costs, until the total problems of the community have been overcome. However, we also would warn about over-involvement by government, as outlined in recommendation 4, page 17, "Brief to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty, presented by Co-operative Union of Canada, Ottawa, February 12, 1970." Also, see Appendix E.

5. WE FURTHER RECOMMEND: That the government, opinion leaders, organizations both public and private), and the entire general public including poor people, engage in a process of developing social and economic planning which will assure a more equalitarian society in Canada.

SECTION X CONCLUSIONS

In considering the question of poverty, and problems related to poverty, we recognize that it is a genuine problem affecting large numbers of Canadians. We also recognize that lack of consensus about the meaning of poverty, and its causes, has resulted in the development of many programs aimed at the treatment of symptoms, rather than causes.

Because we believe that poverty is, itself, a symptom of dependency, we conclude that the principle of self-help must become a reality, before the roots of poverty can be removed. That means people must be free to act upon their own choices. The job of the "larger" society is to see that such people are able to obtain a fair share of the power and resources of Canada, which are (or should be) theirs by simple virtue of their being human beings in Canada.

To avoid interfering in the decision-making process, and at the same time, be on hand to co-operate with poor people, and provide

resources, while they make decisions, is a difficult task for any individual or organization which has the values of the "larger" society.

To abandon our anxiety to "help" people, and to allow them to devise ways of helping themselves, while at the same time, not making judgments about their decisions which will affect their power to carry them out, is a task which will call for great forbearance in the future.

Yet, these are things which must be done. We must wait to be asked. We must refrain from using our power to interfere or impose super-structures. We must support things that do not seem "normal" or "viable", in order to let people who have suffered the effects of dependencies, learn the processes of independency and interdependency, and thereby truly gain power over their own lives.

We firmly believe there are many *valid* ways of attacking problems, but that the most *effective* way can be found by the people who confront problems on a personal basis.

In this respect, we contend that the principles of co-operation, found in the co-operative and credit union movements, can be most valuable. Co-operatives, of various kinds, have succeeded in moving people from dependency to interdependency through the application of these principles, which include the self-determination of the group involved.

We believe that co-operatives and credit unions can form a valuable part of a total approach to poverty, and to this end we will co-operate fully with any government or private agency.

Although we have generalized throughout most of this Brief, we will be happy to discuss specific situations with The Honourable Senators of this Committee, in order to support the arguments we have put forth.

All of which is Respectfully Submitted,

Harold Braaten, President

Eldon Anderson, Secretary

Saskatchewan Co-operative Credit Society
Limited,
2625 Victoria Avenue, Regina, Saskatchewan.

APPENDIX "B"

BRIEF
presented
by
Elmer Laird
Davidson, Sask.

Introduction

Poverty—what is it? It is very difficult to define. Most people will tell you that it is described by your income in terms of dollars and cents. If they were to go further, they would relate it to the type of food, clothing and shelter that income would provide for you in a particular environment. In Canada, the term applies usually to whether you live in the country or city, whether it is extremely cold where you live or has other environmental factors that should be considered. Sometimes it also relates to your opportunity for education and health.

In some areas of the world, poverty is thought of strictly in terms of food for day to day survival. Perhaps this is because some areas of the world have climatic conditions that do not require very much clothing and shelter. However, if one is attempting to evaluate poverty, the particular environment one lives in must be considered and also the individual's access to food and if the quality of food provides a diet that will provide a reasonable standard of health.

If an individual or family does not have sufficient income to provide a standard of food, clothing and shelter that is considered necessary for survival in a certain environment, then they are considered to have an income below the poverty level.

Many people have an income below the poverty level for short periods of time which I do not consider is poverty.

Students, for example, may live below the poverty level while receiving an education but they are hopeful they will have a suitable income when they have finished their formal education and they never consider they are in a state of poverty. Poverty only exists when parents cannot provide a suitable income for their family to survive in a certain environment and are not able to find ways and means to increase that income in the foreseeable future. It appears to me that poverty is a

frame of mind of the individual or the family as a result of their inability to provide a necessary income to survive in their environment for lengthy periods of time. (Environment includes food, clothing, shelter, transportation, education, recreation of a given community where one lives.

Housing

The condition and type of house or dwelling is probably the greatest single factor in determining conditions of poverty. In Canada we have never had a rural housing program and this is one of the main reasons, in my opinion, that large numbers of rural people have migrated to the cities causing terrific problems for city administrators to provide streets, sidewalks and other utilities to say nothing about the problem of housing itself which, in the last number of years, has been the responsibility of the federal government mostly with the provinces contributing to low-income housing.

Now we have a Federal Task Force on agriculture that says two-thirds of the farmers must leave the farms. This will further compound problems for city administrators and the federal housing authorities. It is going to mean abandoning many of the roads, telephone and power lines, schools and other utilities that have been developed in the last sixty or seventy years. It's too bad when rural Canada has become a pleasant and unpolluted place to live where we can enjoy all the comforts of city dwellers.

Technology Contributes to Poverty

In other cultures of the world today, and in our own past, old age brought forth great rewards in terms of community recognition. Aged citizens were looked to for advice as a result of their experience and knowledge acquired over many years of living. In our culture today, technology in the skills of making a living is changing so rapidly that the young people have to find their own way and there is very little the older people can advise them about. In other words, technology has made our older citizens obsolete with a few exceptions. Deep down everyone wants to feel useful, needed or wanted or a combination of these three and our aged citizens find it very difficult to satisfy any of these needs.

Our senior citizens, in the main, are housed in comfortable homes but how do they satisfy their innermost needs? How much are they suffering from mental and emotional poverty?

Medicine is contributing to longer physical life but many of our older citizens are faced with the problem of senility and very little is being accomplished to cope with senility, a condition that greatly restricts the opportunity to enjoy living.

Unsharing Attitude Peculiar about People on Welfare

In North American Indian culture, which was replaced by "white man's culture", the warrior took great pride in his ability to hunt and provide food. He was quite prepared to share his game with the more unfortunate who were unable to hunt as well as himself. To have the status as an outstanding hunter seemed to satisfy his personal needs. Then when he was too old to hunt, he knew that some other good hunter would share his game with him.

Today, there appears in the public press ever so often, a statement by someone who says that "people who have over three children should be sterilized, if they are on welfare". In many cases, a person with a large family can get more on welfare than they can if they worked. In my opinion, this is a case of income distribution and it is obvious someone is getting too much income so there is not enough left for others. We are on an efficiency binge, yet we don't seem to be able to find ways and means to subsidize half an income. Perhaps this is because we attempt to evaluate everything in terms of money requirements.

Surplus Food Distribution

In rural Canada today and in many of the urban areas of Canada, before the age of "housing development", poor families lived beside wealthier families where there was a sharing of food, labor and many other things. Today, with the development of technology, we have not learned to share our surplus commodities.

Last winter, the National Farmers Union started a Food Aid Program. They acquired ledges for one hundred thousand bushels of grain, mostly wheat, which they hoped to have ground into flour and distributed to needy families.

The Metis Indian Association of Saskatchewan applied for assistance for some of their people in northern Saskatchewan who were starving. (There has been considerable con-

trovery whether they were really starving or not but there is ample evidence that they certainly needed help.) The National Farmers Union made available ten thousand bushels of wheat to the Indian Metis Association. The Indian Metis Association applied to the Canadian Wheat Board for a permit to have the wheat milled into flour and they were never issued a permit, so the wheat surplus was never used.

Saskatchewan farmers had donated the wheat because they didn't have any hope of selling it for several years. A lot of the wheat was piled on the ground and would spoil if something wasn't done about storing it in better facilities. The farmers were hard pressed for cash and did not want to go into debt further for storage facilities. Some farmers pledged as much as a thousand bushels. The people who needed the wheat for flour were in the same province, in the same country, from one to five hundred miles away.

Last winter, Agriculture Minister Bud Olson, reduced the milk subsidy to dairy farmers in an effort to reduce milk production. The government wanted to reduce its vast surpluses of powdered milk. It decided to cut back on the subsidy rather than distribute the surplus milk powder to needy people in its own country and while all this was going on, Borden's of Canada were importing powdered milk from Ireland.

Every year, there is a surplus of fresh fruit in eastern and western Canada, unless it is destroyed by nature. Any time I have been in Ontario, Quebec or British Columbia in late September or early October, great quantities of apples are rotting on the ground.

A few years ago, we have a huge surplus of pork, some of it was distributed to low income families. It appears we may have another surplus of pork in the near future.

Due to weather conditions, economic and political factors, we will continue to have a surplus or shortage in every area of the world every year. Rarely will there ever be a perfect balance between production and demand in any given area. We also have an increasing number of unemployed people in Canada every year; we have food surpluses rotting on the ground; we have the government paying storage on other surpluses and we have hungry people in a country whose living standard is one of the highest in the world. I think a step in the right direction would be to start thinking in terms of people and their needs, rather than converting everything to dollars and cents. Dollars and cents are useful

for government statistics and budgets but are not always palatable to people who are hopeful of making a contribution to society as well as receiving some of the benefits from it.

Sharing Technology with Other Nations

In December 1964, I was sent by Canada External Aid Office to Ghana and Nigeria to "see what practical farmers might contribute to agricultural development in these nations during our winter months". I discovered that they couldn't do much during the winter but they were needed on a full-time basis, if we were ever going to share our agriculture technology with developing nations. In 1967-68 and 69, the National Farmers Union, in their annual brief to the government of Canada, offered to assist the Canadian International Development Agency to recruit and organize a contingent of practical farmers to assist developing nations introduce technology into agricultural production. There has been no response to date. Our External Aid budget is between three and four hundred million dollars annually and apparently going up, but only one farmer has ever been employed by C.I.D.A., at a grass roots level on an agricultural project.

I think it is obvious that North America has vast food surpluses as a result of applying technology to food production and this is true of many other countries.

I should also point out that cotton is grown on the land and is very important in providing clothing where labor is cheap and they don't have technology to use substitute synthetics.

Only farmers have the necessary skills to apply agricultural technology in these nations and our C.I.D.A. is not using any farmers in their program.

International Famine Reported by 1985

Many sources report there will be an international famine by 1985, only fifteen short years away. We are also faced with the additional problem of producing food without the use of many of the drugs in livestock and poultry production and chemicals that are used in cereal grain production which we have been using because of "pollution", or at least until other suitable chemical substitutes are found. Ever increasing populations are going to require more food.

Recommendations to Combat Poverty

1. We must think of all the needs of human beings in the environment that they live in.
2. The Canadian Government should start a rural housing program which would encourage more people to stay on the farms and in rural communities and eliminate rural slums.
3. Ways and means must be found to distribute food surpluses to low income families at home and abroad.
4. Agricultural technology must be shared with people of other nations to help recognize that Canadian farmers have the necessary skills to share this Agricultural technology with other countries.

APPENDIX "C"

BRIEF

Respectfully submitted by
W. Joe McKeown, Chairman, Regina Renters
Council

The writer extends appreciation for the opportunity of presenting views on poverty. The content of this submission will deal with some of the not so obvious aspects of poverty.

In attempting to arrive at any sort of a meaningful disclosure of the poverty problem one must rely on facts, figures and statistics. In this brief, there will be no reference to facts and figures since no doubt they are now common knowledge to the Committee members. Generally speaking, however, one could foresee a dialogue in contradictions evolving from a serious discussion of poverty. Deep differences of opinion will cause polarization of people's opinions at two opposite extremes, and solutions for the complex nature of poverty. The people directly feeling and suffering the varied complex aspects of poverty will constitute one pole while at the other will be the people who only know poverty by the dictionary definition, and are involved to the degree of paying simple lip-service to poverty.

Poverty has no simple scale of defineable dimensions. It is somewhat challenging, therefore, to pick poverty out of our rather complex way of life, isolate it and deal with it as a neat concise defineable entity.

In order for me to place my points in proper perspective, I choose to make a few rather blanket generalizations on the Canadian way of life. For the sake of time and space, I also choose to leave out appropriate justifying arguments in support of these generalizations.

I respectfully submit, that in order to arrive at a useful and meaningful conclusion regarding poverty, reference must be made to the basic economic make-up of our Canadian society. In short, we must critically analyse and evaluate the objectives and operations of the private or free enterprise pursuit of life. I submit that it will be within such an evaluation, that we will find the true nature of poverty.

The dominant motivating factor in our way of life is pursuit of profit. The private sector,

since its inception in Canada coinciding with the discovery of Canada as a colony, has made great strides in firmly establishing itself in our society. A whole set of values and concepts of freedom, truth, justice, initiative and incentive have been detailed into volumes of books, roles of film and the press and news media, in defence of the profit system. The profit system of values has been translated to and plays a dominant role in our interpretation of sex, culture, recreation, food, clothing, shelter and education. These profit system values are instilled in people from the time they learn to read and write. In short we live and die by the profit system. An anonymous and ominous propaganda machine has evolved in defence of the profit system.

I submit to you as a working man. Working people, for rather obvious reasons, make up the vast bulk of our population, and happen to be the basic fundamental, lowest common denominator, economically, from which flourishes poverty. Working people not only generate the poverty of our country, but once generated escalates the rate of poverty and perpetuates it virtually in perpetuity.

Working people, by definition, work for someone else. Working people possess what is called—the ability to do work, that is labor-power. This labor-power is indeed a valuable commodity, which working people then sell to an employer for wages or salary. Herein, I submit with respect, lay the cancerous, degenerating and totally decaying feature of the commodity profit system. Herein lay the key ingredients contributing to poverty. Because working people get paid for their 'ability to work' and not for the product of their work, the private profit system lays the basis for the totally inequitable economic imbalance in society.

Those who own and possess control over the machinery, the factories and the natural resources, in other words, the wealth of Canada, are able to maintain and indeed increase their level of existence, simply because working people, who are paid wages for their ability to work, must work for wages, and in so doing provide the continuing and increasing wealth for the owners.

The total wealth of our country is now channelled and controlled by the various

financial institutions who operate from the apex of our economic system. Through diversification we have an impenetrable network of directorships, whereby the banks, insurance, assurance and trust companies have become actively involved with the major resource developing corporations to direct and control the economic development of our country.

This brief survey of our economic system is not intended to be a derogatory downgrading of our present economic system, however, it is fair to point out that the benefactors of the system spend large sums of money in protecting their privileged position, and making the system more tolerable to the people. It is also fair to point out that the solutions to poverty lie diametrically opposed to the operations of free enterprise pursuit of life.

Governments at all levels sell on behalf of the people the land, forests, mineral rights, in short, the countries wealth to the private sector, who in turn supposedly supply the nation's jobs. The private sector uses the working people at minimum wages, which are scaled and based upon their ability to work, in pursuit of profits. Free enterprise governments make laws to protect business. Laws are generally not made for working people. Working people are the tools of the system and as such serve the system. The private sector uses the system and as such is served by the system.

Working people are continuously confronted with the double-standards in existence in our way of life. Business or the private sector can make use of and benefit by initiative and individual incentives. Indeed this is often cited as the reason why business makes money. In the working man's world, for all intents and purposes initiative and personal incentive is frowned upon, particularly if it means demanding fair remuneration.

Working people are naively programmed to cut corners when it comes to making the dollar stretch. Working people are able to buy the cheaper foods and clothing yet are totally unable to have a say in what rent they must pay for a roof over their head. Many instances have come to my attention in Regina, where one third of the yearly rent paid by tenants in new complexes, goes toward servicing the debt contracted by the landlord on his property. The irony of it all is that individual tenants are not allowed to contract a house of their own, because of inadequate income, yet wholly foot the bill for the landlord.

Service clubs in general perpetuate a level of poverty. Service clubs, whose members are generally the more affluent of our country do provide much needed services, however, it is the working people who are called upon to contribute. Service clubs do represent the private sector. They rely on contributions from the people and the vast majority of these people are working people which in Regina represent those who live on so-called poverty level income.

Most public programs, initiated by governments over the years, and paid for out of the public purse have been used to buffer the more ugly side of poverty. Again it is the working people, being in the majority, who are called upon to pay the lion's share of these programs. In a country as wealthy as ours there is a very thin line of distinction between working people and the poverty level as far as income and means are concerned.

In Regina, as with most municipal governments, I suppose we find our municipal councillors perpetuating a degree of poverty. As I pointed out, our population contains great numbers of working people. To be most specific, last year a plebiscite was put to the electors on the question of whether the rate payers should pay for the widening of Albert Street. Albert Street happens to be a major part of what I call the provincial highway network. This work rightfully should be paid for out of the provincial coffers as part of the provincial highway expenditures, and not assessed to the ratepayers. This is naturally a question of discretion as to what work is done and how such work is to be paid for. The point I am making is this. Since a very important link in provincial highway networks happen to be through cities, the responsibility for its upkeep should not terminate at the city's boundaries. The provincial government derives a far more equitable share of money for such purposes than does a financially strapped municipality, whose main source of money comes from the ratepayers in the form of property taxation. Yes, it could be argued that this is a voter's choice and is done democratically, however I respectfully submit to you that this is not the case, in fact it is the business interests who control and manipulate municipal elections. Business interests do determine what municipal work is done, and specifically see to it that much of the servicing costs are taken from the public purse. There is a highly contentious issue in Regina at the moment. This is the problem of rail line relocation. Present municipal coun

cillors are determined to see to it that this much needed work must be done at a cost to the ratepayers. This type of cost, as with the cost of the Albert Street widening is done at a nine per cent interest rate level over a period of years, which then commits ratepayers to millions of dollars in interest payments. The point of my whole argument is this. Municipal essence are minority elected councils, since it is only on rare occasions do we have a 50 per cent turn out of the voters.

It is at the municipal level of government where staggering sums of money is collected through property taxation to pay for education, to pay for health costs, to pay for welfare costs and to pay for the administration of justice. There is no relationship whatsoever between property taxation and education costs, welfare costs, health costs and yet ratepayers are straddled in perpetuity with a staggering debt load.

Perhaps the blame can rightfully be placed at the door-steps of the electors, however, I submit to you that that is not the total answer. We live in a business oriented society. The rules and laws are already made to serve efficiently, a business run operation. What is needed is a new set of values. It is a new game in the seventies. We need a new set of rules and laws to handle our sophisticated way of life.

Poverty, in summation then, is being a working man. Poverty is being caught up in an antiquated inequitable tax structure. Poverty is having to find two sources of income for a family, just in order to be able to make ends meet. Poverty results when a home in pursuit of the mighty dollar, suffers the loss of intangibles such as love, security, trust and affection simply because we tend to get caught up in the dollar chase, and have no time or energy for recreation and family upbringing. Poverty is being on welfare and in the ranks of the unemployed.

Governments have attempted to stop the cancerous economic runaway of our economy with stop-gap, patch-work methods. Such methods have proven to be a burden on working people and serve only as a detriment to the goals and aspirations of all people. Society must take exception to planned unemployment, uncontrolled inflated prices for goods and services, controlled low wages

with no built in incentives and the subsequent low purchasing power of the majority of our people. People should not have to bear the burden of inflation in dead-end jobs, unemployment, insecurity and lower education standards. The days of alienated youth, varying degrees of poverty midst great wealth and affluence, planned unemployment and insecurity must be ended. The country must assume a people's position and posture.

Our sophisticated education system with the associated phenomenal technological pace dictates that only a planned economy, planned for the people can provide the requirements of all people. Automation allows for gains that can be secure and stable only under a planned policy of development for all. We need a solid economic system at the base of our economy, which in itself will not generate barriers to growth. To this end I submit that we must pursue public ownership through efficiently run crown corporations. Rather than undermine our way of life, such an approach would enhance and enrich our way of life. I make no apology for being a working man, and in no way do I subscribe to the myth that working people would lose personal incentive and initiative through public control and ownership of our economy.

I respectfully submit that anything short of public control and ownership would only constitute a manipulating service, a meddling with the system's economics which then by some hokus-pokus magic we would hope to arrive at a satisfactory economic system for all. We are caught up today with a decaying and dying economic system which has shown obvious signs of having outgrown its terms of reference. Inherent contradictions of policies and pursuits in terms of providing healthy economic climates for both the business and working people, dooms the present system to certain failures. Indeed, I submit, that it is only by sheer hypocrisy, dreaming and hallucinating that one can attempt to live in and with the present economic system, while still holding forth hope that the system will arrive at solving the poverty problem.

All of my comments were written with respect and are respectfully submitted. We are dealing with one concept called poverty, however there may well be many approaches as far as remedial action is concerned.

APPENDIX "D"

BRIEF

Presented by:

Seekers of Security Welfare Rights Group,
Regina, Saskatchewan.

SEEKERS OF SECURITY is a group of mothers who are raising their children alone and are totally or partially dependent on Public Assistance. We are all separated, divorced or widowed. We are receiving Public Assistance because our responsibilities are too demanding to seek employment. Many of us are not employable because of lack of education or training. It is generally considered more beneficial in a one-parent family (and that remaining parent is usually the mother) that the mother not work outside the home. Part-time employment may be beneficial both to the mother and the family if it does not interfere with the raising of the children.

Generally, we are long-term recipients of Social Aid, and we are a unique group in that we are one-parent families. From our ranks come a greater number of delinquents, school drop-outs and potential welfare recipients. We have organized to solve these problems through study, lectures and co-operation with existing agencies and the Department of Social Welfare.

AIMS OF S. O. S.

(1) To strengthen and stabilize the one-parent family through mutual and self-help programs.

(2) To inform and educate the public as to the problems of the one-parent family.

(3) To foster self-respect and society's respect for women who are on Public Assistance for reason of circumstance not indolence. This brief will reflect the problems and aspirations of only one segment of the Welfare recipient group—mothers raising families alone. The S.O.S. group has a membership list of approximately 200—but there are more than 800 mothers raising 2000 children on Public Assistance in the City of Regina. Many of the problems we face are the same as other welfare recipients and some, such as some legal aid needs, are unique to our group.

The brief will concern the following items:

1. Financial needs.
2. Housing
3. Legal
4. Education and re-education
5. Counselling and guidance.

1. *Financial needs*

One of the greatest problems of mothers raising families on Public Assistance is the restrictive minimal budget. Money is provided for the bare essentials of life—food, clothing, utilities and a roof. A meagre amount of \$5.75 per month for 1 adult and 4 children is provided for personal needs—not even enough for children's hair-cuts. Food cannot be purchased in large quantities to save money. There is no extra for a large outlay in any given month. All medical and dental services are covered for children, but adults must absorb 50 per cent of drug costs themselves. This can be a serious blow if a mother is in need of drugs over a period of time. No money is allowed for the family's recreation. Fees for camps, music lessons, etc., just cannot be managed. Bicycles and other sports equipment are beyond the financial means of the mother on welfare. Is it surprising that statistics show that 90 per cent of children of one-parent families on welfare become delinquents and drop-outs?

If a mother is capable of earning, the incentive to do so is stifled. The Welfare Department deducts 50 per cent of the earnings after expenses for a mother with 4 children. Surely it would be better for a person to earn a new appliance if she wishes than to accept a used one from the Welfare Department? Or provide her children with a few advantages rather than have them running the street with nothing to do?

It must be stated, in all fairness, that there are facilities for children on welfare to join Bands and the "Ys" through sponsorships by interested business men. The problem then lies in providing money for bus fares or other transportation. There is also a stigma to requesting charity—as these sponsorships must be applied for by the mother.

2. Housing

Low rent and poor living conditions are generally synonymous. There are approximately 300 public housing units available in Regina—60 of these are single family dwellings. The majority of mothers on Welfare must be content to live in poor accommodations in order to stay within the rent limitations of the Department of Welfare. Landlords are often reluctant to rent to a single parent because they will have to do *all* minor repairs which ordinarily the man in a family would do. Many women move innumerable times during the children's school years because homes are sold from under them or rents are increased beyond their means.

3. Legal

A high percentage of women in our group are separated. They are asked by the Welfare Department to secure support from their husbands through the courts. Although these fees are paid by the Department, we suggest that other means should be set up on a national level for collecting support. The onus for collection should be transferred to a national body who in turn would have quicker and better means of tracing delinquent husbands. Many thousands of dollars could be channelled back into Welfare Departments with the use of stricter collection procedures. We believe the deserted mother has enough problems without the added emotional burden of lawyers' offices and court room appearances.

Divorce action should not be limited to those who can afford the costs. Surely there must be some means whereby the woman on welfare can have a second chance. Possibly divorce availability would take a whole family off the Welfare Department rolls and give those children a normal, two-parent

home. Divorce availability may also reduce the numbers of common-law relationships and the resulting problems of these unions.

4. Counselling and Guidance

Due to the pressures of heavy case loads, social workers have become bogged down with paper work. As a result, time is limited for adequate counselling and, in some cases, referrals to proper agencies are not given to clients. Since the organization of S.O.S. it has become quite apparent that there is a definite need for a person or persons to field legal and welfare rights questions or direct people to where help is available.

5. Education and Re-education

It is of utmost importance that women who drop out of the employment market to raise their family continue their education. To ensure this some means must be devised for care of the children while the mother attends classes. Financial help is already available for up-grading, but not for University classes taken on a part-time basis. One of the fears of women on welfare is what will they be equipped to do when the family has grown up and left home?

How far should Welfare go in providing for the family? We submit that ideally it should give the one-parent family the same opportunity for physical and emotional development as the average two-parent family not on welfare. The financial investment in our children now will hopefully fit them to take their place in society as well-equipped people. Why should our families be denied what others consider routine—holidays, a car, Christmas gifts and recreation. We ask only a decent standard of living and a chance to take our place as a respected and respectable group within society.



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament

1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 65

TUESDAY, AUGUST 18, 1970

WITNESSES:

Saskatchewan Newstart Inc.: Mr. D. Stuart Conger, Executive Director and Chairman of the Board of Directors; Mr. Ralph Hinsl, Manager, Life Skills Division; Mr. Vern Mullen, Manager, Basic Education Division.

Hon. Dr. J. C. McIsaac, Minister of Education, Province of Saskatchewan.
Mr. L. H. Bergstrom, Deputy Minister of Education, Province of Saskatchewan.

Mr. Al Laveridge, Manager, Technical Support Division.

The Prince Albert Work Training Program: Mr. J. Byars, Chairman; Mr. Vic Weibe, Secretary; Mr. L. Land, Manager; Mr. W. Tennant, Chairman, Finance Committee.

Prince Albert Community Clinic: Dr. R. G. Green, General Practitioner; Dr. O. K. Hjertaas, B.A., M.D., F.R.C.S.(Ed.), Medical Director, Prince Albert Community Clinic.

The Federation of Saskatchewan Indians: Mr. Solomon Sanderson.

APPENDICES:

Appendix "A"—Brief submitted by Saskatchewan Newstart.

Appendix "B"—Brief submitted by Prince Albert Work Training Program.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

Prince Albert, Sask.,
Tuesday, August 18, 1970.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*), Carter, Fergusson, Hastings, Inman, Pearson, Quart and Sparrow. (8)

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

Saskatchewan Newstart Inc.:

Mr. D. Stuart Conger, Executive Director
and Chairman of the Board of Directors.

An audio-video presentation on life skills and basic education followed Mr. Conger's initial presentation.

Mr. Ralph Hinsl, Manager, Life Skills Division; Mr. Vern Mullen, Manager, Basic Education Division.

At 10.20 a.m. the Committee visited the training laboratory of the Saskatchewan Newstart and had the opportunity to converse with those in training and to participate in one of their question period sessions.

At 11.45 a.m. the Committee resumed its formal hearing at the training laboratory.

The additional witnesses heard were:

Hon. Dr. J. C. McIsaac, Minister of Education,
Province of Saskatchewan;
Mr. L. H. Bergstrom, Deputy Minister of Education,
Province of Saskatchewan;
Mr. Al Laveridge, Manager, Technical Support Division.

At 12.40 p.m. the Committee adjourned until 2.00 p.m.

At 2.00 p.m. at the Prince Albert Recreation Centre the following witnesses were heard by the Committee:

The Prince Albert Work Training Program:

Mr. J. Byars, Chairman;
Mr. Vic Weibe, Secretary;
Mr. L. Land, Manager;
Mr. W. Tennant, Chairman, Finance Committee.

Prince Albert Community Clinic:

Dr. R. G. Green, General Practitioner
Dr. O. K. Hjertaas, B.A., M.D., F.R.C.S. (Ed), Medical Director, Prince Albert Community Clinic.

The two above briefs were read into the record in their entirety.

The Federation of Saskatchewan Indians:

Mr. Solomon Sanderson

In attendance: Chief David Ahenakew;

Mr. Rod Soonias;

Mr. James Smith.

At 4.10 p.m. the Committee adjourned until 8.00 p.m.

At 8.00 p.m. the Committee held an informal meeting with approximately 40 farmers of the Prince Albert area, headed by Mr. Roy Atkinson, President of the National Farmers Union.

Brief notes covering the meeting immediately follow these proceedings.

The following briefs were ordered to be printed as Appendix "A" and "B" respectively to these proceedings:

Appendix "A"—Brief submitted by Saskatchewan Newstart

Appendix "B"—Brief submitted by Prince Albert Work Training Program

At 10.00 p.m. the Committee adjourned.

ATTEST:

George A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

On August 19, two tours of the rural area of Prince Albert, Sask. were organized by the National Farmers Union for the Committee. A brief report follows the notes on the informal meeting held in Prince Albert, in the evening of August 18, 1970.

Notes on meeting held in Prince Albert,
Saskatchewan, Tuesday, August 18, 1970

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*), Carter, Fergusson, Hastings, Inman, Pearson, Quart and Sparrow.(8)

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

At 8.00 p.m. the meeting was called to order by the Chairman of the Committee. The first speaker was Mr. Roy Atkinson, President of the National Farmers Union. The meeting was composed of approximately forty farmers of the Prince Albert district, most of them members of Mr. Atkinson's organization.

The meeting was quite informal and a number of those present seized the occasion to describe the difficult conditions in which they were.

The main points brought forward could be summarized as follows:

The freeing of the dollar was definitely a disadvantage for the farmer. A recent aggravation of the situation came through the high cost of equipment, the high interest rates and the low price of farm products.

Those who have taken the advice of experts and bought sophisticated equipment were now faced with overhead expenditures which in many cases meant bankruptcy. The high interest rates together with high salaries to be paid for labour renders the cost of production so high that the operation of the farm is presently uneconomical.

The prices of farm products being what they are, it is the farmer who is paying a subsidy to the Canadian public for their high standard of living.

Many said that they had been advised to switch from one farm product to another, such as going into hog production from wheat, etc. The cost of change-over was prohibitive at today's prices; many said that they were still paying for expensive equipment and mortgages on additional land they had purchased. Furthermore, what assurance was there that the new product would be marketed at a profit in a few years from now, when revenues would be most needed to face the financial obligations caused by the change-over.

Bitter criticism of the Federal Task Force on Agriculture was voiced by many of those present. If the Task Force recommendations were accepted they feared the small farms would be phased out of farming altogether. Most of them said that they preferred being poor on a farm than being on relief in the city.

In reply to the situation described by many of the speakers, the Chairman pointed out that the sale of farm products in general, and wheat in particular, was tied to international conditions and that sooner or later there would be a demand for farm products. In the Dirty Thirties everybody was poor; since the war Canada has experienced a tremendous economic growth; now the difficulty seems to be one of marketing some of the commodities being produced. The situation can only be temporary, and it is hoped that, in a not too distant future, solutions will be found to rectify the situation.

At 9.30 p.m. members of the Committee carried on the informal discussion with various groups of those present.

At 10.00 p.m. the Chairman, on behalf of the Committee, thanked all those who had taken the trouble to come and discuss their problems with the Committee and said that the following day a Sub-Committee of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty would tour their area in order to see for themselves the situation which had been described to them that evening.

Tours of rural areas in the vicinity of PRINCE ALBERT, SASKATCHEWAN.

August 21, 1970

Two tours were organized for the Committee by members of the National Farmers Union.

Tour One, took Senators Pearson, Inman and Carter through an area to the south of Prince Albert after a short drive around the environs of the city, particularly to the Prince Albert Pulp Mill where they were shown how the company is pumping untreated effluent into the North Saskatchewan River.

The group then crossed the North Saskatchewan River at Cecil Ferry and drove on crossing the South Saskatchewan River at Birch Hills Ferry. They stopped and talked to a number of farmers in Birch Hills, Domremy, Hoey and St. Louis areas of the province. The farms visited by this group were mostly large acreage farms and these are people who are caught by the present wheat sales dilemma.

Senator Pearson said that most of the people they met with are in a "hopeless frame of mind—they have no hope whatsoever. They seem to feel that everything they've done has been a loss and that whatever they will do will be a loss".

He said that most of these people were encouraged to get into large farm units, they were told that the only way to farm economically was with the large acreage and the

proper equipment. Having done what they were told the farmers now find that they are caught with a large capital investment—in some cases as much as \$200,000—in farms designed to produce a crop that doesn't sell.

The farmers find they are now very short of ready cash and are faced with large interest payments and large bills for land taxes. The Senators were shown income tax forms showing where a farmer had a taxable income of \$3,250 in 1967 and the following year the income tax form showed the farmer to be \$5,300 in the hole and last year he was \$3,200 short. This same man had interest payments in 1969 of \$7,000 that he couldn't meet.

One positive suggestion that came up during the tour was the idea that a rape seed crushing plant be established in the Birch Hills area. Senator Pearson said such a plant would require production from 5,000,000 acres to be viable and according to what he was told there were some 7,000,000 acres of rape shown in the region this year. The oil from rape seed is used to produce margarine.

Tour Two, included Senators Fergusson, Quart and Sparrow and it consisted of a swing to the North and East of Prince Albert. This area is composed of smaller farms than the ones visited by the other group. There were seven farms visited during the day and the Senators spoke with the farmers and their wives in their homes, in their backyards and sometimes in the fields.

Again the major complaint was the shortage of cash, but as these were smaller farms they were not faced with the high interest payments that those in the south were, but the tax payments though smaller were still of concern. If you only have a few dollars in ready cash, a bill of \$500 is as difficult to pay as one of \$1,500.

Generally speaking senator Fergusson said she felt that the people they visited could be very substantial citizens given half a chance. Such was impressed with the community concern expressed by the residents even though their own situation could hardly be described as rosy.

The Senators met with one elderly couple who were living in what Senator Fergusson described as "a most horrible situation". The couple were English and had come to Canada in the 1930s living most of the time since, in a log cabin and more recently in an old shed their neighbours had hauled in from a woods camp because the old cabin looked like it was going to fall in on the couple.

Senator Fergusson said the shed was filthy, full of flies, had only one narrow beam and a stove pipe through the roof that was not properly installed and hence there were holes where one could see daylight.

Despite the fact he is old and only has a horse the man still tries to farm about 2 acres of his quarter section. The woman is very arthritic, but even with this and her other problems she seems quite cheerful.

By and large the problems that the Senators were shown on the tour were the same as the ones mentioned at the Tuesday night meeting where you were present; high interest rates, the result of their over-extending themselves; high and what the consider unfair land taxes; good crops but no markets and the lack of a rural housing program.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

Tuesday, August 18, 1970

Prince Albert, Saskatchewan.

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9 a.m.

Senator David A. Croll (*Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Chairman: I will now call the meeting to order. This is a meeting of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty and we are here to take a look at Saskatchewan Newstart. There seems to be a great deal of interest in it; it seems to be an exciting program.

We are going to spend the whole morning taking a good look at it so that we can thoroughly assess it in our own minds. Then, in the last half hour, we will question some of the people who are involved. Let me give you the program as Mr. Conger, the Executive Director, who by the way is an old Ottawa hand, has given me. From nine to 9:10 we have the introductory remarks from Mr. Conger. From 9:10 to 9:30 there will be the Newstart story video-film or sound slides. From 9:30 to ten we will have the Life Skills story and from 10 to 10:20 the Basic Education story.

After this presentation we will move over to the training laboratory, which is about four or five blocks away, and from 10:30 to 10:55 we will see the Basic Education operation.

From eleven to twelve o'clock we will see the Life Skills demonstration, and from twelve to 1:30, or until such time as we wind up, Mr. Conger, Mr. Himsl and Mr. Mullen, the men who will review the film, will answer questions. Other members of the staff will also be available for the senators to meet and raise any questions that they wish.

Mr. D. S. Conger, Executive Director and Chairman of the Board of Directors of Saskatchewan Newstart. Thank you very much Mr. Chairman. Honourable senators, ladies and gentlemen, the Canada Newstart Program was originally proposed in 1965 by the federal Government to develop better methods of training and counselling adults. New methods of training and

counselling adults were required because the adult re-training program was experiencing a drop-out rate of over sixty per cent. Furthermore, the number needing training far exceeded the number that could be trained with the existing methods and facilities.

Finally it had been noted that economic development was taking place without the complimentary plans for human resource development. Too frequently the establishment of a new industry did not benefit the local unemployed people because they were not qualified for the jobs.

There was a need therefore to develop new and better methods of training unemployed adults for good jobs.

When Prime Minister Pearson proposed the program in 1965, it was necessary plan for the creation of a special organization to conduct the research.

Canada has set up various physical science research institutes over the years but no experimental stages in human or social resource development has been established. It is perhaps not an accident that our agricultural industry, our electronic industries and our other industries have made rapid progress over the last thirty years while our educational, welfare and other social institutions have been doing things pretty much the same over this same period.

The reason has been that Canada has not promoted research in applied behavioural sciences.

Saskatchewan Newstart established in 1967, was one of the first laboratories for human and social development set up to develop human technologies that could be used by educational and social agencies.

Saskatchewan Newstart was incorporated under the society act of Saskatchewan and it is sponsored by the Saskatchewan Department of Education and the Federal Department of Regional and Economic Expansion. It is this latter department which funds the corporation.

The corporate form of organization was selected because a company is much more flexible in its operation and is able to work more experimentally than can a government department or an educational institution and so we were set up as a corporation.

To date Saskatchewan Newstart has concentrated on the development of new methods of counselling and training adults in four subjects: adult basic education from grade one to grade ten and soon to grade twelve; in what we call Life Skills which we will describe and define and demonstrate later on; in the training of para professionals to do some professional work in education, welfare and other social institutions and finally a course in small business management for Indians and Metis who plan to operate their own businesses.

Saskatchewan Newstart has not experimented in developing programs linked specifically with new local industrial initiatives partly because these have been lacking in the past two years in Prince Albert.

It would appear however that the establishment of new pulp mills in western Canada suggests that it would be timely to explore the possibilities of working at a training program for indigenous people to get good jobs in these mills.

The transfer of the federal sponsorship on the Newstart program from the Department of Manpower and Immigration to the Department of Regional Economic Expansion in 1968 suggests that such co-ordination between adult training and economic developments might be a future activity.

As Senator Croll has said, our program today comes in four parts. An audio-visio presentation, two oral presentations, one on Life Skills and one on Basic Education, a visit to the training laboratories for demonstrations of these programs and then a period for questioning such as you may wish to pose.

I would now ask the senators respectfully if they would kindly join me on the other side of the table so that we may watch the presentation.

(Video slide presentation presented on behalf of the Saskatchewan Newstart Program.)

Mr. Conger: Senator Croll and senators. One of the concerns that I have as an executive director of Newstart Corporation is the fact that we don't know how long we will be in business.

As we have heard this morning, the deadline was set for 1971 and whether or not we will be in existence beyond 1971 we do not know. It is

therefore something of which I am very proud that we have been able to attract to this project people of a high measure of competence who were prepared to give up secure senior positions in order to try to work with us in developing these new techniques.

The audio visual presentation that you have just seen is an example of one of the kinds of talents that we have been able to attract and the degree of competence.

Our next speaker, Mr. Ralph Himsl, is another example of this. Mr. Himsl is a graduate of the University of British Columbia who received his masters degree at the University of Saskatchewan. He is a candidate for a Doctors degree in education. He has taught in Indian residence schools and other schools. He was superintendent of the separate school board and he left that secure job to come to Saskatchewan Newstart for a period of just two years to see if he could do something to help the disadvantaged. He was one of the people that we were fortunate enough to recruit right here in Prince Albert.

Mr. Chairman, it is a pleasure to call upon Mr. Himsl to describe the Life Skills Program.

Mr. Ralph Himsl, Manager, Life Skills Division Saskatchewan Newstart: Mr. Conger, Senator Croll and members of the Committee.

I am going to describe the Saskatchewan Newstart Life Skills course to which reference was made during the slide presentation and a few other remarks.

In the time I have this morning I have set four objectives. I shall define the Life Skills; shall describe its place in a manpower training program; I shall describe our students drawing on a number of different students to create a mosaic, a composite picture of the student then I shall describe one of our students in greater detail and I shall tell you how the Life Skills training has affected them based on the follow-up procedures which we have used.

The first of these objectives, is the definition of the Life Skills. Many people who grow up in a culture of poverty or who derive their lifestyle from a disadvantaged background lack those inter personal skills which the large society expect its members to use. They may lack the skills to present themselves effectively for employment and they may not know how to quit their job without damaging their prospects for a new one. Their lack of stability to relate to others may prevent them from making effective use of society and its many agencies. They may have limited leisure time activity. They may have trouble handling family problems and finally, and perhaps most

fundamentally their repeated failures in meeting the problems of life may create for them an ineffectual self image.

We have defined life skills as the application of problem solving techniques to the solutions of life's problems. The Life Skill course provides actual and stimulated life situations which permit the Life Skill student just this practice which we feel they lack. I want to show the place of the Life Skills in a Manpower Training Program.

To help us get a picture of this, we talk about training need axis and we say that there seems to be two components to this. We say that one axis is composed of the saleable skills. At one side of the line, the negative side, you have few saleable skills. Contrasted to that we say we have many saleable skills at the other end of that line.

The other axis deals with problem solving Life Skills. We say that a person may have few problem solving Life Skills or a person may have many problem solving life skills.

Now, when we examine a problem of the disadvantaged with this axis, we find characteristically they have few saleable life skills so we put a mark there. (indicating)—few saleable skills. Our own investigations and reading from literature substantiates that they have few problem solving skills so we will put another line down there—another check there and join the two lines and we get a picture of a person characteristically with few saleable skills and few problem solving skills.

What does this mean then to a training program? Job skills training programs, and we have many of them and they are excellent, a job skills training program focuses attention on the development of saleable skills. It says rightly that what must be done to give these people some economic status, some means of expressing themselves economically, is to give them saleable skills to move them from this position, along this axis, to move them over the line.

Well, the graph tells us a great deal. It says to us "yes, it has given them the saleable skills all right,"—but if you let your mind wander back to the film presentation, it is emphasized there that the difficulty for example that Joe had in communicating with the boss. He lost his job not because he couldn't do the job but because he lacked inter-personal skills so traditionally manpower training programs have attended to that access.

In Life Skills training program we say is based on the identification of a lack of these problem solving Life Skills and it endeavours

then to move the person, in contrast to the previous charts which move them on this axis (indicating) it moves them up this way. It takes them from the position of having too few problem solving skills to having many problem solving life skills.

What then happened to our integrated program? Well, we have combined the charts and added an arrow. The job skills training program moved them along this axis, the life skills problem solving training program moved them along this axis and the resultant is a move up into this quadrant.

This is an attempt to combine the interaction of these two arrows and move them up into this quadrant where they would now possess many saleable skills and many problem solving skills, completing a movement into an effectively functioning individual.

That is the place then of the Life Skills in a manpower training program. I am going to come back to this in just a moment. I said a moment ago that I would try to describe our Life Skills student in two ways. I said that I would create a mosaic and I would describe one of our students in detail.

I do this with some humility because I have a full recognition that with an accident or two at birth and a change in present circumstances, I could myself be well among them. I was afraid to say that and I was afraid not to say it.

We took 36 students into our course in January of this year. They ranged from painfully shy to bluff and out-going. At that time none could get employment. All lacked the artifacts of a grade ten. Some had not passed beyond grade six and still said of themselves, although they had been out of school as many as fifteen or twenty years, they still said of themselves, I have only grade five. Credited their life experience with nothing. They still had grade five. Some spent time in penal institutions, others admitted to having trouble with alcohol and most saw themselves as having few skills of any sort but surprisingly, seemed to have few resentments toward other people.

Some had family problems. They could not talk effectively to their marriage partner or they were separated from their marriage partner. In any situation, they had but a limited range of behaviour from which to draw. Some had problems with drugs. Others displayed a strict moralistic outlook which made them highly judgemental when examining their own and others behaviour.

Some relied heavily on a stern individualism which made it difficult for them to offer help to other people and, more surprisingly, made it difficult for them to accept help from other people.

Men and women, metis and white—they ranged in age from eighteen to fifty-five. That creates something of the composite portrait.

I will tell you now of one such trainee. Imagine in your mind's eye a man about my own height and age. He has a fairly large family as we count children today and he loves them very much. A certain disposition towards self-indulgence causes him to neglect doing things his otherwise general nature would require of him. He drinks too much—he admits to a drinking problem but thinks he need not worry about alcoholism.

However, when he thinks about it he recognizes he spends too much on it. So he has a somewhat shy disposition and an innate charm attracts everyone in an immediate circle to him. He would deny knowing that and he wouldn't know it. He considers he has few abilities. He says of himself I have no talent but he wants better things for himself and his family. He has a certain pride in his birth and half believes that it sometimes handicaps him in job situations and in some social situations.

Shortly after he comes on course it soon becomes apparent that he has the respect of other students. He could lead people but he doesn't recognize that he could and he wouldn't believe it if anyone told him.

Now I want to tell you how Life Skills training has affected those people with whom we have worked. For four months the students work in learning groups composed of eight to twelve persons. For a time they work directly on problems of inter-personal communication. They study themselves by evaluating a feedback or criticism which they get from other students, their coach, from pencil and paper tests and by watching themselves on video-tape.

They learn problem solving skills and practice them in actual life situations and in simulated situations.

In the course they practice giving and receiving help. Giving, receiving and interpreting criticism. They learn about and practice new inter-personal behaviours. We tried to give them more ways of learning to speak to each other often asking them to shift the style of behaviour from their habitual response to a new one. Interesting things happen where one says well, I know how to do that and the coach says well, I am not sure until I see you do it, now go ahead and do it and let me see.

They practice relating to police and other representatives of the legal system. They plan projects jointly and individually and accept

the responsibility for their actions and the wrote out job interviews and they practice them.

They practice new responsible behaviour towards their children and their marriage partners. They practice risking themselves in many new and threatening situations.

What has happened to them? We have just completed a first follow-up of the student who came to us in January. They completed their Life Skills course in April of this year. Of the thirty-six who took training, we were able to interview sixteen thus far. We could not reach ten of the former students and two would not speak to us. For one reason or another we have not completed the interview of the other ten.

Some give specific instances of how the training helped them. A young man has stopped fighting with his father. He had many disagreements over the car. This same young man instead of quitting the job when criticized he reported that his reaction now, instead of getting angry, said to the boss "well, all right you show me how to do it" which was an application of the thing we have been practicing to shift the style of behaviour.

A woman said that she had learned something about handling her children. Another woman found that she could plan more nutritious meals now. A young man found it easier to speak to people at the Canada Manpower.

A number of people implied by their descriptions that they now had different ways of behaviour which they did not have before. Several times this came out as "well, I find I don't lose my temper so much. I can control better; I can talk things out more." One man pointed to numerous specific applications of the things he had learned on the course to his after-course life.

He referred to a new confidence in his contact with the police. He remarked that although the uniform still stirred his awe, he could see the man beneath it. He remarked that a new control of drinking had a marked effect on him.

For example, after a week-end following payday, to his surprise he found he still had money and after a number of those week-ends after pay day in which he was able to control his drinking, he reported that he had now managed to buy a car. He admitted to having got terrifically drunk on one occasion only to have considered quitting his job because of an embarrassment and an inability to communicate a situation to his boss.

This is what he reports and I am a bit embarrassed to report it to you because it sounds somewhat like we might have written

script for him but this is what he reports. He said his newly practiced skills enabled him to go and speak to the boss and tell him the situation and the boss to his surprise understood and said yes, you are doing well and I want to help you.

Finally and of considerable interest, he learned that other people whom he supervised in his job were a lot tougher than he gave them credit for and they would accept remarks, which he in his job had a responsibility to give. They would accept his criticism and he, in his very gentle and uncertain way, would not have assessed them on from the experiences which he had had in the course. He found that he could assess them on and he said gosh, they can take it and I'm glad.

Several others referred to problems with thinking. They reported that they had gained some measure of control over this matter but I listened to the interviews and studied them and liked to hear the words but felt often that they lacked some of the convictions. One person mentioned that he did more of his own negotiations. Formerly he would have had, he said, his wife do things for him such as inquiring after jobs. He says I don't do that anymore. He says sometimes I don't do it anymore.

Of the seventeen persons we interviewed, most had quite negative reactions to the training they had on the course. Even when pressed, they conceded only small benefits gained from it and they would want nothing to do with further training of that sort. The other fifteen spoke rather favourably of it and when pressed in the interview to say that the course had not done much for them, they would reject that. They would say no, it has done something—this is aside from the specifics I mentioned.

The interview was designed by our research staff to test them to say no, I don't want to hear nice things. We want to hear the nice if they are true but we don't only want to hear only the nice things. They would challenge them afterwards and say I just don't think after all this really helped you and the response from the fifteen was no, it has. They have also said that they would take or like to take another course if they had the opportunity to do so.

As we studied the brief biographies of our former students and examined their current situations, our attention goes back to the manpower training axis addressed earlier in this report. Our Life Skills and Basic Education

students along the vertical axis and along the horizontal axis only to the extent that a grade ten certificate represents a saleable item.

I say that the Life Skills and the Basic Education moved them along this axis (indicating) primarily, and along this one only to the extent that the grade ten certificate that represents something that they can use to get a job.

I was delighted for a moment before we started the sessions to talk to Senator Carter and he pointed out to me that what had happened in the failure of persons to get the problem solving Life Skills seemed to be some kind of a failing of those people who have made use of the schools or the schools who have adapted to their needs. I think there is quite a lot in that, at least there is something missing from their earlier years, home, school, supporting environment. This seems to be the thing which we are trying to meet.

Our interviews showed that many of the trainees have developed further training goals for themselves. With refined follow-up techniques and we plan to assess the effects of our training on these and our other students.

We grow in the conviction that our training responds to the needs of the trainees, as we defined these even more precisely, as we adapt our methodology and contents to the needs and expectations of our students, we grow in the confidence that we address a major training need heretofore unmet by an effectual training program, the need for Life Skills training.

That is the substance of my report.

The Chairman: Thank you very much.

Mr. Conger: You heard that Mr. Himsl came from Prince Albert. Our next speaker came from Sarawak by way of various countries. He is a graduate of Maritime and English Universities in Education.

He taught in the northern schools of British Columbia. He has taught in Ethiopia, in South East Asia and has taught peace corps volunteers in Hawaii before he came here.

It is a pleasure to call upon Mr. Vern Mullen to describe the Basic Education program.

Mr. Vern Mullen, Manager, Basic Education Division, Saskatchewan Newstart: Mr. Chairman and honourable senators, the objectives of Saskatchewan Newstart that I try to keep in my mind says that our job is to develop methods of qualifying for rewarding and stable employment.

Persons who are disadvantaged and particularly those who are handicapped as to their educational level, adult students who come to Newstart have courses in Life Skills which my colleague has just described and some kind of occupational training in addition to the Basic Education.

In most cases, students attend Basic Education classes only a half a day at a time. They devote the other half day to their other courses. In Saskatchewan the Department of Education issues an adult grade ten certificate which allows a person to enter various schemes of trade training.

It also qualifies them academically for jobs for which grade ten is the minimum requirement. The certificate is issued to adults who can qualify at a measured grade eight point five level on certain standardized tests on the basic skills of English and arithmetic.

The Department of Education is also establishing a similar certificate at the grade twelve level—to be called a grade twelve equivalent or something like that.

The chief internal objective of the Basic Education division in Saskatchewan Newstart is to develop a program of methods and materials which will prepare adults to qualify as quickly as possible for one of these certificates and, at the same time, give them the academic skills they will need to function effectively as literate citizens.

During the year and a half that we have been carrying out training in Basic Education, we have experimented with a variety of methods and material. The main approach to which we have evolved is called individually prescribed instruction—IPI for short. The film that you saw this morning spoke of a program of education. I think we have gone past that and we are using programmed materials as one of our tools but not necessarily the chief one.

Put simply, individually prescribed instruction is something like this. Suppose you want to make a ham and egg sandwich. That is your terminal objective. You analyze the problem and you say well, what do I need. I need bread, I need butter, I need ham and I need at least one egg. Some people need mustard and ketchup I suppose but we don't need that now. We look at this problem and we analyze it.

We go to the kitchen and perhaps we look in the cupboard and we find bread. We check it off our list. We look in the fridge and perhaps we find butter and we find tomatoes. It doesn't take a great deal of effort to realize what else

you need to get in order to complete the program; to realize your terminal objectives.

You need to buy some ham. You don't need to buy bread as you already have it and you don't need to buy butter, you already have it and you don't need to buy eggs, as you already have them.

In individually prescribed instruction we plan programs for students in somewhat the same way. We find what in-product the student wants and we find what his goal is—what his terminal objective is. In most cases our students want an adult ten certificate. Our development team has prepared a curriculum written carefully in terms of behavioural objectives which tells the steps necessary to reach that goal.

We measure as precisely as we can what the student already knows when he enters training and we check those items off the curriculum. He doesn't need to learn them again. The student then has only to learn what is left.

Now, our curriculum looks something like this. (indicating) We have it divided up into fairly large units. A unit may take several weeks to complete. This unit is broken down into—we will call this Unit A—into different kinds of items and an item might take several days to complete and the item itself is broken down into smaller steps. It is broken down into smaller steps such as a, b, c, d, e, f, etc. and then you might have other steps following.

Now, what we do is to follow a certain process in dealing with this kind of curriculum and this process of individually prescribed instructions follows the steps of diagnosis, prescription and testing. In diagnosis, the instructor tests these students carefully.

A test may cover several units and we analyze his mistakes and find out what he knows and what he doesn't. For instance, we will say here in Item 1—he may know a. He knows b and that may be all he knows so we check them off. He knows them already and we don't have to teach them again. However, he still has to learn d, e, and f and then in the second step of prescription the instructor prescribes exercises and study and exercises for each student according to what he needs to learn. In this case just would be the thing he would study per session.

Senator Hastings: Well Mr. Mullen, could you give me an exact example.

Mr. Mullen: Well let's say we are having a unit on fractions and our item is additions and fractions.

Senator Hastings: That is our item.

Mr. Mullen: It is the addition of fractions. It could be the subtraction of fractions or the multiplication of fractions and so on. We have the addition of fractions and we have perhaps addition of simple fractions and additions of mixed fractions and addition of improper fractions and so on. That is how we diagnose and we prescribe.

Now, this is a very important thing. In prescription, the instructor prescribes exact studies and exercises according to what he needs. He doesn't give them things that he already knows—he just gives him things that he needs to know.

Finally by testing, the instructor finds out if the student has learned what is prescribed and he is ready for the next prescription.

The process continues until the student finishes the curriculum. In this way each individual works truly at his own speed. Nobody is held back to wait for the rest of the class. Nobody gets bored with work that is too easy for them. Nobody is given work that is too difficult. Everybody is encouraged to work at his full capacity and time and money are both saved. That is why we call it individually prescribed instruction.

A training scheme following these methods could use a continuous in take so that fast learners would get through more quickly in courses of fixed length and slow learners could not be thrown out at the end of the course before they got a certificate.

Both actions would prevent the continuous waste that occurs in courses of fixed length.

I want to give you a few case studies which illustrate what can be done with ordinary adults who are handicapped in their educational level. I have changed these names and I have changed the descriptions a little bit so that they are not too easily identified but these are actual cases that we have worked with in Newstart.

George Donaldson was a man of forty-nine, an ex-soldier from the Second World War and he claimed, an ex-alcoholic. He came to see me at the end of 1968 just when I was beginning to work on the first phase of the Basic Education Program and before we started any training.

Whenever I hear the word Llugubrious I shall always think of him. He looked utterly sad and hopeless and he told me how his wife and children had left him and how he was trying to beat alcohol.

George had come back from Alberta to his old home town of Prince Albert to try a new start and Canada Manpower sent him to see us.

George became a student in the in take which entered at the beginning of February in 1969. He had gone to school only to grade six but it was obvious that he had read a great deal and that he was eager to learn more. Given the opportunity, he didn't have to be motivated artificially. He worked hard. George even complained to me one day that they were making too much noise in the classroom and he couldn't study properly. Like all other students at the time he spent part of each day in Basic Education in classes and part on Life Skills and part on occupational courses. He had chosen at that time to be trained as a social work aid.

During the next four months, in about 50 hours of basic education classes, he improved himself academically by two full grade levels. He was our first trainee to qualify for our adult ten certificate and he really felt proud when our general manager presented him with this certificate. He couldn't wait to finish his training as a social work aid. His wife agreed to return with his children and he got his old job back as a commissionaire in an army camp in Alberta.

He even wrote to us a few weeks later and I quote from his letter:

I take this opportunity to thank you all, staff and students of the February 1969 in take not only for a very interesting time but also for the help which you gave me to turn a disaster into an accomplishment.

Senator Hastings: Is he still drinking?

Mr. Mullen: I have another paragraph!

I heard nothing from him for almost a year. I wish I could say that the story ended there. I met him here on the street one day looking as lugubrious as ever. His wife had left him again and he quit his old job but his attitude was different from when I had first met him. He was off alcohol and he was confident that he could find another job and start again. It was obviously an improvement in attitude.

The second case study. Kate Gerrard came to Newstart as a housewife in her middle thirties while she continued to work as a waitress in a beer parlour. She had gone only to grade six in school and educational psychologists in the school system told me that as a mother Kate had been unable to do much to help her

own children with their reading difficulties at grade three, grade four and grade five levels.

When I first talked to her she seemed worried about her own ability to learn. Her attitude was brassy on the surface but she lacked confidence underneath and she had a very poor image of herself. We tested her and we found her academic level to be just over grade five. She was a bit ashamed to let her friends know how little education she had but there were others around her at similar levels and so she accepted it. We gave her program materials in English and arithmetic that she could understand; she found that she could understand them and she went to work.

Kate soon found out that she could learn and that she wasn't dumb. On the next set of tests after a couple of months, she had progressed to grade nine. Her manner began to change. She became more confident. Her instructors commented on the improvement in her dress and in the way she did her hair. On the final test at the end of the course, after 105 hours of Basic Education classes, she had risen three full grade levels over where she had started. That qualified her to receive an adult ten certificate.

I thought she would hug me when I told her that she was going to get it. As a matter of fact I wish she had because she was rather nice. She didn't get a job for a long time after she left Newstart.

However, she remained confident and finally she was chosen to fill a vacancy in the Saskatchewan Training School, a provincial institution in Prince Albert for mentally retarded adults. She has been happy working there because she feels she has been doing something more useful than serving beer to people.

I was sorry to hear recently that she was in hospital for an operation and she had to leave her job but I was assured that the operation was not serious.

The third case studied. Dave Walters was a farm boy who had gone to grade eight in school but he never had learned a trade or special skill. At age thirty-seven he had wandered through a variety of jobs in a lumber yard, a dairy, a garage and a wholesale dry-goods warehouse.

He had been living on unemployment insurance for months when he came to Newstart.

Dave may have gone to grade eight in school but his functional level was only grade six. During five months of training he spent three

hundred and fifty-seven hours in Basic Education, to gain two grade levels. He was well below average intellectually and his progress was very slow but it was steady and he managed just to scrape through. He did just scrape through to get his adult ten certificate. That was all he needed.

He told me that he wanted to take training as a cook but he never dreamed that he could qualify for entry into a vocational course which required a minimum of grade ten. He applied at Canada Manpower with his certificate and they paid his bus fare to Moose Jaw where there was a vacancy in a vocational course for cooks.

I heard no more of him for six months until one day, early this summer, I recognized his laugh in my outer office. He had a very distinctive laugh. There was Dave, wearing a very gaudy yellow shirt and a very proud grin. He had graduated from his cooking class and he was on his way to a job as chief cook in a restaurant at Waskesiu. Waskesiu is a resort area just north of Prince Albert.

The only difficulty he had in the course he said was all those menus written in French. Things like fillet mignon and hors d'œuvre. He also told me that he expected to take more exams next year after a period of work to qualify for a higher certificate. As far as he concerned, he has got it made.

Then there was Gloria Peters who already had a good job in one of the correctional institutes in Prince Albert when she came to Newstart. She was no longer young and she had to support herself. Employers were well satisfied with her and they even arranged for her to work on night shift so that she could attend our classes during the day.

She did so with no allowance from Manpower. The institution for which she worked could not confirm her in a permanent position until she reached at least grade ten and she was well below that. In Basic Education classes she had difficulties. Fractions were a complete puzzle—this unit on fractions, she just couldn't cope with it and the European language she spoke as a child made English usage and comprehension difficult for her.

She stayed at Newstart as long as she could but she was still not able to reach the required standard but she was determined. She attended extra voluntary night classes at our training laboratory for several more months and she finally made it. She received her adult ten certificate and her position was confirmed. She felt secure in it for the first time.

I heard just yesterday that she is taking a correspondence course now in trying to improve herself even further.

Finally one more young man. Larry Peters was a young man in his late twenties. He had lost an arm in an accident several years ago and he came to Newstart mainly for the Basic Education. Barry was not interested in the training we offered for teacher aids or social work aids. He had his own goal. He wanted to be a mechanic. He had a particular interest in small engines but first he had to get an adult ten certificate to enter the technical school. We measured him at under grade seven level. He wasn't brilliant but he was determined. He took just over 200 hours of classes to work through two and a half grade levels but he finally qualified for his adult grade ten certificate.

A few months later the Prince Albert Technical School accepted him for training in automotive mechanics and they were willing to adjust their course to his one good right arm.

Canada Manpower paid him a training allowance.

Last week I stopped in a service station to get gas and there was Larry. He was learning how to do practical mechanic repairs in addition to servicing cars for gasoline and oil. He drives his own car and he seems very content in his position.

These are mostly success stories. We have not been as successful with all of our students as with these. Only just over half who have gone through our training have qualified for adult ten certificates in Basic Education. We cannot claim either that all the positive changes that I have described in the case studies were due to Basic Education alone. The classes in Life Skills and Occupational Training have certainly contributed. I can say enough that the Basic Education certificates that the adult student receives do help them to get jobs, do help them to keep jobs and do give them an opportunity for further training.

Perhaps above all the basic education certificate provides a level of success which gives an under-educated, disadvantaged adult more confidence in himself to face the problems of the world of work. Thank you very much.

Senator Hastings: Out of those five cases, how many were natives?

Mr. Vern Mullen: One.

Senator Pearson: I would like to ask a question about your lugubrious friend.

When he went to Calgary, do you have any idea of how much he was earning then as a commissioner?

Mr. Mullen: No I don't.

Senator Pearson: I was just wondering if this is the reason they broke up because he was earning too little to support his family?

Mr. Mullen: I don't think that was part of it. I think it was part that he had been an alcoholic and partly because he took such a miserable view of life I think.

The Chairman: We are now going to move over to the training laboratory where Mr. Mullen will deal with the matter of Basic Education operations and Mr. Himsl will give us a Life Skills demonstration. After that we will have the three of them—and any one else you may wish to present—for a discussion with the senators.

The Chairman: This is a resumed meeting of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty. We heard some evidence this morning from Mr. Mullen, Mr. Himsl and Mr. Conger. The senators did not have an opportunity at that time to question both witnesses on some aspects of their evidence, and we did not at that time have the Minister of Education with us but we have now. So, I will ask the senators to raise questions now as a result of the information that was commenced earlier in the day.

Senator Hastings: I just have one question, Mr. Chairman. What participation in the program and in the curriculum is given to the students or given to people directly? How much percent or is there any?

Mr. Himsl: They have contributed in the evaluative sense; that is—well, I can say a little more than that. They have contributed through our interviews with them as to the kinds of problems that were typical of the things that we were encountering so they contributed that way. We have them contributing indirectly in that we observe the lessons and then we have them contribute directly in that they criticize.

We have an evaluation built into the course and they contribute criticisms to the material which we do pay attention to in the redevelopment of the course.

Senator Hastings: Are there any natives on the Board of Directors?

Mr. Conger: Yes I think Mr. Galarneau is one.

Senator Hastings: Out of how many?

Mr. Conger: Five.

Senator Carter: I would like to follow up the point you made Mr. Chairman about algebra. I realize that so far you have only been in operation two years and you have only had time to zero in on approaches and techniques and methods of going about the problem but as I went around I noticed that you were using various text books, different kinds of text and that much of the material in these texts and that many of the problems that these were working on weren't really related to life.

Some were doing fractions, weird fractions that you don't come across unless you are going into higher mathematics and algebra. I can understand a person going on to university or going perhaps to computer sciences where they may find algebra useful but apparently they were spending a good deal of time on that and I couldn't see this would be very much use to them because once they would get out of here they would forget it and never use it again. I presume they have to do it because the department requires it for this certificate—they won't get their certificate unless they get it—so you have a whole field there of research as to what material is relevant in the development of new text. Have you done anything about this at all? Have you taken this up with the authorities at all? I mean, we have the Minister right here. . .

The Chairman: And the Deputy Minister.

Senator Carter: And we have got to educate those fellows too you see? I think this is a good time to start.

Mr. Mullen: I think I can answer your question partly anyway. First of all, what they take depends pretty well on what they want to do and if they want to say get an adult ten certificate there are certain requirements that they have to go through.

Senator Carter: Laid down by the department?

Mr. Mullen: Well not necessarily laid down by the department, but just to be able to pass the exam itself.

Senator Carter: Well, why is algebra part of that requirement?

Mr. Mullen: Well, actually algebra isn't a very important part of that requirement to get the adult ten certificate but many of the people who are doing the algebra for example want to go on to a technical school and in order to get through the technical school, say in a technical eleven, they require quite a bit of algebra. We give them this background so that they are capable of doing the work that technical eleven level.

Senator Carter: What use do they make of that algebra at the technical level?

Mr. Mullen: Presumably it prepares them for work that they are going to do in mechanics or some sort in sciences of some sort etc.

Senator Carter: I don't know of any technical courses that require algebra.

The Chairman: You are now talking to school inspector so he knows what he is talking about.

Mr. Mullen: Perhaps I should leave this to one of the provincial people to answer. Why is algebra such an important part of the technical level curriculum?

Dr. J. C. McIsaac, Minister of Education, Province of Saskatchewan: Well, I am a poor one to answer. I should tell you first, Mr. Chairman that I love math and I always have and I look back personally, and it is just a personal observation after a number of years at universities tropical diseases and forty other things but there is one course that I feel would be more good as a veterinarian than any other aspect of life with math—right straight through.

Now certainly it is useful and it is a very necessary thing as far as drafting and some of the finer aspects of mechanical courses are concerned. It is just a rudiment—just as you must learn the alphabet to speak and that is how basic I think it is.

I do agree that if it is higher math and that kind of thing—I don't know at what level the maths are given here but I do think and would agree too that you fellows have a lot of flexibility and lots of abilities of various kinds brought together here to develop this course is wide open in a sense as far as we are concerned. We work with you very closely and don't know, Lyle would you like to add anything? You are the factual man for the details of this sort.

Mr. L. H. Bergstrom, The Deputy Minister of Education, The Province of Saskatchewan: Well

think Mr. Chairman, I would say as the Minister has already pointed out that we are pretty easy as far as the curriculums are concerned.

On the other hand, I would say that for people who are going on to trade courses or technical courses are going to need the discipline that comes with mathematics. Algebra may appear to some of them as being somewhat irrelevant at the time they are taking it.

Senator Carter: Well, why not teach them Latin, because it would be the same for discipline?

Mr. Bergstrom: I don't know that much about Latin.

Senator Carter: The discipline of Latin and mathematics are very similar.

Mr. Bergstrom: Well, I am talking about things like the theory of equality, the theory of equations. It seems to me that in most technical courses including trade courses that the student will need to understand the principle at least involved in the theory of equations and he doesn't get it in arithmetic as such but he does in some elements of algebra.

Mr. Conger: Mr. Chairman, there are two points at issue as I see it. One is the specific issue of algebra and the other one that I think you are raising inferentially is how susceptible the Department of Education is to a change in its policy. I would like to speak to the latter because we have had experience with that.

We are very much concerned with people who got their grade ten and wanted to get their grade twelve because it was necessary for them to study for and write the examination at high school students take and this is most impossible within the time limit that an employer would allow for re-training.

Therefore, we made a presentation to Dr. McIsaac on the value of an adult twelve as they now have an adult ten and the Department has accepted this principle and it is putting this into practice and I believe it is the second province in Canada to do so.

While there might be some quarrel about the specifics of algebra, the principle that I have found in working with the Department of Education is that they are most receptive to changing policy and programs to suit adult needs.

This has made a tremendous importance for employment because the Public Service Commission of Saskatchewan has said that they

would accept this adult twelve as equal to Grade 12 which means that it will open up many government jobs for people who would not otherwise have them.

Mr. Mullen: You spoke about the material not always made suitable for the people in this area and we agree completely. It is our ambition to produce material which fits the situation in Canada and not the United States and which fits the needs of people in this part of the world, so they can understand what they are doing.

I think that is a very large point. The second point is that we have tried to be as pragmatic as possible in eliminating all the unnecessary and try to get right down to the meat of the program and give them only exactly what they need and that is why I gave the ham sandwich illustration.

We cut and dry it as fine as that and this is exactly what they need and this is what they don't need.

Senator Carter: I just want to tell the Minister that I am not against algebra. I graduated in math too and I like mathematics and it appeals to me but lots of students don't have that type of aptitude to do it. My question was posed in the context of what you are trying to do here. You are trying to find short-cuts to up-grade people, people who are handicapped and who have gone on and reached mature years and who haven't too much time left.

The point that I was taking issue with is having algebra as a compulsory subject for a fellow who is going to be a carpenter because he will never use algebra any more. He may not have the aptitude to do it in any event and so why is that compelled?

Now, if the Department would say fine, algebra is there but we won't insist on it and if they could put something else in its place . . .

Mr. Mullen: If you remember my case studies this morning you will remember Dave Walters the boy who had the bright yellow shirt and became a cook.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Mr. Mullen: He didn't take any algebra and I don't think Donaldson took any algebra. They had different goals and they didn't need it, but I think Senator, the one that wanted to be a mechanic did take algebra because that was necessary for some of his further courses. We don't compel anyone to take these things.

Senator Carter: It is not a compulsory?

Mr. Mullen: No.

Senator Carter: Now, I would like to ask one more question. Mr. Himsl, I was interested in your initial alphabet where you have 44 sounds. Apparently using that type of alphabet you found it worked and that it was not a hindrance?

Mr. Himsl: Senator Carter, that is Mr. Mullen's project.

Senator Carter: Well, the thing that came to my mind when I was listening to you was word recognition. Where do you start recognizing words?

Mr. Mullen: There is a variety of methods that can be used in teaching reading. Some people plunk for the phonetic method and some people plunk for the alphabetic method and some others the situational method and others the analytical method and the linguistic method and so on. I think we try to take an objective approach. Whatever works we will use and so probably people learning to read with these methods with IPA have some times—they get whole words, sometimes they learn symbol by symbol, sometimes they use a process by putting some letters together with other letters to make new words and sometimes the analytic process by looking at a word and breaking it apart to see how it is made so I think it is a variety of methods that we use.

Senator Carter: You are not sticking just to one particular method?

Mr. Mullen: We are not sticking to one particular method now.

Senator Carter: I gather this method is for illiterates, people who are not well educated. Most of the people who come to you would be familiar with the new way?

Mr. Mullen: Yes, and also we found too that probably for a person who is at a very low level of literacy that it is probably faster to take them back to the beginning and start with the IPA system instead of trying to build on what they don't know.

The Chairman: And are you teaching phonetic spelling?

Mr. Mullen: I don't think you would say that we do teach phonetic spelling. They learn it while they are learning their reading but later on they leave it behind when they go on to

traditional lithography. They use phonetic spellings while they are using lithonics which is part of the IPA system.

The Chairman: And they drop it because in their reading it doesn't appear?

Mr. Mullen: It does while they are working with IPA but then after they turn over to traditional lithography, the usual letter system, then they get away a bit from that.

Senator Pearson: I just have three small questions. I wanted to know what the cost is to each student here?

Mr. Conger: There is no tuition. Most of the students get Manpower allowances so they are paid to learn. If we were a provincial agency the Department of Manpower would pay the province a tuition fee but because the federal government is paying the cost of the ultimate program, no tuition or additional fee is paid to us.

Our students are paid mainly by Manpower some by Indian Affairs and some by the Municipal and Provincial Welfare Departments so all of them are on some kind of income.

Senator Pearson: They have no difficulty in getting in here because of this type of thing?

Mr. Conger: Yes. There are some rather specific requirements, particularly from the Department of Manpower and Immigration. They require that a person be out of school three years if they are single and be out of school one year if they have dependents. They do have to meet that kind of criteria but that's the only one.

The Chairman: The Labour Market?

Mr. Conger: No. The Manpower is not as demanding on us as they are on students of the regular Manpower programs. They allow the flexibility except that they have to be out of school for three years if they are single and one year if they have dependents.

Senator Pearson: How many months can a student remain here?

Mr. Conger: I don't think there is—we have legislated or laid down any specific time. The normal program would probably last roughly five months. The Life Skills program I believe is approximately four and a half months and the Basic Education program varies and due course people are given a schedule

which they are expected they should be able to achieve grade ten and we don't have an arbitrary sort of time.

Senator Sparrow: Our Committee is interested in Poverty and endeavouring to find a way to raise people above the poverty level not only financially but culturally and socially and what I am interested in is not how you do it but what you accomplish.

First of all I would like to know the record of success of your students, but before that I would like to know how many students you handle in a year and what your operation budget is so that I can relate it to a cost per student?

Mr. Conger: The number of students that we have in a year would be somewhere in the neighbourhood of two hundred and fifty. When I say 250 this would be in this current fiscal year. The cost for conducting our program for the first group which includes certain capital costs for equipment and so on is nine dollars per student day. Once the costs are—if the costs are amortized in that first course it works out to five dollars a student day.

Now, this is very modest in comparison—well, I would say it is well in line with what is paid out by the Manpower program.

Our costs are much more because we have a number of people who are involved in the writing of the courses, in the evaluation. We do our own recruitment of students whereas Manpower normally would do this and so on.

What we have done is calculated what the costs are to operate the program because this is the critical thing. We have got to develop methods that they can use in a wide circle in Canada. If not, if you need a beautiful place like this, if you need all of the facilities, it may be too expensive.

On the other side of town we are running the same program in a pretty shabby hotel to see what happens if we need all these facilities and we have been able to work out that it can be done just as effectively at the kind of cost figures that I have mentioned.

Senator Sparrow: Five dollars per client day?

Mr. Conger: That's right. This is after you take our equipment costs.

Senator Sparrow: And your record of success?

Mr. Conger: The record of success in Basic Education is perhaps more easy to measure. I

believe, and Vern will correct me on this, 53 per cent have achieved their grade ten but from an intelligence point of view, 83 per cent should have and so if everybody didn't have a Life Skills problem and other problems, we should have had a much higher rate than we have had. This however I think is a pretty good record.

I think our drop-out rate is about 18 per cent and this is a very favourable drop-out rate but the fact is—I suppose if Life Skills were more effective, if people didn't have quite so many home problems our objective might be to have 83 per cent achieve grade ten whereas 53 per cent now have that.

In terms of evaluation of Life Skills, it is much more difficult as Mr. Himsl mentioned when he attempted to interview people to find out what benefits the program has.

One thing we have observed, and we want to check this out much more closely, is that people do better in Basic Education if they also take Life Skills and this is . . .

The Chairman: Just a moment. What actually do you mean?

Mr. Conger: What I mean is Senator Croll that if in the morning they take Life Skills and in the afternoon they take Basic Education . . .

The Chairman: You are now talking about training and basic education separately.

Mr. Conger: Yes. They will do better than if they took basic education all day long. Now, this is supported by experiments for instance in the job core program in the United States where they said all right, the students will have basic education, the up-grading in the half days and vocational training half days but I think it stands to reason all day working on algebra and English and math can be saturating and perhaps a period of three hours a day is a maximum where you can benefit and in our next group of students we are going to set up a design so that we can be specific about the contribution that Life Skills might make to Basic Education and success in that.

The Chairman: Mr. Conger, the Americans said that three years ago and they spent millions of dollars. Why does it take so long to get into that, because it is obvious to those of us who are practical?

Mr. Conger: Well, Senator Croll, we have always operated on this basis of half days for Basic Education and half days for Life Skills.

One of the problems is the way our training programs are set up that . . .

The Chairman: Money?

Mr. Conger: Why we can't set up through Basic Education and vocational training and Life Skills. I think it could be done and I know that in Saskatchewan there is an attempt to work out a program of continuous in take in the Basic Education program so that people should be able to come in at any level and take Basic Education and take the occupational training half days or take Life Skills half days.

The Chairman: You don't have to meet that money problem. When you approach the federal government and talk about education they say no, and when you approach the federal government and mention training they say, "Yes, but you don't meet that problem."

Mr. Conger: No, but what the federal government has done is this. They don't recognize Basic Education for adults. They call it Basic Training for Skills Development.

The Chairman: That's right.

Mr. Conger: Yes.

The Chairman: Well, that is what I mean. You don't have to face that?

Mr. Conger: No.

The Chairman: The other people across the country do have to face it.

Mr. Conger: No, Senator Croll, it is only a name.

The Chairman: Yes, I realize that. When they make their application under education they are turned down.

Mr. Conger: That's right.

The Chairman: And then when they smarten up and make it the other way they get it. You don't face that.

Mr. Conger: The provinces know these rules.

The Chairman: By now, yes.

Senator Sparrow: Do a great number of your clients have emotional problems and if so how do you deal with that?

Mr. Conger: A number do and we had at one time many problems too and so we haven't got a full time counsellor so the students bring their problems to the teacher.

Now, we also make referrals to the local psychiatric clinic and I personally have had some comments from the psychiatrist to say how complimentary, if you will, their treatment in the program is but certainly all sorts of people have a lot of health problems.

The Chairman: You said that you would be able to handle about two hundred and fifty over the year?

Mr. Conger: Yes.

The Chairman: How many applications would you have that you couldn't handle?

Mr. Conger: I suppose we might refuse one thousand.

The Chairman: A thousand?

Mr. Conger: I would like to explain that a little further. Is there anyone here who would . . .

Mr. Al Leveridge: Four hundred names some of whom have been tested on are in our files at the moment. The numbers are rather misleading because a great number of people actually did not report.

Mr. Conger: But would you say that we have one thousand people coming each year looking for training?

Mr. Al Leveridge: Yes.

The Chairman: And you handle 250?

Mr. Conger: Yes, but Senator Croll, I must mention that the Department of Education is running an upgrading and occupational training program in Prince Albert at the Technical High School and I believe there are approximately four hundred enrolled in that program and so you see there is that program to provide a service.

The Chairman: You mean if they can't get into yours they can get into others?

Mr. Conger: It is not always because the standards are fairly high. The standards are fairly high to get into the Manpower Retraining Program and many people just can't get into them.

The Chairman: Your program?

Mr. Conger: No, the Manpower Program.

The Chairman: I realize the Manpower Program, but you make your own rules?

Mr. Conger: That's right. Some times they are very low.

The Chairman: And that is the intention?

Mr. Conger: That's right.

The Chairman: Now, then, does the provincial Department of Education then pick up where you can't operate?

Mr. Conger: The Provincial Department of Education has a contract with the Department of Manpower.

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Conger: And the Department of Manpower says we will buy training for so many people...

The Chairman: I see.

Mr. Conger: So you see it is in Manpower's hands, not the Department of Education.

The Chairman: Mr. Minister, when you say you would buy, say, five hundred places or two hundred places, do you insist upon the same requirements that Manpower does before you let them in or do you make your own requirement?

Dr. McIsaac: No, we don't make our own. The applicants they give us have already met theirs and that's it.

Senator Fergusson: Well, Mr. Chairman, Mr. Conger said that he did his own recruitments and I wanted to know what he meant by that.

Mr. Conger: What we mean by that is that when we decide that we are going to run a course—as you realize all the courses are experimental—and so we say well, we want iterates for this course or want people of certain characteristics for another course.

Now, we will advise Manpower, we will advise the Welfare Department, the Indian and Metis Departments of the Provincial Government and the Indian Affairs Departments but we will also do our own recruiting. I believe several hundred people come in voluntarily at say they would like to have training because they have heard about it.

We also do recruiting through the Indian and Metis Friendship Centre and we have gone to some employers and we have said who would you hire because we might like to have them in our training program.

To my own knowledge we have not, for instance, started knocking on doors to say is

there anybody here who is unemployed and needs training but this is something that we would be prepared to do.

Senator Fergusson: Well, you mentioned and I was just wondering what you meant by that. Supposing you have a woman that wants training but she has family responsibilities and cannot be away so much of the day to attend classes, would you be able to pay for the cost of a baby-sitter and give her the opportunity to attend classes?

Mr. Conger: I suppose we would be able to but we don't.

Senator Fergusson: You don't?

Mr. Conger: No.

Senator Fergusson: Is this a rule you have or has it never come up?

Mr. Conger: Oh, its come up to be quite honest with you. There is a real problem here.

Senator Fergusson: I know.

Mr. Conger: And some people have asked us if we couldn't operate some kind of a program for their children—the pre-schooler—but quite honestly we don't want to make the investment in that.

The Chairman: Is there a day-care centre in the city?

Mr. Conger: There are two day-care centres in the city.

Senator Fergusson: Would such mothers be eligible to put their children in the day-care centres?

Mr. Conger: If they can afford it.

Senator Fergusson: Are they free?

Mr. Conger: No, unfortunately.

Senator Fergusson: Well, they probably couldn't afford it I think.

Mr. Conger: I wouldn't think so.

Senator Fergusson: But you wouldn't be prepared to advance the money to them?

Mr. Conger: I wouldn't think so, no.

Senator Fergusson: There is one other question, Mr. Chairman, and I understand that Mr. Mullen mentioned a chap by the name of Donaldson who took the Social Aid Course?

Mr. Mullen: Social work aid course.

Senator Fergusson: And when he left you and went back to Edmonton to his family, he didn't use that, did he?

Mr. Mullen: Not directly, no, because he was too anxious to get back to his family to sort of prove his new start and get his old job back again but when I saw him the second time, he said he was going to try to make use of the training.

Senator Fergusson: I was interested in that because we have heard from many persons about the Manpower training where people would take a course of which they could make no use and then they went back to some other course another year and so on. This criticism has been made and I just wondered if the people could take or come back and take different courses such as a school aid course if he didn't make use of the social work course?

Mr. Mullen: Well, he could have except that the circumstances didn't allow it because we had finished our experimentation with that kind of training at that point. I think the people who were trained as school aids were almost entirely placed in schools. The schools had been working very closely with us.

Senator Sparrow: Would you be prepared at this point seeing your program ends in 1971...

Mr. Conger: We face that prospect.

Senator Sparrow: Facing that prospect could you tell us what your recommendations would be as far as the program is concerned?

Mr. Conger: Yes I would, senator. I would like to preface my remarks however with the fact that it takes the average school thirty-five years to adopt a new educational practise and so, if what we are doing now has value, we would expect it to be in general use in thirty-five years.

This is not specifically a criticism of education, but it is to in the adoption of new physical sciences, discoveries and so on. There is a need for a demonstration project, there is a need for some kind of marketing or dissemination of what we are finding.

We have courses that will be written that could be operated anywhere in Canada but the problem is will they be adopted.

We have had visitors from the Alberta Department of Education and from various poverty agencies in Manitoba that are interested in using all or parts of the program and we are going to provide a consulting service to

them to assist them adopt and adapt to serve their objectives and we anticipate the same relationship in Saskatchewan where we have had a very close contact with the Department of Education.

If we wrap up with just the course as printed, I would say in maybe 35 years but if we spent some time in marketing these programs then I would say there is a chance of them being implemented fairly probably in poverty projects in Canada.

Senator Sparrow: What period of time then? Ten years or five?

Mr. Conger: No. I would say that we will see some partial adoption this fall and so I can see this happening within the next five years, yes.

Senator Inman: I was wondering how many students go on to the Manpower training. What percentage?

Mr. Conger: I believe twenty so far have gone on to take either additional Basic Education a technical eleven, for instance and some have gone on to vocational training such as the cooks course and the small auto repair course. I believe the only figure I have right now is twenty.

Senator Carter: I believe there is something wrong with Mr. Conger's percentage.

This is an experimental project and you only just touched the surface as I see it in four or five years and you haven't done anything about developing basic texts and I suggest your basic courses are geared to the curriculum of Saskatchewan mainly and there are variations all across Canada that you are going to apply so if you are going to end up in two years—all these five years have done is to prove whether you should go ahead or not?

Mr. Conger: That is right.

Senator Carter: To see if it is feasible so that the main work is still to be done?

Mr. Conger: That's right.

Senator Carter: The main work I think that has been done is in the line of axis that Mr. Himsl showed us this morning because apparently there is some deficiency in our provincial programs, in our school programs. They don't—and that is what our school programs should be doing—giving these people the life problem solving skills and apparently somewhere they are falling down. You have

whole field to face there to find out where they are falling down and what can be done about it and this is another five year program I would say. However, I would like to ask Mr. Himsl a couple of questions.

Part of your skills, part of your procedure is to develop the student to the point where he can make some sort of a self-appraisal of his assets and his liabilities, his good points and his bad points. Now, how far along do you feel you have got in that? How long does it take before this process can start with any sort of success?

Mr. Himsl: Certainly people develop this insight in varying degrees, I suppose part of it depends on certain fundamental personal characteristics. We have had people—I can't talk about the students have now—but we have had previous groups that rejected it. And I can think of one person for example who would not—he saw what was happening, recognized the process and said I am not ready for that and I think perhaps that is a good answer to your question.

The process is obvious enough that people can check what is taking place and they do respond to it so that we find that everyone responds to some effect on them after the four to our and a half months training and some sort quite profound effects.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Mr. Himsl: What is kind of surprising and reassuring to us, Senator Carter is that we often get anecdotal reports from other people, former employers and new employers who say it is odd, I don't know what has happened to these people or that person. I knew them before and I know them now, but he is different and so it does take place.

We think we can now make an approximation of the kind of development we think takes place. We think we can describe it now.

Senator Carter: Yes, that was what I was getting at.

Mr. Himsl: We think we can identify that.

Senator Carter: Well then you still have a long period of research before you can really get it down to any sort of a tangible answer?

Mr. Himsl: Yes and to answer the question you are asking, we have more work to do.

Mr. Conger: I may say, Mr. Chairman, that we have opened this centre and started this program eighteen months ago so we have only had that period of time to test out what we have been doing.

The Chairman: Although your time ran before that?

Mr. Conger: It was incorporated in August of 1967 but by October of '68 there were only I think fifteen staff here and it was about that time that we had formulated exactly what we wanted to do and started to prepare.

The Chairman: Well, you originally came from the Department in Ottawa and you know Ottawa as well as anyone else does. Are they aware intimately, are the proper people aware of what is going on here through you?

Mr. Conger: I would say not.

The Chairman: If you say not it is a little disappointing to admit to us? What do you mean when you say they are not aware? You know how to communicate because you are one of the top communicators in the Department so how come you can't communicate with these people? You know who to communicate with?

Mr. Conger: That's right.

The Chairman: You don't think you got your story across?

Mr. Conger: No.

The Chairman: You need some help?

Mr. Conger: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Do you have any communications with Alberta?

The Chairman: No, I believe they do not have any trouble with Alberta.

Mr. Conger: No, we don't really have too much trouble with Alberta.

Senator Carter: I think this course, this Life Skills course is basic you know and it almost should be compulsory or I would say it certainly should be compulsory for a good many.

Mr. Conger said earlier at the outset that just to put somebody at algebra all day long isn't good but have you got to the point where you have found an optimum group beyond which things don't improve? Have you had time or have you had enough students to divide your

students into different groups, to different characteristics and this kind of thing?

Mr. Himsel: I know there are some things that don't work too well; some group things which don't work too well. Now, whether this is entirely a product of the group itself or whether they are products of the group plus the course, we have some questions there yet but we know that some mixes of ages and so on work better than others and we know something about size.

We know that twelve is about the number limit as otherwise the group tends to get intimidating and the people are more reluctant to develop but we also know there is a lower limit and probably eight or so are in that and if you get down below that you don't get an adequate set of dynamics taking its place.

I suppose I would say that we are closing in on what is the optimum arrangements. We know some things which aren't working too effectively and we try to avoid them.

Senator Carter: But you really haven't got around to the mix yet?

Mr. Himsel: No, we are working on combinations of that.

Senator Quart: I was just wondering what you are doing in Saskatchewan for a program of this type. I know in Quebec for a year and a half they have been adding things like this psychiatrist and so on and I am really not too familiar with what they have been doing beyond that but I'm not too sure about your set-up but just suppose you have a student and for some reason or other let's say there is a mental block for arithmetic, let's say.

What do you do? Do you have a psychiatrist come or do you send that student out? I understand now that they have this research—I just forget what they call this research perceptual something or other which I don't think too much research has been done.

However, there is a camp set-up where these students who have this mental block in whatever subject it would be—now instead of being considered stupid and laughing stocks in their class because two and two would make three for them—they just can't cope with it. It is a complete mental block. Do you do anything at all for this type of students?

Mr. Conger: I don't think we would claim that we do.

However, I do believe they have a technical term for this. Many of these problems seem to be cleared up by puberty but by that time you develop psychological problems and . . .

Mr. Mullen: If I may just make one comment that is we have discovered quite a few people who cannot learn in a certain particular way and so we try to hit them from the whole circle.

If they can't learn from a book, we try to teach them orally. If they can't learn this orally we try to give them a practical example and let them do something and if they can't learn that way we try a film script. We try a variety of learning methods so that we hope they will be able to absorb in some way.

Now, we can't naturally spend a lot of time on very isolated cases where somebody is perhaps sick for some reason, if he has a mental block against something. We haven't been able to go into any research of that nature.

Senator Quart: Well I think now more and more research is going on, is it not. Mr. Minister, have you any kind of research going on in that particular line in Saskatchewan because I know very, very well that this psychiatrist is going all out in Montreal. They are having a summer camp and I know at least ten or twelve young students that are doing remarkably well because they are getting extra training in these particular subjects.

I can mention one student that I know who is brilliant as far as any other subjects are concerned but ask him to add and he just can do it. I think now more and more research in that field should be done.

Dr. McIsaac: Well if I may answer, Mr. Chairman, very briefly—no, we have such research projects going on that we are sponsoring are involved in.

Mr. Conger and his group here have been our research arm in that sense. I could say a great deal more, Mr. Chairman, on what we think of this, but we have really no specific project.

I will say this. We have worked very closely with these people here and we are trying to implement many of the thoughts that they have developed here and the courses and so on in our own up-grading program that we are sponsoring throughout the province—not all of them under Manpower incidentally. We are paying for a good number of them ourselves through our Indian and Metis Department and

other departments that we are staging and I believe that we have about one thousand people this year over and above Manpower students as such.

We have thirty some odd centres in the province. For example, we have the Saskatchewan housing operation in Regina. We are operating very substantially the same kind of course here and we knew that the drop-out rate there three or four years ago was simply fantastic. They were dropping out at the rate of three or four out of five and they just didn't stay around to finish the seven months that it was supposed to take them to get to grade ten.

Now, we have adopted many of the techniques from here and I suppose many have come from elsewhere and other courses as well, but we are pretty happy generally. We see a lot of real possibilities to get back to what Senator Sparrow mentioned earlier and let's face it, we are dealing with the fact that the educational system as such in the past has failed many of these people.

It is just as simple as that and I hope to God, few, that it doesn't take thirty-five years to implement all of these recommendations.

The Chairman: Have you got that much time, Mr. Minister? I don't have that much time. I can't be around so I have to have quicker action.

Senator Quart: There is a college in the eastern townships just outside of Stanstead which is not government subsidized and it is very expensive. I believe it cost people roughly three thousand dollars a year but they do attempt to specialize in that type and there are students coming from many, many places to Stanstead but the government won't subsidize anything special for that.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Minister, you have thirty-five of these centres operating?

Dr. McIsaac: No.

The Chairman: Thirty-five years.

Senator Hastings: Oh, I thought you said 35.

Dr. McIsaac: No.

Senator Hastings: When you say you have a thousand in your department, do you mean a thousand Metis?

Dr. McIsaac: No. We have one thousand Metis and non-registered Indians. That is the name I apply to that. This is one thousand over

and above the Manpower program and ARDA programs and the like.

Senator Hastings: How many do you have in total in the schools when this training?

Dr. McIsaac: Well, I would be just guessing. We have different programs under different labels and I really can't tell you off hand.

Senator Carter: You said you have problems with communications with Ottawa. Does the science research council in Ottawa know of the research work you are doing here in the behavioural sciences?

Mr. Conger: No, they do not. They may know generally of the Newstart Program and there may be one person in the Department of Economic Expansion who sets up his advisory board or in an advisory capacity with the research council but I don't think they know specifically.

Quite honestly, Mr. Chairman, we have had more success in getting senators and members of parliament to come and see what we are doing than we get officials.

The Chairman: Mr. Minister, is there anything further that you would like to say.

Dr. McIsaac: I don't think so Mr. Chairman, except to say—it is a personal observation that I think the work that Mr. Conger and his staff and people are doing here is good work. I think Senator Carter mentioned here that many of the courses—the text I believe he said and so on and that are being developed and utilized here would be purely for Saskatchewan.

I don't think that is correct. I think they are really useful for here and really useful for many other areas of Canada. I don't think we can take 35 years and I think we do have to get busy and get more and do more on the things that we have learned in the 18 months of operation.

The Chairman: May I just say before we close that the members of the Special Committee on Poverty have had an interesting and almost unique experience today.

This summer we have travelled to the coast of Labrador, west to Alberta and north as far as the Yukon. In every area we have gone to people have outlined their problems, and one of the great problems they have is training and education.

Today at Newstart we have come across what proves to be an important part of the answer to the poverty problem. This is a real find for us. We have had a very valuable day here. This program has imaginativeness. I think they are onto something that may prove meaningful. They have developed new solutions to the old problem of adult education. They are trying to get away from old-fashioned methods and ideas that have not proven to be very successful.

Possibly every group that has come before us everywhere we have gone has hit out at the failure of the education system to benefit anyone other than the children of the middle class. Here they are developing some new answers to that problem.

We have been told today that if research extends far enough, and I think it will, it may prove to be a major step in getting the disadvantaged and the alienated back into the main stream of society.

It has become obvious to us from what we have heard and from what we have seen that nothing can really be accomplished without maintenance income. We also know that maintenance income alone is not enough. That is why we are so happy with what we have learned. If we are going to make an impact on the elimination of poverty, we will have need for more programs like Newstart. We will need much more of the same kind of imagination which developed these concepts.

On behalf of the committee, Mr. Conger, I thank you for what you have arranged. Thank you, Mr. Minister, for coming. It has been a very useful and productive day for us.

Upon resuming at 2.00 p.m.

The Chairman: I will now call the session to order. We have a brief this afternoon presented by the Prince Albert Work Training Program. On my right is Mr. Jim Byars, chairman of the training program, and next to him is Mr. Lloyd Land, manager of the program.

Mr. Byars will make a statement and will introduce the members of the board, and we will question all members after the opening statement.

Mr. Jim Byars, Chairman, Training Program, Prince Albert Work Training Program: Mr. Chairman, members of the board, first of all I would like to introduce to you Mr. William Tennont, a member of our board, and Mr. Al Leveridge and Mr. Victor Wiebe. I would like to say that

we are pleased to have the opportunity to address this committee and we hope that whatever we say to you will have some result.

Work training is a program designed to help employable persons who are consistently unemployed. The program is geared to the needs of the people it attempts to serve and in particular there is no standard set for entry into the program.

The only limitation being the exclusion of persons who are unemployed simply because there is no work available. Such persons need jobs, not work training. The main emphasis of the program is one of training and as distinct from work for relief and similar kinds of proposals.

The philosophy of this program is based on the belief that there are a number of persons in the communities whom everyone feels should be working and yet who are not. These persons are unemployed even at times when work that is available requires neither education nor training. It is believed that such persons are unemployed because they lack the ability to hold down a job. That is that they are unable to get to work on time, to accept supervision, to work with others, to accept minimum work standards or to work systematically.

The program serves as a transition between the world of idleness and the world of work providing work training, basic education and counselling.

The brief in your possession is a summation of how my board has attempted to carry out the program such as outlined with what we believe is considerable success. The brief, Mr. Chairman, and ladies and gentlemen, speaks for itself and we are ready to answer any questions which you may care to answer.

The Chairman: Thank you.

Senator Carter: Mr. Byars, this is a private project I take it, is it?

Mr. Byars: This was a private project, sir, in the Province of Saskatchewan but it isn't a private project anymore in that there are three work training projects in the Province now.

One at Meadow Lake, one at Yorkton and this one here in Prince Albert.

Senator Carter: Are you organized now on a permanent basis?

Mr. Byars: As far as we know we are on a permanent basis and as a matter of fact there has been talk of extending this program

ake in more people than we are handling at the present time.

Senator Carter: Well, have you been limited by the present time?

Mr. Byars: We have been limited at the present time to people from the community and to the space that we have to work in and until such time as the provincial government had a look at how this pilot project which we started had gone.

This year, we asked the provincial government to do an assessment of our program to see how we had done in the last three years and they are now in the process of just completing an assessment which I understand will give us the answers we are looking for.

Senator Carter: Well I gather you have been in existence now since December of '66, nearly three and a half years?

Mr. Byars: This is right.

Senator Carter: And you have had a total of only thirty-nine people pass through your course?

Mr. Byars: We have had a total of 42 pass through.

Senator Carter: Only 42?

Mr. Byars: That's right. We have only been handling on an average about 12 or 14 a year.

Senator Carter: How come? You say you were limited and I'm just wondering why you didn't handle more?

Mr. Byars: For the simple reason I don't think at without a larger staff you could handle more. I think that when you take a person into this program you have to pretty well give them private tuition—I don't think you can handle it on a classroom basis. This is what we were trying to find out when we started the program.

Senator Carter: How big a staff do you have?

Mr. Byars: We have one teacher and one work supervisor, work shops supervisor plus a manager.

Senator Carter: One teacher . . .

Mr. Byars: One work shop supervisor and a manager.

Senator Carter: And a manager. Three in all?

Mr. Byars: Yes.

Senator Carter: Three on the staff?

Mr. Byars: Yes.

Senator Carter: Now, of these 42 people, how many have dropped out since the beginning? How many from the beginning are still in it?

Mr. Byars: None of the original people are still in it. We never keep anybody any longer than it takes to either find out that they are not capable of accepting the knowledge we try to give them or that they are not going to work under the conditions that we set and we handle, as I say, about 14 per year of which perhaps forty-five or fifty percent will be successful in going to work and we have put on an average forty-five percent to work each year.

Senator Carter: So nobody stays longer than two years?

Mr. Byars: Nobody stays longer than a year. We keep them there an extra year if we think there is any chance of doing anything with them but after two months if we think there is no chance of doing anything with them we will let them go.

Senator Carter: I understood you to say in your presentation there that you had no entrance standards for these people?

Mr. Byars: When I say that we have no entrance standard I mean that we don't say that they have to have a grade two or a grade four or a grade six. We will take them at any of these grades if they need the help with regards to training.

Senator Carter: But you mention over on page two that you do reject people. You say that the manager of the Work Training Program attends these conferences that you have, these initial conferences and he has the opportunity to reject any referrals that do not appear to be suitable candidates for the program.

Mr. Byars: This is true.

Senator Carter: What criteria do you use to determine if a person is not suitable?

Mr. Byars: I would like Mr. Wiebe perhaps to answer that question with regards to criteria.

Mr. Victor Wiebe, Secretary, Prince Albert Work Training Program: Well senators the criteria I think basically can be put in the person benefiting from these programs. What is his background like? He doesn't need a social develop-

ment of activity. In other words, if he is the type of person who can consistently hold a job and function adequately on the job it is not likely that our program would be suitable for him because he has the basic skills and may be what he needs is improvement in some of technical aspects.

What we are more concerned about is the work conditioning; being able to take supervision or maybe having to learn to take supervision. Possibly obtaining educational qualifications sufficient to get him into even the elementary programs that are offered under Manpower.

Manpower for example, in our local programs at least—their basic programs start at a grade six level. We have very many people who are at a much lower level than this. As a matter of fact, I would say our average is probably less than grade six so some of them may require a course to bring them up to that basic level and maybe we operate selection on a negative basis. If we feel that a person can't benefit, then we reject him but if we feel there is any hope at all then we do try to bring them in.

Senator Carter: That still doesn't quite answer my question. What makes you feel a person can't benefit? How do you arrive at that assessment?

Mr. Wiebe: Well, . . .

Senator Carter: Is it just a subjective opinion that you form by talking to him?

Mr. Wiebe: No. I would say really that there are very few people that we do reject and I think in looking back I can think of very few people that we rejected but I think possibly one of the major reasons for rejection is where a person is completely disorganized in his personal life that he couldn't function. I am thinking for example of a person who is a chronic, almost skid row alcoholic so it is something to bring him up even to the entrance requirements for the very minimal levels that we can offer but there are really very few people that if they are not eligible for other programs, that we will reject.

Senator Carter: Well I understood Mr. Byars to say in his presentation that the type of people you deal with are the ones that are consistently unemployed but are employable.

Mr. Byars: Well, I think this is true Mr. Senator. I think what we are saying here is that these are people who have been on social wel-

fare for a number of years without doing work of any kind and who have got away from work habits.

Senator Carter: Yes.

Mr. Byars: And you have to again educate them in work habits. These are the type of people we are talking about.

Senator Carter: And if you have two basic kinds of courses, if I understand you correctly. If a person has a grade four level or grade six level and he wants a little upgrading on the academic side you provide that and if he is a little bit deficient in what you call social skills that is to say, doesn't get to work on time, doesn't accept criticism and doesn't like supervision, etc. and then you have another course which is social development of social skills. Does the same fellow do both for you? You only have a staff of three, one is manager, one is teacher and a supervisor. Now, who would do what?

Mr. Byars: Well, when I say we only have two we also have the help of one social welfare worker from the community, a counsellor.

Senator Carter: Who does this social development? We saw this being done this morning. We saw research this morning going on in how this should be done but you say you are doing it or trying to do this. How are you doing it?

Mr. Byars: Well, I think the way we are doing it is up-grading their education. The teacher does this.

Senator Carter: The teacher does that?

Mr. Byars: Yes.

Senator Carter: And who does the other job?

Mr. Byars: The work shop supervisor upgrades them in the skills they should have even hold minimal jobs, even laboring jobs with firms in the community.

Senator Carter: Yes but that is not giving them skills to be a carpenter or a plumber something like that. That is something quite different from changing his work habits. What does that?

Mr. Byars: Well, the work supervisor is the man who does that because he makes sure that he gets to work on time. He makes sure that he works for the number of minutes or hours that are required in the work shop. He makes sure when he has an empty work shop that he

ing the things that he is supposed to be doing and not standing around. There are all kinds of ways that he can show him how people work within the community.

Senator Carter: Yes, but how does that guarantee that he is going to do it when he gets it?

Mr. Byars: Well I think that the answer to our question is that 45 per cent have shown that they can do it when they get out because they have gone to work.

Senator Carter: You mentioned one trade here and you say the standard test for work activities that are demanded by employers and you say the same basic trade skills in carpentry are being taught in the work shops. Are you teaching any other trade skills?

Mr. Byars: We are not teaching any at the present time because we have not the facilities for teaching any. We are talking about motor mechanics for example; we are talking about other skills, plumbing and such like but during the three years that we have operated, we have been entirely with carpentry. The reason for this is (a), we have a pilot project, we wanted to know how this thing would work and (b) we are not going to go out and knock down houses in the community...

Senator Carter: Yes, but you say you are now going to get a pilot project and you are now into a new phase.

Mr. Byars: We are hoping to go into a new phase.

Senator Carter: You are still a pilot project?

Mr. Byars: We are still a pilot project, because we have never really gone into the new phase. We are taking steps right now to make quite a change before we go into the new phase.

Senator Carter: I misunderstood your answer. When I asked you if you were still a pilot project I thought you said it was a pilot project now it's not.

Mr. Byars: It is still a pilot project, but we need the government to assess it to see if we are not in the stage where we could go further than just being a pilot project.

Senator Carter: Now, you don't take in any males and why is that?

Mr. Byars: Well I think limitation of these is one thing another thing is when you have twelve people out of 40 or 50—males in the community who require this sort of thing that you just haven't got room. We need more room if we want to take more people in. We have taken in, as we have said two or three girls who have had business courses but have never been to work and we have tried to get them into a work training situation but in all fairness I think we should mention that up until the present time it has been strictly a male operation.

Senator Carter: How can you call it a pilot project then? Are you assuming that what will work for a man will work for a woman?

Mr. Byars: This we don't know. We hope it will.

Senator Carter: Why not start another pilot project for women?

Mr. Byars: No, no, I don't think so. I think what we have learned from the males is just as applicable to the women.

Senator Quart: I hope you are not trying to bring out discrimination against women because I notice on page two that all married men must be accompanied by their wives.

Mr. Byars: I think the answer to this is that we want to get the whole family into the program. We are talking about the woman knowing what the man is doing—this is what we are talking about. We are also talking about the social development angle within the program where we can get the women together in the evenings and they sit around and where we have had classes for sewing for the women in the evening and this sort of thing.

Senator Quart: But you are not against women?

Mr. Byars: We are certainly not against women. As a matter of fact, I would go a little further and say we were all for women.

Senator Fergusson: Are the majority of men in your program married or single men?

Mr. Byars: Mostly married men with an average of anything from four to ten children.

Senator Carter: Well you say that there was fifteen drop-outs in the program. Do you take the men and accept them on probation from four to eight weeks and you are not sure that they are going to continue unless they measure up to this probation period. Is that right?

Mr. Byars: Yes. This is what we have been doing.

Senator Carter: And then you make a judgement on it and then you say well, I think they are getting along and are going to be alright and then out of 39, you had 15 drop-outs.

Mr. Byars: Might I just complete what you said. You said that we take them for a certain period?

Senator Carter: Yes.

Mr. Byars: The reason we take them for a certain period is that we do get some people who want to join the project, not because of the benefit it is to them but because they get a little more money from social welfare while they are on the program and while we have them they do something.

This is why we have an assessment period to see if they are going to work out.

Senator Carter: Yes, but apparently the 15 drop-outs that dropped out later were assessed by you as generally honest to goodness people that were going to carry on.

Senator Hastings: The 15 drop-outs?

Senator Carter: Yes, they were part of the 39.

Senator Hastings: Well, they were evaluated and found that they wouldn't respond.

Mr. Byars: Yes.

Senator Carter: Oh, is this what you call drop-outs.

Mr. Byars: Yes.

Senator Carter: Well, I would not call that a drop-out.

Mr. Lloyd Land, Prince Albert Work Training Program: The main reason for drop-outs in the program is drinking problems. Now, some of them attend for six to eight months and a serious drinking problem develops and they know they are not measuring up so they just don't come back.

This, if I might go back to one of your previous questions about this selection at the case conference, the main reason why they are rejected at the case conference is that it appears from their social history that they have a serious drinking problem and this is the main single cause for drop-outs from the program.

Senator Carter: Let me get one thing clear from Senator Hastings point which he raised.

The 15 people who dropped out would not be ones who dropped out after four weeks probation or eight weeks probation. They are the ones who continued into regular classes and still dropped out?

Mr. Byars: Yes. They may have gone farming or they may now have a job and taken off and left us. These are drop-outs as far as we are concerned.

Senator Carter: You say some of these drop-outs have found employment. Do you know how many?

Mr. Byars: Some of them have and some of them have gone to Alberta to pick beets and some of them have gone to British Columbia to go to work in the lumber camps. We don't know where they go after they leave. All of a sudden they just don't come. These are drop-outs.

Senator Carter: And the ones that finish the course, do they do any follow-up on them as to where they go and what happens to them?

Mr. Byars: We do everything we can to find work for them and if I should say perhaps one of the greatest problems that the board has is What do you do with a man you have given working conditions to and you feel he is ready to go out into the world and go to work and there is no work for him? What do you do with him? If you don't do something you are worse off then you were at the start.

Senator Carter: You gave us a figure of who have passed through your hands in three and a half years. Does that figure include the 15 who dropped out?

Mr. Byars: Yes it does.

Senator Carter: So that actually there were who finished the course?

Mr. Byars: Yes.

Senator Carter: And can you give us an assessment of what happened? You said something I think about the fact that 14 completed and were placed in employment. That is 14 of the 42 and 5 completed the training course this is on top of page four—and have gone on further training. That's 19, 4 were suspended and 3 were coming back.

Mr. Byars: Well senator just to give you an example of what you are talking about.

ave a man in the course. We get him ready for work training and he wants to be a barber. He can go on to another scheme completely and take training as a barber and then come back to the city and be a barber in the City of Prince Albert and I think this is good. The up-grading makes him eligible for another course.

Senator Carter: When a fellow finishes his course with you and it comes to the problem of getting him a job, do you have a placement service where you would be capable of placing him yourself or do you place him through manpower or does he go off on his own?

Mr. Byars: We place him through Manpower and our manager goes around to the industries within the area of the city and tries to place the man.

Senator Carter: So it is a combined effort?

Mr. Byars: Yes, it is a combined effort. Manpower work very closely with us.

Senator Carter: So you do have means then through your own efforts and through Manpower records to find out how long these fellows hold a job and how long they carry on, is that?

Mr. Byars: This is right.

Senator Carter: Well can you tell us something about that?

Mr. Byars: Well I think we have a very successful record. Most of them are still working in the community. When a man goes out to work and he suddenly leaves there and goes to another job there is simply no way that we can follow him up.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, I would just like to know a little bit more about the Prince Albert training program. You say that it is administered by a board of directors of business and professional men. How many?

Mr. Byars: At the present time we have 11 board members all working gratis. We don't get any salaries to work on the board. They can't get any remuneration of any kind. It is done as a service to the community and if we drop out what we do is go out and look for the right man to do the job and we usually take him into it.

Senator Hastings: Are there any Metis or Indians or natives on the board?

Mr. Byars: At the present time, no.

Senator Hastings: Are there any people who you would classify as poor people on the board?

Mr. Byars: No, not that I would consider at the poverty level. I would say no. We have room for them if we can get them but to try to talk them into it is a more difficult question than trying to talk a business man or a man who is in industry. It seems to be quite a difficult job to get them to come on the board. When you say you have nothing to offer them, they just don't seem to want to do it.

Senator Hastings: You have yourself a manager and you have a teacher and a work shop supervisor. You are a full time employee then?

Mr. Byars: No, no. I don't get paid. I have been chairman of this board since its inception. It costs me quite a bit of money I can tell you.

Senator Hastings: When did the Department of Welfare become interested? When you started?

Mr. Byars: The provincial Department of Welfare at the city of Prince Albert who at that time was still running their own Department of Welfare because of the predominance of Indian and Metis people within the community and to the north of us, yes we would be interested in a program of this type and we said yes and guidelines were laid down which is when the board was started and we started from scratch. When we started I think we had two hammers and a shovel but very little to go with.

The city donated a building at the airport and the people who came into the program fixed the building up on their own and we started with hardly any money and nothing to go on but we made one damn good job of it.

Senator Hastings: So the motivation came from the Department through the business men?

Mr. Byars: The motivation first came from the Department of Welfare of the City of Prince Albert which is apart from the provincial department. We are one of the two cities in the province who administered their own welfare programs.

Senator Hastings: You mentioned a program designed primarily for those consistently unemployed. I wonder, could you in your experience tell me what is the greatest con-

tributing factor to a man in this position. Is it education? What is the greatest contributing factor to his being consistently unemployed?

Mr. Byars: Well this is my personal opinion and maybe be my board members have other ideas but my personal opinion is that the greatest factor to a man being continually unemployed is the length of time that he stays unemployed. That is after he has been unemployed for a year he couldn't give a damn about working. This is what my feeling is. When you are at home with a wife and eight or nine children and you can get welfare payments—granted, they are not much but they are enough to eke out a living—then what motivation is it to go back to work particularly when your wife says that you can't go back to work because I want you as a baby-sitter. I want to go downtown. This is my idea of the problem.

Senator Hastings: Continually being rejected and he will eventually accept it as being normal.

Mr. Byars: He does and I think the big saving grace of this program is not what it's doing for the man. I think it is what it is doing for the children who finally see their Dad go out to work.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Land mentioned the great contribution alcohol is making to your 15 drop-outs. How big a problem is it with respect to the entrance?

Mr. Land: We don't reject a person completely because he has had a previous drinking problem but we would like to feel that they have done something to correct it before bringing them in. Sometimes we find out if they receive a regular pay cheque they have done nothing to correct this drinking problem and its only a matter of economics that's why they haven't been drinking and this has caused them to drop-out.

Senator Hastings: How big a contributing factor is this to the number of men that you have arrive at your school to his position in life?

Mr. Land: Well I think it has to a greater or lesser degree an influence in 90 per cent of their lives. Ninety per cent of them are involved in drinking to a certain extent. In our social development we try to introduce them to community recreational resources whereby they can do something besides drinking in the beer parlour. We make tours of this building

here, the public library, and various other cultural and recreational facilities in the city. We take them on bowling parties and curling parties and try to introduce them to other recreational activities other than bending their elbows in the local pub.

Senator Hastings: Family involvement?

Mr. Land: Yes.

Senator Hastings: We have had an opportunity to review the Newstart program this morning and can you tell me what is the connotation between the two programs or is there any? You are operating one in the City of Prince Albert and they are.

Mr. Land: Well, we were into existence when Newstart came and had we not been I have feeling—I don't want to be quoted to say this but I had a feeling that Newstart when it came to the area that we were already in because we were already in it, they have given us support in developing our curriculum and making the centre available for recreational activities. They have supported the program which was in existence when they came which was fulfilling part of their concept of researching training methods and development.

Senator Hastings: So there is complete coordination between the two and they are not working at cross-roads?

Mr. Land: No. We try very much not to and that is why Mr. Al Leveridge is on our board and the relationship between the two programs has been excellent.

Senator Hastings: How much has the Department of Welfare invested in this program?

Mr. Wiebe: I'm afraid I don't really have those figures. I might just explain that the Department of Welfare foots the entire bill. They pay the full shot.

Mr. Land: And last year's budget was in excess of fifty-nine thousand dollars and the one before that was around forty-eight thousand dollars and the year before that, our initial year of development, we had something like twelve hundred dollars plus salaries and training allowance which would make a total budget of less than thirty thousand.

Mr. Byars: I think it should be pointed out here that when we talk about fifty-nine thousand dollars we are also talking about the payments that go to the trainees.

Mr. Land: The total budget excluding training allowances was fifty-nine thousand, eight hundred and some odd dollars last year.

Senator Inman: On page two you mention "Supporting services in the field of Family Counselling is provided by a special staff outside the Prince Albert Social Services Centre."

Is this a popular thing with your program and has it shown good results?

Mr. Byars: I think perhaps Mr. Wiebe, who is Director of Social Services for the City of Prince Albert might be able to answer better than I do, but before he does answer I think that this has been a concern of the board right from the beginning as to how successful we have been in the social aspects of the program and we think that we have a lot to learn yet in regard to how we handle this part of it.

Mr. Wiebe: The Social Services have been provided by our staff and one of the difficulties that we run into is that all of the trainees have been former recipients of welfare and they carry with them to the program a very negative attitude to our Department so it becomes very difficult for one of our staff to pick up and provide Social Services because there seems to be a carry over of fear of the social workers staff because somehow you might be able to cut them off.

There seems to be really a difficulty here and we carry I think for two years whereby the worker who works with that family while they are still on assistance, continues to work with them whilst they were in the training program.

We found a very negative feedback and we were getting very little progress. We tried to improve this in the last two years by dedicating one worker as carrying the responsibility for the counselling services at the training program. That worker is still on our staff and it is only part of his job to provide counselling service there but he is identified by the program as being the counsellor for the program and if the person is suspended or gets into financial difficulties or whatever while he is on the program, he sees a different worker now. He doesn't see the counsellor.

I think this has been working somewhat better but ideally, and I think the board generally agrees, we would like to expand the program to the point where it becomes worthwhile that we can hire our own counsellors and we will be much better off because that negative connotation wouldn't carry over.

Senator Inman: Do you find many of them come there on their own volition for counselling?

Mr. Wiebe: No, I think it requires reaching out.

Senator Inman: I was just wondering do any of the trainees find employment with the training program? I suppose it is too early to tell or do you think they might?

Mr. Byars: You mean within our program?

Senator Inman: Yes.

Mr. Byars: Well, the number of employees we have is so limited that this is a hard question to answer. I don't think there is any hope of them ever finding any work within our program when we are handling 12 to 14 people but if we do expand there may come a day when we can use some of these people within the program.

Senator Hastings: Do the trainees have any input into the program at all? Are you bringing them into the curriculum and so forth?

Mr. Byars: Oh, yes, quite definitely. I think one of the things that has been very successful within the program is that we also let them make their own furniture for example in their homes. We let them do things like that so they can take this home and put it in their own home and it becomes a part of them.

I could tell you that it is quite a rewarding experience to a man who has never done anything in his life to suddenly make a set of kindergarten chairs for his children or something like that. You would be surprised what this does for him.

Senator Hastings: Time and again we have found as we have travelled across this country that the man that can communicate in contact with others is the one who has been there. I don't know what it is but the social worker and you and I...

Mr. Byars: I agree with you and with this completely. I think that we tried to help this area by encouraging people who have been successful in the program and who have found jobs in the community to come back and talk to the people that we have on the program and we do our best to do this at all times.

Senator Fergusson: I think this is a very interesting program that you are undertaking and very worthwhile but there are one of two things that I would like to say.

You say that after someone has been unemployed say for a year or two that they lose interest in going to work and also perhaps that the wives acquire a certain freedom because their husbands have been at home to look after the children and they don't want to lose that.

If this happens then how do you get your people to apply to take it? You say the selection of trainees takes place at case conferences but how do you get them to come to the case conference or do you?

Mr. Byars: Well, they are on social welfare roles when we get them.

Senator Fergusson: Well, do you tell them that they are going to lose it if they don't come on your program?

Mr. Byars: No. They are given the opportunity for up-grading. I think in answer to—just to elaborate a little bit on what you are saying as to how a woman could take over.

Now, I didn't say this is any way to say that a woman rules the household or anything thing like this but just let me give you an example when we first started the program. We found that we were picking the people up to take them to work; the people working on the program. We had even got to the point where we had to enter the house and get them out of bed so that they would come to the program and we did this to get them to work.

We haven't got this any more. We have broken away from this because they now know that to be on the program they have to be ready to adapt.

Senator Fergusson: This is what I mean, how do you get them to be willing to take the training and as you say even get them out of bed to go to the classes.

Mr. Byars: Well, we started off on this basis but I think we are starting to get into the position where we know what we are doing.

Senator Hastings: It takes a lot of gentle persuasion.

Senator Quart: I think the gentlemen are to be congratulated for giving up their time and energy and their own personal money to work on a project like this. May I ask—maybe I missed it but may I ask just what staff you have?

Mr. Byars: We have one manager, a work shop supervisor who looks after the manual training within the program and a teacher, and

educator, who tries to up-grade their education, that is all we have.

Senator Quart: How many meetings do you have?

Mr. Byars: We have one meeting per month as needed and any other things that crop up we will have special meetings during the month. I think I should explain to you that we have a personnel program—a personnel committee and a budget committee and a program committee.

Senator Quart: I was very curious about the answer with regard to the furniture. Do the trainees who make the furniture—do you charge for the wood or the material or that kind of thing?

Mr. Byars: No, we don't. As a matter of fact it is mostly done from scrap lumber that we take from places that we knocked down in the first place and we salvage everything that we can. There is nothing wasted. It is usually salvaged lumber that we use.

We have a program or we have had a program where we have run short of work for them where we supplied tables, desks, and magazine racks to Canada Manpower and to different government organizations and we charge them at the rate that it costs us plus ten per cent and the ten per cent goes into a fund for social development within the centre. And the amount paid by these groups—that goes directly to your group?

Mr. Byars: That goes directly into the program.

Senator Quart: And would the trainee be permitted to make this furniture or any other type of handicraft and sell it themselves?

Mr. Byars: No. I think I should mention that we also have to be careful that we don't run in opposition to the retail merchant in the city.

Senator Fergusson: I was thinking about that because they object prisoners selling.

Mr. Byars: We have to be very careful.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Byars, what is your occupation?

Mr. Byars: I just retired about three months ago.

Senator Hastings: What was it before you retired?

Mr. Byars: I was the liquor board supervisor for the Saskatchewan Liquor Board.

Senator Hastings: Personally I want to commend you and all other members of the board or the leadership you have given to this undertaking.

Right across the country we know our problem is getting people involved, the haves to get an understanding of the problem of the have-nots and getting them to do something about it.

Mr. Byars: Well I think I can say Senator, for myself and for all members of my board that the reason that we are dedicated is that we believe that this is a project worth while and that everytime we put a man to work we are doing something really worthwhile.

The Chairman: Do you think you are loyal to your former employer—the provincial government by discouraging alcoholism?

Mr. Byars: In answer to your question, sir, I worked for thirty-four years for the Saskatchewan Liquor Board and I don't think I ever picked up in a drunk charge in my life.

Senator Carter: I just have a couple more questions, Mr. Chairman. You have two programs. You have this up-grading program—the trade program and manual training program and how do you divide the time between the two of them? Is it divided on an individual basis or do you have a set timetable for it?

Mr. Byars: I think Mr. Leveridge could answer your question.

Mr. Al Leveridge, Vice-Chairman, Prince Albert Work Training Program: The time is divided equally between the classroom and work shop in most cases. In some instances where a person requires only education, they already know how to work and they are striving for a certain occupational goal and they need more time in the classroom, they will permit more time in the classroom, but the way it is structured, half stay in the class and half stay in the shop. This gives a teacher a class of six who can give individual instruction to and it gives the class of six for the work shop supervisor who he can give individual instruction to and the classes alternate as you know with the exception of Friday when we have special social development classes which involve the social teacher and work shop supervisor and manager and social worker.

Here the trainees have an opportunity to do their own activities. They plan all of their

own social activities that are held after hours and on week-ends.

Senator Carter: Now, the type of people or person that you are dealing with is that way because as the Newstart people told us this morning they don't have or very few problem solving life skills and that in my mind is the most essential factor of the Newstart program and you people need that. Have you been able to work out or have you tried to work out with the Newstart some arrangements whereby your people can get in on this problem solving Life Skills Program that they have?

Mr. Byars: We haven't had any of our people attend Newstart up to the present time, sir, but we have had our teacher spend all of a time at Newstart during the summer time where she is getting the benefit of the program at Newstart and bringing it back to our program.

Senator Carter: So you are trying to incorporate that into your own program?

Mr. Byars: Yes.

Senator Carter: Where does that fit into your timetable. Do you have a special day for that?

Mr. Byars: We have laid aside Friday afternoon for that.

Senator Carter: Just the one day?

Mr. Byars: Yes.

Senator Carter: You haven't had time to assess that?

Mr. Byars: No.

Mr. William Tennont, Chairman of the Finance Committee, Prince Albert Work Training Program: Mr. Byars, I think perhaps it could be pressed upon the board that there are actually three programs. There is the academic up-grading, there is the basic skills and there is the social development part of the programs and there are actually three areas of the work and social development department. This will grow as an individual acquires confidence in himself through his up-grading and the academic and the basic skills. It is actually a three part program; not a two part program.

Senator Carter: Yes. I was concerned about this because I regard this problem of life involving skills as the most important thing that I have seen since I have been on this committee as relates to the problems that we are trying to solve. I think it is fundamentally

basic to the solution of their problems and Newstart themselves are trying to grope their way along and they are learning as they go and there is still a lot more to learn. Certainly your people need it if you are going to do the job.

Mr. Byars: I agree. I certainly agree, Senator Carter, and I would like to reiterate here that our board will be only too pleased to take any help that we can get from Newstart or anybody else that can teach us.

Senator Carter: I personally would like to see you doing this on a different basis than just on Friday afternoons with one teacher because apparently your whole program is only handling twelve they told us this morning that the grouping is important.

Eight to twelve is the best group size to work with and that is really not the important thing either. The thing that is really important is the mix that you have and you haven't got enough of a group to have that kind of a mix.

Mr. Byars: I think we should tell you now that I think the provincial government are most interested in enlarging the program to 25 or 30 of which half will be from the city and the other half will be from the northern part of the province into Prince Albert for the same sort of up-grading and education up-grading that we are giving them at the present time.

They are talking about enlarging the program.

Mr. Leveridge: There is a very close relation between Newstart and the Prince Albert Work Training Program and the Basic Education Program which Mr. Tennont referred to is our Basic Education Program and there are other areas that certainly we will be getting involved in.

As I say it is hard to describe the relationship but I would say it is a very close relationship.

Senator Carter: Well you were there this morning and Mr. Conger told us of the group that he had 83 per cent I think were capable of reaching grade ten whereas only 53 per cent actually achieved it and the difference was due to the lack of these problem solving skills and the ones who took the problem solving skills had a much better chance of making progress of to achieve the grade ten and the two complemented each other and helped each other.

I was just wondering and I would think if you got together it would be to the benefit of your group.

Mr. Tennont: I think you will see work training programs getting involved more in the social development programs. I think you should also understand that the area that we work with the group is probably much more difficult than Newstart.

We start with the Basic Education at grade three or even less and some of them are even illiterate when they come to us and some of them have been third generation welfare recipients and this type of person is very difficult to change habits.

The Chairman: Mr. Byars, I think your secretary said a few minutes ago that you have to call upon welfare from time to time for specialists. Since they pay the whole shot, what do you do that they could not do themselves and have adequate staff available?

Mr. Byars: What you are saying, sir, is could the present city program of welfare handle the program that we are handling at the present time? Is this what you are asking?

The Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Byars: Well, I think the big thing we do is most of us are a little closer to the community and I think we can get better co-operation from the people who should be putting these people to work as they are ready to work.

I think we are able to go into the community and sort of spread the good word that these people need a job and that they are ready for employment. The second thing is I think that some of these government deals can just bog down a little bit and they don't go any further.

Senator Quart: Maybe you people are more influential in getting or helping to find jobs than the welfare department are.

Mr. Byars: Well, this is exactly what I am trying to say but when we go out we get results. I hate to admit this but I am very proud of our program. I think of the weaknesses of our program is the lack of publicity that we give to it within the area.

I think we should be spending more time on TV and radio and the newspapers about the kind of work we are doing so that everybody in the community is aware of what is going on within our program.

Senator Sparrow: Is there a shelter work shop in Prince Albert?

Mr. Byars: There is a shelter work shop.

Senator Sparrow: Do you have any clients that come from the shelter work shop to your work shop?

Mr. Byars: No we don't.

Senator Sparrow: Are the clients in the shelter work shop there permanently or do they find jobs for some of their people?

Mr. Byars: I really don't know.

Senator Sparrow: Do you know how many could be in the shelter work shop in Prince Albert?

Mr. Land: Thirty, I believe. They may be regarded to the point where they cannot function as citizens apart from the shop.

Senator Sparrow: My next question is...

Mr. Byars: Before you get to the next question might I make this observation. We are not talking about retarded people.

Senator Sparrow: I realize that. Under the shelter workshop program and under your program they are under the Department of Social Welfare or at least grants come from it.

Mr. Byars: Yes.

Senator Sparrow: Have you given any thought whether that in fact should be under the Department of Education rather than the Department of Social Welfare?

Mr. Byars: I haven't really given it any great deal of thoughts and I would worry very much if it was strictly under the Department of Education because then I think the emphasis would be on the educational part of the program and I don't think this is the main part of the program. I think the mainpart of the program is work habits more than it is education.

I think the man with grade four is still able to do a full days work if he is able to work.

Senator Sparrow: Do you feel that there is a duplication of services in the city of Prince Albert where you have the Newstart program, your program and the shelter work shop program, and so on. Would you be in favour of bringing them all incorporated into one program training, education and work training?

Mr. Byars: I don't have an answer to that but I would say that I think when Newstart has completed their job here that they will be in a position to provide this sort of a program along the correct lines. I think this is what they

are trying to attempt now. With regard to the shelter work shop and our program, I think they always have to be separate. I can't see any joining of the two programs.

The Chairman: Has it ever occurred to you or the members of the board that your incorporation as a non-profit organization provides a means whereby the federal government has to pay 50 per cent of the shot, otherwise the provincial government would have to pay the whole shot?

Mr. Byars: I think I can give you a fair answer on that one. I have never looked into who pays the shot for this. I have always looked at this as a worthwhile project and I don't give a damn who pays for it.

The Chairman: You are a voluntary organization and the common thing, of course, is to go to the public and have public contribution to these things, but this is entirely governmental—no public contributions at all.

Mr. Byars: Well, there are no public contributions, and I don't know how you would get public contributions. The only public contributions you get at the present time are through members of our board giving us their time, which is worth money to them to operate this sort of a program.

Senator Quart: Do you ever ask any of these service clubs such as the Kiwanis, etc. to take say three or four or five of these trainees for luncheon once every two months or something to let other groups know that these people are looking for jobs?

Mr. Byars: No.

Senator Quart: Well, I know that this is being done.

Mr. Byars: Well, I am certainly prepared to try anything.

Senator Quart: It was just an idea.

The Chairman: Mr. Byars, to you and to members of your board we express our thanks for this presentation today. We are aware of your interest in the poor, and this is one of the ways that we hope to work our way out of the difficulties—by having citizens who are better off taking some interest in assisting those who are less fortunate. You are one of that group, and you stand to be commended. Thank you very much for coming here this afternoon.

Mr. Byars: Thank you, Mr. Senator.

The Chairman: Members of the committee, since this morning we have had two medical people who have asked to be heard in connection with our subject of poverty. They wish to present two short briefs, and I thought it would be of interest to hear them.

On my right is Dr. R. G. Green. Dr. Green was born and raised in Saskatchewan, and has been in general practice since 1948. He has a great interest in social aspects, and he has a point of view which he has put to me which I think the committee ought to hear.

Dr. R. G. Green: I think to start this off I would like to tell you that I found one of the ways to combat poverty. Everybody talks about it but nobody does anything about it and I feel you have to help these people to help themselves because you can't really help them until you know what the problem is.

Over this last couple of years I have been doing a considerable amount of work. My practice is mainly—well, it is all general practice but I get a great number of Indians who in this particular neck of the woods have an average income I would say of twelve hundred dollars a year or less.

I relate their income to their nutrition and nutrition to their income—it is just a vicious circle. If these people do not or anybody doesn't get enough protein, you don't get enough vitamins, more particularly vitamin B3 and if this happens you have perceptual changes occurring which in themselves don't mean much but there are also other changes which go along with it which are fatigue, aches and pains and they don't want to work and the worse they feel the more poorly they eat and the more poorly they eat, the greater the problem until they become incapacitated.

Now, this is an example of what I have been talking about here. What I have written on the board here—this was a little girl of ten who came to me complaining of stomach aches and headaches and I found out very quickly that she had perceptual difficulties. She had nothing physically wrong with her to explain these aches and pains and so on. I wrote her name on a prescription pad and asked her to write what she saw and I am not much of a writer but this is—I wrote Ann Marie out here (indicating) and this girl put an 'a' over here, an 'a' up here, and the whole thing is completely screwy.

Not only that but these words proved while she was looking at them and this girl was in

the top third of her class in grade four and during the year she dropped to the bottom and she was wondering whether or not she would pass.

Now, she came to see me in time and I put her on a proper diet which is high protein and low carbohydrates and put her on big doses of vitamin B3 which is nicotinic acid which is as cheap as dirt and within a month she was fine.

This other little girl twelve years old, and really don't know very much about her except about her school work and so on. She was a little Indian child which they brought in here to the residential school and she came in complaining of headaches and a sore back and so on and I wrote out Saw, Was and 69 and 96. She was born in '57, so she was twelve and half years old and she couldn't read it and she didn't look as stupid as that and I asked her to break down what she saw as compared to what I had written. I wrote my Saw and Was out here on a prescription pad and this is what she saw.

Now, this is Saw and Was (indicating) and you can figure that out you are a better mathematician than I am. Here is 69 and 96. She doesn't know which is which and again the words move around.

Now, this was on the twenty-third of January this year and on the seventeenth of February with a few vitamin pills she was able to write 69 and 96 and Saw and Was with no trouble.

This to me suggests considerable problems in our society are due to children who have perceptual difficulties like this. I recently ran a survey of eleven hundred school children supposed to be normal and I also made up a test which is supposed to be very rough but I gather that there is about fifteen percent of the children that have perceptual difficulties and by perceptual difficulties I mean that by trying to read a book, the words come this way, get bigger or smaller they move around this way (indicating) and they jump up and down. When they look in a mirror their face gets big or small or wavy was out at the penitentiary this morning and saw a fellow who was shaving with two mirrors which is something I have never heard of and he denied the fact that his face changed but after staying around for awhile I found out that he looked in this mirror (indicating) and would take a few strokes and then when the mirror got crooked, he looked over here and this could be a very big problem.

The children come in and adults too but I am particularly interested in the children, complaining from anything from sore ears to sore feet. They complain that they can't see, they complain that their eyes get sore, that they have earaches, backaches or anything at all that aches they've got it, but usually only one at a time fortunately.

I have had them checked by the optometrist and ophthalmologist and they can find nothing. A lot of these children are supposed to be hard of hearing and the mother says that she will yell at them and that it doesn't make any difference at all—they hear what they want to hear and you have that checked by the otologist and nothing is found.

The pain and aches—if I find nothing when a child comes into the office I start asking them about perceptual problems and if they have them well then their pains and aches are pretty well surely due to their change in perception.

The main problem as I see it is not the perceptual changes but the side effects. The children and adults suffer fatigue. They are just too tired—the kids to play after school and they go and lie down and the mother thinks this is a real good idea because it gets the kids out of the road and they are not making any noise.

The children are tired, the adults are tired and a tired adult won't work and a tired child won't do school work. They are so tired, a lot of them, they can't sleep so their sleep is disturbed even though they are in bed, they are waking up, they are calling out because they have nightmares and a lot of them were the same and so on.

They also don't eat properly and this is due to changes in the taste. If their milk tastes rotten, they won't drink it. They will tell their mother to take it off the table and that is all there is to it. They get cranky, they are depressed and everybody gets unhappy and the thing is just a vicious circle—the longer they have it, the worse they get sort of thing. There are some happy aspects however.

It's a cyclical thing which seems to be worse some days than others or some weeks than others and sometimes they are fine and have no complaints and months later they will be complaining very much.

Now, the state I should think would be interested in this because these are the children and adults who end up in hospital being worked up with x-rays and cardiograms and things like that.

The hospital beds in this town are \$45.00 a day and if you have them in for ten days having x-rays and one thing or another plus the fees for this and that you have gone through six, eight, or one thousand dollars. In my opinion most of them need to have a few tests and a proper diet given.

Now, the diet is the problem. You noticed the other day that some American senator was talking about breakfast cereals; most of them being equivalent to a shot of whiskey. I think this is quite true. These people that live on bread and pop, potato chips and candy and stuff like this are not eating properly and unfortunately the longer they do this, the more their taste becomes confused and they just don't like meat and they won't eat it.

Meat is a major source of Vitamin B-3, now this vitamin occurs in every cell in the body and it is used in cell metabolism, mostly cell breathing. It changes to another substance to be used by the brain and this is where we think the perceptual changes come from.

If you don't get enough, the brain just doesn't work right and you give them some and they get better. This is how they got to call the condition pellegra. In the early nineteen hundreds this was the major scourge of the southern states and I think the world. The mortality rate was I think thirty-five percent and in the mental hospitals a figure of about fifty percent of the patients at that time were pelegants. I have read a few books on pellegra and nobody really diagnosed it until I would say about the third or fourth stage and this about as equivalent as diagnosing cancer of the breasts when you have metastasis in the bone. If you can diagnose it quickly and treat it quickly you get results in no time and I feel if you get results—if you pick these things up in little fours, fives and six to ten year old children, that this child is going to be a producer during his lifetime rather than a drag on the economy.

These Newstart people—these alcoholics and others, have their own difficulties. Either they won't eat their own food or they won't buy because they have no interest and this sort of thing is equivalent to drowning in their own problems because the basic problem which is an increase in an intake of Vitamin B-3 has never hit and they get worse and worse and it is a vicious circle.

You start with the young with a poor diet and this is due to several reasons. A, the parents don't know any better and B, they think

they should make the child happy by giving them chocolate bars and pop and toast for breakfast and so on.

The profit on carbohydrates in cereal and so on is astronomical in regards to the actual cost, whereas the cost of bacon is say a dollar twenty a pound and everybody says they are not making any money. Also the parents can't afford this, and it takes a lot of effort to cook meat properly and fish and things like that that will delight the eye as well as the tongue. It is a lot easier to throw in a piece of toast in the toaster than it is to scramble a couple of eggs.

They get their vitamin deficiencies, they get their perceptual changes and this goes on and on and on by the time they are a teenager as far as I am concerned, a number of them have this perceptual trouble and start thinking that there is something wrong and they start using dope and LSD and all this sort of junk just to find out what is going on.

The point is a lot of them just take it for fun but the children that do have perceptual difficulties, when they take marijuana and LSD and so on they get deeper into the hole and it is even more difficult to get them out.

A lot of the people in the penitentiaries—I go out there several times a week—have this difficulty and I suspect that a good number of cases is due to the fact that they have clinical pellegra that they're in there. It is a vicious circle sort of thing. These children fail their grades and in this way they are not doing what society wishes them to do and they fail because the words are moving around or somebody is yelling at them all the time.

When they go for a walk they feel like they are walking off the ground—about this high (indicating) they feel like the ground is moving and so on.

When they are involved in this their parents are mad at them, their friends get annoyed and society doesn't like you to fail no matter what you are doing and the more you fail the more annoyed you get and you do things for which you end up in the penitentiary.

In my mind the condition is very simple. It is easy to recognize and it is easily treated. The vitamin pills—it is a single vitamin which I use called nicotinic acid that also comes in a niacinamide form and I can buy these pills in New York for \$8.75 a thousand grams which would be equivalent to about a three month supply. They cost quite a bit more here due to the economic factor and one thing or another but I won't go into that.

I also feel it is a pre-pressure to schizophrenia and I feel that if these kids are diagnosed up until they are ten or twelve years old and they go on and on there are periods where they are not thinking right and they become prolonged and much more resistant to therapy.

I treated these children, these two kids here, for two weeks or three weeks and they were better. If they were sixteen it would be at least three months or maybe eight months and if they were twenty or thirty it would take a couple of years so you see it is almost a geometric progression as far as age goes.

As far as the Indians are concerned, I feel in this area and I suspect all over the world that the major problem for a good number of them is nutritional and as I said their income might be twelve hundred dollars but I doubt whether this would include family allowances.

If you don't eat you don't want to work and if you don't want to work you don't eat so you end up exactly the way they are and I feel with the major work on education mainly through the schools, through the children because children are the ones that we have to hope for because we are going to have to write a good number of these parents off because they don't seem to want to learn. They still keep on smoking and I suspect they will do the same things with their eating habits.

The problem as I say is simple. I think the cure is not nearly so simple but I do think if we do get the children eating properly some of the problems will solve themselves.

The Chairman: Thank you very much, doctor.

Senator Quart: As a matter of fact, Doctor Green, this morning I asked this question about perceptual difficulties although I couldn't really think of the word at that time.

I know that there is a tremendous amount of research going on with this problem and I wanted to know if there were any research programs being initiated for these children and I don't believe that there has been anything new set up in this province as of yet.

Dr. Green: Well, there is a great deal of investigation into this perceptual field and the difference is that it appears to me that you can diagnose a thing but nobody does anything about it and what I am suggesting is if these conditions are due to the fact that they haven't got the vitamins, just give them the right vitamins and we will see.

If they get better, fine, and if they don't we could leave that problem.

Senator Quart: Well, let's say a child is in grade ten or eleven and it is physically perfect and is normal in every other way but he has a mental block as far as mathematics. Would this apply as well?

Dr. Green: I really can't say because I really haven't investigated inversions and all this kind of stuff. I suspect there are several reasons for this but I also suspect that a good way to find out would be to give them a test. If they get better, fine, and if they don't, it is just too bad.

Senator Carter: Doctor Green, is what you have told us just from your own observations?

Dr. Green: Yes.

Senator Carter: There has been no surveys carried out or at least these cases are mostly among Indians or are they?

Dr. Green: Well my practice consists I suppose—well, almost eighty percent Indians but certainly occurs in the white people too.

Senator Carter: These two little kids were aliens, were they?

Dr. Green: One was and one wasn't.

Senator Carter: And there has been no general survey?

Dr. Green: Well as I say I devised a test or I am in the process of doing it and I am testing a test sort of and I have eleven hundred tests made on eleven hundred children from grades two to I think to eight in this city and I also did a school out of the city.

Senator Carter: Are you doing this on your own initiative?

Dr. Green: Yes.

Senator Carter: And no government has been in on it yet?

Dr. Green: No, but I need some money though. I found according to my test, which is perfect by any means, runs from anywhere from five to forty percent of any given class. Now, that means that the forty percent are the problem classes.

Senator Carter: Is the test devised so that you could relate it to percentage and to income brackets and things of this nature?

Dr. Green: Well, there are a lot of tests and a lot of testers but the tests are given at the

different school levels but generally speaking I would like to see this type of test given in all schools.

Senator Carter: I see.

Dr. Green: Poverty and poor health go hand in hand. This of course is a vicious circle as well.

Senator Carter: I remember a hearing we had in connection with the cost of living in Montreal where we had a witness, a nurse who came before us told us about the handicapped babies being born because of the mothers being on welfare and not getting the proper nutrition and that impressed me very much. I don't know why we haven't dug into that a little further because it is related to this.

Dr. Green: Yes. This one little girl I suppose their income would be eight thousand dollars a year and they have around seven or eight children and the parents are—I suppose the father has grade eight and the mother is the same and she is now working at Newstart or one thing or another and what would happen is that the Dad would eat sausages for supper and he is going to eat say three or four of them, and some of the other bigger girls as well, they wouldn't have this problem. However, some of the smaller girls who would eat bread and doughnuts and tea would end up having this type of problem.

As a matter of fact I had a nutritionist go out there and he noticed that they were living on a marginal diet and as I say these were people who were living on say eight or nine thousand dollars a year.

These people are not stupid so it is still a matter—when I went to school the teacher told me to eat eggs for breakfast and this, that and so on but the kids don't do this now.

The Chairman: Well let me just say this: Dr. Green had an idea and I thought this would be a good sounding board for him. We are interested particularly in poverty, and this I think was justification for giving him the platform, since the perceptual difficulties in this case belongs to the government.

Dr. Green, we would like to thank you very much for coming here today with your brief and trying it on us. We hope you go a lot further with your project. Thank you very much.

The Chairman: I have a brief here from Dr. O.K. Hjertaas, the medical director of the Prince Albert Community Clinic. He is a physician and surgeon. Dr. Hjertaas was born in Saskatchewan and has been practising in Prince Albert for twenty-five years. He has a statement to make to our committee.

Dr. O. K. Hjertaas, Medical Director, Prince Albert Community Clinic: It is my belief that every Canadian is entitled as a basic right to the best Health Care that modern scientific knowledge can provide.

It has been shown that when adequate Health Care Facilities are readily available, these are utilized much more fully by the well-to-do, than by the lower income groups. It is also known that poverty and illness go hand in hand. Draft rejections for World War II in the United States were 25 per cent higher in the lowest income group as versus the upper income group. Health Care Programs for poverty groups in the United States have found that making suitable facilities available was only one small step along the road to providing adequate health care for these people.

Methods of providing a desirable level of Health Care will probably vary in different parts of Canada—but for this district I believe a workable plan could be arranged along the following lines:

(1) A social worker should be attached to each Medical Clinic.

Co-ordinating Social Workers should be stationed at the Health Region Office and the City Welfare Department. They should be responsible for bringing these people in for regular check-ups, Cancer detection examinations, cardiac follow-ups, diabetes follow-ups etc. Prenatal and well baby care, etc., are only small parts of our total health needs. Transportation and adequate secretarial help for the social workers to ensure proper continuity of care and home counselling will be needed.

(2) One or more home care nurses should be attached to each clinic. They should visit each patient leaving hospital until they are satisfied that a cure has been achieved, and in co-ordination with the social worker, the physiotherapist and the physician, make certain that all the necessary steps are taken to attain that end.

(3) A Nutritionist should be attached to each clinic to advise on proper diets, not only for specific diseases as requested by the physician, but also to be certain that adequate

health—giving nutrition is maintained amongst this underprivileged group.

(4) Ambulance Service should be provided free of charge, at the discretion of the Social Worker or the home nurse, to bring patients to and from the clinics, for visits to the physician the physiotherapist or even the Nutritionist.

(5) Free dental services should be provided.

(6) Free prescription drugs under an adequate follow-up program as outlined above should be provided.

(7) Nursing Homes must be brought under Hospitalization Coverage.

(8) The deterrent fees, which act as another effective barrier to Health Care for the poverty group, must be abolished.

(9) A system of payment for these ancillary health service personnel that would not penalize the physician, but would in fact offer financial incentives, must be found. Such a system could in fact very probably reduce our present excessive hospitalization burden.

The above list of recommendations is by no means exhaustive, but I suggest that its implementation would provide a beginning in the provision of health care to the poverty group.

The Chairman: You know, doctor, there are some parts of Canada that still do not have medicare.

Dr. Hjertaas: Yes, but it is coming pretty rapidly.

The Chairman: By the end of the year there will probably all have it, but you are improving on what there is at the present time?

Dr. Hjertaas: Just providing medicare is not enough. There are special people who have special problems and certain steps must be taken to ensure that they make use of the facilities that are available.

Senator Carter: When did medicare come to Saskatchewan?

Dr. Hjertaas: 1962.

The Chairman: It was born here.

Senator Carter: Well, how would this sort of thing fit in to this organization?

Dr. Hjertaas: In Prince Albert we have four clinics all providing the same type of service most of whom have a pretty broad spectrum of specialist and general practitioners and service.

It seems to me that these ancillary health personnel could be attached to each of the clinics and just provide the additional service. Now, under fee for service set up as medicare practised here, if we were to hire nurses for our clinics, the doctors would have to pay her out of this fee for service payment.

If we were to hire a home-care nurse, the doctor would have to pay for her out of this fee for service payment so a system has to be devised or else these people must be found by some other agency and attached to the various clinics which then would not interfere with the present set up.

Either an alternate system of payment must be developed to provide incentives for the doctors to provide these additional services or else someone must pay their way.

Senator Carter: You mentioned free drugs and that sort of thing. To what extent is that provided now?

Dr. Hjertaas: It is not provided.

Senator Carter: Not even for the children?

Dr. Hjertaas: No.

The Chairman: What about people on welfare?

Dr. Hjertaas: Oh, people on welfare, yes, but poverty groups extend much further than just welfare.

Senator Carter: This isn't perhaps related directly to your group, but coming back to the question of health in Canada, aren't we tackling this from the wrong end? Shouldn't we be putting more emphasis on prevention? I mean, I just heard that today about nutrition and if we did eat the proper foods we would be lessening our problems?

Dr. Hjertaas: That's right and if we can devise a different system of paying for our health services we can encourage doctors to prevent illness.

You see what happens under a fee for service system we don't get paid unless someone is sick and comes to us and the system is somehow basically wrong. The sicker that the patient is and the more hospitalization that the patient requires, the more money the doctor gets home.

Now, there are ways and means. The fee for service system is a sacred cow to the medical profession but there are places in the world, notably the Kaiser plan in New York City and

some of the other health plans in New York City where doctors and laymen working together have overcome this.

Doctors are reimbursed better for keeping people well than they are for treating illness. The whole thing involves simply the doctors and the hospitalization being tied together so the incentives are there to cut down on the cost of hospitalization and health care and see that the doctors share the profits from the savings that are made to the taxpayer through that system.

Senator Quart: As a matter of fact, doctor—if I am not mistaken it was Dr. Winder of New York who came before the Senate Committee on Health about four months ago and he gave a very interesting talk just along the lines that we are on now and in fact some of the doctors on the Committee said "Well, if you are going to get across, we are going to be out of business".

The Chairman: Yes, I remember that. I was there.

Dr. Hjertaas: And the moment that the doctors are well paid the incentives can be worked into the systems to pay us and encourage us to keep people well instead of always treating illness after it has arrived.

Senator Carter: You say that you have four medical clinics in Prince Albert?

Dr. Hjertaas: Yes.

Senator Carter: In Prince Albert alone?

Dr. Hjertaas: That's right.

Senator Carter: That's one for how many people?

Dr. Hjertaas: Well, we have a total population of about fifty thousand.

Senator Carter: And would that be the average for Saskatchewan?

Dr. Hjertaas: I am not exactly sure of what the patient ratio is but in Prince Albert we are fortunate or unfortunate in having group practices throughout so we have no doctors' practising alone in Prince Albert.

All of us are in our groups so that we have within our clinics interns, nurses, pediatricians, surgeons etc. also available on consultation. I think we have a good quality of service but we have four clinics for approximately fifty thousand people.

Senator Carter: Now these proposals that you would have, have you got the personnel to man any set-up like that?

Dr. Hjertaas: We are short, but we are not that short and I don't think the shortage of ancillary help personnel is really that great.

If the provision was here for them to be employed, I think that we would have the personnel.

Senator Carter: Well, Newstart is doing something along that line. They didn't touch on this this morning but it was in their brief that they are training nurses' aids and teacher aids and they have found that there were basic skills for all these different professions so that a person could get this type of training and use it in a variety of professions and I was just wondering if the set-up here is following that trend?

Dr. Hjertaas: I don't know just how much Newstart is doing but trends in health care are really quite exciting now. Many of the things that we, as doctors, waste our time doing are things that could be done by trained personnel.

Certainly we should have sufficient helpers. Nurses particularly who are experienced and take a little extra training could do a great deal of the work that we have doctors do.

Senator Pearson: Would the doctors trust them?

Dr. Hjertaas: Well I agree maybe we don't but under the fee for service system there is no way you can delegate them.

The Chairman: Doctor, when we were in Toronto we were told that the junior colleges are now training the kind of personnel that you are talking about—junior social workers and helpers to assist the nurses. They are now starting to train them in the community colleges. Apparently you do not have them here as yet but that is the trend. When you raise the question as to who is going to pay for it, we are not going to lose too many tears about how you doctors are done in.

Dr. Hjertaas: I think people have heard that too often.

The Chairman: But we see them as the trend. Perhaps the facilities are not available here, but they are doing that now.

We heard from another group in Montreal, I believe the Pointe Claire Medical Association, who were doing quite a job. Another medical group followed them immediately and approved of what they were doing.

Dr. Hjertaas: Well, my brief hasn't been cleared by the college.

Senator Inman: I was wondering about the follow-up care from the hospital to the home. Could training aid nurses be used for that?

Dr. Hjertaas: I really think they could be. I really think that a patient would feel more comfortable in his own home. Instead of sending a patient home on the eighth day post-operative I could probably send him home on the third or fourth day post-operative if my own home nurse in the clinic was going to follow that case every day until she knew the case was cured and knew how to handle any kind of complications that would come up.

The Chairman: Doctor, don't forget that we are in the hospital for as long as you put us in the hospital. We leave the hospital when you tell us to leave.

Dr. Hjertaas: That's right, we don't tell you to go if we're not certain what is going to happen to you when you get home.

The Chairman: That is right, and you keep us at the hospital. It is really not our fault if you send us home. I realize that there are many disadvantages, but you certainly do have a point. I must admit it is a real problem.

Dr. Hjertaas: The average cost would be approximately forty to forty-five dollars a day.

The Chairman: What is the cost?

Dr. Hjertaas: About forty to forty-five dollars a day for the average cost to the taxpayer.

The Chairman: Doctor, you see right here a bunch of healthy senators. Doctor, you have a view. We know something about medical care and health care. You have a view and you have presented it. We appreciate that a man of your standing would take the time to present a brief here, whether or not you presented it to your medical colleagues or anybody else. You can here of your own free will and, based on your years of experience in practice, you have given us your own point of view. If it is any help to you, we have found in our travels across Canada that people are concerning themselves with the poverty stricken. Every little contribution helps. Dr. Green, who just appeared, made some observations and someone else made an observation and the end result is that we find public opinion is alive and thinking about these things.

When this gets out, your patients will wonder about their doctor who is interested in the poverty stricken. This is the way that public opinion is created, and it is very useful. To this extent you have been helpful and we appreciate it very much. Thank you.

Senator Quart: May I just ask one question. If you had some of these nurses aids you could put them on duty over the weekend because you doctors are always off, and people just cannot get sick in Canada on weekends.

Dr. Hjertaas: The thing that I want is a forty-hour week. An eight-hour day and a five-day week for the doctor as well.

The Chairman: Well, doctor, as soon as we get for the senators you will get it as well.

The Chairman: I have here Mr. Solomon Sanderson, of the Federation of Saskatchewan Indians, who wants to make a statement. He does not have a brief but he says he will take about ten or fifteen minutes. Mr. Sanderson, please.

Mr. Solomon Sanderson, Federation of Saskatchewan Indians: Yes. Regarding the living conditions in Saskatchewan—we still have our poor housing and over-crowded conditions. They have improved since—well, say five years ago but we still lack running water. There is very poor heat, poor ventilation and it causes unsanitary conditions.

This causes unsanitary conditions in many of the over-crowded houses that we still have on the reserves. Some of the recommendations would like to make is that most of the housing that's been done on the reserves now through the welfare programs—is eight thousand dollars allowed for a house and that is without a basement and there is very little allowed for the few basements that we do have.

We recommend that all houses that are built on reserves be built with basements, proper finances and I think every effort should be made to have running water in the home. You look at the conditions even off the reserve where there is no running water. It is very unhealthy.

Some of the reserves are still getting their drinking water from rivers and lakes. We have tests on this water and it is just not fit for drinking but even today they are still using this water.

In the area of welfare, the Department of Indian Affairs administers this program for reserves here in Saskatchewan. The Department of Welfare in the province for the province will not apprehend any kids in the area of child neglect on the reserves unless it is an extreme case and believe me it has to be an extreme case.

The Department recently hired welfare consultants—that is the Indian Affairs Department—to work with the welfare programs and they have made a lot of great changes.

However, they need a lot of assistance in the field. They need field workers because they just haven't got the time for follow throughs on any cases that they do have. They are busy trouble-shooting in various areas of the city or town or clinics and we need family counselling real bad.

If these consultants were given the necessary staff, I think they could spend more time with the families that need counselling and not only welfare would be benefiting but the education department for Indians Affairs would be benefiting.

A lot of time we have children who have problems in the schools—these same families are being affected by welfare problems and we would strongly recommend that everything be done to apply the necessary pressure to make family counsellors available on the reserves or on the reserve levels because our transportation is still not that far advanced and if the parents are to keep an appointment, they just can't make it in a lot of cases.

Now, employment. This is the same old thing that you have heard year after year.

Our people are still being used as a cheap labour form. As you know the Department of Indian Affairs put in an integrated program and we didn't object to it.

However, we are now attempting to and accepting the idea of contracting the buses off the reserves. I know in this area out of some 46 bus contracts, all of them are off the reserve. We do have again Indians being used as a cheap labour force. They are being used as bus drivers or substitute bus drivers. We feel that this is not good enough. We need that employment on the reserves.

In the area of resources and technical services—they are just not being made available to the chief and counsellors.

They do not have their projects and projects planned properly because of the lack of

resources. As you know everyone of us in the Department pretty well needs technical advise in order to play the game or get the money that is required for the projects or programs.

We would like to see something done in this area whereby these resources are made available to the chiefs and counsellors at the reserve levels.

As well on the reserve level we lack physical resources and financial resources. This is in the area of programming again. Just as an example, the recreational director may be hired on a band grant program but when it comes time for his programming and planning for activities on the reserve there is just no place for him to hold them whether it be children, teenagers or adults. This is an area that should be seriously looked at because I know the Department of Indian Affairs right now is spending a lot of money in capital expenditures on the reserves because of this integrated program. They are building auditoriums in the cities and towns that could be utilized to full advantage day and night on the reserves.

If you are lucky as a student you may be able to use that auditorium say at the most a half an hour a week or so. This is even if you do make the school team because you are being bussed in and you are there about ten minutes to nine.

You have your dinner breaks and there the time is divided up into about—well say a half an hour for various teams.

I was going to go into education but we had Mr. Soonais and Chief David Ahenakew go to Ottawa and the standing committee asked them about this down there and they made their presentation there so I won't go into it now.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Sanderson, I just want to go into the question of family counselling with respect to welfare and the welfare section of your brief. You mentioned that the department provided two social welfare workers for family counsellors?

Mr. Sanderson: Two. They provide welfare consultants.

Senator Hastings: Two?

Mr. Sanderson: Well, they have districts. They have divided it into five districts here in the province. They are qualified welfare consultants.

Senator Hastings: And there are two in the province of Saskatchewan?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes.

Senator Hastings: And then there are social workers working with them?

Mr. Sanderson: They have case aid workers.

Senator Hastings: How many case aid workers?

Mr. Sanderson: Here in this district we have two.

Mr. Hastings: In this district?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes. This is for Prince Albert and just north.

Senator Hastings: There are two social workers and one . . .

Mr. Sanderson: And one case aid worker. They have a supporting staff you know—administrators and welfare assistants and I don't know how many there are of them. They are working right on the reserve level but there is just the two aid workers.

Senator Hastings: For all of the reserves in northern Saskatchewan?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Secondly, I would like to move to your remarks on buses and cheap labour. You say that there is 46 bus contracts?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes.

Senator Hastings: And these have been let by the Department?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes.

Senator Hastings: And the Indians were not given an opportunity?

Mr. Sanderson: No.

Senator Hastings: But they do call for public tenders, do they not?

Mr. Sanderson: They do call for tenders, yes. This is an area of concern to us because a lot of families are threatening to pull their children out of schools, from the integrated program because the bus school contracts are not on the reserve and the firms that are bidding now are bidding so low that individuals cannot compete.

Senator Hastings: And then you mentioned something about the cheap labour?

Mr. Sanderson: Well, in this area they have quite a few bus drivers, but down in the south

n parts they don't have the Indians as bus
ivers.

Senator Hastings: What is the reason? Are
ey not paid the minimum rate?

Mr. Sanderson: They are paid the minimum
a dollar a day but think what they could get
they did have a bus contract and were op-
eting the buses themselves.

Senator Sparrow: You said that the Provincial
partment of Social Welfare and Family Ser-
es comes onto the reserve when there are
ild problems. Do they come on the reserve at
ur call or only on the call of the Department
Indian Affairs? I know that they have a
rking agreement.

Mr. Sanderson: Yes, this is the only condition
it they have. They will only come on in very
reme conditions and that is it.

The Chairman: Well, that isn't really the ques-
n he asked you.

Mr. Sanderson: Well, I cannot identify their
icies you see.

The Chairman: Senator Sparrow said that
matter comes under the Department of
ian Affairs and Northern Development,
l the provincial people do not have to come
unless they are called, which makes sense.

Mr. Sanderson: Yes, but when there are
reme cases . . .

Senator Sparrow: But what I am getting at is
t the opinion of the Department of Indian
airs or the opinion of the provincial social
fare department?

Mr. Sanderson: Well, when the children are
lected there is nobody around from the
partment to make the referrals on the
rves.

ere should be either policing on the
rves or else somebody from the welfare
partment.

The Chairman: There is no one to report or
in?

Mr. Sanderson: No, unless the Chief Counsel-
loes but this really isn't good enough.

Senator Carter: And you have no telephones
here either?

Mr. Sanderson: No and this is another area
We have tremendous communication
blems.

The Chairman: We found the same kind of
conditions in Newfoundland. We found them
without telephones too. We didn't like it a bit.

Mr. Sanderson: Even postal service is bad.

Senator Carter: I have a couple of questions I
want to ask regarding the homes. I didn't quite
understand when you said \$8,000 per house.
Are these houses on the reserves?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes.

Senator Carter: And they allow eight thou-
sand dollars to build a home?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes.

Senator Carter: For the whole home?

Mr. Sanderson: For the whole home.

Senator Carter: And that means that you have
got to provide your own labour with that?

Mr. Sanderson: No, the labour comes under
the budget somewhere. The Department builds
the house.

Senator Carter: The Department builds the
house?

Senator Fergusson: And they charge eight
thousand dollars for it?

Senator Carter: And they charge eight thou-
sand dollars?

The Chairman: That is the limit they spend. It
is \$8,000 for the home.

Senator Carter: Yes, but who determines what
they get for eight thousand dollars?

The Chairman: Well, it is laid down by the
department. The department has a plan for the
homes. They have Plan A, B or C or whatever
it might be.

Senator Carter: You can only have a home
that they value at eight thousand dollars?

The Chairman: That's right.

Senator Carter: And do they provide the eight
thousand dollars for you to build that?

Mr. Sanderson: The Department supervises
the construction.

Senator Carter: They let a contract for some-
one to build a home for eight thousand
dollars?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes.

Senator Quart: Are you allowed to choose your own contractor?

The Chairman: No. It is the same sort of set-up as Central Mortgage and Housing. They have specifications which they lay down. They have done this for years. The actual house they build is good value for the money. The trouble is, as you see, there are no basements. There is no ventilation or other amenities such as running water.

Mr. Sanderson: In a lot of cases they are using chip-board for flooring and for the walls.

Senator Sparrow: What does that house cost the Indian families themselves?

Mr. Sanderson: Some of them pay \$135 and some pay \$500.

Senator Quart: Five hundred?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes, \$500 for the house.

Senator Carter: The Indians, then, buy the house?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes, for \$500.

Senator Carter: You buy an \$8,000 house for \$500?

Mr. Sanderson: Yes.

The Chairman: Let me just say this, Mr. Sanderson. You are a very moderate fellow. You have put your basic points across very easily and quickly. You said what you had to say. You referred to the lack of running water, basements and of ventilation, and so on. You have made an impression on the members of the committee, for they understand the things. On behalf of the committee members I want to thank you for appearing before us today. Thank you.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

SASKATCHEWAN NEWSTART

TABLE OF CONTENTS

NEED FOR NEWSTART

ACCOMPLISHMENTS OF SASKATCHEWAN NEWSTART

LIFE SKILLS

BASIC EDUCATION

SOCANICS

SMALL BUSINESS MANAGEMENT

OTHER NEEDED PROJECTS

NEWSTART ORGANIZATION AND FACILITIES

NEWSTART IN PRINCE ALBERT

DIRECTORS AND OFFICERS OF THE CORPORATION

NEED FOR NEWSTART

Researchers are unanimous in stating that there is a positive relationship between the level of education and the incidence of poverty.

To get and keep good jobs, people at least need a good basic education, social skills, job skills and of course job opportunities.

There are 916,000 low-income non-farm families in Canada of which 625,000 heads of households have had no schooling or attended elementary school only and 208,000 have attended not more than 3 years of high school.

Because education is important in getting and keeping good jobs, up to 833,000 Canadian heads of low-income non-farm households are in need of academic upgrading and basic skills. Added to this number must be adults who are not heads of households but should be in the paid labour force, and the farm adults who may move to urban centres for employment.

Present resources for training and retraining the unemployed are inadequate and taxed to the limit by existing methods. There is a need therefore, to develop more effective, efficient and economical methods of developing the competence of less advantaged adults. The urgency of this need is becoming increasingly apparent as the Native population is mobilizing itself for better services. To a large extent, they are excluded from present retraining programs because they do not have the minimum education standard for retraining.

Saskatchewan NewStart was created to develop new methods and materials that could be used anywhere in Canada for this purpose. The present report briefly describes the progress being made.

ACCOMPLISHMENTS OF SASKATCHEWAN NEWSTART INC.

Saskatchewan NewStart was established "to develop methods of qualifying for rewarding and stable employment persons who are disadvantaged, and particularly those who are handicapped as to their educational level." It is required that these methods be suitable for use on a widespread basis in Canada. Since October, 1968, the Corporation has pursued these goals in selected areas. By March 31, 1970, the products of Saskatchewan NewStart included:

1. Life Skills Course

To teach problem solving skills to cope responsibly and effectively with personal, family, community and employment problems. This course is an important contribution to human and social adjustment and is attracting interest internationally, as well as from various parts of Canada. Detailed course materials are being prepared and tested. The course should be fully developed and tested by August 31, 1971. During 1969-70 a total of 210 adults were enrolled in the course.

2. Life Skills Coach Training Course

This is a course prepared to train Indians, Metis and Whites to conduct the Life Skills Course.

3. Basic Education for Adult Illiterates, Grade Levels 1 to 4

Over 25% of adults in the Northern Prairies are illiterate and the course will be a major step toward gaining entry to regular retraining programs. A first version of the course was written using the initial teaching alphabet. This course will be rewritten before it is tried again. Two or more years of writing and testing the methods will be required before it is fully satisfactory.

4. Basic Education for Adults, Grade Levels 5 to 10

Materials leading from grades 5 to 10 were tested. On the basis of experience to date, the NewStart basic education materials reduce the time required to go from grade to grade by 45% over present methods. Final materials will be completed by March 31, 1972. During 1969-70 a total of 210 adults were enrolled in the course. The average student achieved one full grade every 80 hours.

5. Basic Education Coach Training Course

Basic education uses individualized instruction using several "coaches" and one professional. Coaches are trained specifically for this task.

6. Socanics Course

This is a training course for teacher's aides, welfare worker aides, etc. During 1969-70, 40 adults completed this program. The training manual amounting to approximately 1000 pages will be completed for use anywhere in Canada by December 31, 1970.

7. Entrepreneurial Course for Indians and Metis

Work progressed satisfactorily on the design of a course for people who want to run their own business. The course will be conducted in the Fall of 1970.

LIFE SKILLS

Adults frequently leave or lose their jobs for reasons other than lack of job skills. Others never get jobs even though they have certificates and skills to offer. Frequently, the real reasons for not getting or keeping jobs are that skills in solving problems are lacking in each area of life.

To meet this need, Saskatchewan NewStart is developing a Life Skills course to provide disadvantaged adults with the knowledge and skills they need in the use of problem solving techniques in the solution of their own life problems.

The course is a new invention and has attracted over 100 visitors, from various parts of United States and Canada, to Prince Albert to study the program.

Through a planned sequence of experiences, adult students are encouraged and helped to implement a personal program of development in each of the following areas:

1. Developing Oneself and Others

Learn to identify and develop personal strengths and abilities, resolve personal problems, contribute to group effectiveness and help others.

2. Coping with Home and Family Responsibilities

Identify and resolve family problems; plan and implement programs to improve family life.

3. Using Leisure Time Purposefully

Use free time for personal development and social benefit.

4. Exercising Rights and Responsibilities in the Community

Learn more about the community so that resources can be used effectively and for their intended purposes; what contributions one can make for the benefit of self and community; what one owes to the community as a responsible citizen and how to effectively participate in community activities.

5. Making Responsible Decisions for Work Future

Learn about different occupations and opportunities, and having assessed own interests, aptitudes and abilities, choose a career goal and plan entry into it, so that through further training and experience, a more meaningful work life can be attained.

The Life Skills Lesson

The Life Skills course provides practice in the application of knowledge to the solution of problems in a wide range of real and simulated life situations. The lesson plan gives direction to what the participants do to practice the life skill and thereby meet the skill objective of the lesson. The lesson plan contains specific and detailed descriptions of the five phases of the lesson:

1. In the Stimulus phase participants become interested in a problem.
2. During the Evocation phase they share their knowledge of the problem and identify the need for more information.
3. In the Objective Enquiry phase participants obtain, study and relate new knowledge to the problems they have identified. As each lesson moves into the Objective Enquiry phase, the coach draws the attention of the participants to the unresolved questions raised and the disagreements discovered in the discussion. The coach then directs the participants to the relevant and useful information for resolving these differences.
4. During the Application phase they practice the skill derived from the Skill Objective of the lesson.
5. The Evaluation phase requires the participants to assess the effectiveness of the lesson, evaluate their own performance of the skill objective and assess their need for further study and practice.

Group Process

In the Life Skills course, a primary force to change behaviour is the behaviour-oriented helping group. It is effective when the members of the group have developed a strong sense of group support, trust and mutual interest in helping each other through the lessons which tend to focus on the problem areas of life. The group provides both acceptance and challenge and the achievement of balance between the two is essential. All acceptance makes everyone feel good, but improvement in skills and development of problem solving capabilities is stunted. If it is all challenge, people react defensively and become more set in their ineffective behaviour.

Videotape Recording and Playback

The group and coach are supplemented by the use of the very powerful videotape recording. No one can deny the testimony of the V.T.R. It speaks for itself with indisputable evidence. People see themselves as others see them, probably for the first time. The V.T.R. gives added force to the feedback which group members provide each other.

Evaluation

It is always a difficult job to determine whether people have really changed their habits and if they have, why they did. It is essential that Saskatchewan NewStart assess whether the life skills course is really helping people. To do this evaluation the following methods are used:

1. Observation - courses can be watched and heard from the observation room to see what impact each part of the course seems to have in the classroom.
2. Interview - students and coaches are asked what they think and feel about various aspects of the course.
3. Field Test - the course is run in various types of places to see if the kind of school facility makes a difference.
4. Tests - personality and other tests are given to the students before, during, and after the course.
5. Follow-up - the students are interviewed periodically after the course to see whether there has been any lasting change.

Generally speaking, the research indicates that the students develop greater self-confidence and are more able to discuss their problems with others. Some people have made lasting changes in their habits. The research findings are used to improve the course and one of the major problems is to make the training increasingly oriented to giving the students real skills they can use competently outside the training centre.

Redevelopment

The lessons must be prepared in detail for use in other parts of Canada and, therefore, must be very self-explanatory. But they must also result in changes in the behaviour of the students. To make a lesson INTERESTING, provocative and educational, so that students become involved and want to change and do change, is very demanding. Perhaps it can't be done. But it is Saskatchewan NewStart's job to try. After each lesson is conducted it is revised if necessary. Sometimes the revision is slight, but usually it involves a major rewrite and a decision to prepare the lesson in an entirely different manner.

Life Skills Coach

The Life Skills course used "coaches" as instructors. The coaches are given an intense training course of two months which provides experience with group process, various instructional techniques (questioning, role playing, lecturing), handling of the instructional equipment (projectors, videotape recorders, blackboard, audio recorders) and extensive practice using lessons of the Life Skills course with videotape recorder playback. When actually conducting the Life Skills course, the coaches are supervised and assisted by professional staff.

BASIC EDUCATION

The Saskatchewan Department of Education issues an Adult Grade 10 certificate which allows a person to enter various schemes for trade training and qualifies him academically for jobs for which Grade 10 is the minimum requirement.

Dr. J. C. McIsaac, the Minister of Education for Saskatchewan, recently announced that a Saskatchewan Adult 12 certificate will be authorized in the near future.

The chief objective of Saskatchewan NewStart in Basic Education is to develop a course which will qualify undereducated adults to get these certificates in half the time required by present courses. To achieve this objective, Saskatchewan NewStart is testing methods and materials with adults in three stages of training:

1. From Grade 1 to about Grade 4 level,
2. From Grade 5 level up to Adult 10,
3. Adult 11 and 12 equivalency.

Initial Teaching Alphabet

There are only 44 sounds in the English language, but there are hundreds of different combinations of letters to spell the sounds. This is very confusing to the beginning reader. To simplify learning to read English the initial teaching alphabet was invented. Saskatchewan NewStart experimented with the alphabet and found it to be useful but that existing training materials were inadequate. Over 25% of adults in Northern Saskatchewan can't read and write, and it is necessary to develop a good course for them. Saskatchewan NewStart will experiment with audio-visual techniques of teaching i/t/a. Saskatchewan NewStart discovered that the transition from i/t/a to ordinary alphabet is quite easy for adults.

Adult 10

Self-teaching programmed instruction books were used during the year as the main source of work in the Adult 10 course. Additional materials included work books, traditional text books, and audio-visual aids of various kinds.

These materials were arranged on two sequential flow charts to show the order in which individual students were to use the books and when they were to be tested. Depending on test results, trainees could skip certain sections or work on alternative materials.

Some individuals were given an opportunity to work for five hours a day after the Life Skills course terminated at the end of September, double the previous time spent in Basic Education. The fact that they

used almost twice the time for one grade level progress than others indicates that doubling the time in Basic Education does not contribute to proportionally greater gains in educational level. The average time taken to complete one grade is 80 hours.

To date, Adult 10 status has been attained by 53% of the trainees, although statistically 83% should be capable of reaching that goal, given enough time.

Individually Prescribed Instruction

Saskatchewan NewStart is developing a system of Individually Prescribed Instruction (IPI) for students for the Adult 10 program. The aims of Saskatchewan NewStart in using IPI are:

1. To give students a truly individualized course by attending closely to individual learning difficulties and keeping a constant check on individual progress.
2. To give students greater responsibility for their own development by letting them know their weaknesses at every stage and letting them help to plan their own programs.
3. To use the most suitable methods, materials, and modes of learning for the target population.

The IPI Process

The purpose of IPI is to plan, provide, and conduct a battery of learning situations tailored to a student's characteristics as a learner. The process adapts instruction to the individual in an integrated scheme of evaluation, development, and training:

1. In the first step, placement and diagnostic measures are used to determine the precise curriculum items a trainee knows or does not know.
2. Both group and individual test results are subjected to item analysis to determine areas of difficulty that could be revised and improved.
3. Staff discuss the results of placement measures individually with students and prescribe individual study programs. The objective is to provide for study of content that the student has never learned and review of what he has forgotten.
4. Students then go to work on individual programs.
5. Regular testing and prescription continues. The place and frequency of errors must be analysed regularly to determine

causes and plan remedial action in the training materials and methods.

Adult 12

One-third of the trainees who qualify for Adult 10 certificates at Saskatchewan NewStart would like to study further, but they have neither the necessary background nor the time to tackle all the traditional subjects to reach the provincial Grade 12 Certificate.

During the past year the Basic Education Division held exploratory talks with members of the Saskatchewan Department of Education to discuss the development of a curriculum leading to an Adult 12 or High School Equivalency Certificate, and the Corporation will collaborate with the Department in developing a program and a standard for this level.

SOCANICS

Many professionals in school, welfare and other social agencies spend much time doing tasks of a non-professional nature. The employment of teachers' aides and social work aides, for instance, would permit the professionals to spend most of their time teaching, counselling, etc. Social Work Aides can bring many values to the effective practice of social work beyond those of efficiency. They could, for instance, extend the delivery of services by doing prevention and rehabilitation work in the poor neighbourhoods themselves. Those who speak an Indian language could also communicate with Indians more effectively.

In the schools, teachers' aides can assist by giving drill exercises to small groups of students needing intensive work, preparing audio visual aids, helping in the library, supervising the gym, performing clerical tasks, etc. There are jobs in education, social work, recreation, health, etc. of enormous social value which aides can do here and now, and in which they can grow and progress. For the professional, it increases the possibility that he can play a role in program planning, administration, training and supervision.

During 1969-70, Saskatchewan NewStart conducted courses for Teachers' Aides and Social Work Aides. It was noted that there were many similarities between these two courses. It was also apparent that other types of organizations such as recreation and health agencies could well employ aides. From this it was suggested that there might exist a core of skills and knowledge common to the work of aides within all the social organizations. For instance, the skills and knowledge of a social work aide would be very valuable to a teacher's aide in making home contacts about children. If these skill and knowledge areas could be identified and formed into a single practical training course, the graduates would have more extensive knowledge and skills that they could use in a variety of situations. It could also represent an economy for the training program because one type of course, rather than two or three, would be conducted. The term "Socanic" (skilled worker in social institutions) was coined for the job title.

Saskatchewan NewStart pioneered the creation of teachers' aides jobs in Saskatchewan in 1968. Various schools in the province have indicated intentions to hire over 300 in 1970.

Course Structure

Topics in the course include:

1. Services provided by education, welfare, recreation and other organizations;
2. Nature of the problems of students, participants and clients, the services and programs of various agencies, how they were developed, how they meet the needs of people, and how they are provided. The structure and functioning of the service organizations is also dealt with.
3. Methods of gathering and processing all relevant information necessary to identify the needs of the client and the employer.

4. Function and purpose of administrative rules; organization functioning.
5. Preparation and delivery of oral and written reports.
6. The role of the Socanic in understanding the problems of the people and how he helps within the organizational framework; public representation of the organization; uses of organizational resources; confidentiality.
7. Practice sessions in gathering information about the client, types of information required, filling out interview forms and interviewing.
8. The skills required by the Socanic, including interviewing, typing, operation of audio visual equipment, preparation of audio visual aids, preparation of reports.

Through role playing and group problem solving in simulated work situations, the student is provided with examples of real life situations and gets practice meeting these problems before he starts a job. On-the-job training is provided by local schools, welfare agencies, the Indian-Metis Friendship Centre, etc. For four of the 16 weeks of the course the students are placed in different job situations for training.

The Socanics course, therefore, provides the Socanic with core knowledge and skills which can be easily applied to a wide range of positions.

Evaluation of Earlier Courses

Saskatchewan NewStart has run two school aide courses and one social welfare aide course. The placement results after graduation are briefly as follows:

School Aide - 34 Trainees

25 - Schools
 2 - Saskatchewan NewStart
 1 - Sales Clerk
 1 - Nursing Clinic
 3 - Not Placed
 2 - Course Dropouts

34

Social Work Aide - 23 Trainees

2 - Provincial Welfare
 5 - Saskatchewan NewStart
 2 - Indian-Metis Friendship Centre
 4 - Psychiatric Ward Victoria Union Hosp.
 1 - Alberta Correctional Institute
 1 - Nursing Home
 1 - Further Training (clerk-typist)
 5 - Not Placed
 2 - Course Dropouts

23

It should be noted that out of a total of 57 trainees, 53 graduated. of these, 45 were initially placed in jobs, 36 are known to be employed in related work.

SMALL BUSINESS MANAGEMENT COURSE

A small business management course is being especially developed for people of Indian ancestry. The objective of the course is to train them in business management so they will be better equipped to start their own businesses or become managers of businesses owned by bands, co-operatives, or others.

Need for this Course

Most native people live in the northern parts of Canada's provinces. Traditionally, they lived by hunting and fishing. A crisis has now developed in the north. There are too few jobs for the rapidly expanding native population. The northern people are becoming poorer as traditional means of making a living are dwindling, yet the population is growing.

Canada's north is now rapidly changing and this tends to create many new problems for the native inhabitants. Mineral resources are being developed and more Canadian and American tourists are going further into the northern regions for sportfishing and hunting. This means roads are being built to improve access, and what was once an advantage - isolation - is now a threat to the survival of the native population of the north.

The development of the north in minerals, tourism, and roads is in one way a threat to the present inhabitants. However, it will mean new opportunities for employment as well as opportunities for small businesses to be started. In the past white people from the south have captured these developing small business opportunities. Native people, in general, have not been prepared to start and manage their own small businesses.

There are some native businesses which are in need of native managers but which are unable, at this time, to find qualified people. An example is a native owned tourist camp, presently under white management. The band would like it managed by an Indian as soon as one with the required qualifications can be found. As qualified persons become available, they will likely find and develop new opportunities both on an individual and community basis. Thus, there is a need to train Native people in business management.

Special Problems of the Native Businessman

In the last few years, a number of business ventures have been tried by native people with varied degrees of success. Numerous interviews with native leaders and government officials have indicated the following various factors were responsible for lack of success:

1. Educational level is very low. As a result, there are difficulties in communication in the English language.
2. Lack of experience related to businesses.
3. The kinship system, the tendency to community of possession has often depleted the resources of an enterprise.
4. The failure to use funds wisely has frequently prevented good incomes from leading to business growth.

None of the above problems are insurmountable. However, they point out that training must be well rounded. To this end, participants and their wives will study the previously outlined Life Skills and Basic Education courses before entering the Small Business Management Course.

Why a New Course?

Since existing courses can not fill the need, a new course adapted to the experiences and needs of the native population is being developed by Saskatchewan NewStart.

What Kind of Material will be contained in the Course?

The data required to develop such a course was seriously lacking. If a course was to be adapted to the population, it would have to reflect the Native person's experiences and environment. If business situations typical of their own communities were used they could better identify with these businesses and more readily grasp the principles of a business operation.

To get a description of business situations native people could identify with case histories of businesses in the North were prepared. To obtain material for these case studies it was necessary to gather information on many communities including population, businesses, and possible business opportunities. This research was done during 1969-70 and the following outline for the course prepared. The course will be taught beginning in September, 1970.

SUBJECTS

Basic Management

Objective is to provide an understanding of how our business system operates and what jobs an owner/manager does in his business. It will familiarize the participant with the various organizations or groups which can provide useful assistance in advising owner/managers as to the conduct of their businesses. Course will include reviewing the usual organization and function of: chambers of commerce; trade associations; development councils and associations; and private, municipal, provincial and federal business advisory agencies.

Business Organization

Objective is to explore the advantages and disadvantages of various ways of setting up a business (proprietorship, partnership, limited company or co-operative).

Marketing

Objective is to examine the factors which an owner/manager must take into account if he is to develop and implement a realistic sales program. Subjects to be covered will include determining customer needs, pricing, buying, channels of distribution, advertising, sales promotion, personal selling and servicing what is sold.

Personnel

Objective is to provide participants with the approaches and attitudes towards staff which will enable an owner/manager to obtain their effective, conscientious, and loyal support. Course will include assessing actual staff needs; attracting good employees; working conditions; job satisfactions; security and financial incentives; training; supervising; assessing and union relations.

Technical Operations (Production)

Objective is to provide skills that can be applied to the technical side of a business, i.e., determining what operations need to be performed; assessing the adequacy of present methods; evaluating alternative procedures in the light of financial and market conditions; and developing means for measuring progress. Applications of this approach will be illustrated in the following areas: work scheduling, utilization of facilities, production and quality control, maintenance, and shipping.

Accounting and Finance

Basic objectives are (1) to develop an understanding of the fundamentals of accounting, and the ways in which an owner/manager can use appropriate accounting records in the profitable management of a small business, and (2) to examine the most useful sources of capital and credit for small business. Subjects to be covered will include cash control; management of inventories, receivables and fixed assets; budgeting; cost control; taxes; determining profitability; financial safeguards; and source of funds.

Effective Presentation

Objective is to assist participants to improve their ability to

present ideas at informal meetings, committee sessions, luncheons, or other similar occasions. Course will cover the steps to be taken in preparing effective presentations and conducting meetings. One or two speaking engagements will be arranged during the course.

Personal Finances

Objective is to assist students learn to separate their personal finances from their business finances. Subjects covered will include family budgeting; consumer credit; personal insurance, and estate planning.

Starting a Business

Objective is to review the steps to be taken in sequence in selecting type and place of business; staffing; purchasing; marketing and financing.

The course will be taught using the case study method which is widely used in teaching business administration. The case method uses actual situations faced by businesses to help the participants identify business problems, how they developed and how they could be remedied. It will help provide information, but also develop judgement and problem solving skills.

In addition, each course participant will plan and budget for a small business of his choice. This will serve as a review of the course, a test of what has been learned, and an opportunity to practice some of the new knowledge and skills.

SOME OTHER PROJECTS THAT NEED TO BE DEVELOPED

The present projects of Saskatchewan NewStart are important and greatly needed, but there are other programs that should be developed. These include:

1. Fluency First

A course for adults who are illiterate and do not speak English well enough to learn to read efficiently. This course would be developed to meet the needs of those whose native language is Indian or French.

2. Life Skills for Illiterates

Over 25% of the adult population of the Northern Prairies is illiterate and needs Life Skills training at the same time as Fluency and Basic Education.

3. Head Start

A program for the mental, academic and social training of pre-school children from poor areas to bring them to the same stage of development as children coming from middle class homes.

4. Ghetto as a Manning Depot

The use of existing human and social development services to be applied in an integrated and intensive way in a slum to convert it to a transition centre for people coming from areas of rural poverty to cities.

5. Community Development and Leadership Skills

A battery of programs to increase the acumen and competence of communities to use and build on the resources they have or that are available to them.

NEWSTART ORGANIZATION AND FACILITIES

To carry out its mission, Saskatchewan NewStart has the following resources:

1. Project Formulation Organization

Staff includes professionals in agriculture, anthropology, commerce, economics, education, engineering, law, mathematics, psychology, social work and sociology. They are engaged in project formulation, including the preparation of methods and materials based upon interdisciplinary models and the development of methods of evaluating the projects. Designs for implementation are specific and include original multi-media (film, video tape, slide, etc.) presentations to increase effectiveness.

2. Project Development Centre

- a. Offices for project and course designers, writers, researchers, etc. who develop the projects and the methods of evaluating them.
- b. Audio-visual laboratory to make film, photo, art work, displays, videotape, sound-slide, and other forms of visual aids.
- c. A library with approximately 5,000 books and other documents.

3. Project Testing Organization

Saskatchewan NewStart has a project testing organization capable of conducting training and other projects both within the laboratory and in operational testing situations. By the end of the year this group will have tested its courses on several hundred adults.

4. Project Testing Centres

The training laboratory is the best equipped centre of its kind in Western Canada. It has a capacity for 100 adult students. The training space comprises five conference rooms equipped with folding doors which permit subdivision into 11 seminar rooms. Three of the conference rooms are also equipped with one-way mirrors which allow observation for research and supervision.

Video-tape recording and playback is available to all rooms for the use of adult students to practice skills (e.g. applying for a job), to critique their own skills, and to gain insight into their own attitudes.

Conference and seminar rooms are equipped with trapezoidal tables permitting a number of configurations depending on the requirements of the teaching-learning process at any time.

A field test centre has also been established in old, drab and makeshift quarters to test the impact of the surroundings on the program.

NEWSTART IN PRINCE ALBERT

Saskatchewan NewStart, a million dollar industry employing 79 staff and up to 100 students, is important to Prince Albert, and its closure would have a serious effect on the retail sales, housing and other markets. Fifty seven of the staff are the only, or the chief source of, income for their households (the remaining 22 are married women who contribute to the family income). Of the 57, 16 own homes in Prince Albert and 41 rent. Important as NewStart is to Prince Albert, the city is very important to NewStart. The city and area has a plentiful supply of disadvantaged individuals and groups. It has been estimated that there are 13,000 Indians and Metis in the immediate Prince Albert area, with only 10% employed. Prince Albert is a manning depot for many, very poor people coming from Northern Saskatchewan and, therefore, presents opportunities to develop methods of helping such people survive in the city.

Prince Albert is within easy commuting distance of the Meadow Lake special development area, has regular air connections with other special development areas (such as The Pas), and is centrally located for many projects of the Department of Regional Economic Expansion. Prince Albert is also within easy commuting distance of the University of Saskatchewan, thus permitting frequent use of university staff and facilities.

Finally, Prince Albert is a city of almost 30,000 people and while not a mecca for professionals, is a city that many have found attractive.

DEATH AT AN EARLY AGE?

The Corporation receives its income from the Department of Regional Economic Expansion which was committed to the funding arrangements for four or five years from August, 1967, when the Corporation was created.

DIRECTORS AND OFFICERS OF THE CORPORATION

Mr. D. S. Conger	Executive Director and Chairman of the Board of Directors
Mr. A. J. Friesen	Director
Mr. A. F. Gallerneault	Director
Mr. E. A. Rawlinson	Director
Mr. J. W. Steuart	Director
Mr. J. R. Fafard B. Comm., C.A.	Secretary-Treasurer

BRIEF SUBMITTED BY
PRINCE ALBERT WORK TRAINING PROGRAM

Tuesday, August 18th, 1970.

The Prince Albert Work Training Program came into legal existence in December of 1966, being incorporated under the Societies Act of Saskatchewan as a benevolent, non-profit organization. The date of incorporation was December 8th, 1966. The Training Centre at the Prince Albert Air Port was opened for training on January 9th, 1967.

PURPOSE AND OBJECTIVES:

The Basic Skills Development Program carried out by the Prince Albert Work Training Program is designed to serve as a transition between the world of idleness and the world of work. The objectives are to provide the training facilities and the development of skills for those who are unable to meet the standards and entrance requirements of other training programs. The Basic Skills Development Program is designed to help persons who are mentally and physically capable of developing their skills to become employable and employed members of the community. This includes the development of social skills as well as manual skills. The program is designed to provide educational up-grading, employment conditioning and social development for those who are unable to find or hold employment because of the lack of these skills.

STANDARDS AND LEVEL OF TRAINING:

The standards set for the up-grading portion of the training are the same as the standards set for other up-grading courses and the academic goal of the program is set at reaching the vocational grade eight level. Where social development is not required, the academic goal is set at the grade six level and the trainees are encouraged to continue their studies through the regular up-grading system. A high degree of flexibility must be maintained if the program is to meet the needs of each individual and allow him to develop to his full potential.

The standards set for the work activities of the program are the same as the standards set by employers and it is hoped that exposure to this kind of employment conditioning will make it possible for the trainees to be successful in any employment situation that may be available at the completion of training. Basic trade skills in carpentry are presently being taught in the work shop and by using community resources it is hoped that the work activities can be

diversified and that those having no aptitude or desire for carpentry may be able to work in a trade that is more acceptable to them.

Social development is built in to all areas of training and starts in the classroom, is continued in the work activities and in special classes and activities planned by the trainees. Group discussions are held and films are shown as well as having members of the business and professional community attend as guest speakers at the training centre. Supporting services in the field of family counselling is provided by the professional staff of the Prince Albert Social Service Centre.

ADMINISTRATIVE STRUCTURE:

The Prince Albert Work Training Program is administered by a Board of Directors made up of business and professional men of the community of Prince Albert. The Board of Directors are responsible to the Sask. Department of Welfare for the efficient operation of the program. The Board of Directors have the authority to hire a manager to supervise the operation of the program and any additional staff that may be required to carry out the aims and objectives of the program in an efficient manner. The Manager of the Work Training Program is responsible to the Board of Directors for the successful operation of the program and reports to the Board on a regular basis. All other staff members report to the Manager and if urgent matters arise, the Manager will contact the Board of Directors.

SELECTION OF TRAINEES:

The selection of trainees takes place initially at a case conference held at the Social Service Centre. The Manager of the Work Training Program attends these conferences and has the opportunity to reject any referrals that do not appear to be suitable candidates for the program. In some cases the Social Workers have discussed the Work Training Program with the prospective candidate and report on the reaction and attitude of the candidate toward the program and self improvement generally. In other cases this has to be done after the candidate has been selected for training. Everyone being accepted for training must visit the training centre and be interviewed by the Manager and Teacher. At this time the rules, regulations and expectations of the program are clearly outlined to the trainee and they have the opportunity to accept or reject the program. All married men must be accompanied by their wives when coming for their interview. This

done so that their wives are knowledgeable of the program and are aware of the expectations of the program. All candidates for training are accepted on a four to eight week assessment. At the end of the assessment period the candidate is called in and his performance and progress discussed with him. If proper attitude and progress has been demonstrated during the assessment period the candidate is then enrolled in the program.

DETAILS OF PROGRAM:

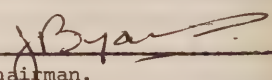
The project is designed to use supervised work activity and formal instruction to improve work habits and self confidence of trainees; to upgrade their education and provide them with some basic skills. The time allotted for training is divided equally between the classroom and the work activities. The activities of the work shop are geared to support the classroom activities. Those who are learning fractions in the classroom are given an opportunity to make practical application of this knowledge by doing measurements in the work shop. This is one of many ways that the work activities offer practical support to the classroom activities. The Basic Skills Development Program is designed as an all male program. No females have been enrolled in the classroom or taken part in the work shop activities. Three females have entered the program as typists in the office. This was done to give them some practical experience after graduating from business college in an effort to assist them in finding employment. Thirty-nine male trainees have been enrolled in the program since training began in January of 1967. Twenty-six of these have been of Indian ancestry and two have been Treaty Indians. Many of the trainees have been in the twenty-five to forty-five age range and have families of from four to twelve children. The average grade level of those enrolled in the program is grade three, and six were completely illiterate when entering the program. Of the six who were illiterate, four were successful in the up-grading class and two were not. The average achievement for each ten month term of training has been two grade levels, with some advancing much more quickly.

SUMMARY OF ACHIEVEMENT:

The total number of trainees enrolled in the program since training began is thirty-nine male and three female trainees. There has been fifteen dropouts from the program, some after several months training and some shortly after enrolment. Fourteen trainees have completed training and have been placed in employment. Five have completed the

training course at Work Training and have gone on to further training. Four trainees have been suspended because of improper attitudes and unsatisfactory progress and three will be returning to the program in September to complete their training. There have been several outstanding successes since the program began. One young man was enrolled in the program at the age of eighteen. He had some serious emotional problems at the beginning of his training and at one time attempted to commit suicide. The attempt was unsuccessful, however he did lose partial use of his left hand as a result of the gunshot wound. He was given the responsibility for the janitorial work at the training centre after his recovery and was later placed in an employment assessment position at one of the local hospitals. He was taken on permanent staff in the housekeeping department of the hospital in May of 1969 and has proven to be a very good employee. Having completed one full year of employment it would appear that this is a successful placement. In January of 1968 a man of thirty-eight was enrolled in the program. He attended Work Training until June and was placed in temporary employment for the summer months and was brought back to the program in October. A serious drinking problem existed with this man and it became necessary to send him to the Bureau on Alcoholism in Saskatoon. He responded well to the treatment at the Bureau and returned to Work Training when his treatment was completed. He has done very well since that time. He completed his up-grading to the vocational grade ten level and has been employed at the Provincial Correctional Institute for the past eleven months. There is a possibility that he may be taken on permanent staff. From the beginning of training up to the present time the Work Training Program has proven to be forty-five percent effective. This is without taking into consideration the dropouts who have found employment for themselves and who have been self supporting ever since.

The Board of Directors and staff of the Work Training Program are confident that this type of training will become more effective as the program continues to be developed. It is firmly believed by all that The Prince Albert Work Training Program is filling a need in an area where the need is great.


J. Byars, Chairman,
Prince Albert Work Training Program.



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament

1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA
PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON
POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 66

MONDAY, AUGUST 31, 1970

WITNESSES:

La Société St-Vincent de Paul du Canada (The St. Vincent de Paul Society of Canada): Honourable Judge Gérard Lemay, President.

Le Conseil des Oeuvres et du Bien-Être du Québec (COBEQ): Mr. Léon Cantin, General Director; Mr. Henri-Paul Chaput, Director, Social Planning; Mr. Jacques C. Boulet, President; Mr. Gérald Harvey, Deputy Minister, Social Welfare Department (Quebec).

Mr. Gary Quart-Ouellet.

Le Conseil du Travail du Québec: Mr. M. Légaré.

Le Comité des Citoyens de l'Aire 10 (A Local Citizen Committee): Mr. Laurent Drolet.

Le Secrétariat Social de St-Roch: Mgr Raymond Lavoie, Director; Mr. Paul Lecours; Mr. Eugène Mailhot; Mrs. Marie Murphy; Mr. Germain Bender; Mr. Pierre Paré.

APPENDICES:

"A"—Brief submitted by *Le Conseil des Oeuvres et du Bien-Être du Québec (COBEQ)*.

"B"—A short statement prepared by Mgr Raymond Lavoie on behalf of *Le Secrétariat Social de St-Roch*.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—

Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—

Resolved in the affirmative."

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

“With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.”

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

MONDAY, August 31, 1970
Quebec City, Committee
Room, Parliament Building

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*), Eudes, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand and Quart—(8).

Also present: The Honourable Senator Jacques Flynn, Leader of the Opposition in the Senate.

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

La Société St-Vincent de Paul du Canada

(*The St. Vincent de Paul Society of Canada*):

Honourable Judge Gérard Lemay, President.

Le Conseil des Oeuvres et du Bien-Être du Québec (COBEQ):

Mr. Léon Cantin, General Director;

Mr. Henri-Paul Chaput, Director, Social Planning;

Mr. Jacques C. Boulet, President;

Mr. Gérald Harvey, Deputy Minister, Social Welfare Department (Quebec).

Mr. Gary Quart-Ouellet

Le Conseil du Travail du Québec:

Mr. M. Légaré.

At 12.40 p.m. the Committee adjourned until 7.30 p.m. in the St. Roch Parish Hall.

At 7.45 p.m. the meeting of the Committee was called to order.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*); Eudes, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand and Quart—(8).

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

Le comité des citoyens de l'aire 10

(*A Local Citizen Committee*):

Mr. Laurent Drolet.

Le Secrétariat social de St-Roch:

Mgr Raymond Lavoie, Director;

Mr. Paul Lecours;

Mr. Eugène Mailhot;

Mrs. Marie Murphy;

Mr. Germain Bender;

Mr. Pierre Paré.

The following briefs were ordered to be printed as Appendices to these proceedings:

Appendix "A"—Brief submitted by Le Conseil des Oeuvres et du Bien-Être du Québec (COBEQ)

Appendix "B"—A short statement prepared by Mgr Raymond Lavoie on behalf of Le Secrétariat Social de St-Roch.

At 9.15 p.m. the Committee adjourned.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

August 31, 1970,
Quebec City, Quebec.

Senator Edgar Fournier (Deputy Chairman)
in the Chair.

[Translation]

Now I would like to call the Committee to order, and I would like to make a few brief remarks to you for those who are perhaps not very well acquainted with the Committee and for the Committee members too—to all members of the Committee. We are in our closing stage, since it is our final itinerary on the road after eighteen months' work.

We have studied all aspects of poverty in Canada, concentrating especially on a general survey. The Committee has realized that poverty is more pronounced in some places than in others. For the time being the Committee is not providing any solution to the problem. It is more like a Research Committee interested in the source of the problem and that is why we are here today in the beautiful city of Quebec where we want to listen to you, make a note of your problems and examine them, and you may rest assured that the examination will be quite lengthy. We are going to study all the notes over the next few months. The Committee will study your recommendations carefully, and the contributions you make will be greatly appreciated by everyone. If I wanted to review all the work the committee has done over the past eighteen months, it would be much too long and would perhaps probably be a repetition of words that have been spoken in many places.

We have the pleasure this morning of having in our midst Mr. André Harvey, Member of Parliament for Chauveau, who represents the government of the Province of Quebec and the Honourable Claude Castonguay, Minister of Social Welfare. So, Mr. Harvey, on behalf of our Committee, we bid you welcome. We are proud to have you amongst us. We realize that you are a very busy young politician, as are all the others here, and we do not want to cause you to lose

more time than necessary. Therefore, I call upon you, Mr. Harvey, to speak.

Mr. André Harvey, Member of Parliament for Chauveau: Mr. Chairman, as a Member of Parliament and of the government, as the Chairman has just pointed out to you, it gives me pleasure to welcome you most cordially to these sittings which are to come to an end in "*la belle province*" and, for the first time, as I was mentioning to your Chairman a little while ago, these sittings are being conducted in French. Well, as a federalist, I am glad of it.

This meeting of the Committee, which is being held in Quebec, must of necessity be acclaimed by persons in authority. I apologize for myself and for them for not having found better under the circumstances, but it is an honour for me to have accepted on behalf of the government to welcome you. The Honourable Speaker of the House, Mr. Jean-Marie Lavoie, is himself detained in a Parliamentary Committee in Ottawa. So that, then, is why we have to travel, sometimes to Ottawa, sometimes to Quebec, to exchange views and to work for the greater well-being of the Canadian population.

I hope that, technically speaking, you have all you need to work with and so obviously—we notice that there are some lady senators around this table and, well, we have to extend a welcome to each of them. I am delighted to see that these ladies are interested in the problem of poverty and they probably also devote special attention to the Production and Consumer Information Bureau and even to the Department of Consumer Affairs as well, and I know that the ladies are thoroughly acquainted with that field. We are glad, too, to see that you are also surrounded by experienced and veteran senators, some of whom I know moreover—the one on my right in particular—quite close to Chauveau—and I am not saying that out of Chauvinism. I notice here on my right Mr. Jacques Flynn. Again, I wish you all an excellent day and I

hope that those who are heard today enjoy the pleasure and privilege of having as firm a belief as I do in the worth of this function and of this senatorial committee. I think that is all. Good-day and welcome to Quebec.

The Vice-Chairman: Thank you very much, Mr. Harvey. We shall be thinking of you during the day, and we ask you to express our most sincere regards to Mr. Castonguay.

Mr. Harvey: Thank you very much.

The Vice-Chairman: Gentlemen, members of the Committee, we have the pleasure this morning of being summoned for the second phase of the programme. The Honourable Senator Jacques Flynn, as promised, has travelled out during his well-deserved and well-employed vacation to come and join us and we hope, too, in a few minutes from now, to have the honour of welcoming the Deputy Speaker of the Senate, the Honourable Senator Bourget.

We now have on hand the three representatives of the three committees we are to see this morning, and we are going to begin with the committee from the St-Vincent-de-Paul Welfare Association of Canada in the person of its President, Mr. Gérard Lemay, who is here. Mr. Lemay.

Judge Gérard Lemay, President of the St-Vincent-de-Paul Association: Mr. Chairman, Honourable Senators, in the first place, I apologize as I believe there has been a misunderstanding. We had asked—and obviously, everything is probably due to the Post Office and the delays everyone is experiencing, but we had asked that this brief not be presented at this sitting, for the following two reasons. The St-Vincent-de-Paul Association has two chief characteristics: first, it is a voluntary organization which has no permanent employees at its disposal; and second, it is a national association and, being national, it also has cells in the other provinces, especially in Ontario, in the Canadian West, and also in the East, in the Maritimes. Evidently, in view of this special aspect, this bi-ethnic aspect of the cultural Association, we wanted to present our brief in both languages.

Unfortunately, at this time, our brief is complete in one language only—French—and in all respect for our English-language colleagues who, moreover, ought to be present when our brief submitted, we would ask, we repeat the request we made, that is, in another sitting, either in Quebec or Mont-

real—and/or obviously, perhaps in Ottawa—only, we would prefer this brief to be submitted in Montreal, if it were not possible for it to be heard in Quebec. This morning, I have none of my colleagues with me, and I would feel very uncomfortable speaking on behalf of the national Association without having beside me at least one representative from other groups of the heirs of this great country of Canada, so I thank you.

The Vice-Chairman: Judge Lemay, I do not have permission to answer your question directly. I think our programme is going to require that we hold our final sitting in Ottawa early in the new session, which will perhaps be in October, and, if my memory now serves me well, I believe we already have a dozen briefs. To get back to Montreal or Quebec, I am not the authority who can say that...but I believe I can say on behalf of the Committee that if you want to come to Ottawa, you will be accepted because you have a subject which is most interesting and covers almost all of Canada in its entirety, and I believe that St-Vincent-de-Paul...we are all familiar with it, we have heard tell a great deal about the work you are doing, and your brief will certainly be a contribution. I congratulate you for all the efforts you are making to prepare a brief in English, because most of the Committee members are English-speaking. Some speak and understand French. I believe your efforts will be appreciated. Members of the Committee, do you agree with my suggestion.

The Vice-Chairman Fournier: So someone will contact you in the very near future.

Judge Lemay: Quebec is our first choice, but we will be able to go to Ottawa, because for us it is more a question of bringing people there. We are obliged to pay the expenses because we have to operate with the minimum of cost and the maximum of service. If it was possible for us to be spared that expense, we would be very happy. So, thank you, Mr. Chairman, Senator Fournier. Thank you very much.

The Vice-Chairman: I am informed that the members of the Committee who were to sit at ten o'clock, those who were to present the brief, have not arrived, so if you like, we will take a few minutes' break while waiting for the Committee's spokesman to arrive. He is Mr. Léon Cantin who will be here at about a quarter past ten. That's all right then. I shall

repeat in English what I have just said in French.

Text]

Senator Hastings: I was wondering, Mr. Chairman, if we could discuss with the previous witness the work and organization of the St. Vincent de Paul Society for the next twenty minutes. I understood him to say that he would be willing to discuss that with us.

The Deputy Chairman: Not the contents of the brief, but he could explain the organization in general terms and the work.

Senator Hastings: I would like to know more about the organization.

The Deputy Chairman: I have just talked to His Honour privately here, and he has said he has no objection to having a discussion with you about the organization as a whole without going into details.

Translation]

Senator Quart: Personally, I am thoroughly conversant with your work in Quebec. Now, like Senator Hastings, it is of great interest to us and I am familiar with it personally, only I could very much like to know how many members you have outside in the other provinces.

Judge Lemay: With pleasure. We have about 6,000 members in the country, the great majority of them, that is to say, the majority is in the province of Quebec, with very many in Ontario, several cells in the Maritimes—that is, in Halifax—and some in the West too, in Vancouver. In the other provinces, unfortunately, we do not have any at all. We hope to have some. We hope there will be some cells there eventually.

It is a voluntary association planned, obviously, on more or less the following lines: It is an international association in which 107 units participate around the world. Insofar as Canada is concerned—to take as an example the Province of Quebec—it has a conference in almost every urban parish in Quebec. Those conferences are grouped into a territory or into one sector in individual councils. Those are individual councils are themselves grouped into one central council, a diocesan council, and—still taking the example of Quebec—there is in Quebec itself a central council which combines 10 individual councils, including, naturally, the individual councils of the cities of Quebec and Lévis and of Côte de la Gaspésie. Those individual councils them-

selves comprise groups of parochial conferences.

But at this point it is as well to say that the sole resources are those that come from public charity alone. We do not appear in any federal or provincial budget. The only contribution we receive is one that varies from \$2,000 to \$4,000 and, in recent years, to \$6,000 a year to enable us to maintain a permanent secretariat. Once again, it is voluntary everywhere from the top to the bottom of the scale.

Now, the budgets we spend, according to the conferences that report to us—of course, there I am speaking merely of the monetary aspect—vary between one and a quarter and one and a half million a year. Obviously, it is money that comes from public charity and which necessarily returns to the most needy in our parishes or of our citizens. Moreover, apart from that, apart from that purely material aspect, there is a whole gamut of services which obviously range from the drop-in centre for young people to the rehabilitation centres for ex-convicts, which the Association itself runs in the large centres: in Quebec, Montreal and Toronto. It also has several warehouses, several centres, if you like, where it takes in merchandise, clothing, wardrobes and anything else that it receives and gives out again. Insofar as Quebec is concerned, we don't sell back; we don't sell back what we receive. The merchandise is continually coming in and going out again.

Senator Quart: Personally, I know full well how the St-Vincent-de-Paul associations work.

Senator Jacques Flynn: You mentioned that they work primarily within the parishes.

Judge Lemay: Yes.

Senator Flynn: There are a few exceptions. I feel bound to mention that the Bar has a conference.

Judge Lemay: That's right.

Senator Flynn: The Bar has a St-Vincent-de-Paul conference and, naturally, preference is going to be given if by chance there are any members of the Bar who are in need, but it is rather a rare occurrence...

Judge Lemay: That is quite correct, and I am very happy to call attention to the Bar conference.

The Vice Chairman: Is it possible for members of the Bar to be in need?

Senator Flynn: Yes. It does happen.

Judge Lemay: Apart from that, there are some civil employees that have a conference, the civic employees. You also have the recent St-Vincent organization at the school almoners' level. It is a new organization which, through the school almoners, helps young people in school who do not have what is necessary to clothe and feed themselves. People would be amazed to see the very large number of children who leave home hungry in the morning and return home hungry in the evening.

The Vice Chairman: Judge Lemay, can you tell us how many families you assist or help during a year. Does it amount to several thousand, in the first place?

Judge Lemay: Several thousand. It is quite difficult to give a figure that would be exact and would reflect the situation. It is really difficult. Take, for instance, here, the western part of Quebec. Evidently, the number of families during the winter may be about 400 to 500, and they are families we visit and help in a single sector of the city here in Quebec. As for giving an exact figure that is realistic, I will admit frankly again that I am rather at a loss, but it is very large.

The Vice Chairman: It is very large.

Senator Quart: If I understand properly, your main source of income is at the church doors.

Judge Lemay: At the church doors as it used to be done, as it used to be done a century ago. St-Vincent-de-Paul is synonymous with public charity. However, we do organizations, but that is very unusual.

Senator Quart: How much from the United Appeal?

Judge Lemay: No, we don't get anything from it. It must be said, however, that all our members are leading canvassers in every parish; all our members are canvassers for the United Appeal. We work together with them; we cooperate with them; but we receive nothing from them. It is different in Montreal. There, part of the budget is provided by the United Appeal. I think the same thing applies in Trois-Rivières and, if I am

not mistaken, in St-Jean too; but apart from those three exceptions, the Association does not appear in any budget.

Senator Quart: I congratulate you in any case.

Judge Lemay: You know, there is no need to worry. A person receives much more than he gives when he belongs to the St-Vincent-de-Paul Association.

Senator Hastings: Do you know if there is a central council in Alberta?

Judge Lemay: No, no. Only, we would like—we have some funds, and we very much hope it will not be long before the Association starts up its activities over there.

Senator Quart: With Senator McCormick as President.

Judge Lemay: I would be very happy—if there are any other questions of general interest, I would be very happy to answer them.

Senator Eudes: The families you help, are they families that receive social benefits?

Judge Lemay: There again, you know, one thing should be realized; namely, that a very great number of people do not receive all the allowances or benefits to which they are entitled. Many people are badly informed and, when that happens, our contribution consists primarily in getting something for them, in acting as a go-between, if you like, between the governmental agencies, and in acting as a go-between for those poor people who are not able to make application themselves. That is the service aspect, and those people, naturally, call for a substantial contribution on the part of the Association members. In most cases, moreover, we see to it that those who receive certain allowances can, if need be, obtain extra allowances to which they might be entitled under the circumstances. If that is not enough, well, my goodness, then in a good many cases what happens is that we add a supplement, a money supplement, or else we turn our attention, for instance, to trying to find employment for the persons concerned or attempting to come to their aid in some way or other. We go where the need is greatest and we try to do our best. We are only ordinary people; we only do ordinary things in the most ordinary way in the world; and all that, obviously, while trying to do the utmost

possible in the best place possible. We are the voice of the under-privileged.

Senator Eudes: In other words, you practise charity in the most traditional meaning of the word.

Judge Lemay: That's right.

Senator Eudes: That is still a necessity and will probably remain a necessity even after the Committee's report.

Judge Lemay: It is indeed my opinion. The question was asked on the radio the other day: "If today, with all the social assistance available, do you think St-Vincent-de-Paul is still a necessity?" I was caught somewhat unawares, but I could not held but think of my training, and I said: "Well, assistance, if it comes from the State, can only come from a law and, well, laws, after a good few years I don't know of many flexible enough to be able to meet all needs. Furthermore, even if there is a perfect law, well, at the level of distribution, there too, it is still human, and here you have yet another obstacle preventing this help from being adequate—right at these two levels, those of the law and of distribution, you have no imperfections—well, at the recipient level, there will always be imperfections, evidently, also because it is highly improbable that the money paid or the grants given are spent as they ought to be, for as long as it is done as in the parable of the talents and for as long as what used to be called the deadly sins still exist.

The Vice Chairman: Are you satisfied with the answers you have been given?

Senator Hastings: I cannot speak in French, so I am going to ask my question in English.

Text]

I will address my question in English, if I could. You distribute goods and services to the poor?

Mr. Lemay: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Do you encourage the poor to help themselves? Do you have any programs by which the poor are encouraged—to organize—to help themselves?

Mr. Lemay: We don't have as a general rule but we have for instance where we organized five years ago the first half-way house in Quebec according to the trend left by Father Libby in Windsor, and we have managed to tell the public the idea that it was the

responsibility of everybody to help them to help themselves. We are operating here in Quebec a half-way house. We gather the persons which we believe are in the way of wishing or willing to help themselves and we furnish them shelter.

We furnish them a home where there is some warmth—warmth they have been deprived of in most instances. We find work for them and we promote their education with the existing facilities and we also have, through that house we have small industries such as upholstering industries which is operated by the ex-prisoners themselves.

This is a very good school although for those who do not have any trade you see. The operation itself is divided in two. The school and the business is rather a paying one.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator Hastings, are you satisfied with the answer you've got?

[Translation]

Thank you, Mr. Justice.

Gentlemen, members of the committee, we are going to move on to the second section, to the second brief to be presented this morning, from the Welfare Council of Quebec, which is known as COBEQ, and the brief will be presented not by Mr. Léon Cantin, as indicated in the program, but by Mr. Henri-Paul Chaput, Director of the Planning Department of the Section of Family Affairs. I beg your pardon, I am now told that Mr. Cantin has arrived.

Mr. Cantin, I must tell you to begin with that you are not usually required to reread your brief from beginning to end, because the members of the Committee have already made a study of it. What we do ask is that you give an oral presentation of the general outline of your brief, the arguments you support in your brief, etc., and then, after that, there will be a period of questions by members of the Committee. In this way we save a lot of time, for the study of briefs is a lengthy business and sometimes a tedious one because everyone has read the document.

Mr. Léon Cantin, Director General of the Welfare Council of the Province of Quebec (COBEQ): First of all, I would like to introduce the members of the Committee to our organization. Let us say then that the Welfare Council of the Province of Quebec (COBEQ) is a non-profit organization, founded on 2nd August, 1944, and incorporated on 17th February, 1945, under the terms of the third part of the Companies Act. Founded at

the instigation of the Laval School of Social Work and the Church of Quebec, the organization began by concentrating on financing itself and about 20 other organizations in the area, notably in the field of health, welfare and leisure; then, little by little, it began to move in the direction of welfare planning, inviting the other organizations to join forces with it. About a hundred non-profit organizations, working in the field of health, leisure and welfare are affiliated to it. It is run by an Administrative Council of 25 members who are chosen by the members of the general assembly. In order to better coordinate services offered to the public it secured the cooperation of the permanent and volunteer members of its member organizations. It also created several new services in response to needs which had until then gone unsatisfied.

It can be said that, since its foundation, COBEQ has contributed at one time or another to the finances of some 75 organizations in the region. In 1966, COBEQ modified its letters patent and its regulations and changed its name in order to keep in step with the social development of the area. Since that date, it has concentrated its efforts on the creation of new organizations and the financing of pilot projects geared to satisfy special needs and to induce the fringe population to participate in its development.

At the same time, it has secured the services of a greater number of professionals in the field of welfare; it has also kept these same requirements in mind in the organization of the finances of member bodies.

That in brief is what COBEQ has been, what it has tried to do for the improvement of social conditions in our area.

Allow me also, Mr. Chairman, to draw your attention to the arrival of our Chairman, Mr. Jacques-C. Boulet, Chairman of COBEQ.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Boulet, would you like to add anything?

Mr. Jacques-C. Boulet, Chairman of COBEQ: Mr. Chairman, I apologize for being a few minutes late, but my deputy chairman called me at home at 9.30 to say "The meeting is at 10 o'clock, come on."

I must say that we are very happy to be here and, as you are well aware, Mr. Chairman, the office of a chairman is to make his team work; at least that is the way we do things in Quebec, and so I shall limit myself to these few words to begin with...

The Deputy Chairman: We are going to ask Mr. Cantin, I think, whether he has anything to say.

Mr. Cantin: No, I give the floor to Mr. Chaput.

Mr. H.-P. Chaput, Representative of the Welfare Council of the Province of Quebec, COBEQ: If you have no objection, we will discuss the brief.

Mr. Chairman, when we received the mandate of your Senate Committee, we were extremely interested, very conscious from the start that it would have been practically impossible to fulfill a mandate as broad as yours had not the importance of the questions you were asking us caused us, in our capacity as Welfare Council, as intermediary body, to follow the work of your Committee with special attention. And, with this in mind, we have also taken special note of the various briefs which have been submitted to you by various organizations across Canada since 1969.

What struck us at that time was, first and foremost, the very concrete suggestions which had been made with a view to the improvement or correction—bringing corrective measures to bear on the whole situation or phenomenon of poverty in Canada. All these suggestions have led us to consider the problem of the basis on which such recommendations might be applied. We considered firstly to what extent there exists a social awareness in the society in which we live of this poverty across Canada, and particularly in our own province. The very title of our brief, which is called "Social Unawareness of Poverty", provides you at the start with one of our main conclusions. We have given this factor special importance, although it is absolutely impossible to measure in the question of poverty, because we believe that efforts towards relieving poverty can never be fully worked out nor effectively applied if those who are concerned do not consciously take on the problem.

If, throughout the entire brief, we find ourselves obliged to repeat again and again in various terms that in our opinion social awareness of poverty is non-existent, what we mean is that knowledge of it is incomplete, the view of it is filtered and the interpretation of it falsified.

In reading the brief, you have undoubtedly noted certain opinions which we can discuss

and elaborate on later but which in fact constitute for us an overall picture of a situation which exists in our province, and as long as this situation is not corrected, all the solutions which we can suggest to the problem of poverty will be useless. Indeed, the inadequacy of this awareness, not simply the lack of it, but the inadequacy of this common collective awareness of the problem of poverty is prejudicial to every solution we can think of. It is prejudicial to every solution because, on the one hand, many people are not asked to contribute to efforts to solve the problem and because, on the other hand, of the failure of efforts as a result of general non-receptiveness. The influence of the degree of collective awareness on the struggle against poverty could, if you have no objection to this method, be envisaged in the following manner: we ask ourselves: how can a government working at the level of social legislation introduce solutions if it knows that the solutions it wants to introduce do not have the consensus of the society? And, if there is no consensus, is this perhaps precisely because, as we have shown in our brief, this society has no awareness of poverty, or cannot have any awareness of it, or is unable to see or to analyse it? We cannot resist at least asking ourselves whether the present circumstances do not offer an ideal opportunity for government action, however fast or slow... Indeed, you will have noticed a series of remarks in our brief in support of this view. With regard to the knowledge which our society has of poverty, we have noted that too many people deny the existence of poverty, bringing in the argument that no one in Canada dies of starvation. I am sure you have all heard this remark: "There are no poor people because no one dies of starvation". It is excessively naive, in my opinion, to attempt to establish a link, a direct parallel between the phenomenon of poverty and the manner of death, as the example I have just given does.

We have also noted that the poor are unaware of some of the services which exist to help them. We would emphasize one of the remarks we have made on this point. Too many organizations are so afraid of being undated with work that they give out practically no information on the services they could render. This in our view is an indication of something seriously wrong in our campaign against poverty.

We have also noted the lack of mutual knowledge among organizations which are

fighting similar battles against poverty. We could even add in this connection that some groups are so unaware of each other that they are surprised to find themselves getting in each other's way in their efforts. Such is often the case between the citizens' committees on the one hand and the social organizations on the other. The social organizations have watched the birth of these citizens' committees with strictly theoretical approval in several cases, while the citizens' committees have too often considered the social organizations not as their allies in the struggle against poverty, but as the allies of the Establishment (many of these citizens' committees are anti-Establishment).

In the second part of our brief, on the subject of awareness of the phenomenon of poverty, we have noted the importance of our cultural schemes. We deeply regret the fact that poverty appears to too many citizens as an inevitable evil—we have even written in our brief—as a necessary evil for some people. We, for our part, would like to see a spirit of defiance developing and a feeling of optimism about success.

Two other matters are treated in paragraphs 21 and 22. Poverty seen as the manifestation of a failure and the economic cost of poverty—I will give this in *précis* form, if there is no objection, in order to avoid prolonging this introduction, after which we can get back to the discussion—We have also noted the particular situations which provide us with our view of poverty. Here, our remarks show how divergent opinions arise out of the real life situation.

Paragraphs 24 and 25 give instances of 2 cases where these divergent opinions are the cause of disunity in thought and action in the pursuit of solutions to the problem of poverty.

We have, finally, noted that poverty is perceptible under the dressings of affluence and we have asked ourselves whether this is not because society is anxious to keep its hovels and back alleys hidden. What is more, can we condone the form of advertizing which proves, which gives actual proof that, without money, it is possible to possess quite a few goods in this affluent society. You will understand that I am referring to credit, as we mention in paragraph 28. If credit removes certain deprivations from the poor, it does not solve the problem of the poverty of the debtor's existence.

Even at the level of comment and analysis,

which forms the third part of our brief, social awareness is totally limited.

I would draw your attention to the remarks we have made in paragraphs 30 to 35, which show the full extent of the repercussions of poverty on the poor. You will note that we have mentioned deprivation of all kinds; we have talked of insecurity, of permanent frustration, and we have also analysed some of the consequences for the children of poor families.

We have also noted some of the motives which inspire those who fight against poverty, and the danger of a regression, I mean to the position or to the motives which were involved when the first social security measures were put into force in Canada, when many citizens were motivated with regard to these measures by the fear of violence on the part of the fringe population. We have noted in our brief that this danger is perhaps greater in 1970 than it was during the first years of the public assistance program. If we see this danger as having increased, the reason is very simple. If the collective awareness with regard to poverty is weak, we must admit that the poor themselves are a hundred times more aware of the meaning of their poverty than they were then, at the time of the implementation of the first public assistance program. In our opinion, we must understand and accept the various forms of dissatisfaction expressed by these citizens, otherwise the gap between the poor and the opulent society will only grow wider. The day when the existence of this relationship is admitted, we will perhaps be seeing the beginning of some action to stamp out poverty. It is impossible for us to make any sort of attempt against it if we are faced with two groups which are opposed to each other.

Finally, you will have noticed that we have raised a question which has remained unanswered. Why does our society engender poverty? Our organization hopes, Mr. Chairman, that your Committee will be able to answer that question. Finally, our organization also hopes that, as a result of its summary recommendations, the Committee of the Senate will consider the importance of developing this common awareness which Canadians must have of poverty if they really want to combat it. We consider it a pre-requisite for the fight against poverty: the point is that the poor should be aware that they might not be poor, and the others should be aware that they have a certain responsibility in the fight against poverty.

Mr. Chairman, I think that this sentence might serve more or less to summarize our point of view in presenting this brief. We want an awareness of poverty to exist in this country. We want everyone to be more or less on the same wave length. We want these groups to stop aligning themselves, for all practical purposes, against one another, without knowing one another, in their action against poverty.

For my part, Mr. Chairman, I am open to any questions which might be raised, starting from the beginning.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, Mr. Chaput, for that most lucid presentation of your brief; your remarks are certainly in line with what we have understood from our reading of it, and you have added some clarifications. Now, I must tell you that the members of the Committee, the English-speaking members will have the advantage of interpreters today, but there may be some difficulty for members of the Committee who cannot ask the questions which might be asked; all the same, who has the first question? Yes, Senator Eudes.

Senator Eudes: At paragraph 28, page 11 you say, you say from the psychological point of view: "moves the same forces to buy unnecessary things". You also mention: "this easy credit which leads people to believe that they can buy whatever they want without paying". Would it be possible to elaborate on the means which your organization would envisage, either legislative measures, or reforms in legislation, to restrain both advertizing and credit?

Mr. Chaput: Mr. Chairman, at the time of our appearance before the Castonguay Commission, we approached this problem of the matter of credit. First, what we wanted to indicate here—a solution could be arrived at later—what we wanted to indicate is the situation of our poor people in this climate of affluence, where advertizing, even for those of us who are able to buy a lot of goods, is very often harassing. For the poor, who have no means of buying such goods, we have made certain recommendations; if this is of interest, Mr. Chairman, you can read those recommendations which are relevant to the questions you raise and which we formulated at the Castonguay Commission in 1967. You know that the Report of the Castonguay Commission on the subject in which our recommendations are included, undergoes no change.

whether they are accepted or not. We recommend that all financial institutions be required to declare to the borrower, in a uniform manner, the cost of credit expressed in money and in annual interest rates. First point, we have noted, and this applies all the more for the category of the poor, that people don't know, do not know at all what it costs them to borrow on credit. First measure which we have recommended.

We have also recommended the drafting of legislation for the regulation of advertizing on interest rates by financial bodies.

We have also recommended the intervention of the government with a view to protecting the consumer against false claims in advertizing.

We have also recommended that the Quebec Department of Family and Social Welfare, in collaboration with the governmental bodies concerned with our main institutions of savings and credit, undertake a systematic campaign and hold an open inquiry in order, firstly, to inform the consumer on the uses of consumer credit, on its costs and on the dangers attached to irrational borrowing, and, secondly, to inform public opinion of the necessity of saving.

One of our recommendations also could be applied in a special way to this category of the underprivileged in our population. We have recommended the establishment of a specific service, under the terms of the Social Security Act and the Social Assistance Act in Quebec, that would provide, within each of the regional offices and social assistance offices, a service the aim of which would be to protect families against the abuses of consumer credit.

You will notice, Mr. Chairman, that this matter of our various recommendations has been considered, even at the Castonguay Commission, in an overall context, a context of education, because, in our view, the problem, whether it be consumer credit, or whatever it is, cannot be settled with measures a, b, c, and d.

What we need at the present time is a climate which would be receptive to the implementation of such measures, and I would like to return for a moment to the example I gave just now: How can governments pass such measures when they know that the people will not adopt these measures because they don't understand the problems?

The Deputy Chairman: Does that answer your question? Are there any other questions?

Senator Eudes: There is perhaps one on the reforms in the education of the individual and the family, the second part of the question, what means could you suggest to bring about reforms in education, because, surely, education is needed for the individual and the family?

Mr. Chaput: Let us say that certain of the recommendations which I have just mentioned touch somewhat on that part, in terms of the popular education which is being done. There exists here, in Quebec, and also elsewhere a movement called ASSIF which I am sure you are familiar with, and which indeed has already presented a series of recommendations along these lines, and which your Committee undoubtedly could have access to, if it deems necessary; I am quoting from memory, recommendations especially concerned with—if my memory serves me right—the whole content of your question on the education of families, and also the school program which should be included in the education system. We are certainly in favour of all recommendations along these lines since, as I noted, we have kept the spirit of the whole question more in mind. It goes without saying that, in order to get at the spirit, we must start with essentials.

The Deputy Chairman: Other questions? [Text]

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, I would like to ask the witness one question.

I understood him to say that many people who are in need at the present time are not aware of the services that are available to them. They don't know how to get them. I think you went on to say that some of the services that are available to people who administer them don't work together particularly and they overlap.

I don't know if the suggestion was made as to how you overcome that, but I wondered if you had any suggestions as to what we could do to set up a central office, or something where this information could be given.

I just wondered if you had any suggestions about this?

[Translation]

Mr. Chaput: I think that the first conclusion we have come to is one that we are actually

living at our own Welfare Council:— for your information, we already have an information and reference service for the people. Anyone in the region of Quebec who doesn't know where to get such and such a service can communicate with us, and we refer him to the body which is supposed to be able to solve his problem.

The Deputy Chairman: May I ask a question on that subject? Is the public aware that you have that organization, is it known?

Mr. Chaput: This service is known to the same extent as I was describing just now. We are very aware, we experimented 2 years ago with broadcasting on a radio station, and we saw how fantastic the rise in demands for services was; as to your question, then, we realize that, even at the level of social assistance, which is not the fullest possible service, I mean for those who are in need, people have a right to be informed and to receive basic assistance. Eighty per cent of the requests which come to us are for this kind of services. And then, people who are in need, you know, communicate with whoever is available. The Honourable Judge who presented the brief for St-Vincent-de-Paul just now is well aware that at the level...

The Deputy Chairman: A correction for the press, the Honourable Judge did not present his brief.

Mr. Chaput: I beg your pardon. I just remember that the judge, as he knows, has regularly in his organizations to deal with these requests. We, for our part, have been faced with some requests: people think that because we collect money, we distribute it in our social welfare services, which is not the case. We come back then, if you will, to the whole problem of information. People don't know where to go. People are confused by the different doors, because people—I don't know how you are going to translate this—are worn out by trawling along to 4 different doors to receive services, they are obliged to present themselves at 4 doors. That is the whole situation in which the underprivileged especially find themselves, for we perhaps still react a little differently, it matters to us a little less if our car goes down two streets to two different doors but the people who come to us, and who ask us even for the bus fare to go to the Welfare Office in the lower part of town, that gives an idea of their situation. The measures to correct such a state of affairs, it goes without saying, the coordination of all existing resources in the interests of the

underprivileged; it goes without saying—I could continue with a stack of measures which I am sure you are familiar with.

[Text]

Senator Fergusson: There is just one more thing I would like to ask. Obviously the reference is made to people who have to take a bus, but that would be in a city or town, but how do you get the information to the rural people, so that they know what their rights are?

[Translation]

Mr. Cantin: I feel, madam, that what we have developed may not be unique in Quebec but is certainly unique in the other provinces of Canada; in our area we have developed a system of social service officers; there are seven serving our fifteen-constituency area which is at present our territory. We felt that this brought us closer to the people and ensured that the latter were provided with essential services in their own locality. We can also state that the Department of Family Health and Welfare has established a regional welfare office near those headquarters.

[Text]

The Deputy Chairman: Does that answer your question?

Senator Fergusson: Yes, than you very much.

[Translation]

Mr. Chaput: For your information, I would like to state that in the area which Mr. Cantin has just described, fifteen provincial constituencies, we are at present carrying out research existing agencies of a social nature by 'of a special nature' we mean directly or indirectly concerned with social problems; at present, they are social and religious, and our first survey obliges us to acknowledge that within those fifteen constituencies there are three thousand, possibly almost four thousand organizations.

Mr. Cantin: I would like to add just one thing to Senator Fergusson's opening question and that is that we feel, as Mr. Chaput stated just now, that services should perhaps be extended beyond their present limits in the matters of referrals and information for the public—it is worth studying the possibility of setting up an emergency service as soon as possible—hopefully, in 1971. This would operate on a twenty-four-hours-a-day, seven-days-a-week basis, would certainly provide publicity with a well-advertised telephone number, so that when anyone has a problem they know whom to approach and can be properly advised as to whom they should contact.

Senator Quart: The question that I particularly wanted to ask has already been asked by Senator Fergusson and also by Mr. Cantin—as I understand it, you are shortly to organize a twenty-four hour emergency service—will this organizing be done by your Welfare Council or by the government?

Mr. Cantin: We are going to set it up. Of course, we are still examining all the probable implications of this matter and there will certainly be meetings with the government because government services will have to be available as well, week-ends and evenings, to meet the needs we are concerned with.

Senator Quart: Mr. Cantin, I have already stated to our Committee what I said to Quebec—I believed that you were with the city, the government and the Federation, but obviously, we did not know this. There is another thing which greatly interests me—I think the situation here has changed since I left Quebec—and that is the fund-raising campaign, the Federation...

Are you the ones who take charge of the campaigns for funds here?

[Text]

Mr. Chaput: Oui.

Senator Quart: And I understand you have one hundred affiliations or associations with you? Do you find that it is more difficult to get funds now than before?

[Translation]

In your brief, page 9, last paragraph, you state: 'In addition, the idea that the State is taking a greater responsibility with respect to poverty leads some people to conclude that they personally need now do little or nothing to help the poor.' Do you find fund-raising more of a headache now than it was before?

Mr. Cantin: It is certainly more difficult now to get people to give, to raise funds, than it was a few years ago. There are those who will tell you that with all the welfare and social security measures in force, the government should now be in a position to provide agencies like ours right across Canada with the money they need to survive rather than have us beg for funds. We feel, however, that it is important to have agencies which are able to obtain funds from sources other than the government so that at chosen moments, pressure can be brought to bear on government agencies and the attitudes of the general public towards those in need of social assistance can be better represented.

Senator Quart: Are you, in association with

the Federation of the Social Welfare Council, asking for a certain amount of money to have the privilege of being a member together with several hundred other organizations?

Mr. Cantin: No, the only thing we want is for this to be a corporate agency presenting its financial statement to us and administered by a responsible board of directors, and so on. Of the hundred or so agencies which I have mentioned, not all receive grants from us; there are those which receive government or other grants but which are nevertheless affiliated for services or for participation in activities.

Mr. Chaput: In order to clear up this question, Mr. Chairman, I think we must remind ourselves that here in Quebec City, unlike what you found in Montreal, the Social Welfare Council has two branch services, the one which you call the Federation, and the Board, called Social Development Council in Montreal. In Quebec City there is just one agency having two sectors: one is the financial service which collects and spends funds with respect to the various agencies and the other is a social planning service which is concerned with social development only.

Senator Quart: Just for the record—I know the answer really—is the entire executive made up of voluntary workers?

Mr. Cantin: That is correct.

Senator Quart: Now, how many salaried employees have you?

Mr. Cantin: At present, COBEQ has twenty-four employees including secretarial staff, in both the financial and the social planning sectors.

Senator Quart: If I remember rightly, you had not so many employees at the outset.

Mr. Cantin: No.

Senator Quart: Then too, the Federation of the Social Welfare Council received assistance from Veterans' Aid, all branches, at the outset.

Mr. Cantin: In 1946.

Senator Quart: Exactly, we thought we were giving you a present.

[Text]

Senator Inman: The witness mentioned that one of his recommendations was that legislation should be enacted to control the advertising agencies and I was interested to read, a

few days ago, in an Ottawa paper, that several firms had been fined for that sort of thing, so there must be some legislation.

I am just wondering if perhaps we are all a little bit negligent in watching the ads and catching these misleading ones. It would be a help if we made it a habit of watching these, but apparently there is legislation to that effect?

[Translation]

Mr. Chaput: If my memory serves me right, I believe that that was one of our recommendations. If you will just give me a moment...

[Text]

Senator Inman: I think it was something like that.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator, I think I have read about this and I believe the case that you mentioned—these people were fined are exactly for advertising something which did not meet the requirements as advertised.

Senator Inman: Yes.

The Deputy Chairman: It is not exactly the same thing.

Senator Inman: Well, it was misleading advertising. I think there were three firms.

Senator Quart: Simpson-Sears.

Senator Inman: Shell and Simpson-Sears.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, the point was, not who was fined but why.

Senator Hastings: They haven't been fined yet.

Senator Quart: No, they haven't been fined as yet.

Senator Hastings: They are still not guilty.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator Inman, do you have any more questions?

Senator Inman: No, I think that is it.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, I have a question I would like to ask, in fact I have two.

[Translation]

I would like to ask the witness two questions. Certain comments were made during the reading, one of which related to the questions I now want to ask. Firstly, how are we to combat ignorance of the problem? Secondly, you ask why our society produces poverty. Well, I would like to ask you the same thing—these are the very reasons which our Committee is looking for. In a country as prosperous as ours, one for which wealthy is

not an inappropriate word, why do we also have areas where there is poverty and great misery? What can be the cause? I am sure I stated in my opening remarks that I believe we must go to the cause, to the very root of the matter, if our work is to be really significant; we are aware that people like you whose special field is the study of poverty and who provide policies and information could at this point enlighten the Committee and ease its task if they informed us how we should best fight ignorance.

Mr. Chaput: Mr. Chairman, the reference is to certain proposals which you will find on pages 18 and 19 where we have stated our point of view and outlined the steps which could be taken and which would probably offer a solution to the problem of society's ignorance concerning poverty. I believe that everyone has read the pertinent recommendations; I would like to refer you especially to the recommendations starting from 51, 52 and 53 and going on from there. Our recommendations urging that your Committee should not simply be a study group but should, by some method or another, proceed to the application of recommendations as made. We have made some proposals in this connection. We have pointed out that Canadians must be made aware of the existence of poverty—that is a basic and obvious step. However elementary, this is the very foundation of our document. In it we have stated that Quebecers like Canadians in general, do not accept poverty as a fact, though they acknowledge it in theory. This then is our first recommendation with respect to the war on ignorance. Before we can fight poverty, this ignorance of its very existence must be dispelled. We have also made recommendations for a fight against ignorance of the agencies. I have just been reading a document which must surely be familiar to you called *Prêtre et laïc* (priest and layman); I really did not expect to find so many facts on poverty in it. However, the church in Quebec is at present much concerned with poverty. There is little or no co-ordination between the projects or programs they are trying to handle. If I am not mistaken, a member of your committee is involved—I am referring to Senator Maurice Lamontagne who is concerned with unionism and poverty. The Church is also making pronouncements and there are various other movements forming in this connection, on different scales. However, all these people just do not get together. So we are making a series of recommendations concerning this

agencies, to try to co-ordinate the work being done on poverty and those doing it. When I said just now that our line of work is probably going to bring us into touch with three or four thousand agencies, that was the point I had in mind: although there may be no more than a hundred officially recognized agencies—the larger ones—which we know about and are used to working with, yet every rural area has other agencies of which we know little or nothing and which know little or nothing about us.

The Vice-Chairman: Are you saying that that is the situation here in Quebec?

Mr. Chaput: Yes, in Quebec especially. We have also made recommendations in connection with voluntary work. There is a noticeable difference between present-day voluntary workers fighting poverty and those who have already fought that battle. Mr. Cantin has commented on this.

The Vice-Chairman: What is the difference?

Mr. Chaput: Today, we have a situation where there are very many voluntary workers and many other people who could donate their services but who prefer to regard such matters as the responsibility of government. There are people who have a very pessimistic view of what they could achieve. If I may voice an opinion on this, I feel that people today are so very aware of the complexity of the problem that they are no longer convinced that any small service they rendered could mitigate the problem in the least—this is a matter for broad-scale action and planning, they decide, and thereupon they slough off all responsibility.

The causes of that situation, just to take the example of the social and other agencies which have sprung up everywhere in Quebec and elsewhere, as far as I can see, are incorporated under section three of the Companies Act. A few years ago—I am not crying over spilt milk, just reviewing the facts—we know that some of the executive of those agencies knew much more and did much more in the context of that agency. You must surely remember the time when people looked out for the unfortunate minority themselves, were on boards of directors, regarded the matter as their responsibility, whereas nowadays, their position has changed, they are much further removed from that same minority, so that this type of voluntary worker is harder and harder to come by—for instance, we now

have to go and look for an expert to administer these agencies and I do not think that in these agencies different structures have been included so that voluntary work would prove economically sound. I think that this is a permanent feature of the contemporary scene—people are so inclined to envisage the total problem whereas just five years ago—we need not go back twenty years to my own experience—people were prepared to work on one facet of any problem X or Y. Nowadays, they are so aware that any facet relates to a much larger whole that they will not agree to go on with their voluntary work.

The Vice-Chairman: You are no doubt aware, Mr. Chaput, that the public is now aware of the problem of polluting the environment, of pollution as a whole, everybody gets worked up about pollution and wants to do something to solve the problem—could we aim at developing the same attitude towards poverty and whip up the same public interest in it?

Mr. Chaput: Yes—if only people talked about poverty as much as they talk about pollution—it has become so general that now anyone seeing a 'bus go by remarks: "Pollution!"

The Vice-Chairman: Even a bicycle...

Mr. Chaput: Mr. Chairman, I think you have chosen a most appropriate example. I think that it has perhaps taken no more than one year to alert people to the dangers of pollution. Wherever you go, people are talking pollution. But this is by no means the case with poverty. You ask whether the same policy could help with respect to poverty. I am sure that it could, as far as publicity goes. Recommendation number 58 mentions the mass media. We need hardly mention the part they have played in publicizing the problem of pollution. I do not know what part they have played in fighting ignorance of poverty.

The Vice-Chairman: Could they dispel it?

Mr. Chaput: Ignorance will not be dispelled simply through publicity. There must be a further process fighting side by side with publicity. If people are acquainted with a problem they may agree to study—but first they must be acquainted with it. At present, people are shrugging off the problem of poverty in a disconcertingly complacent manner.

Mr. Chaput: All measures aimed at establishing a strictly economic or monetary bal-

ance would correct the fault to some extent, I think, but not entirely. We should note that this measure exists in our present situation, that is, a number of people who are very wealthy feel that they are doing their share by paying their taxes—feel that by that method they give more than enough, with contributions to charity funds as well. We have recognized this aspect as a very real danger—too many people who are not really acquainted with the problem of poverty as a whole feel that they have fulfilled their entire social responsibility by laying out a certain number of dollars and cents. In reply to your comments, sir, on the comparative topicality of the pollution question and the poverty question—the point is that with pollution, we feel we must do something or we may all be dead in five years.

The Vice-Chairman: Fear brings everybody up sharp.

Mr. Chaput: Poverty does not affect everyone but our present situation means that everyone, whatever their status, is dissatisfied.

The Vice-Chairman: Fair enough.

Mr. Chaput: Fair enough? Which means, in other words, that we have taken note of the fact that this brief contains the criticism that the government very often asks for taxes, because poor people take a lot of looking after, don't they? I will just give you one example to show you the mood of the people, drawn from work we did in one of our areas. A certain community requested that the names of those on welfare be listed on the doors of churches—that is quite some mood, don't you agree? What those people are saying is that after all, welfare costs them so much that those receiving it should at least be made to feel ashamed. This is the mood which prevailed when we made our comments. Those paying for welfare are now beginning to adopt a hard line, the very opposite of the spirit of co-operation we want. There is insecurity, there is shame—the old feelings about welfare are beginning to creep back.

[Text]

The Deputy Chairman: Senator Hastings, would we have a question coming from the west now?

Senator Hastings: Well, with respect to hearing a committal from the have's as to

their responsibility, and the reason they are so interested, or upset, or concerned over pollution, is it not a reason that they are all affected by pollution?

We all have a fear of pollution, but the have's have no fear of poverty, no concern of poverty; therefore it is a problem they disregard.

Does it not have to be brought home to the have's that they have a fear of poverty and poverty is not going to go on existing and they should have—they haven't now but—a fear of that condition in this country, if not in the world? I would like to ask another question, if I may, of Mr. Cantin or Mr. Chaput. Would you talk now pour le district de Montréal?

[Translation]

Mr. Chaput: If the question refers to Quebec City, I feel you may rest assured that we shall reply for the Quebec City area, but as soon as you pass the east limit and get into Dorchester County—well, the representatives of that county are here and will tell you that people there are by no means well off. I cannot answer for the entire province; the Hon. Jean Marchand replied fairly well on its behalf by referring to zones, if you remember; according to newspaper reports, he saw this zone as extending from Trois-Rivières to a line east of Quebec City, which means that the zone we are at present covering is exactly the zone which is in our region. I think I am safe in stating that within our area here, certain rural constituencies are certainly disadvantaged—Portneuf, amongst others.

[Text]

Senator Quart: In our tour, you see, we shall visit Rimouski, St-Jean-de-Dieu and the Gaspé Peninsula; it is true that people there do not receive a high annual wage for their work, but they make a living just the same.

And there is terrible poverty, isn't there?

Do you think there is much poverty in the Gaspé Peninsula?

[Translation]

Mr. Chaput: I can give an opinion on that, because I see people who have done much more work than I have on the program which Mr. —up there behind me—mentioned. I also learned about the ARDA and BAEQ program in eastern Quebec through contacts which I was able to make with those who have gone into the field, and the Eastern Quebec situation is certainly a rather tragic

one. If we also refer to the report of the Economic Council, we will find that it too refers to the zone east of Quebec City in similar terms, stating that the Maritimes are the most disadvantaged area in all Canada. I am referring to these various documents as an affirmative reply to your question. There must surely be a number of other references.

[Text]

Senator McGrand: I think you mentioned the County of Dorchester a few moments ago as if to indicate that there was some poverty in Dorchester County, is that what you meant? What I mean is: do you consider that the poorest of Counties?

The Vice-Chairman: No, he didn't say that. That is only one.

Senator McGrand: How do you list them for poverty? Would you say Dorchester, Kamouraska? What counties do you find the most poverty in?

Senator Quart: In your opinion, what area has the most poor?

[Translation]

Mr. Chaput: That is the same as saying that within the territory which we are covering (I should put in that there has never been a comparative study by constituency to see which are the poorest), when we speak of poverty, we are nevertheless referring to a strictly economic concept. In that sense, we consider especially disadvantaged those constituencies which are comparable to certain zones of Metropolitan Quebec, themselves very disadvantaged.

Mr. Cantin: I think I can refer you to a particular document, the Boucher Report, in which there is a reference to a certain number of constituencies in Eastern Quebec which are poorer than other areas of the province; I cannot name them offhand, however.

Senator Quart: It's valuable to have a poor memory in those areas.

The Vice-Chairman: My fellow committee-members, I believe there are two subjects which we have not yet touched upon, and which I feel are of great importance—I would like to ask our witness's opinion on this matter. Are not inflation and unemployment

factors which contribute to poverty? We have about eight minutes left to discuss unemployment and inflation.

Mr. Chaput: I think that to give a negative response to your question would indicate that our heads are in the sand. I would like to make the following comments. The Castonguay Commission—forgive me for referring to it, but we did some significant survey work there—put forward a theory that unemployment in Canada is here to stay because as well as the people who do not want to work there are the people who cannot work—the foremost factor, really. This may be related to the fact that we are opposed to poverty being considered a necessary evil. There is a relationship there, because when we accepted the reality of unemployment in our midst, we countered this acceptance by suggesting and recommending an alternative way of thinking—at this point I do not want to delve into the vicissitudes of a guaranteed minimum income, unless the Committee especially wants to discuss this. I have no objections whatsoever, and I think that whether it is called a guaranteed minimum or something else, we all have the idea fairly well. With this situation prevailing in our environment, it may be taken for granted that such a situation is at the basis of poverty.

While not considering poverty on a uniquely economic basis, we are wide enough awake to realize that if people just don't have a dime, there is simply no point in talking about culture or leisure pursuits or any of the finer things in life. We are always hearing the adage: 'Money doesn't buy happiness', but the fact is that it helps, because if you want to go to certain places, certain restaurants, you cannot go dressed just anyhow—poor people are noticed in society more and more, in my opinion, and people comment on this more and more. There is a sort of wave-length, everyone has his concept of poverty, sees it in his own way; some say it costs the rest of society a lot, some feel compassion—I could go on indefinitely; there is no stable social attitude towards poverty.

With respect to inflation, it goes without saying that the social welfare rates have not kept pace with inflation and each and every one of us who has had to make out a budget for a family on welfare has had approximately the same experience—it is very difficult if not impossible to make out such a budget.

These two causes, then—unemployment, which means that some people have not a

subsistence income, and inflation, which pushes up prices, are certainly at the root of this whole question of poverty; I am sure you have already read articles stating that poor people change hovels in May. They do not leave the hovel to go into a comfortable house, they simply change hovels. A survey of housing costs in Quebec City will suffice as a demonstration that of those at a disadvantaged level of society, very few can afford to rent a house. Perhaps we may be allowed to hope that the Social Welfare Act adopted in Quebec a few months ago will do something to correct this situation. If we can discover the cause behind the poverty of all such families, as stipulated in the Act, we will, I should hope, be able to do something to correct the situation.

Senator Quart: In replying to me, Mr. Cantin mentioned the Boucher Report—could we obtain copies of that report?

Mr. Cantin: It is available.

Senator Quart: Where can it be obtained?

Mr. Cantin: It is available.

Senator Quart: Where can it be obtained?

Mr. Cantin: I believe the government still has copies; the Quebec Official Publisher probably has some too.

Senator Quart: I would really like to know whether we could get them by tomorrow—they would be a great help in our tour of the Lower St. Lawrence.

Mr. Cantin: Yes.

Senator Quart: There is also the report by our colleague, Senator Lamontagne, but that can wait until we return to Ottawa. I would like to have a copy of the other, however.

Mr. Cantin: I think it could be obtained upon application to the Quebec Official Publisher.

Senator Eudes: Is it a review?

Mr. Cantin: Yes, it's a review, whilst the other is the Boucher Commission report, whose aim was to...

The Vice-Chairman: Yes, Senator Eudes, its number?

Mr. Chaput: Volume 18, number 9, November 1968.

[Text]

Senator Hastings: Do you have any evidence, sir, or is it your opinion that the poor are not content to remain as docile as they have been?

In other words, do you have any evidence that the poor in the Province du Quebec are willing or are becoming organized in demanding or requesting their rights?

[Translation]

Mr. Chaput: Surely, sir, I think that what is happening in Quebec cannot be compared to the other provinces, what is happening in Quebec in the organization of new mechanisms, new structures, citizens' committees, I do not have the exact figure, but there are more than 50 in Quebec. These citizens' committees are trying, in their own way, in their own climate, to make a contribution to solving the problem of poverty in their environment. However, at the beginning of my remarks I pointed out that the citizens' committees are attempting to solve their problem in a way that is relatively far removed from the way the agencies and governments are using to solve the very same problems. Furthermore, I noted that at the outset, perhaps we shall have to—we and not the citizens' committees—we shall have to make a certain effort to adopt a certain aggressiveness so that people will become aware of their situation because today people—and we noted this in our brief—a short sentence which states very well what it means—we said that the citizens now reject that, in an honourable climate like ours, their point of view is defended. The citizens in the less fortunate environments in Quebec reject that I speak on their behalf. They accept that on behalf of an agency working in that sector, we can work but they reject that we speak on their behalf. They are now capable of speaking and they want to say what they feel. They came to say it to the Canadian Welfare Council Conference in Toronto. They said it in their own way. It was not necessarily the same way as the agency representatives said it but basically they both said the same thing; they both wanted to solve their problem. We noted there as elsewhere, a certain dialogue between the deaf; they said the same thing, they are aiming at the same objectives, but one is doing it on a basis where it is involved and the other is doing it on a professional basis, with a fine program. It should not be said that one is not necessary or that the other is not necessary; both are necessary. Means must be found, each in our own environment.

ronments, for getting on the same wavelength, where the two are able to understand one another. There is no question as to whether the poor are organizing. Experiments certainly have been made in Quebec. If you get this magazine, it will tell you in it about the union of the poor. However, the experiment has been relatively successful in the sense that it is not easy to co-ordinate all of those committees that represent the citizens. I think that valid experiments have been attempted, both in Quebec and in Montreal, where an attempt was made to raise the social, economic and cultural level, and what have you, concerning citizens.

Senator Hastings: I noticed by press reports that they had become organized in a town in Gaspé. Do you foresee violence?

Mr. Chaput: What we said in our brief is that we do not foresee violence. What we said was that in such situations, someone is so involved that there may be, one day, a beginning, but between that and violence...

The Deputy Chairman: Gentlemen, I now wish to thank you for your brief and your discussions. I must advise you, to tell you quite simply that at first glance, when I read your brief for the first time, I perhaps regarded it as a perhaps somewhat unbalanced brief because I saw many criticisms and few solutions to the problem. However, that judgment cannot be upheld, there is no doubt that I was mistaken and I take back my words, especially after the mass of knowledge you have shown in all the criticisms that you studied, in every way. I see here, by the document that you submitted to us and your answers, that you know what you are talking about. I believe that your brief was, in my opinion, one of the best accepted because as we say in good New Brunswick "Canadian", you are hitting the nail on the head. Perhaps that is what we were lacking.

You are experienced men who work directly with the poor, therefore you certainly have a load of knowledge. Therefore, we greatly appreciated seeing you and hearing you this morning, despite all the worries of your grades, your occupations, and rest assured that all your recommendations will be studied, because the study period will be fairly long since the trip is over. The briefs will be re-read several times, compared with the other documents, it will be a huge task. You can be proud of the contribution you have made this morning, you are very worthy, it is very well accepted and personally, and on

behalf of the Committee, I wish to thank you most sincerely.

Mr. Goulet: I had prepared a very fine sentence to thank you, I have three, four lines. However, it gave me great pleasure to answer the mandate on the social unawareness of poverty which you entrusted to COBEQ. We hoped that the ideas expressed have been constructive, even though slightly unbalanced at the beginning, and that they will help you find solution to the problem of poverty. I hope that we shall have an opportunity to see you again because it is a very great pleasure for us to see former Quebecers again, like Mrs. Quart. Rest assured that COBEQ's door will always be open to you, we are at your entire disposal to answer, in the near or distant future, to answer, may I say, all your questions on poverty.

The Deputy Chairman: It should perhaps be added that you, the members of your Committee, were able to note this morning that we made a special effort to speak and to conduct all the discussions in French, even though for us French-speaking people, this unfortunately is an experience that we do not have very often because we are in a situation where everything is carried on in English, and I think that practising the little bit of French that we know is a very fine opportunity for us.

Senator Hastings: It is a good experience for a citizen from Alberta.

The Deputy Chairman: We shall now have a brief which will be presented by Mr. Gary Quart Ouellet. This is a brief from an individual who does not represent any agency, any organization other than himself.

[Text]

This brief is an individual brief. Mr. Ouellet represents no special organization—he just represents himself.

We have not had the pleasure to have this brief before as I know I just received my own copy at this very moment.

This is rather unusual and sometimes we take objection to this because it puts us in a kind of situation where we don't exactly know which way the wind is sailing.

However, we will accept Mr. Ouellet this morning. I will not ask Mr. Ouellet to read the whole of his brief because it is thirty-four pages and it will take a long time.

Perhaps Mr. Ouellet can summarize and tell us in his own words the contents of the

brief and make some recommendations and some remarks and at a later date we will, Mr. Ouellet, read your brief entirely and this is all we can do at this moment.

Mr. Garry Quart Ouellet, Lawyer: Mr. Chairman, honourable senators, I should point out that the reason you did not get the brief ahead of time was for the simple reason that I was notified not even two weeks ago that this had to be ready.

The Deputy Chairman: When you say "we", who is "we"?

Mr. Ouellet: I meant myself and my secretary.

The Deputy Chairman: Oh, I see.

Mr. Ouellet: And for that reason I literally worked late into many nights preparing this brief. Although I had been in communication with this Committee over a year ago, I wasn't notified until about ten days ago that it had to be ready. That is the reason that the brief is not ready.

Now, I have timed myself and it runs to about thirty-five minutes and I find it very difficult Mr. Chairman, to take out just one point. There are so many points that I felt important to discuss and it represents a point of view that I don't believe the Committee had heard yet.

It is our turn at that, you might say, and I would ask the Senators if they have no major objections that they let me take that thirty-five minutes and read the brief to you.

Senator Quart: Well, we have done that before. Being that we have no meeting this afternoon I think it is all right.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, we will not need the translators and Mr. Ouellet can read it in English.

Mr. Ouellet: Mr. Chairman, honourable senators:

One—The Welfare State.

First let me thank you for the opportunity of addressing the Committee. My purpose is mainly to say some things which I feel must be said regardless of what this Committee may ultimately recommend. The idea, for which I just happen to be spokesman today may or may not sway this Committee but should they not, they will not have gone down by default.

What qualifications should one possess to address a Senate Committee on Poverty? Who can claim to be an expert on poverty? For sure, the poor can tell us what it is like, not having any money; obviously however, they cannot tell us how to alleviate the problem. The wealthy man, on the other hand, has acquired an expertise: he has discovered how to alleviate poverty.

Unfortunately for me, I cannot come before you as a wealthy man. I am a young lawyer, and a struggling one at that, in every material sense of the word. I am engaged every day, just as each of us is engaged, in my own personal war on poverty. And the struggle has brought me to certain conclusions.

Many of the ideas I would like to suggest might not strike you as "original" or "creative", and indeed some may even appear strange coming from a man of my age. But in an era hellbent on socialism and state paternalism, many of these ideas become refreshingly novel, in the same way in which the Ten Commandments emerge today as a radically non-conformist document.

I have come to plead the case for freedom, fully aware that freedom has had more persuasive advocates. I have come to suggest a remedy for poverty, while allowing that I did not discover the cure.

"The world", said John Dos Passos, "is becoming a museum of socialist failures". As a young man I have come to plead the case for my kind of Canada.

We are living in an age of runaway relief, social insecurity, and state extravagance. Money is the philosopher's stone of today's new social engineers. Money is the universal panacea for all our problems: crime, unemployment and regional disparity. Poverty especially can and must be eliminated—and universal, compulsory welfare is the only solution ever seriously considered.

"What do we propose to do about poverty?" This is the giant killer—the recurring haunting question. To answer "nothing", of course sounds callous. The question not only begs an answer, it would seem to demand one. How many Senators on this Committee feel that the country expects—indeed demands an answer to: "What does the Committee intend to do about poverty?"

And always the same depressing suggestions in varying shades and degrees: compulsory state welfare. The idea is hardly new:

is credited with having wrecked havoc in the Rome of Julius Caesar. Yet somehow the enchantment of the Welfare State persists as long as it is adorned with the rhetoric of a "soak-the-rich" demagoguery.

2. Federal Paternalism.

Our federal government cut itself in on the deal in 1944. It announced that, because of its general spending power, it intended to start "appropriate" welfare payments without provincial participation so long as no special taxes were levied—an obvious sophistry since any tax money appropriated to such schemes was in effect the object of a special levy. Today, approximately 60 per cent of estate, corporate and income tax is federally appropriated.

Ponder for a moment the present welfare labyrinth, taking the Province of Quebec as an example.

The federal government is involved in family allowances with the provinces. In the old age pension field, it acts exclusively. Quebec, on the other hand, is in an exclusive old age housing scheme. In hospital insurance, Quebec administers—but following federal forms. The medical field is absurdly complex with Quebec holding exclusive jurisdiction in the field of health. There is a joint programme for the blind and a Federal scheme for unemployment, a Quebec scheme for maternity benefits and general welfare, and so on.

The principle of subsidiary of function is a fundamental and unshakeable law of social philosophy; the best government is that closest to the governed, for three reasons. First, the agency closest to the people is in a better position to judge the appropriateness of a scheme. Secondly, the agency closest to the people is better situated to administer the scheme effectively. Finally, it is always dangerous to allow a higher body to appropriate itself powers that can be handled by a lower body precisely because it is dangerous to allow accumulation of power in any one authority. Power corrupts, and so forth.

The point is this: if we must have state welfare, better to have it under exclusively provincial jurisdiction.

But must we have state welfare?

3. The Minimum Wage Syndrome

Whenever the subject of poverty is discussed, the suggestion inevitably is made to

raise the minimum wage. The present minimum wage varies from province to province: \$1.10 in Newfoundland, \$1.35 in Manitoba, \$1.30 in Ontario, and so forth. The average is roughly \$1.25 an hour. Those who favour raising the minimum wage claim that we can raise our general level of prosperity without it costing the taxpayer one cent. The scheme is advanced as one more example of how state planning can bring about "the good life".

The minimum wage proposal is one of the most mischievous of the recurring economic heresies of our time. In essence, a law is passed forbidding employers to pay employees less than the stipulated rate, which may vary from industry to industry and region to region.

What happens, say, when the government enacts a minimum wage of \$1.25 an hour? If the employee is not worth \$1.25 an hour, he will lose his job and the employer will simply hire someone else, someone who is worth \$1.25 an hour. Has this now unemployed man been helped by the minimum wage law?

And what happens if the employee was essential to that employer? He will receive his \$1.25 an hour, but the employer will mark up the price of this product. The consumer suffers and everybody, including the employee, must bear the resulting inflation.

But what if the employer cannot raise the price of his product and remain competitive? The only way out is out of business. The consumer loses access to the product, competition is narrowed and the employee is now out of a job which, though not tremendously paying, was still the best he could find, else, why would he have remained?

The great tragedy of the minimum wage law is that those most hurt are those that were meant to be helped. Some workers receive higher wages, but at the expense of others who have no jobs at all. Money earmarked for productive investment is forcibly channelled towards meeting these higher wages, and growth is hindered.

But there is an even greater evil inherent in minimum wage laws. Workers are not free to compete by offering their services at a lower price than their fellow workers. The wage of the workers is, after all, nothing if not his price; the employer is the consumer of the worker's services.

The minimum wage law fixes prices, prevents competition, hurts those it means to help, and ultimately, victimizes the entire population.

4. Guaranteed Income

Canadians today are subject to the hardest sell in their history, the guaranteed annual income or, as sometimes referred to, the negative income tax (free market economist Henry Hazlitt correctly pointed out that the term "negative income tax" was nothing but a trick name which corrupted the language and confused thought; equivalent to calling theft a negative gift").

The pitch is being made by Reuben C. Baetz, executive director of the Canadian Welfare Council, who keeps insisting Canadians should receive a guaranteed income as a matter of social right. Joining Baetz is a chorus of politicians from all parties.

There is a plethora of guaranteed income plans making the political rounds: the Milton Friedman plan, the Robert Lampman plan, the James Tobin plan, the Schwartz and Theobald plan or variations on these. But all of them have the same theme: there is a poverty line below which no man must be allowed to fall. If the bread earner brings home less than this minimum amount, the government gives him a lump of money to make up the difference. If a man earns no income at all, he receives the full subsidy.

For example, the Economic Council of Canada has decided that the poverty line for a family of four is \$3,500.00 per year. If a wage-earner brings home \$2,500.00 a year, he will get a grant of \$1,000.00. If he earns nothing, he will receive \$3,500.00 from Ottawa. It is usually argued that such a plan eliminates the need for all other welfare plans. It administers welfare on the basis of need and cuts down on bureaucratic wastage.

The immediate problem, of course, is setting the poverty line. Are we speaking of mere subsistence or adequate subsistence?

There is also the technical problem of payment. Government cannot give one lump sum at the end of every year to make up the annual difference because, presumably, the recipient would need the financial assistance on a monthly or weekly basis. But how to score this with the annual computation? How much will the scheme cost? Will it be effective or will it perpetuate poverty?

There are many unanswered questions in the arguments of the socialist sages, yet guaranteed annual income plans grow in popularity. Five years ago, when I first read of Milton Friedman's "negative income tax" in his book *Capitalism and Freedom*, I agreed with the idea if only because it eliminated the present universality of welfare. I defended the scheme for two hours one evening on a hotline television show.

Any man may make a mistake, said Cicero, but none but a fool will continue in it. The scheme, I am now convinced, would be disastrous for Canada.

Firstly, it is extremely naive to believe that all other welfare schemes would be abolished. They would not, and the guaranteed annual income would be annexed to our present legal quagmire.

Secondly, the cost would be enormous. Two assistant professors of economics at Queen's University, Ronald W. Crowley and David A. Dodge, set about computing the cost of a guaranteed annual income in Canada. They concluded that a proposal which might substantially meet the recommendations of the Economic Council of Canada regarding the "poverty line" would require a proportionate tax of 46%, an exceedingly expensive proposition. And they further warned that such a high proportionate rate of taxation could result in a decreased work effort, which in turn would mean a serious underestimate of total costs.

A decreased work effort is virtually inevitable. Recipients become wards of the Provident State and initiative is stifled. Consider a married man with two children. The Economic Council of Canada has decided that this man's poverty line minimum is \$3,500.00 per year. What would happen if the Government, in an attempt to abolish poverty, passed a law making it illegal to earn less than \$3,500.00 a year and imposed a negative income tax with offense (i.e. set up a negative income tax with \$3,500.00 as the poverty line)?

Economist James Estes reminds us that \$3,500.00 means, in a regular full work week \$1.75 an hour. Now what if our intended beneficiary had previously been employed at the minimum wage rate of \$1.25 an hour? Would he continue to work for \$1.25 an hour when he could stay home and receive \$1.75 an hour tax free? Not likely! And suppose his salary were doubled to \$2.50 an hour? It is still very unlikely that he would consider

returning to work, because this \$2.50 an hour would entail effort, taxes, and employment expenses (meals, transportation and so forth), whereas the \$1.75 an hour handout is tax and expense-free, and involves no work whatsoever. He may consider returning to work for \$3.00 an hour. But, remember, he had previously been paid \$1.25 an hour. If his salary must jump from \$1.25 to \$3.00 an hour, another man previously earning \$3.00 an hour will insist on receiving \$5.00 an hour. The general consequence of the guaranteed annual income scheme will be rampant inflation, which would in turn raise the poverty line to \$3.00 an hour, or \$8,400.00 per year. Who will have been helped?

The implications of the guaranteed annual income plan are disastrous and tragic. The poorer man's initiative is destroyed and an unjustly high tax is imposed on the remainder of the population. Inflation would soar and the economy would be sabotaged.

5. The dole

All of which brings us to a consideration of the concept of the dole. Because the guaranteed income plan represents the logical conclusion of the Welfare State, we can easily show the disastrous consequences which must result from such a scheme. But in Canada we have built up our welfare quagmire in piecemeal fashion, and it is more difficult to argue against one single welfare application than against the entire melange. When welfare was first introduced, there were those who asked "where will it end?" This may have sounded amusingly alarmist at the time, but today the question surely deserves an answer. Where will it end?

In opting for the welfare state, we opt for security at the price of freedom. The concept that men should rely on government for everything from cradle to coffin is at best demoralizing. The dictum "security should be earned" has been replaced by the myth "security is a social right". If young people grow up in a community where the consequences of failure are greatly diminished under artificial hot-house conditions, these people cannot but regard life as cheap and stless.

Let's face it: living involves effort. Man has always tried to avoid effort as much as possible; this is what motivates man to invent more efficient means of production. One man invented the paint roller because he could paint less and still get the job done. The

advances of civilization are thus attributable to this lazy streak in man, this propensity to avoid effort by seeking out easier ways to accomplish certain tasks.

In recent years one segment of the population has been offered another way to avoid effort: not by creating some new labour saving device, not by inventing an easier way, but simply by voting for increased handouts. Justice means "to each his due". We have abandoned this natural concept and have chosen Marx's definition "to each according to his needs". And we have encouraged men to establish their needs in the polling booth.

Originally, welfare was defended on the basis of the Judaeo-Christian concept of charity. But this idea of charity has always included the individual moral decision. The teachings of the great religions have always stated that you should give to the needy. It was a voluntary act. Under the compulsory welfare, there is little moral value attached to the confiscation of Peter's property in order to distribute it to Paul and Fred. Either we as a nation accept the Judaeo-Christian ethic or we do not. If we do, then leave the matter up to private charities. If we do not, then let us not defend Welfare on these grounds.

A shift in rhetoric saw welfare defended as "insurance schemes" but, unlike private insurance schemes, these plans were universal and compulsory. The shortcomings of universal welfare are many and often tragicomic—the rich man is forced to go on the dole. Our politicians lamented for years that a means test would hurt the dignity of the needy citizen in that he would be obliged to prove his need. Put another way, it doesn't matter a lick if you plunder the wealth of the successful—what counts is that you not bruise the sensibilities of the unsuccessful. And lumped therein are the idle and the improvident, along with the true unfortunates. Meanwhile, back at the chateau, the millionaire continues to receive his old age pension and the heiress continues to receive her family allowance cheque for Jonathan's popsicle budget while you and I struggle to foot the bill for the bureaucratic jungle necessary to perpetuate this economic tour de force.

John Stuart Mill put in a nutshell the compulsory aspect's evil: "the sole end for which mankind are warranted, individually or collectively, in interfering with the liberty of action of any of their number, is self-protection . . . his own good, either physical or moral is not a sufficient warrant . . ."

As it is sold to us, the welfare scheme represents payment against participation. Why then are we not given the choice of whether or not to participate? Those who do not pay into the scheme will not draw out of it. Fair enough. But the Ideology of the Establishment holds that men are not too bright and cannot be entrusted with the spending of their own money and the selection of their own guiding values. Man, if left by himself, might not recognize the Truth, and so the Truth must be forcibly administered to him. The Truth, one soon learns, is revealed only to a select few, the custodians of the Ideology—the Statists.

As we become more bawzenly collectivist the shift in rhetoric becomes more openly socialist. Welfare is right, says the Establishment, not because it is charitable, not because it is necessary—but rather because it is a social right. The term “social right” is never described but we are left to understand that the right to a good life is a human right, greater than the right to private property (insofar as someone else's property must be expropriated to assure this good life).

One is born and one dies, and the interlude can be measured in units of time. Part of man's life span is involved in work and the earning of money. This money earned, then, represents a part of the life of a man. When Welfarists say that men have a right to the fulfillment of their needs, what they mean is that some men have, because of their needs, a right to someone else's money, or in other words, some men have a right to a part of another man's life.

Who can make such a claim on the person of another? Is a man's right to his life completely relative to the degree of need which surrounds him and which may vary from day to day? Man's right to his life is primary, and does not vary in space and time.

6. Progression

The perennial attraction of compulsory state welfare must always be the promise of free goods and services. The flagrant disadvantage is that state welfare is not free at all—indeed, it is exceedingly expensive because not only do taxpayers have to foot the bill for these handouts; they are also confronted with additional taxes to support the swelling bureaucracy necessary to effectuate this free economic tour de force.

The point is that someone somewhere must pay for both welfare and the government

brokerage fee. And because it is believed that the rich should pay, welfare goes hand in hand with progressive taxation, the great leveller.

If you were to ask the average Canadian if he favoured our existing progressive rates of taxation, he would probably answer affirmatively, reminding you that those who earn more should pay more. Fair enough. But under a system of proportional taxation, those who earn more still pay more. For instance, if everybody paid a flat rate of 50 per cent, the man who earns \$100.00 pays \$50.00 and the man who earns \$1,000.00 pays \$500.00. Those who earn more, pay more. But under the progressive rates some pay proportionately more than others i.e. 80 per cent on each dollar earned as opposed to 60 per cent, 50 per cent and so forth. In other words, progressive taxation implies more than each man paying his fair share; it implies that some men are imposed proportionately higher rates of taxation, in the name of the common good. But this system obviously has little to do with the common good—more specifically the good of one group is increased at the expense of another group. Politically speaking, the majority sets the rates to be paid exclusively by the minority. It is a form of irresponsible majority rule.

Progressive taxation is “justified” as necessary redistribution of wealth. The goal of progressive taxation is hence egalitarian. All men are equal, says the socialists, and should therefore have relatively equal possessions. Progression is a levelling process, and is used as an income equalizer. This equality is more often than not the lowest common denominator.

But suppose that, walking in front of the Parliament Buildings, with four friends, you find a fifty dollar bill. And suppose further that your friends insisted that you give them each ten dollars. You would hardly feel that they were justified in demanding that you share with them your good luck. Would they not be even less justified in demanding redistribution if you had earned the fifty dollars?

Granted, income inequalities exist in Canada and cannot be swept under the rug. But progressive taxation substitutes for this inequality the injustice of paying two men one hundred dollars when one man has worked five times as hard for it.

There are hidden injustices as well. Progression greatly complicates the legal tax structure and stimulates tax avoidance and

tax evasion, and in the long run raises problems of equity among taxpayers.

It is a fact seldom realized that progressive rates of taxation do not hurt the wealthy, but those who are becoming wealthy. It is a tax on the accumulation of wealth and in this way sponsors inequality. Who then speaks of equality?

Apart from the ethical problem, progressive taxation lessens productivity and therefore has economic disadvantages as well. In the first place, one cannot invest in the economy and thereby stimulate it) unless one has first saved the money. It is reasonable to assume that if a man presently paying taxes at a 75 per cent rate were instead taxed at a rate of 50 per cent, he would save more. The only possible conclusion, then, is that progressive taxation discourages capital formation.

Stated simply and logically: prosperity presupposes production which presupposes investment which presupposes capital formation which presupposes savings. Because the alternative to prosperity is poverty and because progression discourages saving (and therefore prosperity), the progressive income tax promotes poverty.

Progression not only discourages saving, but investment as well. Investment, by nature, implies an element of risk. One invests money in an enterprise hoping to make more money, but knowing that there is always the possibility of losing that investment. If a man loses one hundred cents on every dollar he loses, and can only keep twenty cents on every dollar he earns, then he is much less inclined to take risks. In other words, progression greatly increases the risk involved in every investment venture.

The progressive income tax cannot be justified as financially necessary to the state because only a small part of Canada's revenue comes from the higher rates. Progression therefore emerges as a strictly punitive and confiscatory measure.

Our present rates vary roughly between 20 per cent and 80 per cent. Yet a flat rate of only 24 per cent assessed on present taxpayers would result in the same revenue yield (actually, the corresponding drop in tax avoidance and tax evasion would mean a greater revenue yield). No longer would hours and hours of unproductive effort be wasted devising avoidance schemes. Saving and investment would be encouraged and the economy stimulated.

We would replace the present frustrating war on the poor by a real war on poverty.

7. The Full Employment Syndrome

Full employment has become a sacred cow in contemporary economic thinking. Unemployment is often mistakenly considered as the remedy for poverty. We have come to regard employment as a collective responsibility and full employment as a government goal. We have a department of Labour, Manpower and Public Works all more or less preoccupied with unemployment.

In early 1970, the Canadian Press reported that Donald MacDonald, President of the 1,600,000 member Canadian Labour Congress, said he hoped "1970 will mark the start of a real assault on poverty. . . Unemployment is already at a high level . . . labour . . . is awaiting new federal labour laws".

What can federal labour laws accomplish? The crudest government solution is to employ the unemployed. If the civil service cannot provide enough jobs, the government can get involved in various public works programmes. If this is still insufficient, then the government can pay people not to work.

Little or no attention is paid to production: full employment becomes the end in itself. In essence, full employment programmes are nothing but schemes to dispense welfare, without calling it welfare.

In fear of unemployment, we relentlessly pursue protectionist policies. And when it comes to exposing the follies of protectionism, no one has ever surpassed Frederic Bastiat, the French economist, statesman and author who wrote during and immediately after the French Revolution, a time frighteningly similar to our own, when France was turning to socialism as the cure-all to domestic problems. Bastiat was Grand Master of the *reductio-ad-absurdum*: the demonstration of the absurdity of an argument by extending it to its logical end.

Should the railroad running from Paris to Spain have a break at Bordeaux? Certainly, says the protectionists, for if goods and passengers are forced to stop at Bordeaux, it will be profitable for Bordeaux boatmen, porters and hotel owners. Wonderful, said Bastiat, but why favour Bordeaux? Would it not be in the public interest to also have breaks at Angouleme, Poitiers, Tours and Orleans? And it would be a shame to neglect the intermediate points such as Ruffec and Chatellerault. As a matter of fact the greater the breaks,

the greater the profits! Why then, let us have a railway composed of nothing but breaks—a negative railroad. Think of the benefits!

How often do we hear of feather-bedding and other similar practices by labour unions limiting the permitted work of its members? The idea is to "spread the work around". A mason is told he can lay only so many bricks in one day, to ensure employment of other masons. A piano must be moved by so many persons and so forth.

Bastiat proposed to such persons that they might as well petition the government to forbid citizens from working with their right hand. A great number of workers would be necessary to meet consumption demand: ten tailors make a pair of pants instead of one. Jobs would be superabundant, because the left hand is generally inefficient. Unemployment would be solved.

And Bastiat also suggested to the protectionists that they go ahead and petition on behalf of the carpenters to forbid the use of sharp hatchets. Three hundred blows instead of one hundred blows. Think of the stimulus to the economy! Think of the demand for carpenters!

The point is this: employment cannot be divorced from production. The profit system eventually leads to the mass production of consumer goods which, in turn, creates jobs. Still, governments continue to support the hatchet petitions by hiring men towards unproductive ends merely to employ them, by paying others not to work, and by smiling at featherbedding schemes.

Consider for a moment the under-developed countries of the world where poverty is widespread. Underproduction, not unemployment, is the problem. Everybody works in a primitive tribe: the old, the young, the men, the women. There is virtually no unemployment problem yet the tribe is poor. The lack of prosperity is due to inadequate production methods.

Were unemployment the cause of poverty in Canada, then the government could eliminate it tomorrow by hiring all the unemployed. Or, as a drastic measure perhaps, by forbidding everyone the use of his right hand.

8. Prosperity

Can poverty be totally eliminated? The term "poor" is relative only to the term "rich". There will always be some among us who have or earn less than others. This is

human nature, dependent upon a complexity of factors not the least of which is the accident of circumstance. These "poor" will always be with us, unfortunately. The government could tax everything everybody earns, and then redistribute it back evenly to every citizen. But how long do you suppose the money-earner would continue working? The production of a man can never be separated from the reasons motivating him to produce. His reasons are to earn more, and he will stop trying if he is not allowed to keep more. This also is human nature and no government legislation since the dawn of time has ever changed this.

Freedom from want is not a freedom at all but rather a capacity. To promise the immediate alleviation of a need is to promise to deliver to someone the immediate means of alleviating that need. Because the state has no personal resources of its own, it can only take from some and give to others—it cannot be otherwise. In other words, the government guarantee is nothing but a pledge to confiscate the earnings of some for distribution to others.

Mankind has always been engaged in a war on poverty. Each of us, in every way, fights poverty by trying to avoid it. The problem which concerns us is the effective use of human energies. It seems obvious that redistribution schemes cannot in the long run assure prosperity, that alternative to poverty.

Since the beginning of recorded time, man has struggled to avoid starvation. This struggle continued for thousands and thousands of years with virtually no progress—and suddenly—in the last one hundred years or so great breakthroughs brought previously unknown material prosperity to whole peoples. How come?

There is only one answer: capitalism—the system of economic activity which hitherto had never been tried. The characteristic of capitalism is the mass production of consumer goods at the lowest possible prices. Free men work harder and produce more: it cannot be otherwise. There can be only one solution to poverty: production. Only production can mean prosperity—the statement is self-evident. Only production can elevate the entire standard of living of a people and in so doing elevate the relative status of the poor brackets. Capitalism is the greatest productive force known to man. The Welfare State not only fails to recognize this fact, its po-

cies of redistribution are a disincentive to production, and in the long run impoverish everyone.

Capitalism has become a dirty word today. It has become predicated of things abominable. There are not many in Canada today prepared to defend this goose that lays the magic eggs. It is no longer fashionable. Let us take a look at the bogeyman, eyeball to eyeball.

Capitalism is an economic system dedicated to the principle that men are born free and have the right to direct their lives as they choose, and that the act of buying or not buying goods determines what will be produced and what will not be produced. Under capitalism the consumer is the prime mover, and the successful entrepreneur is he who satisfies the demands of his fellow men by producing the top product at the lowest possible price. Profit is the reward for meeting the needs of people in the cheapest possible way. Those who produce goods which are too expensive, or for which there is no demand, are doomed to failure. The masses are thus elevated to the status of bourgeois because every dollar they spend is a vote cast in determining what goods shall be produced.

A few days ago I bought a book printed in France for fifty cents. In my pocket I have a rather key chain imported from England priced at eighty-nine cents. Any time I feel like it I can buy a California orange or a piece of Italian cheese for a few pennies.

Let us, emulating Leonard Read, take a hard look at the miracle of a pencil. Were you to lock me in a room containing wood, acquer, graphite and all the other miscellany which go into the simple pencil, time would run out before I could produce one. And yet, for a few pennies, I can buy several any time I want to. Think of all the people who work for me—all the importers who bring in the wood, paints, chemicals, rubber and metal—all the labourers and designers and supervisors who manufacture the pencil—the administrators and carriers and wholesalers and retailers who make the pencil available to everyone like me. All for a few pennies! How is it I can get so much for so little?

My home town of Quebec City has a metro population of 350,000. Were supplies not to flow regularly into this relatively small city, its people would eventually die. Consider the bread, milk, butter, fruit, livestock and medicines which must enter Quebec City on

schedule to keep us all healthy. And then consider Toronto or Montreal.

Have you ever considered what throw of the dice, what "invisible hand" makes all this possible: the pencil for a few pennies, the flow of supplies which feeds my city? What goose lays these golden eggs?

The answer of course is the free market—capitalism. The more complex the operation, the more we must trust free men acting in accordance with their own personal wishes.

Under capitalism, even the most humble of men enjoy the amenities I mentioned earlier: oranges from California and cheese from Italy, maple syrup from Quebec and beef from Western Canada.

Capitalism is responsible for whatever prosperity we enjoy in Canada today. Every man under capitalism is comparatively wealthy. The invisible hand of the free market keeps just the right amount of goods flowing daily into our Canadian cities in a manner so precise that it could never be "planned" by an army of bureaucrats in Ottawa, no matter how educated and intelligent they might be.

The system in short, works by itself—no master blue print, no Establishment direction is necessary. Left alone, the free market will produce. "The request of industry to government," said Bentham, "is as modest as that of Diogenes to Alexander—Get out of my light".

Yet, the savage onslaught against the free market continues across this country as great chunks of power are grasped by the High Priest of Big Government. We have unreasonably high corporate and personal income tax rates. The Welfare State is bleeding to death that goose which lays the golden eggs.

Under capitalism, entrepreneurs try to devise more efficient methods of productions in order to increase profits. Indeed, almost all the great discoveries of mankind were the contribution of an individual genius, not the result of any group study, committee effort or government commission. Alexander Graham Bell in his workshop at Brantford, Ontario, not only invented the telephone; his creative genius was responsible for film sound tracks, the electric eye, the metal detector and the hydrofoil. Individual Canadian initiative made possible Bombardier's Snowmobile, Dr. Clung McPherson's gas mask, A. G. Huntsman's frozen food, Dr. Theodore Drake's Plabum and E. A. Asselburg's instant mashed

potatoes. Canadian genius is responsible for the invention of the variable pitch propeller, the wirephoto, the snow-blower, the walkie-talkie, the electric organ, modern photo-engraving, kerosene and acetylene, the electric railway, the healing cobalt bomb, the paint roller and the electron microscope.

Canada is a land of great promise. We could enjoy unparalleled prosperity if only we could appreciate the motive force that moves the world: the minds of free men.

Yet we continue to merely "tolerate" capitalism because the enraged shouts of its enemies blurred our vision. "We are perishing", said Leonard Read, "not from lack of wonders, but from lack of wonder".

9. Recommendations. Certain conclusions follow. Certain steps must be taken if we are honest in our desire to try to end poverty. There are no instant formulae, no magic cures.

It must surely be the experience of this committee that no certain short-term solutions seem guaranteed to succeed. It must also be evident that, as a long-term solution, the Welfare State has not only failed to solve poverty over the years; rather, it has succeeded in perpetuating poverty.

The Welfare State reflects a grand scale war—not on poverty—but on the poor. We have legislated poverty instead of prosperity. We have confiscated, expropriated and dissipated wealth but we have failed to create wealth.

I am well aware that in today's world, the conclusion is unpopular: prosperity cannot be legislated. Yet before we stumble over the precipice of inflation, before we halt the motor that moves the world, before we kill the goose that lays the golden eggs, we will have to come to grips with one harsh fact: should we continue to take from the haves to give to the have-nots, we will only end up a nation of have-nots.

As Senators, I plead with you to take a second sober look at the morality and practicality of compulsory state welfare.

It has failed—it must always fail and merely greater doses of the same will only compound the failure. We must halt the snowballing nightmare of state give-away schemes. Fabian gradualism brought us to our present position. A gradualism of freedom can restore a sound economy and a just society. We accepted welfare in piecemeal fashion

Let us then in turn dismantle the Welfare State in piecemeal fashion.

I THEREFORE RECOMMEND:

(1) The enactment of an immediate ban on all additional welfare programmes.

(2) The abolition of progressive rates of taxation and the adoption of a flat rate 24 per cent.

(3) The abolition of all minimum wage laws.

(4) A detailed study of existing welfare schemes and the immediate abolition of the most useless and wasteful of these schemes. The baby bonus leaps to mind.

(5) The gradual transfer of remaining federal schemes to provincial or municipal jurisdictions.

(6) The phasing out of the Welfare State.

The problem confronting this Committee is not so much poverty, but the remedies for poverty. Our present medicine is poisoning us.

In the spirit in which it is meant I point out that this Senate Committee on poverty is, strictly speaking, a government body seeking a solution to poverty. In the name of all that my country can be, I beg you not to try to seek a government solution to poverty. The only solution to poverty is production, and only the free market can assure production. The entire history of civilization is testimony to this fact.

And, as Santayana said, "Those who cannot remember the past are condemned to repeat it".

When you report back—I hope that your message to the less fortunate people of Canada will be that you recommend oiling the gears of production because therein lies their only salvation from poverty. Security cannot be legislated; it must be earned.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Mr. Ouellet.

I see that you lived up to your words and you covered your brief in thirty-five minutes.

I must say that I thank you for your brief and your efforts and the sincerity in which you have spoken.

I think you will find out that a number of Senators might not agree with you and I myself might not agree with you, but on the other hand I think that you have covered a

lot of ground and I am sure that I am not prepared to tell you that you were wrong in every phase of your brief.

You point out to us many of your recommendations and the abolishing of lots of laws and so on but I believe you say very little of what they should be replaced with.

I am sure that based on this many Senators will have questions to ask and the first one I will turn to is Senator Hastings.

Senator Hastings: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman.

I would like to join you in expressing our appreciation to Mr. Ouellet for another very thought provoking brief.

I just have one short observation to make of Mr. Ouellet and it pertains to Paragraph 2 where you try to answer the question who can speak to the poor and you say:

Who can claim to be an expert on Poverty? For sure, the poor can tell us what it is like, not having any wealth; obviously, however, they cannot tell us how to alleviate the problem.

There is just one thing wrong with that statement—it is dead wrong as far as I am concerned.

In my travels with the Committee and I think probably other Senators share this view that the people who are experts on Poverty are the poor themselves.

They have lived in it, their fathers have lived in it and they are destined to live in it unless something is changed, the system is changed.

They are the people that have come before this Committee with certainly the most original ideas as to how to alleviate the problem and in most cases it hasn't been for an increase in the dough or a hand-out. It has simply been for an equalized opportunity to share in the wealth of this nation which they haven't had and they don't get.

The child of the poor, I have found, attends the poor schools, have the poorest teachers and in short, he just doesn't have an equal opportunity.

The child born on an Indian Reservation in this country is destined to die on that reservation in poverty because of this capitalist system of which you speak so highly.

Now, you went on to say:

The wealthy man, on the other hand, has acquired an expertise.

I am wondering where all of this expertise is and where it's been for the last twenty years?

If he has discovered how to communicate properly, perhaps he is the person we should have before this committee and we haven't had them with all their alleged expertise which you say they have.

The only expertise I've ever found is "my father's made a million, what's wrong with yours." Now, where is this expertise?

Mr. Ouellet: I think we are speaking of two different wave lengths entirely.

I am speaking from a personal viewpoint and you are speaking I believe on a government viewpoint.

Senator Hastings: I am speaking of my own personal viewpoint. I am speaking from my own personal observations from the work of this Committee and talking to the poor and talking to the wealthy who are convincingly ignorant about poverty.

Mr. Ouellet: I am not speaking—when I say the poor are not experts on poverty—that is not exactly what I say.

The poor man and the sociologist—well, let's say sociologists can study the poor man when he comes and gives a much better description than I of what it's like to be poor and all the evils involved in poverty and how unfortunate it is and everything you have just mentioned.

I am in full agreement. The poor are in a much better position than you or I to say what it is like to be poor but because he is still poor he can't come up here and tell you personally how he is going to become rich.

Senator Hastings: Well, I think you are wrong.

Mr. Ouellet: In which case I would say to him "Well, why don't you do it", do you see what I mean?

From a government point of view he may come and have an idea of what the group can do to help him but he is not going to come and tell you how he himself can help and that is only how I meant this statement.

I was only trying to explain to my presence.

Senator Hastings: I disagree with your observation. The people that come before us with the most original and constructive ideas are the poor themselves and it's not money; it is opportunity.

They want the opportunities which they have never had.

Mr. Ouellet: That is the best solution that a government could take.

Senator Hastings: To solve the problem?

Mr. Ouellet: I agree with you on that.

Senator Croll: What did you agree with?

Mr. Ouellet: That it is considerable that a poor man will come up with a better government solution to poverty than a rich man. That is entirely possible.

Senator Croll: That isn't what you said in your brief.

Mr. Ouellet: Yes, sir.

Senator Croll: You say:

The wealthy man, on the other hand, has acquired an expertise.

Mr. Ouellet: Senator, the wealthy man has acquired personal expertise on poverty.

The fact that he is wealthy shows that he has won his own personal war on poverty.

That is the only spirit in which it is said.

Senator Croll: Mr. Ouellet, if I gather what you are saying was that poverty was costing the wealthy great sums of money and it was wasted.

Mr. Ouellet: Actually in practise, Senator...

Senator Croll: That is what I gather. My question to you is if the rich know the answer to it and are paying through the nose for this waste, why don't they come up with solutions to save their money?

Mr. Ouellet: Senator, first of all I tried to point out in the discussion on progression that it's not in fact costing the wealthy. It is costing the vast majority of people for the simple reason that four percent of the basic rate would bring the same revenue yield.

As a matter of fact, only ten percent comes from the wealthy.

Senator Croll: Well, let us say the middle class then. That is the middle class. Have they solutions?

Mr. Ouellet: You see, Senator, I was talking here at the beginning about personal solutions to poverty and government solutions to poverty.

I am fighting a real war on poverty, Senator, every day. I am just, you know, holding my own right now but I can tell you how I've done so far and if ever I get rich I will tell you how I want my own personal war on poverty.

Senator Croll: Yes.

Mr. Ouellet: But that is the only way I meant it. It was my own personal point of view and in the rest of the paper I discuss the government's point of view but I wasn't speaking about a government's solution or a committee recommendation.

Senator Hastings: Just one other observation.

On page 29 you say:

Under capitalism, even the most humble of men enjoy the amenities I mentioned earlier: oranges from California and cheese from Italy, maple syrup from Quebec and beef from Western Canada.

Well, there is about two or three out of every five Canadians that just aren't enjoying those amenities of life.

Mr. Ouellet: I have no doubt, Senator, that that is probably correct that you could find for me a person who does not actually enjoy Western beef or rice from China.

What I am pointing out is that midas—and everything he touched turned to gold, would not, for all his gold produce a pencil and it is not simply money.

We have to realize that there is some wonders around us and that it is the free nations of the world that come to the aid of the underdeveloped nations.

Did you ever hear of a nation coming to the aid? Where is its foreign aid going? We are richer. I am not trying to suggest that everybody should become rich or can become rich. I am trying to suggest a way that we can avoid all becoming poor.

Senator Croll: Mr. Ouellet, hasn't the history of our country been that we have become richer and richer rather than poorer despite

the money that we have spent on welfare and on social services?

Senator Ouellet: Quite so, Senator, but it's in despite of welfare schemes.

What government plan since confederation can be used in fact to explain our present level of prosperity?

Senator Croll: Well, tell me this. When you say the solution to poverty is production—we have produced a lot of wheat, we have produced a lot of uranium, we have produced a lot of cars and we have got over-production in many, many of the essential things so, if that is the solution, why hasn't poverty been cured?

Mr. Ouellet: I think precisely, Senator, that those remarks point out that we do have a production problem. When you pay people to produce something—let us take the case of the farmer who has been sold down the river royally.

Senator Hastings: What did you say?

Senator Quart: The farmers have been sold down the river royally.

Mr. Ouellet: The poor Canadian farmer has been promised price supports.

Now we are paying him not to produce, that is how bad the problem is, Senator.

Senator Croll: We had price supports.

Mr. Ouellet: We are tampering with the market, Senator. The free market—if I have too many hoola-hoops I will eventually sell them at a much lower rate. The product seeks its own price. The grain itself has no personal idea of what personal price it should put on itself but there is government interfering with production and now we have a production problem.

Senator Croll: Now what you are saying is not the lack of production...

Mr. Ouellet: We have too much wheat.

Senator Croll: Well, as I say what you are saying is not the lack of production but over-production which brings on poverty?

Mr. Ouellet: No, Senator. I am saying that when the government enters one particular area and starts tampering with it, there is a danger of bringing on poverty.

Senator Croll: So you say that the government ought not to interfere in business at all and just let business run its course the way it sees in its own way. There ought not to be any laws to hamper business?

Mr. Ouellet: The only laws that should exist, Senator, regarding business should be laws against monopolies, against feather-bedding as long as competition is assured. That is the role of government, to assure competition.

Senator Croll: How far does government go?

Mr. Ouellet: I beg your pardon?

Senator Croll: How far does government go then in doing things? Where would government step in if they are allowed their own methods to conduct business in their own way?

Mr. Ouellet: Well, if Procter and Gamble get together with another soap company and they were selling all their soap for .29¢ this would hurt the consumer because the consumer is deprived of the competition between the producers.

Senator Croll: Well then you need government interference.

Mr. Ouellet: Absolutely.

Senator Croll: Well, where does it stop? You say government should not be interfering and now you say government should interfere.

Mr. Ouellet: Government should not interfere, to direct or plan or try to schedule or try to map out a blueprint or try to get people to produce certain goods or not to produce certain goods...

Senator Croll: They don't. The government does not do that.

Mr. Ouellet: Certainly, Senator.

Senator Croll: Where?

Mr. Ouellet: First of all, government competes with private enterprise.

Senator Croll: In what respect?

Mr. Ouellet: All right, I will give you an example. CTV and CBC are in competition. Let us take one example. CBC competes with CTV to buy certain American programs.

Okay? They want to buy "I Dream of Jeanie", lets say and there is competition of who is going to pay for it the most and the American firm sells it to the highest bidder.

Now, look what happens. The CBC is competing, using our tax money to buy a program that we receive free by CTV.

Senator Croll: Do you think you would see it free on CTV if CBC wasn't there?

Mr. Ouellet: If CBC wasn't there, Senator, I would imagine there would be another network.

Senator Croll: That is your imagination but CBC is a public enterprise.

Mr. Ouellet: Well, I can only say...

Senator Croll: Don't you believe in CBC in general theory?

Mr. Ouellet: I don't think it has anything to do with poverty but personally...

Senator Croll: No, no, it doesn't have anything to do with poverty.

Mr. Ouellet: If you don't think it works I can only point out that in the United States there are three dependent private networks and they work.

Senator Croll: Well, it works for them and they also have private railroads but they go broke where at least our railroads run. That is the difference.

Mr. Ouellet: Some of them go broke, Senator?

Senator Croll: Our railroads running even though sometimes we don't think that they are running the way they ought to but let me just get as this question for a moment.

As I understood you to say—do away with the welfare state—phase it out.

Mr. Ouellet: Well...

Senator Croll: Well, that is what you said, let me just ask you what remedies you have for one million, one hundred thousand odd people who are now receiving social benefits, the disadvantaged, the blind, aged, crippled and whatnot who are now receiving social benefits.

What would you do with them?

Mr. Ouellet: What I am going to say repre-

sents a drastic change in thinking. A drastic change in thinking from what we are used to hearing but it can be statistically proven, Senator, the amount of money given to private charities has decreased as welfare has increased and I see no moral value in compulsory charity. The money is taken away from the people forcibly and I don't think God in heaven is giving me any moral value.

I suggest to you that as—first of all, I suggest that welfare or a welfare state there would be more money, more jobs, more prosperities, more miracles like the pencil—the better life. That is the first step.

First of all there will be more general prosperity. Secondly I suggest to you that organizations such as the two organizations that preceded me will find themselves with a lot more money to spend.

Senator Croll: Well now lets get to the welfare aspect. Do you know any civilized country in the world any place that hasn't got a social welfare system comparable and in some instances better than ours?

Mr. Ouellet: Well, better...

Senator Croll: Comparable.

Mr. Ouellet: Before we had welfare, thirty years ago...

Senator Croll: No.

Mr. Ouellet: Forty years?

Senator Croll: Don't start saying before. A form of welfare was always here but in its present state, it came about forty years ago.

Mr. Ouellet: Before we had that do you think that people were generally a lot worse off than they are today or is there in fact more poverty today than there was then? Comparative relative poverty?

Senator Croll: The only answer I could give you—because I was there—is that we were all poor. We were all poor. That is the difference. We were all poor.

Senator Fergusson: Many of them suffered more in those days.

Senator Croll: Yes, but there was a general poorness. There is no doubt about it. Senator Fergusson is right. They suffered far, far more than they do now because of the relative poorness is not so great now.

However I would like to get back again to what you do with these one million one hundred thousand people who are now receiving social benefits of one kind or another.

What would you do with them?

Mr. Ouellet: You see, Senator, I was not suggesting that tomorrow the government pass a law abolishing all welfare.

Senator Croll: You said "phased-out".

Mr. Ouellet: Yes. I am talking about a gradual phase-out. I will tell you why it has to be gradual.

Lets take an example of an animal. Let us take an example of a zoo. If you take an animal in a zoo and if you asked him if he preferred to be out on his own fending for himself than rather living in a zoo he would much rather be out living on his own. He tries to get out and that is why you put up cages and bars.

If the animal lives in the zoo long enough he gets to be unable to care for himself and if you took down the bars he would probably stay there and wouldn't know what to do and if you did turn him out he would probably die.

Over a long period of time this man's universal compulsion for welfare can have no other effect than to take any initiative out of me people...

Senator Croll: Have you any idea of the statistical studies that have been made on at very point in the United States, in Canada and in other parts of the world and it indicates that there is less than two percent of the kind of people that you are talking about.

Mr. Ouellet: Less than 2 per cent?

Senator Croll: Less than 2 per cent of the people that you say don't want to work and don't want to participate and as a result of the system that we have.

Mr. Ouellet: Well, first of all—no, I haven't seen the study and with all due respect, Senator, I don't see how that type of study could be accurately made.

Senator Croll: Well, it was made by the Americans at great expense and it was also made by the University of Alberta and to some extent and has been made by others.

Senator McGrand: A very superficial survey.

Senator Croll: Well these are the statistics that we have. We have no other statistics.

Mr. Ouellet: It strikes me, Senator, as so self-evidence. That people of my age or young people or people in general are growing up with no fear of failure; there is nothing to worry about—that they cannot regard life as cheap and I think there you have statistics and in the socialist countries where welfare is very, very pronounced, we have all kinds of statistics like high suicide rates, high abortion rates and illegitimacy rates and high dope addiction rates.

Senator Croll: Is the United States a socialist country?

Mr. Ouellet: There are a lot of socialist measures in the United States. They are moving hand over fist towards the guaranteed annual income just like we are.

Senator Croll: Well, is that the only socialist nation that you can think of and that you don't like?

Mr. Ouellet: Oh, I can think of a lot of socialist nations.

Senator Croll: Well, where are they? I am asking you if the United States...

Mr. Ouellet: Well, let me put it this way, Senator. You name me one bill that the United States congress has passed in the last twenty years that you would say is a capitalistic bill?

Senator Croll: Well, I think with all due respect the oil depletion bill is the most capitalistic bill I have ever heard of in all my life and you too. There is one for you that I can give you.

The bill that pays the cotton growers in the United States hundreds of thousands of dollars is a very capitalistic bill. These are two large ones that I can think of off-hand.

Mr. Ouellet: So you see, Senator, any government bill that is paying money is taking money from somebody else. I cannot see that as being a capitalistic bill. I see that as generally a redistribution scheme bill, but in any case I don't think we should discuss is the United States a socialistic country. There is a lot of socialistic legislation. Call it fabian legislation or call it welfare like legislation.

Senator Croll: We have here too.

Mr. Ouellet: We have here too.

Senator Croll: But the question I get back to again is this. What do we do with these million one hundred odd thousand people who are receiving social benefits now?

Mr. Ouellet: I think, Senator, you will find that we may elevate the entire status and in so doing elevate the relative status of the poor.

Senator McGrand: Do you mean the large tracks of resources that you would find in Quebec?

Mr. Ouellet: First of all I believe we will never have—there will always be someone who is poorer than someone else.

Senator McGrand: Yes.

Mr. Ouellet: That we are agreed on. What we are trying to find out is how to make the poor richer than they are today. The only way the poor can be richer than they are today is that if everybody is generally richer than they are today and how do we get them rich? It seems so evident to me that man has been struggling for thousands and thousands of years to avoid starvation.

Our forefathers in this country were using spinning wheels that the Egyptians were using in the days of the pyramids. Virtually no progress has been made in all this legislation.

I don't know exactly what they mean by social right.

Senator McGrand: You don't know what they mean by social right and therefore you don't accept their definition?

Mr. Ouellet: It is not that I don't accept it.

Senator McGrand: Well, tell me this. If you do not recognize such a thing as a social right, do you have any other terms that will describe better or give a better definition of any program for the assistance of the needy?

Mr. Ouellet: Any government program?

Senator McGrand: Any program. I don't care—how are you going to look after the needy?

Mr. Ouellet: I think the perfect word is that you ask me for one word in regard helping the needy is the word mercy. I think mercy is

a commendable virtue. I think justice is a commendable virtue. Justice means to each his due. That every man gets his due.

Mercy means that some men are getting more than their due and I am suggesting that one agency, such as the government, cannot be at the same time just and merciful.

Senator McGrand: This idea that the welfare scheme is not the ideal thing. Let us go back to about one hundred years ago to the old parts of Canada where they did not have the free school system. Those who wanted their children to go to school paid a teacher a certain amount of money to teach their children. Those parents who couldn't afford to pay let their children grow up in illiteracy.

Well, there was a great many people at that time opposed to the free school system and they certainly had a big fight in New Brunswick in 1869 over the free school system.

The philosophy was that free school was a part of the welfare system. Wouldn't you think so?

Mr. Ouellet: I agree.

Senator McGrand: Would you object to it?

Mr. Ouellet: If I answer could I explain why?

Senator McGrand: Yes.

Mr. Ouellet: The free school system—if you look at it one way it has all the advantages but if you look at it another way its unjust.

You see, I don't see why the butcher, the baker and the delivery truck man should pay for the education of the lawyers and dentists and architects. I think the lawyer, the dentist and the architect should pay for their own education. I would be in favour of saying that there should be a financed system permitting the people to borrow for their education and then pay it back.

I don't see why the little man who is struggling along should be paying for the education today of the professionals.

Senator McGrand: The free school system was to bring the three R's to everyone.

Everybody has to write and they had the need for the three R's. I am not talking about the development of lawyers or doctors or engineers or any professionals.

Mr. Ouellet: No, but today that argument holds entirely true to the university level.

Senator Fergusson: I have a few observations that I would like to make.

The Deputy Chairman: This is a gap generation brief.

Senator Croll: Yes, a backward gap.

Senator Fergusson: Well I must say Mr. Chairman, that I find this brief very interesting but the witness has made a statement on Page 13 which involves the question of giving money to the needy. Don't you think we should give to those people who practise religion and give them money? And before you answer I would just like to go on a little further. I find this very difficult. On Page 8 you referred to Reuben Baetz, who was the executive director of the Canadian Welfare Council who said that Canadians should receive a guaranteed income as a matter of a social right. You also say that joining Baetz is a chorus of politicians from all parties.

Now, I have been associated with the Canadian Welfare Council and I can assure you there are a great many worried men in Canada besides politicians who support Mr. Baetz in that.

Mr. Ouellet: Quite so. I am not saying that they are not. I am saying today that a lot of people are moving towards the guaranteed annual income.

Senator Fergusson: Yes, and it is not only politicians who are interested in it.

Mr. Ouellet: No.

Senator Fergusson: I know it is all across Canada.

Mr. Ouellet: I think the Canadian people are interested but the leadership comes from our politicians. That is where they are hearing about it. The idea started with Milton Friedman from his book "Capitalism and Freedom".

That is where it first come out and there was a section called "Alleviation of Poverty" and since then it has been picking up and Canada was given a thrust when Reuben Baetz started writing on it in the Canadian Welfare publication and then at

Niagara Falls at the Progressive Thinkers Conference.

Senator Croll: Well now look. Let us get the record straight. In Canada it wasn't started by Reuben Baetz and the idea wasn't started by Milton Friedman. The idea came from a man called Atkinson who was president of the National Life Insurance Company of Canada who was a great mathematician and he sold that idea to a man called Davis who was a friend of his and I knew him too to the Senate Committee on Aging which your mother will remember too.

Senator Quart: Grandmother!

Senator Croll: Grandmother, and at that time the recommendation was made for the Aged and to progressively reduce the age. That is the first incidents in the civilized world where the guaranteed income was to put into effect. The government picked it up and improved it because it didn't seem to have enough in the circumstances for the very poor.

That is the first beginning of the guaranteed income and the only country in the world that's practising it at the present time. That's where it came from, and not from Friedman. Friedman's idea is an entirely different method of dealing with it and its not the way we are progressing, we are moving. He doesn't believe in the negative income tax, whereas we do.

Friedman preaches what you preach. Exactly what you preach. He says do away with welfare...

Senator McGrand: Who do you mean by "we"?

Senator Croll: The government.

Senator McGrand: Friedman didn't agree with the methods.

Senator Croll: Friedman didn't agree with the method but we agree with it, the government did. The government did and I hope the Committee does too. The Committee on Aging made that recommendation before and this committee will have an opportunity to discuss it. What Friedman said was to do away with welfare but he had a scheme. He didn't just leave it in the air completely without doing anything about it.

Mr. Ouellet: He was more concerned that I was.

Senator Croll: Well, he had an alternative method.

Mr. Ouellet: No, I didn't say that Friedman was the first to say it. I said that Friedman was the first one to mention a negative income tax. He was the one that popularized it in the United States. The first one who actually came up with the guaranteed income without any doubt must have been Robert Owen when he set up his scheme of harmony on the banks of the Wabush. I am not arguing with you, Senator, as to who was the first one.

Senator Croll: If its the eighteenth century, you know, you are the one who is really in the gap, the generation gap because you are falling away behind.

Mr. Ouellet: Well, Robert Owens wasn't on my side.

The Deputy Chairman: Senators I see that the time is catching up with us. We have a date for dinner in a few minutes which we would like to meet if it is possible. We have been an hour and ten minutes and I'm sure that Mr. Ouellet is satisfied with the questioning although I am not too sure whether the senators are satisfied with the answers.

The Deputy Chairman: However, sir, Mr. Ouellet, I must say we appreciated your brief and that you are a very bright young man.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, Senator McGrand has a question that we both are very interested in.

Senator McGrand: Going back to this question of responsibility to the needy. This has always existed in the human society as far as I know and back in the middle ages it was the responsibility—not of the government because the church, the church took it on and the monasteries handled it and then after complications of the monastery property we got the Elizabethan law. I would like to remind you of this and that is that most legislation down through history has been put on the statute books for the protection of property and not for the protection of the individual. It was for the protection of property.

Mr. Ouellet: The protection of property and the protection of individuals to me go hand in hand.

Senator McGrand: Well, we would have to disagree on that.

The Deputy Chairman: Well Senators, the brief is finished but the meeting is not over for just a moment or two.

I see that we have some changes in the schedule here...

[Translation]

The Comité du travail du Québec which was to make its presentation at three thirty p.m. will not be presented by Mr. Légaré. I would like to ask Mr. Légaré to explain why.

Senators, may I have your attention for just a moment. I told you earlier that there have been a few changes. The Conseil du Travail du Québec will not be appearing this afternoon, and Mr. Légaré is here and will tell us why.

Mr. Légaré of the Conseil du Travail of Québec and District: Mr. Chairman, ladies and gentlemen, we deeply regret not being able to bring before you this morning a brief on poverty. The Conseil du Travail du Québec is aware of the fact that in the region, unfortunately, strikes are rife, and at the present time, the postal strike, where I am myself an employee, unfortunately did not leave us any time available for preparing the brief. However, as we mentioned a while ago, we are aware of the problem and we would like, if it were possible, if the opportunity were offered us, to appear before you at a later date when we will have time to prepare that brief. We thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Would you be available to come to Ottawa in October, or perhaps November, some time around then.

Mr. Légaré: That will be possible. Thank you, ladies and gentlemen.

The Deputy Chairman: The brief to be presented by the Conseil du Travail with Mr. Légaré will not be presented today but will be presented later in Ottawa.

The meeting adjourned.

Resumption of the meeting at 7 p.m.

The Deputy Chairman: Order, please, the time is getting on and we have to get to work without further delay. I would like to greet Monsignor Lavoie and the sisters. I would like to thank the people of the Parish of St-Roch for having come to meet us this evening in order to learn about the committee's work.

We do not go out looking for poverty since it is found everywhere, it is not scarce in the Province of Quebec, or even at home in New Brunswick, but we are looking for the causes of poverty. We are convinced that if we want to solve the problems of poverty we first have to find the sources and the reasons. This is the purpose of our inquiry. We do not offer any remedy to the problems, except the testimony we hear. We meet with poor families—we have met hundreds of them in various communities throughout Canada and we have collected a mass of knowledge. We hope that in the next few months the Committee will meet nearly every day in order to bring together all these problems and all these causes for the purpose of making recommendations acceptable to the government and which will be of some service to the poor. Poor families, as you know, there are different categories of poor people and we are going to try to determine each in its class.

I will make no further comment and we are going to hear a few briefs, after which we shall have a question period. We do not believe that we will solve your problems and give you answers. We simply want to hear what you have to say, to listen to your recommendations and to try and put them into practice.

Therefore, without further delay, you have the members of the Committee, and it gives me pleasure to introduce them to you, to my right, Senator Quart of Quebec, Senator McGrand of New Brunswick, Senator Hastings of Alberta, and to my left, Senator Croll, Chairman of the Committee, Senator Eudes of Montreal, Senator Fergusson of New Brunswick and Senator Inman of Prince Edward Island.

You have representatives who come from all the provinces across Canada, but we do not have the full Committee this evening. You have a representative from each province. They are highly qualified people and, after eighteen months of work,—this is our first trip across Canada—do not think that, in eighteen months, we have not heard about all the sins of the poor, as well as the sins of the rich.

Thus, without further delay, this evening we have a joint committee of the Association coopérative d'économie familiale, Mr. Robert Hodeau, and the Citizens' Committee of area No. 10, which was to be presented by Mr. André Grodin, replaced by Mr. Laurent

Drolet who is to my right. I believe that you do not have a brief to present to us? Then, you are simply going to tell us what your problems are. I would like to say that, if we have a slight problem, because the majority of our Committee does not speak French, and we have to have a simultaneous translation; I think that we have many echos this evening, which is perhaps going to cause minor problems. Furthermore, the person who is our translation specialist, we do not know whether she got lost in the City of Quebec, but perhaps she will come. Mr. Coderre who speaks French and English will try to take over. Mr. Coderre you have our sympathy for the moment and we know that you are going to do your best.

Therefore, Mr. Laurent Drolet, I turn it over to you.

Mr. Laurent Drolet, representing Mr. André Grondin of the Citizens' Committee of area 10 of the Parish of St-Roch de Québec: Mr. Chairman and members of the Senate Committee on Poverty, what attitude should citizens' movements have with regard to a group of people who would like to make them believe that they are serious and that their report is likely to result in concrete measures and to improve the situation of the poor in our society? Well, our attitude towards a commission of inquiry is very clear: your Senate Committee resembles all the other commissions of inquiry. It is a means that certain politicians have found to distract the poor, to keep them from shouting too loudly, from making noise and perhaps from rebelling. While we are given a picture of a rosy future, of which we never receive the slightest crumb, exploiters of every sort take advantage of it to feather their pockets and to infringe upon the basic rights of thousands of citizens.

If we have taken the bother to come once again and parade before a commission of inquiry, it is to tell you and, at the same time, to tell all our governments that the poor, as you so aptly call them, no longer want to be examined under a magnifying glass and to become docile tools in the hands of exploiters of the people who are their playthings.

It is our firm intention to no longer leave to others the task of finding solutions to the problems that confront us daily. We have the firm intention of no longer leaving to others the power to direct the decisions which concern us. We want to exercise this power ourselves.

N.B. You will find enclosed a list on which appear the signers of this letter. That is all. Thank you.

(At this moment, Mr. Drolet and his group leave the room immediately.)

The Deputy Chairman: I want to thank Mr. Drolet for this brief, I do not have to thank him. We somewhat regret that Mr. Laurent Drolet and his group left the room so quickly without giving us a chance to ask him a few questions, but it is his right to leave if he wants to. We have nothing against him, this is a free country.

There will be no discussion about Mr. Drolet's subject. This brings us to the second phase of our program for this evening, and if I am to follow the schedule, Monsignor Lavoie, director of the Secretariat social de St-Roch will make his presentation. I do not know whether Monsignor Lavoie is ready to continue.

Monsieur Raymond Lavoie, directeur du Secrétariat Social de St-Roch: Honourable Mr. Croll and honourable senators of Quebec. I am very glad to meet you tonight and appear before this Special Senate Committee of Canada. It is indeed an honour for me as a representative of a group working in this district of Quebec.

The work of the Director du Secretariat Social de St-Roch is mostly directed to help the poor. He has contributed a lot to the construction of the committee which went just before us, and as you can see we do not necessarily have the same attitudes.

I wish to say that I am very happy, on behalf of the Secretariat social de St-Roch, that the Special Senate Committee has come to hold a session in a part of the city where the prevailing conditions keep a large part of the population at the poverty level.

The solution to the problems raised by poverty will come either through dialogue or a confrontation between the have's and the have not's.

The Honourable Senators have chosen dialogue, this is what I understand and they merit the deepest congratulations.

The Secretariat social expresses the wish that the inquiry conducted by the Senate Committee not be used as fuel for our constitutional or partisan conflicts. By its appearance, it in no way wants to acknowledge that social assistance matters are under federal jurisdiction any more than under provincial

jurisdiction and it firmly believes that effective action can come only from a situation where order and mutual respect prevail at all levels, without friction, and where the various parties accept the fact that poverty is a rallying point and not a cause for one party to out-promise another at election time.

The Secretariat social feels that this evening's meeting is a recognition of the fact that disadvantaged people already constitute a group that is organized enough to be a valid spokesman and is very glad of it. This evening I propose to give a brief summary of poverty as we see it in the world today and to infer its implications to some extent, then in a very modest way, offer a few fairly general considerations regarding the role of the state at all levels of government.

What we note is that at the present time civilization is proletarianizing or sub-proletarianizing increasingly numerous classes of society. We repeat, in our country, in full prosperity, the worldwide phenomenon which has led mankind to the most formidable tensions that history has known, the tension between the western world defending its privileges and the Third World gradually taken over by communism. For example, our use of opium to stem the so-called yellow peril was replaced by an ideological, political and military process to take care of that yellow peril. Sub-proletarianizing is not first and foremost a phenomenon of economic repression. It is a phenomenon of human regression at the social level; it is sanctified by the public powers without wanting to do so. One can try to characterize it on the basis of concurrent action of three factors among many others. First, the working world's rejection of the consumer market for useful goods; people's rejection of community recreation; people's rejection of political activity and civic responsibility; people's rejection of culture; people's rejection of tourism—

[Text]

In other words, a lot of people never visit New Brunswick or Prince Edward Island or Toronto, in that part of the city.

—people's rejection of personal property; people's rejection of decent housing, etc.

[Translation]

Second factor, hallucinating appeals from all those closed universes throughout the mass media; appeals from supposedly easy credit sources, and at the same time, rapid rise in the standard of living in the country, and rise in the cost of living.

Third factor, emerging social pressures from the inter-action of persons undergoing the influence of those who are subjected to the first two factors; consequently, progressive socialization, subjection to and dependence on all these points; avoidance of this concentrational universe; rapid deterioration in the sense of personal dignity, in the sense of social responsibility, in the sense of community commitment, bitterness and rancour against all powers and, a surprising thing, rebellion against the powers which accept this state of affairs and sanctify it to some extent.

Would you like me to read the summary or leave it, you have it on hand.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes, I have it.

Monsignor Lavoie: Because it is extremely tedious. Mr. Chairman, I am prepared to do what will be of use.

The Deputy Chairman: I know, Monsignor, that the members of the Committee will have questions to elaborate on what you have prepared.

[Text]

Monsieur Lavoie: And as a matter of fact, nothing has changed.

You know that a lot of students from Laval University are coming here to prepare their thesis and they visit all the families to see what is a poor man and what is a poor lady—to talk with them and report on them and after talking with them—that is the poor people of this district have inquiries on the same level so part of the people who have the most inquiries in regards to the work are also the ones who need help. They also work in helping the poor people to have a better level of life and there are a lot of our people who don't come here because they think it will not be useful.

I think we have to make a discovery of the social rejections of the real situation and I think we should do so.

[Translation]

That does not settle the basic problem, that of social rejection, but on the contrary, give him a public status through help which prevents him from being mortal while leaving him intact in substance.

I think that the incident which occurred a while ago, and which I deplore, is very indicative of the situation that I described. You have among you a group of people 40

years old or under who are among the most committed where social upgrading of the milieu is concerned; then, those people take a stand and reject dialogue because they no longer believe to it. I do not want to condemn them, no.

I am a friend of them, I am working with them.

I am one of their friends and colleagues. But we must understand that people who are the spokesmen of disadvantaged groups have come up against so many closed doors, have read so many reports of inquiry on poverty and on one or another of its aspects, have met so many university students who were doing their studies in sociology on poverty in their streets, in their homes, without anything actually changing, that they have come to no longer believe in dialogue.

We must also understand that the few improvements made to social assistance in the past ten years have all been largely cancelled out by the rise in the cost of living, inflation and rising unemployment.

They could have said, "We no longer believe in dialogue and research, but we'll talk all the same". They preferred to say, "We no longer believe in dialogue, and therefore, we are no longer going to talk".

The poor person today is no longer an individual who has chosen begging as a profession but one who is integrated into the society because the citizens as a whole accept him as such. Today, begging is forbidden everywhere, and one can see this prohibition posted in a large number of rural municipalities. Poverty is a phenomenon which gives birth to a social class that has distinctive characteristics and that lives in a specific neighbourhood. This phenomenon is almost identical in all respects to the one that has been going on for a century, and which ends up dividing this world into three parts which confront one another within a precarious balance of terror, the capitalist western world, the communist world and the politically independent Third World wavering between the first two. The beggar of yesterday did not challenge society. He was not socially poor. He was accepted. He was poor only economically. The poor man of today gets his pittance in the form of a cheque, but he is a social outcast. His situation is more serious than his predecessor's.

Gentlemen, I now come to a few recommendations or suggestions stemming from the view of poverty that we have just briefly presented.

Recommendations

1. The state must reject the temptation to settle the problem of poverty solely by increasing welfare. That must be done. But that is not enough since the problem is not solely an economic one. It is a question of socially integrating the less fortunate class. In any assistance measure an attempt must be made to promote the development of man, the consolidation of the family as was strongly stressed to the Senate Committee in the brief from the Vanier Institute of the Family.

2. The state must clearly run the risk of fostering community organization and awareness of the less fortunate milieux without enslaving them or putting them under guardianship.

This awareness must not be regarded as a threat to the security of the public powers, financial powers or partisan organizations which often stand in fear of nothing more than the awakening and lucidity of the citizens.

Without passing judgment on the functioning of the Company of Young Canadians, one can say that the intention that prevailed at its founding was good in this connection.

The citizens' lucidity and commitment are basic conditions of the authenticity of a democracy.

3. The state must modestly measure its capability in the field of social development. If it wants to do everything, it will destroy its main resource—the citizen's initiative—and will run the risk of worsening situations that it wanted to improve.

4. After many others, we wonder whether the proper solution to many problems, and in particular poverty, should not come from a dissociation between work and wages. Is it possible that everyone work and will it be possible in the centuries to come?

Abortion, contraception and homosexuality are excellent ways of preventing a flooding of the labour market but these means could lead us to extinction rather than to a balance.

Is it not time to completely revise the standards by which we live and inaugurate a guaranteed annual income?

5. Present situations are so new in the history of the world, and their development so rapid that we must be prepared to challenge all our institutions rather than protect our "establishments".

The fact that the Canadian Senate has come to St-Roch is undoubtedly the fruit of a fairly radical questioning of its habits. Where

discussion, and even more where action are concerned, the citizens like the heads of state, the rich like the poor, must be prepared to invent and follow new paths.

The Deputy Chairman: Monsignor, you are going to give us that document?

Monsignor Lavoie: I have only a resume, I have only one secretary and that is myself.

The Deputy Chairman: I was asking the Monseigneur whether he could give us these sheets and we will make it part of our hearings, because it is quite long. Then we will be open for questions.

Monseigneur Lavoie: Fine.

[Text]

The Deputy Chairman: I would like to say to the members of the committee that the Monseigneur is open for questions now.

Senator Hastings: I was interested in your remarks with respect to the group that had just appeared before us and I believe the record should indicate that they left without the benefit of any dialogue with us and as you state, I could appreciate the position that these people find themselves in. They have been studying, they have been researched and they have been examined by university students, political leaders and social welfare workers and nothing has been done.

Everything remains the same if it doesn't get worse. In other words, if the poor doesn't get poor and the richer get richer as has been the case I would say this past twenty years in Canada and I think we are getting on rather grave ground or we are in grave danger when we have reached the position we are in tonight when dialogue is rejected and the democratic or constitutional form of descent has been rejected.

My question to you, sir, is in the light of this organization—not this particular one but this and others, do you foresee violence as has been experienced in the United States occurring in Canada?

Monseigneur Lavoie: I am sure it will come. You have the same problems everywhere in the world. The poor will always try to better themselves and finally it will come to what I call the form in my speech the political ideological and philosophical aspects.

I think it is coming. It may be coming slowly but I think it will eventually come. I don't see it in the immediate future but we will have to watch these people or to help them.

[Translation]

A voice: Just a minute, please. A little while ago, Monseigneur had the opportunity and took his time to make a very fine presentation of his brief, in such a way that it could be translated into English. I'd like, if we want to set up a dialogue between the audience and the Senate members, I'd like that, when the senators have a question to ask, that we should also have a chance to have the translation, so that all the people who are here can understand them.

The Deputy Chairman: Very well.

[Text]

Senator Hastings: Mr. Lavoie, you may answer my question en français.

I would like to ask you then if you have any ideas or suggestions as to how this committee can move or touch the have's in this nation as to their responsibility—not only their responsibilities but the danger we are in.

[Translation]

The Deputy Chairman: It won't be possible to have simultaneous translation. I repeat, the person qualified to do it isn't here. I don't know where she is. As for Mr. Coderre himself, it isn't possible...

A voice: If you don't mind, I have a suggestion; when a Committee member asks a question, translate it into French right after the senator has asked it. In any case, his question can be summed up in one or two sentences...

The Deputy Chairman: We can do that.

A voice: When Monseigneur speaks in English, we understand him, because he speaks with the same accent as we do. But when the senators speak, it's harder.

The Deputy Chairman: Now, there mustn't be any misunderstanding.

[Text]

I am going to say this in English. This is not a Royal Commission where we usually have questions from the audience. This is not

Royal Commission. It's a Committee of investigation that accepts written briefs submitted in advance and that we've studied and have come to discuss with the people who prepared them. We can't, there'd be nothing to gain, we can't allow everybody that's present in a public hall to ask questions right and left. That's not our purpose.

[Translation]

A voice: Then why do you come and visit us?

The Deputy Chairman: To hear the briefs.

[Translation]

Well, Mr. Chairman, and members of the Committee, I was telling the audience that this is not a Royal Commission. This is a Committee. I don't think we can get anywhere this way so I feel that we have reached the point...

[Text]

Senator Quart: Wouldn't there be a way of allowing some people to ask questions?

A voice: The senators get paid, even if they don't work; that's the idea.

The Deputy Chairman: If you listen, we're going to make an effort. It isn't easy to do translation when you're not perfectly qualified, if one of you people is qualified to do simultaneous translation, help us out.

A voice: There are people who are paid to do that. We pay enough taxes to have translators, into French.

Senator Quart: We've sat here all day, today, this morning, all morning, and we had no trouble.

A voice: You couldn't place a bilingual member beside a senator who isn't bilingual, so that he can translate to this senator, so the meeting can go on in French?

Abbé Piché: I'm going to do the translation of the first question asked by Senator Hastings. He was asking, whether, with the attitude taken by the Citizens' Committee by leaving the hall, we can conclude that soon we'll have violence in Canada, as there was in some African countries, as there was in some countries in the third world? At any time, the only solution that there's going to be to get out of poverty, will it be violence? Until now, Monseigneur Lavoie answered, to make it short, that it's possible for the same causes to produce the same effects; that means that if we here are in the same situation as the third-world countries were in, and couldn't get out of it, it's possible that some groups will turn to violence.

The Deputy Chairman: Are there any other questions?

A voice: I'd like to ask that the question be referred to the audience so they can participate in the answer to the question.

The Deputy Chairman: Does anybody have anything to say? We're going to ask you, if you want to co-operate with us, for what you're going to tell us to bear fruit, for it not to be lost in the mist tonight, it must be noted down. You must give your name so the ste-

nographer can know who said what and what you said. So, I would ask you, if you have something to say, to go to the microphone that's at your disposal, give your name and say what you have to say. Is that all right with you?

A voice: Is it really necessary for the person to identify himself?

The Deputy Chairman: That's what's always been done till now.

A voice: The briefs, one brief that I read in the papers, it's a mandate for all of Canada; we don't have everything that was asked in our briefs.

Senator Eudes: The briefs have been summarized. There was no mention at all of what the Committee members said. The briefs were summarized, simply. It's customary, as the Chairman has just told us, for each person who wants to ask a question, to at least have the courtesy to identify himself. It doesn't cause you any trouble, and we know to whom we're talking.

A voice: I'm simply asking a question; can a person readily answer the question you want to ask if he identifies himself? Can a person identify himself and say, at the same time, "I'm for violence in Canada"? I put the question to the meeting.

Senator Fournier: Now, what is your name?

A Voice: I'm giving my opinion; if you absolutely want to have my name, ask some questions, in a roundabout way like a smart politician, and I'll give my name.

Another Voice: I think it would be preferable to learn to know one another better, the French-Canadians and the English instead of always... I think that's horrible. I think there's no reason for that to be in 1970.

Mr. Paul Lecours, member of the audience: I saw in the papers that the Chairman, Mr. Croll, proposed regarding welfare, that we make people work instead of giving them benefits; i.e. we make them earn their benefits. So, I'd like the Chairman to give me his opinion about that.

The Deputy Chairman: That's fine.

Mr. Lecours: Do you want me to translate that into English?

The Deputy Chairman: Please, if you can.

[Text]

From the floor: Mr. Chairman, I ask how many newspapers of Quebec and Montreal that are for social welfare that instead of giving to those people presentations you declare to give them work. Do you understand me?

Senator Croll: Well, let me tell you that the first prerequisite of any person is work rather than welfare. If we didn't have the work for them then we have to provide for him as a matter of social rights. That is what I said.

[Translation]

Abbé Piché: The Chairman says that the thing people want first and foremost is to work instead of having welfare, and that it's only when people absolutely can't work that they have to be given welfare; that's what he stated.

Mr. Lecours: Allow me another question in French; I can't understand...

[Text]

I will say that in English...

I don't understand why fifty percent of our population works and works to pay those who don't work. Why?

Senator Croll: Well, the people who don't work are the people who have rights and want to work. If they can't get the jobs then someone has to provide for them so those of us who are working make the provisions for them. There is no alternative.

[Translation]

Abbé Piché: People who don't work have rights like those who work, and, well, it's normal that, if they're not working, those who are working should help them obtain those rights.

[Text]

Mr. Lecours: Thank you very much.

[Translation]

The Deputy Chairman: Are there any other questions from someone on the floor?

[Text]

From the floor: Mr. President, I am a French-Canadian and I work all the time. I have had the chance to work and I have had the sense to work now. I like culture like everybody and I work all my life about twelve or fifteen hours everyday and it isn't possible for me to go to the Place Des Arts in Montreal if I have to pay for taxis. I cannot go to the theatres instead. I can tell you I work mostly seven days a week for about sixty percent of my labour time.

I mean since twenty-one years I am not married because I had no money to get married but I always work. There is a lot of people in Canada in my situation. We pay tax which is pulled out of our income but I have no home, I have no car and I cannot pay for other luxury things and there is a problem because like I say I am like everybody. I wish I could have a home and I wish I could pay for my wife and for my children if God gives me some children some day.

I wish I could give them a trip to the country but it is impossible, sir, because the government—the provincial government requires me money and the federal government requires me money and when I have to pay every day just to eat and believe me, sir—Mr. Chairman I eat a steak about twice a year and I work all my life.

I work before twelve or fifteen hours a day. Thank you, sir and I hope you understood what I mean.

[Translation]

Abbé Piché: As you could understand, the person who is asking the question is bringing up a situation that must have been repeated or many of them, i.e. that he works twelve to fifteen hours a day, six days a week. He pays taxes to the provincial government, to the federal government and to the municipal government. And he can't even afford to go out to a camping ground or take a trip out to the country. He barely manages, without being able to have his own house, or anything else, or even to get married. That's the situation he's explaining to the Chairman. I don't know whether he's waiting for an answer.

A voice: There are many in the same boat.
[Text]

Senator Croll: I know exactly what he has said. He is working in a low wage position of some kind or another or at least minimum wages and he is having a hard time getting along.

That is a problem that a lot of people are having because the minimum wages are so low.

[Translation]

Abbé Piché: What the Chairman understood is that the person who spoke works for minimal wage, and that he can't manage to get something good in life; that's a situation in which it's hard to change something.

A voice: I attribute it to a lack of skill among the French-Canadians, because the French-Canadians who are skilled have a reasonable wage, almost all of them.

[Text]

Monseigneur, May I ask you a question? "Guaranteed income" for any people living in Canada.

Don't you think that even if everybody would be working—we could not find work for everybody. There is no place. There is no room for the work of everybody in the country and with this situation I think the situation will be worse and worse during the years to come so must we not think of something like the guaranteed revenue for many people living in Canada? I have read in the report made to the special committee that a lot of people came to say to the committee that they earned or they were looking to the guaranteed revenue for the future.

[Translation]

I'll say it in French. We must increasingly expect that in a developing civilization there will be people, even among the skilled, who will be unable to find work. We are in a leisure civilization. Until now we've settled a good part of the problem through shorter working hours, but we'll come to a point, a saturation point, we'll arrive at a time when people, even skilled people, won't be able to find work, because there won't be any, quite simply, because the machine is going to take away jobs. With such a prospect, shouldn't we be thinking more and more of a guaranteed annual income to replace, for one part of the vacations, many allowances that keep citizens in a state of dependence, in a state of social inferiority? A guaranteed annual income for everybody ensuring a job, when all is said and done, even if the laws of the labor market don't allow them to find work. I think that question must be considered very seriously.

[Text]

I don't know what the committee would say to a solution like that but I have heard it a lot of times since the beginning of your meetings.

The Deputy Chairman: The purpose of this committee is to listen before coming to any arrangement.

[Translation]

The purpose of the Committee, Monseigneur, is to listen.

A voice: Monseigneur, I think that skill comes first, skill, I am convinced, comes first. We try to have some skill, and after that, we see about the rest. First we see about training skilled men; that, I can't change my mind about.

The Deputy Chairman: Madam, that's a personal opinion that we accept.

A voice: I think a French-Canadian, a Quebecker, should learn to speak the English language, because it's very, very hard to understand you; if I don't know your language, I couldn't communicate with you, I couldn't understand you.

The Deputy Chairman: You speak English?

[Text]

From the floor: I don't speak in English well enough now. I am studying English now.

[Translation]

Another voice: You had a chance to learn it.

A voice: I go to night school, and you can go there. I'm trying.

The Deputy Chairman: Madam, we respect your opinion, your idea.

A voice: I'm sorry, madam, but I don't share your opinion; I think we should take a stand against this business, because I myself could be a taxi driver, or a doctor, or have any kind of trade, and carry it on fine in French. If I spoke to the Chairman in English, it's because he's a visitor and we're being hospitable.

[Text]

I talked to you in English because you are a visitor and we are happy to welcome you in Quebec but...

I am sure—you talk only one language and it is not a complex. If I would only talk one language I would not have a complex. I am sorry I cannot speak four languages but I still welcome you to Quebec.

Senator Croll: Let me just say to this gentleman. I thank him for the courtesy that he has expressed to me but we took the precaution of making it possible to speak both English and French.

We had all our equipment here today and the only thing that happened the person who was supposed to do the translation didn't show up so we had a bad break but otherwise we were ready to carry on in both languages for all people but as I say our translator didn't show and we have had to call on one of our very able assistants, Mr. Codere, to help us out.

[Translation]

The Interpreter: The Chairman has just thanked the gentleman for his courtesy in speaking in English. He says that all precautions were taken for people to be able to speak in both languages, but the translator is missing: she's lost in Quebec City. I would simply like to ask Monseigneur whether he could go into a little more detail about his

idea. He was talking about a guaranteed annual income, which would be one way that everyone could live in dignity. Now, he said before, also, in his report, that with people, it's not only money in their pockets that they want to have, but that the situation is getting worse, socially. How does he think all that could be made to work together? We would all be assured of a minimum annual income, but would work at the same time; working gives us something; when we work we feel we are of some use. Well, wouldn't it happen that there would be people who would let themselves go, because they would feel themselves less and less useful, because, in any case, they are sure of receiving their guaranteed annual income, at the year-end, without being obliged to work? How do you make the two things work together?

[Text]

Monseigneur Lavoie: I've read only a fifth of my report; if I had read all of my report, you would all be asleep, but you would have the answer to Mr. Piché.

I have read just one fifth of my report and my answer is in the rest of my report and if I had read it everybody would be sleeping but you would have had an answer. I think the Chairman, Senator Croll is quite right.

I think his opinion is the same as mine. I think we have to have some security on the financial levels but we have also the right to work and we have the right also to communicate and we have the right also for these services for our urban civilization.

We have to work on the three levels I believe.

Father Piché: He was telling me that they need to work. They need to feel useful in the society. I am asking him how the two parts of this information can go together.

If I can be sure of having five thousand dollars at the end of every year without working, why or how can I have it still the taste for working?

Senator Croll: Well, no one has ever suggested it to the Committee that money should be handed out hither to anyone at all.

Money alone will not solve the poverty problem. There must be opportunity. An opportunity to work. There must be service and those three things don't go together and unless they are together there isn't any possible solution.

[Translation]

Abbé Piché: The Chairman says that nobody has ever suggested that the only solu

tion is to give money. Three things are needed at one time: to give money, to give the opportunity to work, and to give service to people. It's only when we have all three that we'll have a solution.

A Voice: A little while ago, Monseigneur talked about there being a shortage of work in our industrial society. I think the work shortage will be apparent not only here in our country; we have to realize now that two thirds of humanity is starving, is behind. So we have to create a manpower mobility that can spread all over the earth. If we look only at what's here or in the United States, or Quebec, that won't bring any solution. The problem is a global one, and so we should look at it in a global and total way, when two thirds of humanity is starving, in a producing country, and so when we can't work, there will have to be a guaranteed salary. I think there's plenty to do in that direction, and it could bring work, I think, for some years to come, for many years to come, for each and everyone. It would be too easy to find a solution and say: "We're going to pay you for doing nothing". Nobody wants that, it puts down the dignity of the individual, in all its forms, it debases him. I think that the debasement of the individual shouldn't exist in a society like ours, which boasts about being ahead throughout the world.

[Text]

From The Floor: I believe Mr. Croll that as the Monseigneur said a while ago, some day we will have a guaranteed salary without working because there won't be enough work for everybody but I think that two-thirds of humanity is suffering from not having work so the problem is global and it should be seen in its entirety.

When I speak of a solution I say that workers should be mobilized and made aware that they can go out of Quebec to work and if we don't help the undeveloped countries somebody else will and may be not in a way that we would like.

It is already happening somewhere and I don't think we can help people by destroying their freedom or destroying their way of thinking and by destroying everything that they take pride in, so language is one of the first things—Language is one of the first things in the world that people want to keep, because it's something we learned on our mother's knee, with our little school companions. And so, at the age of twenty, I didn't know a word of English. I'm proud to speak it, but not overly so; I prefer to speak French.

[Translation]

However, I can try to speak it in your presence, since you don't know my language, and I'm pleased to say so; I wouldn't like anybody to have his rights stepped on, especially his language; there's nothing nicer, and after that comes work; the daily bread comes after. Now, I think there's somebody that was lacking, that didn't play his role in human history. I'm thinking of religions, no one of them in particular, but all of them together. They have always been built up and erected for the purpose of saving the rich and encouraging the poor. I can't do anything else, all the princes, all the kings of Europe had their private chapels. I saw recently that the clergy in Chili sold all its property, even the cassocks and vestments, everything, and went to live among the people; I think that's something admirable. Maybe in the Quebec context, maybe that couldn't be done so easily; But I can very well see that being done. Human history is being made right now. There are over a billion and a half people who are communists; China is one billion; with the U.S.S.R. and the neighboring countries, it's over a billion. Latin America is doing something, all right. If you don't do something very soon, and no charity, note this well, but a right that everybody is claiming and everybody wants, if something isn't done soon, it'll be all over. Thank you, gentlemen.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much. Monseigneur, do you have something to add? Yes, there's a gentleman there.

A voice: I think that to be within the rules, I have to identify myself, so that the Senate Committee can note it down; that's what I was told a little while ago. So my name is Pierre Paré. If you want my telephone number, I have that too.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, Mr. Paré.

Mr. Pierre Paré: Well, Senator, I would like to say that when I spoke a little while ago it was to get some freedom of expression for the people who are here. It's in that sense that I think it's important to do some self-questioning, and, if my information is correct, a person must absolutely identify himself to express an opinion before a Senate Committee, at a public meeting like the one this evening; I see in that a way of crushing freedom of expression, because certainly in principle, we live in a democracy. I'm in agreement with you. I'm in agreement with the constitution of Canada. However, it can

happen that opinions are given that go against some practices of our society and you are surely aware of people who, because of opinions they have expressed in public, may have lost jobs, or been dismissed, or been watched, or been controlled in their opinions, and even in their private life, and it's in that sense that I think the Senate Committee should allow people to express themselves freely without being obliged to identify themselves.

The Deputy Chairman: It's good to know; it's debatable, but I'm not debating it.

Mr. Paré: I think it's a way of allowing the citizens of Canada to express themselves, all the citizens to express themselves, because all citizens, the citizens down at the bottom who are welfare recipients or persons with very small incomes, I don't need to draw you a picture to tell you that if they speak out in the evening before a citizens' committee or somewhere else, it isn't long before the boss knows it. The boss can take measures against the employees; I don't need to give any examples of union meetings where people were dismissed from a company because they tried to speak out at a union meeting. I think the problem presents itself also in a community like ours where, if people are going to give their opinions, they're going to do so in a crude way. Where I'm concerned, I express myself in political fashion and with some political ability, as I was saying a little while ago, because I'm a student, and because I learned the art of speaking. But there are people here who are going to express themselves in a crude way, and I think that they're entitled to give their opinions, even though they don't have the facility to express themselves with the necessary diplomacy. I think the Senate Committee can take good note of it and take it into consideration in the other sittings it will want to hold in public. I think that sittings like the one tonight are very important, because it permits you to be in contact with citizens down at the bottom, not just with people of the establishment. Thank you.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, Mr. Paré.

[Text]

Mr. Paul Lecours: Monsieur le président you said a few minutes ago that this was not a Royal Commission. What is the difference between a Royal Commission and a Committee?

[Translation]

Abbé Piché: Mr. Lecours is asking the difference between a Royal Commission and a Committee of Investigation.

The Deputy Chairman: A Royal Commission, you have that...

A voice: That's old-fashioned.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes, it's old-fashioned, I agree, and has made a lot of ink run that was wasted. A Royal Commission is a commission of the kind we're having this evening, that allows open debates. With a committee like ours, there's a difference; it isn't the same thing. We study briefs that have been submitted to us in advance, that we have studied among ourselves in advance. We come to meet the people who have submitted the briefs. We don't ask them to read their briefs again, because we already know what's in them. But we do ask them to elaborate on the contents of their briefs. There are a few exceptions across Canada, where people, who had come to listen to what was going on, asked us to debate a subject that wasn't directly related to the brief, but we can't change the subject. So to keep our records in order, we asked the person to identify himself, to give his name, so as to know who had asked the question. That's the whole danger. There's the difference.

Mr. Lecours: I'm going to ask you another question. It's funny, but I don't think we have had any immediate results from the work you are doing. Don't you think that work is going to go by the board like a multitude of commissions we have had in Canada? Don't you think that your work, for which each of us citizens pays, we pay for those commissions, well don't you think that at any time this work will be still lying in drawers?

The Deputy Chairman: We hope not, sir. Now, we could go a little bit farther. I wouldn't want to make it appear that we're looking for bouquets. As I said at the beginning, we are not bringing any solution to the problems of poverty. We're looking for the causes of poverty in Quebec, in the province, in our parishes; the cause is really at the source. If there are twenty-five poor families in Quebec, or elsewhere, you can find twenty-five different problems, because poverty isn't the same thing everywhere; it's, a case of a needy mother; it's an illness; it could be education that's the cause, or a problem of lack of skills; there could be twenty-five poor families, and twenty-five different problems.

In the past, we put them all into the same bag, but that's finished nowadays. Now, we have to go to the source, and that's why the work is done a little bit behind the scene.

Mr. Lecours: Mr. Chairman, you are working to find solutions and as for me, well, I don't want to disappoint you, but I think that you're not ready to find the solution to poverty in Canada, that I swear.

The Deputy Chairman: It isn't easy.

Mr. Lecours: What I am saying is an assumption, but I don't think you'll find it tomorrow. I'm persuaded that, in the present state of things, if the government (you're going to make suggestions to the Government of Canada, you're going to submit a brief to the Prime Minister of Canada), well I think, I'm afraid that we're going to be, in a year, in two years or in three years, in the same position we're in right now, with very high unemployment in Canada, and particularly in Quebec Province.

The Deputy Chairman: I hope you're mistaken, I'd like you not to be telling the truth.

Mr. Lecours: We've had a bit of experience.

The Deputy Chairman: Now, we're going to ask Monseigneur to say the closing words.

Mr. Lecours: Mr. Chairman, is one more question allowed?

The Deputy Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Lecours: The old age pension, does that have anything to do with poverty? I don't know. Don't you think it should be lowered from 65 to 60 years?

The Deputy Chairman: There's a good deal to talk about it.

Mr. Lecours: It's very well to talk about it, but action is needed. A person 60 years old, nowadays, it's very clear that he can't find a job; that's very clear. It's so clear that you have people here, people of the Golden Age of 60 years, who are sitting at street corners, we even have, we don't even have a community center to bring those people together. We had here, in the riding of Quebec East, which is the riding of two of our former prime ministers, that was neglected from

every point of view, I could never understand how it is that we are in such an advanced state of unemployment and poverty.

The Deputy Chairman: We agree, sir.

Senator Quart: Before this young man spoke, I wanted to give our thanks to Abbé Piché for his lovely work in acting as interpreter all during this evening.

Mr. Lecours: It's the Abbé Piché; he's a priest.

Monseigneur Lavoie: I simply want to give one of the conclusions I noted down. It's that I think that the Government must take the risk of encouraging community organization and an awakening in the disadvantaged areas without tying them down or putting them under its thumb. Such an awakening must not be considered as a threat to the security of public authorities, financial powers or party organizations. The Government, through the complications we have had this evening, must clear-headedly take the risk of encouraging community organization and an awakening in the disadvantaged areas without tying them down or putting them under its thumb. Such an awakening must not be considered as a threat to the security of public authorities, financial powers or party organizations which often find no advantage in an awakening of and clear thinking by the citizens. Without passing judgment on the operation of the Company of Young Canadians, we can say that this certainly seems to have been the intention when it was founded.

Clear thinking and commitment by the citizens are the basic conditions for the genuineness of our democracy. We must be convinced of it, even though it leads us to laborious and apparently tumultuous exchanges. The present situations are so new in the history of the world, and they have evolved so rapidly, that we must be prepared to re-question all our institutions, instead of protecting our establishments. The fact that the Canadian Senate has come to St-Roch is probably the fruit of a fairly radical re-questioning of its habits; and I know that this visit was made at the insistence of Senator Croll, the Chairman.

When it comes to deliberation, and even more, to action, the ordinary citizens as well as heads of state, the rich as well as the poor, must be prepared to invent and to follow new paths, as the members of the Senate Committee are doing, and for which I thank them very much on behalf of the Social Secretariat.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, Monseigneur and the people of St-Roch parish. I owe you a hearty thank-you for being present here tonight. We greatly regret the hitch with the translation which caused problems for you and for us also; perhaps it's our responsibility. It's certainly not your fault. It's an

unfortunate occurrence that we deplore. Once again, thank you. We hope no one has wasted his time during the discussions and arguments we have had. Thank you and good night.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

Social Unawareness of Poverty.

Brief to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty by COBEQ

Foreword

Poverty comes in many shapes and forms other than economic poverty. And thousands of arguments are possible regarding economic poverty. This is evidenced by the various briefs submitted to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty.

In the guidelines for the preparation of these briefs, there is reference to "measures eliciting the nation as a whole to participate in the fight against poverty".

Along this line of thought, the Conseil des œuvres et du bien-être du Québec lays the emphasis of its brief on the following preoccupation: it is of top priority to attack the social unawareness of poverty which at the outset sabotages any effort to eliminate it.

In its reflections, COBEQ uses "we" which refers to the country as a whole (with its varied components). The agency then proposes that the Senate Committee recognize as a very real measure, although producing less immediate results, that there be a collective awareness of the question of poverty.

Introduction

1. Poverty does exist, but our social awareness of it is slight. In this connection, here are a few reflexions to be brought into the open and a few proposals to be implemented.

2. The reflexions deal with: A. what we know about poverty. B. how we perceive it. C. to what extent we analyse it. As a matter of fact, our social unawareness of poverty appears in our limited information, in our limited preception, in our modified interpretations.

3. The aim of the following proposals is to promote the development of a greater social awareness of poverty.

A Few Reflexions to be Brought into the open

Poverty: What we know about it

4. Concerning poverty, even the first level of awareness which consists in being informed, does not apply to everyone:

(a) people do not know about the poverty in our society;

(b) poor people do not know about certain services that are there at their disposal;

(c) people fighting against poverty often do not know about others who are fighting a similar battle.

(a) People do not know about the poverty in our society

5. It takes only a few conversations on poverty to observe that a good number of people, having various concepts of the problem, feel that there are only rare exceptional cases of people suffering from poverty in our society.

6. It can also be observed that many, taking for granted that there are no people deprived of the necessities for survival, conclude that there are no people suffering from poverty.

7. The disclosures contained in the fifth annual report of the Economic Council of Canada nevertheless show that poverty touches an "immense minority" of citizens. The numerous comments that the report has given rise to give good evidence of the fact that we dare to think that poverty has little place within our borders.

8. Moreover, to show the contrast between wealth and poverty, we use a photograph of our comfort, but we often look to another continent for an example of deprivation.

(b) Poor people do not know about certain services that are there at their disposal

9. We do not know just how much poverty there is but the fact remains that a number of services are endeavouring to fight it.

10. In many cases, a regrettable phenomenon can be observed: the groups working to alleviate poverty do not have adequate means for making themselves known, for reaching those who need them. The best informed on such services are not always the most needy.

11. Furthermore, certain services are directed at the entire population, having little effect on the poor who nevertheless have as much, if not greater, need of them. The need for education on family planning is an example.

12. Certain services fear they may be swamped if they provide a great deal of information; they also choose to limit their

publicity. Sometimes, with regard to social measures such as unemployment insurance, it is not the rights that are made known to the public but incidences of infractions.

13. On the other hand, when information is given out, it is not always accessible to the needy in proportion to his situation. There are assistance application forms which "require assistance" in being completed.

(c) People fighting poverty often do not know about others who are fighting a similar battle

14. There are many and varied services operating in the area of poverty. However, sometimes their efforts are at odds rather than in line with one another.

15. Discrete in their activities, concentrated on their efforts or for some reason working in a closed circuit, many agencies are working side by side and yet are unaware of one another. Sometimes a wasting of energies results; sometimes this creates additional obstacles in the work to be done.

16. Problems are broken up in accordance with the services' fields of action. Some sectors are not touched while other more obvious or modish sectors are overloaded. The needy have difficulty in locating in all this the resource to which they should apply. The various government offices are far from being above such shortcomings.

17. Poverty is approached in various ways; as long as the person is not the subject of prime concern, these approaches are independent of one another; but if the poor person is the essential factor, educational, medical and welfare institutions have to assume responsibility for the requirements of complementary work.

18. A number of people want to make their contribution to eliminating poverty but they do not always do it in a co-ordinated fashion. And individuals prepared to render services are often put aside. Because we discover shortcomings in the work assumed by voluntary agencies, we are inclined to overlook this formula in its entirety.

B. Poverty: How we perceive it

19. Our social awareness is more or less adequate in our perception of poverty:

(a) we perceive poverty according to restrictive cultural schemes;

(b) we perceive poverty in terms of special situations;

(c) we perceive poverty in a setting of abundance.

(a) We perceive poverty according to restrictive cultural schemes

20. When speaking of poverty, most people at one time or another use the expression "In any event, there will always be poor people". Poverty thus appears to be a necessary and inevitable evil. In terms of present conditions, this precept is justified. But for numerous projects, our prospects are not limited to temporary conditions; we have arrived at achievements which had seemed improbable. However we entertain a defeatist attitude toward the social challenge to eliminate poverty.

21. According to contemporary thinking, getting money is a major sign of success; the more or less logical outcome is the current assessment that poverty is an indication of failure. Prejudices take hold and breed confusion; occasional components of poverty such as messiness, filth or alcoholism are regarded as reprehensible characteristics. In the eyes of some, the poor are without social position; even in better conditions they would still be miserable.

22. Our cultural context pictures the poor as a heavy burden on society. With regard to taxes, we do not suffer in silence the exorbitant expenditures which certain aspects of our social security entail. Thus an aggressive attitude towards the poor who cost so much often dominates our comments; left in the background is the fact that services and collective facilities, government vanities and administration also require taxes. On the other hand, the idea that "now the state is increasingly more concerned with poverty" leads some to believe that their responsibility towards the poor has lessened a great deal, if not disappeared.

(b) We perceive poverty in terms of special situations

23. Any person who considers the question of poverty does so from a viewpoint and in the light of his own particular situation. Also our concept of the problem is fragmentary and partial.

24. The problem of poverty must be rectified without adversely affecting the existing social order. This viewpoint is often expressed by people who are in an advantageous position which allows them to believe that society is in good order. The problem of poverty cannot be solved without changing the existing social order; this opinion is readily found among people who are suffering in this social order.

25. The majority of poor are plunged too deep in their situation to notice the currents dragging them, to unearth the causes and consequences to which their poverty is bound. Alone they do not completely foresee the operations which would change things. On the other hand, people in the know are likely to analyse relations as a whole; but the depth of the problem and the vital forces involved may escape them. Hence, in the fight against poverty, energies are spent in vain, unreal solutions are brought in from the outside.

(c) We perceive poverty in a setting of abundance

26. In our society we find poverty in a setting overflowing with wealth. The marvels of our world are no longer counted; nor the limousines; not the number of meals a day. In such a setting of abundance, poverty may appear particularly odious.

27. However, the main effect of such a setting is to distract us from poverty. A television program on the poor is wiped out by commercials; a newspaper article on misery is invalidated by descriptions of parties. Abundance is extolled and poverty is left in the background.

28. On the other hand, apparent abundance sometimes covers up a situation of poverty. In our society, we use things while waiting for them to become our property; but though credit eliminates certain privations among the poor, it does not, however, solve the poverty of a life of debt.

C. Poverty: To what extent we analyse it

29. Our social awareness is limited with regard to an analysis of the meaning of poverty:

(a) we do little analysis on what poverty means to those living in it;

(b) we do little analysis on what poverty involves for those fighting it;

(c) we do little analysis on what poverty reveals about the society which engenders it.

(a) We do little analysis on what poverty means to those living in it

30. Obviously poverty means being deprived of goods; but this privation entails many others. It means being deprived of what possessing such goods represents (in certain cases, status); it means being deprived of activities which require the possession of certain goods (for example, in cultural circles

requiring special clothing); it means being deprived of ties with those who have such goods.

31. It takes more than money to bring happiness. But it is the universal instrument for exchanges without which the poor cannot choose, cannot get what would bring them possible happiness. In 1970, in our society, life is very limited and very marginal if money is lacking.

32. In a society where so much money is necessary for nearly everything, to be short of money is synonymous to insecurity. In a society where everything preaches that the more money one has, the finer life is, to be poor is synonymous to permanent frustration. It is hardly an exaggeration to say that our advertising which even the rich find harassing is mental torture for the poor.

33. The difficulties experienced by the poor undermine their daily life and their efforts to know better days. Poverty creates an atmosphere of blows and discouragement for family life which is constantly upset by tensions and worries. Too often the family suffers so much from poverty that it raises children who will not be able to rise above it.

34. The environment may also leave a mark on the children because poverty creates a climate of withdrawal and disinterest in social life; it sometimes creates a rejection of any social standard whatsoever.

35. Poverty is a source of alienation. This alienation affects the personal life of the poor; the sharing that takes place in the society overlooks him. This alienation affects his social life; he is a stranger to the society in which he could participate. The life of the poor often deprives him of any chance of rising above it.

(b) We do little analysis on what poverty involves for those fighting it.

36. People are striving to fight against poverty; a number of reasons may prompt them to do so; various orientations are offered to them and they encounter special difficulties.

37. People become involved with the poor in order to ease their conscience or to gain merit. Others have motivations calling to mind the first public assistance measures which protected society against the threat that the discontented poor could constitute; they want to appease the poor to ward off revolution. Others mainly want to ease suffering—which is so great that it may sometimes invite violence.

38. A work orientation asks the poor to be receptive to the solutions that others conceive for them. Other orientations are wary of supporting the efforts that the poor are making to rise above their situation and of respecting their way of seeing things.

39. Those who become committed to eliminating poverty assume a demanding task; their work is difficult because its purpose is complex and also because its vital components make it compromising. Their task so affects people in their well-being that it is necessarily an object of contestation. The poor, because of the way they live, hardly accept that their cause be defended coldly or sumptuously. Those who do not experience poverty are not always moved to compromise their well-being for this problem. Those who derive certain profit from poverty are scarcely interested in the situation changing. Any effort at fighting poverty encounters such resistance.

(c) We do little analysis on what poverty reveals about the society which engenders it.

40. Poverty is not a fact of nature; it is a social phenomenon. Natural shortcomings make some people more fragile than others when faced with the threat of poverty; but in a society that has enough goods to provide everyone with them the fact that some have very little is the result of a strictly social process.

41. A society is responsible for the sharing that it does and the priorities it establishes. It is society that determines to what extent the differences in well-being between people are admissible. It is society that determines to what extent its luxury spending can go side by side with misery. But faced with unsatisfactory results, it often takes no blame by stating that poverty is inevitable.

42. Poverty shows up in a society which makes economic choices. Certain measures required by our system may make us reflect on the imperfection to which it is still reduced; we throw away wheat, we subsidize farmers so that they will limit their production, etc. We might think that things could be otherwise.

43. Nor are our social measures completely ideal. Social assistance does not prompt one to work; the amount granted for children placed in foster homes is higher than the sum which is given to a family to enable it to meet the needs of its children; administrative mechanisms do not adequately control the

possibility of fraud. Our ineptness in correcting poverty raises questions.

44. But a deeper question must be asked. How and why does our society engender poverty?

45. *In short*, these *reflexions* are a reminder that we do not know everything about poverty; that we perceive quite incompletely what it actually is; that we do not always go to the root of the questions that it asks us.

46. This meagre social awareness of poverty cannot unleash an effort which could put in motion the social machinery to which poverty is linked. The following *proposals* are aimed at stimulating social awareness in this connection.

A few Proposals to be implemented

47. As a result of the evidence heard, the Special Senate Committee on Poverty will undoubtedly be occupied with various tasks.

48. The foregoing reflexions suggest an essential task: making Canadians as deeply aware as possible of the question of poverty. This is a considerable challenge but it is necessary; the steps that will make it possible remain to be invented.

49. Such an extension of the Committee's work probably requires the setting up of a team available for this task. Its members should endeavour to extent the Committee's work into the society.

50. The Senate Committee would suggest numerous matters that such a team might deal with; but as of now, it is possible to state that there would be no shortage of work. We need only list a few efforts that are necessary.

51. Canadians should be made aware that poverty exists in their country; the number of people who are informed on this problem should be increased, and thereby, the number of those who are likely to tackle it will increase.

52. Any organization having information and viewpoints on poverty should be invited to make them known. Among other things, the Economic Council of Canada might reach a much wider public than the one to which its regular publications are directed.

53. All organizations working with the poor should be urged to make an effort to make themselves known and to be accessible to all those who need them; in particular, groups that would like to do so but cannot should be supported.

54. Machinery for keeping informed should be provided to those working in various ways at various locations on the problem of poverty; an up-to-date list of all the groups working in this area should be drawn up.

55. Voluntary efforts should be supported; if the question has been explored, the conditions under which the volunteer agency renders service should be made known; a judicious use of it should be recommended. If the question has not been studied, steps should be taken so that it will be.

56. People should be made aware of the fact that the poverty picture is confused; prejudices, gratuitous affirmations should be destroyed; the real facets of poverty should be unveiled; people should be given the opportunity to view poverty from a less restricted viewpoint; communication should be set up with people who are not on the same wavelength.

57. It should be ensured that educational circles recognize their special responsibility with regard to poverty; there should be an intensification of the efforts to improve education in have-not situations; and also through better education, there should be a contribution to reducing, if not eliminating, prejudices concerning poverty.

58. The mass media should be brought to play the exceptional role devolving on them in an effort to make people aware of poverty.

Conclusion

60. Poverty should hold our attention since people are suffering from it and also because its existence is seriously challenging many of the elements of our collective life.

61. Various efforts must be made, but since the question of poverty concerns all of society, recourse to all of social energy is a priority; through it, the real elements of an answer can emerge.

62. The Conseil des œuvres et du bien-être de Québec hopes that the Special Senate Committee on Poverty will assume responsibility in this connection. COBEQ will be directly involved in an effort to make all people aware.

Summary of a brief submitted by the Secrétariat Social de Saint-Roch, Inc. to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty
August 31, 1970

Foreword

1. The Secrétariat Social wishes to express its satisfaction at the Committee's visit to an

urban area in which circumstances have reduced the majority of the people to poverty. The solution of the problems that poverty creates lies either in dialogue or in confrontation between the haves and the have-nots. The Senate Committee has chosen dialogue, a decision which merits our warmest congratulations.

2. The Secrétariat Social expresses a wish that the Committee's investigations should not be used to fuel our constitutional and party political disputes. Its submission should in no way be construed as recognition that the subjects dealt with here are under federal jurisdiction, any more than they are under provincial. It firmly believes that effective governmental action can be achieved only where order and mutual respect prevail at all levels without rancour, and where all concerned agree that poverty should be a uniting influence rather than a subject for electoral horsetrading.

3. The Secrétariat Social looks upon this evening's meeting as a recognition of the fact that the poor are already sufficiently well organized as a group to take part in a dialogue, and derives great satisfaction from that fact.

4. The short presentation that follows will be an attempt

1. to describe briefly poverty as we have observed it in this urban area, and to point out some of its implications; and

2. to make a few fairly general recommendations concerning the role of governments at all levels.

Brief description and analysis of the phenomenon of poverty, as observed in this area.

5. Poverty here does not mean a few isolated cases; it means the gradual formation of a virtual sub-proletariat condemned to deterioration in every aspect of their lives, as a result of the combined influence of these three factors, among others:

(a) rejection by most of the social circles frequented by people whom poverty has spared;

(b) constant solicitation by the mass media of the circles from which the poor are excluded;

(c) the social pressure of an environment in which resignation, dependence and artificial means of escape combine to produce a gradual desocialization.

Some details of the present situation in Saint-Roch Parish.

6. Action by public agencies has so far served to maintain those destined to belong to the sub-proletariat in their underdeveloped state, without solving the basic problem—the deterioration in deeply felt human values.

7. Outstanding people are to be found in impoverished environments, though they are often unaware of their abundant human worth.

A considerable effort is being made to heighten the awareness of the poor. This effort constitutes either the main source of hope for, or the main threat to, social peace. An awakening is also under way among the traditionally betteroff, who are becoming increasingly alive to all the problems that poverty creates. This process is bringing different social classes closer together, and it bodes well for the future.

8. Governments must resist the temptation to try to solve the problem of poverty solely by increasing social assistance payments. The latter is necessary, but it is not enough, because the problem is not exclusively an economic one. It involves the social integration of the impoverished. Any assistance measure must therefore be designed first and foremost to favour the development of the individual and the strengthening of the family, as strongly emphasized in the brief submitted by the Vanier Institute of the Family to the Senate Committee.

9. Governments must take the calculated risk of fostering community organization and greater awareness among the poor, without subjugating them or imposing paternalism upon them. Growing popular awareness must not be regarded as a threat to the security of the public authorities, financial interests or party organizations, which often fear nothing

more than they fear an alert and enlightened citizenry.

Without passing judgment on the activities of the Company of Young Canadians, we might say that the intention behind its creation clearly lay in this direction. Public understanding and commitment are the basic conditions for real democracy.

10. Governments should make a modest appraisal of their capacity for social rehabilitation. In trying to do everything, they will destroy the individual initiative that is their greatest resource, and may aggravate situations they wish to improve.

11. Like many other people, we wonder whether the solution to many problems—including poverty—does not lie in the elimination of the close relationship between work and income. Is it possible for everyone to be employed, and will it be possible in centuries to come?

Abortion, contraception and homosexuality are excellent means of avoiding a crowded labour market, but they could lead us to extinction rather than equilibrium. Is it not time for a thorough revision of the standards by which we live, and the introduction of a guaranteed annual income?

12. Present circumstances are so unlike anything else in the history of mankind, and they change so quickly that we must be prepared to question all our institutions, rather than protect the established order.

The fact that members of the Senate of Canada have visited Saint-Roch is doubtless the result of a fairly radical reappraisal of that body's practices. Both in their discussions and—in particular—in their actions, ordinary citizens and government leaders, rich and poor alike, must be ready to discover and explore new avenues.



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament

1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE

ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 67

WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 2, 1970

WITNESSES:

The Canadian Institute for the Blind: Mr. Bruno Thériault, Executive Director.

The Edmundston Chamber of Commerce: Mr. Roger Guimond, President.

Conseil régional d'aménagement du nord-ouest (CRANO) (The Northwest Regional Development Council): Mr. Laurent Comeau, Director; Mr. André Boudreau, Director; Mrs. Alfred Basque, Tracadie, N.B.; Rev. Yvon Sirois, Parish Priest of Tracadie; Mr. Claude Boucher; Mr. Guy Savoie; Mr. and Mrs. Ernest Thibault.

APPENDICES

"A"—Brief submitted by the Canadian Institute for the Blind.

"B"—Brief submitted by the Conseil Régional d'Aménagement du Nord-Ouest (CRANO).

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the Affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—

Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate.

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—

Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

WEDNESDAY, September 2, 1970.

Edmundston, N.B.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*), Eudes, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand and Quart —(8).

In attendance: His Worship René Morin, Mayor of the City of Edmundston, Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

The Canadian Institute for the Blind:

Mr. Bruno Thériault, Executive Director.

The Edmundston Chamber of Commerce:

Mr. Roger Guimond, President.

Conseil régional d'aménagement du Nord-Ouest (CRANO)
(The Northwest Regional Development Council):

Mr. Laurent Comeau, Director;

Mr. André Boudreau, Director;

Mrs. Alfred Basque, Tracadie, N.B.;

Rev. Yvon Sirois, Parish Priest of Tracadie;

Mr. Claude Boucher;

Mr. Guy Savoie;

Mr. and Mrs. Ernest Thibault.

The following briefs were ordered to be printed as appendices to these proceedings:

"A"—Brief submitted by the Canadian Institute for the Blind

"B"—Brief submitted by the Conseil Régional d'Aménagement du Nord-Ouest (CRANO)

At 12.30 p.m. the Committee adjourned until Thursday, September 3, 1970, at 9.00 a.m.

ATTEST:

Georges-A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

September 2, 1970.

Edmundston, New Brunswick

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9 a.m.

Senator Edgar A. Fournier (Deputy Chairman) in the Chair.

The Deputy Chairman: We have the pleasure this morning to have with us the Mayor of our City, His Worship, Monsieur Roger Morin. The Chairman and myself have had the opportunity to sign the Golden Book. The Mayor, Mr. Morin, is going to say a few words of welcome to us.

Without making any further announcements, I would now like to call upon His Worship the Mayor.

Mr. Roger Morin, Mayor, Edmundston, New Brunswick: Senator Fournier, honorable members of the Committee: It gives me pleasure to welcome you to our little city of Edmundston. I think you are going to see that there's poverty here, as in other places, places where there is no "hand employment" as we say around here; in Brandon, Manitoba, there isn't any; here there's a little.

I want to welcome you honourable members from this committee over to the capital city of the republic of Madawaska. This is quite an honour for us to receive such a gathering and you will find here that poverty is on the map.

I am just back from the City of Brandon in Manitoba which has no unemployment at this moment but here, we do have it. I hope that his committee will be able to come up with some suggestions to do something about this. You are very welcome here and I hope that your stay will be pleasant.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, Mr. Mayor.

Members of the committee we have the pleasure this morning to have with us Mr. Brueau Thériault who represents the Canadian Institute for the Blind. I ought to tell you also that we have simultaneous translation with the aid in the other corner. So you can speak freely, in English or in French, because someone is translating it. As I said yesterday, this is the most bilingual province, the most bilingual city in Canada, because here the greatest part of the population is bilingual, especially in the French population.

So, you can talk in either of the two languages.

As I told you yesterday the task force on the White Paper on the provincial level was here two weeks ago and some of the briefs that were supposed to be presented to us were presented to the task force so it kind of makes it a little gap in our programme. Mr. Thériault, I'd like to tell you that you are meeting the members of the Committee; on my side, here at my left, you have Senator Innan, who is a lady from Prince Edward Island; Senator McQuergusson, who is a lady from Fredericton, Senator McGrand, the former Minister of Health who is also from Fredericton. After that, we have at the end of the table, Senator Quart from Quebec City, Senator Eudes from Montreal, Senator Hastings from Calgary in Alberta, and then quite close to you, Senator Croll who comes from Toronto.

Mr. Thériault is one of the few I would say in the whole world who I would say has achieved great things as a blind man. He has been blind since he was very very young. He has two glass eyes and he doesn't see anything.

Now, this morning Mr. Thériault walked about a mile from his home to his office and his office is almost about a quarter of a mile on top of the hill and he came here on his own. I saw him coming here and he climbed up the stairs and walked right through here with no trouble at all. You can see him walking the streets most any time going from one street to another, making the street corners and the sidewalks all over the city without much problem. He goes to the post office and is a member of many many clubs and never misses a meeting and never has any help. He has no dog and just uses a white cane so he has to be the dog in this case.

Mr. Thériault has the help of all of the public here and we think very highly of him. He has spent all his life, all his spare time working for the blind.

He is a member of the provincial executive here and holds an office in this city and like many other institutions with Mr. Thériault, it is always a problem of having more money and believe me, he does deserve it.

You will notice that he will read his brief of which we have a copy in English here—he will read it in his own braille in which he can read fluently in French or English. Well, Mr. Thériault, you can go ahead now, just remain seated, I want you to be quite at ease. You are going to give us a few explanations about your brief, of which we have copies here; after that, we are going to ask you a few little questions,

perhaps we can help you, and so on; that's where you can give us the explanations that can help us.

Mr. Bruneau Thériault, Canadian National Institute for the Blind: Thank you Mr. Chairman and ladies and gentlemen. It is a pleasure to have the opportunity of speaking on the problems of the blind people and the handicap they hold.

In presenting this brief I wish to emphasize that although the information here with contained, results from my work amongst the blind people of the counties of Madawaska, Restigouche and Victoria, as Field Secretary to the Canadian National Institute for the Blind, I am in no way acting as a spokesman for this organization and am solely responsible for any statement therein. My action is that of an individual sharing the handicap of blindness in common with some 26,000 Canadians. Furthermore, although I am making use of statistics as they apply to the blind, in most instances, the difficulties encountered are common to victims of other disabilities.

According to the blindness allowance act as amended December 1st, 1963, a blindness allowance of \$75 per month is paid to a legally blind Canadian with a means test applied as follows:

A single person with no dependant whose annual income does not exceed \$1500 including the blindness allowance. A single person with dependants whose annual income does not exceed \$1980 including the blindness allowance.

A married couple, one blind, whose combined annual income does not exceed \$2,580 including the blindness allowance.

And a married couple, both blind, whose annual income, including the blindness allowance does not exceed \$2700.

In addition, 5% of the assessed valuation of a blind person's real estate property is counted as income. Thus, a blind person owning property valued at \$10,000 is penalized to the amount of \$500. For New Brunswickers there is a little more; for whereas a woman being without male support and whose income does not exceed \$3,000 per annum is granted an exemption of \$4,000 on her property, provided the assessed evaluation does not exceed \$20,000; a blind male depending on the blindness allowance of \$75 per month, and ambitious enough to own a home, pays tax on the full evaluation. Even at that, if one was to compare the standard of living of a blind person to that of a person disabled by any other handicap, on a relative scale—say—to that of comparing the lot of a Senator to that of a labourer one might assume that it pays to be blind—for the disability allowance allows an individual a per annum income of \$900 if

single and \$1800 if married, but if he or she earns a penny, the individual in question is considered to be no longer disabled, and therefore, the allowance is suspended.

It is therefore evident, that the only solution is the establishment of a handicap allowance free of the means test, the purpose of which would be to compensate for the economic hardships which would accompany any handicap. For example, at present, the Canadian National Institute for the Blind is in the process of opening new catering outlets in the Edmunston district for the purpose of employing blind people. In one instance, employment would be available for one blind person and several sighted people for three hours a day, five days a week. It is easy enough for a sighted person to accept part-time employment, but in the case of a blind girl ready to take this job, not only will she be forfeiting a blindness allowance, she will also have the added expenses of transportation as she will not be able to get to work by herself especially in winter.

In one Canadian city, a deaf-blind girl works in a perfume factory. The only way she can get to and from work is with the use of a guide dog which is an added expense. Many girls in wheelchairs are top notch stenographers, but they must bear the added expense of taxi fares as it is not possible for them to make use of public transportation facilities.

Some 2,000 blind Canadians are earning their living today with the help of the Canadian National Institute for the Blind. A handicap allowance free of the means test would make it possible for them and many other handicapped people to compete on a more equal basis on the labour market.

Note—that a good proportion of the added income would be returned in income tax.

The frustration of blindness does not lie in only knowing the sun by its heat on one's face the green of summer by the rustling grass under one's feet, or the colours of autumn by the sound of falling leaves, but in the realization that those elected representatives who callously vote themselves a retirement pension of \$3,750 per year after six years in Parliament—ignore completely the welfare of those who have put their trust in them as long as the distress of these Canadians does not constitute a political factor.

Note—that the principal of a handicap allowance free of the means test could easily form the basis for an expanded programme of assistance to the under privileged. I am not asking for charity, but I am asking for "Chance in Life" for those Canadians who, although handicapped, also have a right to "Freedom from Want."

Mr. Chairman, may I make two corrections. The blind people in Canada number 27,000 instead of 26,000—27,000 plus. Furthermore I mentioned a girl as having the use of a guide dog to get to work. Unfortunately we found that it was not feasible.

Thank you very much ladies and gentlemen.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Mr. Thériault, for your fine presentation. Now we are going to ask you a few questions.

Mr. Thériault: That's fine.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator Hastings has the first question.

Senator Hastings: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman.

Mr. Thériault I was very interested in your comments whereas you state a single handicapped person who receives nine hundred per year which in effect is a guaranteed annual income which is one of the recommendations we have received time and again as one of the solutions to the problem of poverty, so we do not have some Canadians receiving a guaranteed annual income.

Now, you stated that if he earns money the allowance is suspended. Now let me ask you this. If he earns—he is receiving \$75 a month. If he earns \$25 or has the possibility of employment at \$25, is it completely suspended if he makes that job?

Mr. Thériault: If he is a handicapped, he is no longer a handicapped because he earns money. Therefore, he is not a total handicapped and consequently the allowance is suspended.

Senator Hastings: The total 75 is suspended?

Mr. Thériault: That is right.

Senator Hastings: One of the criticisms of the people against a guaranteed annual income is that everyone will quit work and simply accept the guaranteed annual income.

Mr. Thériault: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Now, if he could earn—say he is receiving 75 a month and he has an opportunity for a job at 50 and the guaranteed annual income would only be reduced 25—that it would only be reduced one dollar for every two he earns. In your experience would a man take the job or would he stay home or the 75?

Mr. Thériault: He would stay home for the 75 for the simple reason that in order to take the job, he would have expenses and the total benefits for him certainly wouldn't be worthwhile and that is why I am asking for a handicapped allowance free of the means test for

the simple reason that a handicapped person has added expenses as I have explained.

Senator Hastings: Yes.

Mr. Thériault: And that is the reason I want those people to have it in order to compete with sighted people or people without handicaps.

If they had an allowance that would permit them to overcome the extra expenses of a handicap then they could compete. We have so many. For example, in my organization blind people that are willing to work they cannot because as soon as they start to work their blindness allowance is suspended as soon as they earn a certain amount, beyond, as I explained there according to the Act of 1963 which means that those people are reduced to a continuous margin of poverty.

Senator Hastings: Let me ask you if he had an opportunity for employment at \$100 a month.

Mr. Thériault: If he had \$100?

Senator Hastings: What you are suggesting is a basic allowance of the pension plus he is free to earn any amount above that level?

Mr. Thériault: That is right and any additional income would be deducted by income tax the same as any of you. What I am asking for is that a handicapped allowance be permitted or paid to handicapped people in order to compensate for their handicap so that they can compete on the labour market.

Senator Hastings: To equalize the opportunities?

Mr. Thériault: To equalize the opportunity to overcome the hardship of the added expenses of a handicapped. For example, I travel all the time. I travelled in three counties and I am on the road. I need help. I can do a great deal of the work myself and I can get into different places. If I have been there once, I can get there a second time. However, there are circumstances that I cannot cope with. I need the help of people. I need the help of bellboys. I need the help of the waiters so I tip them extra. Why? Those people are doing it because they want to do it but I feel that I owe them extra because they are giving me special attention.

In many cases where I would walk to a certain place, I have to use a taxi. It cost me \$1,000 just last month to paint my house and if I had my sight I would have paid for the paint and painted it myself. There are expenses every day that handicapped people have to face that you people with sight do not have to.

Now, the only way of course that you would be able to understand the difficulties would be by being blind yourself which I don't want you. I don't want you blind.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Thériault, we understand the difficulties as they exist but the Blind Act of 64 has now been incorporated under the Canada Assistance Act. It is part of the Canada Assistance Act.

Mr. Thériault: And I do not want that.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, whether you want it or not—but it is under the Canada Assistance Act. That is true.

Mr. Thériault: That is right.

The Deputy Chairman: Now under the Canada Assistance Act a person who is on welfare who takes a job, is entitled to deduct the expense of transportation and also some incidental expenses before they make deductions. That is what you were talking about?

Mr. Thériault: Yes.

Mr. Thériault: Well the blindness allowance is still in effect.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes, the \$75.

Mr. Thériault: The \$75 is still in effect.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes but it is incorporated in the Canada Assistance Act as I indicated.

Mr. Thériault: That's right.

The Deputy Chairman: And under the Canada Assistance Act the \$75 is included. There are other allowances too and they make provisions for extraordinary expenses in order to allow them to earn. I mean, what Senator Hastings was getting at is this. If a man earns \$50 a week—

Mr. Thériault: That's right.

The Deputy Chairman: As an extra and he had \$30 expenses, only \$20 would come into calculation.

Mr. Thériault: Yes that is quite so but according to the Blindness Allowance Act, as I explained here . . .

The Deputy Chairman: Yes, I know.

Mr. Thériault: And that is the way it stands.

The Deputy Chairman: But that isn't my understanding of its interpretation.

Mr. Thériault: Well, I have been working for the last 20 years.

The Deputy Chairman: And you say that there are no deductions—the question he asked you was that the minute you start to earn, you are off the allowance?

Mr. Thériault: No.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, that was what the question was.

Mr. Thériault: What I was speaking there about was according to the amended act of 1963, December 1st, you know the different categories.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Thériault: And that is what it was. Now, for example, a single person would be allowed a total earning, including the allowance of \$1500 per year which would mean that he would have the right to earn an extra \$50 per month.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes. That is different than the answer you gave before.

Mr. Thériault: In which way was it different?

Senator Hastings: You were saying that it was completely suspended.

Mr. Thériault: You were speaking there about the handicap allowance and that is different. The handicap is a disability allowance. The disability allowance gives you an income of \$900 per year but if you earn you are not considered disabled and therefore you are off it. This is not the same thing as a blindness allowance.

The Deputy Chairman: But you don't deal with a disability allowance. You deal only with the blind person.

Mr. Thériault: I deal only with the blind but I also know about the others.

The Deputy Chairman: But there is such a thing under the Act as a partial disability. I may not be partial blindness but a partial disability where they permit them to take a job and allow them to earn extra subject to certain conditions.

Mr. Thériault: Have you read the Act?

The Deputy Chairman: Oh, many many times. I was in Parliament when it was passed so I know the Act pretty well. I know the interpretations on the Act which is more important than the Act.

Mr. Thériault: Unfortunately, in many cases the interpretation is the big factor.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes and that is why say it is more important than the Act.

Senator Hastings: I just wanted to ask the witness why he was so definite about or quite vehement about The Canada Assistance Act. Senator Croll said that the blind people come under the Canada Assistance Act and you were quite vehement in your reply. Why?

Mr. Thériault: Because what I want—I don't want the blind people to be on assistance. I want the blind people to compete. Now under the assistance you are still being supported by government grant aren't you? You are being supported by the Government and that isn't what I want. I want the blind people, the handicapped people in order to compete to have a given allowance each month to make up for their handicaps, their hardship costs—the economic hardship costs because as I have explained, our people want to work. If they want to work, they have to overcome an extra load, an extra economic load because of their handicap.

Senator Hastings: What you are asking for—let's call it an equalized grant . . .

Mr. Thériault: Well, you can call it anything you want. I will call it a handicap allowance.

Senator Hastings: A handicap allowance or equalized grant. It doesn't make any difference what we call it.

Mr. Thériault: Whatever you call it.

Senator Hastings: Do you feel there is a stigma to assistance?

Mr. Thériault: No, not as such but that isn't what I mean. What I mean is I don't want the blind people or any handicapped person as far as that goes, to be supported to the extent that they have no initiative. I want them to have an assistance to allow them to have enough initiative to earn a decent living.

The Deputy Chairman: Isn't there enough possibilities now if a blind person goes out and earns money he gets the benefit of more than is \$75?

Mr. Thériault: Well, I have never had a blindness allowance and I never even applied for it.

The Deputy Chairman: I see.

Mr. Thériault: But the thing is for many—we could for example—I was mentioning a girl where that we could give work to for three hours a day for five days a week.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Thériault: Now, if she takes that job you are talking about that will give her an income of over \$1500 a year but she will have additional expenses. If she had the \$75 to make up for those additional expenses she would have a reasonable incentive.

Senator Hastings: But if she went to \$1510—this job you say is going to put her over \$1500. Now, if she went to \$1510 you are not telling me that she loses the whole 1500?

Mr. Thériault: No but she loses the \$75 a month. She loses the blindness allowance.

Senator Quart: Are you requesting a compensation for a disability brought on by an act of God or by an accident. That wouldn't exactly come under assistance?

Mr. Thériault: Well actually I am not considering a handicap as an act of God.

Senator Quart: Well in a sense you were born with it.

Mr. Thériault: I do not blame my blindness on God at all.

Senator Quart: No, no, I quite understand that.

Mr. Thériault: Anyone could have a handicap.

Senator Quart: Yes.

Mr. Thériault: Which may be due—well, for example, take the thalidomide babies. Do you think that was an act of God?

Senator Quart: No.

Mr. Thériault: Actually that was a mistake of our society and therefore society should be responsible for it, not God.

Senator Quart: Oh, I don't mean to say that God is responsible. I just mentioned an act of God meaning that if you were born blind it's an unfortunate circumstance in a sense.

Senator Inman: Out of the 27,000 plus blind persons that you have mentioned, have you some idea of how many are employed?

Mr. Thériault: Some 2,000.

Senator Inman: What type of work are they generally qualified to do?

Mr. Thériault: Well for example in the Maritimes here we are developing this catering service. We operate cafeterias, canteens. We now have 69 open in the Maritimes and actually in this district we are opening three more this month and we train blind people for industry. We have a special centre in Toronto where we can train a blind person on the job, place him in industries and factories and we find them jobs as computer programmers—blind computer programmers and last year we had 169 blind people, blind students in the universities.

Senator Inman: How many?

Mr. Thériault: One hundred and sixty nine. We had one boy, 22 years old, who was not only blind but also deaf taking a course at York University and at this course, of course, we had to have someone that knew the manual alphabet in order to transfer to him the professor's lectures.

In the Maritimes we have 11 taking university this year and we have an economic specialist in Ottawa—a total blind man working in the office in Ottawa. We have blind people in all sorts of employment.

Senator Inman: There are not too many restrictions then as to employment?

Mr. Thériault: Well generally speaking . . .

Senator Inman: Generally speaking?

Mr. Thériault: Well generally speaking it depends very much on the capability of the blind person of course. It is just like the rest of the population but any blind person wishing to learn or having not too many other handicaps of course, has the opportunity to learn and we would help to see to it that he gets work.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Thériault am I right when I say that I heard somewhere that Madawaska County has the highest per capita number of blind than all of the rest of Canada?

Mr. Thériault: Across Canada, yes.

The Deputy Chairman: How many blind people do we have in Madawaska?

Mr. Thériault: We have 111. I might say that this perhaps looks worse than it is. When we started the work of the CNIB in Madawaska in 1950, we had 212. I didn't shoot one of them but we have reduced it to 111. We not only work with the blind but we work with prevention. Most of the money that we raise goes into prevention of blindness. I would rather help a sighted person to keep his sight than help a blind person.

Senator McGrand: Well, my question has certainly been answered. I know now how many there are in Madawaska but how many are there in Madawaska, Victoria and Restigouche?

Mr. Thériault: There is 111 in Madawaska, 105 in Restigouche and 39 in Victoria. There are 1209 in New Brunswick. 2700 in the Maritimes.

Senator Fergusson: I would like to say that this is a wonderful presentation that we have had this morning and I certainly think it is a tremendous thing to know that anyone with a disability such as blind people have are able to support themselves in this way but I would like to ask you this. Are most of the blind people completely or partially blind?

Mr. Thériault: Well what we call legal blindness is a person that sees at 20 feet what you would see at 200 feet. That is legally blind.

Senator Fergusson: Well, that was my next question. I was going to ask you what legally blind meant.

The Deputy Chairman: They have some sight then?

Mr. Thériault: Yes, some guiding vision.

Senator Fergusson: They can distinguish light from dark?

Mr. Thériault: And they can get along quite easily but with that kind of vision of course they are not employable. Actually, it is difficult to say just what the proportion is of total blindness. In Madawaska I would say about 10% would be totally blind and the balance would be between that and having 20 to 20/20 vision.

Senator Fergusson: When people who are receiving the blind pension reach 65, do they get the Old Age Security as well as the blind pension?

Mr. Thériault: No, no. The blindness allowance is discontinued. Apparently they think that even when you are 65 you are no longer blind.

The Deputy Chairman: But you get more because you receive more under the Old Age Security than under your blindness?

Mr. Thériault: Yes but you are still blind.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes, but at the moment there is an increase in the amount.

Mr. Thériault: Yes, that is quite so.

Senator Fergusson: How many of the 27,000 Canadians who are blind are drawing a pension?

Mr. Thériault: Well, let's see. I would have to look it up but I could give you the category of ages.

Senator Hastings: Well, I was just wondering—how many are restricted because of blindness. Like you yourself—you are not drawing it?

Mr. Thériault: No, I have never drawn a blindness allowance.

The Deputy Chairman: We must get this thing straight. Mr. Thériault has used the term "means test." The Canada Assistance Act uses the word "means" and it isn't means at all. That is why I indicated to you that that which covers all aspects of welfare and other people make an allowance to meet their needs and is not a means test.

Mr. Thériault: I am using that term because that is what is used in the Act according to the blindness allowance.

The Deputy Chairman: But it is no longer part of it. The blindness allowance or the Blindness Act is no longer part of the Act. It was taken

ver in 66 under the Canada Assistance Act. It became part of the Canada Assistance Act in 6 and then it became a means test.

Mr. Thériault: Well, wasn't the Act rescinded?

The Deputy Chairman: It was incorporated in and became part of it along with other acts. The disability and other acts and it became a means test. I can't say how it doesn't apply as a means test because it does in the other category.

Mr. Thériault: But you still have the restriction which a means test indicates whether it is a means test or needs test. The figures I give you are still correct.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, I see where the me is rushing here. Does anyone else have any other questions?

Senator Fergusson: Do you use records and books and things like that in connection with educating the blind people or training them?

Mr. Thériault: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: A great deal and have you lots of equipment that you need?

Mr. Thériault: Well for example in our library in Toronto we have about thirty thousand volumes in braille and many other books and for our students we record whatever books they need.

Senator Fergusson: Well for instance a person who wants to read or hear a book, how would they go about it?

Mr. Thériault: Just apply to the C.N.I.B.

Senator Fergusson: Well, would they be given equipment?

Mr. Thériault: Well, they would be supplied with equipment.

Senator Fergusson: By C.N.I.B.?

Mr. Thériault: Yes, by the C.N.I.B.

Senator Inman: This blind school in Halifax. How many have you in attendance at that school at the present time?

Mr. Thériault: Last year we had one hundred and forty-one.

Senator Inman: And what ages do they go to?

Mr. Thériault: Well actually it is up to 18 but the case of a student being say grade 11 and needing another year, we try to get them to finish, to graduate if there is a possibility and as much as possible the government with us—through C.N.I.B. to get these children through high school.

Senator Inman: And they don't pay very much to go to that school?

Mr. Thériault: Well, it is under the educational department.

The Deputy Chairman: What would you say is the main cause of blindness?

Mr. Thériault: Well, actually a great proportion would be cataracts.

The Deputy Chairman: And what is the second?

Mr. Thériault: Well glaucoma is a big factor.

The Deputy Chairman: Cataracts at birth? Is that what you are saying now?

Mr. Thériault: Not necessarily. If you look at the statistics, you will find that 77.5% of the blind people are forty and over.

The Deputy Chairman: Forty and over?

Mr. Thériault: Yes.

The Deputy Chairman: That is due to cataracts?

Mr. Thériault: And glaucoma and diabetes.

The Deputy Chairman: I understood that in the main that the medical profession have been able to deal with cataracts in such a way as to almost save all sight, is that not true?

Mr. Thériault: Not necessarily. Actually 50% of the vision loss now could be saved and a good proportion of the vision with cataracts could be saved, but there are still some cases that can be.

The Deputy Chairman: But you say beyond 40 or over 40 are cataracts?

Mr. Thériault: No. From 40 up 77.5% of the blind people are aged 40 or more and between 40 and 18, you have 22.5% as the balance under 18.

Senator Inman: Well, these children in the school in Halifax, these young children—are many of those caused by accidents?

Mr. Thériault: Actually accidents only account for 1.5% of blindness.

Senator Inman: And some of them are born blind?

Mr. Thériault: Some of them are or born with defects which leads to blindness.

Senator McGrand: Now, you have a New Brunswick organization?

Mr. Thériault: We have a national organization.

Senator McGrand: Do you have a New Brunswick one?

Mr. Thériault: Well, the way it works—

Senator McGrand: There are services made available to the blind persons through your organization?

Mr. Thériault: Well the way it works is that each year we have financial campaigns through the public.

Senator McGrand: What I mean is if someone was making a donation and said "I want that to go to the blind people of New Brunswick"—can that be done?

Mr. Thériault: Well, they would just have to send it to any of the offices of C.N.I.B. and state what they wanted. We have five offices of the C.N.I.B. in New Brunswick. One in Fredericton, Edmonston, Saint John, Moncton and Bathurst.

Senator Quatt: And workshops too, have you not?

Mr. Thériault: Well, we have a residence in Saint John where we have blind people with no homes and we place them there. We also have a workshop in Halifax.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Thériault, I am very pleased that you came to present your brief; it's very interesting, and the questions were good. The results certainly won't be this afternoon or tomorrow. We're studying all the recommendations. These questions will receive quite special attention especially regarding the blind who need it the most and rest assured that all the members of the Committee think highly of you and thank you very sincerely.

Mr. Thériault: Thank you very much ladies and gentlemen.

The Deputy Chairman: Senators, we would like to have a motion. We have received a brief here from the former city engineer. He has been involved in Edmundston for many, many years and we have three or four copies.

I have read the brief and I would make a recommendation or motion that it be accepted as part of the records because to me it is a good brief.

The Chairman: I so move.

The Deputy Chairman: Now, we will go back to our schedule. The next one is the Edmundston Chamber of Commerce. The Edmundston Chamber of Commerce which, at the last minute, was unable to present its brief for the reason we all discussed; not long ago the Task Force Committee on the White Paper, which passed through two weeks before us, received a number of them...

Mr. Roger Guimond, the Secretary of the Chamber of Commerce who is here and we're going to ask Roger a little bit about the reasons why he didn't present his brief. We have asked Roger to bring us the publications of the Chamber of Commerce.

Mr. Roger Guimond (Chamber of Commerce Edmundston): As you know, senators, I am not the president. The reason for this as you probably know, the Chambers of Commerce when we do something it has to be legal and the executive and the board of directors has asked me to do this and so this is the reason because some of the members were absent and out of town. We did meet with the Department of Social Development but we didn't come up with a written brief. We are aware of the poverty in our area and we would like to do something about it and this is it.

Senator McGrand: How many people in the County of Madawaska are in poverty?

Mr. Guimond: I believe that one of my friends would be in a better position to tell you, sir. I am not aware. I believe Mr. Comeau might be aware.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, they will be coming next. Thank you very much, Mr. Guimond. Then, we have the Conseil régional du développement du Nord (Regional Council for the Development of the North) called CRANO which is well known to the ARDA people and it will be presented by Mr. Laurent Comeau. Well, Mr. Comeau...

Good Day, Mr. Comeau, and welcome.

We have a presentation here which is part in French—the first part is in French and the second addition is in English. This is one of the occasions again where we have not previously received the brief and we have come to the conclusion not long ago that we would not accept a new brief unless it was accepted ahead of time.

Now, if you are agreeable, this morning you will have a chance to look at this one. It is not in a controversial nature and CRANO is doing tremendous work in Madawaska County. CRANO is working very hard to improve the fate of our citizens and I would recommend that we accept the brief from CRANO even though we haven't read it in advance. Agreeable?

Senator Croll: Sure. May I suggest Mr. Comeau that we read that part and not the appendix.

The Deputy Chairman: Now, we won't ask you to read all that; will you explain the work you are doing; just read a few pages; we'll have some questions to ask you instead of about the work you are doing.

Mr. Laurent Comeau "Le Conseil régional du développement du Nord-Ouest (North-West Regional Development Council): New Brunswick, elected by the people to look after the sociological development of the region through popular participation.

The Deputy Chairman: What other region is the CRANO organization in?

Senator Fergusson: Could Mr. Comeau explain exactly what CRANO is?

Mr. Comeau: You'd like to be given a summary? That's difficult, because it's already summarized.

The Deputy Chairman: Right.

Mr. Comeau: It won't be long. I'd like to begin with a translation of Robert Theobald that says: "The war on poverty must be placed in its true context, if we are to win it. It must first of all be realized that the cost of the campaign against poverty is not the real problem, since we can easily find the necessary funds. The first step is to recognize that the problem of poverty is not economic, but moral, psychological and social, i.e. how to succeed in convincing citizens individually and collectively to put in the effort and take the means to overcome their problems."

Poverty is too often due to a general lack of participation in the social life. Economically, the poor individual has the feeling of being left behind while the rest of society is improving its lot and constantly progressing. This feeling must be overcome, and it is essential to obtain the active participation of the poor or of an impoverished people, otherwise the struggle is likely to be hard and unfruitful. Social animation, group social service and casework are methods for "helping people to help themselves" and should be used within comprehensive programs jointly worked out by the Department of Welfare and Health, the councils of technocrats, like CAR, and the popular participation organizations, like CRANO. It is important to this struggle "that interested citizens participate in the planning and implementation of social security measures".

Louis Beaupré

"La guerre à la pauvreté"
(The War on Poverty)

The regional development councils, by working in social participation, is suggesting participation and social information structures as one of the surest means of halting both individual, personal poverty and regional, group poverty.

The local committees, at the parish level, of formation, consultation and communication with government agencies and departments will make short work of checking the stagnation in social participation, and at the same time help reduce poverty.

The term "participation" has a meaning that goes much farther than consultation at public

hearings or special committees sitting from time to time in the region. Participation assumes a continuous current of information, mutual consultation and comprehension between the people, the government and the technocrats. (That's where I add Participation of decision-makers, Appendix 1).

It supposes first and foremost a communication structure the basis of which is the local committee. Information must constantly reach the population through its local organs. Information accumulated on the eve of a bill, when the people haven't had much time to discuss these strategies worked out by the technocrats is not a worthwhile form of consultation information and in the end constitutes a very poor form of participation.

Whence the urgent need to give the citizens of New Brunswick a program of local information, and a program of local discussions kept up through social animation.

Second part: "Education"

Without wishing to understate the existing programs of re-education for the unemployed, adult education and regional development, I think such measures are ineffective for checking poverty if an educational system really oriented to the prevention of poverty is not immediately implemented from the primary school up. How can we think of eliminating the dominant factors of poverty which are most of the time caused by ignorance of the social mechanisms and the lack of budgetary proficiency if our educational systems do not orient courses in terms of how to live oneself and how to maintain a family, in the present structures of society.

The Regards (attached pamphlet), a report on education, welfare and work in the CRANO region, prepared by the subcommittee of the Committee of Regional Administrators, says:

"A fairly large layer of our population is ignored. It is as important to teach people how to live as to teach them the rudiments of arithmetic and writing. It is important, and as soon as possible, to translate the community needs of our people into study programs."

Also, it appears obvious that the shortage of guidance services, domestic science courses, and comprehensive sex courses is one of the causes of social assistance for young married couples. We think also that marriage preparation courses should be included in the school curriculum.

Directly concerning the poor, the Regards says on page 6:

"1. that it is the poor who do not get to Grade Twelve. There is a direct link

between perseverance in school and economic and social welfare.

2. that our educational system must help the one who needs it most: the child from the poor area. At the present time nothing special is planned.

It appears, therefore, looking at two situations: 1. the school system and the poor and 2. the social system and the poor, that an urgent need for family counselling is evident. Education must be brought as quickly as possible within the reach of these people, i.e. to their homes, within the context of the needs of a family at home.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, Mr. Comeau. Do you understand English?

Senator Croll: Mr. Comeau, where do you get your funds for carrying on your work?

Mr. Comeau: CRANO gets its funds from the Department of Agriculture and rural development through the ARDA program. The budget has just been cut—I shouldn't really say cut—but cut for a while anyway until a new provincial program goes into effect.

Senator Croll: As I understand it, and you can correct me if I am wrong and I think the Committee understands it, that at the time being the budget has been eliminated. Is that correct?

Mr. Comeau: Well, from the letter we received the budget was cut until the 31st of August. We received money until the end of August and nothing was received after.

Senator Croll: That is from the provincial or federal?

Mr. Comeau: Provincial.

Senator Croll: But you also received money from the federal?

Mr. Comeau: No.

The Senator Croll: It all comes from the provincial government?

The Deputy Chairman: Yes, but the provincial gets it from the federal.

Senator Croll: And as of the 31st of August you had funds but now in September nothing has been heard of yet?

Mr. Comeau: Right.

Senator Croll: But you anticipate that they will be carrying on?

Mr. Comeau: Yes.

Senator Croll: Could I ask in this area how big a budget you have?

Mr. Comeau: Around forty or forty-five.

Senator Coll: Around forty or forty-five thousand a year?

Mr. Comeau: Yes.

Senator Croll: And how big a staff do you have?

Mr. Comeau: Four, but we get extra help from the Department of Agriculture and we have our secretaries.

Senator Croll: And where is your office.

Mr. Comeau: Here.

Senator Croll: And of the four staff that you have, are there any specially trained for the job?

Mr. Comeau: There is one social animator, one information officer, one executive director and secretary.

Senator Croll: Are there any particularly qualified people on the staff?

Mr. Comeau: Like if you are speaking of social workers—we work with the social workers of the area.

Senator Croll: Yes.

Mr. Comeau: Outside of the social animator and myself who has a background in information but I don't think there is such specially trained people to do the jobs. You can't take a regional development course in the Madawaska County in any university. The problems here have their solutions here.

Senator Fergusson: You say you have one social animator who is specially trained?

Mr. Comeau: She has no particular training as a social animator. She has done work in that field before through experience.

Senator Croll: The Young Canadians?

Mr. Comeau: No, she is a teacher.

Senator Quart: What percentage do you feel that the federal government should contribute to the provincial fund?

Mr. Comeau: I am not too familiar with that. The government is in a difficult position because it is a pilot area.

Senator Croll: Do you feel that the organization is making any headway?

Mr. Comeau: Yes.

Senator Croll: In what respect are you making an impact on the communities that

you intended to effect? In what respect? Just give us your own reaction?

Mr. Comeau: Through the local committees which we organize I think that we are getting...

I think it began with the local committees, that there is an awakening to the need for participation by the people with all the development programs that the government is suggesting or that the government can suggest. I think this movement has begun; I'm not ready to say that the government has got all the people into it, but I think that a large number of people are waking up to their own development.

Senator Croll: Do you go to the people or do the people come to you?

Mr. Comeau: Yes.

Senator Croll: You go the people?

Mr. Comeau: In what respect?

Senator Croll: In any respect.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator, they have meetings from time to time. They have monthly meetings and I have attended many of them.

Senator Croll: Well, my thought wasn't so much in that direction. I was thinking in having sort of store-front accessibility available. Do you know, if somebody has a problem—not while the meeting is on but between meetings where they can go—or would you please explain that to him.

The Deputy Chairman: He wants to know interpreting the question previously asked by Senator Croll) what you are doing for the people who have problems, who go to meetings, like meetings of several families, the people who have problems—do you solve them after that? How do you help them?

Mr. Comeau: Discussion. If someone wants to bring his problem to the local committee, it's because he wants the local committee to discuss it. Let me say that the animator doesn't take on the job of finding a solution for this or that person's individual problem. The idea of local committees isn't to solve little individual family problems. The principle is to get the people to participate in the whole development, not just a few minor problems in their own areas.

Senator Croll: What sort of problems do they bring to you?

Mr. Comeau: At the present time in the local committees, they are studying the White Paper, and social welfare. People necessarily

come with their welfare problems which are discussed in the committee and the committee along with the animator works out a recommendation for the government.

Senator Croll: The committee will make recommendations—someone will come to you with a problem say on welfare and you decide that they have a good case and something should be done about it.

Mr. Comeau: We do not decide. They decide.

Senator Croll: But you come to the conclusion that there is merit to their case. Do you reach that conclusion?

Mr. Comeau: Well, you see all the committees are self...

The Deputy Chairman: The committee decides?

Mr. Comeau: Oui. If the committee finds that the recommendation, the request regarding the problem is worthwhile, the committee asks the animator to see about drawing up the recommendation, but the animator in no way induces the committee; the animator makes no recommendation to the committee.

The Deputy Chairman: If I have a problem I don't bring it to him.

Senator Croll: No.

The Deputy Chairman: I bring it to one of the members at the committee meeting and the committee will study my problem. If they decide that the problem has merit they will recommend and then he does something.

Senator Croll: Well, that is what I was getting at. However, they will recommend to whom?

The Deputy Chairman: To him.

Senator Croll: Yes, on behalf of the committee.

Well, what do you do? When the committee tells you that they think this man has a meritorious case, what then do you do?

Mr. Comeau: The local committee isn't made for solving minor problems, if they do the way they did in studying the White Paper, this is the procedure followed in studying the White Paper: the committees study the local problems and bring in recommendations that will be submitted to CRANO; CRANO is going to take all the recommendations and submit them in a brief to the study committee on welfare.

Senator Hastings: In other words your job is to encourage and to assist the people to solve and work their own problems out?

Mr. Comeau: Yes.

Senator Hastings: You don't do anything?

Mr. Comeau: We have no solutions.

Senator Croll: You are just one person. The solution to the problem is not to tell them to solve their problems but someone has to help them solve them, don't they?

Mr. Comeau: You are correct. They also need expertise, which we can supply. We give them the means of communicating with these people.

Senator Croll: Let me give you the simplest possible case. Let me give you the case of a person, man or wife who have children and say that she is not getting enough money on welfare and she shows you she is not getting enough money on welfare and she shows the committee. What do you do?

Mr. Comeau: Well, the first thing I do is refer them to the Welfare Department and then if the committee wants to discuss her problem, we can then make a recommendation to the committee.

The Deputy Chairman: Or to the welfare?

Mr. Comeau: Or to the welfare or any other organization to find a solution.

Senator Eudes: Do you have services that can give guidance to people who don't know what social benefits they are entitled to?

Mr. Comeau: It's done automatically; it should be done automatically in the local committees. The local committee is an information structure, of course. We haven't got to the point of giving each of the local committees all the work it should be doing; that's one job they have; the structure should enable the people to consult and such information should be accessible to the local committee through the information officer or through the development agency...

Senator Eudes: So you have facilities for telling them: "You're entitled to such and such a benefit..."?

Mr. Comeau: The information office looks up the information it has to give.

Senator Inman: Mr. Comeau, you mentioned in your brief about family counselling, marriage counselling. Now in cases where perhaps a person wants to bring their private problems before a committee, who looks after that?

Mr. Comeau: This is why I am recommending family counselling at home and I don't think it's something that we can do, but I think it's something that we could recommend. I think this should be done and I think it's very urgent.

Senator McGrand: Somehow you are working and your funds come through ARDA and the regional development and so on. Now, evidently you are working with the individual and it is a necessary approach; you are taking an individual problem?

Mr. Comeau: No, to the group.

Senator McGrand: If a person has a personal problem then you get a whole group of people in that same area with that same problem then you would have a community problem.

Now, would you outline for us some of the projects that you have studied that may be of benefit for the employment of the people in this area.

Mr. Comeau: Well some of CRANO's projects must have solved some employment problems; it's hard to work out, because we have a program, but we don't measure afterwards. CRANO's adult education courses are a program that was started by CRANO, to answer your question, because of employment, but another one might be a small counselling project near St. Joseph, for families that have moved, that CRANO has helped to move. They have tried to do some counselling, and the animator would like to continue it to improve the lot of these persons.

Senator McGrand: Those people that you try to assist are they in the city or more in the rural areas like Saint François?

Mr. Comeau: St. Joseph is a small project to move a few families; St. Joseph is beside Edmundston.

The Deputy Chairman: Why were they moved?

Mr. Comeau: Some of the families had asked to move, and that's when CRANO requested...

The Deputy Chairman: But why, why were they moved there?

Mr. Comeau: Because these people lived in houses that weren't any good, in which they were very, very far from the services, and the roads weren't always open in winter.

Senator McGrand: Are they better here?

Mr. Comeau: Yes, most of them work, I think they all work—the animator is right there...

The Animator: Except the widow.

Mr. Comeau: All the people who moved are people who work, except for one who is a widow and has children in school.

Senator McGrand: Can you tell me how many people in the County of Madawaska are on welfare?

Mr. Comeau: The exact number I think, is in the REGARDS. Welfare recipients: 6297

Senator McGrand: Can you give me a bit of a break-down of the parishes. Now, I don't mean the ecclesiastical parishes, but I mean the parishes of Madawaska and where they are?

Mr. Comeau: You mean the concentrations of poverty?

Senator McGrand: Yes. We will start down the first part on this side of St. Andrews and come on up?

The Deputy Chairman: Well, before we get into that I believe we have the wrong committee. This is not the welfare people.

Senator McGrand: Oh, yes I understand.

Senator Eudes: Do you have a legal aid system?

Mr. Comeau: No, not in the CRANO Council.

Senator Quart: Mr. Comeau, you have public meetings. Are they monthly meetings, or . . .

Mr. Comeau: As often as the committee can have them.

Senator Quart: To settle the questions, and the problems, that come up, I suppose. Now, would your association be an ideal one to do service as an information center for the poor, to disseminate information to different places where they can go for direct help or to straighten out their problems?

Mr. Comeau: Yes, I think a regional information structure is certainly worthwhile, on condition that there is a provincial structure and I don't think the present provincial information structure reaches the poor or the persons

really who need information. You can have a general information structure that's a provincial structure, but isn't complete.

Senator Quart: Have you certain guidelines for the way you carry on your work? Does your regional committee here have an autonomy to give the information or whatever help you give these people? Without giving your committee any help . . . do you have a regional formula?

Mr. Comeau: The Council is independent of any provincial structure, except that the ledger . . .

Senator Fergusson: I am just wondering when problems are brought to the council do you often refer them to the . . .

Mr. Comeau: I don't think its ever happened.

Senator Croll: One final question. From your experience and from your general observations what is the top priority needs for these people?

Mr. Comeau: Education.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Comeau, how many members, how many citizens of Madawaska take part?

Mr. Comeau: It's public; all those who want to take part can take part. So it depends on the meetings. . .

The Deputy Chairman: Well, Mr. Comeau, we thank you very sincerely. We wish you success in your undertakings and we certainly hope the government will continue to help you in this readjustment period. We thank you very sincerely; it's been a great pleasure to have you here; thank you.

This brings us to the end of our meeting. The sitting is adjourned. Well, Senators, this is the end of our work this morning and the meeting is now adjourned.

The Committee adjourned.

APPENDIX A

September 1, 1970

HEARING ON POVERTY—BRIEF

In presenting this brief I wish to emphasize that although the information herewith contained, results from my work amongst the blind people of the counties of Madawaska, Restigouche and Victoria, as Field Secretary to the Canadian National Institute for the Blind, I am in no way acting as a spokesman for this organization and am solely responsible for any statement therein. My action is that of an individual sharing the handicap of blindness in common with some 26,000 Canadians. Furthermore, although I am making use of statistics as they apply to the blind, in most instances, the difficulties encountered are common to victims of other disabilities.

According to the blindness allowance act as amended December 1, 1963, a blindness allowance of \$75.00 per month is paid to a legally blind Canadian with a means test applied as follows:

A single person with no dependant whose annual income does not exceed \$1,500.00 including the blindness allowance.

A single person with dependants whose annual income does not exceed \$1,980.00 including the blindness allowance.

A married couple, one blind, whose combined annual income does not exceed \$2,580.00 including the blindness allowance.

and: a married couple, both blind, whose annual income, including the blindness allowance does not exceed \$2,700.00.

In addition, 5% of the assess evaluation of a blind person's real estate property is counted as income. Thus, a blind person owning property valued at \$10,000.00 is penalized to the amount of \$500.00. For New Brunswickers there is more; for whereas a woman being without male support and whose income does not exceed \$3,000.00 per annum is granted an exemption of \$4,000.00 on her property, provided the assess evaluation does not exceed \$20,000.00; a blind male depending on the blindness allowance of \$75.00 per month, and ambitious enough to own a home, pays tax on the full evaluation. Even at that, if one was to compare the standard of living of a blind person to that of a person disabled by any other handicap, on a relative scale—say—to that of comparing the lot of a senator to that of a laborer one might assume that it pays to be blind. For the disability allowance allows an individual a per annum income of \$900.00 if

single and \$1,800.00 if married, but if he or she earns a penny, the individual in question is considered to be no longer disabled, and therefore, the allowance is suspended.

It is therefore evident, that the only solution is the establishment of a handicap allowance free of the means test, the purpose of which would be to compensate for the economic hardship. For example, at present, the Canadian National Institute for the Blind is in the process of opening new catering outlets in the Edmundston district for the purpose of employing blind people. In one instance, employment would be available for one blind person and several sighted people for 3 hours a day, 5 days a week. It is easy enough for a sighted person to accept part time employment, but in the case of the blind girl ready to take this job, not only will she be forfeiting a blindness allowance, she will also have the added expense of transportation as she will not be able to get to work by herself especially in winter.

In one Canadian city, a deaf-blind girl works in a perfume factory. The only way she can get to and from work is with the use of a guide dog which is an added expense. Many girls in wheel chairs are top notch stenographers, but they must bear the added expense of taxi fares as it is not possible for them to make use of public transportation facilities.

Some 2000 blind Canadians are earning their living today with the help of the Canadian National Institute for the Blind. A handicap allowance free of the means test would make it possible for them and many other handicapped people to compete on a more equal basis on the labor market. Note that a good proportion of the added income would be returned in income tax.

The frustration of blindness does not lie in only knowing the sun by its heat on one's face, the green of summer by the rustling grass under one's feet, or the colors of autumn by the sound of falling leaves, but in the realization that those elected representatives who carelessly vote themselves a retirement pension of \$3,750.00 per year after six years, ignore completely the welfare of those who have put their trust in them as long as the

distress of these Canadians does not constitute a political factor.

who, although handicapped, also have a right to "Freedom from Want".

Note that the principle of a handicap, allowance free of the means test could easily form the basis for an expanded program of assistance to the under-privileged.

I am not asking for charity, but I am asking for a "Chance in Life" for those Canadians

Respectfully submitted,

J.B. Thériault,
Field Secretary

Office address:
124 Church Street,
Edmundston, N.B.

Residence address:
61 Ordonnance Street,
Edmundston, N.B.

APPENDIX B

Memorandum submitted to the Senate
Committee on Poverty, by Laurent Comeau,
information officer at CRANO, September
2, 1970, Edmunston, N.B.

"The war on poverty must be placed in its true context, if we are to win it. First of all, we must realize that the cost of the campaign against poverty is not the real problem; we can easily find the necessary funds. The first step we must take is to recognize that the problem of poverty is not an economic one, but a moral one, a psychological and social one; it is the problem of how to succeed in convincing our citizens individually and collectively of the necessity of the effort to be made and of the means to be taken to overcome their problems"(1)

Robert Theobald
NEW POLITICS, 1965

Poverty is too often due to a general lack of participation in social life. On the economic level, the poor man has the feeling of being left behind while the rest of society is bettering its condition and moving constantly forward. This feeling must be conquered, and it is essential for this to obtain the active participation of the poor or of poverty-stricken region; otherwise the struggle may turn out to be a long and not very fruitful one. Social activities, cooperative social work and casework are all methods which aim at "helping people to help themselves" and should be used within the framework of comprehensive programs drawn up jointly by the Department of Health and Welfare, councils of experts, such as the CAR, and citizens' organizations, such as CRANO. It is most important to the success of this campaign "that the citizens concerned participate in the drafting and implementation of social security measures".

Louis Beaupré
"The War on Poverty"

The regional planning councils, working in the context of the community, suggest the creation of structures providing for group participation and for information services as one of the surest methods of wiping out both individual and regional poverty.

Working at the level of the parish, the local committees providing the services of information, consultation, and communication with government departments and agencies will soon have put an end to the stagnation of active community life, and, in so doing, will be able to help reduce poverty.

The meaning of the term "participation" extends beyond the expression of a vote at public hearings where special committees sit from time to time in the region concerned. Participation implies a constant flow of information, discussion and mutual understanding between the citizens, the government and the experts. (See Appendix 1). It implies first and foremost a communications system based on the local committee. Information must reach the people regularly through their local organizations: To inform the people of a bill on the eve of its introduction, when they haven't much time to discuss the complexities of its contents, drafted by experts, is not to provide a valid form of information or consultation, and, what is more, it provides a very mediocre form of participation.

Thence follows the urgent need of getting the citizens of New Brunswick to agree on a program for local information services and for local discussions, organized within the context of social activities.

Education

Without wishing to underestimate existing programs for the retraining of the unemployed, for regular education, and for regional development, it is our belief that these programs are useless in the struggle against poverty, if an education system which is really oriented towards preventing poverty is not immediately set up, starting at the primary school level. How can we expect to eliminate the dominating factors of poverty, which are most often caused by ignorance as to how society works and how to keep a budget, if our educational programs do not provide instruction in terms of how to live as an individual and how to support a family within the present social framework.

REGARDS, (pamphlet attached), a report on education, welfare and labour in the region where CRANO operates, prepared by the sub-committee on full employment of the Committee for Regional Development, says:

"There is quite a significant layer of our population which is ignorant. It is just as important to teach people how to live as it is to teach them the rudiments of arithmetic and writing. It is important, and this as

soon as possible, to formulate the needs of our communities in a study program". Page 15.

What is more, it seems clear to us that the inadequacy of our counselling services, and of our courses in Home Economics, and the lack of any comprehensive course on sex is one of the reasons why young married couples are found on welfare. We also believe that a course of preparation for marriage should be included in the school curriculum.

As far as the poor are directly concerned, REGARDS says on Page 6:

"1. that it is the economically weak who do not finish Grade 12. There is a direct

link between continuance at school and social and economic well-being.

2. that our educational system must help the one whose need is greatest: the child of a poor family. Nothing special is planned at the present time."

It seems to us here that, from either one of two points of view: 1. the school system and the poor, 2. the social system and the poor, an urgent need of family counselling makes itself felt; we must work to make education available to these people as quickly as possible, to take it into their homes, perhaps, within the context of the needs of a family at home.



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament
1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA
PROCEEDINGS
OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE
ON
POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 68

THURSDAY, SEPTEMBER 3, 1970

WITNESSES:

The City of Campbellton: His Worship W. T. McRae, Mayor of the City of Campbellton; Mr. J. M. Harquail, Councillor; Mr. R. G. Dawson, Councillor, Chairman, Committee on Poverty; Sister M. Green, Welfare Worker.

The Chamber of Commerce of Campbellton: Mr. Roger Caron, President.
Father A. Enoil Thériault, Parish Priest of St. Jean Baptiste, N.B.

APPENDICES:

"A"—Brief submitted by The City of Campbellton.

"B"—Brief submitted by Rev. Father A. Enoil Thériault, Parish Priest of St. Jean Baptiste, N.B.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday,
October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

THURSDAY, September 3, 1970
Campbellton, N.B.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Croll (*Chairman*); Eudes, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, McGrand and Quart—(8).

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

The City of Campbellton:

His Worship W. T. McRae, Mayor of the City of Campbellton;
Mr. J. M. Harquail, Councillor;
Mr. R. G. Dawson, Councillor, Chairman, Committee on Poverty;
Sister M. Green, Welfare Worker.

The Chamber of Commerce of Campbellton:

Mr. Roger Caron, President.

On motion by Senator Inman it was agreed,

That the brief of the Chamber of Commerce would be accepted by the Committee when forwarded at a later date.

Father A. Enoil Thériault, Parish Priest of St. Jean Baptiste, N.B.

The briefs presented by the City of Campbellton and that of Rev. Father A. Enoil Thériault were ordered to be printed as Appendices "A" and "B" respectively to these proceedings.

At 11.45 a.m. the Committee adjourned until 8.00 p.m. at the City Hall of Rimouski.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

September 3, 1970,

Campbellton, New Brunswick

Senator David A. Croll (*Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Chairman: I will now call the meeting to order. This is the meeting of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty. We undertook some time ago a far-reaching study of this subject, and, as a matter of fact, the first study of its kind. There are no Canadian text books on poverty, and perhaps the only record or book on the subject in this country will be the one that comes from the study we are making. We think that our study will affect future generations and reach out to new horizons.

I am going to turn the meeting over to my deputy, Senator Edgar Fournier. I wanted to say something first that neither he nor any other member of the committee could say.

We have been most fortunate to have a hard-working and dedicated membership on this committee. We have also been fortunate to have on it three exceptionally fine people from the Province of New Brunswick. Senator Edgar Fournier has been the deputy chairman, and he has worked untiringly.

Senator Muriel Fergusson is of the same breed, as is Dr. McGrand, showing devotion, concern, love and affection and a great loyalty to New Brunswick.

I don't have to say anything about the deputy chairman. This is his own constituency and so we try to honour him in some way by indicating to him how much we appreciate the work he has been doing so tirelessly.

Muriel Fergusson, of course, is a household word in this province, and wherever social matters are discussed in the Dominion of Canada her name comes forward. She is a great lady.

Dr. McGrand is a very understanding man with a great compassion and has had a long association with this province.

These are the kind of people who give public service a good name, and for that I

took the opportunity to say what needed to be said. Moreover, out of consideration for the work they are doing and out of respect for them as well as the people of New Brunswick, we have given New Brunswick a great deal of our time.

We spent a couple of days in Saint John and some time in Moncton. A group went up to the Newcastle-Bathurst area and then came back to Edmundston and Campbellton.

New Brunswick has received about twice as much time as any other province has, but there was a great deal to learn in this province and I will indicate to you something that came out of taking a look.

While I am at it I want to say to the mayor and to the councillors who are here today how much we appreciate the welcome they gave us last night and the meeting we had with many concerned citizens. It was a delightful evening and gave us an opportunity to meet and talk to them on a person-to-person basis. We then enjoyed a tour under the expert guidance of Councillor Harquail. He showed us what there was to show on the plus side—and there was some on the minus side too—and we saw that constructive progress in the city was obvious.

There were signs of construction, and wherever you see construction in any city it is encouraging. Things are being built, and a 136 public unit housing project is not to be sneezed at. It is a very good record but I hope it is just the beginning.

We also saw some blights. It wasn't pretty and in this day and age it's not acceptable. This is not a criticism of you people here, but it is one of the jobs we have to consider very seriously. I was very much impressed when I was told that last Halloween you had a wonderful bonfire and burned down a lot of shacks instead of trying to renovate them.

It is now only sixty days away from another Halloween and time for another bonfire, and I promise that if you invite me I will come and watch it.

I will just say one more thing before turning the meeting over to the Senator Fournier. We have been moving around the country. We have one or two more places to visit but it is nearly the end. We have formulated some ideas, which are starting to formalize in our minds. We have been impressed by the reaction of people as we have travelled about.

Yesterday in Edmundston I asked a young fellow this question, "If you had your choice as to how you would go about curing poverty, what would be your top priority?"

Last night when we talked to these people in the homes you took us to and they were asked "What are you doing for tomorrow; what are you trying to provide for?" the answer was to keep these kids in school as long as they possibly could. That is one of the most heart-warming things we have heard since coming to this province.

In other provinces we have heard that the poor get the worst teachers, the worst schools and the worst accommodation. That isn't true in this province, and it is to your credit. Some changes have been made that are very useful.

These are things that one has to learn but you soon realize that education alone will not do the trick. They have to have some things with it. They will have to have a maintenance income in order that they will be able to continue with their education.

Let us just take a minute and talk about the things that the poor are faced with, how helpless they are and how much they need your help. Let us for a moment take a look at pollution. The poor, of course, suffer from pollution of the human being whereas the other pollution is of the environment. There is pollution in every province. The International Nickel Company in Sudbury is a great international organization. In Hamilton they have the greatest steelworks in Canada, another great organization. You don't have to go very far from here to find three great papermills: the International, the Fraser, and the Irving. This sort of thing is true right across the country.

These great organizations are receiving tax concessions and tariff concessions, but they are polluting the air and the water and they are killing the fish. They are doing harm to our environment, and our poor and our near poor are paying. After this pollution is created, the government has to clean up and we find that the same people have to pay again for cleaning up. That is the kind of a bind

that the poor and near poor find themselves in all over the country.

The cards are stacked against them. This committee must see to it that the cards are unstacked. We will have to speak loud and clear. We have great hope that the country will be listening to us and realizing that our effort is a genuine one.

Now, I will turn the meeting over to my very good friend and deputy, the former Member of Parliament, the Honourable Edgar Fournier.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Senator Croll. I hope you people of Campbellton now realize that this committee means business. There is just no other way if you are under the leadership of Senator Croll.

First, I would like to compliment the City of Campbellton for this brief. Actually, it is not a brief but an inventory. I glanced at it last night and again this morning. I am very proud of the City of Campbellton, and I will go back and show this to the Mayor of Edmundston and say "Look at this." I believe that any city that would take the time to do something like this is bound to show progress, an example of which we saw last night. There is no doubt in my mind that in the last three of four years Campbellton has been a boom city.

There has been CNR expansion here which has promoted work and employed many people and brought in a lot of money. Your General Hospital has been expanded and you have other new buildings, including your library and this Centennial Hall. We are staying in a new motel, and everywhere you go in Campbellton there is a change. This has all taken place in Campbellton during the last five years, and you are to be complimented.

[Translation]

We have simultaneous translation, for those who can't express themselves easily in English, we have all the facilities here, and the necessary personnel, so that, if you want to ask your questions in French and discuss them in French, we will be able to understand each other very very well, as we have the necessary facilities for this.

[Text]

Mr. Mayor, without any more remarks, I will turn the meeting over to you.

His Worship W. T. McRae (Mayor, City of Campbellton): On behalf of the City of Camp-

bellton, I would like to welcome the Senate Committee on Poverty into our city. I wish there was a Senate committee on why we are so prosperous or on our industry to find out exactly what is happening, but it is the other way around, but welcome. This brief was given to each member of the committee and I will just go over some of the highlights if I may.

This morning I looked up in the Good Book, a copy of which every person has in his home, and the word "poverty" was mentioned twelve times. So, it is not a new word, even in Campbellton.

This brief is presented on behalf of the City of Campbellton and was prepared by some of our citizens who formed a special committee for this purpose.

One quote from the White Paper on Social Development tabled in the New Brunswick Legislative Assembly reads:

We believe the families to be the fundamental unit in society. Steps must be taken to help preserve the family in its adjustment to modern urban life.

We said that one look is as good as a thousand words and these three things are something to remember. One of our cures leading to the answers to this problem is low cost housing. It has been demonstrated and is a successful approach in our city.

The City of Campbellton, along with participation from the New Brunswick Corporation and Central Mortgage and Housing Corporation, undertook a land assembly project in the Andersonville area which you visited.

This was the burning of the 37 homes last Halloween and these people were moved into the new 104 units which were completed and we have a record of 26 families moved, out of these 37, some bought homes, some moved out of town but 26 moved into homes provided amongst the low cost housing.

Sixteen adjusted excellently. In four poor families, one of the parents was an alcoholic but their children appreciated the new home. Of these four alcoholics, one of these parents was greatly improved. He has taken a job—he had a hard time but he has appreciated this fact and has improved since he got into a house. The overall result is most encouraging to see. We certainly go along with the attitude of the provincial government to provide this low cost housing.

Now, in the area visited, St. Albert, we believe we can accomplish as much as we did in the Andersonville area if we do have the same chance to get more houses and acquire this property for re-sale. In that St. Albert area which we visited last night there were 119 buildings that had to be demolished and those who visited the place don't have to ask why. If the Maltais family moved into a new home at low cost and if he doesn't work, he would pay one week out of a month's salary for rent and I'm sure that this man would not begrudge that whatsoever.

It would save his family. It is mentioned here that payments to foster parents is sixty to seventy-five dollars a month in Ontario so why shouldn't the natural parent get help if he needs it of at least fifty dollars per child.

I myself get seven dollars a child as you well know and it is very stupid to give me seven dollars if you only give Mr. Maltais seven dollars also.

The income tax should be designed to help these people instead of taking things from them. Mr. Maltais in this case would not be penalized when he works and makes so much money per week and then have to wait a year to get some of it back.

And the welfare—I think you have heard enough about welfare payments that people who can work a little should be allowed to supplement their welfare and not let the welfare supplement them.

We could put these people to work on all sorts of things. The sides of our roads could be sprayed with chemicals. I think the people could be put to work and made to feel that they are contributing to the well being of their country instead of sitting at home getting handouts.

A survey of the people living in the 104 houses shows that the lower the income, the more the families are subject to family break-up and attached to the brief is a confidential report of families in different incomes—up to \$100 then to \$300 and \$400 and then to \$600.

Families classed as multi-problems 54 per cent in the first low income bracket and then when you get up over the \$450 mark there is a zero percentage and so there you will see the income does have a great meaning on how a family and the children behave in society.

The poverty children are the ones who suffer. We have taken the Maltais family and given them a house and they have enough

money now to buy some food and the next things are education in which Senator Croll said in New Brunswick it is not hard to get education in schools but when you move a family out of a two room place into something else—how do they behave?

This family now needs a training counsellor and these should be provided by the government. They need somebody to teach them how to budget the money that Mr. Maltais is going to earn. What he should buy—potato chips or potatoes. How he can change his job, how he can get retraining? Every day problems that we have are really great problems for a family that moves from a two room house into one of our new low rental houses.

When a person gets down it is very hard to up-grade themselves. This example I will read to you is a true example.

A family at poverty level recently had the unfortunate experience of losing their son, due to an automobile accident. The father had co-signed at a finance company and there remained a balance of \$83.00 owing.

This family was just existing and, while they were honest, their income was small. On top of funeral expenses—and lord know they are heavy enough, they were afraid they would be responsible for the balance of the account and the finance company.

They took a cab into the city and were advised that the balance would be covered by life insurance and all they had to do was have three copies of the proof of death completed by the doctor.

The doctor in question lived in another area so they took a cab to that area where they were advised that there was a fee of \$9.00 to fill out these three forms.

At this time, after paying the cab, they did not have the funds to get the forms completed.

A family counsellor in this case, could have advised these people.

A family councillor would be very, very helpful to people like this.

Mr. Maltais has a steady job. Low interest loans providing essentials for his home, beds, a little furniture to sit on and a washer machine.

A counsellor would advise him and set up his budget and he could acquire the funds through a bank loan at low interest rates because of his poverty existence.

Another fact. The Campbellton area is designated as a special area under different federal programs and it has had a used car market higher than any other in this province for over ten years. If Mr. Maltais could afford a car he would pay a high price. There again are three or four points where a family counsellor might be able to assist people at this level.

One of the Maltais children appears to be deaf. If this was properly looked after when the child was younger I am sure it could be corrected.

Improved medical service to the people of this level of income should be in the homes. Nutritionists and physiotherapists would certainly benefit all people in this class.

Now we come to the bone of contention in the Campbellton area and that is industrial promotion. In order that Mr. Maltais could get a good paying job we need industry and not just seasonal work. We have a trade school here which will open up this fall. Mr. Maltais will probably be trained there, but where will he go? Will he go to the big city where he will get lost and become another poverty case in the big city?

If there was an industry here, he could stay in this area.

We feel that the incentives presently provided under the Department of Regional Economic Expansion, along with local initiative, attract industry to our area. We do feel, however, that one aspect of industrial promotion requires mention at this time.

Once a community or region has an industrial development board, which is active such as the North Shore Industrial Development Commission in our area, the federal government should contribute to the salaries of a full time industrial promotion officer.

When you compete for industry, you are competing with every community in North America and volunteer or part-time people cannot fulfil this task.

Another aspect of industrial promotion is low cost transportation. In order for us to compete, it is imperative that the federal government continue to adopt measures that will ensure realistic transportation costs.

Ladies and gentlemen, we have tried by using the Maltais family to point out how we have improved the plight of the poverty stricken in our area.

Just multiply this example by one, by ten, by tens of thousands and we are aware of the tremendous task you have before you.

We cannot help but be disturbed and upset when we hear of the tremendous amounts of money being allotted by our federal government in aid and grants to other countries.

We don't deny this whatsoever. We have built beautiful schools in the Caribbean but we feel there is a tremendous need here in our area and in summing this up we feel that the areas of concern to provide for the increased standard of living for those at poverty level are the following:

1. Adequate housing.
2. Provision of income through increased family allowances to those at the poverty levels.
3. Education, both the children and the parents.
4. Family counselling.
5. Low interest loans, guaranteed by the federal government.
6. Improved home medical services.
7. Industrial promotion.

Than you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Your Worship. Have any of your councillors anything to add?

Mr. J. M. Harquail, Councillor, City of Campbellton: The only comments that I would make, Senator Fournier, is that possibly we have a chance to make some comment after you people have had a chance to question. Such things as urban renewal and communications and this type of thing and getting our problems across to the various levels of government.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you. All right now. We will follow the regular procedure. We will have the question period and then we will have some further comments.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, I just wish to make a question by way of an observation and it is the point you are trying to make in the conclusion of your brief where you say you are upset and disturbed when you hear of the amount of money being granted to foreign countries.

I know the point you are trying to make yet I would have thought that you possibly

could have found other areas of government expenditures more valid than to criticize the aid that we are giving to foreign countries.

Poverty is not confined to Canada. Poverty is world wide and there seems to be an alienation that Canada recognize the need in foreign countries, we will have little success in solving poverty at home.

If we are unconcerned of the developing nations of the world and their need to lift themselves out of poverty, we won't be very successful in solving poverty at home. What we are faced with and what we are trying to do I think on this Committee is a change of attitude both by the giver and the receiver.

Both by the have's and the have not's. A change of attitude and that is that the have's do have a responsibility in giving an opportunity to the have not's and that applies world-wide as well as in Canada.

If we adopt the attitude that I have no concern for a developing nation, then I can just as easily apply it as an Albertan say I have no concern for the Maritimes which we are trying to break down but that as an Albertan and as a have province I am concerned and have a responsibility to a have not province and as a person I suppose who is a have, I have a responsibility that I have got to accept to the have not's of this nation and I just don't think your criticism, Your Worship, is valid in being upset and disturbed with Canada, as a nation, distributing grants and assistance to developing nations.

There are many other areas I would have thought with respect to federal government expenditures that you could have criticized other than that area.

Mr. McRae: As I said, we do recognize that there is a need but we feel there is a tremendous need in our own area. We don't deny the other needs whatsoever. We don't deny the need for a new school in the Caribbean or the teachers that teach them. We don't deny houses in this area if it will teach them how to live and how to adjust themselves.

We don't deny this at all.

Senator Hastings: But there is a need to help the developing countries?

Mr. McRae: Yes.

Senator Hastings: Do you not think that we have a responsibility?

Mr. McRae: I should think so.

Senator Fergusson: I would just like to express my appreciation myself for the very warm welcome that the Committee has received from the City of Campbellton and I think we are all greatly impressed by the deep concern shown by the members of council and the mayor for the people who are in need or the citizens who are actually in need and some of these things you have done have impressed us greatly.

One of the things however I would like to ask you about is when you refer to family allowances and in your summary you say that you think you should have increased family allowances for those at the poverty level. Do you think that should be granted on a means test basis and how much have you in mind?

Mr. McRae: Well, six or seven dollars a month and they might be able to buy a pair of shoes. This was put into effect I think some twenty years ago and it hasn't changed as yet to cover the cost of increases for a family.

Senator Fergusson: Yes I know, but do you think it should be based on a means test?

Mr. McRae: Based on a means test and the fathers earnings at the end of a year.

Senator Fergusson: Don't you realize that there would be a tremendous amount of administration to do and expense to such a thing?

Mr. McRae: It could be, but doesn't all income tax go through a computer where you would just push a button and get out three thousand, four thousand or whatever you want and that those people could be taken from there?

Senator Fergusson: Well, that is the way you think it should be done?

Mr. McRae: Yes, through the father's income.

Senator Quart: As my colleague, Senator Fergusson has said, I think we have been very warmly received in the Province or New Brunswick and as our Chairman has said we have spent a tremendous amount of time—more time in the Province of New Brunswick. We went up to Bathurst and we did see situations like you showed us last evening.

Now, having regard to family councillors I think it is a must for these families—and I have had occasion to chat with quite a few of your councillors and yourself.

If a family on welfare in the province earns more than twenty dollars, then I believe anything over and above that amount is deductible. I wonder if it would be advisable if it could be worked out in some way or another on some level—it would be I suppose on a provincial level—welfare is provincial here, is it not?

Mr. McRae: Well...

Senator Quart: Well, let's say on the provincial level—that the party on welfare would be allowed to compensate very frankly that "I owe so much money, bills," to the welfare officer and "I am taking a job and I will be working as long as they keep me on but I promise to pay back out of the amount I earn—pay back the money to pay off my debts" and be very frank about it and not have to hide and in many cases the members of the family are warned not to tell welfare worker that dad is working or mother is working. Therefore, it creates a dreadful situation because first it teaches the young people to lie and become thieves and what have you by this situation. Would it not be a great help for a period, let's say five months anyway—would it not be great help if they were not cut off from welfare but could earn what they could earn and be very honest about it.

First of all pay back the bills instead of having loan sharks coming after them and then it would be good for the economy of the province and secondly by the fact that there would be an incentive to work, a motivation to work and that party might be kept on and be permanently employed and then it would take them off welfare.

What do you think of that situation?

Mr. McRae: I think it is wonderful. However, you have forgot one thing so far as I am concerned.

If that family will not take a job, I would cut the welfare.

Senator Quart: That's right.

Mr. McRae: I would think if they could get a job I think this would be a great way to supplement the welfare payments.

Senator Quart: I would certainly go along with that.

Mr. McRae: You mentioned that the children would have to lie and not tell the social worker that their mother or father was working.

I think in this summary we have 54.5 per cent are mostly problem families and the problem arises when the child is so high and it just carries on. I think this is very true.

Senator Quart: Was there any particular reason for buying the houses on Hallowe'en. Would you have liked to have been able to say the witches had done it?

Mr. McRae: Yes. However, it wasn't the witches. The people moving into them—we moved them out at 7:30 and at a quarter to eight another family would move in from nowhere.

They would move in even before we had the water and lights cut off and it reminds me very much of the village in Mexico where they build the Olympic Village. They built these big apartment buildings and took them out of their hovels and before the morning was out the hovels were filled again.

The exact same thing would happen here.

Senator Quart: I want to congratulate you for doing it, but I was just wondering whether there was any particular significance to it.

Mr. McRae: Well the fire department were out that night anyway.

Senator Fergusson: Well, if the people moved in, would they be moving from something worse?

Mr. McRae: Yes, they moved in from outside of town.

Senator Fergusson: They had been in worse conditions where they had been before?

Mr. McRae: Yes, they would have been.

Senator McGrand: You mentioned two things. Industrial expansion and you mentioned a new trade school.

Now, would you just say a few words to explain what the new trade school can do to train people in the Campbellton area and for what particular type of industry would you expect to come into Campbellton?

Mr. McRae: Industry to come through this part of the province would have to be depended on products of the country.

Senator McGrand: I agree with that.

Mr. McRae: We can import. We have a sea port and we are on the main line of the C.N.R. and we will be on the main line of the Trans-Canada.

For economic reasons we think that the product for this area, farming, lumbering, and things like that would be the best things.

Senator McGrand: You would think that—you know that New Brunswick is one of the most potential forth going countries in the world for its size. Sweden of course is a larger country than New Brunswick—it has one hundred and forty-eight thousand square miles and New Brunswick has twenty-eight thousand square miles.

They have about three and a half times the lumber area that we have but they produce ten times as much forest products as we do.

It seems to me that the future of this province is in lumber potential.

Mr. McRae: You are quite right, sir.

We have a mill in Appleton that ships out an awful lot of raw material and so why couldn't that be processed in this country and shipped out as a product instead of the raw materials?

Another industry that did come to town was electronics where the small private accounts would be for two, three or four hundred dollars and things like that should come to this town. We have proven that we have the people.

When this plant was—as we call it at peak production selling, they hired eighteen hundred people and these eighteen hundred people were recruited from this area and from this town and they were trained in a very short while and they could produce goods that were good in any part of Canada.

They might have come from the backwoods but in no time at all they had this electronic products as good as any others.

Senator McGrand: How many people are employed now?

Mr. McRae: Two hundred.

Senator McGrand: And what happened to them?

Mr. McRae: The war is not going as good as it should. They were making war products.

The Chairman: For whom?

Mr. McRae: For the Americans.

Senator McGrand: It is not an industry based on resources in the province?

Mr. McRae: It is not.

Senator Fergusson: Except for the human resources.

Mr. McRae: They did have the human resources when it comes right down to it, yes.

Senator Fergusson: If you have a product for which there is a demand, you have the human resources?

Mr. McRae: It would pay us to ship the product away because of the cost per pound of it and because of the smallness of it.

Senator Inman: Well, Mr. Chairman, I would like to join with my colleagues in thanking His Worship and his colleagues for the great hospitality we have received on behalf of the committee.

I would like to also comment on Page 3. On the top of the page you mention:

Mortgage and Housing Corporation, as well as the New Brunswick Housing Corporation should consider families who cannot be offered public housing.

I was wondering what disqualifies them from the public housing?

Mr. McRae: If they earn over five thousand dollars a year.

Senator Inman: I see.

Mr. R. G. Dawson, Councillor, City of Campbellton: Senator, it is the larger families that we are concerned about and Central Mortgage and Housing standards require—they have a standard of two per bedroom and they are only building four bedroom houses and if you have any families with over eight people, we just can't provide the homes.

We point out here that there are sixteen families in the St. Albert district that have over this number of people involved and therefore we haven't been able to provide low cost housing for them and we are recommending that this be changed so that we can provide housing for them.

Senator Inman: Thank you. On the same page further down you speak of the Maltais family and you say he pays thirty dollars per month for rent.

I was just wondering how a family like that would come to occupy. Wouldn't a house like that be condemned and boarded up and the landlord not allowed to collect rents from such a place?

Mr. McRae: Yes. This is under study now and the first reading has been passed for a minimum standard of bylaw for such homes but at present there is no bylaws to cover something like this.

This has now had its first reading and will have further study within six months and it should be passed. It is a very complicated bylaw.

Senator Croll: Mr. Mayor, just give us a little help on this problem. I understood you to say in response to an answer to Senator Quart who asked you about a man with a family—a wife and family who refused to work and you said, "Cut him off from welfare." Didn't you say that?

Mr. McRae: Yes, I said that.

Senator Croll: Now tell me. If a man is receiving welfare and has a wife and some children, do we cut him off? There are families in these circumstances, aren't there, Mr. Mayor, and we face them all the time. What do we do, Mr. Mayor?

Mr. McRae: This is where your councillor would come in and see that they had enough to eat and have the family looked after but there is nothing extra at all for that man.

Senator Croll: Well, Mr. Mayor, you know that doesn't happen today. You can't just say "You can't eat. It's all for the other people." You know that just doesn't happen. You know who would go without food in that family; it would be the wife. The man would eat. We have seen these things dozens and dozens of times. How practical is that solution and how are you facing it, or can you face it in the way you suggest?

Mr. McRae: I would suggest that somebody shame that able-bodied man into working.

Senator Croll: Yes, perhaps shaming, but that is another tact. You see, Mr. Mayor, and maybe we will be able to shame him into working and by other methods but can you cut that family off welfare or assistance? Can we cut him off unworthy as he may be?

Mr. Dawson: Well, I think senators, that is one of the things we are trying to bring out in our brief. You noticed that we don't mention here a minimum income.

Senator Croll: Yes.

Mr. Dawson: The fact is that we feel that placing a focus on the family as a whole and trying to keep this family together—that the focus should be on the children and that we should recognize that people below the poverty level should get an acceptable amount of family allowance for the children so the children will get the education that you are placing priorities on and I feel rightly so.

Eventually the standards will be raised but certainly if we don't do something for the children.

Senator Croll: Mr. Dawson, how do you get money into a house and say "That is for the children and not for the adults?"

Mr. Dawson: Well, this is where we feel the family counsellor should come in as the Mayor has pointed out and that if the parents won't accept the responsibility for distributing money for essential goods for the children then the family counsellor will have to step in and counsel them and perhaps manage that families income so that the children do get the essentials.

Mr. Harquail: We feel, Senator Croll, that this has to be controlled but one thing, Senator, that we are agreed upon as well since our presentation to the New Brunswick Task Force and the study of the white paper on poverty and we would like to make this point clear in our presentation this morning as well, is that we feel that any man who is mentally and physically capable should work to be a recipient of any form of assistance.

That is one thing that has stemmed from our discussions at the community level and provincial and now at this level that we are all agreed on.

Any man that is able to do something should work and the government—for the sake of a better word—let's forget the means test but beautification or for any sort of development in our area that they could provide projects for these people to be assigned to even if its only for two or three days a week so at least they are doing something because surely they must want to maintain their human dignity and respect for themselves.

They are becoming specialists in the field you know. To a large extent the people who are receiving this assistance whether it is employment insurance or whether it is welfare or whatever—they know more about these acts than many of the civil servants who are responsible for administering them.

Senator Croll: Mr. Harquail, you as a public servant, I as a public servant and everyone around here as a public servant can't be blaming those people. When you say employment—the number of people who refuse to take employment are infinitesimally small. Where are the jobs?

Mr. Harquail: Well I say that this is the onus that rests with us, the government can set up these provisions so that they can go out and earn and do something. We are all taxpayers and we are all contributing something whether it is municipal, provincial or federal. We are all contributing and yet these people are sitting home and receiving this.

Now, I am sure that a good many of them are mentally and physically able and would be quite happy to go out and work on public works or provincial highways or a clean-up campaigns.

Senator Croll: Yes. I agree with you entirely but these people are the victims of the system that you and I have established.

Mr. Harquail: That is why we are meeting this morning to come up with some recommendations.

Senator Croll: Well, we have been meeting for a year and a half to try and come up with some recommendations, but it is unfair to blame them. Sure, some of them won't work but what difference does that make. We have that in all sorts of things where we find people won't co-operate but you still have the family and the children to look after but in the main, they want jobs. We haven't been able to provide them.

Mr. Harquail: Well, that's right as you say and I think we have to make a self-examination and accept the responsibility that we have in this area but we have also got to come up with some solutions to correct this situation in suggesting that they do have to work.

Senator Croll: Well, I don't think that any scheme that we can come up with here in the course of our meeting will be without incentives for work.

Mr. Harquail: Well, another thing is that the system has become something like a monster. I mean, it is so huge and so complicated and big that no one seems to be able to touch it or put their finger right on when you need to solve a problem.

You know, we saw this situation last night. Here we are—this is a tremendous opportunity and we are very grateful that you were able to come to our city so that we can have an opportunity to sit down and talk to you, but the day-to-day problems of the welfare recipient—the situation at twelve o'clock at night on a Friday night when its ten below zero and they call up and they say they want fuel oil and they have conveniently seemed to have waited until all of the welfare offices are closed and everybody is gone home and if you investigate some of these people you find that they habitually do this.

How do you stop a situation like this? And then of course it comes back to education. There have been surveys conducted and there is one right now where forms have to be filled out by people in the different counties with regards to Medicare for example and I had a lady the other day who was looking for assistance in filling out the form.

She thought she had to see a lawyer because she felt if she signed this form they were going to take away the hospital. This was her impression and this is true with many of the present provincial and federal regulations and legislation that we do have now. Its too complicated and too cumbersome for them to work with.

Senator Croll: We find that and also a lack of confidence in the administrators.

Mr. Harquail: They are petrified to speak up. I don't think in all cases it is forced upon them or the fact that civil servants intentionally go out and intimidate them but they do have this fear.

They have this fear that if they give a true answer they maybe cut off or zeroed in on by having someone say "Well, look at here, this person is giving us a hard time and we have to do something about it."

The Deputy Chairman: Like the extra dollars which they don't want to lose.

Mr. Harquail: We know last year there was a plant opened to produce cedar fencing for the New England market. It could have employed forty people and it had to bring the resource from the woods area into the plant and yet for the first six months you couldn't get any one to cut the cedar. They were all sitting home, very comfortable and especially these people who specialized in it who have their grandparents and their parents and uncles and brothers all living in one unit and

all receiving these federal-provincial aids and they are quite happy to receive this money at sixty or seventy or eighty dollars a week unemployment and whatever else they might be able to come up with. They are not really interested in going to work.

Senator Croll: Well, really what are we talking about? What is the percentage? Are there a greater percentage of people who do in the welfare department—is there a greater percentage than those who do in the income tax department on expenses and what not?

Mr. Harquail: Well, it could never be greater.

Mr. McRae: Senator Croll, I was a little young to remember the depression—but during the depression didn't the state create a great many national park areas such as we have right here in New Brunswick for people who could not work?

Senator Croll: That's right. They did it all over the country.

Mr. McRae: Where they would work for three days a week and get a weeks pay and be happy?

Senator Croll: Yes, but Mr. Mayor, we are living in a different time now. You see, the atmosphere was very different during the depression. During the depression we were all poor. It was true. We were all poor and we sort of shared a common poorness. It was a poor country with poor people and we shared things.

It came upon us suddenly and we all shared and since then we have become a different sort of country. We are now an affluent country and our poorness is comparative. By now don't compare poorness with destitution which we had then.

I now compare poorness to people like you and me and other people who say within that community I am considered poor because that is the standard in that community or I am deprived of things that are normal in the community. That is poorness in our sense today.

Mr. Harquail: Well Senator Croll, coming back to this example of people who will not work—that is our responsibility. That is the system that we have now where they receive without doing anything. When you have a given plan like this that could provide jobs in the woods cutting cedar but because of the

system we provide—the people are quite happy to sit at home then you find the well to do and the business people in the area making the statement and criticizing welfare—not welfare really but criticizing the policies and programs and the way they are administered.

Then you realize there is something wrong here. They know that they are contributing in their taxes to welfare but then when they run into the risk of making an investment to create employment and they can't get the people to work, that is just one aspect of the problem and this is when it becomes crystal clear that there is something wrong with the present policies and regulations we have in New Brunswick.

Senator Hastings: What percentage would you say make their living from welfare?

Mr. Harquail: Well, in our area because it is more prevalent here—you mentioned that you come from Alberta but in our area in Restigouche County there are quite a few people who are eligible for welfare and are quite specialized at it.

Senator Hastings: They are quite happy and content?

Mr. Harquail: They are becoming more content every day, yes.

The Deputy Chairman: If I am correct you have over four thousand people on welfare and spend one million and some four hundred thousand dollars if I am correct?

Mr. Harquail: Yes.

Senator McGrand: How many people are there on welfare in Restigouche County?

Mr. McRae: Well I can't answer that question, sir, except from Campbellton to Flatland, an area of approximately nine miles and some of the back country, there is one hundred and fifty.

Senator Hastings: Families?

Mr. McRae: Families.

Mr. Harquail: There is approximately one hundred and fifty families out of fifteen thousand people. The Restigouche County area I understand there is something like twelve hundred families.

Mr. Dawson: That is seasonal workers now and that fluctuates because when their stamps have run out and they run out of employment

ment they go on welfare. They go on welfare for a while and then they work for a while and then they go on unemployment back to welfare again and so this is up and down.

The average I understand is approximately one thousand families and it is administered at the county level.

Senator Croll: Well, its about ten percent.

Mr. Dawson: Senator Croll, I agree with Councillor Harquail about the people on welfare and who are staying on welfare.

I don't believe that they are making a living on welfare. I believe that the problem is...

Senator Hastings: Making an occupation!

Mr. Dawson: I don't believe that there is that big a percentage of people who are really spending most of their time seeing how they are going to stay on welfare. I do believe however that there is a substantial portion who realize that if they do work and do come up with a thousand dollars in income that they are going to be penalized. I think that is a point worth considering.

Senator Croll: Well, let me just clear you on that and you make a good point but New Brunswick and Prince Edward Island are the only provinces now that do not permit the working poor to earn over and above what they could earn in welfare and keep at least fifty percent or a larger portion of it.

Let's be very clear. There is no more progressive thinking being done in the Dominion of Canada than there is in this province on welfare and the need and the welfare of the individual. You are a poor province and it is hard for you to match dollar for dollar and you can't do it and Prince Edward Island can't do it.

That is your difficulty. Its not the concept. It is that inability to match that dollar for dollar and it never should have been matched as far as you are concerned and some of the other provinces and that is the big thing that has to be corrected.

Mr. Harquail: You are suggesting more federal aid?

Senator Croll: I am suggesting that you can't meet a fifty-fifty basis. I think members of the committee realize that there are provinces that can't match dollar for dollar and look after the people on the same basis.

Now, if you take that Maltais family with seven children with \$156.00 a month. Canadians. The same kind of Canadian as I am.

If he lived in Ontario he would get \$356.00 a month. Where is the justice there? Where is the equality. If he lived in Alberta he would get...

Senator Hastings: \$420.00 a month.

Senator Croll: \$420.00 a month. He is the same kind of Canadian and it just doesn't make sense. That is one of the things that this committee is very much concerned about.

The Deputy Chairman: This is a thing that very few people know about. They certainly don't know that this does exist.

Mr. Harquail: It certainly makes for a good case for our people here.

Senator Croll: Well, you have three people here who are driving at it all the time you know.

Senator Fergusson: Well, Councillor Harquail has really answered what I was going to ask about when you mention your statement on Page 3 about all mentally and physically capable people should be required to work and I don't think I need go into that.

However, I did have one other small question which I thought I would like to inquire about and that was about the family councillors which you mention on Page 5 and you suggest that these people should be trained and a government sponsored program be initiated.

I think family councillors are very important and I think it is a wonderful idea but what crossed my mind to this before that civil servants are regarded with suspicion. Wouldn't a councillor also be a civil servant and wouldn't the recipient have the same sort of feeling towards a councillor if he were trained and perhaps provided by the government?

Mr. Harquail: Senator Fergusson, this is one of the things that we have put forward in resolution to the Federation of Mayors and Municipalities three years ago and that is to all well and good it has the brick and mortar provided—a million and a half dollars for one hundred and four housing units but if we just move the people from their farm and into a new situation with no assistance or no direc-

tion, in three to five years we are going to have the same situation existing and this is happening across Canada.

We really have put on a drive to help the government provide a social worker in our area and we have been told in the last year and a half that we are going to have one.

However, their approach is a little different from say the cold civil service person or approach. They are trained in this field. They come in and live in the area for a little while and then they get to know the people and become accepted by the people and then its also recommended to have the assistance of social animators to come in and set up a group discussion and to talk to these people. It is one of the points that I made in our presentation to the New Brunswick Task Force.

We had a very nice meeting with them and we presented our briefs and we had a good exchange but we could have had another hundred people there from Campbellton and we could have had another three hour meeting in addition to what we did have and so unless we get the people who are receiving the welfare and the people who are living in these houses to come out and talk about this and tell us what they want—they have to tell us. This is one thing we can't do. We can't talk down to people and tell them what they are going to do because that is the very hot minute that they are going to organize and do the opposite.

This is true in all cases so we have to have—the popular term now is dialogue. We have to be able to communicate with these people so that they can tell us what their needs are.

Senator Fergusson: Well in some of the meetings that we have had throughout Canada, we have had some of these people come to our meetings and dialogue with us.

Mr. Harquail: It is difficult. Here again is this spirit that we have been talking about in regards to the civil servant.

They don't like to come in and identify because they are afraid and perhaps they don't understand. Other suggestions that came out from the discussions with the New Brunswick Task Force was that perhaps we could train some of these people who are on welfare and who are living in these houses to become employed and assist the social workers and eventually the social worker could go on to another project and you could have

three or four men or women who were unemployed now earning a salary and working with the people that they get along with and who they are accepted by.

Senator Fergusson: That is an excellent suggestion.

Mr. McRae: Senator Fergusson, you saw how well the V.O.N. nurse was received in these homes last night?

Senator Fergusson: Yes.

Mr. McRae: Well that's the type of councillor we were thinking of when we made this suggestion.

Mr. Harquail: I think the suggestion would be...

Senator Fergusson: But the V.O.N. is not a government employee?

Mr. McRae: Almost, senator.

Senator Fergusson: No. I am on the V.O.N. Board.

Mr. McRae: Senator, another thing that is important too is the fact that the typical social counsellor now that goes in and as Councillor Harquail has pointed out many times is judge and jury to this family.

He goes and investigates. His job is more of investigation than anything as I see it now. The fact is if the counsellor was the person who examined these low interest loans and so on he would be welcomed by the V.O.N. nurse instead of being...

Senator Croll: What did you say?

Mr. McRae: The family counsellor would be responsible to get this family low interest loans for example and would not be a judge of whether their income would be X amount of dollars, and so on—he would be counselling them and be a help—I think they would be received like the V.O.N. people are.

Senator Fergusson: But don't misunderstand me. I think it is an excellent idea but I am just wondering how practical it would be and how it would work out. I went into one house where a family had been put into a public housing unit and their physical setup was a great deal better than anything they ever had before and the woman almost had a nervous breakdown because she didn't know how to operate the place and she didn't know

what a lot of these things were for and this is what you are talking about and this is what they need.

Senator Croll: Mr. Dawson, you are the chairman of this brief?

Mr. Dawson: Yes, sir.

Senator Croll: I know there is a Sister Green and Mrs. Aubin who I met last night and others.

Now, we talk about dialogue. Now, this is a brief dealing with poverty. Couldn't a couple of poverty stricken people as contributed to the brief the same way that others have so that we could have dialogue? Why didn't they contribute to the brief in the same way? I gather none of these poverty stricken people who are on the committee?

Why didn't the welfare people contribute to the brief?

Mr. Dawson: Well, I think they contributed a substantial amount, Senator, just by the fact that they allowed your committee and the Task Force Committee to go into their homes...

Senator Croll: No, no. That is just holding out the example and its nothing of the sort. The very fact that they were there as objects of study isn't what I am talking about.

I am talking about some of them who have the ability to sit down and put something in writing or go some place and talk. That is dialogue. That is what we mean by dialogue. That is the way to involve them and you will find that you will get some ideas there.

Mr. Dawson: Yes.

Senator Croll: And you get some ideas there, don't you?

Mr. McRae: Senator Croll, they are very hard people to have the dialogue with.

Senator Croll: I know.

Mr. McRae: Through them, through Mr. Arseneau, Sister Green and Mrs. Aubin and Dr. McPherson, Dr. Rice and Captain MacKenzie and Father Pelletier—these people have dealt with them and they have their confidence. They receive something from them that you could never get or I could ever get if they appeared here today.

Senator Croll: You are absolutely right, Mr. Mayor. That is why I mentioned these people.

I know that these people know, but you are still missing the point, Mr. Mayor. They are participants, not just people who pass it on to somebody else. They participate in helping to write the report and their name appeared there. That would give you a credibility amongst the poor and the unemployed the like of which you wouldn't otherwise get. We have been through this.

Mr. Harquail: Senator Croll, the only other thing that Councillor Dawson mentioned is—and it is mentioned in the brief—is that visiting and taking pictures is better than a thousand words and I think our case is quite clear. That is why I mentioned earlier in discussion that I would like to have a choice to discuss briefly about urban renewal and how this will effect this welfare problem.

The Deputy Chairman: I may take this opportunity to make this announcement. The Chamber of Commerce are not presenting their brief at ten o'clock this morning.

Mr. Caron will be here to tell us why so that we can take over some of the time which was allotted to the brief from the Chamber of Commerce.

I hope this is agreeable to the other members of the committee because I myself find this brief and discussion very interesting and I would hope that we could continue.

Senator Quart: Well if you remember, Mr. Chairman, when we were in Edmonton the views advanced by the Mayor and yourself and others were the same views expressed by a group of citizens and even the Honourable Mr. Speaker who was the Minister of Welfare in Alberta—they were very complimentary to this group and there that suggestion was made as well that some of these people who weren't trained or qualified, etc. as welfare officers would be better equipped in a sense to go and do that type of counselling that you were suggesting.

And coming back to people who live on relief or make a career of living on relief, Senator Hastings, my colleague on a plane coming from the Yukon had a discussion with a man who was developing two mines in the Yukon. I won't give you all the discussion he had with us but he said—and you heard him ..

Senator Hastings: He was a Conservative!

Senator Quart: Yes, he was when you told him that I was he become a Liberal. I wasn't

going to mention that but well anyways, he was developing a mine outside of Watson Lake and another one outside of Vancouver.

However, he said that he had been in that area before he went into the political angle—which I am sure you wouldn't like but I enjoyed every minute of it—and he did say that he had been in that area and that he put an advertisement in the newspaper for a month and he said "Don't talk to me about the lack of employment" he said in my case I put an add in for a month and there were only three that answered it and he said finally that when they did come they remained for a week or seven or eight days and they found the work too hard and they would much prefer to go back on relief. He said that his seventeen year old son and some of his friends had come in and they don't find the work too hard. Isn't that correct?

Senator Hastings: Well, I really wasn't listening.

Senator Quart: Well, I do go along with you when you say that some of them are making a career of it.

Senator Hastings: Some people but the percentage has been proven time and time again to be about three percent and we can't judge the other 97 per cent by the 3 per cent.

Senator Fergusson: Well, we only hear of the three percent. We never heard about the others.

Senator Quart: They could work.

The Deputy Chairman: On Page 6, Mr. Mayor and Members of the Council, when you say "Paper products within one mile of downtown", do you mean something produced out of the paper or the paper itself?

Mr. McRae: They just produce the raw material and they send it away. It is not the paper. Its sulphate or sulphide.

The Deputy Chairman: That is what you meant by that?

Mr. Harquail: Kraft paper. In Dalhousie, fourteen miles away you have the best in the world, the finest newsprint in the world.

The Deputy Chairman: And in your note on the same page when you say 420 people and 125 from Campbellton, you are referring to the actual mill?

Mr. Harquail: Yes.

The Deputy Chairman: I would like to have your comments on those people who are moving into your houses, first, who supplies the furniture?

Are there new homes completely furnished?

Mr. McRae: The new homes consist of a frig and stove, sir.

The Deputy Chairman: That's all?

Mr. McRae: Yes.

The Deputy Chairman: They have to bring what is left of their own furniture?

Mr. McRae: Right.

The Deputy Chairman: And after three or four or six months when you re-visit those homes, do you find that they have been well maintained?

Mr. McRae: Sister Green, can you answer that question?

Sister M. Green, Welfare Department, City of Campbellton: I think the homes have been well maintained. They are visited by the manager, Mr. Arseneau. There are a few exceptions where people that came from farms and would not be happy there but there are only two families, I believe.

The Deputy Chairman: But you did find out that some were not happy in their new homes?

Sister Green: They were not happy. They went back to St. Albert and they had no running water and they were very happy.

Mr. Harquail: Do you know why?

The Chairman: Sister, please come up to the microphone.

Sister Green: We had experiences with two families I think. We had two families who moved out because they were not happy. The house was very filthy. We had to have the fumigator come and fumigate the place when they left. It was needed. One of those families went back to live in St. Albert. She has no running water in the house but she told me she was very, very happy.

Senator Croll: Well, sister, that is two out of a hundred, isn't it?

Sister Green: Yes.

Senator Croll: Not bad.

Sister Green: We had a lot of people from the slums that would not move into the new houses.

Senator Croll: Why?

Sister Green: They went somewhere else.

Senator Croll: Why?

Sister Green: Well, they thought they would be tied down, they would be visited too often and a lot of those people had neighbours who would loan them \$5.00 and another neighbour who could be a bootlegger and they knew that in the new housing property that would not be allowed.

The Deputy Chairman: Are you telling us, sister, that there are bootleggers in Campbellton?

Sister Green: Oh, yes. I know an area where there was 37 out of 42.

Mr. Harquail: Sister, it is interesting to hear of the environment and the milieu that they are in there and the distinction between Andersonville and the people in St. Albert that they do not want to be in the same project together.

Sister Green: No, and the women in St. Albert told me yesterday—I visited ten families yesterday and they told me those that didn't want to move said that they were all by themselves.

They really don't have any streets in St. Albert and they are way back by themselves behind the brook there and the lady said "Well here I put the baby out and there are no cars and I am not worried and I make a little garden at the back of my house and I couldn't do that if I were living in the city or some place else".

They don't like the idea of being three or four families together. They want their own house and especially those that own a house even if its not much of a house.

The Deputy Chairman: Is this a continuation of the family group? Is it a family group of cousins and so on all related to one another, or are they completely strangers?

Sister Green: Well, now there are relatives but at first in St. Albert fifteen years ago when I began to visit them they were from all over. They came from Quebec...

The Deputy Chairman: La Belle Province.

Sister Green: Yes, La Belle Province and Moncton but they were people from no man's land.

Mr. McRae: In this ten you visited yesterday you were making a survey?

Sister Green: Yes.

Mr. McRae: Was there any better mood of these people moving into these houses than say a year ago?

Sister Green: Well those people who were visited at the first time were younger families and they own their houses. Those who do not own their houses would be willing I think to move providing they were not all together.

I met one that owns not only the house but the land and she would be willing I think to move.

Mr. Harquail: Senator Fournier, this is important. We are getting into an important area. Would you say now—we were talking about fear a while ago and the emotional problems.

Would you say that it is a much better atmosphere now because we have had the 104 and they had some experience and they are inquiring and finding out that it is not all that bad and there is breakthrough now.

Sister Green: There is a breakthrough and Mr. Arseneau who is not here but Mr. Arseneau did Boucher Street and he said everybody there were quite willing to move.

Now, I was around to Alexander Street and the people that owned their property like Mr. Polly—there is no question of him moving.

The Polly's—they live there back of the race track and they don't own their property but they own the house.

Mr. McRae: Sister Green, I happened to see ten of those surveys yesterday and I must admit that I was quite surprised of their attitude over a year ago.

These ten people all said yes, they would move and yes they would sell their house for that value which maybe one thousand dollars and that was a different attitude than there was say even a year ago.

Sister Green: Yes, a completely different attitude.

I visited them two years ago and there is a much different attitude.

Mr. McRae: There is a different attitude than there was a year ago.

They are gradually realizing just what there is in this life by seeing the people who live in the 104 and so on.

Sister Green: There is a change too in the younger generation. There is a different attitude amongst the younger children and the younger children are getting more schooling. Now, we have children who graduated from St. Albert and we have many in high schools and I think this means a lot.

Senator Inman: I would like to ask Sister Green about these children who spend their time in school. Do you know if they are having any influence on the parents?

Sister Green: Oh, yes. The kindergarten children have a lot of influence on the parents—even religious influence.

Senator Fergusson: I would just like to ask one more question of Sister Green. Do the children who come from St. Albert find it more difficult to attend school and to study? You say that some of them have graduated? Well, they don't have the same opportunity to study at home because there is no privacy in the home. Do you think it is more difficult for those children from St. Albert to study and graduate than it is for children in other areas?

Sister Green: Oh, it is more difficult for some of them, a great number of them. I have seen children in the last year who will do their homework on the floor.

Senator Fergusson: This must be very difficult for them to concentrate?

Sister Green: The houses are so small and there is usually a television on.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, thank you very much, Sister Green.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, Councillor Harquail said he had some remarks on urban renewal.

Mr. Harquail: Senator Fournier, I would just like to say that in the Centennial Year, 1967, when we came to Council we started our planning and we had a community plan included by the Community Improvement Corporation which is a subsidiary of the provincial governments at a cost of something like sixty-eight thousand dollars.

That is the basis. We then proceeded to engage a town planner and we had agreed on a system of priorities and we all agreed—and we also agreed on a system of priorities and we also agreed that Sector I would be the Andersonville area which you saw last night.

This was because of a host of reasons. We had development coming up anyway with private enterprise; it is a well-known sub-division and we had new developments with the new schools and—the new high school and the new elementary school and we knew that we had five hundred plus applicants for low income housing and we had indication that we would receive the housing and so we agreed on Andersonville being the first area.

St. Albert was to be section II in our planning. The New Brunswick Housing Corporation and Mr. Robert Michaud—he completed the plans for Section I which was completing the community plan.

Mr. Dernois, at a cost of eighteen thousand plus has completed a plan for St. Albert but just as we were getting into the programming and the approach for the implementation of these plans, our friend Mr. Hellyer made a trip across Canada and visited here and he recommended for the government to put a freeze on urban renewal funds.

This comes to industrial growth and industrial expansion and there was some comments made about this earlier. It is all well and good to have these plans to provide welfare and to build training schools and upgrade the people, but if there are no jobs and they can't work we are right back where we were.

We said some two years ago as well that we needed some type of inter-structure which we pretty well have now with all of these up to date adequate medical, educational facilities and the housing. We look upon our community as a bedroom area and we have an active industrial committee looking at providing industrial departments and attracting industrial plants to come here and maybe this is opening up the flood gates when I mention it to you people because you have good contacts right across Canada. This is not a bad place to locate a plant.

However, to come back to urban renewal. After Mr. Hellyer returned to Ottawa, he notified the government to stop the flow of urban renewal funds through the existing legislation and we know why. A lot of informed legal people and financiers and entrepreneurs, a lot of larger centres like

Vancouver, Montreal and Toronto were really capitalizing on this.

A lot of buildings were being torn down at huge costs and they were making tremendous profits at the expense of the taxpayers through this urban renewal legislation and when they finally caught onto it, they turned all the taps off and that was the end of it.

They put a great freeze on it. But look what it does to a little community like Campbellton and every once in a while you hear ripples and you read in Hansard where maybe they are going to consider giving some money out but you have to be over 20,000 in population or over 35,000 or you are not going to be eligible and we just shudder to think of this because we now have probably in excess of one hundred thousand dollars spend in plans that we are ready to implement—you saw the St. Albert area last night and yet there is this freeze on.

Senator Croll: When you say a “freeze on”—the freeze isn't as much of a freeze as you point out.

The freeze is on for the big guys in the Toronto's and Montreals and Hamiltons and the Vancouvers. There is no freeze as far as you are concerned because Mr. Andras has been handing out urban renewal through the smaller areas constantly.

I am satisfied that you have gone as far as you could but the Minister of Housing has been doing urban renewal in the smaller communities.

Mr. Harquail: Well, I think it touches on the welfare problem. If we could make our points with you people as Senators to include this in your recommendation to government to assure where communities are so far advanced and so close to accomplishment because when you are thinking in general terms it would only cost in the neighbourhood of two hundred thousand dollars, for example, to do the St. Albert area. That would be the federal costs and if you people could recommend very strongly wherever the municipalities are so far advanced when we finally do sit down and adopt the final legislation for the hard-core urban renewal that we be protected and that it be included there that the people who are this far advanced do receive urban renewal assistance.

Right now—and we did meet with Mr. Andras in June in Halifax at the Mayors

Conference and they indicated that they will find some form of legislation to do this.

Whether it is under land assembly or not I don't know. However, we are not ready to implement yet. If we were to have the additional housing that we are in line for within the budget, we could get more housing units.

We transfer those people from St. Albert into the new housing and we take the urban renewal money and acquire the land and eliminate the blight and treat that area for development whether it be private development or light industry or for commercial centres or what have you and this is why we feel this is so important.

Senator Croll: Well, say this to Mr. Andras when you write to him. Tell him that the Senate Committee on Poverty supports very much the urban renewal in this area that we saw and we recommend that he continue with it.

Mr. Harquail: Thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Are you satisfied now?

Mr. Harquail: Yes, I am.

The Deputy Chairman: Your Worship, are you satisfied?

Mr. McRae: Yes.

The Deputy Chairman: It is now 10:30, so I think this will bring us to the end of this part of our meeting.

I hope the members of the committee were impressed by everything they saw last night, and with this wonderful brief this morning. It has confirmed what we saw in more ways than one.

This meeting has been very fruitful. Although we have not learned of any new problems, we at least know that you do have the same problems here.

You may be certain that all of your recommendations, and certainly the last one discussed, will have our special attention. Thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Honourable senators, as I said earlier, the brief we were supposed to have from the Chamber of Commerce will not be presented. Mr. Roger Caron, the President of the Chamber of Commerce, will tell us why.

The brief will be forwarded to the committee and I would like to have a motion to accept the brief later.

Hon. Senators: Agreed.

The Deputy Chairman: I understand the brief is on its way to Boston.

Mr. Roger Caron (President, Chamber of Commerce, City of Campbellton): Yes, it was put in the wrong car and is now on its way to Boston.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, we will accept the brief later.

Mr. Caron: Thank you very much, Mr. Chairman. I happen to have a few of my original notes here, so if you wish me to I could outline a few of the items in the brief.

The Deputy Chairman: Do we agree?

Senator Quart: Definitely.

The Deputy Chairman: We will not ask you any questions because we have not read the brief but we will hear some of your comments and this will help us at a later date to digest your brief.

Mr. Caron: Of course, they will not be in order.

Senator Croll: That is quite all right.

Mr. Caron: One of the points that was brought up in the brief is we were wondering if the welfare department was wrongly named and maybe it should be here under the Justice Department or the Income Tax Department.

This was because of the forms and investigations being conducted before an applicant could qualify for welfare. I myself at different times have gone to the welfare office and sat down and filled out the forms and questioned them on the investigations and the type of investigations they conducted before an applicant could qualify for welfare money and I would say that this is even worse at times than the Income Tax Department.

It certainly doesn't make an applicant feel good about applying for welfare. In other words, it may give them the feeling that the social workers are the people in the welfare department who take it for granted that they are a bunch of crooks and that they are out to fleece the government. This was the feeling I got.

The Deputy Chairman: When you get this feeling you are talking about the fact that you are a representative of the Chamber of Commerce or personally?

Mr. Caron: It is more personal yes.

The Deputy Chairman: But your brief will represent the Chamber of Commerce or your personal opinion? It makes a difference.

Mr. Caron: It is in the name of the Chamber of Commerce although as of now it hasn't been approved by the Board of Directors but I will have it approved by the Board of Directors before it is sent to you.

It may carry some of my personal views and if they are approved by the Board they will be sent to you.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you.

Mr. Caron: Another question that was asked also was it good business to operate the Welfare Department on very strict business principles? That was just one question. Many of the points that were brought out in the cities brief and our brief that will be represented to your Committee—were outlined in our brief; people working for less money than what they could get out of welfare and work projects by government could do more to enable men to get work.

One other point. The same number in a family—let us say a family of six small children with a mother and father next to another family of six children again. At times through some investigations and some contacts that I have made personally I have found that one family can live on three hundred dollars a month whereas the other family will need six hundred dollars a month and even might not work out quite as well as the other one who would be working out quite well on three hundred dollars less.

In my own daily work I happened to contact people who I have to ask questions about their own casual affairs every day of the week and I realize that it is definitely a fact that some people can make out with much less money than the next family can so in my opinion it could be that the Welfare Department could come under a number of other headings.

There is one more item that I would like to comment on and that is the mothers who have been deserted by their husbands.

I have seen somewhere that there have been briefs presented to your Committee but in most cases the husband is brought to court and the decision of the judge is that so much money is to be paid to the mother and the family per month.

Now, the way it is now it seems to be left up to the mother to go after that money and I was just wondering if it could not be organized in such a way through the court that someone could look after the penalty and if it is not paid, put them in jail or give them a fine or something like that to see that justice is brought about.

I am just wondering if it could not be arranged that the one who makes himself responsible to those mothers that the money could be collected from that individual.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, Mr. Caron, that recommendation has been forwarded by other groups as well.

Mr. Caron: Thank you very much.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, sir.

Mr. Caron: I am very sorry for what has happened to my brief.

Senator Hastings: May I ask Mr. Caron one question. You mentioned in your investigations that you had come across this discrepancy regarding payments to a family of six and payments to another family of six in different amounts. In your investigations, were you satisfied as to the reason or why there was a discrepancy?

Mr. Caron: Oh, a lack of ability to manage money.

Senator Hastings: On the part of the recipients?

Mr. Caron: Yes.

Senator Hastings: And the amount was strictly up to the discrepancy of the officer, was it?

Mr. Caron: No, no. The amount is set and it is not up to the officer to set that.

Senator Hastings: Oh, you are not saying that one family gets more than the others?

Mr. Caron: No. I say that one family should get more in order for them to make out.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Mr. Caron. Please forward your brief to us as soon as you receive it.

The Deputy Chairman: Honourable senators, we have with us now Father Thériault from the Paroisse of St. Jean Baptiste. I have known Father Thériault for many, many years. There are two priests in his family.

Rev. Father Thériault: Three priests.

The Deputy Chairman: Oh, you have me beat by one! I do not have to say any more regarding the quality of a family like that. Father Thériault is now the new priest at St. Jean Baptiste which is the parish we travelled through yesterday when we saw the poor church and the poor settlement, and so on.

Father Thériault has presented a brief which is in French.

[Translation]

We will receive the brief later, and Mr. Caron will tell us the tale of what happened.

Senator Fournier: Father A. Enoll Thériault, Priest of the Parish of St-Jean-Baptiste, Restigouche County, New Brunswick. Now I must tell you that there are three of us on our committee who speak French, and four who don't understand French, so whatever you prefer Father Thériault.

Rev. Father Thériault: Members of the Senate: The poor, rich or not. I could have presented a brief on the lack of housing, the lack of goods and services available to the small wage earner and concluded by recommending negative taxation or a guaranteed salary. Everyone agrees on this subject. What hampers implementation is the question of "ways and means".

[Text]

I could also have presented a brief on social welfare but I would have had to talk about Canadian companies that are on welfare.

They say that Canadian companies receive incentives—the poor are on welfare. You see, it is very confusing.

[Translation]

I could also have presented a brief on Social Welfare, but in that connection I would have had to mention the Canadian Companies which are on Social Welfare. The Companies are described as receiving "incentives" but the poor are described as being on Welfare.

I have chosen instead to express my views on the poor, whether they be rich or not.

1. The Theme of POVERTY is in fashion these days. We are always hearing the slogan: "War on POVERTY". In 1968-69, the Economic Council of Canada devoted a chapter to it in its fifth and sixth annual report.

2. Poverty has become a question of economics and therefore a question of dollars.

3. I shall draw your attention to the fact that Poverty and the Poor Man are not the same thing.

4. We shall be seeing that Poverty runs into millions of dollars, whereas the Poor Man is a person who is handicapped physically, morally and spiritually.

5. In the second place, I shall indicate a few remedies. In conclusion, I shall suggest an avenue of research.

A—What is Poverty.

6. Poverty is a by-product of affluence.

7. If it weren't for this flood of goods and services, there wouldn't be any poverty, if there were no English, we wouldn't have the French problem. If there were no Whites, there wouldn't be any coloured problem.

8. People are so caught up in the purchase of consumer goods, that they have nothing left, and no time to be concerned about their environment.

9. In the 19th century, technology enabled us to produce these goods. But to fit in with technology, we have had to create a technological culture, and therefore a mechanistic culture.

10. The machine is very demanding and it doesn't think; it wants to produce. We live in a society of production.

11. All the so-called developed countries have organized their system of education so as to produce men and women similar to machines.

12. The more we come to have fewer thinking men—like machines—the more we come to have men divided into compartments—like machines—the more developed we shall be. And this is still the criterion for success today.

14. No man can produce more cheaply than a machine... and little by little we have begun getting rid of people... it is the waste products of industry that are thrown away, and man along with the other waste products.

15. The earth has become a human dump.

16. Those who pollute the environment should pay the price for cleaning it up.

[Text]

I would like to have this added to Number 16, in my brief. You don't ask the fish to clean the polluted river he lives in. You don't ask the poor to clean somebody else's mess. You were through my parish yesterday, so I think you know what I am talking about.

17. For the last century, as a result of technology, we have been allowed to use only three of our five senses: sight, hearing and smell.

[Translation]

18. If you notice, these are "in-puts". These three senses are receiving mechanisms. Let's listen to the radio; let's watch television. Let's read the paper, let's go to see a film. Let's smell the food at Steinberg's, Dominion and General Food.

19. We are not allowed the right to speak and to touch. As a result, we are handicapped; that's what a poor person is.

20. We are always receiving. Our batteries are charged and recharged—it's a very explosive situation. Whatever is charged is bound some day to go off, and so we have got to explode.

21. The real reason why there is so much concern about the poor at the present time is not that we lack consumer goods, but rather that we are exploding—violence...

22. The only way of maintaining and perpetuating this handicap, that is to say of preventing people from talking and having contacts, is CENTRALIZATION.

23. The farther we are from the centre of decision-making, the less involved we become. We never meet the man who is responsible. And the man who is responsible is the man who has the answers.

24. We can never speak to or get in touch with the minority of right-minded men who program us and decide for us.

25. Centralization brings about a police state. If people are programmed they must be supervised to see that they stay programmed.

26. And yet man is made for dialogue, taking turns, confrontation, discussion, neighbourly intercourse, human relations, for RESPONSIBILITY.

27. Man is not divisible into compartments—like a machine—but is made for total involvement.

28. The effect of CENTRALIZATION is to prevent total involvement, to handicap and impoverish it. We are always being told: don't talk and above all don't touch. That's what it is to be Poor.

29. Being Poor is not a question of having more or less money, it is a question of being prevented from, or handicapped in the use of all one's senses.

30. He who never listens is a pauper. He who always listens is also a pauper. He who never speaks is a pauper. He who always speaks is also a pauper. He who never decides anything is a pauper. He who decides everything is also a pauper. He who never has any contact is a pauper. He who always has contacts is also a pauper. He who has no material goods is a pauper. He who has all the material goods is also a pauper.

31. The development of exchanges in all fields and at all levels may just as easily be a form of servitude and constraint as a form of liberation and an opportunity for dialogue.

[Text]

Rev. Father Theriault: Now, the drama of life is about to be played. Remedies.

[Translation]

B—Cures for poverty

(a) Provide people who haven't got them with "out-puts".

32. Don't give me a radio but a radio station.

[Text]

Don't give me a TV but a TV station.

Don't give me a newspaper but a printing press.

Don't give me a record player—but an instrument to play music. Don't tell me what to do; let me tell you what to do.

[Translation]

33. True evolution, the inevitable and desirable form of evolution is towards the democratic socialization of all group activities, at all levels: political, economic, social, cultural.

Humanly oriented regional government, that is to say DECENTRALIZATION.

34. The democratic socialization of frameworks, institutions and services is expressed in:

active participation
decentralization of responsibility
taking in hand the real problems of life
awareness of the basic problems facing living human Persons.

35. We must all realize that we have to strive to achieve a two-fold aim:

—personalization, which would provide each individual with the opportunity to move in the direction of complete expression of his possibilities

—use of the five senses—"in-put"—"out-put"

—socialization, which would progress in stages, marking the progress in the development of the Human Person.

36. We must harmonize these two aims so that the individual becomes integrated in society and able to master it and go beyond it; and so that society, at the same time, is made to serve the people and not to enslave or impoverish them.

37. One way of achieving this is by humanly oriented regional government, with discussion, confrontation and dialogue: a community of responsible men, always remembering that the responsible man is the one who has the answers.

(c) Mechanisms to be set up

1. World planning.

38. It is often said that the poor are not adjusted to the changed conditions of 1970.

39. Let me give voice to a contrary opinion: industry and government are not adjusted to the changed conditions of 1970.

40. Since Adam Smith and Keynes we have had free enterprise and competition. What was good for one time is not necessarily good for all time and that is where today's governments fail.

41. We need an integrated system of world planning and all the information we have is fragmentary and divided.

42. Industry, as a moral person, should exist to serve the community. Competition prevents this; it insists on production; which is competitive.

43. Let a mechanism for economic and social planning be set up, worldwide, integrated, coordinated, and providing alternatives (and this should be emphasized).

2. Discussion at all levels.

44. Since the introduction of I.B.M. and computer information, the only capacity which remains to man and which the machine has not got is the capacity for choice.

45. The choices offered by the technocrats must be laid before people so that they can choose.

46. This is where they can give expression to their reason for living, their cultural, spiritual and moral values. From the alternatives they are given, they will be able at the same time to judge the technocrats' reasons for living.

47. I recommend that a mechanism for integrated discussions should be set up at the local, municipal, regional, provincial and federal levels, so that the expert theoreticians can meet with expert practitioners.

3. Execution

48. We are accustomed to separating the legislative and the executive. You know how much flexibility there is in execution because of the speed of change.

49. I advocate that those who are responsible for drawing up a project; the technocrats, as well as those who legislate should execute the project together.

[Text]

This will give a chance to the technocrats to become dropouts of the bureaucracy, and to the legislators to become dropouts of the legislature.

50. As far as I know, there is only one way to remain in contact with reality, and that is to become a "dropout". This is true for teachers, students, doctors, engineers, Members of Parliament, Ministers, even Senators...

[Translation]

4. Evaluation.

51. Finally, evaluation mechanisms should be set up to measure achievements in terms of goals.

52. The means at our disposal and those used with regard to constraints.

53. Values or reasons for living and our attitudes.

[Text]

Before I start Page 10, I would like to make two corrections. On number 58, in the middle of the line is the word "inculcate". Delete

that and substitute "evaluate". Three lines below that, insert the word "influence" after the word "motivating".

[Translation]

54. By way of conclusion, allow me to suggest an avenue of research.

55. John Kenneth Galbraith in his book: "The New Industrial State", Chapter XI, discusses the theory of motivation. He singles out four.

56. 1. Negative motivation which is punishment. We do things because we are punished.

57. 2. Financial motivation. I work because I am paid.

[Text]

58. A third one: Humans, in contrast with machines, evaluate their own positions in relation to the value of others and come to accept others' goals as their own. Following Professor Herbert Simon, this motivating influence may be called identification.

I identify myself with that organization.

59. Finally, the individual may serve the organization not because he considers its goals superior to his own but because he hopes to make them accord more closely with his own. A name for this must be coined and I propose to call it "adaptation".

60. I recommend that research be undertaken as follows:

[Translation]

61. An analysis should be made of all Canadian organizations: governmental, public and private with a view to discovering which of the four motivations has caused people to join them or to work for them.

62. Only the last two motivations are human and forward-looking. The first two serve only to perpetuate the past.

63. When this research has been done and the necessary evidence established, we will in my opinion be in a position to begin removing the poultices and building the future.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you very much, Father Thériault.

Have you anything else to add, or should we just ask you questions?

[Text]

Father Thériault has nothing to add but he is wide open to questions. I think you have all noticed that Father Thériault's brief is of a

different type than those we have received up to now. Certainly it is on the open side...

[Translation]

... the way of fraternity, charity and Christian action, I can assure you it is not a bad way.

[Text]

The Father is open for questioning now. Who will be the first one?

[Translation]

I should like to ask Father Thériault while you are thinking of some of them, number 39.

[Text]

Let me tell you to the contrary, that our industries and our government have not adapted to the evolution of 1970.

Do you think we are behind or moving too fast?

Rev. Father Thériault: You may question me in French or in English. You may not understand my English but...

Senator Quart: You are doing very well.

Rev. Father Thériault: A question was put to me to elaborate on how come we have not adapted ourselves to industries.

You know, say four or five years ago, we thought that there would be no end to our resources and everybody said to themselves let's grab because there is no end to it so when there is no end to resources, you don't plan. If all the hens are laying thousands and thousands of eggs every day and we are only five to eat them, you can break pails of them because you don't care.

This is what is happening. We had no foresight. We thought there was no end to it. Now we are starting to see the end. I would say in 1970 that we have recognized our limits and limitations.

Human and resources so free enterprise came and they said to the government hands off and no planning.

Senator Hastings: No...

Rev. Father Thériault: No planification—no planning. Let us do what we want. We know what is good for society so let us do it and I said there that the government said—yes, let them do it because they probably know what is good for society so let them do it but when we are lacking resources we don't look at industry and say ghee, you have spoiled our resources.

We go to the government and say you let them spoil our resources and that is what I mean by not grasping.

Senator Quart: I must congratulate Father Thériault. I think it is a marvellous brief and it certainly makes us think and that is one reason why we are not really ready for a questioning. We are still in the middle of this deep thinking brief. You certainly have covered a tremendous amount of territory and opened up a tremendous amount of territory as far as some of the briefs we have received and maybe I should admit it—I am still trying to equate all of these wonderful examples that you have given us.

We haven't really come down to earth yet.

The Deputy Chairman: I think that—

Rév. Father Thériault: You are wondering if I understand myself?

Senator Quart: Yes you do. I know my limitations and that is really what I meant.

The Deputy Chairman: Well I think as far as I am concerned and I will speak for myself that I think naturally that this is a different type of brief.

It is something that we have missed and that isn't that we are afraid to face the facts. That we know.

Father Thériault has pointed out to us why we are afraid. This question of poverty for example.

We are afraid to face the poverty as it is and we are afraid to admit that it exists and we are afraid to admit that we are doing something—it will patch up here and there but now he is getting to the source of the problem.

I must say that this is what this committee is trying to do. There is no problem in finding the poor anywhere in Canada.

We have found thousands and thousands but the problem is to solve the problems, trying to get these people out of poverty once and for all.

This is what this Committee is trying to do. In politics—and I am not afraid to talk about politics—but whether you are provincial or federal or in the senate or anywhere else we are always afraid sometimes to face those things as we see them. We are afraid to say that here is a problem and I can do something about it. I have the possibilities, the money,

and I am a legislator and I have got to do something about it. We are always afraid to face the facts because in behind the scene there is always someone who will be displeased.

You mentioned the fact about the industries spoiling our resources and you mentioned that they said that they would solve the problem and we found out that they did solve the problems but for the benefit of the industries and not for the benefit of the people.

Now, in 1970, all of a sudden we are waking up saying that we can't do that anymore and we have to look into this but we are a few years behind.

Now, had we started twenty years ago what we are starting now we wouldn't have the same situation today that we have to face. I think this is why we find this brief exciting. It is a lecture for us now. It is a lecture coming from a very good source telling us in plain words exactly what we have been doing.

We have been afraid to face the facts.

Senator Quart: Well, I must agree. We have for many, many years been sticking our heads in sand but I do wish to mention this thing that you have the courage to mention the senators and I think we should have the courage too to let you know that in the senate that we think it is wonderful for senators but of course we do not have to be elected—some of us anyways those of us who are there for life and as we call ourselves "lifers" therefore, we have more independence of thought than politicians on the other levels.

They have to be elected so there is always a little hesitancy there which really isn't in the senate. I can assure you that we would go to bat for the poor.

Senator Hastings: Father Thériault, I wonder if you would explain Paragraph 20 to me. I am afraid I lost you there.

Rev. Father Thériault: We are always on the reception end. To charge and recharge our batteries and it is very explosive.

When it is charged, it is going to discharge one day and then there will be an explosion.

Senator Hastings: And what exactly do you mean by that?

Rev. Father Thériault: I said before that in Number 17 since a century, we have been

permitted to focalize only three of our five senses. The eyes, the ears, and the nose and I make the remarks that these are out in puts.

Charging. When I listen, I am getting charged. When I see, I am getting charged and when I smell, I am getting charged and as I explained, we are always receiving.

Listening to the radio, television, so don't own a radio, don't own a television.

Listen to the newspaper, don't write the newspaper, lets go and see a film, don't make one and all of this and all of that and then in Number 20 I say we are always on the receiving end.

I am saying that we are always charging our batteries and once they are charged there will be a discharge.

Senator Hastings: And there will be a discharge?

Rev. Father Thériault: And there will be a discharge.

Senator Hastings: What kind of a discharge do you foresee?

Rev. Father Thériault: Well, I think you know that. Haven't you been exposed to any discharge?

Senator Hastings: Well, yes, but I would like you to explain it.

Rev. Father Thériault: Well, I can't explain it any better than that.

You can understand what you experience more than my words.

Senator McGrand: I am very much impressed with this phrase. I believe the term affluent society was coined by John Kenneth Galbraith when he wrote the book "The Affluent Society".

Now, the affluent society that we are supposed to have is affluent to some but not very affluent to a great many people and yet we have the physical resources right here in New Brunswick if properly developed—I do not think anyone would be unemployed or on welfare.

Now, is it fair to ask you this question. If you were to be assigned the task of restructuring the economic policy of this province what would you consider to be one, two, three, four, five or six important things to do?

Rev. Father Thériault: To me you have them on Page—Mechanism to be put into place or set in motion.

The Deputy Chairman: Page 7, Senator McGrand.

Rev. Father Thériault: Global Planification. To fill that out, I need data and you have them sorted somewhere in these files.

We will find out that they are fragmentary in 41 there. Another mechanism—because that one is related to a global mechanism because you need a shock absorber to find out what these people want to live for and so you need consultations on all levels and I explained there and the execution and there I recognize Number 49.

So far the one who has planned has never executed his plans he is always giving it to somebody else. The one who has made legislation has never implemented that legislation.

It is always given to a department or a director to be implemented. I have never seen a mother give birth to a child and give it to a neighbour. There are so many things that have to be adjusted. The one who has conceived will have the philosophy to find it. You never face the responsibility. It is like the father or the mother when you talk about their child. They have an answer. That is what I mean.

Senator Fergusson: Mr. Chairman, I would like to say to Father Thériault like Senator McGrand I was deeply impressed by this brief which I think is very different from what we have received and it is very proper that we have these philosophical arguments placed before us and although we think we haven't given too much thought to it yet, I am sure that it will get great consideration by our committee in the future.

This committee has been considerably worried because we have found that the general public in Canada—they just don't acknowledge that we have a real poverty problem or at least we run into a great many people who feel this way and would you feel Father Thériault, that this is because of the fact that they actually know it is there but they don't want to face it?

Rev. Father Thériault: You know, there is a difference to note something intellectually than to experience it.

I think all over Canada and the States and the rest of the world intellectually we know that there is a problem but we have not all

experienced it. That is why I suggest one means of experiencing it and that is to become a dropout and to me it is the only way that I know now.

Senator Fergusson: You say that we accept it but I meet very many people amongst my friends who say well, what are you wasting your time on this problem for?

Canada is a very wealthy country and nobody is really suffering our fault. How can we make people see that this is not true?

Rev. Father Thériault: Be a dropout.

Senator Fergusson: You mean you want us to drop out of the senate?

Rev. Father Thériault: Yes.

Senator Fergusson: What would you do if we were to drop out of the Senate?

Rev. Father Thériault: Go on welfare. There you have the real question. What are we going to do? That is what the dropout is asking himself. If he drops out—because it has never been an accepted value to drop out. However, it is funny when you ask that question to yourself—ghee, what am I going to do tomorrow if I were to dropout?

Senator Inman: Father Thériault, what do you think of our welfare system? Do you think we give too much or too little?

Rev. Father Thériault: I think you have so many briefs about that that you should have these figures in them.

Senator Inman: Yes, but that isn't the point. Do you think we should continue to increase it?

Rev. Father Thériault: Well...

The Deputy Chairman: Well, I would hesitate to ask Father Thériault to answer that question because he looks at it in a different way and we have had many of those answers.

Some have said yes and some have said no but I think that the philosophy of the Father here is different. It makes a different approach.

Rev. Father Thériault: I do not want to leave you like that.

I am going to answer it in another way. I come from a family of thirteen and there was no question of welfare in our family. When somebody was in need, we helped them and there was no meeting in the night as to

whether or not Bobby, the last one, should receive welfare or a pair of pants or things like that. I think the whole bunch of us sort of knew that everybody would be clothed and have food and we never had to say to Bobby—you didn't earn your meal, go to bed.

I don't know if that gives you an answer.

The Deputy Chairman: I think we have seen a lot of wisdom there this morning.

Senator Fergusson: I think we should have a happy day with Father Thériault.

Rev. Father Thériault: You are invited to St. Jean Baptiste.

Senator Quart: Father Thériault, have you ever yourself tried to live on welfare?

I know when you mentioned that you didn't as a family but have you ever made an experiment yourself to try and live as some of the members of your parish live?

Rev. Father Thériault: Have you ever tried that yourself?

Senator Quart: No, I haven't, but I am asking you if you have?

Rev. Father Thériault: No: I just don't know what to answer to a question like that.

The Deputy Chairman: Well, I don't think it is proper to ask a priest whether he has ever lived on welfare.

Senator Quart: Well, I thought that when he spoke about the senate dropout, I was just wondering if he had dropped in.

Maybe I am wrong in asking that question but I am sure from your brief...

[Translation]

The Deputy Chairman: Father Thériault, I thank you most sincerely, we have been delighted by our presentation, it is on a much higher level, leaving far behind the senators who have studied the question, they have gone back to school a little, the moral approach is very good. The recommendations are very good.

[Text]

I think we are all satisfied and I am going to repeat myself Father Thériault because this brief to me—I am not going to ask permission to read it during mass but I do think it is something that is worthwhile to be read

anywhere. I like the Christianity in it and I see the things that we have done wrong and are still missing.

It has given me something to think about and it reminds me once more of all the things that we see but we are afraid to face and believe me, this is a good sector.

Father Thériault, we have been very pleased to have you with us this morning. You have travelled quite a distance to be here to present this brief to us this morning and you have presented something more than just the brief this morning and I think that we should have copies made of your brief and distributed to every member of the senate—102 members and they all should have copies of this brief.

We will see that it is translated into English and I will make it my duty to have it distributed.

Rev. Father Thériault: Well, if it is translated into English I would like to read it first.

[Translation]

The Deputy Chairman: I will see to it that you are given that opportunity.

A voice: Even if it is adjourned, there has been a request in the name of the citizens of the region to be heard, now, you said just now that you are not in a position, the Committee of the Senate is not in a position to answer questions on poverty, and this lady asked the priest a question, she asked him to say whether he had already been on social assistance, now, I know that in the room here there are people who are on social assistance who are really worth hearing. Now, if you don't want to hear them, that gives us a clear idea of the attitude of those in power, the politicians and the rich, if they don't want to hear the poor express their views. You have the choice then, leave them like that and we shall see where we will go.

The Deputy Chairman: Gentlemen, let me tell you, without wishing to start an argument, that you are completely out of order. Your brief has not been prepared to be presented to the Committee on Poverty. It is in fact for a Participation Inquiry Committee on Social Action. It was written at Bathurst in June, 1968. You have had every chance, we have on no occasion accepted a brief without having had an opportunity to prepare ourselves, to read it, you come here at the last minute. You certainly didn't present your brief to us yesterday, we don't know what

your brief contains, it is very thick, we admire the work you have done, but it was not done to be presented to the Committee on Poverty. There is a tremendous amount of work there, and I congratulate you on the work you have done, but I cannot accept it in the name of the Committee because we don't know where this is leading; this is not a brief which has been prepared for the Committee on Poverty, you didn't present it to us when it was time, we have no objection to talking to the poor. We spent the whole of last evening on the guide lines. We have visited the poor, not only in Campbellton, we have been doing this for eighteen months, now we are not going to sit down at the last minute to listen to things which we probably know already. Well then, as far as I am concerned, the meeting is over.

The meeting is adjourned.

[Text]

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman with all due respect I think perhaps if there are people here who wish to speak to us, I personally have a moral obligation to listen to them and I want to hear them and with great respect I don't think we should adjourn the meeting until they have had their say.

[Translation]

Mr. Napoléon Thériault: Senators and all representatives, my name is Napoléon Thériault. The criticism I have does not come just from myself, because governments only come to visit us on the eve of elections when they need our votes. I think that the worst situation in our province today is the schools. The schools and our children are friends up to the time when they leave to go to school, then those who are supposed to teach our children love and charity towards their neighbour, both English-speaking and French-speaking, raise up barriers between them instead.

I don't know, Sir, about you, the day you were born, whether you had something to say, whether God told you you won't speak "pantoute", you won't have any choice. I have never seen a man who was at a disadvantage before me, if he speaks the language he wants, his blood is as red as mine.

A second thing, Social Welfare: we see young men of 20 and 22 who draw social assistance at home, while the mother who has seven or eight children has to go to work. She can't get any help. I don't know if there could be a government which would take responsibility for these things, why shouldn't that mother have help, while the healthy young

man would go to work and pay taxes to the government, that I would believe in, there are all sorts of things.

Another thing, we complain that the teenagers are not what they were in our time. Why aren't they? Because his mother has to go out and work, the child is brought up by the hired girl, whether he likes it or not, he has to stay with her. He grows up with hate in his heart, he hasn't had the opportunity to know his mother's love, when he reaches the age when he has to go out and work, he has never known his mother's love, he rebels, that's where it hurts, Sir.

Then, another thing, I see someone who is here beside me who has just paid \$800 to the government for a trailer. It can't be set up, he can't have electricity because in 2 years, 3 years, 4 years the land may be going to be used, and so he is asking for some explanation. Does that seem fair to you? The country here has been built by Indians or by immigrants, by my grandfather, my father and by me and my children who will go on paying taxes, there is a lack of love and charity; and then, about taxes, I found out this week, I found it cruel, I'm going to tell Justice, we are even taxed on the flowers we give to the dead, if they wanted to be fair, they would remove the tax on flowers, if our Catholic Mass cards are not taxable. An English-speaking Canadian, whatever his faith, he should also be fair he shouldn't have to pay taxes on flowers—these are all things we see every day.

Take the St-Albert business; it reminds me of Joseph being sold by his brothers. I don't blame the local mayor, because he's been there for a long time too. I don't blame the councillors, because they have only been there for a year or two; but I blame the government men, who are paid money for St-Albert, because they didn't want it to be spent there; that's who I blame. I am someone who is responsible for his actions; when I give a man money to do something, I see that it is done.

I have never been to school, but I have seen enough cruelty committed by men with education to make me sick at heart. You can't blame uneducated men for the bad way things are in the world today, because our governments are made up of doctors, lawyers, businessmen and other educated types.

All I ask is a little love and charity; everything would go well in the world if we had those things. Thank you.

Mr. Hermel Thériault: Last year I fell sick; I was in the sanatorium. I tried to get welfare, and I had no end of trouble. Listen, I'll tell you a story: there are some people—I won't say who, but I have seen them—who live on welfare while they're working five days a week; they drink; too. Others who go on welfare use it to pay their board.

I'll tell you something else; when I was on welfare myself, they gave me food assistance—\$22 a month. Can you feed a hog on that? I ask you, can you feed a hog on that?

The Deputy Chairman: I don't know. I've never raised hogs.

Mr. Thériault: Well, don't ever try it—you'll end up with one thin hog. On top of that, when they pay welfare—I've seen it with my own eyes, I could show it to you, a poor woman with nothing, nowhere to stay; she goes to the welfare people asking for a place to stay; they tell her to find it for herself. She found one, and went to see them, and then they paid. She is staying in an old shack made of tarpaper and one-inch boards; at the back, there's a barn with a horse in it, and the house smells of manure. You think that is healthy? You don't do your duty, I'm sure of that, because if you did it properly, a woman would not be living in a pigsty like that.

The Deputy Chairman: I agree.

Mrs. Alfred Basque: Mr. Fournier said just now that he visited everywhere. Well, I'm from Tracadie. It was stated in the newspaper, *L'Evangeline*, on August 7th, that the Senate Committee refused to come to the northeast region, so you didn't come to Tracadie.

The Deputy Chairman: That is not correct, Mrs. Basque.

Mrs. Basque: Because according to *L'Evangeline*, there are four representatives, the whole Committee was not there, and I didn't write the paper.

The Deputy Chairman: Neither did we.

Mrs. Basque: You said you were going to come.

The Deputy Chairman: No, I did not say that.

Mrs. Basque: You made a tour, but I saw only four people; today I see more than four. This is the Senate Committee on Poverty, so it's the same people, and I did not see them.

The Deputy Chairman: Madam, let me give you a word of explanation. In some places, the full Committee held meetings, and in others we broke up. Senator Croll takes one group, Senator Hastings takes another. We divide into groups and sit at the same time. So if we break up, the group that goes to one place does not see me, the group that goes to another does not see me; we divide into groups to go to some places. When one group went to Tracadie, the other group went back to do some more work, because we have been working for eighteen months just on poverty. We did not stay home on holiday, or travel for pleasure. We made up a group to go to Tracadie, while another group went elsewhere. That's how it is, Madam.

Mrs. Basque: Yes, I see, but where do you apply to submit a brief?

The Deputy Chairman: It's very simple, Madam. If you want to submit a brief, we have people going round, and there are the chambers of commerce, and all your associations that ask you to prepare a brief two months in advance.

Mrs. Basque: Excuse me, but I ask you: do the chambers of commerce represent the poor?

The Deputy Chairman: I certainly won't say no, because we have had briefs from chambers of commerce that are doing good work for the poor, as are a number of other organizations, perhaps not as visibly as you would like them to, but now everyone has become aware of the poor; perhaps we have not reached the same level as we have with pollution. I mention pollution, because everyone has an interest in that.

Mrs. Basque: We're not talking about pollution, we're talking about the poor.

The Deputy Chairman: I am talking about pollution because it can be compared with what is going on. Everyone is interested in it, young and old alike, because it affects us all directly; but where the poor are concerned, we have not reached that level yet. People do not realize that there are poor people, that

they still exist; it's very difficult to get these people round a table—I mean the people who have money and could do something.

Mrs. Basque: What discourages me is wondering why people won't listen to the poor. We have been talking for a long time, you know. I have been at a number of public meetings where we were not allowed to get in front of a microphone and get our point of view across. Why? I'm not educated, but you are, and you are in a position to give me the answer. At those public meetings, they told us: "You poor people have nothing to say about it; go and sit down." And at this session, you tell us to give a report. If they won't listen to us, how are we going to say it. You show me how, and I'll do it, believe me.

The Deputy Chairman: Madam, what you say is true; we have found this more or less everywhere. Over the last twenty years, the poor have been getting into groups. In public meetings, there was a leader, a spokesman for the poor, because as you admit, the poor did not have the necessary education. You know, it is very difficult to get in front of a microphone and even say just your name, because people are not accustomed to it; it is no small thing, and it bothers people. There are not enough people like you; this is what has been missing. You know how to express yourself.

Mrs. Basque: When you are still quite close to poverty, but we have been there; they do not want to let us speak, it's not because people do not want to express themselves.

The Deputy Chairman: We are agreed on that.

Mrs. Basque: Why have freedom, how is it that people who do not have the means, who have empty pockets, those of St-Albert... why are the poor afraid, why are they timid? I see people who have plenty of money; good for them, they earned it. But why is it that such people exclude us from society, and treat us like animals? We were told this by important people who are supposed to be well informed and are supposed to be working for us, and they tell us that to our faces. I ask you again, unless the poor are beyond the pale, why keep them down all the time?

As an example, take an animal like a dog; if he is constantly kicked around, he will turn on his master; so why did the poor people go there, they do not want them to speak, because if they had been given the opportuni-

ty, they would be better organized today; but before, they did not have the opportunity, because I went to places like that where, if you made as if to stand up, they said: "Sit down, you people; you having nothing to say, you're poor." Let them just come into the area; let them live in the area for a week or so, and they will say: "Give me my money, I'm going back where I came from." I have seen people I call "the establishment", that's the term I know, anyway. There are many who tell me that the word sounds funny, but I haven't yet given any details about poverty. There is the middle class, the other one, and the "establishment", the people who live in comfort. That is why the poor have stayed down; they don't want to give them a voice, or grant them the right to live. That is what puzzles me. We are all human beings, we should all work together to get the problem sorted out.

I understand the fact that people cannot go through the misery of poverty, but if they had a shred of humanity in their hearts, they would have said: "we'll talk it over so as to reach a solution, because there must be one." That does not mean that there is no sickness, there is only cancer, which they are in the process of curing; that is how the poor are treated, because people are so afraid of the poor, of seeing or listening to them, or working with them; let's face it, they shun them like the plague. The haven't found a cure for the plague yet. I have no brief to submit, but I would like to learn how to go about filing a report before it is too late, because one of these days, they may find a bomb, and I am very much afraid that I might enjoy it; they are going to take the consequences, I have heard it said that when the hourglass is full, it turns over, but sometimes the result is terrible because if you throw gas on oil, the fire grows.

So I am asking you, as members of the Committee on Poverty, to study the problem of the poor, because so far no one has listened to or understood it. There is no great remedy, because although we have received a little welfare, today it is the lazy ones who get it, and even in Tracadie, you can read in some papers that it was the welfare capital of the province. Tracadie is not the only place with welfare, but it has a great deal. Why don't all the people who are there and supposedly working for us try to bring something to Tracadie? The poor are not lazy, but present society makes them lazy, because there is no work, because they have as much guts as

anyone, so I ask you to think seriously about this, and not to tell me that welfare increases the poor by thousands.

By all means let's have industry to provide work, those people are still good, those who are up to it, because before long you are going to have an awful lot on your hands. I don't know where the government will get the money necessary to have them looked after. Poor people today do not have enough money to go to the doctor, because here we do not bring back the dead; only Our Lord could do that, not us; anyone who has a heart must think about that, and I think everyone has a heart. It is up to people to become concerned and to see the other side of the coin, and try to find a way to agree before it is too late. Before I go home, I should like to be told where a report on poverty should be sent.

The Deputy Chairman: Madam, let me first congratulate you on the work you are doing for the poor. I think you are an example of what has been missing in the poverty field. I was saying just now that there were just some leaders, that the poor were forming groups, that they did not have a say; the poor, certainly in this society, the poorer classes—we should not use the word 'poor', it should not exist, for one thing—it is people like you who are going to make the public aware that poverty still exists.

Now, to answer your question; I can assure you that if you prepare a brief, it will be accepted. Mail it to us, someone will take your name and address. I hope you will be sending it to us in the next thirty days. Does that suit you?

Mrs. Basque: Thirty days is a little short notice; at the moment, a brief on welfare is being prepared here for the province.

The Deputy Chairman: Would two months be alright, Madam?

Mrs. Basque: Perhaps in two months.

The Deputy Chairman: We would like to finish our work; we would like to get it over, because we are going to have to make our recommendations to the government. We need help in order to submit them. You will be helping us with your report, with the same encouragement and the same force, because we are convinced that poverty exists, we have come and seen it everywhere. There is poverty in Tracadie, and we know there is

elsewhere, in Gloucester, St-Basile, Madawaska and everywhere. We are aware of it. We are not presenting an argument.

Mrs. Basque: Good, I hope not.

The Deputy Chairman: We are doing you a favour, we are responding to your request, and we are proud to do so. I would ask you to prepare a report over the next sixty days; it would facilitate our work.

Mrs. Basque: As for me, I have a horror of talking with people just to hear ourselves talk; I like things to go further; I like it to come from the heart and not from the lips. Too often I have heard "Yes, yes" one day and "No, no" the next. I want to see something concrete coming out of this, some results, so that the poor can live instead of merely existing. I hope that with all the activity in the area of poverty, we shall not have just empty words; I hope things are going to move, because we have a white paper and a Senate committee on poverty. If you want to do some good, it is possible to do so, but it should not come too late, because we are at the end of our tether.

Mr. Landry: Just a suggestion that may facilitate the work of Mrs. Basque and the committee from the Gloucester area. You know that Gloucester county receives more welfare than any other county in New Brunswick, and you also know that although three or four senators came down to Gloucester, the Senate Committee on Poverty nevertheless did not sit in Gloucester county, nor in Lower Gloucester; this is something I cannot understand; in a way, the committees, or rather the whole underprivileged class, because here the poor who are on welfare includes the workers as a group, and they cannot find employment.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Landry. Was it you who submitted the brief to the senators?

Mr. Landry: Yes.

The Deputy Chairman: Your brief was well received, it is on file; as for all the recommendations you made, we shall see. We did not refuse to hear you. I understand your point of view. Let us recognize that we had to split up; it would otherwise be impossible to go into every parish across Canada. We would never be finished. In the interests of the poor, we want to get it finished and start making recommendations. We have gathered ample information on all sides. We are now ready to

make recommendations, and you might say they will be very strong ones too.

Mr. Landry: It was just a recommendation I made, in view of the fact that you were interested in what Mrs. Basque was able to say to you. Nevertheless, you did not go into the poorest county in New Brunswick, and I cannot understand that. Thank you.

The Parish Priest of Tracadie: I am the parish priest from Tracadie; I dressed like a poor person this morning to come with the poor, and I have two things to say. First, a question Senator Hastings put to Father Thériault, about what "charging the batteries" meant. And how is it that the batteries discharged? I think we understand.

[Text]

I think we understood what Senator Hastings and Father Thériault meant. We charge our batteries and one day we blow up.

Senator Hastings: We explode.

[Translation]

The Tracadie Parish Priest: Senator Fournier, you said just now, at the start of the meeting—and very rightly, in my opinion: "We senators and people like us are perhaps afraid to face up to the poverty situation. There are many among us who are afraid, they want to face up to it and work at it; they experience the problem in their own lives. When you say that the poor are the experts on poverty, you silence them. In a sense they are experts. We always talk of the theoretical point of view and the practical point of view; we discuss the theory of poverty, but the poor experience it." I think I should congratulate the group for having been prepared to extend the meeting briefly and hear the poor people's views, and on their behalf, I thank you for having done so. Thank you.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, Father.

A Witness: Excuse me, Senator...

The Deputy Chairman: Yes?

A Witness: As a member of the welfare council, I should like to put a question to you, and to the government. It is a question I also ask myself.

The Deputy Chairman: Poverty cannot be cured today; we cannot even answer your questions. Our purpose is to hear from you, and to accept briefs.

A Witness: I do not want you to answer, because I know you are quite capable of solving the problem of poverty, and I cannot solve it. The question I ask myself is the following: I get paid to do the same work as you are doing across Canada, and I know a fair number of people in the government in Ottawa who may be paid the same as you for doing the work you do, and I should like you to continue your work until your mandate expires, but I should like the government authorities to be asked how many committees on poverty there are in Canada at this time, dealing with the same problems and costing the government exorbitant amounts. How is it that there is a Senate committee on poverty, and a national welfare council. These are the questions I asked myself, and I put them to you; I should like to put them to you in the presence of the poor people here, the ones they call "poor", here. Because this is a debate that has to take place probably behind the scenes among government people, and they must know about it here.

Another thing—I should like the report the gentleman submitted this morning to be accepted; it was announced only yesterday that the Senate Committee would be sitting today; the people did not know, the newspapers did a poor job of informing them, and I should like this report to be accepted.

The Deputy Chairman: Very well.

Mr. Guy Savoie: I know the report is rather long, and it would take too long to read it here; we had no intention of reading it all. But there were some very important details to bring out. But now, after the initial misunderstanding which did nevertheless allow us to have some participation by the people, I shall refrain from reading it, but I should like anyway to give you some idea of how the report was drawn up. It was finished in June 1968, and was done by the people themselves, not by experts, and it may not have the scientific approach we would like it to have...

The Deputy Chairman: They were people from the Bathurst and Restigouche areas, that's fine, go on.

Mr. Savoie: The report was made in what was regarded as a pilot area. I would say that someone visited one family in ten getting answers to a fairly long questionnaire on local economic and social conditions. I should like now to express my sincere thanks to the gentleman over here, Mr. Hastings, for having

allowed the local poor people to be heard, and I would also thank the whole group for accepting the submission of this report, which was drawn up by the people themselves.

The Deputy Chairman: Perhaps I could enlighten the meeting a little; the reason I refused the report is that the same situation had occurred in three other places: someone came forward at the last moment to submit a report that was absolutely worthless. First, in any report, there are two parts: the critical part and the constructive part. You start by criticizing, and then you have to come up with some constructive suggestions, otherwise the whole thing is worthless. In three different places in this country, we were presented with conditions that I myself accepted; I said, "We'll look into it". Briefs have been submitted that were worthless, and when their authors had finished, they walked out as one man; they did not even want to have a discussion. I did not want any repetition of that, because so far we have had excellent understanding; the reason is that I saw the report, and I saw the date, and I became a little fearful. I thought it was perhaps an organization that had come to bombard us with their report, so to speak, to land a few quick blows and then leave saying "Do what you like, we are leaving, we don't want to see you, we are bored with you". We have had that said to us—"We are bored with you, we don't want to talk to you, we are sick of you."

Mr. Savoie: I am glad to hear you admit that you were fearful, that you were afraid, because the poor people have been afraid for years, afraid even to express themselves, for reasons that Mrs. Basque described just now. I think it is high time you politicians began to have a little fear, perhaps something good will come of it.

The Deputy Chairman: I should like to make a final remark, to the effect that having all these people coming here this morning to give their views, Mrs. Basque and the gentleman who came, is something that did not happen before, because the poor stayed at the back of the room, as Mrs. Basque said—"Be quiet, don't say anything, I'll say it for you". That happened all too often over the last twenty or twenty-five years. Today the poor people are standing up and saying their piece; they know what it is to live as they do. This did not happen in the past, and it is another great step forward. I am proud to see that these people are moving ahead. We haven't

cured all the problems—far from it. We do not expect to cure them today. This is a broad program, but if people can be made aware that poverty exists, and if we can get them to tell each other, the senators who are not on the Committee, then the M.P.'s, then the ministers, and to visit the regions and see that poverty exists in some places side-by-side with affluence; but it is not an easy task to arrange it, it takes a lot of organizing. When the poor can express themselves, I am proud, and I admit that we save both time and effort.

A Witness: Have you made any contact with the rich?

The Deputy Chairman: No, and I would say in answer to your question that this Senate Committee is the senatorial wing of the poor. Almost all the senators—I for one have worked with pick and shovel, I have done all sorts of work. And when I went to school, there was no bus. I used to walk five miles. I took my lunch with me, and I hid because I was afraid that the other children would see what I was eating—"plugs". Many of us have lived in poverty. Senator Croll, Chairman of the Committee, was born poor, an immigrant; he worked very hard and made a success of his life, he became a lawyer, a professional man. I did not have that good fortune. Senator Quart comes from a poor family. Senator Eudes of Montreal comes from a poor family as well. Senator Hastings comes from a poor family in Alberta. So we are all poor people. There are no millionaires among us—not one. You can take my word for it, because the millionaires in the Senate, like those elsewhere, would not be ready to give up their vacations as we are now. And don't think that the travelling does not involve us in any personal expense. It brings us a great deal of expense we have to meet ourselves. We give up our vacations, travel at night so as to be on the spot in the morning, and our little group pays its own way as we try to solve the problem. We see what some of our colleagues do not see.

A Witness: That's what I wanted to know; apart from that, I am unable to address you, I cannot sign my name.

The Deputy Chairman: That's all right, Madam.

A Witness: I can tell you that I have had problems. I have been without heat, because I draw just \$115 a month from the army; I have had no other help. I think I now owe \$125 for

oil; I have owed it for a year, and I cannot pay it. Winter is coming, and I am still in the same position. If we could have our Veteran's minister here once a month, during the fall, perhaps we could get things done, but he came there to the atom thing and we lost sight of him. I called him when I got home, and he disappeared, the minister disappeared.

Mr. Ernest Thibault: I have a host of problems with housing. Mr. Thériault spoke of it just now. My problem is that I sold my house to the nuns. I thought it was a good move because I wanted to go and live in St-Albert; I like it. In St-Albert, all the land is taken. I am unable to build, it is impossible. I saw some mobile homes in St-Albert. I did not know what to do with those things. I work, and I don't have time to seek advice. I am not often at meetings like this, I don't have the time. I do casual work.

I tried to find a house here in Campbellton; I found one for \$3,500 belonging to Mr. George Mann. It was not fit to sleep in; it was not fit to accommodate my family. In the same place there were people who were really poor. I wanted to buy the house for \$3,500, because I do some construction work myself. I sold our house to the nuns. Sister Green is here, and she knows that I paid for everything in connection with the building, and I don't owe the city of Campbellton a cent for taxes, water or light.

I have been without wages for two weeks, and I cannot support my family. Two of us work; my wife works a bit. We have seven children, but between us we have always kept off welfare; I don't know how. What I want to bring out is that my wife and I worked day and night to get what we have. We were forced to sell.

I had no money. We worked. That affair cost us \$15,000. Finally, we worked with that; the interest charges and the banks meant that I still had to sell my house.

Anyway, to cut it short, I bought a mobile home. I paid cash for it, and I have proof in my wallet here, if you want to see it, that I paid cash. When I had paid for it, I didn't have a cent. I had it moved to St-Albert. The police here in St-Albert, they needed money; when they go by they call it Little Montreal, because they sent for some of us. They do not know St-Albert, they call it Little Montreal. But what does this all mean? I lost two weeks' work over the trailer. All the councillors in all the districts around here, they like to make me wait and then say: "I'll call you

around noon". Then they call around noon and say: "I'll call you around five". I'm still waiting for the call. They lost me a whole day like that, waiting for an answer. Do you think it is warm in a house, even a \$15,000 one, without a fire? A good stove, a bathroom, I cannot put my children there.

The Deputy Chairman: Is the electricity in?

A Witness: The electricity is in at our home. I don't want them to give it to me, I want to pay for it. I rented my land from Mr. Robert Perron; I have the receipt in my pocket, it is paid for for a year, water supplied. I have been waiting for a week for the electricity. I went to the City of Campbellton to ask permission to bring water in there. The water man, Paul Doucet, came to see me, and I could see he had come about the Trans-Canada. There are men who are profiting on bringing in electricity; then he went a little further on in his car. Then he sees that the trailer is nearby, and there is no water and no sewer. There are no sewers in St-Albert; why couldn't I live in St-Albert, like anyone else there, until I find a place?

I said that I am in city accommodation here; I can get by on my own. I said I did not want to build a house, I knew it was impossible to build here. I moved the trailer, and now I am stuck; I cannot get electricity,

it's impossible. I go to see one of them, and he says to go and see another. The other one is not there, then I go back to one and he says go and see another. I am very discouraged. I can work. We both work. We do our best. We can work. We are capable of work. Last winter I was at school. The sisters bought my house, because I was about to be thrown out. I could not pay, I was lucky to have them. What could I do? Are there any councillors in here who are informed about that? There is not one; I don't see one. The mayor is here.

The Deputy Chairman: It is not easy for us, the members of the Committee, to answer your question.

A Witness: I have just one question to ask you. I am on welfare; when I asked for help, they sent a cheque for the two of us, my wife and me. I drew \$125 a month. Another poor woman next door has four children, and with heating she draws just \$102 a month. What sort of gimmick is that?

The Deputy Chairman: I cannot answer. I would say it is unjust. There is no reason, and the person to give you a reply, and solve your problem—it is not up to us. We cannot answer you.

The meeting is adjourned. We thank you.

APPENDIX "A"

Brief to be Presented to The Senate Committee on Poverty, September 3, 1970 at 9:00 a.m. Campbellton Centennial Library Committee Members: Councillor R. G. Dawson, Chairman; Mayor W. T. McRae; Councillor J. R. Roussy; Councillor J. M. Harquail; Councillor R. Boulay; Rev. Father Ouellet; Rev. V. A. Smith; Rev. Father Pelletier; Captain Mackenzie; Dr. J. H. M. Rice; Dr. William MacPherson; Mrs Thérèse Aubin, V.O.N.; Sister M. Green, Welfare; Mr. Hector Arseneau, Manager N.B.H.C.

Gentlemen of the Special Senate Committee on Poverty:

It is indeed a pleasure to present on behalf of the city of Campbellton these remarks on this most important subject. It is even more important that the views of our citizens be expressed at this particular time. You, no doubt, are aware that our provincial government has embarked on a similar excursion to hear the views of the people of this province on a widened subject they term as "social development".

Our council has taken the occasions of the visit of your committee and the recent visit of the provincial task force on social development as a most important opportunity to express the opinions of our citizens.

We have formed a special committee of members of council, members of the clergy, medical profession, public health and people dealing with the problems of social welfare. In committee meetings, as well as recent public meetings, many areas have been explored. This brief will present a condensed version of the opinions expressed.

I will quote from the White paper of social development, tabled in the New Brunswick Legislative Assembly March 31, 1970, as follows: "We believe the family to be the fundamental unit in society. Steps must be taken to help preserve the family in its adjustment to modern urban life".

We believe this statement to be most important and choose to examine the different problems of family living, particularly for those people below the poverty level.

I am sure you have had the occasion to visit many homes in the St. Albert district during your tour yesterday. We do not want to dwell on the conditions of these families to any great extent, as one look is worth a thou-

sand words. We do, however, want to take the Maltais family, which I hope you met, and consider their plight.

If we could start today to do the necessary things to improve this family's conditions, the first and most obvious need would be adequate housing. You may have noticed that this family of ten lives in a two storey run-down building. The parents sleep downstairs on a sofa and five children sleep on one filthy double mattress, with a hole in the middle I must report, and the other three on a single mattress in the upstairs. Toilet facilities consist of a red plastic pail which, when filled, is dumped out the upstairs window.

We believe that the answer to this problem is low cost housing. Low income housing has been clearly demonstrated as a successful approach in our city. The city of Campbellton, along with participation from the New Brunswick housing corporation and Central Mortgage & Housing Corporation, undertook a land assembly project in the Andersonville area which you visited. The old houses were demolished and the people relocated. A large portion moved to the 104 low cost units, which you as well visited yesterday. Of the 26 families moved, 16 adjusted excellently. In 4 families, one of the parents was an alcoholic, but their children appreciated the new home. One of these families is improved. In one family there was no change. Three are improving. One family has been evicted and another should be. We can only conclude that the overall result is most encouraging. The comments from the people who have adjusted properly are such as to make anyone responsible for the project very proud. We believe that the attitude of the provincial government and the federal government in their determination, through cooperation of municipal governments, to provide low cost housing is one which has to be commended.

We feel most strongly that the same approach must be used in St. Albert. The properties must be purchased and levelled and the families relocated. The new low cost housing must consider the plight of the larger families such as the Maltais' to make it possible to house themselves. Central Mortgage & Housing Corporation, as well as New Brunswick Housing Corporation should consider families who cannot be offered public housing. Bigger units must be provided at reasonable rents. The St. Albert District has 119 buildings that must be demolished. 134 fami-

lies must be rehoused and 16 of these do not qualify under the present standard of two people per bedroom.

Should it therefore become possible for the Maltais family to obtain reasonable housing with proper services. The next important need is an adequate income. Mr. Maltais is a seasonal employee of the city of Campbellton and usually obtains six to eight months work per year. He pays \$30.00 per month rent. At the time of our last visit, he had only seven plates to feed his family. We believe that family allowances should be restructured for those living in poverty. The scale of payments to a foster parent in Ontario is \$60 to \$75 per month per child. Should not a natural parent be entitled to at least \$50 per child? 77 per cent of the wage earners in St. Albert earn less than \$3,000. Per annum. Only 9 per cent earn over \$4,000. If increased allowances are combined with changes in the income tax act designed to remove the benefit from those that do not need it, the overall cost would not be great. Mr. Maltais should not be penalized for working. It seems that present policy discourages able bodied recipients from working because of loss of welfare, or unemployment benefits. We strongly recommend that all physically and mentally able recipients should work and a comprehensive program developed, tying in all levels of government to provide for useful employment such as beautification, tourism, fighting pollution projects, which would make a recipient feel he was contributing to the general well being of all Canadians. We feel worthwhile projects as mentioned would contribute to the recipient's

opportunity of keeping his dignity and maintaining his pride. His income, coupled with increased family allowances, should provide an adequate standard of living.

A survey of people living in the 104 low cost units in Campbellton shows that the lower the income, the more the families are subject to family breakups. (See attached form "A"). We feel that the family allowance increase to those in need is a must to preserve the family unit in Canada.

The poverty children are the ones who really suffer. We now have the Maltais family housed and provided with at least enough income to survive. Education becomes of prime importance. Our provincial government, under the program of equal opportunity, is doing its utmost to provide for the education of the child, as well as the retraining of skills for adults. Who educates the family to live in these new houses? How to use the toilet facilities? How to budget the new income provided? This, we believe, is the biggest downfall of all levels of government. Trained Family Counsellors should be provided for the guidance of these families. Family counsellors would advise the family on:

(A) Budgeting, including recognition of what is non-essential and what is essential.

(B) Job opportunities and retraining.

(C) General everyday problems that seem simple to people of higher income.

FORM "A"

Monthly Income	Average Family Size	% of Families Intact	% of Families Receiving social assistance	% of Total Families	% of Families Classed as Multi-problem	% of Families relocated from substandard Accommodation
0-150	6.5	45	72.7	7.7	54.5	72.7
150-300	5.3	80.8	2.5	3.9	11.9	54.7
300-450	5.3	93	0	0	8.6	41.3
450-600	7.0	100	0	0	0	50

*Multi-Problem—Families with a record of Marital Discord, Delinquency and Unemployment.

This aspect of relieving the Maltais plight is most important. It seems that once a person is in need, everything to upgrade himself is very difficult. For example, a family at poverty level recently had the unfortunate experience of losing their son, due to an automobile accident. The father had co-signed at a finance company and there remained a balance of \$83.00. This family was just existing and, while they were honest, their income was small. On top of funeral expenses, they were afraid they would be responsible for the balance of the account at the finance company. They took a cab into the city and were advised that the balance would be covered by life insurance and all they had to do was have three copies of the proof of death completed by the doctor. The doctor in question lived in another area so they took a cab to that area where they were advised that there was a fee of \$9.00 to fill out these three forms. At this time, after paying the cab, they did not have the funds to get the forms completed. A family counsellor, in this case, could have advised these people.

We believe that the government should make available to people of the poverty level, through their family counsellors, low interest loans for essential items and services. Mr. Maltais, for example, may require a washer in his new home. His counsellor would sit down with him, set up his budget and acquire the funds through the bank at low interest rates and government guaranteed. It may surprise you to know that, while the Campbellton area has been designated a special area under different federal programs, it has had a used car market higher than any other in this province for over ten years. This is only mentioned to show that, should Mr. Maltais require transportation to his job, he would pay high prices for his car as well as increased interest rates of close to 20 per cent at small loan companies. This again points out the need for family counsellors.

Who would be a family counsellor? Where would the trained personnel to accommodate all the people in need be obtained? We suggest that a government sponsored program be initiated whereby special training be given people who qualify and the only stipulation be that the person work in a poverty area for a period of time after graduation.

You may have noticed that one of the Maltais children did not react to sound. This is a result of treatment not being given at the earlier stages of this child's condition. We feel that *improved medical services* in the homes through medical teams of a doctor, nutritionist, physiotherapist, etc., is an absolute necessity.

Industrial promotion is a must for the overall development of people at the poverty level. We have, in this area, a trade school which will open in the fall. Once these people are trained, where will they work?

We feel that the incentives presently provided under the department of regional economic expansion, along with local initiative, can attract industry to our area. We do feel, however, that one aspect of industrial promotion requires mention at this time.

Once a community or region has an industrial development board, which is active such as the North Shore Industrial Development Commission in our area, the federal government should contribute to the salary of a full time industrial promotion officer. When you compete for industry, you are competing with every community in North America and volunteer or part time people cannot fulfill this task. Another aspect of industrial promotion is low cost transportation. In order for us to compete, it is imperative that the federal government continue to adopt measures that will insure realistic transportation costs.

We have tried, by using the Maltais family as an example, to point out the necessary action to improve the plight of the poverty stricken in our area. Multiply this one example by a hundred or a thousand, and we are aware of the tremendous task you have before you. We cannot, however, be anything but upset and disturbed when we hear of the tremendous amounts of money being allotted by our federal government in aid and grants to other countries. We do not deny that there is a need, but we feel the tremendous need here in our area and hope we've made an impression on your committee of this great need and that our suggestions and recommendations will bring about the necessary changes.

In summary, we feel that the areas of concern to provide for the increased standard of living for those at poverty level are:

- (1) Adequate housing.
- (2) Provision of income through increased family allowances to those at poverty level.
- (3) Education, both child and adult.
- (4) Family counselling.
- (5) Low interest loans, guaranteed by federal government.
- (6) Improved home medical services.
- (7) Industrial promotion.

APPENDIX "B"

The poor...rich or not!

A brief to the Special Senate Committee on Poverty. Rev. Fr. A. Enoil Thériault, St-Jean-Baptist, Restigouche County, N.B. September 3, 1970.

Foreword

I could have submitted a brief on housing, or on the shortages of goods and services experienced by those with low incomes, and ended by recommending negative taxation or a guaranteed income. Everyone agrees on this subject. The main barrier to its implementation is the *how*.

I could also have submitted a brief on welfare, but in that case, I would have had to mention the Canadian companies that are on welfare. One talks of companies receiving "incentives", but poor people are said to be "on welfare"; as you can see, there is considerable confusion.

I chose rather to express my views on the poor, either rich or destitute.

Introduction

1. Poverty is a fashionable subject these days. The "war on poverty" slogan rings through the land. In 1968 and 1969, the Economic Council of Canada included chapters on the subject in its fifth and again in its sixth *Annual Review*.

2. Poverty has become an economic issue, and thus a matter of dollars.

3. I shall leave your attention to the fact that poverty and the poor do not equate.

4. We shall see that poverty is reckoned in millions of dollars, while the poor is physically, morally and spiritually handicapped.

5. Secondly, I shall point to a few solutions. In conclusion, I shall indicate a path for future research.

Poverty and its Causes

A—What poverty is.

6. Poverty is a by-product of affluence.

7. If the present abundance of goods and services did not exist, there would be no poverty. If there were no English Canadians, there would be no French problem in Canada. If there were no whites, there would be no black problem.

8. People are so absorbed in the purchasing of consumer goods, there is nothing left and

no time to spare for taking care of the environment.

9. In the nineteenth century, technology rendered the production of all these goods possible. To meet the demands of technology, however, we have had to build a technological—and hence mechanical—culture.

10. Machines are very demanding, and do not think. They want to produce. We live in a production-oriented society.

11. All the "developed" countries have organized their educational systems to produce machine-like men and women.

12. The more we have less people who think, the more specialized and mechanical we become, the more "developed" we shall be. This is still the criteria of success today.

13. Our national objective, like that of any "developed" country, is to produce; the proof of this is the fact that we still measure a country's health by its GNP, its Gross National Product, capitalized like the Almighty.

14. No man can produce as economically as a machine; gradually, people are being eliminated from industry, people being scrapped just as materials are scrapped.

15. The earth has become a human dump.

16. He who pollutes the environment will have to pay the cost of cleaning it up. You don't ask the fish to clean up the polluted river he lives in! Don't ask the poor to clean somebody else's mess.

17. Because of technology, it is one hundred years since we have been able to use more than three of our five senses: sight, hearing and smell.

18. You will note that these are *inputs*. These three senses are reception mechanisms. Let us listen to the radio or the television. Let us read the papers, and go and see films. Let us smell food cooking at Steinberg's or the Dominion store.

19. The right to speak and touch is denied us. The result is that we are handicapped; that's what being poor means!

20. We are always on the receiving end. Our batteries are charged and recharged. It's an explosive situation. What is charged must some day discharge—or explode.

21. The underlying reason for the great concern for the poor we find today is not our

lack of consumer goods, but rather our explosiveness—our violence.

22. The only way of preserving this handicap indefinitely, of preventing people from speaking and enjoying personal contact, is centralization.

23. The farther we are from where decisions are made, the less involved we become. We never meet face-to-face with someone who is responsible for what goes on. A responsible man is the one who has the answer.

24. We are never able to contact and speak to the minority of well-meaning people who "program" us and make the decisions for us.

25. Centralization makes police states. When you program people, you have to watch them to make sure they stay programmed.

26. Yet men are made for dialogue, give and take, personal contact, neighbourliness, human relations and responsibility.

27. Men cannot be broken down into components, like machines. They need total involvement.

28. Centralization effectively prevents total involvement, or at least weakens it. Everywhere you hear: Don't talk, and above all, don't touch. This is what makes a man poor.

29. A poor is not so much a man who has a greater or lesser amount of wealth as a man who is handicapped by being prevented from using all his senses.

30. He who never listens is poor. He who always listens is equally poor! He who never speaks is poor. He who always speaks is equally poor! He who never decides anything is poor. He who decides everything is equally poor! He who never has any contact is poor. He who always has contacts is equally poor! He who has no material goods is poor. He who has all the material goods is equally poor!

31. The development of exchanges in all fields and at every level can just as easily be a servitude and a constraint as it can be a liberating influence and an opportunity for dialogue.

B—Remedies for Poverty

(a) Equipping with "outputs" those who have none!

32. Don't give me a radio, give me a radio station!

Don't give me a television set, give a television station!

Don't give me a newspaper, give me a printing press!

Don't give me a record-player, give me a musical instrument!

Don't tell me what to do—let me tell you what to do!

33. The true, inevitable and desirable human evolution is towards a democratic socialization of all communal activities in all areas:

political, economic, social and cultural.

(b) Regional government on a human scale—decentralization.

34. The democratic socialization of structures, institutions and services means:

—active participation;—decentralization of responsibility; —a grappling with the real problems of life; —an awareness of problems at the grass-roots level, where the people are, and on a personal basis.

35. Every man should be aware that we must adopt a dual approach:

—a trend towards *personalization*, in which each individual progresses towards the development of his full potential; the use of all five senses—*input—output*; —a trend towards greater *sociability* and thus a greater humanity.

36. We must co-ordinate the two movements, so that the individual becomes a member of the community, masters communal life and moves beyond it, and so that society is so ordered as to serve the individual and not enslave and impoverish him.

37. One way of achieving this is regional government on a human scale, based on proximity, personal contact and dialogue—a community of responsible men, remembering always that the man who is responsible is the one who has the answers.

(c) Mechanism¹ required

1. Overall planning

38. It is often said that the poor have not adapted to the changes that the 70's have brought.

39. Allow me to differ: industry and government have failed to adapt to those changes.

¹ Mechanism: A combination of organisations, instruments and men or women brought together to give a specific result.

40. Since Adam Smith and Keynes, we have had free enterprise and competition. What was good for one time is not necessarily good for all time. This is where government and industry are failing today.

41. We need integrated overall planning, and all we have are fragmented and specialized data.

42. Industry should be the servant of the community. Competition prevents this; industry must produce what is competitive.

43. Mechanism should be established for integrated overall economic and social planning that is co-ordinated and offers alternatives.

2. Consultation at all levels

44. Since IBM machines and data processing arrived, the only thing left to men that machines cannot do is the making of choices.

45. The alternatives supplied by the technocrats should be presented to people so that they may choose.

46. They will thus be able to express the reasons behind their lives and their cultural, spiritual and moral values. Through the alternatives presented to them, they will have an opportunity at the same time to learn the reasons that govern the lives of the technocrats.

47. I recommend the establishment of integrated consultation mechanism at the local, municipal, regional, provincial and federal levels, so that expert theorists may meet experts on practice.

3. Implementation

48. We are accustomed to separating the legislative from the executive. You know how much flexibility is needed in execution because of the speed of change.

49. I recommend that the technocrat who conceives a proposal and the legislator who enacts it as law should become the executors of their proposal. This will enable the technocrats to become "drop-outs" from the bureaucracy, and the legislators to become "drop-outs" from the legislature.

50. The only way I know to keep in touch with reality is to be a *drop-out*. This applies

to teachers, students, doctors, engineers, members of Parliament and even senators.

4. Evaluation

51. Finally, evaluation mechanism will have to be set up to permit comparison of objectives pursued and progress achieved.

52. The means at our disposal and those used with regard to constraints.

53. The values or reasons of life, and our attitudes.

C—Conclusion

54. In conclusion, allow me to suggest a path for future research.

55. John Kenneth Galbraith examines motivation theory in chapter XI of his book, *The New Industrial State*. He sees four kinds of motivation.

56. 1. Negative motivation—the fear of *punishment*.

57. 2. Pecuniary motivation—the *reward*.

58. 3. "Humans, in contrast to machines, evaluate their own positions in relation to the value of others and come to accept others' goals as their own."...Following Professor Herbert Simon, this motivating influence may be called *identification*."

59. 4. "Finally, the individual may serve the organization not because he considers its goals superior to his own but because he hopes to make them accord more closely with his own... A name for it must be coined and I propose to call it *adaptation*."

60. I recommend the following research:

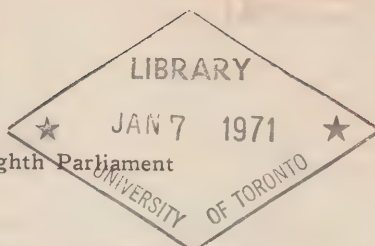
61. Analysis of all governmental, public and private organizations in Canada to determine which of the four kinds of motivation is experienced by their members or employees.

62. Only the last two kinds of motivation are human and lasting. The first two serve only to perpetuate the past.

63. When this research is completed and the kinds of motivation have been identified, I believe we shall be ready to build our future and eliminate piecemeal remedies.



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament
1969-70



THE SENATE OF CANADA

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE

ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 69

THURSDAY, SEPTEMBER 3, 1970

WITNESSES:

The Regional Chamber of Commerce for Lower St. Lawrence Region:
Mr. Paul Gelinac; Mr. Jean Ménard; Mr. P. E. Bernier; Mr. André
Bellavance; Mr. Viateur de Champlain.

APPENDIX:

"A"—Brief submitted by the Regional Chamber of Commerce for Lower
St. Lawrence Region.

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—

Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—

Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

“With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.”

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

Thursday, September 3, 1970
City Hall, Rimouski.

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 8.00 p.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*) in the Chair, Eudes, Hastings, Lefrançois, McGrand and Quart. (6)

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

THE REGIONAL CHAMBER OF COMMERCE FOR LOWER ST. LAWRENCE
REGION:

Mr. Paul Gélinas;
Mr. Jean Ménard;
Mr. P. E. Bernier;
Mr. André Bellavance;
Mr. Viateur de Champlain.

The brief presented by the Regional Chamber of Commerce for Lower St. Lawrence Region was ordered to be printed as Appendix "A" to these proceedings.

At 9.30 p.m. the Committee adjourned until Friday, September 4, 1970, at 9.00 a.m.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

Rimouski, Quebec, September 3, 1970.

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 8.00 p.m.

Senator Edgar E. Fournier (*Deputy Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Deputy Chairman: I call the meeting to order. You will see that we have minor translation problems. We have the personnel and the equipment but we have not had time to get the necessary room for installing the machines; therefore, this evening we are going to try to get along as best we can. We are going to try and understand one another and dialogue fairly satisfactorily.

First I would like to tell the people of Rimouski how pleased and happy we are to be here tonight. This week we have just completed our work in New Brunswick. We are now on our way back home and we would not have wanted to return home any other way than through Rimouski. Rimouski is a place that is not foreign to many of us—certainly not to me, even though I do not come often. We are familiar with the kindness and friendly atmosphere prevailing here in Rimouski. We are in a French-Canadian, a Quebec city, and we are pleased. We are also pleased to be able to express ourselves in our own language. In a number of communities across Canada we have not always had the services of a translator because that was not necessary; here, everyone agrees, it is necessary, and we are pleased to go along with this service.

Our work consists not in righting poverty nor looking for it, but in finding solutions to the problem. That will not be easy. Our trips across Canada have convinced us of certain things. We have been able to realize that the poor in general are grouped in various locations; the problems are the same everywhere in those groups, the complaints are the same, the demands are the same.

Now, coming back to Rimouski, we have four briefs. I have read one of them and I shall have the opportunity to read the others this evening. It is the custom to read briefs in advance. I think that I can assure you, tell you most sincerely, that we do not believe that we are going to learn of new sins in Rimouski. It is going to be a review of the old ones. You will understand

that, after studying now close to one hundred and forty-five briefs in the past eighteen months, we have seen all kinds. But there is nothing to prevent the problem that affects certain milieux, whether in New Brunswick, in Quebec, in Manitoba or British Columbia, problems that are nearly the same.

We have asked the welfare people, the chambers of commerce, city councils, clubs, societies, all the groups involved with the poor to present briefs to us and they were all almost of the same type. We also asked groups of poor people to present briefs to us. There we encountered a few difficulties, because the poor usually get behind a leader, one who becomes their spokesman. Then the people are rather timid and let themselves be led by the spokesmen when they are asked questions during a meeting, and it is quite difficult to dialogue openly. We have also noticed that when we visit them, away from public meetings, they are more expansive. Therefore, without further comment. I believe that you understand the aim of our Committee. I am somewhat repeating myself, but we do not offer immediate solutions to the problem. We are not out looking for poverty, but we are sincerely endeavouring to find solutions to the problem.

We believe that it will take perhaps four months to finish our work. Maybe I am speaking somewhat in a vacuum, but from my experience I would say it will take perhaps four months before we have completely compiled the briefs, studied them and discussed them with various departments concerned before submitting our recommendations that we think will be acceptable to the government.

We are convinced that there is duplication of services in a city. For example, you will find in a community of perhaps three thousand, some forty organizations involved in helping the poor, and only a few of these organizations know one another. Everyone is working with good intentions, but no one knows what is being done across the street. So, we have found weaknesses, and so on. There will certainly be big changes to be made in welfare. We spend nearly \$4 billion in social services, and that is a lot of money, but in many cases it is not directed to the poor, to the person who needs it most. In other instances, much too much money falls into the hands of others who need it less. All these things we have realized, and we

are going to try to make recommendations that will be acceptable.

Mr. Paul Gélinas, President of the Regional Chamber of Commerce of the Lower St. Lawrence, is here this evening. I would like to say to Mr. Gélinas that usually we do not require that the person presenting the brief should read it because we have already read it. We ask questions. We ask you to bring out the ideas in your brief, and I believe that you could give us a few ideas when we ask you questions about poverty in the area, unemployment, what the people do, the number of families, etc. It is also interesting to read a brief. We have dozens of the same type. The problems are almost the same everywhere—those in Rivière-du-Loup, Campbellton, Edmundston. It is about the same everywhere.

Senator Lefrançois: We do not have the brief.

The Deputy Chairman: No, we shall have it after the meeting.

Mr. Paul Gélinas, Past President, Regional Chamber of Commerce of the Lower St. Lawrence: Mr. Chairman, ladies, gentlemen, the Chamber of Commerce is honoured that you have kindly agreed to receive its humble opinion on certain problems which concern the area, but we are also somewhat dismayed this evening for having to make excuses to you as a result of circumstances beyond our control, since the meeting this evening was organized fairly quickly with the organizers. I see Mr. Leblanc here, and there are also others who have co-operated by being here this evening. Tomorrow I have to be absent. I was asked to present this brief report to you, this short point of view, this evening already. I apologize on my own behalf and also on that of our current president. I was introduced as the president of the regional Chamber, but I am the outgoing president. I have completed my term, but I was given this task since our president cannot be here tonight.

The Regional Chamber of Commerce is not only for Rimouski, because we cover the territory from Causapscal to Ste-Flavien, in the Matapédia Valley, along the sea. This is the territory of our regional chamber. There are nine chambers of commerce grouped together into one regional chamber and we believe that this is a point of view, their point of view, that we want to give. It is not necessarily the point of view which may apply to the whole Gaspé, since we do not cover the Gaspé. Furthermore, I do believe that tomorrow other associations will come and present briefs covering that vaster area. Nevertheless, some of our comments apply equally well to the territory as a

whole and have been studied by the development office that we are endeavouring to develop.

I must apologize for my English but I do not speak it very often. However, if some of the distinguished members of the committee want to ask us questions, there are members of the Chamber of Commerce present who can answer in English or in French.

Representing the Chamber of Commerce this evening are Mr. André Bellavance, president of the local chamber and a director of the regional chamber; Mr. Paul-Émile Bernier, manager of the Laiterie Pasteur and a member of the Rimouski Chamber of Commerce, Mr. Reginald Breton, who deals with public relations in Quebec; Mr. Paul Bégin director of our industrial development in the city, who is also member of the Chamber of Commerce, Mr. Richard Filion, who has his own business; Mr. Jean Ménard, an engineer and director of the Rimouski Chamber of Commerce, and Miss Nicole Veillette, who is a member of the Mont-Joli Chamber of Commerce. Therefore, there are two Chambers of Commerce represented here.

It is up to those who are responsible for people to make sure that they have a type of life suitable to them. Inequalities between mankind are not in themselves either tragic or dramatic. What is tragic are the inequalities in meeting the basic needs of man. How can one condone living in ease when in certain areas of our country men are suffering from poverty? And those who live in misery are sometimes too easily resigned because poverty breeds poverty. But it is up to man to change what is preventing actual progress in the individual and in society. We all live in a region, here in lower Quebec, which is almost cut off from the major markets and the economic mainstreams. Our population is scattered over a vast area. The Gaspé is almost a province in itself. Despite everything, we have a rich physical and human potential which is not lacking in goodwill and which asks only to rise above under-development. Here, under-development does not mean resources but the production, processing and marketing of our products.

I wish to add a final word to our report. It is relatively easy to determine the wealth or poverty of a country or region. No one overlooks the fact that the population of a country or a region is centred in large part on a primary sector. At a given moment there may be an economic situation unfavourable to the population, and that is often synonymous with poverty. One of the main points of development in our region is that jobs are mainly in the primary sector,

that is, in the primary exploitation of raw materials, lumber, agriculture, fishing, mines, without there being any processing of these products and without there being any marketing in our region. We also know that the economic activities of the primary sector fall mainly into the area of exploitation of raw materials. Furthermore, these activities in the primary sector often contribute to creating seasonal fluctuations in the demand for employment. The number of workers in the primary sector causes higher unemployment than elsewhere. This is why our region experiences periods of unemployment that in no way promote the economic well-being of the population. These seasonal fluctuations in the job demand therefore entail a high rate of unemployment for our region, which is approximately 20 per cent compared to a provincial rate of about 9 per cent for this year.

But this rather tragic factor is not the only one. Provincially there is twice the manpower in the secondary sector than in our region. Compared with the province, the manpower employed in the tertiary sector in our area is lower. You can see the figures in table 1 at the end of the report. Those are 1961 figures but they served as a basis for the development bureau's study and they are the latest figures that we can use as a basis. They have not changed too much.

Right away we appear disadvantaged compared with the rest of the province. However, those are not the only difficulties. Needless to say that when a fairly large percentage of the population in a region cannot find employment, the situation worsens. The percentage of unemployed in the region is two times higher than in the province as a whole. These unemployed reduce the possibilities for well-being of the working population because, despite a relatively low level of well-being, the employed have to subsidize that portion of the population. Furthermore, the area has, compared with the rest of the province, a fairly high rate of persons receiving allowances for the blind, the disabled and invalids. Table 11 of this report shows what the regional percentage is compared with the province.

In addition to these facts, the rural population in the region is almost as large as the urban population and this creates problems with respect to lack of development. A rural population does not necessarily mean agricultural population. The rural environment is the centre of primary activities where the pay is poor and where employment is rather unsteady. Therefore, we note here that about two-thirds of the rural population have incomes below \$4,000 whereas only half the urban population is in this situation.

For the area as a whole, the result of all this is that a portion of the population and often not the smaller portion, emigrate to more prosperous regions. Businesses have difficulty in getting their products on outside markets. For the majority of the local population the level of education is relatively low, and as a result it cannot find employment elsewhere than in the primary sector.

As we have already pointed out, we certainly have the possibilities for wealth—an abundance of raw materials and human resources, but judging from the description we have just given, these possibilities have not been developed as they should have been. This is why we are inclined to believe that if in agriculture, which is a very important activity in our region, research and planning were undertaken, it might be possible to help adjust the various productions of foodstuffs to meet our domestic and export market potentials.

This rather tragic economic situation and high rate of unemployment leads us to believe that a policy of industrial decentralization would be beneficial and that greater cooperation between the two levels of government would help a very large portion of the population in our region to rise above the poverty level.

The local population is aware of these facts. What remains to be done, perhaps, is not to inform the population because often statistics are overwhelming because they are so intensive. The area would certainly experience a rise in the standard of living if the people actually participated in its progress. This is why we believe that this participation is extremely urgent, because as Robert Kennedy said: justice and the impression of participating in the life of the nation are prerequisites without which no material progress can be achieved.

Distinguished members of the committee, this is our brief. We have tried to present a few ideas about industrialization, marketing, employment, and conditions which can create poverty in our environment. Perhaps other associations will speak to you more intensely about these matters in the briefs that will be submitted to you.

I am prepared, with the other members of the Chamber of Commerce, to answer questions on the statistics. Perhaps we do not have all the statistics and some figures may have to be checked, but we are prepared to answer questions.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you, Mr. Gelinas. Are there other members of the Chamber of Commerce

who would like to add a word before we go on to questions? Are there any questions ready? I have a few. Senator McGrand, you have a question?

Senator McGrand: Yes. You said that unemployment in this area was about twenty percent as compared with nine percent for the province. Isn't that what you said?

Mr. Gélinas: Yes.

Senator McGrand: Now, when you say "this area," you are referring to Rimouski county and the counties on down?

Mr. Gélinas: No. We have statistics for all the regions of the Lower St. Lawrence and we don't have special statistics for Rimouski. Those statistics are for the Lower St. Lawrence part of the province.

Mr. André Bellavance, Director, Lower St. Lawrence Regional Chamber of Commerce: I am sorry. The right figure is 28 percent.

Senator McGrand: Now, a lot of these people in these counties are self-employed. They farm and are self-employed part of the time.

Mr. Gélinas: Yes.

Senator McGrand: On the other hand, many of the people living here are not self-employed on the land; at least you would not class them as farmers. They are workers.

Mr. Gélinas: We have a lot of farmers and we have a lot of people working in the woods, and they have only their residences in the rural area. The primary industries in the district, if we can call them that, are wood-working, farming, fishing and mining—we don't really have mining around here.

Senator McGrand: Well now, what percentage of the population—and I will say Rimouski County, would be what you could call "self-employed" on the land as farmers? What percentage would be the men depending on the woods or working in the woods? What percentage would that be?

Mr. Gélinas: I don't have the exact number.

Mr. Jean R. Ménard, Director, Lower St. Lawrence Regional Chamber of Commerce: Are you talking about in the County of Rimouski?

Senator McGrand: Yes.

Mr. Ménard: Well, half of the population lives in town here. They don't live off the land. The people

living in the rural part of the county, a good percentage of these people live there but they come to Rimouski for work and another good percentage also works a lumbermen for the lumber and paper companies.

If you want to have an exact figure on how many people or bread-winners or heads of families are working on the land, I will try and advance a guess.

Mr. Gélinas: From the statistics of Hydro-Quebec, we have less than two thousand farmers around here.

Senator McGrand: Now, you mentioned that you have an abundance of raw materials and I agree with you. You also have an abundance of human resources. Now, what would you feel would be a policy that would put this abundance of raw materials and human resources to work?

Mr. Gélinas: That is a difficult question. The first thing that we recommend in our report is to have industry here to occupy those men. A lot of people of the South Shore of the St. Lawrence are working on the North Shore for all the contracts of Hydro Quebec or North Shore Paper and on the South Shore of the St. Lawrence, there is nothing here.

Part of our material here is sent outside of the region to be worked outside. We cut the wood and it is transported outside the region to be worked at Quebec or Trois Riviere. That is very far from here and that is what we need—an industry here to occupy our men and to transform our main production and after that, to be able to put this on the market in the province or in the country.

Senator McGrand: How many heads of families in the city and the county of Rimouski are on welfare?

Mr. Gélinas: I don't know.

Senator McGrand: Well, Rimouski has a population of thirty thousand. What is the population of the city and the county? Would it be about forty-five thousand?

Mr. Gélinas: Rimouski has about thirty thousand people and the county about sixty-four thousand.

Senator McGrand: I will ask another question later on.

Mr. Bellavance: On welfare, about fifteen hundred in the city, heads of families.

Senator McGrand: In the city, 1,500?

Mr. Bellavance: Yes.

Senator McGrand: Well, have you any idea of how many would be in the county?

Mr. Bellavance: About fifteen hundred heads of families in the county and about half of that in the city. I am sorry. Fifteen hundred in the county and half of that, about seven hundred and fifty in the city.

Senator McGrand: I will ask another question later on.

Mr. Bellavance: Just to add a few other things on this point. This might be a little more because we are closing some parishes in the Gaspé region and many of those people will move to Rimouski or Matane because the governments are giving them grants to move to those cities, and we just don't know that they will do in Rimouski except live on welfare. Pointe Au Pere and the islands there—they are closing some places there.

Senator McGrand: Moving the people out?

Mr. Bellavance: Yes. They will be moving into Matane or Rimouski because they will have grants to move to Rimouski or Matane.

Senator McGrand: I have one more question, and I might as well ask it now. As we came through from the Matepedia Valley today—and this is not my first time through it, I was through it before, but one would get the impression that there was a fair degree of prosperity. You would get that impression as you go through it. The houses look good; the barns look good and some of fields look good.

These people I take it, are part of what we speak of as "the working poor." They don't earn too much money but they work on their farms when they can and they work in the woods but they are still below the average of what the Welfare Council considers an income to keep you above the poverty line.

There are two things you can do. You can move those people out of there or you can give them assistance to stay where they are. Now which do you prefer?

The Deputy Chairman: In the first place Senator McGrand, I think we should find out if they agree with your statement.

Senator Lefrançois: If the farmers come into Rimouski, is Rimouski going to have to find work for them? Not only will those who become unemployed have to be helped, so that they don't become a burden

on Rimouski, but Rimouski itself will have to be prepared to receive these people without increasing the number of unemployed.

Mr. Bellavance: You were talking about Pointe Au Pere. I was there yesterday myself and it is beautiful country and I think because it is beautiful, you might think everything is going well because if someone looks good, looks nice, you say he is in good health, and I think this is the case of the Matepedia Valley.

Yesterday, I heard people talking about the problems they have there, and they are planning to do what happened in Cavenau (sic) a few weeks ago.

They are planning the same thing for next week because the situation has never been so worse for many years. I think one of the main reasons for this is the fact that when the federal government decided to bring some corrections to the economy, like stopping the inflation, they applied this throughout the country and for a place like the Matepedia Valley it is sad, and the big reason for the problems they have there—because there is a certain local economy going on by itself and this economy has been hurt by the policies of the federal government and the finances being much more difficult, they are in trouble and the big companies there have cut their production for next fall and I think they thought it was good—it was not and we are going to hear about this part of the country very soon.

Senator McGrand: You said some of these people are being removed and they were given a subsidy of some sort to leave down there and they would come to a larger place such as Rimouski?

Mr. Bellavance: Yes.

Senator McGrand: And when they get here, they are going to end up on welfare?

Mr. Bellavance: Yes.

Senator McGrand: Now, which is better? Leave them where they are and pay them to stay there where they can earn a portion of their living or . . .

Mr. Bellavance: First I would like to mention that the ones that are going to be moved are not from the Matepedia Valley. They live in the back of Matin there, and if you were going to those places you would say the best thing to do is to move out of there because there are very few people living there.

There is no services; not even a nurse available, and some of the parishes are closed. Some of the

churches are closed—and so on, and it is impossible to live there. There is nothing to do there. The best thing to do it to move them out. Then I think you should help these people who are doing something in the City of Rimouski to promote the industry and last year we had a grant from the federal government for the development and we should have had the second grant in March of this year and we are still expecting it.

I think in places like this you should forget the school books sometime, and I myself have the impression that Ottawa is a little far from some of these places and some of these people should come down and see by themselves and have a little move authority to decide differently from different places.

Mr. Ménard: You asked if it would be much better to assist these people while living in their small villages. Well, there is much more than that.

Senator McGrand: I am speaking of those people that I saw on the farms, small farms, earning a portion of their living. Not enough perhaps to give them that standard that we hope to have, but should you move those people out or should you give them a subsidy of some kind to stay where they are so they can have a little extra money in their pockets?

Mr. Ménard: Well it is more than giving these people extra money. It is a question of maintaining homes in the winter time, maintaining schools and maintaining other facilities...

Senator McGrand: Services?

Mr. Ménard: Yes, so it costs more than that. You better get those people in town and give them twice as much as we are giving them now and it costs the state less because it costs a lot of money to keep their roads in shape, schools, teachers, and so on, up in the backwoods. I think we have to do more than that.

Senator McGrand: I was thinking of what we saw when we went through—the parts that I went through. I was think of the parts along the main roads.

Mr. Ménard: The paved roads?

Senator McGrand: Yes, the paved roads.

Mr. Ménard: Well you had better go on the gravel roads.

Senator McGrand: That is where I would have liked to have gone, and I think we should go.

The Deputy Chairman: Well Senator McGrand, you have received an answer to your question. He said it is better to keep them there.

Senator Quart: No. He said it is better to bring them here.

Senator Lefrançois: If they are going to have to be given allowances to come to Rimouski, they are going to have to have either welfare or unemployment allowances, because Rimouski cannot accept them and take on more unemployed than it already has; Rimouski is going to have to have subsidies.

Mr. Gélinas: Not only subsidies, but the development of industrial centres. Then, if the worthwhile people who are going to be moved, who are good workers even though their level of education may be low, could be trained in the regions which are at the same time being developed under government-aid programs, they could be encouraged to participate in the industrial development of the towns, whether at Rimouski, at Matane, at Ste-Anne-des-Monts, or at any of those places.

Senator Lefrançois: Rimouski is going to have to accept those people when they come, and they are going to have to be prepared to face the situation and not find themselves disappointed, for you are right, Rimouski is going to have to be helped. Aid has got to be given to industrial development, and that is not something that can be brought about from one day to the next. In the meantime you are going to have to have help.

Mr. Gélinas: It is the problem of colonial parishes which were open to colonists arriving in this country and settling on land which was no good for cultivation. There are about fifty or sixty families left, completely cut off from all services unless they go into another parish or to a town where they can get services, and the best place is the town of Rimouski.

Senator Eudes: You spoke just now of 1,500 heads of family who are on welfare.

Mr. Gélinas: That's right.

Senator Eudes: Could these heads of family be employed? I don't know how, but could they be employed? I want to connect things up a bit. You talk of man's basic needs, when what we are up against is perhaps a problem of retraining, as we say in French, an educational problem. I think you see more or less what I have in mind. Is unemployment caused by a local shortage of jobs or is it due to the fact that these people lack the necessary training to change jobs.

Mr. Gélinas: In the present circumstances, I think that most of those people would be ready and able to do a job if they had one.

Senator Eudes: When you say "a job", which one?

Mr. Gélinas: Suitable work. Take a town like Rimouski. There are two service companies, Hydro-Quebec and Quebec Telephone, and there are a few small companies. You have a situation in which the factory labourers are required to have a certain amount of skill with their hands but they are not likely ever become company managers. But at least if they had some work, there would be something to keep them busy.

Senator Eudes: And there isn't any at the moment?

Mr. Gélinas: There isn't any at the moment.

Senator Eudes: This is what you mean when you say "we have a rich human and physical potential which is willing and eager to work". Then you go on to say, "which asks only to emerge from its state of underdevelopment. It is not that there is any shortage of resources but production, transformation and commercialization are underdeveloped". What measures would you suggest for the development of these resources of yours? First of all, what are they, and secondly, what would you suggest?

Mr. Gélinas: In raw materials, we have wood, and for a long time nearly all the wood has been exported from the region, either to New Brunswick or out of the region. But there is still some work to be done, first of all in Lower Quebec where there are four paper mills, S.N. Soucy in Matane which makes cardboard, the paper mill in New Richmond, and Chandler. What else is there in Lower Quebec.

Senator Eudes: Are you suggesting that we go back to the paper mill and try to continue operations? Have you a suggestion to make?

Mr. Gélinas: These things need to be developed.

Senator Eudes: That is what I'm asking you—something fairly well-defined.

Mr. Gélinas: Yes, there are the mineral resources. There is a part of the Gaspé, the Matapédia valley, where research is being done right now. It is thought that there may be minerals there, and government bodies should undertake some research projects. This would create jobs in those places. That is one other field. As for the fishing industry, we don't mention it. There is secondary industry, i.e. the transformation of raw materials, and this should be set up in more than

just four towns in the region. It should be grouped, centralized.

Senator Eudes: Transformation should be done here.

Mr. Gélinas: Yes.

Senator Eudes: We should try to produce, not just gather raw materials and send them elsewhere.

Mr. Gélinas: This is what it takes. At the moment we have the personnel, and that is a great resource. We also have the natural resources. Two or three years ago, when Felix and Berg established themselves in Rimouski and needed specialized personnel, within a few months our technical schools and other educational establishments were able to develop a labour force here. We had the required technicians ready to work in those specialized industries. This proved that the human resources we have here can be prepared for working in production within a few months. You were talking of retraining just now. There is retraining going on in every field, but it is also going on with a view to adapting people to professions and jobs to such an extent that Rimouski is famous as an education centre.

Senator Eudes: With regard to education, is there a link? Do the unemployed or people who can't get jobs have an educational problem?

Mr. Gélinas: Even in education, we mention in our brief that people are emigrating.

Senator Eudes: I am talking about education.

Mr. Gélinas: That's just what I mean. Once the course is over, our young people and those who have done a special course work partly outside the region because of the lack of jobs in Rimouski. This is going on right here and now, and if the ones who have completed a full course go outside the region we are going to have workers left here, working in primary industry. Development will attract them here. We also have perhaps a more alarming member of young people than elsewhere who are unable to find work when they leave school.

Senator Eudes: In the present situation, education is not a problem here? You have all the facilities you need?

Mr. Gélinas: Well, no. For the education of the young there is no problem, but as to adult education there is the problem of getting in contact with them and ensuring them that there is an opportunity for them to profit by their training.

Senator Eudes: In short, they are educated by their children. I think you have answered another question I had in mind. You say that when people are concentrated for the most part in the primary sector, there is an economic situation in existence which is unfavourable to the people and which is often synonymous with poverty. I think you have answered my question there. I should like to have a little more explanation of "in our region, the percentage of the population employed in the primary sector is about three times greater than in the province as a whole".

Mr. Gélinas: If you take Table 1, which is a table of statistics for 1961, but which is nonetheless not so very much out of date, you will find that in the primary sector of industry in the region you have 35 per cent.

Senator Eudes: But what do you mean by primary sector?

Mr. Gélinas: It is the sector involved in the exploitation of raw materials, getting the minerals out of the mines, getting the wood from the forests, farming the land. That is what the primary sector of industry is. Transformation of these products is taking pulpwood and turning it into paper.

Senator Eudes: That becomes secondary.

Mr. Gélinas: Secondary. Then there is the tertiary, which relates to training. If you take the 35 per cent in the primary sector in our region and compare it to the 11 per cent in the province as a whole, you will see that we have three times more people working in the primary sector than they have elsewhere.

Senator Eudes: When you say three times more people, you mean three times more on an average.

Mr. Gélinas: On an average. If you look in the secondary sector, where the best salaries are, where better salaries are going to be paid, we have only 15 per cent of the population, while the others have 33 per cent of the population. In the tertiary services, education and others, we in our region have a proportion of 44 per cent as compared to 52 per cent in the rest of the province. We point out that these figures do not add up to 100 per cent because part of the population is unemployed.

Senator Eudes: To make the connection then, on page 2 you say: "At the provincial level we find twice the labour force in the secondary section as there is in our region . . ."

Mr. Gélinas: In the province, it is twice as big. They are the same figures as in Table 1. For the tertiary sector the difference is not so great, depending on education. We have 44, 55, 55, 52. One region has 44.

Senator Eudes: On page 3, paragraph 3 you say: "This is why we are inclined to believe that if, in agriculture, which constitutes a very important field of activity in our region . . .". Do you envisage any way of improving agriculture? You also say: ". . . research and planning were set in action, . . .". If you could explain to us what you have in mind, firstly as to whether you think agriculture can be improved, and secondly as to research and planning?

Mr. Gélinas: In the region, if you take the whole length of the river, there are about two or three rows of very good farms which need improving and enlarging to make them more profitable. This is true all the way to Matane, Ste-Félicité, if you include the highlands.

Senator Eudes: Have you any means of helping these farmers?

Mr. Gélinas: These are already good farms and good farmers who can rival any in the province.

Senator Eudes: Yes, but do they have enough products to show on the market, to sell on the market, to diversify their production?

Mr. Gélinas: It has now been proposed under the Development Plan to diversify farming in the region, within the limitations imposed by the climate here, and so we come back to the question of production. What we should have here in our region is a dairy industry, the industry of the province. As to vegetables and flowers to be sold on the Montreal market, we are too far away to produce them, and the climate is unfavourable. Beef cattle raising has been talked of, sheep farming has been talked of, and here is where research and planning in the region should be done.

Senator Eudes: I agree with you entirely, but we would like to know a little more about what you have in mind, some more definite notions about research and planning.

Mr. Gélinas: It is like this—a research and planning program for this region in connection with agriculture. There was a federal experimental station at Ste-Anne-de-la-Pocatière to serve the region. There was a research station at Cap Chat for the Gaspé which now does practically nothing, and if, in our present undertaking of new research programs we

use the federal research stations which have been closed down in the region, where is the agricultural research going to be done? It is about time research was placed on a sound basis. We have a few very experienced men in the region. We have specialists, but we need more than that if we want to create new forms of production.

Senator Eudes: Does what you are saying apply also to the other provinces and to the other regions of the Province of Quebec?

Mr. Gélinas: There are some forms of production which could be made to work here, and they would then be sent to the open market of the Province of Quebec, to Montreal or to Quebec; they might be just right for our region. That is where we want to have research done and studies made, and that is our proposal.

Senator Eudes: Mr. Gélinas, I want to thank you very much, myself.

Senator Quart: I want to congratulate you for your brief and all those explanations. It is the kindness of the men in the Province of Quebec that gives a woman an occasion of thank-you's. We can think of other things besides thank-you's, you know. I want to ask a question. Naturally, I was very surprised to think that there is even a little bit of hardship in Rimouski. I know Rimouski very well. I often came here during the war of 1939-45. I have always thought of Rimouski as a rich city. What parish that comes under the Chamber of Commerce is, in your opinion, the poorest?

Mr. Gélinas: In Rimouski it is on the St-Pie side, back of the Trinité-des-Monts that's almost closed; on the Matapédia side you have Ste-Jeanne-d'Arc, in that corner la Rédemption. There are many of them, parishes that are almost abandoned.

Senator Quart: I was very interested in your remark that you had another "octroi" or grant. I don't know what you mean, that the government would first be helping your company, then employment? Do you have a lot of failures in the Rimouski area with respect to money loans?

Mr. Bellavance: First I would like to correct the impression you may perhaps been given that the city of Rimouski is not rich. Rimouski is definitely very, very rich. It is one of the cities in Quebec that has had the greatest growth in recent years, and we are very optimistic for the future. However, the problem, as far as Rimouski is concerned, is to keep it a long-range thing so it can continue. These policies

that are started nationally are very bad for an area that is weaker than another one. This is something that I think has been said by many others. Mr. Smallwood has mentioned it and others have mentioned, it and we are now realizing the effects of it in our area. Will there be more failures? Probably. It is certain that some people will have it harder, but my idea is that we should find a way to innovate a little bit, find a way that we could have special measures for some areas when those things are implemented nationally and when our area is one of those that ought to receive your attention.

Senator Quart: Senator Eudes was talking about education. We came across a tremendous number of drop-outs among the poor people in many centres we visited across Canada.

Mr. Gélinas: I don't think that is the problem here in Rimouski or with the regional school board. I know that there was a report last year that many young people were missing from school because they lacked footwear or something like that.

Senator Quart: Do you have the St-Vicent-de-Paul here in Rimouski?

Mr. Gélinas: Yes, in Rimouski, but not in the remote parishes.

Senator Quart: Not in the remote parishes. Thank you.

Senator Eudes: Do you have a legal aid service? Do you know about that?

Mr. Gélinas: I am told that there is legal aid.

Senator Hastings: I am from Alberta, and it is a pleasure for me to be with you here in Rimouski.

I wonder if you would tell me what you are saying there in the last paragraph?

Mr. Gélinas: Yes. That is the participation of the people to improve their conditions. The people are thinking that, and they are ready to help improve on that. What they need sometimes is help from the government. We have a special contract between the provincial and federal governments for the "aménagement" of this part of Canada, but in some things nothing is done.

Just look for the people who are going to be coming to Rimouski in the next three years; they will all be moving here and there is nothing done yet. The people are in doubt and they are not aware of what will be done for them. So, that is the question for those

people there, but the population is ready to help to do something.

Senator Hastings: And to help themselves?

Mr. Gélinas: Yes, to help themselves. But when they have nothing; when they don't know anything of what will be done concerning themselves, they are discouraged.

Senator Hastings: Is your Chamber of Commerce doing anything to help them?

Mr. Gélinas: Our local Chambers of Commerce—we have many of them—are working there and helping these people to initiate movements and participate in them in their cities.

Senator McGrand: You spoke a little while ago about the experimental station down in the Gaspé which has closed down. Where was that?

Mr. Gélinas: Cap Chat and Ste Anne-de-la-Pocatière.

Senator McGrand: Well, the one at St. Anne-de-la-Pocatière is still in operation?

Mr. Gélinas: Yes, senator. It is still in operation but with less development than twenty years ago. Just now all of the specialists are in Quebec.

Senator McGrand: I was under the impression, and I have been for a good number of years, that that experimental station or farm in Ste-Anne-de-la-Pocatière was especially designed to develop techniques to remedy the difficulties of the disabilities of this particular area—the sixteen Eastern counties of Quebec. I thought that the experimental farm in Fredericton was different to the one here, and that the one here was different, we will say, to the one in Manitoba or Renfrew county. I was under the impression that this experimental farm at Ste-Anne-de-la-Pocatière was designed and operated especially to deal with disabilities peculiar to these Eastern counties?

Mr. Gélinas: That was true for maybe ten or fifteen years. Ten or fifteen years ago it was well organized and it had all the things to make some studies of the people. Ste-Anne-de-la-Pocatière is about 125 miles from here, but they were helping this part of the country until there was more influence in Rivière-du-Loup or Kamouraska Counties, but a few years ago the laboratories and the research was transferred to Quebec. There are fewer people there although they still have the experimental farm, but all of the research carried on there is going down

to Cap Chat. There was an agronomist who was in charge at Cap Chat and he was there to survey all of the technical work and agricultural work which was carried on, but just now there is no specialist there. They are looking in this part of the country to develop mink ranching, using fish waste for food and so on. We are not against this, but we don't know what kind of employment this would create. This is the kind or research that is recommended should be done.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Gélinas, a few questions before we close; is Rimouski considered as being in the Gaspé or in Lower Quebec?

Mr. Gélinas: The pilot territory study made for the Lower St. Lawrence, start from Kamouraska County and went right to the Gaspé and even to the Magdalen Islands, and we were included. When tourists talk about making a tour of the Gaspé, they mention that the gateway to the Gaspé is Matane. But in economic studies, Rimouski is part of the Lower St. Lawrence area, which even goes past Rivière-du-Loup and Kamouraska County.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Gélinas, in your lumber camps, there's pulp and wood for paper; is there wood for lumber also?

Mr. Gélinas: We have fairly good sawmills in the area. There were too many small mills, but as a result of the Development Bureau the member is supposed to decrease. Today there are more good sawmills in the area here. There are some right here in Rimouski, and even in the Matapédia. There are some in Estcourt and in Ste-Rose-du-Déglé where you probably were today, and there are also some around the Gaspé.

The Deputy Chairman: Do you have a program like the one in our area called CRANO?

Mr. Gélinas: Not under the same act.

The Deputy Chairman: If you had an industry hereabouts, wouldn't there be transportation problems, wouldn't the freight rates be a problem if you want to ship out goods to Montreal and Toronto?

Mr. Gélinas: There might be some transportation problems. On the other hand, we're in an area where we have possibilities for transportation by water and by the C.N.R. which runs from Halifax to Montreal. We also have the highway. The Trans-Canada won't go by here; it turns at Rivière-du-Loup. But there are highways, nevertheless, on which transportation is possible. And lastly, when there was a study for a

freight company that was to come and set up here in Rimouski, as compared to St-Romuald-de-Lévis, for example, the matter of transportation of goods was one that hardly entered into the picture. There are ways of getting goods moved. Take, for example, the grain elevators like those of Quebec. The operators sell close to one third of their grain to the farmers in the area and farmers from Rivière-du-Loup and the whole area come for their supplies of feed grain to the Quebec grain elevators. There are grain elevators on the North Shore and boats come there. There is no elevator below Quebec; it's said that that's something that won't live. There is iron, and grain from Quebec, and grain elevators; those are the conditions; the freight is paid for.

The Deputy Chairman: Now, Mr. Gélinas, on page 3, you can give a very short answer if you wish, because it would perhaps take a fairly long answer. How is a policy of industrial decentralization to be applied?

Mr. Gélinas: A policy of industrial decentralization? First there is the problem of help from the different governments, which is given by region; then there is the federal-provincial agreement; there is encouragement to industry to come and set up here; there is a climate that has to be created in order for jobs to be created. Some of these things already exist in other areas. We are not blaming those other areas, but certain agreements have been reached. For example, Quebec city was declared a special area, and Three Rivers was declared a special area industrially. \$140,000,000 will be used to develop the Bécancour area for industrial purposes. We are not against that but we ask to have our share here.

Mr. Bellavance: Especially an industry that would be based on the materials we have in the area.

The Deputy Chairman: If I may ask a question about wood, is wood cut on Crown land or on private land?

Mr. Gélinas: Part of it is cut on private land.

The Deputy Chairman: Private land?

Mr. Gélinas: Yes. You have the Price Brothers, New Richmond; there is Bathurst Paper which has timber reserves. They all have private reserves because quarantined timber for cutting is essential. Now, so far as the whole area is concerned, there are those who have timber land in St-Jérôme and in Gaspé.

The Deputy Chairman: Is there plenty of wood?

Mr. Gélinas: No.

The Deputy Chairman: It's limited?

Mr. Gélinas: Work would have to be done to improve wood production, but the amount of wood produced for the area, with all that is being exported outside the area, is rather limited. If you take a trip tomorrow, you are going to see in many places, cords of pulpwood ready to be loaded on boats and sent elsewhere. That is not a problem so far as helping our area is concerned.

The Deputy Chairman: Is there anyone who wants to say something?

Mr. Viateur de Champlain Director, Industrial Development Bank: Yes, please, I'm going to try to give a kind of explanation. I'm not a specialist, which might be a bit of an attraction; I'll try to explain a little why we have poverty.

The Deputy Chairman: What is your occupation?

Mr. de Champlain: I am a company director. I am employed at the Development Bank, and I work for a small firm. The point here seems to be to try to explain why there is poverty in our area. They say that there is no industrialization in the territory covered by the Lower St. Lawrence and the Gaspé. It is a region where there are no industrial, commercial, or service jobs; there are not jobs for all the people in the territory.

If we try to explain that we have to start a fairly long way back. The population here generally, since 1900 and before, has been rural, and this rural population has become increasingly city-dwelling—that is, the people have abandoned farming to go and live in the cities. After that, they began to create businesses. One fellow went into business and then another. These businesses have prospered and grown so that today we have a spate of businesses throughout the Gaspé.

Then we ask ourselves why some companies do not expand, and why some that did expand have stopped expanding. There seems to be a general uneasiness that seems to cause this. In some individual cases it is perhaps due to the fact that our businessmen got into business by accident, and it is not something they prepared for in advance. They did not study business. There are businesses that do well, but it may be that those businessmen were more educated or perhaps better trained. We think of training different persons, but we do not consider training businessmen. Many businessmen, as soon as they make \$20,000 a year, spend \$15,000 put the rest into the bank and stop the company from progressing. There are other persons who want to invest and expand, but these others are

always afraid of taxation; they are always afraid to show their real assets. They go to see the financial organizations—the chartered banks, the mutual benefit funds, the Industrial Development Bank, and so on—and their financial statement, which is the soul of the company and really shows the state of the company, has to be disclosed. If the financial statement were drawn up in a proper fashion, the company, instead of borrowing \$100,000, maybe would only borrow \$15,000 to \$25,000. That means the businessman is penalized, because perhaps he is not educated or does not have the basic training. Also there are other things, and maybe that explains to some extent why companies are not prospering, because there are not enough jobs. If all the companies in the Lower St. Lawrence area expanded as much as an informed businessman's company normally would, we would not have the unemployment problem we have now—perhaps because there is no initiative, no pioneering. They would create jobs and there would be development of industry. There would perhaps be more and more primary industries developed. There would also be development in secondary industry. However, since the situation is the way it is today, I must try to explain, I must try to develop my explanation. I would say there are businessmen who have money and who do not expand because they make enough money. There are also persons working in primary industry, in secondary industry and in services who also have money. The proof is that last year there was a meeting of caisses populaires here in the Rimouski area. I was very surprised to learn it, but we found there were assets of \$55,000,000. That means that if we also take all the savings in the Lower St. Lawrence and Gaspé area, we can maybe find savings of \$1 billion. We are far from Montreal, far from Quebec, and the people are not used to buying shares or investing in bonds. The furthest they may go is to buy bonds. They do not take risks. The people do not get together to form companies, yet such a company could perhaps create jobs. They are a little hesitant. Each one puts aside his savings of maybe fifteen, twenty, twenty-five thousand dollars, but is afraid to go into industry, not because he does not want to, but because he is not familiar with it.

The Deputy Chairman: Are you finishing?—because we shall have to end.

Mr. de Champlain: I am going to end in two minutes, if you do not mind. What I mean is, that is where we end up, and then we ask the government to do something. It is my impression that, since the government has specialists in its employ, the best approach would perhaps be to form mixed companies that

would develop the primary industry—that is, the government with its specialists would form a study group to make a study of, for example, a paper mill. We decide to put a paper mill into an area, but the businessmen and then the investors don't take to the idea of starting such a venture. However, perhaps the Government, having made a study, would say \$50 million for the old paper mill, which would take \$25 million in share capital. A public subscription would be offered throughout the Gaspé, which might result in receipt of \$25 million to enable the scheme to proceed. There would be a choice of small or large scale operation.

The Deputy Chairman: Thanks.

Mr. Bellavance: I will now speak of the tourist industry, which is the most important in our area. The announcement of the development of Forillon Park is a good thing for us. We hope that other parks will be created in our area. I know that there is land in the Matapédia valley, which was mentioned previously, available for development as a national park. The valley has now reached a standstill as a tourist attraction. The development of the Trans-Canada Highway, which will perhaps go on through New Brunswick to meet the Chaleur Bay coast, might increase Matapédia's prosperity by encouraging the return of some prosperous tourist business. The creation of a national park on this land would certainly be beneficial.

Senator Quart: I would be interested in knowing the description of the land.

Mr. Bellavance: It is the Matapédia Seigneur, Mr. Soucy's old property.

Senator Hastings: I just have one observation to make, Mr. Chairman. When we were in Newfoundland we found that one of the great problems was communications with Ottawa. The same was true in the Northwest Territories, and now in Rimouski we find the same. I only hope that when we get to Hull we will find better communications.

The Deputy Chairman: Yes.

Mr. Gélinas: Mr. Chairman, distinguished members of the committee, we thank you very much for your attention to our modest point of view on the problem of poverty in our area.

The Deputy Chairman: Thank you. The meeting is now adjourned.

The committee adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

MEMORANDUM

ON

POVERTY

Presented By

THE REGIONAL CHAMBER OF COMMERCE
OF THE LOWER SAINT LAWRENCE.

September 2, 1970.

Poverty in our Region

It is the duty of those who have responsibility for actions to insure an adequate standard of living for their people. Inequalities among men are, in themselves, neither tragic nor dramatic. What is tragic are the inequalities in the satisfaction of the basic needs of man. How can we live in comfort and prosperity when, in certain regions of our country, men are suffering from poverty. And those who live in want are sometimes too easily resigned to it, for poverty breeds poverty. But it is up to men to remove the impediments to the real progress of the individual and of society. We, for our part, live in a region which is practically cut off from the big markets and trade routes. Our population is spread out over an immense territory, and yet, we are rich in both natural resources and human potential, eager to come forth, if only a way could be found out of our present underdeveloped condition. For we have no underdevelopment insofar as resources are concerned, but only insofar as production and transformation are concerned.

It is relatively easy to determine the wealth or poverty of a country or a region. We are all aware that, when the population of a country or region is largely concentrated in the primary sphere, we are faced with an economic situation which is unfavourable to the population and which is often synonymous with poverty.

Now, in our region, the degree of concentration in the primary sphere is three times what it is in the province as a whole. We also know that the economic activities of the primary sphere consist chiefly in the exploitation of raw materials. What is more, these primary economic activities often contribute to bring about seasonal fluctuations in the labour force. This is the cause of the periodic unemployment in our region which is so unfavourable to the economic well-being of the people. These seasonal fluctuations in the labour market are thus the explanation for the high rate of unemployment in our region—about 20 per cent, compared to a rate of about 9 per cent for the province as a whole.

But this factor, overwhelming though it is, is not the only one that comes into play. At the provincial level, we find twice the proportion of the labour force in the secondary sphere, by comparison to our own region; and, in relation to the province as a whole, the proportion of our labour force employed in the tertiary sphere is inferior. (See Table 1., at the end.)

It is immediately apparent that we suffer from a condition of inequality in relation to the rest of the province. However, these are not the only difficulties we have to face. It goes without saying that when a fairly high percentage of the population of a region is unable to find jobs, the situation begins to be serious. And the percentage of unemployed in our region is twice as high as in the province as a whole.

These unemployed members of the population lower the working members' chances of affluence for, despite their relatively low level of prosperity, they have to support the unemployed. What is more, the region has quite a high level, compared to the rest of the province, of people receiving special allowances for invalides, for the blind and for the unfit. (See Table 11 at the end).

In addition to all this, there is the fact that the rural population of the region is almost as high as the urban population, while the rural areas are even more depressed than the urban areas. The rural area is the centre of poorly paid primary activities where employment is fairly unstable. It has also been established that, in our region, two-thirds of the rural population has an income of under \$4000., while half the urban population is in this position.

As a result of all this, over the whole of the region, there is a tendency for part of the population, and often not such a very small part, to emigrate to other regions where conditions are more favourable to the individual; companies also tend to have trouble getting their products to outside markets; and, for the majority of the resident population, the level of education is relatively low, which means that the people cannot find work outside the primary sphere.

Now, as we have already emphasized, we do certainly possess factors of wealth, such as the abundance of raw materials and human resources. Judging by the description of the facts which we have just given, these factors of wealth are not developed as they should be.

This is why we are inclined to believe that if, in Agriculture, which constitutes a very important sphere of activity in our region, research and planning were got underway, it would be possible to begin to adjust the production of various foodstuffs to the actual needs and potentialities of our domestic and foreign markets.

This fairly tragic state of economic affairs and the high level of unemployment lead us to believe that a policy of industrial decentralization would be beneficial, and that cooperation at the federal-provincial level would help to bring a very large part of the population out of the stagnating condition of poverty.

The resident population is conscious of these facts. What remains to be done is perhaps not to inform the population, for often statistics are so severe as to be

overwhelming. But there would certainly be a rise in the standard of living of the region if the population really participated in the struggle for progress. This is why we believe that the participation of the people is the thing which is extremely urgent, for "Justice and the feeling of taking part in the life of the nation are the necessary conditions without which no material progress is possible." (R. Kennedy).

Regional Chamber of Commerce of
the Lower Saint Lawrence.

September 2nd, 1970.

TABLE I

Average division¹ of the labour force among the three main spheres of economic activity region and province, 1961.

	Region	Province
Primary Sphere	34.9	11.4
Secondary Sphere	15.8	33.5
Tertiary Sphere	44.6	52.2

¹The sum of the three % does not equal 100% because of a residual labour force working in undefined industries. The residual labour force for the region equals 4.7%, and, for the province, 2.9%. Source: D.B.S., Canada Census, Labour Force, 1961.

TABLE II

Recipients of Pensions for invalides, for the blind, for the unfit for work over a period of more than 12 months (region province), and the ratio between the region and the province, 1963.

	Region	Province	Region/ Province
Invalides	2,188	20,887	10.5%
Blind	307	2,849	10.8%
Unfit	1,846	13,778	13.4%

Source: Annual Report of the Quebec Social Welfare Allowances Commission, M. F. B. E. S., Quebec, 1963.



Second Session—Twenty-eighth Parliament
1969-70

THE SENATE OF CANADA

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE

ON

POVERTY

The Honourable DAVID A. CROLL, *Chairman*

No. 70

FRIDAY, SEPTEMBER 4, 1970

WITNESSES:

The Social Service of the Diocese of Rimouski: Mr. Gilles Giasson, Director, Professional Services; Mr. Richard Boulanger, Statistics and Research; Mr. Ghislain Paradis; Miss Hélène Bélanger, General Director.
The Joint Urban and Industrial Zoning Commission of Rimouski-Mont-Joli (Commission Conjointe d'Urbanisme de la Zone Industrielle et Prioritaire de Rimouski-Mont-Joli: Mr. Pierre Jobin, Director.
The Council of Eastern Quebec Regional Development: Mr. Jacques St-Pierre.

APPENDICES:

- "A"—Brief submitted by the Social Service of the Diocese of Rimouski
"B"—Brief submitted by the Council of Eastern Quebec Regional Development

MEMBERS OF THE
SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

The Honourable David A. Croll, *Chairman*

The Honourable Senators:

Bélisle	Hastings
Carter	Inman
Connolly (<i>Halifax North</i>)	Lefrançois
Cook	MacDonald (<i>Queens</i>)
Croll	McGrand
Eudes	Pearson
Everett	Quart
Fergusson	Roebuck
Fournier (<i>Madawaska-Restigouche</i> , <i>Deputy Chairman</i>)	Sparrow

(18 Members)

(Quorum 6)

ORDERS OF REFERENCE

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Tuesday, October 28, 1969:

"The Honourable Senator Croll moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck:

That a Special Committee of the Senate be appointed to investigate and report upon all aspects of poverty in Canada, whether urban, rural, regional or otherwise, to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada, and to recommend appropriate action to ensure the establishment of a more effective structure of remedial measures;

That the Committee have power to engage the services of such counsel, staff and technical advisors as may be necessary for the purpose of the inquiry;

That the Committee have power to send for persons, papers and records, to examine witnesses, and to report from time to time;

That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate, and to adjourn from place to place;

That the evidence taken on the subject during the preceding session be referred to the Committee; and

That the Committee be composed of the Honourable Senators Bélisle, Carter, Cook, Croll, Eudes, Everett, Fergusson, Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*), Hastings, Inman, Lefrançois, McGrand, Pearson, Quart, Roebuck and Sparrow.

After debate,

In amendment, the Honourable Senator McDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Burchill, that the motion be not now adopted, but that it be amended by striking out paragraph 4 thereof and substituting therefor the following:—

"That the Committee be authorized to print such papers and evidence from day to day as may be ordered by the Committee, to adjourn from place to place, and notwithstanding Rule 76 (4), to sit during sittings and adjournments of the Senate."

After debate, and—

The question being put on the motion in amendment, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative.

The question being put on the motion of the Honourable Senator Croll, seconded by the Honourable Senator Roebuck, as amended it was—

Resolved in the affirmative."

Extract from the Minutes of Proceedings of the Senate of Wednesday, October 29, 1969.

"With leave of the Senate,

The Honourable Senator MacDonald moved, seconded by the Honourable Senator Smith:

That the names of the Honourable Senators Connolly (*Halifax North*) and MacDonald (*Queens*) be added to the list of Senators serving on the Special Committee of the Senate appointed to investigate and report all aspects of poverty in Canada; and

That the name of the Honourable Senator Nichol be removed from the list of Senators serving on the said Special Committee.

The question being put on the motion, it was—
Resolved in the affirmative."

ROBERT FORTIER,
Clerk of the Senate.

MINUTES OF PROCEEDINGS

FRIDAY, September 4, 1970
City Hall, Rimouski

Pursuant to adjournment and notice the Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9.00 a.m.

Present: The Honourable Senators: Fournier (*Madawaska-Restigouche*) in the Chair, Eudes, Hastings, Lefrançois, McGrand and Quart—(6).

In attendance: Mr. Charles Askwith, Administrative Officer.

The following witnesses were heard:

The Social Service of the Diocese of Rimouski:

Mr. Gilles Giasson, Director, Professional Services;
Mr. Richard Boulanger, Statistics and Research;
Mr. Ghislain Paradis;
Miss Hélène Bélanger, General Director.

The Joint Urban and Industrial Zoning Commission on Rimouski-Mont-Joli (Commission conjointe d'urbanisme de la zone industrielle et prioritaire de Rimouski-Mont-Joli):

Mr. Pierre Jobin, Director.

The Council of Eastern Quebec Regional Development:

Mr. Jacques St-Pierre.

On motion by Senator Quart the Committee agreed,—

That the study carried by the Eastern Quebec Development Bureau (Bureau d'aménagement de l'Est du Québec) and the notice of Eastern Quebec Regional Development Council for negotiation of the General Cooperation Agreement Canada-Quebec be tabled.

The following briefs were ordered to be printed as Appendices "A" and "B" respectively to these proceedings:

"A"—Brief submitted by the Social Service of the Diocese of Rimouski

"B"—Brief submitted by the Council of Eastern Quebec Regional Development

At 11.15 a.m. the Committee adjourned.

ATTEST:

Georges A. Coderre,
Clerk of the Committee.

THE SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON POVERTY

EVIDENCE

September 4, 1970,
Rimouski, Quebec.

The Special Senate Committee on Poverty met this day at 9 a.m.

Senator Edgar Fournier (*Deputy Chairman*) in the Chair.

The Deputy Chairman: We have some comments to make later on what we did last night. But first we are going to begin by thanking you for the hospitality shown to us here at Rimouski, the last leg of the journey.

The presentation submitted to us last night by the Regional Chamber of Commerce was very interesting and extremely informative. It gave us an insight naturally into the problems of the Rimouski Region which are perhaps no worse, but certainly no better than poverty anywhere although the problems are of a special kind here.

We are to examine three presentations this morning and I am anxious to bring to the attention of the members of the committee that we are going to try to finish everything for twenty past eleven, or eleven-thirty at the very latest.

We have been invited to a small reception at the home of your Federal M.P. We'll have to cancel that, because you know what will happen if we go to a reception, and we have to catch the ferry at three o'clock for Quebec where we have a small meeting planned for this evening at eight o'clock. So that means that the crossing will have to be made very quickly.

Now, without further ado, we have this morning Miss Helene Bélanger who is concerned with the welfare agency in the diocese of Rimouski. I call for Miss Bélanger and her assistants.

The Deputy Chairman: As the presentation is very bulky, we will ask Mr. Giasson to give us first a summary of his presentation. We will look at the recommendations and then, we will try to save a little time for the question period which is always very interesting. Please proceed, Sir.

Mr. Gilles Giasson (*Director of the Department of Research and Statistics, the Welfare Agency of the Diocese of Rimouski*): I wish to take the opportunity of thanking the Senate Commission for their good will in learning about poverty in our locality. I think that...

The Deputy Chairman: For those not familiar with our system, we have a system of simultaneous translation. It is very difficult. It will be necessary for those who speak, who give presentation, if you have something to say, to give your name and speak slowly so as to follow the translator.

Mr. Giasson, whether you wish to speak in French or English, we have no objection.

Mr. Giasson: I think that a good way of covering the presentation very quickly, would be to read the preface from it. That will take about two or three minutes and I think that would give a good idea of its contents. So I will proceed to read from it.

"1—In the Lower St. Lawrence the problem of poverty assumes a major importance. The average per capita income is low and unemployment is high."

This is the first statement.

"2—According to our experience the state of poverty in the Region can be traced to the following causes:

- The high level of unemployment.
- The effects of technological changes.
- The migration towards the urban centres.
- The absence of power among the poor.
- The lack of participation of the poor in decisions which concern them.
- The inefficiency of certain programmes for abolishing poverty."

These are some of the causes of poverty ascertained by us.

Now we have made observations on certain characteristics of poverty, for example:

- "—an increase in the numbers of the latter in direct proportion to the oncome of old age.

- A low level of education.
- A large number of children.
- bad health among half of the latter.

By the way, these details are taken from a study carried out two years ago by us, the Welfare Agency of the Diocese of Rimouski and it affected three hundred and thirty-three welfare recipients.

"4 — To resolve the problem of poverty, it would be necessary:

- To create new ways of social growth.
- To develop means of evaluating the effectiveness of programmes.
- to modernize quickly the agricultural and forest industries.
- To provide greater job security.
- To revise the Welfare system so as to adapt it to the needs of the poor.
- To provide better access for the poor to health and welfare services.
- To establish training programmes specifically for the poor.
- To give more power to the poorer class in increasing its participation.
- To create family planning clinics.
- To establish a housing policy which corresponds to the needs of the poor, and lastly,
- To develop strong urban centres in the region"

Evidently, it is a short summary, just a brief outline, but I think that we have found, in our opinion, the solutions that could be applied to the problems of poverty in our Region.

Now, I think we are ready to answer all the questions as far as it will be possible to do so.

The Deputy Chairman: We will spend most of our time on questions.

Senator Hastings: You said one of the causes of poverty was the inefficiency of certain programs. Could you give me three or four programs that you think are inefficient?

Mr. Giasson: One could cite the programme of family allowances as the first example. At the present time, the federal family allowances are not graduated and here in Quebec, we believe that the programme of federal family allowances ought to be integrated with the one we have here, we recommend the integration of these two programmes so as to permit giving to the second, third and fourth child, let's say a graduated scale, an amount

more and more substantial, in such a way as starting from the fourth child the essential needs are provided for. This is an example of a programme which to my way of thinking is not completely effective, which was originated in the Forties and which hasn't been revised since.

The Deputy Chairman: Does that answer your question?

Senator Hastings: Could you give me three or four programs that you think are inefficient, that are of no assistance?

Mr. Giasson: There is an example for this, it's a programme in Quebec, the pension system which is a good programme, but it doesn't give sufficiently substantial allowances to permit the people to have a decent retirement; this programme should be supported by other programmes which will permit the people to have acceptable incomes; it is in this case a provincial programme.

The Deputy Chairman: Are there any other questions?

Senator Eudes: You speak: "of the migration to urban centres," is it the men or the women, of what age group are they and why do they go away?

Mr. Giasson: Let's say that my data is not very precise on this subject, yet I know that there is a study underway concerning this subject. As to the reasons people leave, if we take for example people in their twenties who have a certain training, be it a little bit specialized, they cannot find jobs in their locality; consequently, they are obliged to either come to the urban centres of the Region which are rather small or to go outside, either to Quebec, or to Montreal or to other regions.

Senator Eudes: Urban centres, perhaps here at Rimouski?

Mr. Giasson: Yes, perhaps, sometimes a certain number come here, others go to other regions.

Senator Eudes: Last night at the Chamber of Commerce where I put some questions when they submitted their presentation—you speak of the lack of education—last night, to the question I asked, I wanted to know if the level of education could be related to unemployment and Mr. Gelinat and one of his assistants whose name unfortunately I forget, said that the problem of education did not exist here, the gist being that it was almost

non-existent because there were adequate facilities here.

Mr. Giasson: You wish to know if...?

Senator Eudes: Because you mentioned "lack of education"?

Mr. Giasson: I think it is necessary to distinguish between educational system and the scholastic level of the people, the scholastic level is perhaps not so low, the opportunity to take courses, let's say, is good enough. Let's say that the system could answer the needs. It seems the problem is the following—that we wish to train the people, but we don't know what to train them for. One could avail oneself of a lavish number of technical upgrading courses if one wished, but towards what goal can be orientate welfare recipients and the people without work.

Senator Eudes: You are speaking in essence of upgrading and you do not know to what other...

Mr. Giasson: Evidently, that is the fundamental problem, it's that there aren't any opportunities in the locality, if there were the opportunities, there would not be problems providing courses to retrain the people, moreover there are some examples quoted last night, for example the electronic industries that require very specialized people, these people have been trained, some people have been trained to fulfill the needs of these industries. If there were other industries, courses could be run for training people to enter an industry. It isn't the availability of courses, but the finding an opening after the courses.

Senator Eudes: In sum then, the solution you foresee is tied to the possibility of future employment, of a possible job.

Senator Lefrançois: Or of new industries.

Mr. Giasson: Of new industries or the improvement of the existent ones, even the development is limited, but it seems that it would be possible to develop these industries.

Senator Eudes: I have another question which although it is not raised in your presentation, interests us, as we have asked it several times during the visits we have made; The population of Rimouski, of the Region is it, in your opinion, influenced by advertising on the television especially that strives to sell goods, inducing the people to buy them even though they are useless and secondly, this

availability of credit. Now could you, advertising first to buy things for which people probably have no need and secondly, their purchasing availability in telling them: "Buy now, pay tomorrow or next year," are the people influenced by these two factors?

Mr. Giasson: I think that the problem to my knowledge, is perceptibly the same everywhere, for instance the advertising that is received here for the most part is advertising which comes to us, either by radio, or by television, it comes on the television or from the provincial network and brings us the advertising from Montreal and so, consequently, it is the same advertising carried out in Montreal which is done here, therefore, the people in the locality are enormously influenced by the advertising and concerning credit, you have only to listen to the commercials on the radio enticing the people, you will understand... and there are financing companies that entice people.

Senator Eudes: Do financing companies extend credit?

Mr. Giasson: Not to my knowledge.

The Deputy Chairman: I believe that is not the availability of finance that the senator is interested in: What are the effects of the availability of finance?

Senator Eudes: Yes, but the reply...

Mr. Jourdain: Concerning this subject, I think that even if it is very theoretical, the definition which is given of poverty explains in part, I think, the intensive effect that these commercials can have on the impressions of people and I will read the definition, it's on page 4 "Poverty is a prolonged inaccessibility to the material resources that are necessary to maintain a living standard determined by the production capacity and social demands of the community". Therefore, I feel that it is this last element of social demands of the community which is truly effected by the advertising of which you are speaking. The people imagine that these goods which are sold on the television and advertised on the television and identified as being indispensable to a normal life create among people a need that they are unable to satisfy.

Senator Eudes: An artificial need.

Voice from Audience: An artificial need of which they feel deprived and so it gives these people as a result, a bigger impression

of poverty. I think that the people realize their need for something only when they see it.

Senator Eudes: O.K. Now turning to another issue that you must be familiar with surely: Last night there was talk of welfare recipients. Do your welfare recipients know which benefits they have a right to? If they do not know then, do they know who to get in touch with to have the exact information and once they have obtained this information, are they successful in receiving allowances to which they are legally entitled?

The Deputy Chairman: There are two questions there.

Mr. Jourdain: On the question of information concerning rights to benefit from public assistance, I would believe personally—

Senator Eudes: Wait, it is not a question of their rights, it is a question of their individual right to obtain welfare aid, do you understand? You have many people who could—after all I am speaking about it following the things and enquiries we have made—many people do not know that they have a right to such welfare aid. They don't know where to go for it, they don't know...

Mr. Jourdain: The proportions that welfare aid reaches in our midst having been established, I think that people who have a right to welfare payments, no matter what form they take, are usually well informed, in my opinion they may call easily enough upon the offices which are established for these ends. Now, as to whether they obtain entirely services to which they have a right. That is a much more delicate question and moreover, this aspect assumes also, among us, major importance. I can give you an example that I have experienced personally, about a father of a large family who worked nevertheless for a very small wage of \$45 a week and who had right, if he had contacted the welfare agency, to a payment which was even higher than that he could earn as wages. In this case it would have been possible by way of public assistance to give this good man a bigger income for not working than that he made working, then this becomes an extremely difficult problem. The question is asked whether by welfare aid the people will be induced not to work, because in fact, in many cases they receive payments larger than they could make at work. Will the welfare aid even if the rates are, in my opinion, low enough, will the welfare aid become an instrument which

by its nature will bring about unemployment and in that sense, we come back still to the fundamental problem of the economy of the Region. If the Region is prosperous enough to give the people the choice of going or not going to work—it's funny to state the problem in that way—or who can even ask themselves the question "Is it more advantageous for me to go to work or not to go?" If the economy could eliminate that problem, I think we could make progress, but as long as it appears in this dimension which is fundamental, I think that the problem of poverty is unresolved.

Senator Eudes: Can I finish by asking you another question of a delicate nature? Are you satisfied with the existing welfare structure, with the welfare benefits and with its administration?

Mr. Jourdain: It is difficult...

Senator Eudes: In that case, leave the question in suspense.

Mr. Jourdain: Would you like to be more precise about this question—I find it too general.

Senator Eudes: If you could reply to it, we will have found the solution to the problem of poverty.

Mr. Jourdain: I think that we come back all the same to the problem that we have just raised, it is that measures of welfare aid—we bring attention to this, moreover, in our presentation—the measures of welfare aid ought to be aimed at the lowest stratum of the population; this, then, is not the case here.

Senator Eudes: Then, the more we have of welfare measures, the more these measures show that we have a problem of poverty.

Mr. Jourdain: I believe it is difficult to be satisfied with them when these welfare measures concern too big a proportion of the population because in itself the administration poses problems, then the economy of maintaining the livelihood of a region at a certain given moment, if public assistance can provide the livelihood of a considerable enough proportion of the population, then at that moment, that can never be satisfied either. We could apply to the case the most humane legislation possible, we could all the same realize fully following this that the population that we are helping is in a situation where its poverty can in practice only be intensified.

The Deputy Chairman: Does that answer your question, Senator, Sillicitor?

Senator McGrand: You mentioned that the poor have no voice in the management of their affairs, their voice is weak.

Do you think that if they had much to say or could influence the trend of things, would there be the technological changes that have been taking place and brought about the unemployment of people?

The Deputy Chairman: The translator translated into French for the benefit of Mr. Jourdain and Mr. Giasson the question of Senator McGrand as follows:

Then, if the poor participate in the decision making, would there be these technological changes as contributing to the lack of employment?

Mr. Giasson: I don't know if I have fully understood the question: You connect the change among the poor to the problem of technological change? Does it really follow that if the poor participate more in decisions that the technological changes and the results of these changes would be less? Perhaps, I am not sure about it, because people, it is something of which they have a certain specialized knowledge. But the bad effects of technological changes in modern life would be lessened if the poor could participate. At the present time, let's say they do not participate, decisions are taken for them and there is just one thing for them to do, this is to accept the decision, even if they don't agree with it. I don't know if that completely answers the question, it is an aspect that I have not thought too much about.

Senator McGrand: We have been talking about the industrialization and the fact that the lower St. Lawrence needs more industry.

Now, what industry had you in mind when you talked about new industries. What industries did you have in mind?

Mr. Giasson: After all, let's say the development of industry is indeed an economical aspect that perhaps concerns us less directly, but personally, I believe that it would be good to try to develop the right industries that we already have in this locality and to try to exploit the resources that we have such as the forest, the mines and perhaps other resources that will have to be studied in the locality which exist but about which we do not know much. I do not think that at a given moment we will be invaded by industries

from outside that decide to invest. I think that the problem we run up against here, I think that it is here that we can find the solutions, to try to exploit our resources as best as possible. I think that sums up again in large part ideas expressed last night by Mr. Gelinas.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Paradis will answer the first part of your question, Senator McGrand.

Mr. Ghislain Paradis: I would like to add some comments: I will try to answer the question among other things, but I will also try to add a certain exactness I am very anxious about because in the first place concerning the participation of the poor, I have an example in mind: let's suppose we allow old people who are for the most part poor, except perhaps senators, if we allow them to have something to say regarding the construction of their house in which they are going to live, I've the impression that these people would, perhaps, feel a little better in these beautiful buildings: its' truly interesting to see it, often the buildings are masterpieces of architecture, but when an old person has been inside these buildings, he says "It's beautiful, but I don't feel at home in there", it's too big a break with the previous world a person has lived in. This is the first example.

Secondly, when in certain towns, many, the majority of citizens here I think of the middle class in the Region—I work myself at Mont-Joli and the average salary there is from \$70 to \$80 a week—I think without wishing to drift too far from the issue, I think that it's the poor, at least it seems to me these people are poor, these people then when at the municipal level, at the regional level, when decisions are made, they are not consulted. Evidently, if we ask the civic leaders, we tell them "why not consult the population". They will say: "who is the population?" We answer: "It's the Chamber of Commerce, it's the Lion's Club, it's the Rotary Club, it's the Welfare Agency, but this isn't the population". It is said: "Whenever the poor organize themselves, they will be listened to." The poor are not even allowed to have people to work among them, surely it isn't the poor who will produce leaders to gain participation on their behalf. I think that in this Region and also at the provincial level, it is believed that the difficulties in being social leaders at the provincial level are that they allow themselves to be treated as

trouble-makers and even as communists, let's admit that is a little ridiculous. I think that...

Senator Eudes: Such as the Company of Young Canadians.

Mr. Paradis: Yes, the Company of Young Canadians and the Association of the Workers of Quebec—to me these are realities, we have also talked about participation. Yet, without wishing to dwell too long, I wish to speak of the definition of poverty. I had the impression just now from the questions asked that we are uniting poverty to an economic aspect. Sir, we refer to a Federal agency called the Canadian Economic Council, in its fifth or sixth report, when it defines poverty, I have the impression that it gives a meaning other than economy and this is important. I am going to tell the senators, I am going to name for you parishes that you don't know, but which for us have a special significance, St Charles, St Gabriel... When one sees men coming to see us with "I am ready to send my son to school, but I have no money to clothe him, if I send him to school, he'll be a laughing stock", perhaps this man exaggerates sometimes, but I think there is some truth in it, as Richard Boulanger said before, I think those days are over, perhaps my remarks appear emotional, I do not wish to contain too much sentimentality, I think it is in life as it is that such things can be seen. I know that it isn't the first time that you are hearing about these things, you can even read about it throughout the newspapers. I know that it isn't the first time that you are told these things, but nevertheless I was anxious to tell you, because I consider it to be extremely important, because the poor of 30 or 40 years, "My life consists of paying my debts, consists of trying to find wood to warm myself, and of the rest I do not speak, I no longer even think about it". The man who is unhappy is the one who has succeeded in obtaining a T.V. set, and who watches what goes on elsewhere.

Senator McGrand: Well, I couldn't agree more with you and what you have said because I believe that the poverty or the employment or the prosperity of things are of any region is overcome by the development of the resources within that area and I am very pleased to hear you say it.

I am very pleased to hear you say that you have two resources in this area that, if properly developed, it would give a degree of prosperity that you would like to have.

Mr. Paradis: No, there are no social activists, as the term is understood by universal definition, a definition accepted by everyone. There are many activists in the ODEQ (I don't know if I'm referring to a designation which you know as BAEQ), the Eastern Quebec Development Office. All right, there are some activists who are called agents of social development, agents of social change. I refer you to Forillon Park, among other places where there is going to be expropriation. There are social activists such as the Public Works Council of Montreal, and in Quebec, there is one in the district of St. Roch. There is no one like that here and I know that the boutique for which I work is wondering whether to hire that fellow, but it takes money and who knows to what extent provincial and federal governments are reluctant in matters concerning the budget when it comes time to try to alleviate poverty. They certainly have their own good reasons, but for us who are based here and who consider ourselves in the line of fire, it's often difficult to understand their decisions. We really want to understand, we really want to co-operate with others, but they make it so difficult for us. If at this particular time I seem to be putting into my proposals a strong insistence on that, it's because now in the boutique where we live and where I work, we put in a considerable amount of labour. Obviously you're going to say that you yourselves are paid to work; and this morning you hesitated to come here, not that you aren't interested. But what are we doing here? We shouldn't exaggerate the amount of time it's taking, but it's a whole morning, and before classes begin, that's very important.

Senator Hastings: I agree wholeheartedly with what you say about the organization of the poor and the social animators and the great work they are doing.

After all, we have never had the advance in labour or in the political system without the organizers; without the agitators and agitate all you want but I would like to ask you this question. Are there any social animators working in the Rimouski area?

Mr. Paradis: It seems that it's going to happen anyway.

Senator Hastings: Are there no organizations of the poor?

Mr. Paradis: No.

Senator Hastings: None at all?

Mr. Paradis: No.

Senator Quart: First of all, I congratulate you on the very interesting brief and I have a question to ask you concerning page 3 of it, once more on the participation of the poor. When you prepared this brief here, which is very, very good, did you first of all ask different groups of poor people to make suggestions beforehand? You suggested participation, and yet you had an opportunity, when you prepared the brief, to ask for suggestions from poor people and to incorporate the suggestions in this brief of yours.

Mr. Giasson: Let me say that we obviously didn't consult the poor class, because everything was done very rapidly, in other words we were pressed for time, but I think that in order to consult the poor one can't just do it suddenly all at once like that. The structures must be permanent, there must be a continuing dialogue. I think that to meet people, to simply ask their opinions, doesn't produce such great results. We'd like to include the question of participation in this brief because it's a question which preoccupies us a great deal, but on this question we haven't yet set up the basic structures; we think about it, we are working on it, trying to develop operative models so that participation will be truly effective; because you can have participation, or a semblance of participation, you can invite people to participate, but if you don't give any power at that time, it results in absolutely nothing, and at that point it's we who decide in the end.

Senator Quart: And then, what about the gentleman who says that they don't yet have here in your district an association of poor citizens, but merely other groups. I must say this in English because my French is not too good.

In your welfare before deduction is made do you allow fifty dollars for a poor person to deduct?

In Ontario it is twenty-five and in New Brunswick it is twenty, but how much do you allow for a poor person to earn while working before you cut him off welfare?

Mr. Giasson: Let me say that the responsibility of defining more clearly the role of the social worker and setting up a system of welfare has fallen for some time now upon the office of the ministry, and in my knowledge the budget is \$25 per month.

Senator Quart: The same as in Ontario?

Mr. Giasson: I think that that is going to have something to do now with the new so-called social legislation perhaps the 26th; it's going to come up on November 26 and I think there are things which might change.

Senator Quart: Do you think it would increase?

Mr. Giasson: Probably.

Senator Quart: Because do you find that it might be at least a temporary solution if not a permanent one that if a person on welfare could take a job and earn more than twenty-five dollars or fifty dollars or seventy-five dollars and it would not be deducted and not cut him off welfare until he has paid his bills because I imagine the majority of people on welfare are those who owe a lot of money and if they were allowed to pay their bills before being cut off say for four or five months or so, do you think that that would be at least a temporary solution?

If they earn more than twenty-five dollars and it is reported to you and we know that there are a lot of people that don't report and I don't blame them. I wouldn't report to you. I would not report to you if I knew I could get away with it because to be perfectly honest with you the allowance paid just to keep life in the person...

If that person could be employed and receive a salary and he can be honest about it and he can go to you and say here, I have five hundred dollars in bills, don't cut me off welfare because I have a job and give me a chance for four or five months and leave me on welfare until these bills are paid and then I won't have all of these loan sharks after me and if I am cut off I will never get off of welfare and I will be down in the mud forever.

Therefore, if they could for four or five months have this done I think it would be wise. This has happened in many, many places and they take a job—boot-legging I think they call it in most places—and they take a job and they tell their children "Don't tell the welfare officer and don't let anybody know" and so they are teaching their children first of all to go along with a certain form of thievery which I really couldn't categorize and operating and also to lie and have a fear of the welfare officer.

I would very much like your frank opinion on that because it is a theory that I have picked up along the way in the different

provinces and it might be a temporary solution? What do you think, Miss Bélanger?

Miss Hélène Bélanger, general director of social services of the diocese of Rimouski: I agree with your theory.

Mr. Paradis: If you will permit, if I may add a comment on Bill 26 in Quebec, this is going to be possible, and it will be in force very soon. Mr. Castonguay is in the process of choosing his officials so that it can be put into effect; it will be possible, and not only that, but we can make loans to improve the situation for those who want to start a small business.

The Assistant President: Can you supply us with a copy of this bill?

Mr. Paradis: The statutes?

Senator Quart: Congratulations to the Belle Province.

The Assistant President: Now, senators, I think our time is almost up, but perhaps we could take a few minutes more.

Senator Hastings: I have another little question. You mentioned, sir, that you should not be... here today that you had better work to do elsewhere. You mentioned the beginning of school. Do you personally know of any child that will not be enrolling in school or any child that will not be continuing in school due to poorness or the economic conditions of the family?

Mr. Paradis: You ask if I understand the matter in hand, and if people can't go to school if they are poor. Of course, of course; perhaps not to elementary school, because social pressure determines that only young people attend classes, but on the secondary and college levels it is because they're poor that they can't attend classes, and at the moment I have specific cases in mind.

Senator Hastings: Very many?

Another voice: Something which happens very frequently at this point is that, because the parents of a certain child are poor, they aren't solvent, and even the possibility of a loan is denied to this child who doesn't have solvent endorsers to back him up so that he can take out a loan, and the possibility of pursuing his studies very often has to be given up.

Senator Hastings: They are dropping out. What we are speaking about is the stigma

of the poor? That they are categorized and put into this category of poorness and they are characterized as second class citizens and...

Mr. Paradis: We're trying to include this participation of people classed as poor, unless we have to admit that it exists in order to make a concrete examination.

Senator Quart: Mr. President, and Senator Fournier, before we finish, I insist that this pretty young girl be allowed to speak because everyone always to me that it's the women who get the last word.

I want you to have the last word. You are making so many signs to me that you agreed with me that I want you to have the last word.

The Assistant President: Objection to the last remark.

Now I want to thank the members of the Commission who have given us a great deal of information, who have added to the information we had. Now there is something I want to emphasize. I think that this brief which has been presented to us sums itself up in this one question which has been presented to us in other situations and keeps coming up: Putting into practice training programmes adapted to the poor, which covers a lot of ground. It's a problem which we found all across Canada. Unfortunately the poor people haven't been consulted; there's no dialogue; there's hardly even any understanding. There's been a structure built without any consultation, we're forced to accept it, we aren't ready for it even though we admit that it's better, and it's taken up several ways. This is a recommendation which touches us very closely. I think it's a very important one or I wouldn't make this remark. Now I'll give Miss Bélanger here the last word.

Miss Bélanger: It's perhaps a comment: it's about the consultation of the poor. They don't participate, we don't consult them, the programmes are always imposed. They don't have an opportunity to expose the subtleties of these programmes, to discuss them with us. Everything is imposed by others.

Senator Hastings: And we don't provide money to organize the poor.

Le président adjoint: Merci beaucoup, messieurs, mesdames.

The Assistant President: The next brief comes from the Joint Commission on Urbanism of the Rimouski-Mont-Joli district. It is going to be presented to us by Mr. Pierre Jobin. Are you here, Mr. Jobin?

Mr. Jobin, general secretary: Yes.

The Assistant President: Welcome, Mr. Jobin, and without further ado we'll ask you as we have asked all the others to give us a short summary of your brief, your intentions, what you propose to look at, the remarks which result from the system, and then as with all the other we shall ask you a few questions.

Mr. Jobin: I must tell you in order to be explicit that the brief which the Commission is presenting was accepted yesterday by the regular assembly of the Commission; it therefore represents the official opinion of the Joint Commission on Urbanism. The said Commission obviously isn't an organism which specializes in problems of poverty, it's an assembly of municipal representatives, mayors, councillors, officials, which is in charge of preparing a plan of urban development for the 13 municipalities of the Rimouski-Mont-Joli region.

You will understand then that our brief is not very elaborate, very sophisticated; it is built mainly on two major observations. The first is that the citizens of peripheral and underdeveloped regions are relatively poorer, no matter what their incomes, than citizens of large urban centres.

The second is that even within this relative general poverty there are citizens even more underprivileged than others. We must try to know to the greatest extent possible the true situation of these people if we want to be able to solve the problems which present themselves.

Concerning the first observation, let me say that one can see that the standard of living in the marginal regions is lower than in the large urban centres, first in the area of the consumer situation. Mass publicity has created a certain level of aspiration in this area. And yet in the backward areas one can see that, for example, there are problems with municipal services, which is a field that the Commission knows well, because it is our main concern, our zone being the most populous and the most urbanized in the east of Quebec. The citizens of certain municipalities which are members of the Commission can't count on ditch services, drainage, police, fire depart-

ments, libraries within their municipality even taking into account their incomes, even if they are millionaires. There aren't police services. The transportation services in my opinion are in the same condition, and I can say that on the whole recreative, cultural and sports activities follow generally along the same lines. So as far as consumer services go they are already behind the great urban centres.

As far as income is concerned, I think the problem is even more serious. All you have to do is reread the opinion of the regional council on the renegotiation of the Agreement, to see that there are three categories of problems: the first is the scarcity of sources of income for the year 1969: the region had about 18 per cent of its manpower unemployed, compared to the average of 6.9 per cent in Quebec as a whole. Therefore there is a scarcity of sources of income.

Secondly, there is a certain insecurity in these sources of income. The sector of secondary manufacturing in Quebec employs 26.8 per cent of the manpower. In this region the proportion falls to 17 per cent, of which there are some in industries which are not dynamic and which need to be reorganized, which is the case in several sawmills for example, and we know the problem that is causing at the moment. There is also in addition to that a certain lack of income. We know that the per capita income is \$1107, which is equivalent to 60.1 per cent of the per capita income of Quebec which is \$1840.

We must, however, think over these figures carefully, noting that the county of Rimouski, which contains a good part of the population, enjoys a slightly privileged situation with regard to industrial investment, as well as with regard to population increase, compared to the rest of the territory. This would indicate certain dynamic aspects of the county.

Furthermore, in the section of the region which falls under the jurisdiction of the Commission which is in the county of Matane, there are two important industrial projects which are being carried out and which would therefore show a certain stabilization in that area as well.

In concluding these observations, the Commission feels that regional economic disparities constitute an important aspect of the phenomenon of poverty. Underdeveloped regions are underprivileged in the face of general prosperity, which is only relative prosperity really, and when our economy undergoes a

recession calling for a recourse to austerity measures, it is these regions which are hardest hit.

Therefore it is essential that the different levels of government, including the municipalities whose elemental role we are inclined too often to forget, involve themselves in a well-defined policy of regional development to correct the situation.

This will undoubtedly constitute an important element in a realistic strategy of the war against poverty, because these regions of less development are those which contain the highest percentage of "poor" citizens.

The second section deals with the fact of underprivileged citizens, because it is obvious that the application of even a vigorous policy of regional development, if it eliminates the inter-regional inequalities, will not extend to the case of intra-regional inequalities. We know that all the major centres, even the most dynamic ones, are at grips with problems of poverty.

Concerning the Rimouski-Mont-Joli area in particular, the studies carried out by the Joint Commission will allow us in one or two months to familiarize ourselves with the housing situation in the whole of these 13 municipalities, the income scale of their citizens, the development of the age structure, all the demographic aspects, the costs of education, etc.

This information will enable the Commission to outline certain policies which the municipalities can put into practice to accelerate the economic growth of the region. Obviously the results will not be immediate and won't solve the problems of all the underprivileged groups.

Another positive aspect of this dossier will be the awareness it will create in both the municipal authorities and the population in general of the concrete situation with which a part of our fellow citizens are struggling. Perhaps even the information made available will show the underprivileged themselves that their situation is shared by many and cause the emergence among them of a will toward change.

Nevertheless, a desire for change is not enough; there must also be the means to bring about this change. In this sense the Commission is counting on the senate committee to manage to bring order to the plethora of programmes and the tangle of jurisdictions which characterize the present organization of the war against poverty, and

in this regard the mayors, the ordinary people who are members of the Commission, admit themselves that because of the fact that they are preoccupied with the problems of all their fellow citizens who are suffering a tremendous amount of misery, with situation programmes, with the jurisdiction of private organizations who are involving themselves in the struggle, with the structures of social development, there is certainly a great deal of organization needed in that area.

We hope too that in its considerations the committee will place heavy emphasis on the role that municipal governments may be called upon to exercise in the decentralization of the application of the various programmes which it proposes.

Quebec and Canada are already urban societies and are becoming increasingly so. The responsibilities and the methods of action open to municipal governments must necessarily evolve as a result.

The Assistant President: Thank you Pierre. We are going to ask your indulgence because the members of our committee have just received your brief. We haven't had the time to read it. We've had a fairly comprehensive summary of it and in order to give the committee members a few minutes to read your brief I have one or two questions to put to you. You mentioned industrial development projects in the region—can you tell us what is involved in them?

Mr. Jobin: The two projects, which are in addition to the other projects which are always going on, are: firstly in the section of the Commission which is in the county of Matane at Mont Joli, Ste-Flavie, Perryound Electronics, which is a factory which makes electronic flushing devices and whose opening was announced a few months ago by the ministers of the former government. The second case was announced more recently and the construction on it has already been initiated. It is at Price, a municipality where at present there is already a brick factory of the Esto Company which should be employing about 50 people by a year from now. Those are the two projects—in addition, the federal government has contributed to various projects, to different forms of aid for the designated regions and favours the setting up of enterprises just as the provincial government does.

The Assistant President: Another question from me Pierre, and afterwards I'll hand over the floor to the members of the committee. I see that in the last part of your report you

mention here "As far as the Rimouski-Mont Joli region is concerned, the studies undertaken by the Joint Commission on Urbanism will enable us in one or two months from now..." Now poverty existed in these regions as it did everywhere else, and we are at present caught in a deplorable situation, but how is it that it was only two months ago that we became aware of poverty and made a study of it? How did it happen that studies weren't made years ago?

Mr. Jobin: We just take into account the fact that a Commission like this one isn't empowered to study only the problem of poverty; its duty is to prepare a plan of urban development. Nevertheless, with the help of the studies which we are undertaking we can interpret the information we collect on the situation, in order to use it to determine the state of poverty in the same way as we do for the low income groups and then the whole classification of the population can be useful in the preparation of a plan of development and equally useful to organizations and individuals who want to use it to arrest poverty or at least to alleviate it; but the specific goal of the studies was not primarily poverty.

The Assistant President: Well, Pierre, I see that Senator Hastings seems to have a question now. Sir.

Senator Hastings: With respect to your plans for urban development in this area, really if you proceed and were successful in your establishment of these industries and so forth, have you actually or has the government contributed to this development to this area—have we done anything for the poor or have we simply contributed to the skills and to the middle-class?

Will your program in any way help them?

Mr. Jobin: I don't believe that the goal of the Commission is to fight poverty. What we're aiming at is first of all to prepare a plan of urbanism and urban development. It seems possible that within this policy there may be some derivative effects which may contribute to reducing poverty to a certain extent, to the extent that economic development and an increase in urban services may contribute to bettering the lot of underprivileged citizens. It is understood that in other respect too the Commission is trying to define the role of the municipalities with regard to the whole spectrum of problems which confront their citizens, and then in that respect (I really have no guarantee of this at

the moment) perhaps this will allow the municipalities of the region to define for themselves a function and a task a little more precise in the area of poverty. However, there will always remain the question of means, because we know that the municipal organization of the whole of Quebec is characterized by a shortage of revenue. We are going to have to make choices as to whether we dig ditches or try to solve the problems of the 10 or 15 per cent of the population who are the most under-privileged, but does that really depend on the municipality or should the solution come from another level of government?

The Assistant President: Fine, just fine, Pierre. Senator Quart, you have a question?

Senator Quart: No, except to congratulate you on your brief (this morning I'm on the committee of congratulations). But when you answered Senator Hastings' question, if your projects, which are action not directly for the poor, are accepted and succeed, that creates employment, and in that sense it helps the poor enormously, because after all, when a poor person finds a job, it isn't direct welfare, and you have a role to play.

The Assistant President: Mr. Jobin has admitted as much.

Senator Hastings: But the industries that they are establishing are designed for the skilled and the upper class and unless we can bring the poor up to become qualified, there is no use. We simply create industries for the skilled and the educated and the middle class.

We will assist them in other ways as he explained through the council and so forth but direct assistance to the poor, no.

Senator Quart: Well, some of the poor are skilled though?

Senator Hastings: Not very many Senator.

The Deputy Chairman: Some of them are skilled but they have no place to work.

Senator Quart: Well, that is just it, I am sure there are some skilled poor.

Mr. Jobin: Another example there of the effects that planned municipal activities can have on the situation of disadvantaged citizens would be, for example, the creation of low-cost housing. That's an area in which municipalities have a role to play, but there again, as the senator says, it doesn't directly settle the problem of the poor, it houses them

better, but that's all it does, you have poor people who are better housed, but are poor people just the same.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator Eudes.

Senator Eudes: Mr. Chairman, as you explained last night, for over a year we've been travelling around the country hearing all the people who are interested in the fight against poverty. We're trying to find a situation that isn't easy and in the brief that has just been presented, one thing that struck us all, you say that your Committee expects that the Senate Committee will succeed in putting some order into the plethora of programs and the tangle of jurisdictions that characterizes the present organization of the fight against poverty. It's a thing that we've noticed everywhere. Do you have a suggestion? I'm asking embarrassing questions...

Mr. Jobin: That still depends on an important political decision. The best way not to have jurisdiction is to give the money to a single, responsible government level.

Senator Eudes: Would you express yourself a little more clearly and in greater detail. The needy, the poor if you will, generally have three areas where they have to try to find a solution to their problem: there is the municipal area, the provincial area and the federal area. Now, when you say "a tangle of jurisdictions", is that what you have in mind?

Mr. Jobin: Yes.

Senator Eudes: What's the solution? And then "plethora of program"; there you are completely right; because God knows we how many programs we have; the more we have, the more complicate we make poverty. It's no solution to find programs; it's an indication of how complicated we're making the poverty problems, to my meaning. So we have to unify, but how? Do you have a solution?

Mr. Jobin: I think we can even make the picture that's just been sketched a little bit more complicated by the action of private or semi-private agencies like the United Appeal, the Council of Social Agencies; I see some that aren't government agencies properly speaking, but which nevertheless have an important role, actually an important role there. Finally, to settle the problem of poverty, we have to put some resources into it. Depending on what level of government we're at, we can have doubts about putting in more or less. I'm pretty sure that the problem of an

area like the Lower St. Lawrence would have a more adequate solution if we put in the money that's given over to the fight against poverty in the form of various allowances that the government can supply to a sort of regional government that would engage in the promotion of the economic growth of the area, because we can see that unemployment is double the Quebec average at some periods. The poor are not necessarily unemployed, with all the distinctions that can be made there, yet the fact remains that there must be a correlation between the unemployed citizen and poverty statistics according to per capita income. So we can figure in the Lower St. Lawrence that there are maybe 10 per cent too many poor, if we want to have the same average as for the whole of Canada, for the whole of Quebec. That's a regional problem that, it seems to me, should be settled at the regional level through a form of regional government that doesn't yet exist, etc. etc., but I think it's a problem that can recur fairly often.

I know that various levels of government are trying more and more to create precisely a regional awareness and then, to set up regional organizations that aren't direct emanations of the people, of government structures. I know that in New Brunswick, there's already a start in the Northwest, and there's the Cape Breton Development Program. I think that's the first thing to do for disadvantaged areas, to bring poverty down to the national level there, that's a priority, I think. I even think that before putting in extra money to help the underprivileged in Vancouver, Toronto or Montreal, it seems to me, it's a personal judgment, it appears to me we ought to settle those problems of regional disparity. It's only another way then, because the problem isn't the same there, if it's directed to layers of the people, well for the whole structure of a region, because the Lower St. Lawrence is being emptied out, that could be settled say they close up shop, we're going to go and work in Montreal, and we're going to take along our problems as underprivileged people to Montreal.

The Deputy Chairman: Pierre, could I ask you a question?

Senator Eudes: I have a question.

The Deputy Chairman: It's because I'd like it summed up with another question; I'd like to have a few words. Pierre, is there in the region—we in our language talk about a class of society called the working poor, somebody

who works, isn't on unemployment and doesn't have a big enough wage to help him get out of poverty. Does that class of society exist here?

tant function, so good success and good luck, and again, on behalf of the Committee, thank you very much.

Mr. Jobin: It's the farmer first of all with their problems about milk. We have a plan that tells us the region is just about the best in Canada for milk production; at the same time the farmers believe the region is embarking on the plan, and now as a result of the plan, the farmers are equipped, have made serious investments; that's a plan. Secondly, Rimouski is a city centered on commerce; the average income is pretty good, but there are still a very large number of clerks, waitresses, and things like that, who in any case still don't make very big wages even though they may be higher than what they are twenty miles from here; the fact still remains that they're people who are classed among the working poor.

The Deputy Chairman: So, it exists here like in other places?

Mr. Jobin: It exists, but then it exists the more because the industries in the region are not very dynamic, things are very ancient, i.e. industries that are very closely tied to the primary sources and so are very often very far from being in the forefront of technology; they're industries using manpower, textiles too, which is a big employer; it's an industry with a labor force to make profit for them; they don't have to count on the development of their technology, but on the work they can get out of their labor force, the low salaries they're capable of paying.

Senator Eudes: Just one question. Does your committee see about moving poorly housed people to more habitable places?

Mr. Jobin: No, not yet; we're responsible for preparing a plan, and we hope that after the plan is tabled, there's going to be an organization that's going to take that plan in hand and carry it out and in the plan, there will of course be fairly specific recommendations, since we're going to have them all based on situations, and the measures will be carried out over a period of time that will remain to be determined, according to the finances that will be available.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. Jobin, I thank you infinitely on behalf of the Committee and I thank you personally even more because you appear so young to me, because you're a young man who is performing a very impor-

The Deputy Chairman: The next brief is that of the Regional Development Council. We are fortunate in having with us this morning its chairman, Mr. Claude Jourdain. Mr. Jourdain has submitted a very voluminous brief. I hope he isn't going to try to read the whole thing, with information and statistics, so we're going to ask Mr. Jourdain to give us a summary of these plans, etc. and now I think that the question of time, it's going very well this morning, so I think that about eleven twenty, we're going to think of ourselves a bit.

Mr. Jacques St-Pierre: Mr. Chairman, madam and senators, I first have to make a correction and apologies for the chairman of the Regional Development Council. My name is actually Jacques St. Pierre and I'm the official representative of the Regional Development Council of which Mr. Jourdain is the chairman and he has asked me to apologize to you for him. We have just entered into a very important operation for the region, very important in fact for the fight against poverty and so he found it impossible to come and meet you.

With your permission, I'm going to give some explanations of some terms contained in our brief concerning, for example, expanded development growth, a thing that wasn't indicated in the brief. Then I'll make a very succinct summary of the brief and after that, we can perhaps go on to the question period.

Well, some basic concepts, for example of what expansion means for us. This word can be defined as a temporary and irreversible increase in economic quantities, and which does not necessarily have any driving or consequential effect in time. By economic quantities must here be understood, major periods in economic development, like per capita income, national production and the unemployment rate, etc. These indicators express a form of change in the economic activity of a region or country. This change will be called expansion because it's temporary, in the sense that the economic activity can gradually subside to pretty well the same level it was at before this crisis became evident.

As for growth, for us it's the increase over long periods of significant economic quantities; it supposes major structural changes.

The difference between expansion and growth is based on the one hand on the period of time over which the changes take place and on the other hand on the references to structural changes. It is very obvious that the time criterion in the differentiation of expansion and growth is extremely complex and essentially relative.

Development is the coherent series of transformations in the economic, administrative, political, social and psychological structures, and makes possible the appearance of growth and its extension in time. The term coherent, as employed here, does not indicate that the series of transformations in question is planned or consciously introduced by any agency whatsoever. It rather indicates that this series of transformations is the result of a deep trend that will mark the historical period of the economy and of the society involved.

Finally, it's quite obvious that the idea of development takes on a somewhat different meaning if an external agent acts to give meaning and direction to the structural changes that development supposes. We'll then talk about regional or national planned development, depending on whether this action is regional or national.

To the BAEQ it appeared to be a planned, coherent series of structural transformations, a planned development supplying on the one hand, actions aimed at promoting the growth of some factors and that of the regional economy which will see the end of the relative impoverishment of the region.

This conclusion is based on the non-existence in the pilot territory of a sector or project sufficiently encompassing, involving or driving to start a general growth process, and on what is just as important, the inability of the expansion of the various social and economic activity sectors to generate a growth situation. Since time is short, Mr. Chairman, I'm going to cut short the explanations and give a general outline of the brief.

First, may we say in passing that there are at least fifteen or twenty copies available to the newsmen and other people here in the hall.

Then we start off by mentioning the Economic Council of Canada which talks about the experience of the Lower St. Lawrence and the Gaspé, in fact the experience of our region in the fight against poverty. We say that the main purpose of this brief is a modest one. It is to tell about an experiment presently under way that can be used, we're

sure of that, in the planning of a strategy to eliminate the problem of poverty.

On page 3, we present the Eastern Quebec Regional Development Council which represents the population of ten provincial electoral subdivisions from Kamouraska to the Magdalen Islands.

The Deputy Chairman: Included?

Mr. St-Pierre: Included, which represents the people in dealings with the federal and provincial governments. This agency has been officially recognized by both governments in a federal-provincial agreement; you have a quotation from that agreement.

On page 5, we talk about the background of the movement to combat poverty here in the Eastern Quebec region and we say that the chief characteristics of this movement are the thinking behind this action, the deep-running social movement which is of major importance if we consider its possible influence on policy and you therefore have from page 5 to page 7, inclusive, the background of this movement, and of its main characteristics.

On page 8, we present the economic and social situation in Eastern Quebec. You have, as we said just a while ago, a host of statistics for the economy in general and then, on page 10, a summary of the situation in agriculture, the forest industry, the fisheries and tourism, on page 11.

In the face of such revealing figures, our regional population has two basic options: to give the region a face-lift since it was becoming ever harder to live or else, to take the necessary measures to block the tendencies that were daily appearing more disastrous. They had no choice and decided to take the necessary measures.

So, starting on page 13, you have an explanation of the Eastern Quebec Development Bureau which has actually erected a plan for development with the participation of the population and they say that this is actually a plan, because in this important work there is a definition of a task in qualitative and quantitative terms; the situation of this task in time and space and a large number of details concerning the respective roles of many public and private, individual and group agents in the execution of this task.

So, starting on page 14, there's a general explanation of this task. We say that there are a number of long-term and short-term growth characteristics. On page 15, this task is qualified as to development objectives and

one page 18, 17, at the bottom of page 17, we give these major development objectives, i.e. six very specific objectives. So this morning, Mr. Chairman, I gave your secretary a copy of the BAEQ plan; it's a voluminous work in ten sections. You now have one section in hand and I officially deposit it with your Committee so that it can be studied in depth, because we think the experiment here is valuable.

The Deputy Chairman: Now, could I have a motion to accept it.

Senator Quart: With pleasure.

The Deputy Chairman: Accepted, thank you.

Mr. St-Pierre: Now, with regard to this BAEQ plan, there was an intergovernmental agreement, i.e. between the federal government and the provincial government which recognizes pretty well the same objectives as those in this plan. I've brought this agreement here, and I'm pleased to deposit it with your Committee for study. In this agreement, there is a clause indicating that it must be, that it can be renegotiated before March 31, 1970. The Regional Council is going to study this agreement, and has filed it with its government interlocutors, i.e. the two governments and we officially deposit with your Committee this opinion of the Regional Council giving succinct advice for the fight against poverty.

The Deputy Chairman: Unanimously accepted.

Senator Quart: Yes.

Mr. St-Pierre: On page 22, we think that for us the problem of poverty in Eastern Quebec is a cultural problem, i.e. the adjustment of traditional schemes to modern thinking and we think that this is really the chief problem in the region here. We have an enormous quantity of means at our disposal precisely for alleviating the problem of poverty, and these means are little used or not at all, and I had a few of the existing choices, etc. Well, starting from page 22, we develop this idea and finally, on page 37, we talk about planned development and popular participation which is absolutely necessary, in our opinion, and popular participation will obviously be brought about by specific means, i.e. social animation and very effective information on participation, planning and participation. With your permission, I'm just going to read, on page 43, two of the conclusions.

Then, we'd probably still have to make a critical analysis of the various formulas proposed for making war on poverty in a rural area in the light of these general considerations on the causes of the situation itself and on the socio-economic foundations of social animation and participation, and also in the light of the unusual experiment we are living through now in Eastern Quebec. That now appears rather hard to us, we repeat, since the Regional Development Council does not have the required specialists at its disposal. So we think that it would be worthwhile for the Senate members to come to the area for a much more extended period, at least a week or two, in order to do this analysis themselves. We think they can get some very valuable indications for future legislation.

You will no doubt permit us, in conclusion, to again state that social animation and participation, without planning, lead nowhere, from our point of view. We'd go even further; participation without a number of political constraints appears to us, at the present time, to be a decoy.

As far as costs are concerned, planned development and participation do not appear to us to cost any more than all the obsolete measures that are being maintained to deal with the problems and in the long term are, we are convinced, a profitable investment.

And, from a strictly human point of view, it would indicate that we have not decided to sacrifice, without any further ado, thousands of individuals to the whims of a society that is overturning all the values so rapidly that, for some people, it is becoming just as hard and even impossible to keep up with the times as to follow the fashion in the circles of Parisian haute couture.

Recommendations follow logically from this brief; some derive from the opinion on renegotiation filed by the Regional Development Council at the time of the renegotiation of the Canada-Quebec general co-operation agreement; this document is appended to this brief.

Recommendation number one: it appears absolutely essential to us that the federal and provincial governments establish overall development plans, integrated and co-ordinated between them, for their respective territories, clearly indicating in them the development and growth objectives;

2. that immediately these plans are made they be fragmented into regional plans;

3. that the people be associated as strongly as possible with the making and execution of

these plans, by the use of the techniques of animation, information and consultation.

4. that they agree to work in close co-operation, in a spirit of co-ordination and consultation, not only for the making, but also of the execution of the plans;

5. that they agree to deconcentrate their decision—making power into perfectly co-ordinated interdisciplinary regional apparatuses that will have the task of executing the planning. (Examples of this type of decentralized government agency exist in Eastern Quebec, particularly the Eastern Quebec Development Bureau, the Regional Development Conference, the Federal-Provincial Steering Committee and the federal administration in the Eastern Quebec region);

6. that the government agree to give to such decentralized apparatuses, not only real powers, but also adequate budgets for them to be able to attain, in the prescribed time, the development and growth objectives indicated by the planning;

7. that they rationalize their efforts in each of the regions by not keeping the "ordinary budgets" and "plan budgets" in separate compartments and by programming over at least five years all their investments in the regions and by taking the objectives of the plan strictly into account. They would thus succeed in making regional budgets that would not allow contradictory investments and would make possible scientific control of each of the expenditures for maximum productivity;

8. that they agree to genuinely play the game of consultation, at the execution stage of the regional plans, with the representative popular organizations, like the regional development councils;

9. that they stop looking at poverty, in the rural or peripheral regions, as a wound for which improved balms have to be found and to consider it instead as an inevitable consequence of the age-old absence of logical policies for development and growth, a malaise for which there today exists a remedy, planning;

10. that they attach, finally, major importance to the very valuable research and other work done in this field by the Economic Council of Canada.

Senator Quart: Mr. Chairman, I would like to thank Mr. St-Pierre,—I did notice, Mr. Jordain; that you had corrected it—for the tremendous work you have done and, as a Quebecker, I am proud to tell you that from no

other place in Canada have we had a better documented brief with all the—it is going to take us a full week to go through it all, to digest everything, and it's a pity we haven't got a week to spend with you.

Mr. St-Pierre: It is a pity.

Senator Quart: How about inviting us?

Mr. St-Pierre: With pleasure.

The Deputy Chairman: Mr. St-Pierre, I am going to call you Jacques if you don't mind, and you do seem very young, everything I wanted to say has been said by Senator Quart, she spoke of an enormous brief, and you have presented us with a gigantic one, with a lot of information, this is certainly going to take us quite a few afternoons—without wishing to change the subject, the question of the tourist trade was touched on at the Chamber of Commerce last night. And I promised the Chamber of Commerce to introduce some discussion of the subject here today, could we take a few minutes, can the tourist industry help the poor?

Mr. St-Pierre: Mr. Chairman, we calculate in the brief that, in 1964, about 225,000 tourists came into the region and remained for an average of four days, I think, in the region and left behind them a certain amount of money.

We see the tourist industry as part of a general aim which we would define as dynamic activity in our region. And so the tourist trade is looked upon as an industry in the same way as other industries and in the same way as mining. The tourist trade, then, will be able to create employment and fairly remunerative employment; but, let's face it, the tourist trade is going to create a lot of seasonable jobs and very few permanent jobs and to give you an example, I was here last night, I heard Madame speaking about national parks, there is a national park which has been decided on for the Forillon Peninsula in the Gaspésie. Statistics show us that this national park will create about 200 permanent jobs and 1500 temporary seasonable jobs. The tourist trade, then, is considered as an activity in which we must stake all we can; indeed, the plan and the general cooperative agreement have established priorities in the development of the tourist trade, that is to say a national park, two or three provincial parks, three prime tourist vacation spots, a whole network of steps and special measures to help the tourist industry as such, hotels . .

The Deputy Chairman: What percentage of your tourists are American, have you a rough idea?

Mr. St-Pierre: If I remember correctly, the figures are in the brief. No, let me see, they are in the BAEQ plan, not in the brief, if I remember correctly, 60 per cent are American. There was a tendency to think that most of our tourists came from Ontario but statistics show the opposite.

The Deputy Chairman: Are there any other questions on the tourist industry, because we want to get back to the brief, we still have half an hour; if not, we will begin to explore the brief a little and ask Mr. St-Pierre questions. There are so many, it's hard to know which ones to ask, that's the problem...

Senator Eudes: In your recommendations, you draw up plans for local development, which are presented immediately followed by recommendations... you demand the participation of the people in the preparation of these plans, and in their implementation, as far as implementation goes, I think it's fairly easy, but how can the people take part in the preparation of plans.

Mr. St-Pierre: The experience that we have of this shows that it is possible. From 63 to 66, the Planning Bureau for Eastern Quebec was working here in the region, it is a body created by the people with the help of the government authorities and financed directly from the funds provided for under the ARDA Act. This body had at least 80 specialists who made a study of the region and of the possibilities of the region, after having listed them, at least 80 specialists, then, who worked on the preparation of this plan; but, at each stage of the preparation, the people were consulted in local committees, zonal committees and regional consultative committees, and as a result some pretty radical changes were made in the conclusions of the specialists; the plan is thus an abstract, if you like, of the work of the people on the one hand and the specialists on the other.

Senator Eudes: In short, it's a matter of the people saying to the specialists: "Here is what we believe to be possible to improve the economic situation".

Mr. St-Pierre: That's right.

Senator Eudes: Exploitation of natural resources, there have been quite a few meetings on this.

Mr. St-Pierre: Oh yes, there have been several hundred meetings at the local as well as at the regional level.

The Deputy Chairman: Public meetings.

Mr. St-Pierre: Public meetings.

Senator Eudes: How many years did it take to draw up this plan.

Mr. St-Pierre: The BAEQ began its work in 1963 and completed it in 1966, and it was abolished in 1966 and the Regional Council is the result of one of the recommendations of this plan.

The Deputy Chairman: Have you been able to see any progress since organization was started?

Mr. St-Pierre: It is clear that the plan, indeed it's plainly stated, the plan is not static, we improve on it as we go along, but you have got to have a clear idea of the plan, it doesn't really consist of ten volumes, but of a whole mentality we want to change; more efficient operation and operations, all this is the plan. But, to answer your question, there is not much progress to be seen at the present time for the simple reason that the plan has only really been in operation for the last two years and, as it is a fifteen-year plan, there is very little change to be seen in the situation right now.

The Deputy Chairman: Do you have any trouble in getting people to participate, or do you find citizens and groups saying: "Oh well, it's not my business, let it be, let it be"?

Mr. St-Pierre: The Planning Bureau had a mandate for the participation of the people, and so we hired about twenty leaders who were responsible for getting people to participate, organizing public meetings, and informing people of the true facts and of the possibilities for changes. But of course there were some difficulties, particularly in the urban areas, because the problem was much less urgent, the problem of poverty was much less urgent than in the rural areas.

The Deputy Chairman: Members of the Committee, you now have the floor.

Senator Eudes: I have looked quickly, at paragraph 6 what is meant by "the governments"... this obviously means federal and provincial "...agree to give to such decentralized organizations, not only real powers", does this mean that they have no power at the moment?

Mr. St-Pierre: Well, to be concise, let's say that the officers who are in charge of implementing the plan at the present time run up against the traditional operation of the separate departments and they have enormous difficulties in working in the area and that is why we want them to have real powers of decision so that the plan can be really implemented.

Senator Eudes: In short, it's the technocrats who decide everything?

Mr. St-Pierre: In the higher sphere of government, perhaps.

The Deputy Chairman: And elsewhere also?

Mr. St-Pierre: Perhaps also.

The Deputy Chairman: Senator McGrand? You are sure you have no question?

Senator Quart: I just want to make a remark. I am very interested in eating. As you can see, I did not get this way by not eating! There are so many people that come to La Belle Province and to this district and I would suggest that on the menu in the motels and all of that you would have more fish and not only one or two but different ways of preparing these fish.

I am quite sure—and I have been around this Gaspé Peninsula so many times that sometimes you went into these nice little places and they say, well they are probably tired of their own products, eating the fish and all the maple syrup and maple sugar but they sometimes say, and they have said to me, wouldn't you like un bon steak and I must say that I did have a very good steak here but why not try to put on the menu more ways of preparing these different dishes and why not, on a breakfast menu, have les cretons because they don't know what les cretons are in other places.

I will give you an idea. We had a party in Ottawa and they had "les cretons". They also had some very nice other delicacies but they didn't know what "cretons" were and they still don't know.

Is there anything more delicious than crackling with your toast in the morning...

Senator Eudes: Especially in poor areas, it's very important.

Senator Quart: The women here in the Province of Quebec make marvellous "cretons" and it is just wonderful. What was the

name of that drink that they have with the alcohol and port wine...

The Deputy Chairman: The caribou?

Senator Quart: The caribou.

And they had a party, the people of Chicoutimi, there was crackling, the fat of the roast, and all sorts of good things. What is more, they invited us to have a good helping of caribou, crackling, and the fat of the roast, it was at their invitation. Most of our senators from other parts of Canada thought the crackling came from the caribou. Then I said, "No, no, no, it's your drink which is made of caribou, it's made with white whiskey". They said: "But it's red". I said: "But it's caribou blood"; I wasn't very proud of myself when I said that, but it was port wine, and even Senator Hastings, who was beside me, asked me for the recipe for crackling, and so I gave it to him, and I can't tell you to how many others, it was my French Canadian daughter-in-law who gave me the recipe, and so I gave that to everyone all around and now, at the Parliamentary Café, they have crackling and the fat of the roast...

Mr. St-Pierre: Here, Madame, in the brief, we discuss the tourist industry, saying that it is based especially on natural attractions and also on cultural attractions and, in the General Agreement for Canada-Quebec Cooperation, there are certain sums set aside to be available to the people for the improvement of the facilities of the tourist industry, let us hope, then, that it will come with time.

Senator Quart: With the wonderful fish of the Province of Quebec, served in pieces on little bits of biscuit or what, as we used to say in the Province of Quebec...

Senator McGrand: I have heard a number of complaints regarding the success of ARDA.

Now, you mentioned that ARDA had given this area a change of attitude. I believe that that is the way you said it. Can you give me an idea of the number of new jobs that have been created by ARDA or through ARDA? Has the value of your natural resources of this area increased because of the activities or the implementation of the ARDA plans?

Mr. St-Pierre: The total number of new jobs cannot be calculated precisely.

The BAEQ plan, as I said just now, means a change in mentality, and we at the CRD made a study of strictly industrial jobs last year and, surprisingly enough, we found that,

although there was a decrease in the number of industries, there was an increase in the number of jobs for the good and simple reason that those industries which have been modernized have been able to employ more workers, while those industries which employed a certain number of people but were very poor have disappeared, and, in fact, there have been a lot more new jobs created than jobs lost. The figures are there in the volumes which I gave you this morning.

The Deputy Chairman: Any more questions, Senators?

Does that answer your question?

Senator McGrand: That answers it very well. Thank you.

Senator Hastings: Mr. Chairman, Mr. St-Pierre, excuse me, I can't speak French.

I just have two observations to make, sir, and one is with respect to the brief or the memoirs—not yours but the others that have been presented this morning and the excellent work that is being done in this area by all of your organizations.

I can't help but feel that the type of individuals you have and with some motivation, you will succeed, and secondly, it is a personal observation of my own, an apology I would like to make to the people of Rimouski.

I am one of the "representatives" here of the Parliament of Canada, your Parliament, and I am unable to communicate in French.

Now that I'm here in Rimouski, I speak French, and, with you, I speak your language...

Senator Quart: I am going to add just a word. Since Senator Hastings and his wife have been in Quebec, they have fallen in love with Quebec. I am afraid he is going to become a citizen of the Province of Quebec, and then, he wants to speak French with me, and sometimes we don't understand each other. I try to say things in French, and then he finally has to say, what are you talking about?

Finally, he speaks French all the time, ever since we have been in Quebec.

The Deputy Chairman: That means that, with a woman, it is always possible to find some means of communicating.

My friends, I would first of all like to thank our friend Jacques St-Pierre most sincerely;

he has provided us with a mine of information and has left us with a task which will keep us busy for a week. Rest assured, Mr. St-Pierre, to second Senator Hastings, that we are familiar with the work you are doing from our experience in our own province of New Brunswick and elsewhere, perhaps at long distance. We are somewhat aware of the difficulties, and there are always difficulties in these enterprises; if there were no difficulties to face, there would be no merit in it, it would be worth very little. Once again, I thank you most sincerely. I am sorry we haven't had time, we could have spent the whole day here talking and there would have been no end to it. We want to give you our congratulations, our thanks, and whatever encouragement we can. I hope that the rest of Canada will take the development of the Lower St. Lawrence as a model; we all have a duty to mention it whenever and wherever possible. Once again, thank you.

On behalf of the Senators, in the name of the Committee, I would like to thank all the people of Rimouski, His Worship the Mayor, Dr. Lepage and especially Mr. Paul Bégin for the tremendous work he did in organizing things for our reception. The hospitality we have received in Rimouski is a hospitality for which Rimouski and the Province of Quebec are particularly famous. I would also like to thank the mayor and the aldermen for the magnificent reception last night, and the brief which has been presented, if we had more time, and we have touched on many other matters concerning the region. But you have the representatives of the Chamber of Commerce who are well qualified to discuss the problems, and it gives us great pleasure to have stopped in Rimouski, it is the end of a long trip which has taken us four months, going up and down the length and breadth of Canada to study the condition of the poor. As I said yesterday, we have not found any solution. This is not a Committee which is going to solve everything from one day to the next. We want to make a study, a profound and careful study of the causes of poverty in different places, and, in Rimouski, as in New Brunswick in my region of Madawaska, which is a region bordering on Témiscouata county, the problem of the poor is more or less the same. There is little difference between the problem of the poor in the West of Canada and the problem of the poor in the Maritime Provinces and in Newfoundland.

We are satisfied that this is a very conscientious committee. We have worked very hard, our work is far from being finished, in my opinion it is just beginning. We are going to have to compile all the resolutions and all the recommendations from across Canada so as to be able to prepare a document, a brief containing recommendations for the Federal Government, and recommendations which will be useful and will not simply go to join the pile of dead letter documents which are useful only for spiders' webs and to catch the dust. We are going to be very severe in our recommendations, and, as we say in good French where I come from, "we will be in business".

It's not going to please everybody and not even all our colleagues and associates. That is more or less our attitude, then, and I am pretty sure I said what I wanted to say about our stop in Rimouski, we didn't want to get back to Ottawa and say: "We have forgotten the Lower Saint Lawrence Region".

Yesterday we did the Gaspé region, the Vallée, it was very interesting. We are now going to make our way back by part of the North Shore where we will stop in a few places. We will be in Quebec tonight. We have a meeting scheduled for 8 o'clock this evening. If we can get there by 9 o'clock, I think that people will be happy to welcome us when we get there.

The information we have received is very interesting and necessary for the completion

of our work, and I would also like to express my thanks for the hospitality we have received at the St. Louis Hotel and for the good fish I ate yesterday. We know that the St. Louis is famous in the region and even in New Brunswick and even in the Province of Quebec for its good meals, and we would like to thank the proprietor of the St. Louis Hotel for his warm hospitality.

I would also like to thank, it is too bad, we have a very special invitation from Mr. Guy Leblanc, your Federal M.P., who is giving a small party, but I think we will have to cancel it and send our regrets to your M.P., because, you know what senators are like if you let them go to a little party, it's very easy to let them in, but it's much harder to get them out. We would like some opportunity to have a few minutes to eat a sandwich. We are going to get into our bus as soon as possible, because we have been definitely warned that, if we are not at the ferry at 2.20, another bus will take our place, and our schedule will be all upset, and we will have to take the 6 o'clock ferry. And so, with no more speeches, we thank you sincerely from the bottom of our hearts for all your kindness and hospitality. We were delighted by the welcome you gave us. You have shown a great deal of interest and patience and the work you have done is a noble piece of work. And so I will end by saying good luck, good bye and thank you in the name of all the members of the Committee.

The Committee is adjourned.

APPENDIX "A"

Memorandum presented to the
Special Senate Committee on
Poverty
under the chairmanship of
The Honourable David A. Croll

Written and prepared by
Gilles Giasson, m.s.s., t.s.p.
Director of the Research and Statistics
Service

THE SOCIAL SERVICE OF THE DIOCESE
OF RIMOUSKI

August, 1970.

PRESENTATION

Dear Commissioners:

The staff of the Social Service of the Rimouski Diocese is pleased to present to you this memorandum dealing with the problem of poverty in the Lower St. Lawrence region.

Everyday our agency personnel are confronted with this problem. Their daily efforts on this behalf have enable them to acquire valuable experience in the field and to contrive a number of solutions.

They are therefore placing the fruit of their experience at your disposal in the hope that it may serve to improve the lot of the under privileged classes.

Hélène Bélanger, t.s.p.
Director General

THE SOCIAL SERVICE OF THE DIOCESE
OF RIMOUSKI

PREFACE

1. In the Lower St. Lawrence, the problem of poverty is of major importance. The average per capita income is very low and unemployment remains at a high level.

2. According to our experience, the following would be the main causes of the impoverished state which characterizes the region:

- The high level of unemployment.
- The influence of technological change.
- The migrational trend towards urban centres.
- The absence of power of the poor classes.

—The low participation of poor people in the making of decisions which concern them.

—The ineffectiveness of certain programs designed to do away with poverty.

3. Certain characteristics have been observed among the welfare recipients of the Diocese of Rimouski such as:

- A proportional increase in the number of recipients with age.
- A poor education.
- A high number of children.
- A poor state of health among half of these children.

4. In order to solve the problem of poverty, we should:

- Create new patterns of social development.
- Develop a system of measuring the effectiveness of programs.
- Rapidly modernize the exploitation of agriculture and forests.
- Assure greater stability of employment.
- Revise the social security system in order to adapt it to the needs of the poor classes.
- Ensure the poor better access to the health and welfare services.
- Establish training programs geared to the poor.
- Give more power to the poor by increasing their participation.
- Set up family planning clinics.
- Establish a housing policy which takes into account the needs of the poor.
- Develop powerful urban centres in the area.

5. This then is a brief sketch of the main observations and recommendations presented in this memorandum.

INTRODUCTION

6. There are several definitions of poverty in existence both from the point of view of theory and from the point of view of operation. Theoretically speaking, the following seems to us to be a good definition of the phenomenon of poverty: "Poverty is a pro-

longed inaccessability to the material resources necessary to maintain a living standard determined by the production capacity and social demands of the community".¹

This definition given by Lourie comprises three major elements. For poverty to exist, inaccessability to material goods must be prolonged. In this sense, a person could not be considered as being poor if temporarily lacking material resources. This is the case, for example, of the majority of students. A second element to be considered in this definition is the level of material wealth a person must have. This level of resources is variable and it is society which determines it. The third important element of this definition concerns the criteria employed by society to determine its requirements. In actuality, it determines them in terms of its values and its capacity to produce. A society which is very well-off makes much greater demands in consequence than one which is less so.

7. As an operational definition of poverty, we accept right off the one proposed by the Economic Council of Canada. In effect, we consider all families who spend 70 per cent or more of their income on food, clothing and shelter as poor.

8. The following is the plan which we will follow: first, we will deal with the causes of poverty, then we will discuss several characteristics which we have observed among the poor, and finally we will propose a number of solutions.

SOME CAUSES OF POVERTY

9. To try and pinpoint the causes of poverty is a somewhat arduous task. In fact, when you undertake to do something like that, you find it difficult to determine exactly whether or not such and such a factor is a cause or effect of poverty. In many cases, a factor may be felt to be both a cause and an effect. Despite this difficulty of clearly defining the causes of poverty, we have identified a number of factors which, in our opinion, resulted in poverty.

High level of unemployment—

10. In the Lower St. Lawrence area, the level of unemployment is very high. Looking at Table 1 we can see that in 1961, there were 7.5 per cent unemployed in the diocese of Rimouski as opposed to 4.4 per cent in the

province of Quebec. Thus, we find that in comparison with the rest of the province, the Lower St. Lawrence region is hit much harder by unemployment.

TABLE 1
PROPORTION OF UNEMPLOYED IN
RELATION TO THE LABOUR FORCE
1961

	Diocese of Rimouski	Province of Quebec
Skilled Unemployed	6.5%	3.7%
Unskilled Unemployed	1.0%	0.7%
Total	7.5%	4.4%

*Source: Census of Canada, 1961, and *Regional Planning of the Social Service of the Diocese of Rimouski*, page 49.

11. Another indicator of the unemployment situation is the number of social assistance recipients. In table No. 2 we can see that the number of social assistance recipients registered with the Social Service of the Diocese of Rimouski has increased substantially in recent years.

TABLE 2
NUMBER OF RECIPIENTS REGISTERED
WITH THE FINANCIAL ASSISTANCE
SERVICE OF THE S.S.D.R.
1967—1968—1969

	Number of cases	% increase
March 31, 1967.....	3,477	0
March 31, 1968.....	4,782	37
March 31, 1969.....	6,489	86

When a person is unemployed and when he has to live on unemployment insurance and social assistance, it is obvious that the meagre income he received does not permit him to live above the poverty line. The longer the situation lasts, the poorer the person becomes. Quite often he must go into debt in order to provide for the essentials.

Technological Changes

12. During the past fifty (50) years, the economy of the area has relied mainly on forestry and agriculture. With the advent of technology, a number of changes have taken place in the operations of these basic sectors.

¹ Lourie, Norman V.: "Poverty" in *Social Work and Social Problems*, N.Y., N.A.S.W. 1964.

There is an ever growing trend towards the modernization of operating techniques. Such modernization requires workers with more knowledge. Also, it reduces the number of workers required to do the same job. As a result, this creates unemployment. In fact, a good number of workers who were prepared to work in non-specialized jobs with a minimum of education now feel deprived when faced with the requirements of technology.

13. It now seems that the basic sectors are being modernized relatively slowly. This creates problems for the workers. Indeed, a good number of workers find themselves in a difficult situation because they do not know whether they should continue working in the same sector or turn to another. The present situation is such that one no longer knows exactly what orientation the forestry and agricultural sectors will assume. What will the operational requirements be? How many people will be able to live off the occupations these sectors will offer? How many will have to be retrained? What openings will be offered to those who will have to leave these

sectors? There are so many questions to which answers have still not been found. The uncertainty in these sectors keeps a number of workers in a state of semi-productivity, and consequently, in poverty.

Migration to Urban Centres

14. In recent years, there has been a decrease in the population of the Lower St. Lawrence, Gaspé and Magdalen Islands. Despite the relatively high birth rate, there has nevertheless been an overall decrease in population; this is a sign that there is a major migration out of the area.

15. A thorough analysis of population data shows us that there have been population movements both into and out of the area. Most of the small communities in the area have decreased in population while all the cities have experienced an increase in the number of their inhabitants. It can be assumed, and daily observation confirms this, that the cities owe part of their increase to the neighbouring communities.

TABLE 3

BREAKDOWN AND PERCENTAGE INCREASE IN THE POPULATION, ACCORDING
TO THE CENSUS, 1931-66, CANADA, QUEBEC, LOWER ST. LAWRENCE,
GASPE AND MAGDALEN ISLANDS (development area) (IN THOUSANDS)

	1931	1941	1951	1956	1961	1966
	N	N	N	N	N	N
Development area.....	230	277	313	344	350	338
Quebec.....	2,875	3,332	4,506	4,628	5,259	5,781
Canada.....	10,377	11,507	14,009	16,080	18,238	20,015
	% 31-41	% 41-51	% 51-56	% 56-61	% 51-61	% 1961-66
Development area.....	20.4	13.0	9.9	1.7	11.8	-3.4
Quebec.....	15.91	21.72	14.12	13.63	29.68	9.92
Canada.....	10.89	21.75	14.79	13.42	30.19	9.74

SOURCE: Quebec Year Book 1968-69.
1966 Census, D.B.S.

16. Population migrations have disastrous consequences on the economy of the area. In fact, the workers who leave the area are often the younger people or the more

experienced. Such a migration is a major drain on the regional economy because it takes active strength with it. As a consequence of this exodus, the proportion of the

labour force that is working decreases. In a report entitled "Regional Planning of the Social Service of the Diocese of Rimouski, the authors noted that in the diocese of Rimouski, the active labour force percentage was lower than in the province as a whole.

TABLE 4
URBAN POPULATION
PROVINCE OF QUEBEC AND DEVELOPMENT AREA
1961 and 1966

COUNTY	1961		1966	
	Total Population	Urban Population	Total Population	Urban Population
Gaspé West.....	20,529	9,113	18,492	7,933
Gaspé East.....	41,333	8,907	41,250	10,623
Bonaventure.....	42,962	1,333	43,624	2,368
Magdalen Islands.....	12,479	—	13,213	—
Sub-total.....	117,303	19,353	116,579	20,924
Matane.....	35,078	14,362	31,794	14,048
Matapédia.....	35,586	12,108	31,433	10,685
Rimouski.....	65,295	32,683	65,629	36,886
Témiscouata.....	29,078	10,191	25,902	9,672
Rivière-du-Loup.....	40,239	17,878	40,234	19,006
Kamouraska.....	27,138	7,486	26,593	7,919
Sub-total.....	232,415	94,708	221,585	98,216
GRAND TOTAL.....	349,718	114,061	338,164	119,140
QUEBEC (Province).....	5,259,211	3,906,404	5,780,845	4,525,114

SOURCE: 1966 Census, D.B.S.

17. Population migration within the same area—from small communities to urban centres—also creates its problems. The main consequence is that it weakens the economy of the small communities which are now losing their vitality as the number of inhabitants decreases. Because of this exodus, the authorities in these small communities are most hesitant to undertake new development projects. Weakening of the dynamism and of the economy leads to unemployment which engenders poverty.

Lack of Power among the Poorer Classes

18. The poorer classes have no power in making decisions which concern them. When decisions are made on social policies that concern them they are not consulted and decisions are taken in terms of the values of a class other than their own. Because of this phenomenon, they more or less become the victims of the more fortunate classes. When, for example, as a social measure, greater benefits are given to the poorer class, it is obvious that this measure costs the govern-

ment additional sums of money. In order for the government to make up the deficits incurred by raising such benefits to the poor, it must either raise taxes or look for new taxes, or do both. If it imposes a new tax, the poor find themselves directly paying part of the benefits that were granted to them. If a tax affects the higher income classes in particular, they will ask for higher incomes, with the result that the poor will pay another part of the benefits which were granted to them. In the final analysis, it is a vicious circle and it is always the less fortunate who find themselves in difficulty. One of the basic problems of the poor is the fact that they do not have power. It is the stronger, therefore more fortunate class, that has it.

Lack of Participation by the Poor in Making Decisions that concern them

19. There is only very little machinery whereby the poor can put forward their point of view. Such machinery is very few and far between. Because of this, it is almost impossi-

ble for them to contribute to the decisions concerning them.

20. What happens in practice is that decisions are taken by people who hold power and who judge in terms of their own values and not in terms of the values of the poorer class. Such decisions are not taken for the purpose of hurting the poor or of keeping them in a state of dependence, but, in view of the fact that they are not adapted to their needs, this is what happens in actual fact. Often there is a fear that participation by people of the poorer classes will lead to decisions which are not consistent with the values of the ruling class or the more fortunate class. They think that if the decisions taken by the poor do not comply with those taken by the more fortunate class, they are not valid. The problem is that the validity of decisions is judged on the basis of a very special value system other than that of the poor.

Ineffectiveness of Certain Programs intended to Eliminate Poverty

21. If we take a run-down of the existing measures to eliminate poverty, we are astonished at how many there are. However, despite this substantial number, the fact nonetheless remains that poverty seems to be on the uprise. It therefore seems that on one hand there is a lack of co-ordination between the various measures, and on the other a lack of perseverance in pursuing the objectives set for the programs. For example, in the area, the program which is supposed to put the people on social assistance back into the labour market by using an individual approach and by taking for granted that the labour market can absorb such people seems ineffective to us. In fact, this measure which in itself is very commendable can offer but lame results if it is not accompanied by an energetic program to create new jobs. In many cases, workers are on social assistance because they cannot find work in their field. This is an example of a lack of co-ordination.

22. We also observe what could be called a lack of perseverance in the pursuit of very commendable objectives that have been set for programs. This seems to be the case, for example, in the carrying out of the development plan proposed by the Bureau d'Aménagement de l'Est du Québec. Six main objectives had been set for this plan. It appears to us that the measures that have been taken to achieve these objectives have been too timid, with the result that we wonder whether they will actually be achieved. Another example is the sylviculture work which is supposed to

return a good number of people on social assistance to the labour market and also to provide them with a steady permanent job. Job stability and permanence are very important objectives in a return-to-work campaign for people on social assistance. These objectives which were set when the program was being drawn up have been, it seems, more or less achieved so far. Consequently, the program has lost much of its value because to some extent it is becoming a stopgap measure. This, in our opinion, is a lack of perseverance in achieving objectives.

23. These are a few important factors to which responsibility for poverty can be ascribed. As can be observed, these factors stem from major social phenomena and not from individuals. They are not individual factors. Therefore, to complete the picture, let us look at a few of the characteristics we have observed among the poor.

CHARACTERISTICS OF THE POOR

24. There are a number of features that characterize the poor. During a study of the employability of welfare recipients in the diocese of Rimouski,¹ some characteristics of welfare recipients were identified. These obviously are not found among all poor people, but they are typical of at least a segment of the poor—those on welfare.

Age

25. We noted that the proportion of people on welfare rose steadily with increasing age. Proportionally, then, more poor people are found among the elderly than among the young.

TABLE 5
PROPORTION ON WELFARE BY AGE GROUP

Age group	Number on welfare	Population of the diocese	Rate per thousand (¢)
20-29.....	58	30,177	1.9
30-39.....	51	23,657	2.1
40-49.....	83	23,202	3.6
50-59.....	83	17,824	4.6
Total.....	275	94,860	2.8

Source: "L'employabilité des assistés sociaux du diocèse de Rimouski", p. 20.

(*) The rate was calculated using the number of welfare recipients in the sample, and it therefore indicates only relative values.

¹ Mercier, Clément and Gilles Giasson: «L'employabilité des assistés sociaux du diocèse de Rimouski». Rimouski. Service Social du Diocèse de Rimouski. 1968.

Education

26. On the whole, welfare recipients have had very little schooling. Table 6 shows that 82 per cent of those on welfare did not reach grade nine. Pursuing the analysis, we find that 36 per cent have had four years or less, and 46 per cent have had between 5 and 8 years.

TABLE 6

BREAKDOWN OF WELFARE RECIPIENTS
BY EDUCATION AND COUNTY OF
RESIDENCE

Years of education	County						Per- cent- age
	Bona- ven- ture	Mata- pédia	Ma- tane	Rim- ouski	Té- mis- cou- ata	Total	
None.....	0	1	2	1	1	5	1.5
1-4.....	5	29	30	33	18	115	34.5
5-8.....	7	29	35	59	23	153	46.0
9.....	3	4	9	13	1	30	9.0
10.....	0	2	6	8	2	18	5.4
11.....	0	2	0	4	1	7	2.1
12 or more...	0	0	1	4	0	5	1.5
Total.....	15	67	83	122	46	333	100.0

27. The education problem is thus a very important one where welfare recipients are concerned. On the labour market, a grade 9 education is generally a minimum requirement.

28. Apart from their low standards of education, it has been observed that welfare recipients make scarcely any use of the academic and vocational resources available to them, such as post-academic training courses, pre-employment courses, correspondence courses and vocational training courses.

Family Size

29. On the whole, the poor have large families. Table 7 shows that 25 per cent of welfare recipients have to support six or more children.

TABLE 7

NUMBER OF CHILDREN IN THE
HOME BY MARITAL STATUS

Marital status	Number of children					Total
	0	1-2	3-5	6-8	9 or more	
Bachelor.....	75	0	0	0	0	75
Married.....	26	53	63	64	17	223
Widower	9	4	2	3	0	18
Separated	8	5	2	0	0	15
Living as...						
man & wife....	1	1	0	0	0	2
Total.....	119	63	67	67	17	333
%.....	35.8	18.9	20.1	20.1	5.1	100.0

Health

30. Leaving aside the question of whether sickness is a cause or an effect of poverty, it is nonetheless true that the health of welfare recipients is noticeably below average. Half of them have a health problem, and ready availability of medical services is therefore important.

TABLE 8

HEALTH OF WELFARE RECIPIENTS
BY THEIR OWN ASSESSMENT

Health	Number of recipients	%
Very good.....	73	21.9
Good.....	84	25.2
Bad.....	101	30.4
Very bad.....	75	22.5
Total.....	333	100.0

Source: "L'employabilité des assistés sociaux du diocèse de Rimouski", p. 49.

THE SOLUTIONS

31. The solutions we suggest are based on our comments in the preceding pages. Thus, we recommend:

32. Recommendation 1: That new social development models be created.

33. A great deal of planning and co-ordination work is being done to lessen the problem of poverty. Social development programs are set up, and a great deal of money is invested in them. Despite this, the extent of the problem continues to grow.

34. Many studies of the region have been made by the B.A.E.Q., Eastern Quebec's planning bureau, with a view to preparing a plan for the socioeconomic recovery of the Lower St. Lawrence, Gaspé and Magdalen Islands regions. Its work has led the Government of Quebec to establish a development board for Eastern Quebec, which is to implement the plan put forward by the B.A.E.Q.

35. A little more than two years after signature of the Canada-Quebec agreement on the implementation of the development plan, few major achievements are visible. A few local people are even talking of failure, with reference to the effort made to carry out the plan.

36. On the basis of this example and many others, there is cause to wonder whether the development models in use are effective. It is

often said that lack of money is the problem, and this is no doubt true in part. But it is very probable that the existing manner of carrying out development programs is not all it might be.

37. Without going into a lengthy examination of development models, we would like to point out some of the things that go to make up an effective model.

38. In our view, a well-planned development program should have objectives that are precise, clear, comprehensible for the layman, practical and feasible. These characteristics of program objectives may appear obvious at first glance, but they are extremely important.

39. Objectives that meet these criteria tend to polarize and channel people's energies. This often makes it possible to carry out essential tasks that would be impossible if energies were scattered.

40. It is also indispensable in all co-ordination work to establish one independent variable, so that the other variables can adapt or be adapted to correspond with it. Specific objectives of a relatively permanent nature form the bases for independent variables.

41. Once objectives have been selected, they must be constantly referred to so as to preserve their effect. As operations proceed, there is a strong temptation to embrace other apparently more worthwhile or easily attainable objectives.

42. A development plan must always have room for the personal contribution of individuals at the operational level. A rigid plan may fail to correspond to practical circumstances, and may lose the interest of those appointed to carry it out, since they would be reduced to performing tasks in a purely mechanical fashion.

43. Planning based on specific objectives makes it possible to unite efforts and rise above conflicts of interest.

44. This is obviously a brief and incomplete list of components for a development model, but we feel it indicates the lines along which development models should be reviewed.

45. Recommendation 2: That program evaluation machinery be developed.

46. When a social development program is launched, it is essential to be able to evaluate its effectiveness. What this means in essence is whether the objectives have been achieved, and if not, why not. If the effectiveness of a

program is not evaluated, it is possible to overlook its objectives, with a correspondingly poor return on the time and money invested.

47. Evaluation of program effectiveness poses certain requirements. It is absolutely essential that objectives be precisely determined. Program implementation must be well-organized from an administrative point of view, so that operations, tasks and services are clearly identifiable and distinct from one another. Good administrative organization makes it possible for the evaluation machinery to mesh smoothly with the program and supply useful and accurate data.

48. A frequent danger is the urge to evaluate in the absence of precision; another danger is the belief that the evaluation machinery can make up for poor administrative organization.

49. Recommendation 3: That such basic areas of activity as agriculture and forestry be rapidly modernized.

50. Efforts are now being made to modernize agricultural and forestry operations, but we feel these efforts are inadequate. In these areas, modernization depends largely on the willingness of the individual entrepreneur. We believe that modernization cannot take place rapidly without direct and forceful governmental intervention. The operational programming and planning that are required are beyond the capacity of the small operator.

51. Recommendation 4: That more be done to stabilize employment.

52. In the subject region, work in many sectors is of a seasonal nature. Agriculture, fishing, forestry, tourism, construction and so on are not equally subject to climate, but they are all affected.

53. This unstable employment situation puts many people out of work for a considerable portion of the year, during which they must live either on unemployment insurance benefits or on social assistance.

54. To deal with unstable employment levels as a result of seasonal factors, ways should first be found to lengthen the periods of employment, and secondly, arrangements should be made for workers to move from one seasonal job to another. For example, those working on highway maintenance in the summer could do the same work in winter.

55. Stable employment provides a worker with a regular year-round income, and thus a decent standard of living. He is then a pro-

ductive individual, no longer dependent on his fellows, and free of the treadmill of poverty.

56. Recommendation 5: That the social security system be revised to meet the needs of the poor.

57. Our social security system includes a wide range of measures, and covers a number of social risks. The problem lies not in the number of risks covered, but in the kind of coverage provided. Moreover, the various measures do not always seem to be well co-ordinated.

58. Examining, say, the system of family allowances, we realize that this measure could be improved so as to become an important factor in reducing poverty in large families. We all know that it is expensive for large families to support every child properly. If family allowances covered at least the essentials for children in excess of four, the parents would be able to provide them with a decent standard of living. The family allowance system is already in existence, and it would not cost the state a cent more to reapportion the amounts already allocated to this program.

59. Some social security measures do not provide large enough benefits to enable recipients to live above the poverty line. Old-age security is an example.

60. Although we are in favour of a reorganization of the social security system and increases in certain benefits, the primary emphasis must nevertheless be placed on the search for ways of making people self-supporting. We believe that an employment program must take priority over a program designed to improve the social security system.

61. Recommendation 6: That the poor be given easier access to health and welfare services.

62. The poor are not always able to benefit from health and welfare services as readily as the more well-to-do. This situation is due to their lack of information and financial resources.

63. Even if a service is free, the poor are not always able to benefit from it since they do not have the money necessary to pay their transportation. It often happens that some services are of little avail to the poor even if they are free. For example, free medical advice is not of much value if the drugs prescribed are not.

64. If the service provided is not satisfactory to an impoverished person, he is often unaware of how to lodge a complaint and obtain better service.

65. It is necessary as a result to develop information centres and simple and effective mechanisms by which it will be possible to lodge a complaint if the service is deemed inadequate.

66. Recommendation 7: Training programmes adapted to the poor should be set up.

67. Training programmes do exist in the area, but it appears that several do not specifically meet the needs of the poor. The criteria for selection are such that many poor people are refused.

68. Included in the reasons for the lack of participation by the poor in training programmes are too little schooling, no guarantee that the course will result in a job, fear that the wage will be seized in payment for a heavy debt. For these reasons and many others, several needy persons are refused or decide by themselves not to take advantage of the training programmes.

69. Training programmes must therefore be re-examined in the light of the particular needs of the poor.

70. Recommendation 8: More power should be given to the poorer classes to increase their participation.

71. To effect any change in the social order, a measure of power is necessary. The needy person has no power and must be content with what others have decided for him.

72. Participation is a means of giving power to the poor. Such participation would enable him to adapt to his particular needs the social policies heretofore decided on without him.

73. Recommendation 9: Family planning clinics be created.

74. Because of their inability to exercise sufficient control, several families at present have more children than desired. Unwanted children are frequently a source of conflict within the family and constitute an additional financial burden contributing to poverty.

75. The creation of a network of family planning clinics would enable all persons, particularly the underprivileged, to obtain information and the necessary counsel to effectively apply birth control.

76. Recommendation 10: A housing policy should be drawn up to take into account the needs of the poor.

77. Poor families are faced with a housing problem. Various solutions have been tried such as low-rental housing. The experiments of the H.L.M. have been effective to a certain extent but have given rise to a number of difficulties such as the regrouping of disadvantaged persons and inadequate housing.

78. Not only must the H.L.M. formula be examined more closely, but other solutions to the housing problem must be sought.

79. Recommendation 11: Powerful urban centres should be created in the area.

80. Social development in an area as vast and sparsely populated as that of the Lower St. Lawrence necessitates a regrouping of the population. Only the more heavily populated urban centres dispense the services required by modern life.

81. Services must be concentrated in the urban centres rather than scattered throughout a number of small declining localities.

CONCLUSION

82. Poverty is an age-old and highly complex problem. We are fully aware that we have approached it only superficially. The solutions we have proposed are certainly not exhaustive.

83. However, the fact of submitting our brief to the Commission has forced us to take a longer look at the problem which confronts us every day. We feel that although reforms are proposed, the problem will not be attenuated unless there is a growing concern at all levels and a desire to change the situation. The work we have done in preparing this brief has reinforced our convictions in this sense.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Cohen, Nathan E.; *Social Work and Social Problems*, New York, National Association of Social Workers, 1964, 391 p.

Mercier, Clément and Gilles Giasson; *L'employabilité des assistés sociaux du diocèse de Rimouski*, Rimouski, Service Social du Diocèse de Rimouski, 1968.

Merton, Robert and Robert Nisbet; *Contemporary Social Problems*, New York, Harcourt, 1966.

Sores Inc. *La planification régionale du Service Social du Diocèse de Rimouski*, 1966.

INFORMATION ON THE AGENCY AND ITS PERSONNEL

The Social Service of the Diocese of Rimouski is a non-profit organization founded on March 1, 1950 by Mr. Marius Côté, Priest, t.s.p.

The Board of Directors is composed of nine (9) members whose names, functions and occupations are as follows:

Name	Function	Occupation
Mr. Jean-Marc Tremblay, 145 rue Côté, Rimouski	President	General Council and Secretary of Quebec Telephone
Mr. André Fecteau, 368 rue Asselin, Rimouski	Vice-President	Former Secretary of the U.C.C. of the Diocese of Rimouski
Mr. Marcel Rioux, Priest, Archbishopric, Rimouski	Member-Director	Secretary of the Diocese
Mr. Gérard Hallé, St-Donat, Rimouski County	Member-Director	Owner and general manager of a bus company
Mr. Léandre Michaud, 171A Commerciale, Cabano	Member-Director	Chartered Accountant Insurance Broker
Mr. François Vinet, Collège de Matane, Matane	Member-Director	Director of the Régionale des Monts
Mr. Théo D'Amours 2 Denys-de-Vitré, Trois-Pistoles	Member-Director	Owner and manager of a garage
Mr. Louis Viel, 55 St-Jean-Baptiste, Causapsal	Member-Director	Secretary of the Coopérative Agricole de l'U.C.C.
Mrs. Juliette Bonneville, 877 D'Youville, Sacré-Coeur, Rimouski	Member-Director	Mother, Secretary of the Comité Diocésain d'Apostolat laïque and President of the Association Coopérative Féminine

Our agency is a polyvalent social service whose objective is the social rehabilitation of individuals and families experiencing mental and social problems.

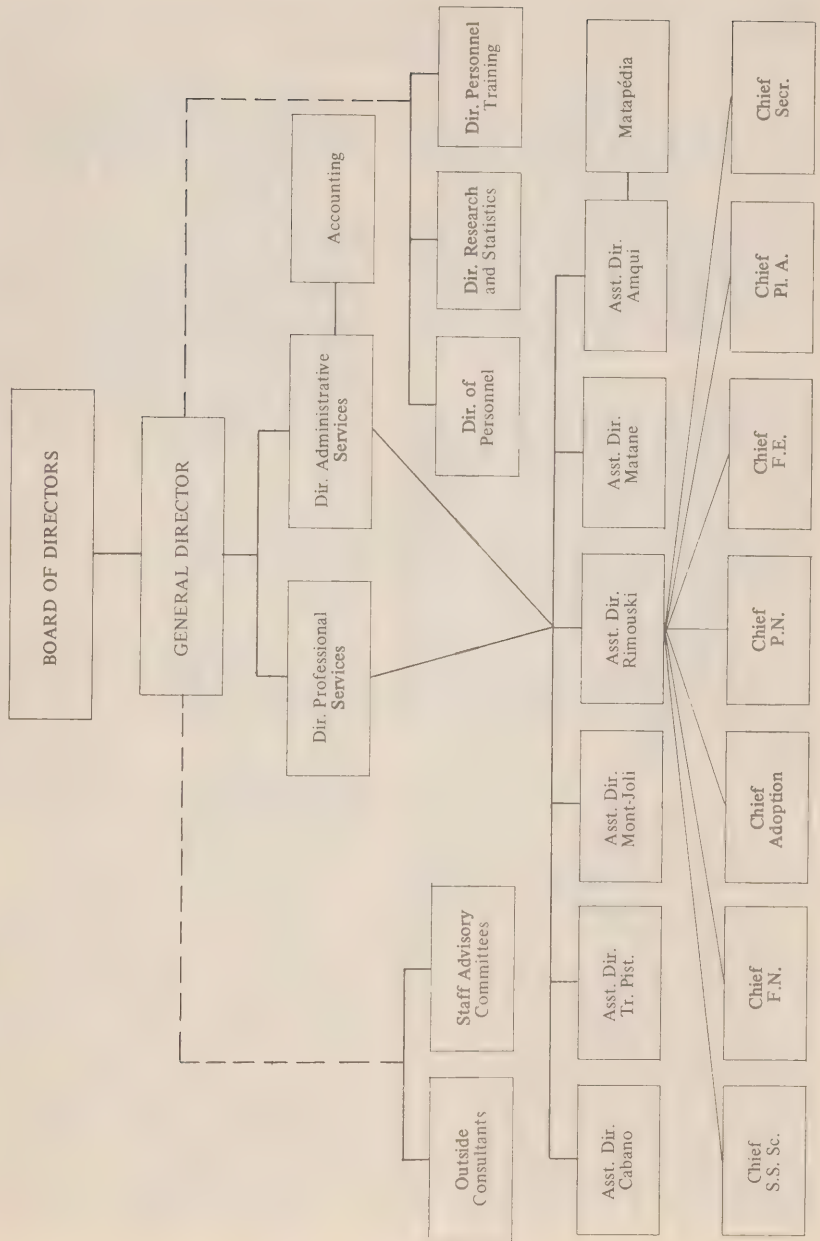
Its activities extend throughout the entire area of the Diocese of Rimouski which includes the provincial counties of Matane, Matapédia, Rimouski, Témiscouata, the major part of the County of Rivière-du-Loup and six (6) parishes in Bonaventure County. The total population is approximately 185,000 persons.

The agency operates along the principles of centralized administration and decentralized services. Accordingly, it has one (1) office for the administrative services and six (6) branch offices located in Amqui, Cabano, Matane, Mont-Joli, Rimouski and Trois-Pistoles.

The Social Service of the Diocese of Rimouski employs 97 persons including 18 social workers, 1 director, 42 social assistants and 36 persons assigned to clerical work.

So that you may better understand the structure of our organization, we are attaching an organization chart of our services.

ORGANIZATION CHART OF THE SOCIAL SERVICE
OF THE DIOCESE OF RIMOUSKI



APPENDIX "B"

BRIEF

to the

SPECIAL SENATE COMMITTEE ON
POVERTY

submitted by the

CONSEIL RÉGIONAL DE DÉVELOPPE-
MENT DE L'EST DU QUÉBEC(EASTERN QUEBEC REGIONAL
DEVELOPMENT COUNCIL)

September 4, 1970

INTRODUCTION

The Fifth Annual Review of the Economic Council of Canada proposed, as a measure for the immediate future, the establishment, by the Canadian Senate, of a special committee to study the problem of poverty in Canada. We do not know whether this committee stems directly from that recommendation. However, we hope that the research can help to define and elucidate the problem of poverty in Canada and obtain the support of the people for the best possible set of measures to correct the problem.

In 1968, the Economic Council of Canada devoted two pages to the anti-poverty program in the Gaspé and Lower St. Lawrence Region. The conclusion of this section states, among other things:¹

[Text]

A clear definition of goals and a strong sense of commitment and involvement are necessary to break down such institutional barriers and engender the requisite spirit of intelligent co-operation between governments, private agencies, and the general public. It is of course particularly necessary to involve the poor themselves in the development of programs designed to help them. Their comments, when analyzed, may provide the most rapid available indications of gaps and weaknesses; yet this direct source of information has often been neglected in

the past. Experience in the Gaspé and Lower St. Lawrence Region should be closely studied for indications of how techniques of "action research" and "social animation" can be used to foster a community-wide sense of involvement.

[Translation]

The Eastern Canada Regional Development Council (Conseil régional de Développement de l'Est du Québec Inc.) has no intention of analyzing the relative problems of poverty in depth. On the one hand it does not believe it has the staff or skill required for such an undertaking; on the other hand, engaged as it is in a participation process directed primarily to the elimination of poverty in all its forms, it certainly lacks the time to philosophize about this concept.

The principal aim of this brief is a modest one: to tell about an experiment presently under way that can be used, and we have no doubt about this, in the development of a strategy for the elimination of the problem of poverty.

After introducing the Eastern Quebec Regional Development Council, we will give in the first part, a picture of the Region as it appeared at the beginning of the experiment. We shall then comment on the policies and methods applied to improve the situation, analyzing the Plan of the BAEQ (Eastern Quebec Development Bureau) and the Eastern Quebec Agreement. After explaining our position on the problem of poverty in our region, we will recommend some measures for eliminating this scourge.

SUBMISSION OF THE AREA
DEVELOPMENT COUNCIL (CRD)

The charter incorporating the *Conseil régional de Développement de l'Est du Québec* (CRD) in conformity with Part III of the Companies Act defines the role and tasks of this agency as follows:

1. To promote the economic and social development of the population of the Lower St. Lawrence, Gaspé and Îles de la Madeleine Area;

2. To participate in the regional economic planning, making itself the spokesman for the populations concerned;

¹ Economic Council of Canada, Fifth Annual Review, September 1968, pp. 131, 132.

Translator's Note: The name of the region is referred to differently in different official texts, e.g. "Lower St. Lawrence, Gaspé and Îles de la Madeleine Area" (in the official Eastern Quebec Agreement).

3. To act as the consultation agency for the provincial and federal governments and more particularly for the economic planning agencies set up by these governments;

4. To do consultation and animation work among the people of the region so as to associate them with the promotion of their collective welfare and the regional economic planning.

In more prosaic terms, the Eastern Quebec Regional Development Council is a consultative body, representing the interests of the regional population, and which has undertaken the jobs of animation, information and coordination and the job of representing the people in dealings with government authorities which have recognized it as the privileged regional interlocutor. In the *Agreement covering the implementation of a comprehensive rural development plan for the Lower St. Lawrence, Gaspé and Îles de la Madeleine area*, the following is stated:

[Text]

"The two Parties shall recognize the *Conseil régional de développement de l'Est du Québec Inc.*, as the privileged regional interlocutor, as long as, in their opinion, this participation and consultation agency is truly representative of the Area population; and they shall give the *Conseil* the opportunity to express its views concerning the implementation of the Development Strategy."

[Translation]

This dedication is only the culmination of a vast movement which came into being long before the birth of the Eastern Quebec Development Bureau (BAEQ), in 1963.

BACKGROUND AND MAIN CHARACTERISTICS OF THE MOVEMENT

From 1956 to 1963, the leaders of the Lower St. Lawrence and the Gaspé area, drawing on the French experience (development committees), and faced with common problems, set themselves up to make a study of the economic situation, to consult together and to represent the region in dealings with government authorities. Right from the outset, this promotion of economic development by the *Conseil d'Orientation économique du Bas-St-Laurent* (COEB), the *Bureau d'Expansion économique de la Gaspésie*, and the *Conseil*

régional d'Expansion économique de la Gaspésie et des Îles-de-la-Madeleine (CREEGIM), has rested on a philosophy of involvement of the regional leaders.

This was recognized in 1963 by the provincial government which, when it gave the Eastern Quebec Development Bureau (BAEQ) its mandate, required that the Plan be developed with the participation of the population. The BAEQ represents a stepped-up effort at research and participation not only for the responsible agencies (COEB, CREEGIM) but also for a large portion of the inhabitants. It is estimated that more than 6,000 persons worked in local, area and regional committees not counting those who followed the pilot experiment on television, in the newspapers and on the radio.

The thinking manifested in such action, which is that of a grass-roots social movement, is of considerable importance, if we consider its possible influence on policy.

This thinking, which is found everywhere, is looking for a rationalization of efforts, whether they be by the Government or by individuals. The motivation here is modernization and not a sentimental attachment to the past (the individual wants stable employment and a higher standard of living, not idleness at government expense). Such thinking is generally progressive. The leaders are neo-capitalist rather than socialist, reformist rather than conservative. In short, all ideology gives way to a pragmatic conception of development. This explains why union leaders, those of the co-operative movement, those of employer organizations and those of the different territories involved, worked actively together when faced with the common menace of underdevelopment.

This philosophy of action was to be entirely respected by the managing team of BAEQ from 1963 to 1966 (it is reflected in the Plan), and also by the Liaison Committee in 1966-67 and the CRD since 1967.

Throughout its existence, the CRD has never had fundamental debates on the nature of the economic and political system. This is a reflection of the region which does not question the system. The population and its elite believe that these can and must be participation and planning in our society without any rocking of the foundations.

What distinguishes the region is the precociousness of the social movement which impels people to active participation, using ways and means that have since served as

¹ Eastern Quebec Agreement, May 26, 1968, article 7, page 4.

prototypes for the other regions of the province.

With the signing of the Eastern Quebec Agreement in 1968, democratic development planning began in the economic and political system, taking paths that conform to the established system. The inhabitants have unhesitatingly chosen a revolution in aspirations, a change in mentality and the adoption of modern behavior in preference to the bomb.

Such ideas and such a modernizing elite are the basic characteristics of the experiment begun in Eastern Quebec. That is why we state that the *political consensus is henceforth based on progress*, and this progress is as much social as economic, and finally, this consensus finds its expression in a new institutional framework, of which the CRD is an important element.

ECONOMIC AND SOCIAL SITUATION IN EASTERN QUEBEC

General context¹

The territory of the Lower St. Lawrence, Gaspé and Îles de la Madeleine comprises the following ten provincial counties: Kamouraska, Rimouski, Rivière du Loup, Temiscouata, Matane, Matapédia, Gaspé North, Gaspé South, Bonaventure and Îles de la Madeleine. It covers a total area of 17,300 square miles.² In 1966, the territory had a population of 338,164, including 13,213 in the Magdalen Islands. About 65 per cent of these people lived in the country. The labor pool was estimated, in 1966, at 92,330 persons, who in that same year worked an average of less than 26 weeks. The per capita income was \$796, compared to \$1,885 for the Province of Quebec as a whole, in 1961.

In the last decade, there has been a constant emigration from this territory. Between 1961 and 1966, about 49,500 persons left. Paralleling this considerable emigration, the number of farms dropped from 13,278 in the 1961 census to 10,456 in 1966. This population decline is, however, somewhat offset by the

many persons who regularly enter the labor market. In 1966, 41,415 young persons from 15 to 19 years old entered the labor market; they represented 12.2 per cent of the population of the territory. The increase in the labor pool in the territory can be attributed to the high birth rate, which went from 28 per 1,000 in 1961 to 30 per 1,000 in 1966, and consequently to large families. The average number of persons per family is estimated at 5.1

This region is one of the first to be colonized in the East. Its economy is based in good part on three traditional sectors: agriculture, fishing and forestry. These sectors, as well as a good part of the social infrastructure, has hardly emerged from the patterns called for by the social and economic conditions of the 19th century.

The march of modernism, which has remodeled the economy of the progressive regions of Canada, has hardly reached the Gaspé. The economic wave has moved from the East to the Great Lakes region, and the natural resources of the East do not offer any decisive competitive advantage compared to resources of the same kind in the other parts of the country. Moreover, the loss of competitive advantages from which the whole economy of the East has suffered, has brought about a parallel weakening of labor as an economic factor, and the infrastructure of the region has in large part become obsolete.

In these conditions, the territory's economy has not succeeded in giving rise to modern, dynamic economic centers or sectors, capable of absorbing locally the growing labor force and creating powerful economic ties with those Canadian and foreign centers that are showing rapid growth.

For lack of such modern, dynamic centers and powerful ties, the readjustment of the economy is slow and, consequently, the region now has too large a labor force for the jobs available, which cannot, moreover, give the people a respectable income or living standard.

Summary of the situation in the basic traditional sectors and in the tourist industry

1. Agriculture

In 1966, 27.6 per cent of the population lived on 10,546 farms. Of this number, the farms considered as commercial totalled 3,833 including 1,432 that brought in gross annual incomes of over \$5,000. Although the total number of farms clearly dropped between

¹ The figures quoted are drawn from the various research done partly by the BAEQ, partly by the CRD and partly by different provincial and federal departments, and which can be consulted on request at the office of the CRD.

² We note, for purposes of comparison:

Belgium:	about 11,800 sq. miles
Switzerland:	" 16,000 " "
Denmark:	" 16,500 " "
Vermont:	" 9,600 " "
Nova Scotia:	" 21,000 " "

1961 and 1966, the number of commercial farms rose. Nevertheless the stagnation remains serious when we think of the low incomes, the underemployment, the obsolete farming methods and the poor utilization of the agrarian resources.

This situation arises from the fact that the level of education is too low and many of the farms too small, and mainly given up to unprofitable production, too widely dispersed and situated on ground that is unsuitable for farming. Also, the processing facilities were obsolete and the distribution of farm supplies inefficient.

2. Forest industry

Forest cover about 85 per cent of the region or 13,500 square miles and annually produce about 105,000,000 feet of wood valued, in logs, at close to \$30,000,000. Commercially, the region has some 260 wood processing plants and three large pulp and paper mills.

The entire sector employs 12,600 workers or 14 per cent of the manpower and pays out \$18,500,000 in salaries and wages per annum which in 1961 was equal to 10.8 per cent of the personal income in the region. The 557 workers in pulp and paper receive an annual average wage of \$5,167 and are employed all year. The other 12,043 workers receive an average annual wage of \$1,299 and work from three to six months.

With the exception of the pulp and paper mills, the forest industry is characterized by low wages, very seasonal employment and scattered and inefficient felling and sawing enterprises, traditionally connected with a subsistence economy.

3. Fisheries

The fishing industry in Eastern Quebec forms only a small part of the Canadian fisheries on the Atlantic seaboard. In 1965, Canadian Atlantic coast fishermen caught 1,700,000,000 pounds of fish, valued at approximately \$95,000,000. The same year, the fishermen of Eastern Quebec, numbering 2,729, including 919 from the Magdalen Islands caught 128,000,000 pounds, worth \$5,600,000.

According to the BAEQ report, the coastal fishermen of Eastern Quebec had average receipts in 1965 of \$700. The open sea fishermen averaged about \$1,250 each, compared to very close to \$3,000 for the fishermen outside Quebec. The 23 processing plants of the region, with an overall production valued at \$9,700,000, are far from giving their maximum output.

The fishing industry of Eastern Quebec is therefore characterized by low incomes, seasonal employment and low productivity.

4. Recreation and tourism

The enormous tourist potential of the Gaspé is recognized. About 225,000 persons visited the region in 1964 and spent an average of 4.7 nights each there, which makes a total of about one million nights. About 30 per cent of these persons visited their families in the region. According to the figures of the BAEQ, total tourist expenditures in the region were between 15 and 20 million dollars in 1964.

The tourist potential of the region consists of geographical, historic and folkloric attractions. The tourist facilities are, however, for the most part inadequate by modern standards and poorly maintained. This situation is mainly attributable to a lack of coherent tourist development planning.

PLAN OF THE EASTERN QUEBEC DEVELOPMENT BUREAU (BAEQ)

Faced with such revealing figures, the regional population had two basic options: to speed up the "emptying" of the region since it was becoming increasingly more difficult to live there or else to take the necessary measures to thwart tendencies that were daily appearing more disastrous. They had no choice and decided to take the necessary means.

We will say nothing about the many tribulations of the regional leaders. Suffice it to say that the main regional organizations availed themselves of ARDA. This act, passed by the federal Parliament in December, 1961, made possible, after agreement between the provincial governments concerned, agricultural development work and plan formulation for the country's under-developed areas.¹

The BAEQ prepared a development plan for the Lower St. Lawrence, Gaspé and Îles de la Madeleine Region.

It is essentially a plan because in this imposing work, there is a definition of a task in qualitative and quantitative terms, a situating of this task in time and space and a large number of details concerning the respective roles of many public and private, individual and group agents in the performance of the task.

¹ Let it be said in passing that this Act was passed after an investigation by the Canadian Senate of the agricultural situation in Eastern Canada.

1. Generally this task consists, for the economy and society of the Lower St. Lawrence, Gaspé and Îles de la Madeleine Region, in catching up with Quebec as a whole in terms of employment and income. According to the projections, this relative catching-up would be done in a period of fifteen years, the first plan being aimed more specifically at establishing the basic conditions for such catching-up.

2. This task is quantified in the form of growth objectives:

(a) In the long term, i.e. in the period 1967-1981, and generally speaking, the Plan proposed for a population of 325,000 persons:

—a climb from a level where the per capita income was about 50 per cent of the Quebec per capita income (1961) to a level where it would be, in 1981, quite close to 90 per cent of the Quebec per capita income;

...a fantastic leap, between 1967 and 1981, in employment, permitting a climb in employment from an average of 33 weeks per worker per year to an average of more than 40 weeks per worker per year.

In order to accomplish these growth objectives, the Plan considered necessary, possible and compatible, various annual increase rates in employment (at least 2 per cent), in production of 6 per cent and in technical progress of at least 2.5 per cent.

(b) Over the short term (1967-1972) the first Plan must provide the necessary start for the accomplishment of these long-term objectives and appreciably diminish the existing gap between the region and the province in terms of jobs and income.

It is these short-term objectives that are programmed, and it is only with respect to them that we can talk of a Plan.

The difficulty will probably be understood of examining in depth the individual contribution of each of the activity sectors to the realization of the growth objectives for the first Plan. Suffice it to report that such a compatibility review has already been made and that it satisfactorily establishes that the employment and income objectives for the first Plan can be accomplished. All this assumes that the regional economy is to have short-term annual growth of 6 per cent in

gross domestic product and 4 per cent in average productivity per worker.

3. This task is qualified in development objectives. It is important, in our opinion, to point out here that the catching-up will be in terms of means, through a substantial increase in regional productivity and production, and not through a classical redistribution of incomes. In other words, the catching-up will be through a redistribution of economic activities and technical assistance from government rather than through a redistribution of income and social assistance.

Incidentally, and to illustrate this formulation, the BAEQ Plan would substantially reduce the share of regional individual income coming from government transfers; this element of regional individual income would drop from 28 per cent in 1961 to 20 per cent in 1972 and 15 per cent in 1981. It is therefore not just a matter of reducing the income disparities between a given region and Quebec but of narrowing also the gap between the regional and provincial per capita contributions to the creation of goods and wealth.

From here we go on to what makes of the BAEQ Plan more than a classical growth plan patterned on European models, but a development plan in the true sense of the term.

The proposed growth depends much more on operations aimed at changing the very structure of the regional economy and society than on any public or private investments over a given period. It is perhaps this aspect of the BAEQ Plan that is most shocking to economists shut up in the comfortable circle of concepts like "capital stock", "gross domestic product", "productivity", "income" and "employment". The BAEQ Plan breaks through the circle and introduces, as material planning objects, realities that are more social than economic like "mentality", "socio-economic organization", etc. In other words, the Plan does not stop at the palpable and easily quantified effects of the operation of a given regional socio-economic structure, but submits this structure itself to analysis, makes a criticism of it and proposes with regard to it, quantified change objectives, without which the growth objectives themselves are impossible to realize.

From this point of view, for example, it is realistic to translate the general catching-up objective into an objective of relative equalization of the regional and provincial average

productivities.¹ Also from this point of view, it is necessary to fix objectives for urbanization, consolidation, professionalization, etc. From this point of view, especially, planners must give attention to the difficult problem of the reorganization of the various institutions and that of introducing new institutions, with a view to starting the structural changes required for the accomplishment of the catching-up task. This problem, it should be realized, is the more complex because in opening the door to sociology, social psychology and political science as planning disciplines, we are at the same time asking them to renovate their methodological apparatus.

We are stressing this aspect because it constitutes the most original contribution by the BAEQ to planning and is directly responsible for the use and thorough study of advanced techniques of social animation and consultation. We are stressing this aspect also because in our opinion, *without regional development planning*, it is impossible to appreciably reduce regional disparities. We shall come back a little further on to our idea of participation through consultation and of animation.

In any case, the catching-up task has been qualified in terms of five development objectives that were taken into account in the most realistic fashion by the (sectorial) programming. These objectives are:

(a) Modernization of the traditional basic sectors (agriculture, forestry and fishing);

(b) Creation of new, dynamic activities in industry, mining and tourism;

(c) Promotion of the labor force by means of education, professionalization, upgrading and an increase in geographical and occupational mobility;

(d) The setting up of an institutional framework of planning and participation;

(e) Rationalization of the occupation of regional space by means of concentration of populations, urbanization and giving the urban network thus created a hierarchical organization.

It was probably necessary to go back to each of these five development objectives and go into further detail regarding it. Since this might appear tiresome, we will allow ourselves to illustrate just the objective of setting up an institutional framework of planning and participation, since we believe that

it pretty well bears out the will to change we mentioned in the first part. In our opinion, institutional reforms must be made from various aspects:

1. Revaluation of the "political" participation institutions through a reorganization of municipal governments;

2. Regionalization of the government administrative apparatus, i.e. deconcentration at the regional level of some administrative powers;

3. Decentralization to the benefit of the regional level of institutional government, i.e. the creation of a long-term regional government. Such a decentralization would have to be made from the point of view that in planning, governments play their minimum role, the one of driving force both in the mechanism of intervention and that of co-ordination;

4. Participation by the people in the formulation of the objectives and planning methods through the setting up of an effective agency of consultation and animation.

In conclusion, we would like to point out to all those who are concerned about this problem that one of the most significant contributions by the BAEQ to planning in Quebec is the presentation of an exhaustive definition of the problem of regional disparities and the proposing of a set of general methods applicable to all of Quebec and capable of countering socio-economic inequalities without once again having to draw on the almost dried out store of income distribution methods.

EASTERN QUEBEC AGREEMENT

After a period of wavering and study of the plan by the governments which were trying to fit the programming proposed by the Plan into intradepartmental, interdepartmental and intergovernmental realities, a federal-provincial agreement was signed on May 26, 1968 that made available the sum of \$258,800,000 for a period of five years, a sum called supplementary to the regular estimates for the region.

The major development objectives included in the BAEQ Plan were adopted in this agreement which prescribes several policies, programs and projects based on the major objectives. Also included in the Agreement is the following clause:

"In the event that Canada and Quebec decide that this Agreement should be amended or extended, it may be

¹ Average productivity in 1961 (gross domestic product divided by the number of workers):
Quebec: \$5,250 Region: \$3,520

reviewed at any time and, if necessary, with the approval of the Governor-in-Council and the Lieutenant Governor-in-Council, it may be amended or extended; but, in any event, the Agreement shall be reviewed before March 31, 1970."¹

On this occasion, the Regional Development Council (CRD), as privileged interlocutor, produced a rather voluminous opinion (over 300 pages) that showed the imbalance between the measures promoting the growth objectives and those promoting the development objectives.

We do not think it necessary here to repeat the whole analysis we have made of the Agreement and the programming arising from it or our arguments in support of a major adjustment of this Agreement. We have preferred to add this opinion to our brief as an appendix in order that there may be clearly demonstrated the people's wish for the changes that are required to eliminate from our region as soon as possible the traditional nation of "transfer payments".

POVERTY IN EASTERN QUEBEC: A CULTURAL PROBLEM

The "war against poverty" has become a very popular expression in North America ever since President Kennedy proposed it as a sort of slogan for his vast program for the development of certain regions of the United States which lag behind the rest of the country in socio-economic development.

Since that time, several organizations and institutions have adopted the same slogan, among them the Canadian Government. This slogan no doubt gives expression to a profound desire to make certain changes which the old methods of copying with class and regional disparities cannot carry through. It no doubt expresses a vivid awareness of the contradiction existing between the wealth of some and the poverty of others living in economies which everyone agrees to call prosperous and which are the envy of many other countries in the world.

But, popular as it is, this formula, in our opinion, covers different realities and conveys different intentions according to the organizations adopting it, and the degree to which these realities and these intentions are an accurate reflection of the true needs for change in our mid-twentieth century industrial societies varies with the case.

Above all, we must not lose sight of the fact that the concept of poverty is almost terrifying by relative. It seems normal to us to talk of poverty with reference to certain Asian or African countries. And it is true that in these countries there are whole populations which are undernourished; whole populations absolutely lacking in what might be called the biological necessities. But it is obviously difficult to use the same concept to define the situation of those who, in a single year, in our industrialized societies, while passing for poor, consume more than an Asian can hope to do in 5 or even 10 years of his life.

The same concept is again used to describe the situation of families living in the slums of our great North American cities and that of certain of our rural population. But, for these two situations, there is no common measure.

We do not intend to enter the labyrinth of analysis which might lead us to a concept of poverty. However, it seems to us that it is necessary to begin by distinguishing between the various large families of social maladjustment which are superficially covered by the term, poverty.

(A) In a first category, there would be poverty originating in the individual. Indeed, one form of poverty seems to be hereditary. Certain individuals and often their descendants seem to be incapable, either psychologically or physically, of submitting to the rules of the game of society, whether this society be a subsistence economy or an industrial type economy. Again, some individuals simply escape from that social control which requires a certain amount of effort from each man to live in accordance with certain rules of life, which requires the sharing of certain ideals...

This first form of poverty is probably as old as the world. But it is surprising that, in the era of space travel, when man seems to be well on the way towards controlling the elements, this problem should still exist and on a scale which shows no sign of diminishing.

This phenomenon of individual poverty very often has a basic social dimension as well; the poor group together in ghettos, and these ghettos escape from the rules of social control to the same extent as the individuals who live in them.

This problem is of little concern to regional leaders. In fact there are few cases of social

¹ Eastern Quebec Agreement, May 26, 1968, article 13, page 5.

pathology in our region, and, for the few that exist, the application of the Quebec aid and social security programs helps to make of the few thousand people in this category an almost wealthy class, when compared to certain groups in the large North American cities.

The fact that the CRD does not consider this to be a first priority problem still does not mean that no-one should concern himself with it.

(B) In a second category of social maladjustments often referred to as poverty should be classed all the problems arising from the faulty distribution of our country's wealth among the various classes of our society and even within social classes. Part of the solution to this particular problem obviously lies in the hands of the State, which must bring about some redistribution of the nation's wealth.

But nor is this the problem which particularly concerns us. Indeed, there are practically no social classes, in the proper sense of the term, in our region, at least, no social schisms resulting from different ethnic origins; there are homogeneous communities, local and sub-regional, more inclined to define themselves in terms of one another and, on a larger scale, in terms of Quebec society than in terms of social classes.

(C) But there is another category of social maladjustments often associated with a form of poverty. This is the problem of regional disparities.

There are several avenues of approach to the description of this phenomenon; we prefer the sociological approach, for, we believe that this is, to a very great extent, a cultural problem. It is in fact the problem of a group of people which participates in two cultures some of whose respective values are in conflict. Or, in other words, it is the problem of a group of people whose rhythm of socialization (i.e. the rhythm according to which a group of human beings assimilates the new values of the society to which they belong) is slower than that of the society around them.

And yet this formula remains vague, since, in the case with which we are concerned, at a given moment, as a result of the expansion of the boundaries of communication, there were suddenly two cultures on the scene: the culture of the surrounding industrial society and the culture of the traditional regional society.

To simplify the matter, let us say that from the culture of the surrounding society, the industrial society, the inhabitants have assimilated the values governing the individual as consumer, while from the traditional society they have retained the values governing the individual as producer.

The problem is clearly added to by the presence of a structural problem; the movement of economic centres inherent in economies of the liberal type presents this region with the alternative of being either a region which exports raw materials or else a poor region. But this area is not rich in raw materials, and it is handicapped by the distances which separate it from the great centres and also by its rigorous climate, if we are thinking chiefly in terms of farm products.

Thus the specifically economic problem is compounded by a specifically social problem and vice-versa.

Social security does not solve either the one or the other, and the magic formulas of industrial development and exploitation of resources are unlikely to solve the social problem and probably liable to fail even in their economic aim.

In reality, the method of approach towards the solution of such a problem is likely to prove unsatisfactory if it does not aim to solve the social problem first, and then the economic problem, or at least to attack them both together.

Solving the social problem means undertaking the cultural changes which are necessary. In other words, it means speeding up the rhythm of socialization of these inhabitants, or, again, taking proper advantage, in a systematic fashion, of the human capital of the region.

In declaring that the problem of poverty in rural areas is chiefly a cultural problem, we obviously do not mean to deny that this problem has an economic side to it. If we did, we would be taking up a position contrary to that of the Economic Council of Canada, which, in its sixth article, entitled "Perspectives 1975", demonstrates this side of the problem quite clearly.

By insisting on the cultural aspect our intention is rather to draw attention to a way of looking at things which seems to us essential for systematic action against the plague of rural poverty.

But let us first situate the problem of regional disparities itself. We do not think that the multitude of organizations or the

departments and governments which are interested at the present time in the problem of poverty in general and in that of rural poverty in particular have given any consideration to the situation which existed in the province of Quebec throughout the years proceeding World War II.

And yet, it would be false to say that the rural inhabitants or pre-World War II were rich. In terms of absolute criteria, these people were much poorer than they are at the present time. What was different was that this form of poverty was accepted as a way of life, along with the fact of being a farmer, a woodsman, fisherman or skilled worker, and consequently it did not constitute a serious problem from the socio-economic point of view.

In fact, the problem of poverty to which—it seems at least—we refer when we talk about poverty in the rural areas is a relatively recent one. It dates from World War II and the Korean War. What essentially happened as a result of these wars was that the rural population became conscious of the fact that they could enjoy the material well-being offered by the industrial society to which, again as a result of the wars, a system of buying and selling had attached them and to which they had been joined also by what amounted to a revolution in the field of communications. Essentially then, the phenomenon of poverty in the rural areas is first and foremost a phenomenon of cultural change.

From an analytical point of view, this phenomenon of cultural change could be described in many ways. Suffice it to say that the rural inhabitants have thrown up poverty as a way of life, opting more or less consciously for an economic system of buying and selling which makes growth in effective consumption possible. They have realized that they can live and have the right to live according to the standards of North American industrial society.

Also, we ought not to be surprised that the phenomenon of rural poverty which we are talking about should have appeared at a moment when the inhabitants of the rural areas were richer than they had ever been, if we understand by wealth the means of acquiring consumer goods, and if we put this moment at somewhere between 1945 and 1952.

What we are discussing, then, is a phenomenon of relative poverty. In fact, this

form of poverty in rural areas is not accompanied by any lowering in per capita income in relation to a stabilization or even to a growth in the per capita income in urban areas. And it could even be said, on the contrary, that this phenomenon made its appearance at a moment when the people of the rural areas had just enjoyed a considerable increase in income, an increase which had come about at a rhythm at least as rapid, if not more so, as that of the increase in the income of salary earners, for example.

The difference that is to be noted at the present time between per capita income in the province of Quebec and the per capita income of our region, for example, is probably not any greater, all things considered, than it was during the 30's.

However, since the emergence of this phenomenon of relative poverty, that is, during the course of the last 10 or 15 years, it is obvious that the gap between the income of the rural areas and that of the industrial workers, for example, has increased considerably, the income of the rural population tending to become fixed as the incidence of social security has made itself felt more and more as a component in personal income, while the incomes of salary earners have gone up as a result of more or less efficient action on the part of the trade unions. It is also obvious, even with regard to relative poverty, that the available income of most of the inhabitants of the so-called under-developed areas, whether they be farmers, woodsmen or fishermen, is considerably lower than what these same people define as a normal income. It is also obvious that the people of the rural areas feel that they have the right to demand of governments that they bridge this gap, whatever means have to be adopted to achieve this.

We do not intend to insist any further on this phenomenon. But we would like to emphasize that when such an important element in the definition of a way of life as the very conception of the role of buying and selling, of savings and credit, of consumption and even of labour changes so radically and in such a short time, the society concerned has not yet seen the end of its troubles.

Relative poverty, in rural areas, is, then, a phenomenon of awareness.

From a form of social consciousness, the phenomenon of relative poverty in rural areas has rapidly developed into a form of political consciousness. And the first reactions to this have not been slow in appearing.

Indeed, we ought not to think that, in the field of rural poverty, we are starting from scratch. A whole sheaf of analyses of the situation has already appeared, and a great many policies and programs have already been drawn up.

We should first point out that if, analytically, it is possible to distinguish stages in this war on poverty, chronologically, these stages have often been superimposed, and they add up, so that the war on poverty in rural areas is becoming a more costly business year by year, one which poses enormous problems for the governments which shoulder almost the whole financial burden of it, and one which to some extent jeopardizes regional development policy because the cost of each new policy is added on to that of the old ones, while in many cases the two are contradictory.

In any case, these various stages do form a line of continuity which goes from a very local picture of a situation, a micro-economic view, to an increasingly generalized picture of the forms of interdependence between the resources, the inhabitants and the socio-economic organization of a given region, to a view, then, of the macro-variables of the phenomenon of poverty and of their interdependencies.

As measures which are representative of solutions based on the first pole in this line of continuity, we might mention policies supporting prices in agriculture and credit policies in agriculture and fisheries. As representative measures centred on the latter pole in this line of continuity, the ARDA legislation might be mentioned and, of course, the decision to draw up the so-called plans for regional development must be emphasized, as well as their implementation.

Considerable though they are, the efforts which have been made until recently to bring about the necessary changes in local areas have met with almost total failure. A revealing indication of this failure is to be found in the fact that, after the adoption of what are very often generous policies to assist the development of what are considered to be the most important areas of the regional economies, the people and their governments have increasingly had to bypass them, in the course of the last few years, in favour of policies of social assistance pure and simple.

Let us try to identify a few of the fundamental causes of this failure.

First of all, there is the fact that, at the very heart of the local approach, the micro-economic approach, the work factor has for a

long time been considered negligible. On the one hand, several of the measures which have been introduced, as a result of very general and very easy qualifying criteria, have not had the effect at all of forcing a choice between the producers concerned, a choice which would work in favour of the more dynamic, the more "modern" among them, but have, on the contrary, had the effect of maintaining the modes of production of the self-sufficient economy at the very heart of a market economy. The fact is that, in casting off the traditional way of life in all its aspects concerning the consumer, and while buying refrigerators, tractors and trawlers, the farmer and fisherman have nonetheless continued to consider farming and fishing as a *way of life* in itself and not as a *profession*. The cultural assimilation which operated only for half the values of industrial society could have been intensified by measures favouring the emergence of producers typical of industrial society. We are thinking here of measures to support increased productivity in terms of production in relation to capital investment.

Secondly, there is the fact that there has long been a reluctance to talk in terms of regional economies instead of in terms of agricultural or fishing economies, or again of farming areas or fishing areas. In fact, there is still some confusion between the notion of rural or regional economy and that of agricultural economy. The premise which this approach assumes is, indeed, to be found in the first version of the ARDA legislation and could be formulated as follows; let us develop to the maximum the resources of the so-called underdeveloped regions and we will have put their economy on the road to progress. In other words, let us increase the number of prosperous farmers and fishermen and there will be no more problem of regional underdevelopment. This is the concept of territorial development in its most preposterous form.

In fact, there is no more agricultural, forestry or fishing problem, there is a problem concerning regional economies whose development lags behind that of the Quebec economy and society as a whole, economies within which there are problems connected with agriculture, forestry, fishing, industry, cities, equipment, labour, employment, education, health, etc.

The coexistence of a modern world and an old world in territories which were formerly socially and economically well-balanced

leaves us with few choices: either we turn these territories into regions from the social and economic point of view or we limit their contribution to the Quebec society and economy to that of supplying a few natural resources, with all the consequences that implies. In the first case, the answer would be regional development planning; in the second case it would be equipment.

Whatever the method adopted, it is impossible to make war on poverty successfully in rural areas without going through a preliminary stage which would require bringing about the necessary changes at the cultural level so that habits of behaviour which are flagrantly contradictory to the progress we so earnestly desire would be replaced by much more positive behaviour patterns. In this regard, there is a great deal of legislation to be revised. But it would be dangerous to imagine that it is sufficient to adopt a body of legislation promoting much stricter control of economic agents in order to solve everything. In our opinion, the problem is much larger than that. It creates, in our view, the necessity for polyvalent social activism, the aim of which, no matter what the methods employed, would be precisely that of developing an awareness of the situation at the very heart of the rural communities, so that cultural change might come about in as conscious and voluntary a fashion as did the changes which marked the beginning of the crisis in the rural economies.

Obviously, behaviour patterns at the micro-social and micro-economic level are expressive of a much larger cultural reality, and it is at this level that we must seek the fundamental causes of socio-economic maladjustment in the rural area. In reality, there is more involved than the farmer and the fisherman who, insofar as his role as producer is concerned, has retained a traditional definition of the situation. The socio-economic structure itself, in the broadest sense of the term, has also retained traditional roles as a result of an ideology which has adjusted to the new values without abandoning the old values which the new ones contradict. This is what could be called the community ideology; it makes of the family and the parish the universal framework and serves for the creation of everything which either in general or in particular relates to the socio-economic structure. The narrow limitations of the parish are no more help than the small-scale farms in solving the problems of the rural inhabitants in industrial society.

Nonetheless, the parish was still, only a very short time ago, the universal frame of reference. And, in part, it still is. But, because of emigration on the one hand, and the relative shrinkage of distances on the other, it has, at the same time, and from the strictly economic point of view, become a strait-jacket. For the most part, the parishes have become over-equipped. But the security they offer, in terms of jobs, and even in terms of services, no longer answers the demands of the inhabitants themselves.

In the field of socio-economic organization, this ideology is expressed by the complete levelling of social classes, the universal group being the local community. Almost all associations represent the same people and have the same role.

These stiflingly narrow communities, which have not yet burst—surprisingly enough—must burst. In the present atmosphere, an efficient marketing organization is hard to imagine, as are efficient processes for the transformation of raw materials, or effective implementation of social and urban development on a functional and economical basis. However, when one considers that this out-moded socio-economic structure can constitute the corner-stone of any progressive measure aiming to counteract the phenomenon of poverty in rural areas, it seems essential to begin the undertaking of these cultural changes before anything else.

Once again we come up against the necessity for polyvalent social activism which, whatever the methods used, would have as its aim the promotion of a real awareness of the situation on the part of those concerned. Failing this, it would perhaps be more logical to encourage social deterioration, increasing the measures for social assistance, to the detriment of all economic measures properly so-called.

As we said above, there is no more agricultural, forestry or fisheries problem. There is the problem of the regional societies and economies. Now, these regional economies and societies, as is now clearly evident, have to be created. It is thus a cultural problem in the sense that it is in the light of the cultural changes to be implemented that all measures of an economic nature aiming to improve the situation in rural areas must be considered.

It is also a *general* problem in the sense that we cannot think of development as the equipment of a few sectors of economic activity but must think in terms of the operation of a socio-economic structure. In order to

do this, by definition, all the half measures or limited measures must be set aside unless they are very clearly related to a more general scheme. We must stop talking of agricultural and forestry development, etc., and of regional development, unless we are prepared to face the consequences of the adoption of such positions or to incorporate them in more general programs.

PLANNED DEVELOPMENT AND PARTICIPATION

The insistence we have placed upon locating what may constitute a number of problematical elements of regional development was intended to set a precedent for the critical examination of various proposed methods or formulas for tackling the problem of poverty in rural areas. Moreover, we do not feel that this emphasis is in any way exaggerated if one considers that what starts under the auspices of a harmonious concert as a war on poverty may very soon develop into discord if the instruments of this vast orchestra are not first tuned to the same pitch.

Basically, what is involved is the building of regional communities and economies through the fostering of a new equilibrium situation between the population, resources and socio-economic organization of given areas, with the aim of reaching a maximum level of social and economic self-sufficiency without creating, as it were, any new inequalities at the provincial and national levels. The importance of a regional development policy at the national and Quebec levels can be seen immediately, for without one the planned development of a given area could very likely result in the impoverishment of others.

Be that as it may, we do not intend to stress the planning techniques themselves. In actual fact, we do not feel it necessary here to discuss the different maps which must be produced in order to be able to draw up a development plan for the forestry sector of a region. Similarly, we think that the development of a given agricultural area does not cause anything but technical and planning problems which have very little to do with the present memorandum.

Moreover, although it poses problems of recruiting competent personnel, the success of the planning is still less dependent on the experience of the planners in planning and programming than on the decision of the population group in question to carry out the necessary changes to improve the socio-economic situation. It is therefore the considera-

tion given the human factor in this vast undertaking which will retain our attention here.

We know the problem: how to carry out cultural adjustments and how to build regional societies and economies.

Let us eliminate two methods immediately.

The first is called propaganda and is aimed at accelerating the development of rural populations by systematically proposing modes of behaviourism to be adopted and banned with regard to a kind of simplified, condensed, sham common ideal of emotive inspiration,—not to mention demagogic. It would involve mobilizing the channels of information, selecting the news, incorporating the desired modes in T.V. serials, and consequently, adopting symbols for commercial advertising purposes, in order to bring it off. In ten years, many of the micro and macro social behaviourisms currently in evidence will be considered archaic. But the fact is, we are repulsed by everything that propaganda stands for, to the extent that it mobilizes the unaware. We do not doubt at all the effectiveness of such a method; we do not accept the philosophy.

The second method could be called planning and is based on political restraint to achieve what the first achieves by social restraint established in a system of psychosociological tyranny. Like the first, it assumes that the total human costs of socialization are to be born by the individual and the original groups. This postulate, which philosophically speaking, forms the basis of the two methods, would be sound if, in the phenomenon of socialization, the first component in the individual-society relationship were the only one which could effectively be held responsible for the current imbalance.

However, such is not the case. On the one hand, we must realize that in the case we are interested in, it is more the frantic rate of change within our North-American industrial society during the last twenty odd years than the slow rate of evolution of our rural communities that is at fault. On the other hand, we must also realize that at least part of the measures adopted to date to combat this situation by the appropriate authorities have not displayed such lucidity as to exonerate society itself as a whole of all blame.

Be that as it may, propaganda and planning, unless conceived as stimuli for participation and again with many reservations, are, in our opinion, to be ruled out as means of carrying out the necessary cultural adjust-

ments and building the vital regional communities.

There remains only one method: participation.

In order to properly understand this method of approach, it must first be realized—and we hope that this will become relatively clear from this text—that the worst of the present situation stems from the fact that nothing coherent, either in terms of the values as a whole, or in terms of the social structures, has replaced the entire compact, structured, grade system of values which made up the traditional culture and harmonious balance of the roles of the various elements of the old social structure. The rural world is desperately trying to carve itself out a corner within “a revolutionary regime” without really comprehending that a “revolution” has taken place and without having wanted this “revolution”.

The first task which has to be done is to introduce this rural world to the world as it stands in 1970, and not as they imagine it to be. A new awareness is imperative. Once this is accomplished, it will be necessary to assist the rural populations in the task which will then appear to them to be essential—that of readjusting their socio-economic structures to the realities which they have just discovered. This is what we call social organization.

Social organization assumes that the problem at hand is universal and not localized; it assumes as its driving element, something other than the instinct of belonging to a local “community”; it requires that the organizers refer themselves to a set of postulates—or at least hypotheses—defining the main limitations of socio-economic development in the situation.

There are no easy recipes for social organization because as a discipline of action with a view to accelerating evolution, it must come from within a socio-economic structure while at the same time being aimed at bringing about the integration of vital changes in that same structure. Social organization must therefore be such that eventually an image of the real or present world comes to be used as a guide for the definition of the situation and that gradually the principal components of the social structure, the elite, the leadership, the centres of power, either by way of transformation or by way of replacement, adopt this guide in order to define the situation. And obviously, this image of the real world, this guideline, is not complete unless it integrates the very values of development, the

little everyday things like planning, regionalization and extending bureaucracy, in general terms, and professionalization, geographic and professional mobility, specialization, differentiation of roles, polarization, “de-localization” etc., in more concrete terms.

But, you ask us, what will participation accomplish? It constitutes both the means and the objective of this kind of undertaking.

It constitutes the means in that it would be a mistake to think of achieving it without at the same time planning on proceeding via a kind of standing provisional assembly of the general bodies governing a population where in effect *all* body politics, existing and potential, would meet. Whether we are talking about structures of organization or participation, the fact remains that the first phase of social development, that with the aim of identifying the components of the real world to serve as guidelines for the definition of a situation in need of change, can only be achieved with difficulty unless it proceeds from some group which, without intending to impose itself as a decision-making body, can nevertheless foreshadow the image of the social organization of a more flexible society and—why not?—since that is what it would be, more democratic.

Since, from another point of view, participation appears to be one of the basic postulates of the whole group of development restrictions which are to reveal on one particular day the guideline serving to give a more realistic definition of an existing situation. As much by democratic ideals as concern for efficiency, it appears in fact that the rate of desirable socialization in a society such as ours would be considerably compromised with the resulting large number of social injustices, if our institutions of tomorrow had to go back to the consultative and organizational methods of the periods which are now very nearly over, when cultural values were as certain, stable and constant as the most firmly established dynasties. As much to check an evolutionary pace which, at a micro-social scale and in a given situation, would be too accelerated, as to allow a desirable rate of evolution, acculturation or socialization at that scale, it seems essential to us to involve the greatest number possible in the decision-making.

CONCLUSION

It undoubtedly remains for us to proceed to the critical analysis of various proposed formulas for carrying out the war on poverty in

the rural environment in the light of these general considerations on the causes of the phenomenon itself and on the socio-economic bases of social development and participation, as well as in the light of the unprecedented experience which we are now living in the Eastern Quebec area. We would repeat that this is a relatively difficult task at the present time as the Area Development Council does not have the desired specialists at its disposal.

We believe, therefore, that it would be advantageous for the members of the Senate to come here for a much more extended period of time in order to make this analysis themselves. We feel that they could derive a very valuable experience from this for future legislation.

May we once again assert in closing, that social organization and participation without planning do not, in our opinion, lead anywhere. We will even go further; participation without a certain number of political restrictions would seem to us at the present time to be a trap.

With regard to costs, planned development and participation are no more expensive than all the obsolete measures currently in effect to meet the problems in question, and in the long run constitute—we are convinced—a profitable investment.

And from a strictly humanistic point of view, it would show that we have not decided to sacrifice thousands of individuals without another word, to the caprices of a society which changes values so rapidly that for some it becomes just as difficult and impossible to keep up to date as it is to follow the fashions of the haute couture circles in Paris.

Recommendations

Some of the recommendations are the logical conclusion of the content of this memorandum; others derive from the Notice on the Renegotiation produced by the Area Development Council on the occasion of the renegotiation of the Federal-Provincial Rural Development Agreement. This document was produced as an annex to the present memorandum.

1. In our opinion it is absolutely essential that the federal and provincial governments establish integrated, co-ordinated, overall development plans for their respective territories, clearly indicating the goals of growth and development;

2. The preparation of these plans should be immediately followed by a breakdown of them into regional plans;

3. The population should be involved as much as possible in the preparation and realization of these plans through the use of organization, information and consultation techniques;

4. That they undertake to work in close co-operation, in a spirit of co-ordination and concentration, not only in the preparation, but also the execution of the plans;

5. That they agree to distribute their decision-making power among perfectly co-ordinated pluridisciplinary regional bodies which will be entrusted with the execution of the plan. (There are examples of this kind of deconcentrated government organization: *L'Office de Développement de l'Est du Québec*, the Regional Administrative Conference, the Federal-Provincial Management Committee and the Plan Administrator for the Area of Eastern Quebec);

6. That they agree to give these deconcentrated bodies not only real powers, but also sufficient funds to enable them to reach the growth and development objectives outlined in the plan within the time provided;

7. That they organize their entire operations in each area in order to avoid separating the plan budget from the regular one, and program for at least five years all their investments in those areas, taking into strict consideration the plan objectives. They would then be able to prepare regional budgets without allowing contradictory investments and scientifically control each expenditure in order to ensure maximum productivity;

8. That they agree to really make an effort to consult with the representative organizations of the people, such as the Area Development Councils, when the regional plans are executed;

9. That they stop thinking of poverty in the rural or peripheral areas as a sore for which better ointments are needed and start thinking of it more as the fatal consequence of the age-long absence of logical growth and development policies, a condition for which there is a cure today: planning;

10. And finally, that they attach greater importance to the very valuable research work done in this field by the Economic Council of Canada.

Rimouski,
September 4, 1970

Area Development Council of
Eastern Quebec Inc.,
P.O. Box 812,
Rimouski.

BINDING SECT. NOV 1 1972

Government
Publications

